

# REVEREND INSANITY

*by Gu Zhen Re*



QIDIAN  
www.qidian.com

# **Chapter 1801 - I Have Already Taken Your Life**

## Chapter 1801 I Have Already Taken Your Life

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan suddenly turned to offense, catching the three Wan clan immortals off-guard.

“Damn it!” Wan Xiao gritted his teeth and shouted: “Quickly save Wan Hao Guang, his armor is a killer move, it won’t last much longer.”

Wan Liang Han felt a chill rush through his whole body, Fang Yuan had been on the defensive for this whole time, now that he moved, he directly targeted the three Wan clan immortals’ vital weaknesses.

This ruthlessness and incisiveness made Wan Liang Han feel regret for the first time: “We should have investigated properly. Wan clan has provoked such a person, who knows if it leads to a blessing or a disaster!”

The soul beast army rushed like a flood and drowned the three Wan clan immortals.

The four immemorial soul beasts formed the central army and were like mountains as they moved towards Wan Xiao with an unstoppable might.

“Wan Xiao, retreat!” Wan Liang Han sensed Fang Yuan’s sinister killing intent and quickly warned.

Wan Xiao was anxious: “I cannot, I need to save Hao Guang! He is trapped, he has already canceled his light armor killer move and is now using only light armor Immortal Gu.”

Wan clan’s three immortals were affected by distracting thoughts generation, they could not use any killer moves as it was very likely for them to fail and inflict backlash on themselves without dealing any damage to the enemy.

Wan Hao Guang realized this and took the initiative to cancel the killer move light armor, directly activating light armor Immortal Gu instead.

This Immortal Gu was the core of the light armor killer move, but it was only a rank seven Immortal Gu, its defense was far below the previous light armor killer move.

Thus, Wan Hao Guang was already in a greatly precarious situation in just a short period of time.

Wan Xiao and him had a deep friendship, Wan Xiao was trying to save him in such a dangerous situation.

“Damn it!” At the critical moment, Wan Liang Han could only cooperate with Wan Xiao and activated a wisdom path Immortal Gu — Wisdom Obstacle.

Wisdom obstacle Immortal Gu created obstacles around Wan Xiao and Wan Liang Han, protecting the two and giving them a huge assistance.

Wan Xiao and Wan Hao Guang displayed solid battle foundation during this perilous moment, the two finally reunited amidst the soul beast flood.

“Good! With the two’s combined might and my cooperation, we have a hope of breaking out.” Wan Liang Han showed a trace of joy, when he heard a sneer behind him.

“Are you not considering your own situation? Such a self-sacrificial spirit.” Fang Yuan had actually appeared behind him!

At this moment, Wan Liang Han felt like he had fallen into an icy abyss!

Before his death, he finally realized that everything was a part of Suan Bu Jin’s sinister plan.

He intentionally imposed pressure and showed killing intent towards Wan Xiao and Wan Liang Han, but his true target had been Wan Liang Han!

Those four immemorial soul beasts were still far away while Suan Bu Jin had come beside Wan Liang Han by himself. Those four immemorial soul beasts were treated as just a bait.

These four had rank eight battle strength, who could have thought Suan Bu Jin would not use them! Since the start, he had stayed under the protection of these four immemorial soul beasts, constantly giving hidden signs to Wan clan's three immortals, making them gradually develop some kind of cognitive bias.

Wan Liang Han might be able to see through this trap in his normal state, but he was also struck by the killer move distracting thoughts generation; he had been suppressing the distracting thoughts in his mind while also paying attention to the safety of Wan Hao Guang and Wan Xiao, he was unable to take notice of anything more.

“Suan Bu Jin was never a person who feared death, he can even take the risk at the crucial times! The previous scenes were all just an act...” Thoughts exploded in Wan Liang Han's mind and he wanted to counterattack, disregarding all else, to exchange for a hope of survival.

But it was too late.

How could Fang Yuan give him the chance to struggle before his death?

Immortal killer move — Wisdom Grasp!

Fang Yuan lightly pushed his palm, a ‘great thief ghost hand’ flew out and entered Wan Liang Han's body.

Then, the ‘great thief ghost hand’ flew back with its fist clenched as if holding onto something.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “I have already taken your life.”

Wan Liang Han's eyes were wide open, he was already dead!

“Brother Liang Han!!” Wan Xiao and Wan Hao Guang shouted in shock, grief and anger.

Wan Xiao stared furiously while Wan Hao Guang's expression was also furious with tears flowing down his face.

It was not easy to raise a wisdom path Gu Immortal, Wan Liang Han's death was a heavy loss to Wan clan!

Fang Yuan had already achieved half his target by killing Wan Liang Han. The other half would depend on the subsequent actions of these two Wan clan Gu Immortals.

Right now, Fang Yuan did not really care about the profits he could gain from killing two rank seven Gu Immortals.

He was going after the entire Western Desert Gu Immortal world after all.

He activated transformation path methods to weaken his aura.

“This guy has suddenly become weak! So he was not that strong.”

“Maybe, the killer move he used to kill Brother Liang Han has huge repercussions!”

Wan Xiao and Wan Hao Guang pleasantly found Fang Yuan's aura had weakened, his soul beast army was also spread everywhere, no longer united like before.

But shortly afterwards, Fang Yuan took Wan Liang Han's corpse and hid behind the protection of the four immemorial soul beasts.

Wan Xiao and Wan Hao Guang clenched their teeth in hatred, but realized that they were unable to kill Fang Yuan. If they continued to drag this, they might also die here.

Thereupon, they removed the immortal battlefield and chose to retreat.

Wan Xiao was heavily injured by Fang Yuan during this time and fell unconscious, Wan Hao Guang tightly held on to Wan Xiao and ran off rapidly.

Fang Yuan controlled the soul beast army and acted like he was going to give chase, he then looked at Wan Hao Guang in satisfaction as he disappeared in the cloud layer.

“I should also leave.” Fang Yuan did not stay behind, he looked towards the direction of Wan clan’s headquarters and smiled lightly as he disappeared after putting away the soul beast army.

When Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong rushed to the place, he looked dazedly at the empty desert.

There were only traces left behind that proved there had been a huge battle previously.

Fang Gong’s expression was somewhat unsightly as he thought: “This Suan Bu Jin! It seems I am late by a bit, the enemies won.”

While he was thinking, there was a commotion in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan used the same trick, using Suan Bu Jin’s identity to publicize this battle.

Gu Immortals discussed heatedly, the Western Desert Gu Immortal world was even more shaken now.

“What kind of person is this Suan Bu Jin? He actually has the protection of four immemorial soul beasts, and his wisdom path methods are so sinister.”

“No wonder Fang clan recruited him, Western Desert’s righteous path has another peak rank seven expert!”

“The great era is truly coming, not only with the frequent occurrences of earth trenches, but all kinds of monstrous characters are also appearing.”

Fang Gong only realized this change in treasure yellow heaven after he received Fang Di Chang’s message.

Fang Gong let out a sigh of relief but was slightly puzzled: “So the victor was Suan Bu Jin! But why has he not returned yet?”

Fang Di Chang laughed: “He is a lone immortal after all and joined our clan only recently. Now, he killed Wan Liang Han who was a Western Desert righteous path Gu Immortal and a member of a super force. Adding on our Fang clan’s situation, he is worried our Fang clan will give him up to protect ourself. So he is staying outside and took the initiative to publicize the battle.”

Fang Gong immediately understood from this explanation: “Hmph, you wisdom path Gu Immortals simply like to overthink situations. Suan Bu Jin is putting pressure on my Fang clan by doing this, but his worries are not wrong. Wan Liang Han was killed by him, our Fang clan and Wan clan’s relationship is now almost completely broken! Sigh, the newly stabilized situation has crumbled apart, Fang clan’s situation has become much more difficult.”

“What do you think we should choose? Give Suan Bu Jin up to maintain the relationship with Wan clan? Or give up on Wan clan and protect Suan Bu Jin? Right now, it is clear to me that Suan Bu Jin does not truly want to join our Fang clan, he is only cooperating with us for his own gains. However, Wan clan is also nothing good, they triggered a loss of their own initiative this time, they will definitely retaliate even more fiercely later on.”

Fang Di Chang said heavily: “I think it is more beneficial to protect Suan Bu Jin.”

“Suan Bu Jin is prideful, it is normal for him to not feel united with us. He has sufficient strength to support his arrogance. Just those four immemorial soul beasts already surpass our imagination. He also revealed two wisdom path killer moves in this battle, both are sinister and dangerous, if the enemy is even a little careless, they will fall to his vicious methods.”

“This time, it was Wan clan who found trouble with our side first. If we show weakness, other forces will believe we don’t have any strength and they will want to cause trouble! The result we achieved from using the theft path killer move will also disappear because of this.”

“At such a critical time, my Fang clan should preserve our strong momentum and protect Suan Bu Jin. Suan Bu Jin might not be united with



us, but he is a qualified ally. We have the history of a successful cooperation and the foundation for cooperation. Our clan even owes him remuneration which can allow us to use him further. What the other righteous path forces don't hope to see is him reinforcing our clan."

Fang Di Chang was indeed a wisdom path great grandmaster, his analysis immediately made Fang Gong see the situation clearly.

Fang Gong nodded, saying with a heavy voice: "You are correct. Protecting Suan Bu Jin is indeed much more beneficial than easing the situation with Wan clan. But if we do this, Wan clan will definitely retaliate heavily and our Fang clan will face an even greater suppression!"

Fang Di Chang sighed helplessly: "There is nothing we can do about this. Divine Bean Palace's information has been leaked, didn't we already predict such a situation? The current plan is still to quickly refine Divine Bean Palace, our Fang clan can completely resolve this crisis with this Immortal Gu House."

Green ghost desert.

An immemorial soul beast was completely defenseless against Fang Yuan's attacks.

After a while, it lowered its head. It was forcibly subdued by Fang Yuan.

Ying Wu Xie was standing beside Fang Yuan.

In this recent period of time, it was thanks to him taking charge of this place that there was a continuous supply of soul beasts.

After defeating Wan clan's three immortals, Fang Yuan did not return to Fang clan, instead he directly came here to help Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie was in the process of taking in soul beasts when he encountered problematic immemorial soul beasts that he could not deal with. Fang Yuan arrived to help him clear the obstacles.

“Alright, let’s go to the next area.” Fang Yuan was speaking when his expression changed slightly.

Fang clan had sent a message.

“Lord sect leader, what is Fang clan’s response?” Ying Wu Xie was alert and asked with concern. Fang clan’s response would also concern the progress in green ghost desert.

“Everything is going as I planned.” Fang Yuan smiled, he looked towards the direction of Fang clan’s headquarters with a deep gaze.

# Chapter 1802 - Fang Clan's Support

## Chapter 1802 Fang Clan's Support

Wan clan headquarters.

“Father—! You died a pitiful death!” Weeping sounds echoed in the discussion hall, reverberating in the ears of the Gu Immortals present in the hall.

A young man, wearing mourning clothes, was crying.

This person was Wan Zhui Qing, a rank six Gu Immortal who was Wan Liang Han's son.

Wan Zhui Qing was kneeling on the ground and bawling, no one was able to persuade him to stop.

The Wan clan Gu Immortals in the hall had frowns on their faces, they were silent and their expressions were dark.

Wan clan's second supreme elder had an amiable personality, he said with a sigh: “The situation actually ended up like this! We sent three rank seven experts but they all lost, this is unbelievable.”

Wan clan's immortals all had deep feelings regarding this.

If not for Fang Yuan revealing the whole battle in treasure yellow heaven, these Wan clan immortals might only be able to accept the result after some hesitation.

In fact, Wan Liang Han had set off only after he had received approval from most of the Wan clan immortals.

Three Gu Immortals of the same rank as well as an immortal battlefield, the situation should have been in their grasp but who could have imagined they would encounter such a tough enemy!

The silent first supreme elder finally spoke: “Suan Bu Jin killed our clan’s Gu Immortal, we cannot forgive him. Wan Zhui Qing, did your father leave you his inheritance?”

Wan Zhui Qing did not dare to act recklessly towards first supreme elder’s inquiry, he held back his tears and said: “Father taught me everything about his inheritance, killer moves, and Gu recipes. But... there is not even one Immortal Gu left behind!”

First supreme elder’s expression sank further.

This situation was not normal. Suan Bu Jin was a rank seven, Wan Liang Han was also the same, but the former could kill the latter instantly without the latter being able to retaliate.

Normally speaking, there were rarely such direct results when Gu Immortals of the same rank fought. Usually, life and death battles would fall into a deadlock, during such times, if one side wanted to leave and was not trapped in any immortal battlefield, the other side would hardly be able to stop them.

An immortal battlefield’s value was that it did not allow enemies to escape freely.

Wan clan’s three immortals brought out the immortal battlefield to make sure Fang Yuan could not escape. But they did not expect Fang Yuan to not even try to escape, instead the immortal battlefield became useless and he killed Wan Liang Han while fighting off the other two Wan clan Gu Immortals.

This was truly an ironic result to Wan clan.

Wan clan's first supreme elder felt regret now.

If he had known this would happen, he would have lent his Immortal Gu House to Wan Liang Han.

But he had his own difficulties.

He was only a rank seven and not like the rank eight leaders of other righteous path forces. Because of this, the Immortal Gu House was required to guard their headquarters.

He, however, did not know his arrangement was actually rational and correct. Were Fang Yuan to see the Immortal Gu House, he would definitely plunder it. Thus, the first supreme elder's arrangement reduced Wan clan's losses instead.

First supreme elder sighed in his head before saying to Wan Zhui Qing: "Wan Liang Han's death was a mistake on our part. Wan Liang Han will be honored and any Gu materials required to refine his Immortal Gu will be provided for free from the clan's treasury. I just hope these Immortal Gu were destroyed."

"Thank you, first supreme elder! Thank you, esteemed elders!!" Wan Zhui Qing kowtowed multiple times towards the first supreme elder and the other Wan clan Gu Immortals.

This was what he hoped to achieve by crying in the first place, he succeeded now.

He was the youngest here so kowtowing was not inappropriate.

First supreme elder continued but with a gloomy and chilling voice: "Suan Bu Jin is Fang clan's member, we will pressure Fang clan to hand him over. From this battle, we can be certain Suan Bu Jin is definitely Old Man Lie Shen's inheritor! This is a demonic path scoundrel! The bloody debt that Old Man Lie Shen owes us will be paid by him."

Many Wan clan Gu Immortals' eyes shined brightly.

They could only do this!

Back then, Old Man Lie Shen had been the pain of many Western Desert righteous path forces. Placing this crime on Fang Yuan was to give the Western Desert righteous path forces an excuse to go against Fang clan.

Earlier, this had only been an excuse.

Wan clan wanted to capture Suan Bu Jin so that Fang clan would have no way to extricate themselves. The plan did not work, but Wan clan's first supreme elder still insisted on it as the truth.

Lack of evidence?

I will create evidence myself!

Although it was shameless, every super force wanted to deal with Fang clan and this plan would make use of their worry regarding Fang clan's rise.

It was just that the success rate of this plan was not as high as the previous plan.

Wan clan's Gu Immortal died in the battle and it was even publicized. They could not let this go!

Wan clan had no option but to continue with this excuse!

Second supreme elder heaved a deep sigh: "The situation might not be that bad. Fang clan might have already decided to give up on Suan Bu Jin."

"Hmph, even if they give him up, Fang clan won't be able to escape the crime of sheltering a demonic path Gu Immortal."

However, bad news arrived in Wan clan the next day.

Fang clan declared their stand, they were going to protect Fang Yuan and prove Fang Yuan's true origin was related to Zheng Jing Shen.

Wan clan immediately objected and brought out all kinds of 'evidence'.

Fang Di Chang did not even bother to deduce the flaws in these evidences, instead he tossed out even more ‘undeniable evidence’!

Laughable!

You can forge evidence, can I not do the same?

Western Desert’s two super forces argued intensely over the claims that Suan Bu Jin was Zheng Jing Shen’s inheritor or Old Man Lie Shen’s inheritor.

One side said they had proof! The other side said theirs were more reliable.

One side threw out a piece of evidence, while the other side threw out two.

But the main person who was being thrown in the whirlpool of politics, Fang Yuan, was leisurely subduing immemorial soul beasts in green ghost desert with a content spirit.

Naturally, he kept his attention on the progress of the situation.

It was actually quite amusing.

Fang Yuan himself was not anxious at all, he did not bring out any evidence to prove himself, but Fang clan and Wan clan, however, were extremely agitated, bringing out any evidence they could find, or forging some if they could not!

The two super forces vied with each other in testifying for and against a demon, even airing extreme confidence in their own claims.

Were they to truly know Fang Yuan’s identity, who knew how their mentality would change?

Fang clan would definitely feel like they had fallen into the icy depths but Wan clan would also be scared!

This was the demon Fang Yuan!

Even Heavenly Court as well as the whole of Southern Border's righteous path were helpless against him!

Over these days, Fang Yuan had not only subdued several immemorial soul beasts, he also took out time to absorb Wan Liang Han's wisdom path inheritance.

Wan Liang Han was instantly killed by Fang Yuan, the difference in their strength was so great that he simply did not have the time to destroy his Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan obtained three Immortal Gu from him, two rank six and one rank seven.

The rank seven wisdom path Immortal Gu was called Wisdom Obstacle. Wisdom obstacle Immortal Gu had the shape of a snail, it was dark and occasionally shined with a trace of purple light, it looked quite silly.

Fang Yuan had already seen the power of this Immortal Gu.

Activating this wisdom obstacle Immortal Gu could instantly form obstacles in a large range around the Gu Immortal. It consumed immortal essence as well as a large amount of will.

There were also a lot of killer moves with wisdom obstacle Immortal Gu as the core.

One killer move was quite outstanding that even Fang Yuan was surprised.

This killer move directly sent the obstacles created by the wisdom obstacle Immortal Gu into the enemy's mind. With the giant obstacles, the thoughts in the enemy's mind would have trouble colliding with each other and thus would make it difficult for them to think.

Usually, when this move succeeds, it would immediately make the enemy turn stupid, they would feel like there was a boulder in their mind, unable to solve any problems.



This move was outstanding but it had to first touch the enemy and pierce into the enemy's brain.

So there were several other killer moves that were specially targeted towards the brain.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan was well-versed in wisdom path and had many methods protecting his mind. Wan Liang Han's killer moves had almost no hope in getting past these hurdles.

Moreover, he was struck by Fang Yuan's distracting thoughts generation and lost the initiative. He clearly had killer moves but could not use them and lost most of his ability.

Thinking back about the battle, Fang Yuan was very satisfied.

He had put his two killer moves to test in actual battle and their effects were excellent.

One was distracting thoughts generation, it was a wisdom path killer move that also had the essence of soul path. When activating the killer move, Fang Yuan could hide its aura by relying on the four immemorial soul beasts.

It would be problematic if the killer move's aura was exposed and the enemy sensed it. This was because distracting thoughts generation required a certain amount of time before its strength could accumulate to a decent level.

The other move was wisdom grasp, it was a wisdom path killer move which Fang Yuan deduced after referencing great thief ghost hand and the steal life true inheritance.

Great thief ghost hand stole Immortal Gu while wisdom grasp stole lives, instantly killing enemies.

This move was only rank seven so it had very poor effect against rank eight Gu Immortals, but was perfect for an opponent like Wan Liang Han. Fang

Yuan had added some transformation path Gu worms into wisdom grasp to disguise it as great thief ghost hand.

In the battle of Divine Bean Palace, Fang Yuan had displayed great thief ghost hand in front of Fang Gong, he also subdued immemorial soul beasts under the cooperation of Fang Di Chang.

So the methods Fang Yuan revealed did not stun Fang clan, they instead highlighted his value.

At the same time, he also cleverly exposed his ‘weakness’ — Fang Yuan clearly had methods to directly manipulate soul beasts but he did not use any in the fight.

Therefore, Fang clan had a misconception that they still had Suan Bu Jin in their grasp. Trying their best to protect him was a natural thing.

From a simple perspective, this battle was only a battle between Fang Yuan and three Wan clan immortals. But in truth, it was Fang Yuan who manipulated the present situation and intensified the conflicts between the two sides, he was influencing the two super forces Fang clan and Wan clan, while also controlling the situation of the entire Western Desert.

Fang Yuan’s true goal was after the battle. By implementing this plan, his future gains would be beyond imagination. These Immortal Gu like Wisdom Obstacle were just appetizers before the banquet.

Unconsciously, at this point, Fang Yuan no longer emphasized on trifling gains or losses.

Physically in the situation, rampaging everywhere unhindered.

Mentally in the situation, ambitions soaring above the horizons.

“Unconsciously, I have already reached this level.”

“Those heroes and conquerors who ruled their eras, were they also like this?”

“Heh.”

Fang Yuan collected his thoughts.

Green ghost desert looked even more dark and gloomy at night.

Dark clouds filled the sky, not letting even a trace of starlight pass.

Fang Yuan was sitting on the head of a ferocious immemorial soul beast, and beside him were uncountable soul beasts.

Under Fang Yuan’s control, the large army silently charged forward towards the boundless darkness.

# Chapter 1803 - Dragonman Clone

## Chapter 1803 Dragonman Clone

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Red Heaven.

A large formation was making loud noises, variant human Gu Immortals were fully prepared for combat with Bai Ning Bing at their lead.

Whoosh!

There was the sound of enormous tidal waves and an immemorial year beast rushed out of the formation that was shining in silver light.

“This is an immemorial year pig!” Lady White Rabbit shouted excitedly.

“Great, the year essence pool lacks this species of year beast.” Fairy Miao Yin also added spiritedly.

There was nothing to say, the battle started immediately.

The immortals controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship and battled the immemorial year pig.

The immemorial year pig had a sturdy body, but Myriad Year Flying Warship was also incomparably firm, both sides were evenly matched.

The battle caused a storm just from its aftermath. If it were an ordinary immortal aperture, the Gu Immortal would definitely suffer heavy losses. But Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was too vast.

He had devoured the lifetime accumulations of many Gu Immortals, but even then, his sovereign immortal aperture was only seventeen to eighteen

percent developed.

This Mini Red Heaven was specially left empty by Fang Yuan, reserved as a battlefield.

Currently, the mini five regions' development was flourishing, seven of the mini nine heavens also had some resources. Mini Red Heaven was completely empty, dream realms were stored in Mini Green Heaven, and Mini Yellow Heaven only had a small segment of a gold fragment current.

The mini five regions still had a lot of unoccupied land, it could be estimated that the mini nine heavens would remain barren for a long period of time.

Normally speaking, when a Gu Immortal advances to rank eight and gains a grotto-heaven, they would actively develop the sky because there would be no free space left on the land. But Fang Yuan was a special case and could not be assessed by common sense.

The battle of the rank eight Immortal Gu House and the immemorial desolate beast lasted for a few days before the latter lost and gave in.

Fang Yuan's main body was sweeping through green ghost desert, while inside his immortal aperture, his subordinates were using Myriad Year Flying Warship to subdue immemorial year beasts.

On one hand, Fang Yuan was intentionally making these rank seven Gu Immortals get familiar with Myriad Year Flying Warship so that they could participate in battles of rank eights in the future.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan was using the immemorial year beast fishing formation to attract immemorial year beasts in an attempt to complete his Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

Fang Yuan had started on the plan of Twelve Zodiac battle formation in his previous life.

This was an ancient battle formation.

Gathering twelve different species of immemorial year beasts and using them as cores for the formation.

Twelve Zodiac battle formation was specialized in offense, and it could move freely after the formation was complete. During inactive times, these immemorial year beasts could be sealed, becoming like statues, unmoving and not requiring food. But during battle, the seal would be released, they would make up the battle formation and attack the enemy.

There were many advantages of this formation, one was it saved a lot on food expenditure.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan saw this point and had intended to use this method to ease the pressure on his immortal aperture management.

But in this life, Fang Yuan was very affluent, saving the food expenditure became secondary and what Fang Yuan prioritized now was the strong offensive prowess of this formation.

Only immemorial year beasts were qualified to be the cores of the Twelve Zodiac battle formation. Fang Yuan would be unable to construct the Twelve Zodiac battle formation if he used ancient year beasts or desolate level year beasts.

This showed that the Twelve Zodiac battle formation could definitely suppress the methods of ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals.

However, it was not as easy as it seemed to gather twelve different species of immemorial year beast.

It depended not only on strength but also luck.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan did not have the time and energy to spare on this and his luck was also bad, so he was not able to gather the complete battle formation even by the time of the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

The River of Time had a lot of year beasts, but the species of these year beasts were not allocated evenly. Instead, a certain species of year beasts would have a huge increase in its population during a certain period of time.

Fang Yuan also was not completely sure if he could gather them all in this life.

But in this life, the manpower, resources, time, and energy put into this project along with the increase in his luck was much more than his previous life.

This was a fact.

Time continued to pass.

Southern Border's righteous path was being extorted by Fang Yuan, many secretly thought of ways to deal with Fang Yuan but were afraid of alerting him.

Western Desert's righteous path forces were confronting each other, Fang clan and Wan clan's argument was continuing without an end. The other righteous path forces were restraining themselves, but hidden undercurrents were surging.

In Northern Plains, Longevity Heaven was trying hard to unite the whole Northern Plains Gu Immortal world but there was little progress. In the previous life, Longevity Heaven took in Lang Ya blessed sect which made the Northern Plains Gu Immortals realize their sincerity, greatly reducing the hostile intentions. But in this life, Lang Ya blessed land was already completely taken by Fang Yuan.

In Eastern Sea, it was tranquil as always. There were some disturbances occasionally but they were nothing major. The most sensational issue would be the matter of Ascending Heaven Plain, but this matter was already settled.

In Central Continent, because of the defeat in Lang Ya blessed land, Heavenly Court was recuperating. Fairy Zi Wei wanted to find trouble with

Fang Yuan, but she was helpless because Fang Yuan was wholeheartedly cultivating in seclusion, even if he took action, he would do it in disguise, making it hard for others to distinguish reality from rumors.

The Gu Immortal world of the five regions entered a temporary peaceful period.

Fang Yuan did not waste even a second of his time, he used this rare peaceful period to constantly process his gains and strengthen himself.

Time cutting edge was one step closer to perfection.

He could already use all five colored lights of five restriction profound light qi at the same time after this period of painstaking training, but he was still some distance left from becoming completely proficient.

The progress of his soul path cultivation was also highly satisfactory.

Fang Yuan's soul had already passed ten million man soul level, reaching one hundred million man soul!

This was the limit of a human.

Before Spectral Soul Demon Venerable appeared, in the long and endless history of humanity, even if there were shocking talents and geniuses, they could not progress beyond one hundred million man soul.

Man was the spirit of all living beings, humans had the strongest intelligence, but when their strength was compared, the sharpness of their nails, and the robustness of their souls, they were far inferior to other beings.

However, cultivation itself was a process of breaking one's limits.

Gu Master could possess strength to suppress fierce beasts by using Gu worms, grow nails sharper than those of fierce beasts, and naturally, have the foundation to possess even more robust souls.



Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was the first to innovate this method of breaking through the limits, Fang Yuan naturally had a grasp of this method after inheriting Shadow Sect's true inheritance.

Cultivating beyond the limit of a human soul was desolate soul!

Although one hundred million man soul was already condensed to the limit and could interfere with the real world, it was still fragile.

But when the soul reached desolate soul level, there would be an earth-shaking change in its battle strength, Fang Yuan would be able to match most desolate beasts with just his soul.

The one who had reached the peak in this was Spectral Soul. In the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he had used just his soul to fight against the heavenly and human calamities, his awe-inspiring demonic might had left an extremely deep impression on Fang Yuan, making him feel desire towards reaching this level.

“But I still have things to do before I breakthrough to desolate soul!”

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan's split soul was put inside the Long Hair refinement path formation.

The formation began to work, its light dyed all the surroundings bright red like blazing fire.

After the experience of failing several times before, Fang Yuan's movements were smooth.

“Concentrate, we are going to add the main immortal material next.” Fang Yuan commanded, Lang Ya land spirit, who was helping as an assistant, nodded immediately, helping Fang Yuan control the formation.

The space inside the formation formed into partitioned secret rooms that were specially meant to store immortal materials.

At this moment, one secret room opened and the immortal material inside immediately entered the formation.

This immortal material was called prospering spring light, it was a rank eight immortal material. Although it was a light path immortal material, it was condensed in the form of a flower. The flower bloomed open, its pure white petals were adorned with bright red specks along with blotches of bright green. The flower was lifelike and delicate, and was bursting with vitality.

The moment the prospering spring light entered the fire, it melted into pure white light that poured over Fang Yuan's split soul.

The light fully covered the soul.

The fire continued to burn the soul.

Gu materials were thrown in one after the other, at the same time, several Immortal Gu outside the formation were ceaselessly activated.

Hairy man Gu Immortals were assisting with all their strength, some were dealing with the immortal materials, some were controlling the fire, and some were inspecting the wastage.

This was a group Gu refinement, the expenditure was much higher than refining Gu alone, but the difficulty of the Gu refinement was also lower.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan was alone and did not have this treatment. In this life, he annexed Lang Ya Sect, the refinement path capability he grasped had already surpassed Heavenly Court!

How many refinement path Gu Immortals could Heavenly Court awaken? Even if there were refinement path great experts hibernating in the immortal graveyard, there would be very few who might possess refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level.

Naturally, Heavenly Court's treasuries were extremely rich, they far surpassed Fang Yuan in this aspect. Even though Fang Yuan had swallowed the lifetime accumulations of so many Gu Immortals, he could not hold a candle to Heavenly Court.

The refinement was going well, Fang Yuan's spirits rose as he shouted:  
"Next is false pearl!"

False pearl was not a pearl but a transformation path immortal material that could transform into any gem.

It was also a rank eight material like prospering spring light, and was this refinement's main material!

The false pearl quickly integrated into the fire.

Fang Yuan called out: "Bai Ning Bing!"

Bai Ning Bing nodded, she was already standing in a formation core, she lightly swung her arm, blood flew out of the injury on her hand.

The blood entered the raging fire, the crimson fire immediately turned into a bewitching blood red color.

Moreover, dense blood qi spread into the surroundings.

Sixth Hair immediately gathered this blood qi and constantly removed it.

If this was not done, this blood qi could heavily interfere with the next process of refinement.

The blood fire reduced in size the more it burned, and soon it shrunk to the size of a fist.

Fang Yuan took a deep breath, the other Gu Immortals also had solemn expressions.

Next was a crucial step.

"Release the raging wave rising dragon fire!" Fang Yuan sent the command.

The raging wave rising dragon fire could act on its own, the moment it was released, it sought to fly away from the formation, but how was it possible?

The Long Hair refinement path formation firmly blocked it and forced it to collide with the blood fire.

The two fires were quite distinct from each other, but they soon merged with each other, forming a large lump of colorful fire.

The mixed fire similarly reduced in size the more it burned while also emitting dense suffocating smoke.

The smoke settled down and covered the fire, forming a pitch-black sphere. From outside, one could vaguely see the bright fire in the center of the smoke sphere.

Boom!

The smoke sphere lasted for about an hour when it suddenly exploded, countless gusts of smoke flew around chaotically like dragons. Air waves surged and people could hear a sound like that of a dragon roar.

A dragonman Gu Master walked out of the smoke and revealed himself.

He was muscular and handsome, he had a tall nose bridge and firm lips. He looked like a peerless hero.

He had golden dragon scales on his body, he had a pair of dragon eyes like topaz, there was also a pair of golden coral-like dragon horns on his head.

Seeing him, Lang Ya land spirit laughing loudly: “Success, we succeeded!”

Indeed, this young rank one Gu Master was Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone.

# **Chapter 1804 - Breaking Through To Desolate Soul**

## Chapter 1804 Breaking Through To Desolate Soul

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The soul path formation was already arranged properly.

This formation was floating in the air, with a radius of about three li.

The formation was letting out a dark and gloomy radiance. It looked like a huge pancake with thick sides and a thin center.

Eerie wind blew up everywhere in the formation, sharply lowering the temperature inside, but everything was normal outside the formation.

Fang Yuan inspected the formation several times with his divine sense before feeling satisfied: “This formation is modified from a soul path killer move, it is much more stable than the killer move and it can be controlled much more smoothly and exquisitely.”

This was a unique soul cultivation technique recorded in Shadow Sect true inheritance, it allowed the human soul to break through the limit and reach the desolate soul level!

On the basis of this soul cultivation killer move and his formation path attainment, Fang Yuan improved and perfected it.

Everything was ready, Fang Yuan sent his hundred million man soul into the formation.

A desolate beast soul core was being grasped by Fang Yuan’s soul, and when the soul reached the center of the formation, it crushed the soul core.

The soul core was already processed beforehand and was further weakened sharply by the formation.

The soul core shattered and turned into fog that floated out.

The formation operated rapidly, making the fog shroud Fang Yuan's hundred million man soul completely.

For the next several hours, this fog continued to thin before completely disappearing.

Fang Yuan's hundred million man soul was still in its original shape, the same as his sovereign immortal body's appearance, solid and lifelike.

The feelings Fang Yuan had inside it, however, was greatly different from before.

"So this is desolate soul?" Fang Yuan's soul looked at his hands.

He could clearly sense that although there was not much change in his shape, a vast strength was surging on the inside.

This strength could not even be imagined by his previous state.

Hundred million man soul could interfere with the real world but would be in danger even if it was attacked by ordinary wild beasts. But the desolate soul's strength was like heaven and earth compared to hundred million man soul.

"Let's test it in real battle." Fang Yuan's soul flew out of the formation excitedly.

Fang Yuan had already made preparations, a desolate beast was confined not far away.

The desolate beast had just obtained its freedom when it saw the bluish black soul that had the physique of an adult fly towards it.

It roared ferociously and opened its mouth as it charged at Fang Yuan's soul.

Fang Yuan's soul suddenly flew up at the last moment, avoiding the desolate beast's bite and flying to its head.

He then raised his right leg and swung it down like an axe.

Boom!

A loud sound resounded as the hill-sized desolate beast was knocked down, heavily injured.

"Again!" Fang Yuan's soul chased after it, punching and kicking.

The desolate beast lacked intelligence and adding on its large size, it could only take the beatings passively while Fang Yuan dodged its attacks.

The desolate soul's attacks hit all its targets, after taking the beating for a while, this desolate beast whimpered and fled, losing its will to fight.

Fang Yuan's soul did not give chase, he would arrange for people to catch it afterwards.

A light excitement lingered in the thoughts of Fang Yuan's soul.

"I really possess the strength of a desolate beast!"

"Adding on my combat techniques, ordinary desolate beasts are not my match in a one on one battle."

"However, my human soul could float, but after breaking through to desolate soul, I am unable to fly and have to rely on Gu worms."

Fang Yuan's soul could fly around in the battle because the soul contained various Immortal Gu as well as immortal essence.

Some soul beasts could fly but some could not.

In the records of Shadow Sect's true inheritance, when a human soul broke through to desolate soul, it could not fly. Because humans were innately unable to fly.



A featherman's soul was different, it could fly, but feathermen were not pure humans.

Even Spectral Soul who had reached the peak of soul cultivation could not fly and had to stand on the ground in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

“The number of soul path dao marks on the soul has increased sharply, it actually broke through ten thousand dao marks!”

Previously, Fang Yuan's soul had few soul path dao marks even though it was cultivated to hundred million man soul.

This was because Fang Yuan had used the two sacred lands of soul cultivation, Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley. If he had used other soul cultivation methods, he would have to increase the dao marks on his soul to accumulate the same level of foundation.

The physical body was a carrier of dao marks, the soul was also the same.

It was not only soul path that could add dao marks on the soul, other paths could also do it.

Like time path.

Southern Border rank eight Gu Immortal Xia Cha had arranged a defensive method on her soul. Her soul was covered in a web formed from time path dao marks. This layer of defense had caused many difficulties for Fang Yuan when he soul searched her in the previous life.

Breaking through the limit and forming a desolate soul, Fang Yuan could now continue cultivating his soul.

The journey would be much longer and broader than human soul cultivation.

Ten desolate soul, hundred desolate soul, thousand desolate soul, ten thousand desolate soul...

Fang Yuan's desolate soul started cultivating, the time path clone was focused on deductions, while Fang Yuan's main body continued to research on the dragonman clone.

Despite this clone being created by himself, it still had research value.

The dragonman clone's soul originally had the appearance of Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal body, and had thirty million man soul foundation.

At present, however, its appearance had changed greatly. It looked the same as the dragonman's body, with dragon tail, horns, scales, and vertical dragon pupils.

Moreover, the soul path dao marks on the soul were already reduced to single digits and the soul foundation was only at a few dozen man soul.

This was the result of Fang Yuan's refinement and it was also what he wanted to achieve.

The split souls all possessed human souls. When entering a dragonman body, it could only be possessed by the human soul and the entity could not be considered a dragonman completely.

Fang Yuan created the dragonman clone to strive for the Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace. Be they transformation path killer moves or soul possession, they could not give such assurance like the clone.

After painstaking refinement, Fang Yuan refined the dragonman body with a matching dragonman soul.

Only like this could it be considered a complete dragonman.

Fang Yuan's pure dream clone was only a half-finished product.

The pure dream clone's physical body did not have any issues but its soul was Fang Yuan's human soul. Although the pure dream clone was a human, it did not match Fang Yuan's split soul.

A long period of adaptation was required and some soul path methods would have to be used before Fang Yuan's split soul could completely turn into the appearance of its physical body, only then could they truly match each other.

In fact, when Fang Yuan had just obtained the sovereign immortal body, it did not match his soul. After a long period of cultivation and using soul path methods to adjust his soul, he reached his current perfectly matching state.

Dragonmen were variant humans, there was naturally unique points about their physical bodies.

Rockmen had abundant earth path dao marks, snowmen were proficient in ice and snow path, hairy men possessed refinement path dao marks, mermen were water path, and dragonmen possessed enslavement path dao marks from birth.

Dragonmen had an incomparable talent in enslavement path, they were natural kings who could rule over other lifeforms much more easily than other races.

“The influence of the enslavement path dao marks brings an enormous benefit in not only the external matters but also to the internal structure of dragonmen.”

According to Fang Yuan's deductions, with the enslavement path dao marks, the dragonman societal structure would be much tighter than other races.

This tightness was not because of external causes but was innate to dragonmen.

In Fang Yuan's point of view, the influence brought by enslavement path dao marks to the internal structure was much more significant to the dragonmen than its external influence!

The dragonmen would be united unlike other races, especially like the internal fighting and internal friction of humanity.

As for enslavement path, it was specialized in battles of attrition. The cost of cultivating enslavement path was high, but if it was accomplished to a certain level, one could fight many by themselves, winning against stronger enemies.

Some paths had high individual battle strength like blood path, metal path, sword path, and so on.

But only few paths possessed the special characteristics of fighting one as many, in order to win against stronger enemies. For instance, there was formation path.

When Fang Yuan was a mortal and fought in the Imperial Court contest, he used enslavement path methods. And he had used formation path methods to capture Southern Border immortals not long ago.

Fang Yuan suddenly realized one point: “No wonder, in the previous life, Dragon Palace could enslave Di Zang Sheng. This Immortal Gu House should be an enslavement path Immortal Gu House!”

Fang Yuan was not too clear about the inner details regarding Dragon Palace.

Even now, he did not understand how Bai Ning Bing suddenly became the owner of Dragon Palace.

But it did not matter.

“Even if the dragonman clone is of no use, I still have a living Bai Ning Bing.”

The dragonman clone only had rank one Gu Master cultivation, the next step was to raise it to Gu Immortal level. Its path was most likely going to be enslavement path.

Fang Yuan had already sealed the pure dream clone’s aperture, albeit with difficulty. The split soul was cultivating continuously, actively transforming to match the physical body.

These two split souls might have some soul path cultivation, but it would only be at superficial level and never be to the extent of the main body's soul.

Because the dao marks of different paths would conflict and interfere with each other.

"I will cultivate for a bit longer, then it will be time to attack." Fang Yuan's gaze shined like blazing fire.

In Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei was still the one in charge.

In Central Great Hall.

A message came that slightly eased her furrowed brows.

"Good, Old Ancestor Xue Hu has accepted Prince Feng Xian's proposal and will receive our financial help!"

Longevity Heaven wanted to unite the whole Northern Plains Gu Immortal world and they showed great determination, thus they had big clashes with lone immortals and demonic path members.

Fairy Zi Wei thus made a plan and boldly sent back Prince Feng Xian to Northern Plains to persuade Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was not willing at first and had been firm in his stance, but under his wife's persuasion, he reluctantly agreed to collaborating with Heavenly Court.

"Although our current collaboration is limited, it won't be the same in the future." Fairy Zi Wei smiled confidently.

Looking at the entire world's situation.

There was important progress in Northern Plains while Heavenly Court was also stirring up trouble from behind the scenes to create conflict in Western Desert's righteous path.

Central Continent was free of any particular event. Eastern Sea's several large forces divided Ascending Heaven Plain between themselves. But in the dark, Heavenly Court was putting full efforts in searching for Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace.

“As for Southern Border...” Fairy Zi Wei's smile disappeared.

The situation was not optimistic in Southern Border.

Southern Border's righteous path was being extorted by Fang Yuan, Fairy Zi Wei was unable to stop it. At the same time, the Southern Alliance was formed, the alliance leader position was empty but Tie clan's Beacon Towers were already being constructed everywhere.

Both of these situations were bad news to Heavenly Court.

“There is also Fang Yuan, he captured so many Southern Border Gu Immortals and extorted countless immortal materials, he also has the whole of Lang Ya Sect's refinement path Gu Immortals under him...”

Fairy Zi Wei was paying close attention to any news regarding Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan had gone into hiding and was unable to be found.

Fairy Zi Wei felt a huge pressure, she would rather have Fang Yuan cause chaos everywhere and run amok.

Currently, she did not even hear a trace of any rumor regarding Fang Yuan's recent situation.

“What is Fang Yuan doing?”

“How much has his strength increased?”

“When and where will he appear again?”

The final question did not trouble Fairy Zi Wei for long.

Approximately half a month later, she obtained some battle information.

Fang Yuan had suddenly appeared in the River of Time and fought the Four Xunzi.

He was not alone, he brought a ship shaped rank eight Immortal Gu House!

# **Chapter 1805 - First Battle in the River of Time**



## Chapter 1805 First Battle in the River of Time

Immortal Gu House Myriad Year Flying Warship was moving in the River of Time.

Fang Yuan was standing proudly on the bow of the ship with his hands behind his back. He wore a black robe, his hair was long and black, and he was gazing at the endless waves in the River of Time with his dark abyss-like eyes.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest were inside the Immortal Gu House, looking at Fang Yuan who was releasing rank seven aura. Some felt a chill in their hearts, while some realized: No wonder Fang Yuan could rampage till now. If I had rank eight cultivation, I would have already begun ruling an area and proclaimed it to the world, but he is a wolf in sheep's clothing, not letting go of any chance to deceive the enemy.

There were some who sighed: Both sides have yet to clash, but Fang Yuan has already started to mislead the enemy. This is a confrontation between information and tactics! This battle has already started since Myriad Year Flying Warship appeared in the River of Time.

Fang Yuan had his own plan.

If he could keep his rank eight cultivation a secret, he would not expose it.

Because once it was exposed, the secret of the sovereign immortal body would no longer be hidden.

In the previous life, this secret was exposed, but in this life, this secret seemed to still be undiscovered.

“As for the secret of my rebirth, it will probably be exposed after this battle.” Fang Yuan estimated inwardly.

Let it be exposed then!

Fang Yuan felt it was time for it to be known.

The significance of this battle was extremely huge.

Although Fang Yuan was cautious and careful all along and paid close attention to the ink effect, he would not hesitate when it was time to make a move.

Advancing or retreating, attacking or defending, Fang Yuan was well-versed and experienced in this.

A pavilion was floating in the River of Time.

It was not covered on all four sides, it was very simplistic in appearance. The cover was made of yellow grass, the pillars were grey white rocks that were not polished. There was a folding screen in the pavilion consisting of multiple panels, it was the most elegant decoration in there.

It was the rank seven Immortal Gu House Present and Past Pavilion.

Four Central Continent time path Gu Immortals were standing inside the pavilion, they were the Four Xunzi.

They had detected Myriad Year Flying Warship the moment it appeared.

The Four Xunzi immediately reported this information to Fairy Zi Wei without daring to delay a second.

“Fang Yuan has finally appeared.”

“Yes, we did not waste our time by waiting here for so long.”

“He is still a rank seven, but has a rank eight Immortal Gu House!”

“What Immortal Gu House is this? I have never heard about it.”

“From the looks of it, it should be a time path Immortal Gu House, right?”

The Four Xunzi did not attack immediately.

As far as they were concerned, Present and Past Pavilion was specialized in investigating within the River of Time, they were still very far away from Fang Yuan at this moment. They discovered Fang Yuan but Fang Yuan could not see them.

They were only at rank seven in the end, it was only because they cultivated time path that the supreme Heavenly Court noticed them and stationed them here.

Moreover, the Four Xunzi were not Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, their next course of action would depend on Fairy Zi Wei’s arrangements and commands.

Myriad Year Flying Warship carried Fang Yuan while floating slowly. Fang Yuan was looking at all directions from the bow as if he was searching for something.

“Looks like Fang Yuan is searching for Red Lotus true inheritance.”

“He did not discover us indeed.”

“Lady Zi Wei has not sent a command yet?”

Inside Present and Past Pavilion, the Four Xunzi were tightly observing Fang Yuan.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei was first happy then puzzled.

She was happy that Fang Yuan had finally appeared!

It was less scary when he appeared, the worst was him hiding and doing things secretly.

In truth, every day that Fang Yuan did not appear would increase the mental pressure on Fairy Zi Wei, wondering what evil scheme Fang Yuan was plotting!

But now that Fang Yuan appeared, Fairy Zi Wei finally let out a sigh of relief.

“Good, come! Let me see how much you have grown, I will make good use of this chance to kill you.” Killing intent spread inside Fairy Zi Wei: “As for that rank eight Immortal Gu House, is it your reliance and source of confidence, Fang Yuan?”

Fairy Zi Wei also was somewhat bewildered.

This rank eight Immortal Gu House had appeared with no prior signs!

According to common sense, even a super force would not be able to hide the construction of an Immortal Gu House and there would be many traces left behind. Because there were too many things to gather and prepare.

The construction process of an Immortal Gu House would make quite a bit of commotion and would be discovered by others.

Fang Yuan naturally was not exempted from this. But his accumulation process had happened in his previous life, so Fairy Zi Wei could not sense it.

“How could Fang Yuan suddenly have a time path Immortal Gu House, and it is a rank eight one?”

“What abilities and powers does this ship shaped Immortal Gu House have?”

Thoughts were constantly colliding in Fairy Zi Wei’s mind, Central Great Hall was quickly pervaded with purple qi.

She rapidly deduced and soon came to a decision.

She estimated this Immortal Gu House had limited strength even though it was at rank eight level. Because it had appeared too suddenly and there was no records of such a ship in the history, it was likely a hasty and experimental work of Fang Yuan.

Moreover, whether it was strong or weak, Heavenly Court would still need to probe it and stop Fang Yuan from obtaining Red Lotus' true inheritances.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly commanded Qing Ye to hurry to the location of Present and Past Pavilion with Eternal Yacht.

An accurate and clear map of the surroundings appeared in her mind.

“When Eternal Yacht meets up with Present and Past Pavilion, they will pincer attack Fang Yuan from the front and back!” Fairy Zi Wei's gaze shone sharply.

Previously, Present and Past Pavilion was monitoring the River of Time while Eternal Yacht was moving everywhere in search of Red Lotus' true inheritance. Currently, Eternal Yacht was already rushing over under Fairy Zi Wei's command.

The Four Xunzi also quickly received Fairy Zi Wei's command.

“We need to move! Based on Fang Yuan's speed and direction, he will soon escape Present and Past Pavilion's detection range.”

“We will attack first and delay Fang Yuan, luring him to this area. Then Eternal Yacht will sneak attack them from behind!”

“Move out!”

The Four Xunzi controlled Present and Past Pavilion to make the River of Time send out waves.

The water waves moved towards Myriad Year Flying Warship like countless soldiers.

“They finally made a move!” Inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, a variant human Gu Immortal said softly and excitedly.

Fang Yuan had intentionally appeared near Present and Past Pavilion to lure them into attacking.

“Lord sect leader is so naughty, he clearly discovered Present and Past Pavilion already but is acting like he did not. The enemy has taken the bait.” Lady White Rabbit’s long eyebrows fluttered, her eyes were glistening brightly like shiny crystals, having learned another sneaky move.

“Hmm?” Fang Yuan gasped lightly, his brows slightly furrowed as he sensed the anomaly in the river.

The slight changes in his expression were seen clearly by the Four Xunzi.

“Fang Yuan discovered something.”

“He is controlling that rank eight Immortal Gu House to move towards us.”

“Relax, we are very far away from him... ah, so fast!”

Myriad Year Flying Warship’s speed greatly shocked the Four Xunzi.

They were still calm and leisurely at the previous moment, but right now, their expression changed, their minds and bodies shook.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was piercing through the waves like a swordfish, charging extremely quickly towards Present and Past Pavilion.

“Increase the intensity!” The eldest among the Four Xunzi, Shang Xunzi, shouted.

Present and Past Pavilion let out dazzling light, tall waves that were dozens of feet high submerged Myriad Year Flying Warship like a tsunami.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Myriad Year Flying Warship was covered in a silver white light, every time the waves collided with it, its speed increased even more, charging forward like an unmatched sword.

The Four Xunzi's expressions turned pale, their eyes showing horror.

Fang Yuan's charge was too quick and too fierce, they felt extremely uneasy now.

Zhong Xunzi shouted: "Quick, use that move."

The radiance around Present and Past Pavilion turned brighter, it was like a vast light pillar that shot towards the sky.

Under Present and Past Pavilion's influence, the water around Myriad Year Flying Warship experienced a strange change, turning into a giant whirlpool in the blink of an eye.

The whirlpool spun quickly and was barely able to immobilize Myriad Year Flying Warship.

The Four Xunzi finally let out a sigh of relief.

"We finally immobilized it."

"This Immortal Gu House is so fast, it crossed such a large distance in just a few breaths of time."

"But it is already trapped by us now."

"Let's probe what abilities it has."

The whirlpool rotated even faster, waves changed, turning into the shape of sawteeth.

Countless sawteeth moved around Myriad Year Flying Warship, biting and sawing at Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was trapped in the center of the whirlpool but Fang Yuan's expression was cold and uncaring.

Xun Guo Zi revealed a frightened expression: "Such a sturdy Immortal Gu House, the sawtooth whirlpool is actually unable to break its defensive light!"

Xia Xunzi patted Xun Guo Zi's shoulder and comforted: "Relax, it has not even been ten breaths of time, it will definitely crumble apart once it is bitten and sawed for a longer time!"

Although he said this, the Four Xunzi were inwardly astonished.

They were deeply aware of the power that this sawtooth whirlpool killer move had, this move was the strongest offensive method of Present and Past Pavilion, ordinary Gu Immortals would be cut into pieces in a blink of an eye, even the Four Xunzi could not last three breaths of time. Even Present and Past Pavilion would be unstable if it entered the whirlpool and a large amount of its Gu worms would immediately die. But Myriad Year Flying Warship was completely intact and even looked like it was doing quite well?

The Four Xunzi felt a chill rising up their backs.

"It is a rank eight Immortal Gu House after all!"

"Where has Eternal Yacht reached now?"

"No, the situation is bad!" Xun Guo Zi suddenly shouted.

The other three Xunzi quickly looked ahead, they saw the water surrounding Myriad Year Flying Warship change rapidly, the original sawtooth whirlpool transformed into rapids that shone in a silver-white color.

The rapids moved under Myriad Year Flying Warship and enlarged by over ten times within a few seconds.



“Present and Past Pavilion has methods to control the river water, how could our Myriad Year Flying Warship not have them!” The variant human Gu Immortals laughed loudly inside the ship.

“Kill.” Fang Yuan gave an indifferent command.

Boom!

Like a torrential waterfall or a flash flood, the rapids around Myriad Year Flying Warship surged and expanded as it moved forward.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was pushed forward by the rapids, easily breaking past the ruined sawtooth whirlpool and charging towards the Four Xunzi with surging momentum.

The Four Xunzi took in breaths of cold air, the sawtooth whirlpool that they had put their hopes in had only held back Myriad Year Flying Warship for less than fifty breaths of time.

# Chapter 1806 - Zi Wei At A Loss

Chapter 1806 Zi Wei At A Loss

“It is coming!”

“Block it!!”

“Increase the power of Present and Past Pavilion to the maximum!”

With chaotic thoughts, Four Xunzi exerted Present and Past Pavilion to its limits, the screen in the pavilion emitted dense smoke and the light pillar that shot out was almost solid.

Myriad Year Flying Warship neared Present and Past Pavilion.

“Ram into it.” Fang Yuan sneered, standing arrogantly on the bow of the boat.

But at the next moment, Present and Past Pavilion retaliated with all its strength, sharply slowing down Myriad Year Flying Warship’s charging momentum.

“Killer move — Slowdown?” Fang Yuan was familiar with this move, under his command, the silver light around Myriad Year Flying Warship suddenly concentrated.

Swoosh!

With a light sound, Present and Past Pavilion’s killer move was broken, Myriad Year Flying Warship’s speed was restored and it collided with Present and Past Pavilion.

Present and Past Pavilion was not specialized in defense, Fang Yuan had destroyed it by himself back then, and now, it collided with the sturdier and faster Myriad Year Flying Warship, it shattered immediately.

The pavilion roof was sent flying, the pillars crumbled, the screens were shattered, the pavilion base was reduced to fragments.

The Four Xunzi coughed out a large amount of blood and fell down into the River of Time.

Without the protection of Present and Past Pavilion, the Four Xunzi lost the ability to retaliate against Fang Yuan. In just a short while, they were all killed by Fang Yuan.

They were at rank seven, and like Liu Hao, had not joined Heavenly Court, so they still had their own immortal apertures.

Their Immortal Gu, however, were all detonated.

Fang Yuan had just collected their corpses as well as the scattered Immortal Gu when Eternal Yacht arrived.

Rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye was standing on Eternal Yacht, his expression immediately changed when he saw the Four Xunzi's corpses on the deck of Myriad Year Flying Warship: "Fang Yuan, you demon, I will make you pay with your life!"

Fang Yuan turned around and smiled: "Here comes another one seeking death."

There was no exchange of words, the rapids under Myriad Year Flying Warship surged and rushed towards Eternal Yacht.

Its violent and sharp movement immediately caused a disturbance among the Gu Immortals in Eternal Yacht.

Bursting veins bulged on Qing Ye's forehead, he rubbed it but still sent out a wise command: "We will avoid it, don't fight head-on with this rank eight Immortal Gu House."

The Four Xunzi were dead but the battle details had already been sent, Fairy Zi Wei and Qing Ye knew much information about Myriad Year Flying Warship.

However, would be it easy for Eternal Yacht to escape?

Myriad Year Flying Warship's speed rose, breaking the limits it showed before.

Although this Immortal Gu House was called a warship, it had the shape of a boat, it moved like a silver comet now, rapidly surfing along the River of Time!

Eternal Yacht had the form of a multi-storied ship, it was much larger than Myriad Year Flying Warship, but it was not fast. How could it be able to dodge?

Boom!

With a huge sound, Eternal Yacht shook as a large hole was smashed in its front hull from which the inside could be seen clearly.

Fang Yuan's Myriad Year Flying Warship had directly pierced through Eternal Yacht!

"How is this possible?"

"We had already activated the strongest defensive method of Eternal Yacht, but it could not block even one attack!"

The fact was so horrifying that Qing Ye was staring with wide eyes.

"Lord, that damned Fang Yuan is charging over again." The Gu Immortals inside Eternal Yacht shouted in fright.

They had just spoken when Myriad Year Flying Warship smashed into Eternal Yacht again.

Eternal Yacht shook intensely, Qing Ye lost his balance and staggered. His battle intent was shaking, how could he beat this?

Eternal Yacht's Gu worms suffered enormous damage, the entire place would directly collapse after another few collisions.

Many Gu Immortals were pale with cold sweat all over their faces. Fortunately, they heard Qing Ye's command at this time: "Retreat!"

Eternal Yacht turned around and retreated decisively.

"Can you escape?" Fang Yuan smiled coldly.

Boom boom boom!

Myriad Year Flying Warship collided into Eternal Yacht time after time, Eternal Yacht used its killer moves to retaliate but Fang Yuan had already prepared restraining methods.

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

As long as Heavenly Court did not have any huge change, Fang Yuan would definitely be the final winner!

The outcome of this battle had been decided from the start.

Therefore, when Eternal Yacht was destroyed and Qing Ye fell into the River of Time, Fang Yuan's side was not surprised.

"Kill him!" Without needing Fang Yuan's command, many Gu Immortals inside the warship shouted simultaneously.

Killing intent surged, Myriad Year Flying Warship submerged into the river and rammed at Qing Ye like a vicious shark.

Qing Ye put all his strength in activating defensive methods.

But as a dark path Gu Immortal, he was greatly suppressed in the River of Time.

Boom!

Myriad Year Flying Warship directly destroyed the dark shield and sent him flying.

Qing Ye coughed out a large amount of blood and tried to move to the surface while enduring the intense pain.

The river surface was right in his sight when he made a horrifying discovery, Myriad Year Flying Warship was already waiting for him.

Boom!

There was another huge sound, Myriad Year Flying Warship directly slammed down on Qing Ye's head with its base.

A large part of Qing Ye's skull caved in, the enormous force transmitted through his whole body, shattering his spine, rib bones and other parts.

Gurgle gurgle!

A large amount of water of the River of Time entered through his mouth.

The huge collision slammed him down to the depths of the river like a ball.

"Still not dead?" Bing Yuan was stunned at Qing Ye's stubborn vitality.

"Then, we just have to do it again!" The eyes of the rockman tribe first supreme elder were bloodshot with killing intent.

Taking advantage of the enemy when he was weakened, Myriad Year Flying Warship was like a killer launching a deadly pursuit.

Boom!

With the third collision, Qing Ye was heavily injured once again.

From his right shoulder to his chest, most of his body was smashed into pulp and his organs were completely destroyed.

Qing Ye stared rigidly at Myriad Year Flying Warship, he wanted to struggle but had no strength left.

Finally, he lost his life, becoming a floating corpse.

“He is dead, he really died!”

“This is a rank eight Gu Immortal.”

“We really killed him?!”

The variant human Gu Immortals cheered in joy, even Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan and the rest were visibly moved, Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit were also very excited.

A battle merit like killing a rank eight Gu Immortal was simply too rare. Despite using many external influences, this battle merit was enough for them to boast about it their whole lives.

Fang Yuan collected Qing Ye’s corpse, it was a pity his soul had already dispersed.

“This Qing Ye is quite a fierce person, he actually destroyed his own soul at the end!”

“But this physical body is also an excellent immortal material and it will help me research phantom path.”

Heavenly Court grasped the supreme profundities of phantom path.

Precisely so, after the Heavenly Court members contributed their immortal aperture, they could obtain a phantom aperture and leave Heavenly Court to fight outside.

Once a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal died, the phantom aperture would automatically dissipate along with the Gu worms, even the dao marks would disappear.

In short, even if one won against a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal, they would reap few benefits.

But after annexing Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit had informed Fang Yuan that the corpses of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals would retain the supreme profundity of phantom path. If Fang Yuan could comprehend some phantom path mysteries from these corpses, he might be able to decipher Heavenly Court's phantom path method and even have a hold on Heavenly Court.

Even if he could not do anything to Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan could use this phantom path method on himself.

With the phantom aperture method, Fang Yuan could control Ying Wu Xie and the rest even more strictly, this was the best weapon to ensure loyalty.

Myriad Year Flying Warship continued to sweep through the battlefield.

Fang Yuan's side was joyous, their long training was finally paying off. In this battle, they destroyed two Immortal Gu Houses and over ten Gu Immortals.

Present and Past Pavilion had the Four Xunzi while there were even more Gu Immortals in Eternal Yacht.

Immortal Gu Houses were developed from immortal formations, they needed to be jointly controlled by many Gu Immortals for them to be flexible and comprehensive. Some Immortal Gu Houses had extremely strict requirements on the amount of Gu Immortals, there could not be one more or one less.

Very few Immortal Gu Houses could be controlled by just one person.

None of these Gu Immortals managed to escape with their lives, they were all gathered, corpses put to one side and their souls suppressed.

The battle ended but Fang Yuan was not in a hurry to leave, instead, he patrolled around the river while waiting to see if there would be



reinforcements from Heavenly Court.

Lady White Rabbit, Bing Yuan, Shi Zong, and other Gu Immortals discussed. They were still excited and their topic of discussion was mostly centered on the rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye.

Speaking of which, Qing Ye was quite unlucky.

Eternal Yacht was destroyed and he was highly restricted in the River of Time, it was quite amazing for him to be able to display twenty to thirty percent of his skills.

This was the area with the greatest amount of time path dao marks in the whole world.

Because of this, time path methods were extremely easy to use here and their might was also amplified. But other methods like great thief ghost hand, reverse flow protection seal and so on were greatly suppressed.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei's expression was pale and her gaze was somewhat dazed.

She obtained the latest battle information.

“Fang Yuan controlled the rank eight Immortal Gu House and destroyed both Present and Past Pavilion and Eternal Yacht, even Qing Ye was killed?”

Fairy Zi Wei felt a deep sense of disbelief.

She was still planning on giving commands, even if they could not kill Fang Yuan, they could drive him off.

But the two greatest sources of battle strength that she relied on were eliminated so soon.

“This battle was decided way too quickly!”

“This does not make any sense.”

Present and Past Pavilion and Eternal Yacht might only be at rank seven, but they were both outstanding among their peers, their structure was highly ingenious and they possessed plenty of comprehensive methods.

If not for this, Fairy Zi Wei would not have mobilized the two Immortal Gu Houses to besiege Fang Yuan.

So what was the problem?

“Reviewing the battle information, Fang Yuan’s mysterious Immortal Gu House might be at rank eight but has limited methods. Besides controlling the water of the River of Time to speed up itself, its strongest aspect was physical toughness.”

Myriad Year Flying Warship’s fighting method could be described in one word, collision.

If two words were used, hard collision.

If three words, sped up collision.

This battle tactic was clearly extremely straightforward and simple, but why did it succeed?

That was because during the fight, the methods of Present and Past Pavilion and Eternal Yacht, especially the defensive measures, were instantly destroyed by Fang Yuan!

Fairy Zi Wei stood up from her seat.

She was unable to keep sitting.

A thin layer of cold sweat had appeared on her forehead: “Looks like Fang Yuan has truly been reborn! He has an extremely deep understanding of Present and Past Pavilion and Eternal Yacht, he also prepared the most effective methods against their killer moves. Thus, they appeared fragile and looked like they did not even have strength to retaliate!”

Just like Fang Yuan expected, Fairy Zi Wei, who already had heavy doubts before, was now certain Fang Yuan had been reborn.

“What do we do?”

“Fang Yuan has a rank eight Immortal Gu House now and can move around the River of Time while my side’s three Immortal Gu Houses are still in the construction process.”

“Should I halt the construction? Since he has been reborn, he is probably familiar with these three Immortal Gu Houses.”

“If I halt the construction and switch to other Immortal Gu Houses, would it be too late?”

“Fang Yuan definitely entered the River of Time to search for Red Lotus’ true inheritances. If he succeeds, it will be extremely bad, the consequences will be much worse than the defeat in Lang Ya blessed land!”

At this instant, the ever so resourceful Fairy Zi Wei was at a loss for what to do.

# Chapter 1807 - Public Sentiment

## Chapter 1807 Public Sentiment

Fang Yuan and the rest returned to Southern Border following a tributary of the River of Time.

Despite the immortals being in an excellent condition with high spirits, it was still necessary to rest and reorganize after the battle.

“The gains this time are quite good.” Fang Yuan inspected the corpses.

Besides rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye, most of these Central Continent rank seven Gu Immortals were from Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, they did not have the qualifications to join Heavenly Court so they had not contributed their immortal apertures.

Most of the Gu worms were destroyed but these immortal apertures were still there.

There was also one or two Immortal Gu that were luckily preserved after the two Immortal Gu Houses were destroyed.

In the following period of time, Fang Yuan would need to inspect these immortal apertures and see if there were any issues, if there were no issues, he would annex them.

Naturally, there was a portion of immortal apertures that Fang Yuan could not annex because of inadequate attainment levels.

In fact, there was a portion of such people among the Southern Border immortal captives.

“These battle spoils are only a bonus, the true value of this battle is that I have shrugged off my passive situation, I am now taking the initiative to fight Heavenly Court.”

Fang Yuan had grasped the timing of this battle well.

If he had battled earlier, he would not have the Immortal Gu House Myriad Year Flying Warship and would have to expose his rank eight cultivation.

This was undesirable. Because once his rank eight cultivation was exposed, Heavenly Court would notice Fang Yuan had not underwent the tribulation, and as such, the secret of the sovereign immortal aperture would also be exposed.

If he delayed this battle, Heavenly Court would not have just these two Immortal Gu Houses. In the previous life, Fang Yuan had encountered four time path Immortal Gu Houses.

By destroying Eternal Yacht and Present and Past Pavilion, Heavenly Court fell into a very passive state.

Heavenly Court was afraid Fang Yuan would obtain Red Lotus' true inheritances, so they would definitely send reinforcements to the River of Time to stop Fang Yuan.

After Lord Huang Shi passed, Heavenly Court lacked time path rank eight experts, so they were forced to substitute with Qing Ye and time path Immortal Gu Houses.

Like this, it would give Fang Yuan another chance to attack.

It would be just like how Fang Yuan destroyed Eternal Yacht and Present and Past Pavilion.

But even if Heavenly Court knew of this, they would do their best to stop Fang Yuan no matter how big of a price they had to pay.

“In the previous life, Heavenly Court guarded the River of Time like a fortress. But in this life... hehehe.”

“The River of Time has already become a place Heavenly Court must salvage, it is also the best battlefield for me to weaken Heavenly Court and make them bleed.”

Fang Yuan was almost sure of Heavenly Court’s response.

Just like Heavenly Court had the strategical advantage of possessing fate Gu which forced the four regions’ Gu Immortals to make a long campaign to attack Central Continent and Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan relied on the smokescreen that was Red Lotus’ true inheritance to force Heavenly Court to send reinforcements to the River of Time.

“It is just that my rebirth secret cannot be hidden any longer.”

In the battle of Lang Ya, Fairy Zi Wei had already been suspicious. And in this period of time, Fang Yuan captured the Southern Border immortals and also started a slaughter in the River of Time.

If Fairy Zi Wei was still not sure that Fang Yuan had been reborn, she would not be Fairy Zi Wei!

Fang Yuan would never underestimate Fairy Zi Wei, he was very familiar with her.

Often, the one who understood you the most was not your friend but your enemy.

Sure enough, after a few days, Fairy Zi Wei publicized in treasure yellow heaven that Fang Yuan had reborn and possessed a rank eight time path Immortal Gu House.

The moment this was released, news spread everywhere. Fang Yuan’s influence went up a level and the whole world was in an uproar!

“How long has it been? Fang Yuan has already grown to be a demonic path overlord, a person who is a giant pillar of the demonic path!”

“Fang Yuan already has that Reverse Flow River killer move and can reflect attacks of rank eight Gu Immortals, being in an impregnable position. Now, he has a rank eight Immortal Gu House?”

“Isn’t this too fast? It is like this Immortal Gu House jumped out from the ground out of nowhere.”

“Since he was reborn, the appearance of this Immortal Gu House cannot be considered sudden. Don’t forget that he annexed Lang Ya blessed land which has a deep foundation.”

The discussions naturally involved Heavenly Court.

“Heavenly Court seems to be quite weak, they don’t have any effective methods against Fang Yuan.”

“The mighty Heavenly Court was defeated again and again so they publicized Fang Yuan’s details?”

“It is not that Heavenly Court is weak, but they have no way to deal with Fang Yuan.”

“Normally speaking, even a rank eight demonic immortal would not be as high profile as Fang Yuan.”

“That’s right. Demonic path Gu Immortals have always been alone, if they offend or provoke the righteous path, many forces would collaborate, gather information using information path, deduce their position with wisdom path, and hunt them down. It is like how the Southern Border immortals chased after Fang Yuan.”

“But Fang Yuan? He can actually guard against Heavenly Court’s deductions. He also has Fixed Immortal Travel to move everywhere he wants and is hard to catch. His formation path attainment is also extremely high, he can see through the ambush of formations, he even used a time path formation to ambush and capture the pursuing team of Southern Border!”

“He also annexed Lang Ya blessed land, his refinement path attainment level is at least at great grandmaster level!”

The discussions became much more in-depth, and the Gu Immortals astonishingly discovered Fang Yuan was so versatile. He cultivated so many paths, such a horrifying talent shocked the world.

“I understand now, he is a monster!” Many people took sharp breaths. Most Gu Immortals, even rank eights, cultivated one path primarily. Who could cultivate so many paths like Fang Yuan?

Cultivating multiple paths would divide their time, energy, and resources, the Gu Immortals would often accomplish nothing in the end.

In fact, Fang Yuan had also thought of specializing in one path but he could do nothing about it! Before this, he battled alone and was always pressured by his enemies. Could he do without cultivating wisdom path? Could his battle strength increase if he did not cultivate soul path? Could he capture the Southern Border immortals without formation path?

“We can’t say that. Even if Fang Yuan’s aptitude was worse, as long as he continuously rebirths with Spring Autumn Cicada, he can use the time to accumulate different foundations.”

“Right, with Spring Autumn Cicada, even if he fails, he has the opportunity to rebirth countless times! The experience of failures will still accumulate, even an idiot will succeed after failing so many times.”

“Spring Autumn Cicada... it is indeed worthy of being Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s vital Gu, it has such an amazing power.”

“On the List of Mystical Gu, Spring Autumn Cicada’s ranking should be raised even higher. The current ranking of such a mystical Gu is too low.”

“Because of Fang Yuan, Spring Autumn Cicada’s ranking should indeed be raised, but I feel we should not overestimate Spring Autumn Cicada. It is after all only a Gu worm, there are many methods to restrict it. To a great



extent, the reason why Fang Yuan is so amazing is because he is an otherworldly demon!”

“Indeed. The combination of an otherworldly demon and Spring Autumn Cicada is truly too perfect! Besides an otherworldly demon, it will be very difficult for others to change their lives greatly by using Spring Autumn Cicada.”

Fang Yuan observed the discussions and after careful consideration, he decisively spread the video of the battle in the River of Time in treasure yellow heaven.

He even posted a speech: “Heavenly Court, my counterattack has just begun! Wait until I get Red Lotus’ true inheritance in the River of Time, I will completely destroy your fate Gu. In the previous life, you successfully restored fate Gu, that was because the depths of your foundation surpassed my expectation. There were too few people understanding the situation in the other four regions, many rank eight experts were even secretly restrained by you. There were also many Gu Immortals who were living naively, not knowing the fatal threat of fate Gu. All of you... just you wait!”

The moment this speech was posted, the Gu Immortal world of the five regions fell into temporary silence.

Shortly afterwards, the public sentiment erupted like a volcano and poured like a flood!

“Oh heavens, Fang Yuan is directly provoking Heavenly Court, how many years has it been since something like this happened?”

“Years? Even throughout history, such cases only appeared a few times!”

“Few people can do this, and even fewer people can pose a threat to Heavenly Court!”

“Although Fang Yuan only has rank seven cultivation, he can already match rank eight. He has annexed Lang Ya blessed land and has a large number of variant human Gu Immortal subordinates as well as a rank eight Immortal

Gu House! The even more terrifying thing is he seems to possess precise information about Red Lotus' true inheritance, if he really obtains the Demon Venerable's true inheritance... Terrifying!"

"If this continues, Fang Yuan will become a new Demon Venerable!"

"Sigh, the common people are innocent, is there going to be a Demon Venerable wrecking havoc again?"

"We cannot lightly make an enemy out of Fang Yuan. Look at this video properly, all the killer moves of Heavenly Court's two Immortal Gu Houses were broken by Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan had clearly experienced them in the previous life and found the countermeasures in this life. The combination of Spring Autumn Cicada and an otherworldly demon is too unreasonable!"

The discussions gradually started to contain fear.

Fear towards Fang Yuan.

Previously, Gu Immortal mostly felt wariness, hatred, and envy towards Fang Yuan.

But now, fear began to gradually take over the other emotions.

The Gu Immortals already knew Fang Yuan could not be provoked easily, but now, Fang Yuan could not be provoked even more! Even a colossal super force like Heavenly Court, the strongest righteous path force in the five regions, was repeatedly wrecked by Fang Yuan and their prestige was ruthlessly stepped on! Even now, they had no way to deal with Fang Yuan!

Southern Border, Wu clan.

Wu Yong's gaze was gloomy: "Fang Yuan... Heavenly Court..."

Chi clan.

Chi Qu You's expression was ashen, he finally realized the possibility: "The traitor has not been found, maybe... this is the information revealed in the

previous life. If I did transactions with Fang Yuan in the previous life as well, doesn't that mean — I am the traitor?"

Thinking of this, Chi Qu You felt stunned himself.

Western Desert, Tang clan.

The first supreme elder and second supreme elder were in a secret discussion.

"This demon Fang Yuan is becoming increasingly stronger. If his relationship with our clan is exposed, Heavenly Court will definitely eliminate us."

"We have already collaborated with Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan is so strong now that we cannot stop this connection, we will have to be even more careful. If he truly becomes a Demon Venerable in the future, it will also be an excellent opportunity for our Tang clan to grow."

Xi clan.

Xi clan's first supreme elder, who was cultivating in a secret room, laughed: "Interesting. Heavenly Court wants the whole world to go against Fang Yuan. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan also expressed the weakness of Heavenly Court and its hidden threat, hoping that Gu Immortals of the four regions would jointly attack Heavenly Court."

"Forget about him for now, I will continue my closed cultivation. After my cultivation progresses further, let's see how the heroes of the world will act in front of my sword."



# Chapter 1808 - Plotting, Pursuing Dao

## Chapter 1808 Plotting, Pursuing Dao

Heavenly Court, immortal graveyard.

An inexplicable change was occurring.

A lump of fire appeared, it was very small at first but after a while, the fire expanded rapidly, dying the sky of the immortal graveyard red.

This fire illuminated the surroundings, attracting Fairy Zi Wei and other Heavenly Court members' attention.

Fairy Zi Wei immediately rushed to the entrance of the immortal graveyard and saw that the fire had grown even brighter, there were even specks of silver light in the fire, like countless diamonds adorning a red curtain.

The fire dissipated and an aged Gu Immortal wearing a large crimson robe walked out from the depths of the immortal graveyard.

The diamond-like lights gathered together and inside the gentle light was an old man who slowly moved forward in a wooden wheelchair.

Fairy Zi Wei's eyes shone happily, she recognized these two elderly Gu Immortals.

That crimson robed elderly man was Li Huang, a fire path great expert. And the elderly man on the wooden wheelchair was Gu Liu Ru, a time path great expert.

“Junior Zi Wei pays respects to both seniors.” Fairy Zi Wei bowed as she greeted.

Gu Liu Ru nodded without speaking. He was sickly pale and thin as a skeleton. He had a rough life experience and the lower half of his body was paralyzed with no cure available, thus he had a cold and detached disposition.

Li Huang spoke: “We did not wake up for no reason. Heavenly Court must need our strength, how is the situation now?”

Fairy Zi Wei felt ashamed as she informed the two of them about the current situation.

“Fang Yuan? I did not think such a demon would appear in the world!”

“Hmph, throughout the ages, there has always been chaos and disorder during the coming of a great era. But this demon is too savage in his rampage. The fundamental cause is that he is the seed planted by Red Lotus Demon Venerable.”

Li Huang snorted coldly, his expression was of anger and dissatisfaction.

Gu Liu Ru’s expression was cold like ice as he said: “Fortunately, the overall situation is still in our control. When fate Gu is restored in a few years, Heavenly Court will be in an invincible position, by then, even if Fang Yuan is stronger, he won’t be able to make a huge impact.”

He then said to Fairy Zi Wei: “You are a wisdom path Gu Immortal, it is right for you to lead Heavenly Court. If you have any tasks for us old timers, there is no need to hold back.”

Joy appeared on Fairy Zi Wei’s face: “Seniors, you have just woken up, you should first rest and recover your battle strength by equipping yourselves with Immortal Gu.”

“We have lost control over the River of Time and are currently constructing time path Immortal Gu Houses without regard for the costs. We also need to

lay down the river suppression lotus sealing formation in the River of Time. Seniors, it would be great if you could guard the River of Time.”

Gu Liu Ru and Li Huang glanced at each other, before the former nodded while the latter laughed: “So be it. Let us deal with this Little Demon Venerable!”

Based on just battle strength, Li Huang was stronger than Gu Liu Ru, but Fairy Zi Wei was more excited about Gu Liu Ru’s appearance.

This time path great expert had woken up at just the right time, filling up the gap of Heavenly Court in the time path aspect and relieving Fairy Zi Wei’s urgent issue!

“But Fang Yuan has been reborn, does he know about the awakening of these seniors?”

Fairy Zi Wei frowned again when she thought of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan could rebirth, it was extremely troublesome to deal with such an enemy, it would always make others doubt their decisions.

Fairy Zi Wei did not know that in the previous life, only Li Huang had woken up. Gu Liu Ru had woken up in the final period when Longevity Heaven attacked Heavenly Court. At that time, Gu Liu Ru fought Hei Fan to a deadlock, he was finally killed by Liu Liu Liu’s sneak attack.

Fang Yuan had made an early attack, destroying Eternal Yacht and Present and Past Pavilion, also killing Qing Ye, the ink effect caused Gu Liu Ru to awaken in advance.

This rank eight great expert would definitely be a huge obstruction to Fang Yuan in an environment like the River of Time.

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Central Continent.

Fang Yuan’s divine sense covered this marsh.

There was highly fertile silt here. There was also a clear knee-deep river above the layer of silt.

This was the resource point Fang Yuan had just constructed.

The marsh was vast and boundless.

A bud of the desolate plant extreme marsh flower, as big as a house, could be seen every few kilometers.

When the extreme marsh flower bloomed, it looked like a trumpet with its petals connected. They were primarily white with a few parts bearing slight hints of pink.

Strands of white mist started rising slowly from the pistils of the extreme marsh flowers.

Extreme marsh flower mist was the food of regret Gu.

Feeding regret Gu was slightly troublesome as its food was hard to store. The extreme marsh flower mist needed to be fresh, so the best method was to construct a corresponding resource point in the immortal aperture.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan had constructed this marsh but that was after obtaining regret Gu.

In this life, he was extremely wealthy so he constructed it in advance. Although he had not obtained regret Gu yet, it was a preparation for the future; when he obtained regret Gu, there would be no need to worry about its food.

Fang Yuan solved the food issue of even regret Gu, which he had yet to obtain in advance. He was already able to self-sufficiently provide food for all his Immortal Gu.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had even created a resource point for the rank eight Immortal Gu Addition that he plundered from Ba Shi Ba. He marked a special sea area in Mini Eastern Sea, in which he introduced another whole



new group of water spiders to produce sufficient food for the rank eight Immortal Gu Addition.

Naturally, these water spiders were extorted from Southern Border's righteous path.

Fang Yuan had already annexed most of the immortal apertures of the Southern Border captives and had even searched their souls until there was nothing left, but Southern Border's righteous path did not know this and accepted Fang Yuan's extortion obediently.

It was like how Heavenly Court did not know the true inheritance left by Red Lotus Demon Venerable to Fang Yuan did not have the direct method to destroy fate Gu, but they still feared for the worst and used all their strength to redeem the situation in the River of Time.

There was a famous phrase on Earth about the art of war: the highest form of generalship is to cut down the enemy's plans, the next best is to cut them off from allies, the next in order is to cut down the enemy's army in the field, and the worst policy of all is to besiege walled cities.

These were wise words!

When people were young, they only cared about fighting. But after growing up, they would gradually realize: fighting was only a third rate method to reach one's target and get benefits.

There was high risk in an intense battle and the benefits are also not fixed, often, there would be damage to both sides. This method could only be used when there was no other choice.

Fang Yuan leaned towards planning and plotting when he did things. He was not a brute, but when there was a necessity to fight, he would pick up his blade with no fear or cowardice.

Naturally, there was a fundamental difference between the Gu Master world and Earth — through cultivation, an individual's strength could surpass the collective force of a group or organization!

Therefore, a person like Spectral Soul Demon Venerable could exist.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable only used one method — Kill!

Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill!

Slaughter everything, destroy heaven, decimate earth.

Heads roll and blood flow.

He did not counter the enemy's plans nor did he cut them off from allies, but he still obtained supreme success.

Why?

Because he cultivated his own Dao!

This was his understanding of heaven and earth, it was his understanding towards himself.

Every person he killed would further increase his perseverance towards improving himself and deepen his understanding of heaven and earth, both of these fueled the growth of his soul path attainment level.

And the growth in his attainment level greatly increased his strength.

If this was Earth and someone did this, they would be seeking death.

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan's previous life, he was already more than a hundred years old when he suddenly comprehended this principle.

From then on, he started to think: What was his Dao? Or rather, what kind of path could he create?

Even now, he did not have a perfect answer to this question.

Over four hundred years had passed since then, he had reborn several times and was still trying to find out the answer.

He only had a vague and blurry direction.

He moved and rolled about in the darkness.

And in this darkness, there were too many hardships, dangers and ferocious beasts that wanted to swallow him whole.

Fang Yuan was clear: Among these ferocious beasts, Heavenly Court was currently the biggest and the strongest one.

He needed to exert all his strength to have a chance of contending with this ferocious beast, escaping from its hunt, and to continue walking on his path.

Both Fang Yuan and Fairy Zi Wei had repeatedly exposed information about each other, hoping to borrow the strength of other Gu Immortals to deal with the other. There was no winner in this fight. It was like the fight between a lion and a tiger, the bloody smell attracting countless hyenas.

He seemed to have an impressive reputation but there were turbulent undercurrents surging in the dark, many people thinking of ways to deal with him and Spring Autumn Cicada.

No one liked the presence of such a threat!

Spring Autumn Cicada was not all-powerful, it was only a rank seven Gu and there were too many ways to restrain it.

Even Lang Ya blessed land had many methods to subdue Spring Autumn Cicada.

In truth, Fang Yuan was rather surprised at Heavenly Court not having any effective methods against Spring Autumn Cicada.

The Little Demon Venerable title seemed to show unlimited prospects, but it concealed deep killing intent. This was reminding the world that if Fang Yuan was not killed and he grew up to be a Demon Venerable, the future would be bleak for everyone!

Fang Yuan might have obtained victory in the River of Time and gotten hold of the initiative. But he was clear that this was only a small strategical victory and it could not put a dent on Heavenly Court's overall strategy.

Just like the game of chess, he only made a single good move and although he turned from passive to active which was worth celebrating, Heavenly Court still had the overall control of the game. And this Heavenly Court, that had countless years of accumulation, was the chess piece that was placed by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable over three million years ago.

“With Heavenly Court's foundation, the ink effect should appear again and some powerful characters might awaken in the immortal graveyard.”

“The most important thing is still to use every second and do everything I can to increase my strength.”

Fang Yuan did not become prideful due to victory, his joy lasted a very short moment before he dived into cultivating once again.

It was not an exaggeration to say that he was making full use of every second!

Soul cultivation progressed smoothly. Fang Yuan's soul stably progressed from one desolate soul to three desolate soul, five desolate soul, eight desolate soul... and finally, broke through to ten desolate soul.

Five restriction profound light qi was already practised to the point of proficiency. Fang Yuan even modified it, although this modification was rather small, it allowed Fang Yuan to alter the method and suit his habits so that he would have ease when activating it.

Fang Yuan began to practise other killer moves, like Ba Shi Ba's consecutive hit method.

In this period of time, he went out frequently and used jade flow pearl to make early moves, obtaining many resources from newly formed Earth Trenches.

Among them, rank seven earth vein Immortal Gu was one significant harvest.

# Chapter 1809 - Seeing Heavenly Cour

## Chapter 1809 Seeing Heavenly Cour

This earth vein Immortal Gu looked like an earthworm, but when it was held, it was quite heavy and did not give a slippery or cold feeling, instead it was warm and gentle.

It was exquisite and translucent like brown amber.

With this rank seven earth path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could construct the five regional limit formation.

Regarding the five regional limit formation's modification, Fang Yuan's time path clone had smoothly completed it. There was the support of the light of wisdom as well as Fang Yuan's formation path and rule path foundation being deep enough.

The new five regional limit formation added earth vein Immortal Gu as well as Formation Spirit and Formation Flag.

With the Formation Spirit, Fang Yuan would have a powerful assistant to help him control the whole formation and notice any signs of disturbance.

With Formation Flag, Fang Yuan could move the whole formation directly from his immortal aperture to the outside or move back the formation from the outside five regions to his immortal aperture.

The immemorial year beast fishing formation was activated all the time and the progress was stable.

The year essence pool already had over twenty immemorial year beasts with as many as seven species.

Over half the species were gathered, but Fang Yuan was unsure if all the species could be gathered, this depended on luck.

To strengthen his luck, Fang Yuan commanded hairy man Gu Immortals to begin refining luck path Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had an enormous amount of Immortal Gu, already passing one hundred, but he did not have many luck path Immortal Gu.

Since he had the luck path true inheritance, once luck path Immortal Gu were refined, he could immediately put the inherited methods to use.

Moreover, Heavenly Court's foundation in luck path was shallow.

Thus, the effect of raising his strength in terms of luck path would show obvious yield.

As for luck path immortal materials, although they were rare and hard to gather, Fang Yuan had the Southern Border righteous path to extort materials from.

The moment these luck path immortal materials were gathered, Fang Yuan made the hairy man Gu Immortals start the Gu refinement.

Because they were not advancing the ranks of the Immortal Gu and were only refining rank six luck path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could bear the losses even if the refinement failed.

He had enough foundation currently and was extremely wealthy, an enormous difference compared to his previous life at the same time period.

As for the practice of immortal killer moves, five restriction profound light qi could be put aside now. Although he did not practice time cutting edge, Fang Yuan had gained many new insights.

He had a clearer understanding of the true essence of this move now: This move was like an eraser, it could use time path power to erase the enemy but also consumed the user at the same time.

The flaw of memory erasing by this move could not be removed. This was determined by the structure of time cutting edge, once this flaw was removed, the whole killer move's framework would be overturned.

If that happened, time cutting edge's extremely powerful offensive characteristic would also disappear completely.

Fang Yuan had no choice but to accept this flaw.

The main body made a lot of progress, his clones' progress was even bigger.

The pure dream clone's soul was gradually transforming and matching the body.

Fang Yuan's dragonman clone had already advanced to become a rank six dragonman Gu Immortal and possessed a high grade blessed land.

Fang Yuan began to spare more time towards exploring dream realms.

Over this period of time, he and Chi Qu You had carried out many transactions, and there were already a lot of dream realms in his immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan's soul left the body and entered a qi path dream realm.

His vision changed, and at the next moment, he was standing on top of a hill. Fog filled his sight and chilling wind blew around him.

He looked at himself, he was a rank six Gu Immortal and was in a miserable state. His body was filled with injuries with some wounds still bleeding.

"What is this?" Just as Fang Yuan was pondering, there was a rustle of wind behind him, the fog dissipated and three inkman Gu Immortals appeared.



“Wei Yu Shu, where do you think you’re going?!”

“Die!!!”

Three killer moves slashed towards Fang Yuan.

This change was too sudden, Fang Yuan had yet to familiarize himself with his Gu worms when he already fell into a life and death situation!

Boom!

At the next moment, his body exploded into pieces, dying miserably.

Fang Yuan exited the dream realm and returned to reality.

“I did not expect I would encounter such an obstacle immediately after entering the dream realm, and even dying.”

He inspected the injuries on his soul.

What was beyond his expectation was that there were only light injuries on his soul, which could be healed with one hundred guts Gu.

“Looks like after my soul advanced to desolate soul, the soul’s quality changed and can bear stronger backlash from dream realms.”

Fang Yuan rested for a while before continuing to explore the dream realm.

It was the same dream, Fang Yuan immediately inspected his Gu worms.

He only had one Immortal Gu, it had the shape of a cockroach and was grey-white, like the texture of a stone, but was quite light. It gave a cold and slightly rough feeling to the touch.

Fang Yuan quickly found the details of this Gu in his memories: “This is qi flow Gu.”

A rank six qi flow Immortal Gu.

Besides this, there were a large number of rank five qi path mortal Gu.

There were also three immortal materials; black iron qi, orchid vitality qi, and moving dragon qi.

Fang Yuan was slightly stunned: “Qi flow Gu only has support characteristics, how can I block the pursuing troops with just these mortal Gu?”

Just as he was thinking, a loud shout sounded from behind him.

“Wei Yu Shu, where do you think you’re going?!”

“Die!!!”

Bam.

Fang Yuan was once again cut into pieces.

Returning to reality, Fang Yuan pondered while treating his injuries: “Based on the current situation, it is obvious that I need to activate immortal killer moves to be able to resist the three pursuing troops.”

“Qi path immortal killer move huh...”

Fang Yuan’s qi path attainment level was low, but he had plenty of resources.

Even without Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance and Giant Sun’s true inheritance, Shadow Sect’s true inheritance contained many inheritances and had records of a lot of qi path killer moves. Lang Ya Sect also had many in its collection.

Even if he did not have these, just based on the enormous number of qi path Immortal Gu recipes in Lang Ya Sect and his refinement path attainment level, Fang Yuan could refine immortal killer moves.

On top of this rich theoretical foundation, Fang Yuan used the light of wisdom and soon thought of a killer move that could resolve the first

obstacle of the dream realm.

However, he was a stranger to qi path killer moves.

Therefore, he began to practice them.

Naturally, he did not have qi flow Immortal Gu, but he could more or less imitate its moves and practice them.

When he returned to the dream realm, Fang Yuan finally had confidence.

After trying several times, Fang Yuan activated the killer move successfully.

His whole body was covered in a pitch-black armor, the pursuing three Gu Immortals could no longer kill him instantly.

“Wei Yu Shu, you dare to retaliate!”

“A mere slave has such guts!”

“You offended your master, you deserve to die! Kill him, mash him into pulp.”

The three inkman Gu Immortals shouted as they surrounded and attacked Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was able to resist for a while before he was killed by the three.

Coming out of the dream realm, Fang Yuan summarized his experience: “Looks like I need to prioritize escape instead of fighting them.”

In the next attempt, he did not use the previous moves but instead changed to a movement immortal killer move.

He failed once but succeeded in the next attempt.

This success brought Fang Yuan to the second stage of the dream realm.

Guh.

Before he had time to size up his surroundings, he coughed out a mouthful of blood.

“I am heavily injured and the immortal materials have been expended greatly.” Fang Yuan’s mind sank slightly.

Although he had only qi flow Immortal Gu, he could use this Immortal Gu as the core and use the three immortal materials as supplementary to activate immortal killer moves.

Black iron qi could transform into a dark full body armor.

Orchid vitality qi could heal him.

Moving dragon qi was used for movement.

In the first stage of the dream realm, Fang Yuan had escaped the pursuit of the three Gu Immortals by using moving dragon qi.

Currently, Fang Yuan had entered the second stage and immediately discovered that moving dragon qi was expended by over half, iron qi was expended by half, while orchid vitality qi was intact with no expenditure.

“This situation is not good, let’s heal first.” Fang Yuan silently prepared and activated an immortal killer move — Orchid Breath.

As immortal essence was transferred to activate the killer move, orchid vitality qi was instantly expended by a small portion.

Fang Yuan gulped and his cheeks suddenly puffed up, he opened his mouth and breathed out.

The smell of his breath was fragrant and full of vitality, it was like a dense light-green fog that quickly covered his whole body.

When the fog disappeared after a while, Fang Yuan’s injuries were mostly recovered.

“Where should I go now?” Fang Yuan felt troubled.

Currently, he was in a cave which looked like it might be in a mountain or underground. The cave was long and had many paths that extended in all directions.

Fang Yuan had just walked a few steps when he saw an inkman Gu Immortal coming from the front.

This inkman Gu Immortal saw Fang Yuan and was dazed at first before shouting in joy: “Wei Yu Shu! So you were here. Hahaha, this is great, you actually ran into me, this merit is mine. The saying is not wrong, arriving at the right time is better than arriving early!”

Fang Yuan was also surprised, this inkman Gu Immortal was not one of the three Gu Immortals in the first stage. He was someone new. More importantly, he was not a rank six, but a rank seven variant human Gu Immortal.

The rank seven inkman Gu Immortal pounced towards Fang Yuan, how could Fang Yuan be his opponent, all his bones were broken as he fell limply on the ground.

The inkman Gu Immortal sneered while looking down at Fang Yuan: “Wei Yu Shu, weren’t you so wild? You never expected to fall in my hands, right? Hahaha, to tell the truth, even I had not expected this. You lived so extravagantly and were doted on by the princess but you were actually stupid enough to run away, you really brought it upon yourself!!”

At the next moment, Fang Yuan’s soul returned to reality with injuries.

“This means even if I am captured and am not killed, it is considered a failure.”

“Looks like this dream realm is an escape dream realm.”

“In that situation, there is indeed no way to contend against a rank seven Gu Immortal.”

“Again!”

Fang Yuan entered the second stage of the dream realm.

He tried many times and failed repeatedly. He discovered there were many inkman Gu Immortals chasing after him, five rank six Gu Immortals and three rank sevens.

They were all inkman Gu Immortals.

Adding on the information revealed by that rank seven Gu Immortal, Fang Yuan had a rough guess about the time period of the dream realm.

It was not the Remote Antiquity Era but Olden Antiquity Era.

Variant humans were still powerful.

There were many Gu Immortals chasing him and they all had plentiful methods. Fang Yuan failed again and again but he was not discouraged, and soon, he found an opportunity to escape.

Inside this mountain cave tunnel, there were several qi path immortal materials. One of them, autumn scale concealment qi was the biggest help to him.

Finally, Fang Yuan used the experience from his failed attempts and collected the immortal materials to activate a killer move, he smoothly passed the second stage.

At the third stage, Fang Yuan discovered to his surprise that the dream realm progressed automatically and he could not interfere at all.

He was collapsed on the ground.

In front of him was a beautiful female inkman immortal.

Her body was overflowing with rank eight aura and her gaze towards Fang Yuan contained anger, hatred, as well as love and pity.

“Wei Yu Shu, when I bought you back then, you were only a kid who did not even know about cultivation!”

“I taught you step by step and raised you into a Gu Immortal. Was it my protection and indulgence that allowed you to have such guts?”

“Tell me, why did you betray me?”

“Have I, Princess Ye Tong, mistreated you?! You lived in luxury and peace, you only needed to serve me and I have never treated you cruelly.”

The rank eight female inkman immortal asked sharply.

Wei Yu Shu smiled sadly: “But, even if I lived a much better life, I was still only your slave!”

The female inkman immortal was furious: “What is bad about becoming my slave? Many inkmen want to live your life but don’t get such a chance!”

Wei Yu Shu was dazed for a moment before he spoke slowly: “I did not think it was bad before, but when I heard there was a Heavenly Court in this world where humans live...”

“So, you want to run to Heavenly Court?” The female inkman immortal sneered: “You are too naive, you actually believe in the temptation of these devils?!”

Wei Yu Shu closed his eyes, his voice was hoarse: “It is not that I believe it, but I want to believe it.”

The female inkman immortal’s gaze turned slightly dazed and her anger slowly dissipated.

She recalled the beautiful memories of the past, how she had spoiled this foreign race’s slave, but those days would never return.

She said regretfully: “Yu Shu, I have pardoned your mistakes many times, but I cannot do it this time. If I pardon you anymore, it will damage the dignity of my race. If I had not personally come out, you would have actually escaped. My effort in raising you was not in vain after all. The truth is, this place is very close to the sphere of influence under Heavenly Court.”

These words seemed to have injected a gust of strength in Wei Yu Shu, he suddenly opened his eyes and stared at the female inkman immortal.

He begged: “I don’t have any wish before my death, but I only have one thought, please let me climb out of this cave and take one glance at Heavenly Court.”

The female inkman immortal was silent for a while before sighing: “Alright.”

She moved to the side, Wei Yu Shu used his bloodied hands to slowly crawl out with all his strength.

He was breathing roughly, his sweat and blood mixed together. it was a short distance, but he had to spend a good while to move to the cave entrance.

This cave entrance was located at the middle part of the mountain, it could see far and wide.

He looked ahead with hope.

However, he only saw dense mist.

“It is really unfortunate, but mist is a common occurrence around mountains.” The female inkman immortal walked from behind: “But even if there was no mist, you won’t see Heavenly Court. I said this is only a place near the sphere of influence under Heavenly Court. But it is only a barren land.”

Wei Yu Shu, however, seemed to have obtained utmost satisfaction.

He lied on the ground powerlessly with no strength left to raise his head again.

But his eyes shone brightly: “No, I saw it, I saw Heavenly Court.”

“You...” The female inkman immortal was visibly moved.



The moment he finished saying this, Wei Yu Shu's last breath was used up, he died.

The female inkman immortal fell into silence, she stared ahead at the direction of Heavenly Court in silence.

Her expression carried an unprecedented solemnity.

“Heavenly Court!”

# **Chapter 1810 - Extorting Dream Realms**

## Chapter 1810 Extorting Dream Realms

Fang Yuan was an audience throughout the whole third stage of the qi path dream realm.

When this third stage was complete, the whole qi path dream realm also disappeared, Fang Yuan's exploration was completed.

“This dream realm was difficult at the beginning and easy at the end, I had to accumulate experience by going through so many failures in the first two stages, even unravel dream was not too useful.”

“But at the last stage, I directly passed it without having to do anything.”

This was the most comfortable experience for Fang Yuan, being an audience. If he could ‘observe’ every dream realm like this, how wonderful would it be.

“This dream realm's time period was not the Remote Antiquity Era but Olden Antiquity Era.”

“Heavenly Court...”

Fang Yuan's gaze was slightly complicated.

Even though he was Heavenly Court's archenemy, he had to admit the greatness of Heavenly Court.

But shortly afterwards, only a chilly light remained in his eyes: “No matter how great they are, as long as they block my path, I can only use all my strength to destroy them.”

With the successful exploration of this dream realm, Fang Yuan advanced to qi path grandmaster!

The progress was quite big since Fang Yuan had no attainment in qi path previously.

“No wonder that Wei Yu Shu could receive constant special treatment from the Inkman Princess. One of the main reasons must be his talent in qi path.”

Fang Yuan’s biggest realization from this exploration was not related to the dream realm or Heavenly Court, but his soul.

Desolate soul!

After forming a desolate soul, exploring dream realms became much easier.

If it was a human soul, the injuries from this exploration would definitely be much heavier. Although guts Gu could heal the injuries, it was bound to affect the efficiency of the exploration.

Fang Yuan had a flash of inspiration: “Perhaps when I use Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body to explore dream realms, the injuries on the soul will be even lighter than now.”

Just like how Fang Yuan cultivated inside Luo Po Valley using Luo Po wind. Once Fang Yuan’s soul was inside a physical body, the power of Luo Po wind would fall sharply.

If Fang Yuan used a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body to carry his soul to explore dream realms, his soul should be tightly protected by the physical body.

A normal body could not block the power of dream realms. But the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body was different.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan did not know the way to enter dreams with the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body.

If he directly sent the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body into a dream realm, it would move freely inside without any disturbance from the dream realm. But at the same time, it was unable to immerse in the dream, let alone explore the dream realm.

“Next, let’s explore this ice and snow path dream realm.” Fang Yuan moved his gaze.

Fang Yuan had already stored many dream realms inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The qi path dream realm just now was the biggest and it was gone now. This ice and snow path dream realm took the place as the biggest dream realm.

Besides this dream realm, there were also dream realms of qi path, sword path, wood path, and so on.

“I have desolate soul, my efficiency in exploring dream realms is greatly increased. I felt these dream realms were enough before but it looks somewhat insufficient now.”

“Moreover, the dream realms are of different types. Hehe, this is a petty act by Chi Qu You.”

Fang Yuan knew clearly.

Although Chi Qu You continued to transact with Fang Yuan, he could secretly control the formation and because he had obtained many dream path research results, he could distinguish the types of dream realm roughly.

So, when he transacted with Fang Yuan, he was controlling the goods, giving Fang Yuan scattered dream realms of different paths.

There was not even one human path dream realm that Fang Yuan truly wanted. There were also not many dream realms of qi path or ice and snow path.

Yet these dream realms were all useful to Fang Yuan.

Or even time path dream realms or refinement path dream realms, as long as they were not dream realms which he had already explored before in the previous life.

After all, Fang Yuan's highest attainment level was at quasi-supreme grandmaster, there was still space to advance.

Fang Yuan did not refuse any of these dream realms as these dream realms could increase his attainment levels. Moreover, there was no disadvantage in increasing the attainment levels of all his paths, it was even a good thing as he would not need to worry about this when annexing immortal apertures of related paths in the future.

While Fang Yuan was exploring dream realms, the hairy man Gu Immortals had succeeded in their Gu refinement.

"Lord Fang Yuan, we have refined this Immortal Gu." Sixth Hair handed over an Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu resembled a water droplet that flickered with dazzling lights like a blue diamond, it was smooth and cold when touched.

This was rank six time anchor Immortal Gu.

Although Fang Yuan prioritized refining luck path Immortal Gu, time anchor Immortal Gu was also on the list of Gu to be refined.

The number of Immortal Gu Fang Yuan possessed surpassed one hundred, but he had enough resources and wealth to raise them, so the more Immortal Gu he had, the better.

He had come in touch with time anchor Immortal Gu long ago, it was once the Immortal Gu of Eastern Sea immortal zombie Su Bai Man, it could anchor onto a certain period in time.

Su Bai Man died and time anchor Immortal Gu was acquired by Shadow Sect, but was destroyed in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

Now, Fang Yuan had ordered hairy man Gu Immortals to refine it.

Time anchor Immortal Gu could coordinate with Spring Autumn Cicada to form a killer move that could let Fang Yuan rebirth to a specific period of time.

This killer move was very valuable.

For instance, Fang Yuan could mark this current time and continue to explore dream realms without regard for anything else. At a certain stage, he could use this killer move to return to this time again and continue exploring other dream realms.

His attainment levels in the paths would remain!

Fang Yuan could use this move to continuously increase his attainment levels.

“Unfortunately, I cannot use spring autumn success if I use this killer move. Without a hundred percent success rate, there will be a chance of failure and if I bump into it, it will be akin to suicide, I will end up as the biggest joke.”

Fang Yuan’s time path attainment level might be at quasi-supreme grandmaster and he had the light of wisdom, but the problem here did not originate from himself.

“If I am not wrong, since fate Gu is injured and not destroyed, it can restrict the effectiveness of the killer move made by merging time anchor Immortal Gu into spring autumn success.”

Using Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth was using a loophole of this world. This would disrupt events and change the past, influencing the balance of the world, heaven’s will would not allow such a thing to happen.

For the current Fang Yuan, just using Time Anchor with Spring Autumn Cicada was just enough to use this loophole. Spring autumn success could also make use of this loophole.

But the hole was too small for him to use the both together.

“Looks like only when fate Gu is completely destroyed can Time Anchor effectively merge with spring autumn success.”

The killer moves in Red Lotus’ true inheritance were similar. Even if the killer moves could link to form an even greater might, it did not show a

good result when put into practice.

The dragonman clone had already passed one heavenly tribulation and a dozen earthly calamities, his cultivation was rising sharply.

To quicken dragonman clone's cultivation, Fang Yuan used time path killer move to hasten the rate of time of the dragonman clone's immortal aperture to the limit.

Before each calamity and tribulation, Fang Yuan would deduce the details, thus being well prepared for it.

Because of Fang Yuan's powerful strength, these calamities and tribulations possessed no threat and were like fireworks ceremonies that increased the dao marks of Fang Yuan's dragonman clone.

Fang Yuan had time path methods, and more importantly, he had exposing heavenly secret which made the calamities and tribulations sent by heaven's will ineffective. With the help of his robust strength, these calamities and tribulations were impotent.

At present, Fang Yuan could not only increase a Gu Master's cultivation level, he could even rapidly increase the cultivation level of a Gu Immortal.

But this method could not be advocated.

Because the cost was quite high.

The time path killer move to accelerate the immortal aperture's time flow was a rank eight killer move and expended a large amount of rank eight immortal essence.

Exposing heavenly secret was also not a killer move that could be activated by ordinary wisdom path Gu Immortals.

Adding on the expenses to undergo each tribulation, it only could produce at most a rank seven dragonman clone.

The investment was not proportional to the yield.



If not for Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan would be reluctant to develop the dragonman clone like this.

Southern Border's Beacon Towers were constructed everywhere. And Southern Border's righteous path Gu Immortals began to protest, asking for Fang Yuan to first release some captives to show his sincerity.

Thereupon, Fang Yuan released Yi Yang.

Yi clan was dumbstruck after obtaining Yi Yang.

Because Fang Yuan had only released Yi Yang's body, his soul and immortal aperture were absent!

Just a body was the same as a corpse, what use could it have?!

Southern Border's righteous path were furious but were helpless against Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan persuaded them: The body is only the first step. It shows my sincerity, it is your turn to show sincerity now.

Southern Border's righteous path felt that the future was bleak: If Fang Yuan were to disassemble the captives and extort them, how much could he extort and how long would this extortion last?

Thereupon, they began to make a din.

Fang Yuan's attitude changed to become tough and indifferent, directly threatening every clan: If you want me to release the captives, I will release them to your enemies. Moreover, I will humiliate your clan's Gu Immortals through indescribable ways and make sure he or she would never be able to raise their head in the future.

Fang Yuan had done this in the previous life, he was even more at ease and familiar with this process this time.

Southern Border's righteous path shamefully gave in.

They could do nothing, especially Ba clan and Xia clan, these pitiful clans, had their first supreme elders captured by Fang Yuan.

The other clans had also lost important battle strengths of theirs, if they did not save the captives, they would lose the support of their people.

Fang Yuan then demanded Southern Border's righteous path to use dream realms as the chips to exchange for the captives.

Southern Border's righteous path was not willing at first since dream realms represented the future!

But Fang Yuan guaranteed: I am not asking for a lot and won't empty this place, I will even leave behind most of them for Southern Border's righteous path.

To show even more sincerity, he was willing to release the body of a Gu Immortal captive for every dream realm exchange.

The Southern Border righteous path forces were helpless and could only accept this proposal.

Chi Qu You felt a chill inside, he knew this was Fang Yuan's retaliation and also a warning.

Thereupon, the extortion of Southern Border's righteous path entered the next stage.

Fang Yuan did not go back on his promise, he released a captive's body every time he obtained a batch of dream realms. These dream realms were much larger than the ones he secretly transacted with Chi Qu You. Moreover, Fang Yuan had carefully chosen their paths as well.

Fairy Zi Wei was extremely worried and tried many ways to ruin these transactions, but none of them succeeded.

"It is time for another battle." Fang Yuan calculated the time and rode Myriad Year Flying Warship into the River of Time.

He took the initiative to start the second battle in the River of Time, but he did not know that this time, the time path great expert, Gu Liu Ru, was waiting for him.

# Chapter 1811 - Daybreak Sword

## Chapter 1811 Daybreak Sword

River of Time.

Not long after Fang Yuan entered with Myriad Year Flying Warship, Gu Liu Ru intercepted him.

“You are Fang Yuan? I am Heavenly Court’s Gu Liu Ru, I came to take your life.” Gu Liu Ru was sitting in the wooden wheelchair, his face was sickly pale but his eyes were ice cold.

The moment he finished speaking, lumps of grey-white light shot towards Fang Yuan like meteors.

Boom boom boom!

These grey-white lights were completely blocked by Myriad Year Flying Warship.

But Myriad Year Flying Warship also shook intensely from the explosions.

“This person is a time path great expert!”

“His time path killer move is amplified in the River of Time.”

“Heavenly Court’s foundation is indeed unfathomable, it hasn’t even been that long but an old timer has already appeared.”

The immortals inside Myriad Year Flying Warship were stunned.

“I am afraid you don’t have the ability to take my life.” Fang Yuan sneered.

He was slightly surprised at first, but he recognized this person a moment later.

In the previous life's war, when Longevity Heaven invaded Heavenly Court, Bing Sai Chuan had given all the information of the battle situation in Heavenly Court to Fang Yuan, in order to gain his trust.

And Gu Liu Ru had awakened and participated in that battle.

Therefore, Fang Yuan was able to quickly recognize Gu Liu Ru and even knew about all his methods.

Immediately, Fang Yuan fought Gu Liu Ru with Myriad Year Flying Warship.

The battle ensued, causing astonishing waves in the surroundings.

Gu Liu Ru's moves were exquisite with many concealed moves within them, he was clearly a time path great expert but used a style similar to wisdom path. In fact, his main cultivation path was time path but he also cultivated wisdom path.

Fang Yuan felt like he was facing a powerful chess player, if he was even a bit careless, he would be dragged into the other's rhythm and fall into countless traps.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan knew about Gu Liu Ru's battle style, Myriad Year Flying Warship ran amok and destroyed Gu Liu Ru's arrangements.

The long battle showed no results; Gu Liu Ru chose to retreat.

"Didn't you come to take my life?" Fang Yuan shouted coldly from the bow of the ship while giving chase.

Gu Liu Ru sneered: "I am not in a hurry so what are you in a hurry for? Fang Yuan, you are indeed a demon whose name causes a commotion in the world, you have some skills. By the time I return, I will have already deciphered your tiny ship and will then take your life."

Although half of his body was paralyzed, the wheelchair he was sitting on was a compact Immortal Gu House.

The two wheels moved rapidly on the surface of the river, bringing Gu Liu Ru away at an extremely fast speed.

“Lord Fang Yuan, let us activate torrential charge!” A variant human Gu Immortal suggested.

The killer move torrential charge could change the flow of the surrounding water of the River of Time and help Myriad Year Flying Warship move with an astonishing speed.

“There is no hurry.” Fang Yuan’s eyes flickered with light for a moment before rejecting the suggestion: “Use daybreak sword instead.”

No one had the guts to go against his order, Myriad Year Flying Warship’s aura surged as a blinding white light shot out.

From the silver-white light bubbled the water of the River of Time, from which countless strands of silver light emerged.

The silver rays quickly condensed and took shape, transforming into many sharp sword-like blades that shot out violently.

“What?” Gu Liu Ru had naturally been paying attention to Fang Yuan’s movements and immediately discovered this.

Thoughts surged and clashed in his mind as he rapidly deduced: “This is the first time Fang Yuan has revealed this time path killer move. Truly wondrous! It actually uses the water of the River of Time to extract traces of the sharpest power of time path. Although they are shaped like swords, they are essentially time path dao marks. If I am hit by this, I won’t leave unharmed!”

Gu Liu Ru’s mind jolted slightly, inwardly astonished at the power of this killer move.

The killer move itself was at rank eight level and Fang Yuan had further elevated it by ingeniously using the River of Time, thus increasing its might far beyond ordinary rank eight killer moves.

“This demon’s talents are terrifying. Not only can he use Reverse Flow River, he has even begun researching the River of Time.” Gu Liu Ru’s wariness towards Fang Yuan deepened by another level and his killing intent surged: “I can’t let this demon live! I must use all my strength to get rid of him, otherwise, he will be a huge threat in the future!”

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Silver swords shot towards Gu Liu Ru.

Gu Liu Ru was soon injured, his defensive killer move was unable to block the sharp swords.

“Kill, kill him!” Some variant human Gu Immortals shouted, their morale surging.

After they killed Heavenly Court’s rank eight the previous time, their confidence had soared and they even treated Gu Liu Ru as prey.

With their rank seven cultivation levels, they had hunted down a rank eight great expert of Heavenly Court, this sense of achievement and stimulation shook both their bodies and minds.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily as he ridiculed Gu Liu Ru: “Didn’t you want to take my life? Now it looks like your own aged life is on the line.”

Gu Liu Ru snorted coldly but did not reply, only escaping rapidly. His wheelchair was already riddled with marks.

Fang Yuan laughed: “Scared like a stray dog, you have brought shame to Heavenly Court’s reputation.”

The sharp swords were exquisitely controlled by him, cutting Gu Liu Ru’s robe and flesh.

Gu Liu Ru was silent.

Fang Yuan jeered: “Looks like there are only rubbish like you in Heavenly Court, so much for it being the number one force in the world. It seems Heavenly Court is nothing much after all.”

Gu Liu Ru heard Fang Yuan disgracing Heavenly Court and could not endure anymore: “Shut up! Is Heavenly Court’s greatness something a petty demon like you can understand?”

Swoosh!

Before he even finished speaking, a sword brushed past his head, cutting away most of his hair along with skin, bright-red blood spilled out continuously.

Gu Liu Ru cried out in pain and slammed the wheelchair which burst out with an unprecedented speed.

“Chase!”

“He can’t last for long.”

“That’s right, his Immortal Gu was destroyed by daybreak sword so his wheelchair is starting to break!”

Many of Fang Yuan’s subordinates shouted, their morale was at an all-time high at this moment.

Indeed, Gu Liu Ru’s wheelchair was constantly crumbling, leaving behind a large amount of fragmented Gu worm corpses in its path.

But Fang Yuan restrained his expression and smiled indifferently: “Stop!”

“Ah?!” The immortals were surprised but they did not dare to disobey him and immediately combined their strength to stop Myriad Year Flying Warship.



Gu Liu Ru who was ‘running for his life’ saw this scene, his whole body shook as a stifled feeling rose up in his chest but he was unable to vent it.

Fang Yuan smiled and commented leisurely while sizing up the empty space above the river in front: “What a great time path Gu formation, I wonder which Heavenly Court member is specially waiting for me?”

“You are talking to me, Li Huang!” Li Huang’s voice was transmitted, and at the same time, a large formation revealed itself.

Most of the Gu Immortal subordinates of Fang Yuan were stupefied at this sight, some variant human Gu Immortals only managed to react after a while: “So this was a trap!”

“That old man acted so well!!”

“We almost fell into the trap, if it were not for the wise and mighty Lord Fang Yuan, we might be in a terrible situation.”

Gu Liu Ru slowly flew over with a dark face.

To play this trick, he had intentionally given up on an Immortal Gu and even got injured, blood flowed wildly but they were actually self-inflicted injuries. But who could have thought his mutilation plan became a show that Fang Yuan watched with leisure.

Li Huang said with a deep voice: “Looks like you are familiar with this river suppression lotus sealing formation.”

Fang Yuan admitted openly: “Indeed, I suffered a lot because of this in the previous life.”

“So what if you recognize it, your life ends here.” Gu Liu Ru sneered.

As his voice landed, two Immortal Gu Houses appeared on the left and right of Fang Yuan.

One Immortal Gu House was elegant and grand, the orange roof resembled cranes with their wings spread out. The Immortal Gu House was radiating

three layers of autumn light, it was quite extraordinary. It was Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform.

Another Immortal Gu House was a huge lever that was white like jade, there were seven huge sharks in front of the lever, they had sharp teeth and were dragging the huge lever ahead. It was Shark Flow Lever.

Fang Yuan destroyed Present and Past Pavilion, and Eternal Yacht, Heavenly Court was still reconstructing them.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and Shark Flow Lever's constructions had already begun long ago, they were completed recently and were sent to take part in this battle.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform blocked Fang Yuan's retreat route, Gu Liu Ru moved in once again and stalled Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Shark Flow Lever drew a beautiful arc in the periphery of the battlefield and picked up Li Huang before joining the battlefield.

A large battle ensued, causing the river to surge and set off countless violent waves.

"This rank eight Immortal Gu House has such strong defense!" Li Huang and Gu Liu Ru were stunned.

Myriad Year Flying Warship displayed extremely powerful defense, causing all the killer moves of Heavenly Court's side to be ineffective, it showed a stance of standing on the spot and letting the attacks hit it.

After another while of fighting, Fang Yuan laughed brightly: "Gu Liu Ru, I have seen through your moves!"

Saying so, Myriad Year Flying Warship slammed at the weak point.

"Not good." Gu Liu Ru's expression changed. At the next moment, his time path killer move that was hindering Myriad Year Flying Warship broke loudly, the backlash caused him to cough out blood.

“Stop him!” Shark Flow Lever and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform used their killer moves.

“Charge through.” Fang Yuan instructed lightly.

Explosions burst out as Myriad Year Flying Warship charged out of the battlefield with an unreasonable momentum.

“Don’t chase!” Gu Liu Ru quickly stopped Li Huang who wanted to give chase. He said with a dark expression and heavy voice: “This Immortal Gu House is worthy of being at rank eight level, we can’t stop it.”

“Damn it!” Li Huang clenched his fists, he felt quite stifled, he was a fire path Gu Immortal and could only fight in the River of Time with Shark Flow Lever.

If Fang Yuan had fallen into the trap, he would have a platform to display his might, but unfortunately, Fang Yuan did not give him this chance.

However, what made Li Huang even more depressed had yet to come.

Fang Yuan saw Heavenly Court did not give chase and immediately brought Myriad Year Flying Warship to a stop, smiling: “Friends, my Myriad Year Flying Warship still has a move called myriad year hunting, please appraise it.”

Heavenly Court’s side was quickly on guard, they smelled a strange fragrance coming from Myriad Year Flying Warship. Not long later, countless beast roars resounded from every direction and were approaching closer.

“These are... year beasts, ancient year beasts and even immemorial year beasts!”

“There are too many year beasts, they seem to have formed a beast tide!”

Li Huang and Gu Liu Ru felt their heart shaking at this sight.

It turned out Fang Yuan's rank eight Immortal Gu House was not just about collision, it still had such a terrifying killer move!

# **Chapter 1812 - Second Battle in the River of Time!**

## Chapter 1812 Second Battle in the River of Time!

Inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, Hei Lou Lan and the rest felt their hearts throbbing.

The scene was too grand, the year beast army was charging towards them from all directions with a great momentum.

“Such an amazing killer move!”

“No wonder this move was never used inside the sovereign immortal aperture.”

“Too many year beasts are lured in, if it was used inside the sovereign immortal aperture, it would definitely lead to a great catastrophe.”

Heavenly Court’s side was also shaken.

“Myriad Year Flying Warship...” Gu Liu Ru mumbled this name with a serious expression.

Li Huang was also solemn as he spoke: “This is already a beast tide now, its power is actually so great!”

Even a legendary character like him was highly impressed at such a majestic sight.

Fang Yuan showed a slight smile.

He had derived myriad year hunting from immemorial year beast fishing formation and developed it to its limit. With years flow like water Immortal Gu as the core and the amplification from the River of Time, it resulted in an extraordinary power.

Countless beasts roared in the beast tide.

Boom boom boom!

Heavenly Court attacked the year beast tsunami with all kinds of killer moves.

Waves after waves of year beasts were killed, Heavenly Court's two time path Immortal Gu Houses were both of rank seven level and could match rank eight battle strength, they had no issue in dealing with most of the year beasts.

But the problem was, what was the use in simply killing these year beasts? As long as Myriad Year Flying Warship still existed, there would be an endless flow of year beasts.

This was an enslavement path battle tactic to consume Heavenly Court's battle strength.

The explosive killer moves that Heavenly Court's people used expended a lot of immortal essence.

"If we fight with these year beasts, we will be falling into Fang Yuan's scheme. We need to destroy Myriad Year Flying Warship and this will all end!" A rank seven Gu Immortal inside Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform suggested.

The moment he had finished speaking, a Gu Immortal beside him spoke: "But we already know how sturdy Myriad Year Flying Warship is. How can we adopt the tactic of attacking directly?"

The rank seven Gu Immortal was speechless: "This..."

Immediately after, he heard shouting in his surroundings: "Careful! Fang Yuan is coming over again!!"

Myriad Year Flying Warship's speed rose, but instead of retreating, it charged directly into Shark Flow Lever.

“Such audacity!” Li Huang who was inside Shark Flow Lever shouted, Fang Yuan actually dared to come back, he clearly looked down on them.

Immediately, Heavenly Court’s two Immortal Gu Houses and time path great expert Gu Liu Ru surrounded and attacked Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Myriad Year Flying Warship took the waves of attacks firmly as countless silver swords shone around it and then shot out like a rainstorm.

Both sides went at each other, the intensity of the battle reached an extreme level immediately.

“Not good! Fang Yuan is trying to delay us so that this year beast army can surround us!” Gu Liu Ru saw Fang Yuan’s plan.

Li Huang smiled coldly: “As long as we wholeheartedly concentrate on breaking through the siege, so what if there are even more of these year beasts?”

Gu Liu Ru sighed: “Don’t forget we still have the river suppression lotus sealing formation behind us.”

Li Huang was stumped, he had forgotten about that in this moment of urgency; after being reminded, his mind jolted as he cursed: “This scoundrel Fang Yuan is truly insidious and vicious!”

Heavenly Court had constructed the river suppression lotus sealing formation painstakingly, it could slowly drift along the surface of the River of Time. There were a large number of Gu Immortals garrisoned inside, controlling their respective formation cores.

If this large formation was destroyed, Heavenly Court’s losses would not only be a lot of Immortal Gu but also these rank seven Gu Immortals.

Moreover, they probably would not be able to construct another river suppression lotus sealing formation within a short period of time!

Heavenly Court’s situation was quite awkward.



They wanted to use the river suppression lotus sealing formation to ambush Fang Yuan, but it was seen through by Fang Yuan, now, this formation instead became Heavenly Court's weakness and was used by Fang Yuan.

The river suppression lotus sealing formation could float but its speed was very slow, there was no chance of it escaping the current battle.

"Let's first slowly recall the Gu Immortals inside the formation." Gu Liu Ru said after a while of thinking.

Li Huang, however, said at almost the same time: "Kill Fang Yuan, everything will be settled once we kill this source of evil."

The two Gu Immortals glanced at each other, at this crucial moment, they had different thoughts.

Roar!

Because of Fang Yuan, the frontmost year beasts reached the battlefield.

At the lead were three immemorial year beasts.

These immemorial year beasts had a tough physique, they endured Heavenly Court's bombardment and charged right into the battlefield of Immortal Gu Houses.

"Seeking death!" Li Huang shouted in fury, he controlled the huge sharks in front of Shark Flow Lever to bite at them.

At the same time, he also activated Shark Flow Lever's killer move, within a dozen breaths of time, two immemorial year beasts were beaten to death one after the other.

"Foolish clowns!" Li Huang's killing intent was leaking when he heard Gu Liu Ru's shout — "Help me quickly!"

Li Huang had gone to deal with the immemorial year beasts, while Gu Liu Ru and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform attacked Myriad Year Flying Warship and brought the battle to a temporary deadlock.

But soon after, Fang Yuan activated daybreak sword and bombarded the river suppression lotus sealing formation.

This formation was strong inside and weak outside, it was originally meant to deal with the stone lotus island, but after this vicious attack by Fang Yuan, it immediately became unstable with many areas crumbling apart.

The Gu Immortals inside the formation cores lost their lives immediately.

With Myriad Year Flying Warship's extremely tough defense, Gu Liu Ru and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform were unable to do any harm to it. They were forced to block Fang Yuan's attacks to defend the retreating Gu Immortals inside the large formation.

As such, Fang Yuan gained the initiative, he could casually attack anywhere he wanted, Gu Liu Ru and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform were in a miserable state, unable to cope with the attacks from all directions.

Li Huang saw that the situation was bad, he quickly detoured and attacked Myriad Year Flying Warship from the back.

But Fang Yuan had no fear!

If it were him alone, he might not be able to pay attention to all sides, but he had many experienced Gu Immortal subordinates inside the vessel to help him. And to get the battle merit of killing another rank eight, their eyes were bloodshot with excitement.

Fang Yuan stood on the bow of the boat from the beginning, regardless of how dangerous and chaotic it was outside, suddenly, he saw a gap in Gu Liu Ru's defense and activated a killer move.

Spring scissors!

Spring scissors flew out, it was not targeted towards Gu Liu Ru, instead it dodged his obstruction, and 'snip', beheaded a female immortal.

Gu Liu Ru's heart jumped with fright: "Isn't this Xia Cha's trump card method? Fang Yuan has already grasped it and even modified it to suit his

rank seven cultivation!”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily as he activated summer fan, which was also at rank seven level.

Li Huang was unable to pay attention to both sides and could only look on as wind howled and blew even more holes in the river suppression lotus sealing formation, instantly destroying several Immortal Gu.

“Hahaha, I want to kill them, can you stop me?” Fang Yuan laughed loudly and mockingly.

Li Huang’s eyes burned with anger as he shouted: “Scoundrel, I will grind your bones to ashes!”

Boom!

An immemorial year beast rammed into Myriad Year Flying Warship, slightly tilting the rank eight Immortal Gu House.

Heavenly Court’s side was stumped.

Almost at an instant, the two rank eight great experts reacted.

“It turns out Fang Yuan can only lure in the year beast tide and not control them!”

“It even seems like these year beasts’ target is Myriad Year Flying Warship!!”

After discovering this secret, Li Huang and Gu Liu Ru had the urge to cough blood.

They had fought wholeheartedly for so long but it turned out they were actually blocking the enemy for Fang Yuan!

No wonder Fang Yuan did not watch from the sidelines, instead charging over to pester them.

Fang Yuan was helpless about this.

He had already done his best in the current situation.

Using Years Flow Like Water to attract year beasts and incite a year beast tide, this was the power of time path. If he could control this year beast army, that would be enslavement path's power.

Year beasts continued to come in from all around, making the battlefield extremely cramped.

Previously, Heavenly Court was still bombarding this year beast tide and had slightly slowed them down. But because of Fang Yuan attacking river suppression lotus sealing formation constantly and killing many rank seven Gu Immortals, Heavenly Court's side had no time to attend to the beast tide.

“Die, Fang Yuan!”

“Get lost!!”

Li Huang shouted, but Fang Yuan controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship to cling onto Shark Flow Lever or Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform.

The year beasts' target was Myriad Year Flying Warship, but because of this, Shark Flow Lever and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform also met with calamity.

“Don't you want to get rid of me? I am right in front of you now, come on, attack me.” Fang Yuan laughed.

Li Huang's eyes were bloodshot with anger, even Gu Liu Ru's breathing hastened as he looked rigidly at Fang Yuan with a deep cold gaze filled with killing intent.

The three Immortal Gu Houses soon did not even have space to move!

If someone looked from afar, they could only see year beasts rushing to the battlefield in the center. These year beasts, ancient year beasts, and

immemorial year beasts were packed so tightly that they looked like a sphere of ants.

And the sphere was getting tighter and denser along with getting increasingly larger.

The three Immortal Gu Houses in the middle of the sphere seemed to have turned into meat grinders, even an immemorial year beast would be ground to death within a dozen seconds.

Li Huang and Gu Liu Ru attacked furiously.

The river suppression lotus sealing formation was already destroyed completely. Heavenly Court's efforts this time had all gone to waste.

Li Huang and Gu Liu Ru had already tried their best to save any Gu Immortal they could, but most of them still died miserably at Fang Yuan's hands.

"Let's leave now, otherwise there will be no survivors." Gu Liu Ru called out.

Without the large formation hindering Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan rampaged in the battlefield with Myriad Year Flying Warship, no one was able to stop him.

Heavenly Court's battle tactics had failed completely.

"Fang Yuan, just wait, you won't be able to be arrogant for long, you will die by my hands sooner or later!" Li Huang said with clenched teeth.

This was the first time he fought with Fang Yuan, and he already felt extreme hatred, anger, and disgust because of Fang Yuan's actions!

This demon was truly insidious and crafty!

"Hmph! Li Huang, I think you are the one who is arrogant!" Myriad Year Flying Warship suddenly erupted, the killer move torrential charge activated

under it! At its surroundings were daybreak swords! The silver swords pierced into the torrent and exploded with an unimaginable speed!

“These two moves can be combined?!” Li Huang cried out in shock, caught off guard.

Myriad Year Flying Warship directly collided into the damaged Shark Flow Lever!

Bam!

Amidst the loud sound, Shark Flow Lever was directly destroyed, the remaining huge sharks dying on the spot.

At the crucial moment, Li Huang activated his proudest killer move, verdant sun flame cloak.

Myriad Year Flying Warship destroyed Shark Flow Lever and collided straight into Li Huang with its remaining momentum.

Li Huang’s verdant sun flame cloak shook intensely, it was like a prairie fire but after the collision, it immediately weakened to become a small flame.

“Li Huang, it is time for your death!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone sharply as he used both summer fan and spring scissors to attack Li Huang.

“Rank eight?!” Li Huang stared with his eyes wide open as he felt a fatal threat from summer fan and spring scissors.

He did not even have time to breathe as he focused everything on defense.

But when he took on the killer moves, spring scissors and summer fan revealed their previous state — they were only at rank seven!

“Fang Yuan, you deceived me!” Li Huang roared, his attention was completely on Fang Yuan.

Immediately after, Myriad Year Flying Warship followed.

Li Huang's eyes almost popped out as his sight became filled with the large silver figure of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Boom!

Li Huang's flame cloak was completely extinguished, his chest caved in, from which blood, mixed with pieces of organs, spurted out like a fountain.

Whoosh.

Countless silver swords attacked at the next second, they were as densely packed as bees, they pierced deep into Li Huang's body and exited out from all directions.

Li Huang's body was moved around in all directions by daybreak swords, shaking intensely in the process.

The sharp light in his pupils dissipated rapidly.

Before death, his final thought was still disbelief: "I am actually going to die here?!"

"Retreat——!" Gu Liu Ru shouted with teary eyes.

Veins bulged on his forehead and his whole face looked malevolent.

Li Huang might be stronger than Gu Liu Ru but in this River of Time, without the protection of an Immortal Gu House, he was definitely more disadvantaged.

It was not that Gu Liu Ru did not think of going to save him, but Fang Yuan had prepared for so long, how could he give him the chance to rescue?

The tightly packed year beasts were also a huge hindrance.

Gu Liu Ru controlled Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and left the battlefield rapidly.

Fang Yuan gave chase with surging killing intent: “Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, this will be your final resting place.”

Gu Liu Ru gave a muffled groan as he concentrated on escaping.

He imprinted this disgrace deep in his heart: “Righteous is falling while demonic is rising... sigh! The most sensible option now is to preserve our strength and fight again in the future. Fang Yuan... you can continue to be arrogant for the time being.”



# **Chapter 1813 - Fearsome Beast Tide**

## Chapter 1813 Fearsome Beast Tide

Fast winds and ferocious waves surged in the River of Time.

Myriad Year Flying Warship continually shot out daybreak flying swords like a storm raging towards Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform.

Inside Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, many Central Continent Gu Immortals were resolved for death as they said to Gu Liu Ru: “Lord, please leave first!”

Gu Liu Ru hesitated.

These people continued: “Central Continent can do without us, but it cannot lose you. This situation is too dangerous, we will all be killed if we try to escape together. Moreover, Heavenly Court has also sent the command!”

Fairy Zi Wei had already sent the command for Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform to block Myriad Year Flying Warship while Gu Liu Ru escaped.

Gu Liu Ru heaved a sigh: “I didn’t expect the situation to escalate to this, everyone, your sacrifices won’t be in vain!”

He jumped out of Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and dived into the River of Time, escaping rapidly.

Fang Yuan saw this and immediately turned Myriad Year Flying Warship around to give chase, but Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform blocked him without regard for itself.

Fang Yuan was blocked by Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and was unable to get rid of it within a short period, he could only watch as Gu Liu

Ru entered a tributary of the River of Time and escaped to the outside world.

“In that case, you can all go die!” Fang Yuan snorted coldly as he concentrated the attacks on Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform.

By now, Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform was already an exhausted force. Under Myriad Year Flying Warship’s violent and repeated collisions, it completely broke into pieces.

Over ten Gu Immortals fell into the river, and under the extreme chaos, the bloodthirsty year beasts in the surroundings attacked these Gu Immortals.

“You beasts, get lost!” Fang Yuan shouted as he maneuvered Myriad Year Flying Warship to retrieve these battle spoils.

But there were too many year beasts, waves after waves of the beast tide collided into Myriad Year Flying Warship.

During this short delay, many of the Gu Immortals were swallowed by the berserk year beasts without leaving behind even a piece of flesh.

Boom!

A giant immemorial year ox crashed into the side of Myriad Year Flying Warship like a meteor.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was almost overturned and was only able to break away after a while. The warship’s shape had already deformed with two large holes on it.

It was the result of the ox horns colliding into it!

Fang Yuan’s subordinates were flustered.

“Repair it quickly!”

“So many Gu worms were destroyed.”

“This immemorial year beast has extraordinary strength!”

Fang Yuan was surprised and sized his surroundings carefully.

Year beasts were everywhere in the surroundings, some flew, some ran on the water, while some moved underwater, with all of them having Myriad Year Flying Warship as their target.

In this period of time, eight immemorial year beasts had surrounded Fang Yuan, some still afar while some near.

That immemorial year ox just now had smooth skin and hair that shone with golden luster. Its hooves stood stably on the surface of the water, even the chaotic year beast army could not move it!

A sharp light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Didn’t his Twelve Zodiac battle formation lack an immemorial year ox?

Even if he already had an immemorial year ox, Fang Yuan would think of replacing it.

The ancient battle formation’s might was completely related to the strength of the immemorial year beasts in the formation, and this immemorial year ox was outstanding among immemorial year beasts!

“But this is not the time to subdue it.” Fang Yuan gave a bitter smile as he commanded: “Retreat!”

Myriad Year Flying Warship began to escape as well.

But no matter where it ran to, year beasts would block its path.

Woof woof woof!

An immemorial year dog blocked the path.

Its body was agile with strong muscles, its eyes shone emitted lightning and its fur was glossy golden.

Myriad Year Flying Warship repeatedly activated daybreak swords but when they hit its body, they immediately broke, only managing to cut its fur.

Woof!

The immemorial year dog jumped with such force that it immediately neared the bow of the boat.

It opened its mouth, revealing its blade-like sharp silver teeth.

Crack, the bow of Myriad Year Flying Warship was directly bit into pieces.

“Leave quickly, this dog has time path Immortal Gu on it.” Fang Yuan’s expression was chilly.

Immemorial year dog was also a species he lacked, but under this chaotic situation, he simply did not want to fight against these year beasts which he had no information on.

Fortunately, the year beasts were also fighting and suppressing each other.

There was only one immemorial year dog with the most abundant immemorial year monkeys.

Fang Yuan cleverly turned Myriad Year Flying Warship towards these immemorial year monkeys, then Myriad Year Flying Warship moved through the gaps between the year beasts like a flash of silver lightning.

The immemorial year dog was stopped by these immemorial year monkeys.

After escaping like this all the way, they finally arrived in front of a tributary of the River of Time.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had to struggle to pass through the tributary and return to the outside world.

A large amount of year beasts actually gave chase without giving up.

Squeak squeak squeak!

A small immemorial year rat suddenly appeared and it ran into Myriad Year Flying Warship like a flash of golden lightning.

“Oh no!”

“Fang Yuan, stop it! It is all up to you!”

The immortals’ expression changed.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was strong outside and weak inside, if the immemorial year rat ran amok inside, the whole Immortal Gu House might be destroyed by it.

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan also did not care about concealing his strength, he erupted with rank eight cultivation and appeared in front of the immemorial year rat.

He activated the true rank eight level spring scissors, it flew nimbly in the narrow space and snipped the immemorial year rat.

This immemorial year beast was very small, only the size of an adult fist, and was like an extremely hard golden wart.

Spring scissors sniped its body but produced clanging sounds like striking a hard stone, even producing yellow sparks.

Fang Yuan was already using all his strength but this immemorial year rat was not afraid.

its eyes shone brightly as it saw a time path Immortal Gu, it bit the Immortal Gu and made its escape.

It was extremely fast, disappearing from Fang Yuan’s sight within a blink of an eye.

“Lord Fang Yuan, this is bad! Rank eight years flow like water Immortal Gu was taken away by this immemorial year rat!”

Fang Yuan laughed happily, even rejoicing slightly as he said: “This is my disguise, although it is a time path Immortal Gu, it is not the real Years Flow Like Water.”

Fang Yuan had personally deduced the myriad year hunting killer move, how could he not be aware of its enormous flaw?

Therefore, he had been prepared and had arranged a bait in Myriad Year Flying Warship.

When Myriad Year Flying Warship was damaged to a certain extent, they would throw out this bait and cause a fight among the immemorial year beasts, thus creating a chance to escape.

This method might not fool Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, but immemorial year beasts had limited intelligence and were not like Heavenly Court’s rank eight great experts.

Sure enough, after the immemorial year rat took away the bait, the year beast army immediately felt a strong attraction, they abandoned Myriad Year Flying Warship and surrounded this small golden rat.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was finally able to get rid of this terrifying year beast tide.

After confirming it was safe, Fang Yuan immediately moved the rank eight Immortal Gu House into his immortal aperture.

There were bumps and scratches all around Myriad Year Flying Warship, its sharp bow was chewed down, and there were large holes on its sides. There were also several claw marks on the deck that looked like they were cut by a giant blade.

Countless mortal Gu used in Myriad Year Flying Warship had died, many Immortal Gu were also injured, especially precaution Immortal Gu, its injuries were the heaviest since it was the core of Myriad Year Flying Warship’s defense. Even years flow like water Immortal Gu had some damage.

It appeared like Myriad Year Flying Warship still maintained its framework and looked intact, but if it were to be entangled for a while longer, it would be unrecognizable and the losses would be heavy.

The River of Time was one of the secluded domains of heaven and earth, an inestimable scale of living beings lived here. There was no lack of powerful beings among these time path living beings, even Fang Yuan would not be able to deal with them within a short period of time.

The ones that left Fang Yuan the deepest impression were the three immemorial year beasts with golden fur.

“But, this is all within my calculations.”

“The immemorial year beasts that attacked Myriad Year Flying Warship have all been marked. I can easily go find them later and subdue them.”

“I need to take the risk if I want to finish the Twelve Zodiac battle formation.”

Fang Yuan sighed inwardly.

The Twelve Zodiac battle formation required twelve different species of immemorial year beasts; rat, ox, tiger, rabbit, dragon, snake, horse, sheep, money, chicken, dog, and pig.

In the River of Time, at every set interval of time, a certain kind of immemorial year beast would be more commonly seen than others, becoming the strongest year species of that time period and suppressing other groups.

However, in the next dozen years, this species of year beast would fall down from the strongest to the weakest, heavily pushed aside and attacked by other year beasts.

But the year beasts that could survive these attacks would often be the strongest within the same level. They could not survive if they were not strong.



Just like the immemorial year ox, immemorial year dog and immemorial year rat that Fang Yuan just encountered, they were the best evidence.

Most of the immemorial year beasts were easy to gather because of their high quantity. But some species, because their whole group was at the lowest point, were not only rare but also had very powerful individual strength.

Myriad Year Flying Warship's recovery was not a difficult issue.

Although countless mortal Gu were lost, Fang Yuan had enough of them. Injuries of immortal gu were the most troublesome, but Fang Yuan had the Gu as Before formation!

Fang Yuan's refinement path foundation was too robust, he could restore these Immortal Gu.

"It is just that those Central Continent Gu Immortals' immortal apertures are all completely empty, looks like Fairy Zi Wei has learned her lesson." Fang Yuan smiled.

The immortal apertures inside those Central Continent rank seven corpses were empty and barren, all their resources were moved out before the battle. After the first battle in the River of Time, Fairy Zi Wei was afraid these resources would only nourish Fang Yuan, their enemy!

Fang Yuan did not care about it.

To him, these resources would only be icing on the cake and were not important.

"Next, I need to repair Myriad Year Flying Warship then go to the River of Time and capture the lacking immemorial year beasts."

"Then I will explore dream realms, there is already a large pile of dream realms extorted from Southern Border's righteous path."

Fang Yuan was pressed for time and kept track of it closely.

Not long later, it would be time for the Five Xiang's public grotto-heaven to open and for the ancient bet to end.

"I can only do my best!" Fang Yuan sighed.

At the same time, Fairy Zi Wei sighed bitterly in Heavenly Court.

She was filled with worries, they had lost miserably in the River of Time once again, what should they do now?

The methods and strength revealed by Myriad Year Flying Warship made even her feel a sense of helplessness.

She knew Fang Yuan's strategy, it was to bait them inside the River of Time, but this matter was related to Red Lotus' true inheritance, Heavenly Court had no choice but to take the bait!

"Even if it is a bloody pit, we need to clench our teeth and jump into it! Heavenly Court has never been afraid of sacrificing." Fairy Zi Wei's eyes shone sharply before her brows furrowed once again: "But, we need to modify the time path Immortal Gu Houses and make them prioritize speed. In the future, we will prioritize on disturbing Fang Yuan, it will be a great achievement as long as we stop him from obtaining Red Lotus' true inheritance!"

# **Chapter 1814 - Pitiful Qi Clan Gu Immortals**

## Chapter 1814 Pitiful Qi Clan Gu Immortals

Immemorial white heaven.

A plain white cloud carried six Qi clan Gu Immortals inside as it flew rapidly in the sky.

“Be careful, this is immemorial white heaven, there are often immemorial desolate beasts roaming around.”

“Currently, this route is quite safe, but we need to stay alert.”

“After getting into that grotto-heaven, we will be able to obtain heaven form this time! The rise and prosperity of Qi clan is in sight!!”

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals conversed in secret as they held in their excitement and joy.

Even though they did not understand the use of heaven form, it did not mean that they would underestimate the power of this move.

Because this was half an inheritance left behind by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable!

Suddenly, their vision changed, the serene white heaven suddenly flipped like a pancake, turning into a huge and dark space.

This dark space was like a huge ball that enveloped all six immortals of Qi clan.

Threads of silver light weaved like strings of a web, moving in all directions from the top to the bottom of the dark space.

“This is an immortal battlefield killer move!”

“Who is it, who ambushed us?!”

“Quickly come out!”

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were deeply shocked, after a momentary panic, they shouted angrily.

Thus, a rank eight Immortal Gu House carrying a Gu Immortal appeared in a casual manner.

This Immortal Gu House looked like a small boat, the front was sharp and long, shining with silver light. At the bow of the boat, a Gu Immortal stood with his arms behind his back, he wore a white robe and stood silently as he smiled towards these Qi clan Gu Immortals.

This Gu Immortal had a handsome face, to the point of being beautiful, his black hair was long and reached his waist, this was a delicate looking young man with peerless appearance at first glance.

But the six Qi clan Gu Immortals were completely stunned when they saw this person and this house!

Qi Cai was the second supreme elder of Qi clan, he was the bravest among them, but at this moment, only shock was shown on his face.

Qi Jin was the third supreme elder of Qi clan, he was like the other Qi clan Gu Immortals, having a pale expression, his heart was thumping, a cold chill was spreading through his four limbs.

Qi clan’s first supreme elder Qi Fa was usually composed but at this moment, he panicked and said in a shivering voice: “Fang... Fang Yuan, why are you here! Why are you finding trouble with us?”

Fang Yuan’s appearance alone shocked these Qi clan Gu Immortals to the point of being dumbstruck, their morale was completely extinguished as it fell to rock bottom.

A person’s reputation provides shelter like the shadow of a tree.

Fang Yuan's current demonic reputation far surpassed the previous life!

Earlier during the second battle in the River of Time, Fang Yuan had announced the results of the battle to the world.

Heavenly Court lost time and again, they experienced a severe defeat this time, Li Huang died tragically. By stepping on Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan's demonic reputation was causing tremors in the entire world now.

Most of the Qi clan Gu Immortals were so scared their bodies went limp.

Fang Yuan was a great demon of this era, why was he here to deal with Qi clan? And even setting an ambush?

“Lord... Fang Yuan, my Qi clan is a secluded clan that has never caused any problems for you or schemed against you. Is there any misunderstanding between us, we are willing to compensate and appease you.” Qi clan's first supreme elder Qi Fa said.

Fang Yuan smiled: “Don't be nervous everyone, as long as you submit to me, I will let you live. As for compensation, why don't you give heaven form to me then?”

Hearing this, the Qi clan Gu Immortals felt like their mood had sunk to the abyss.

“Oh no!!”

“Fang Yuan knows our greatest secret.”

“How did he find out?”

“He is an otherworldly demon, he has been reborn using Spring Autumn Cicada!”

“The ancient bet is here, the goal of our Qi clan for thousands of years is about to reach its end, should we give it up now?! I cannot accept it!!”

Qi clan's Gu Immortals had pained and complex expressions, they were fearful, they were angry, they were anxious, they felt hatred, and they were helpless.

The strongest Qi clan Gu Immortal was merely rank seven, they had spent a great effort to enter immemorial white heaven to begin with, how could they fight Fang Yuan?

Hehe.

They were meat on the chopping block!

Simply pitiful.

"Why don't we risk it all!" Qi Cai gritted his teeth, he clenched his fists as his arms shivered.

"Risk what? Can we even win? You know about Fang Yuan's battle results as well, we will just be giving up our lives." Qi Jin said with deep helplessness.

A peculiar light flashed in Fang Yuan's eyes, he threatened: "I will give you three breaths of time to consider, if you do not submit, you can go die."

"What do we do?!" Qi clan's Gu Immortals panicked, they were not sure of what to do, everyone looked towards Qi Fa.

As the first supreme elder of Qi clan, Qi Fa had the highest authority, he was a skinny old man, but had great spirits, his back was straight like a long spear.

But after three breaths of time, he lowered his back as he gave up, he cupped his fists towards Fang Yuan with a pleasing expression: "Lord Fang Yuan, our Qi clan... submits to you!"

"Hahaha, a wise person understands their circumstances!" Fang Yuan laughed loudly, a bright light flashed in his eyes, none of the Qi clan Gu Immortals dared to look at him: "You have all made a wise decision."

Bai Ning Bing and the rest were waiting inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, after witnessing this, they sighed to themselves.

The battle in Lang Ya blessed land and the two battles inside the River of Time, they allowed Fang Yuan to step on Heavenly Court and gain immense reputation in the world! His demonic might was awe-inspiring, his name alone was able to make rank seven Gu Immortals surrender without putting up a fight!

Qi Fa added: “Heaven form belongs to you, lord, but I would like to speak of the details regarding it, if lord would allow us to.”

Fang Yuan looked at this Qi clan first supreme elder deeply in the eyes as he smiled nonchalantly: “No need for that, I am not afraid to tell you that I obtained heaven form in the previous life, I killed many of you afterwards and took Qi Sea grotto-heaven. Of course, some of you surrendered to me.”

After pausing, Fang Yuan continued: “I am much clearer of the secrets involving heaven form than all of you.”

Fang Yuan’s words were like a hammer that pounded into the Qi clan Gu Immortals’ hearts.

They were dumbfounded but also in disbelief.

Fang Yuan did not care if they believed him, he used his methods on each of them and took away all of their Gu worms.

He was very clear on what Immortal Gu these Qi clan Gu Immortals possessed.

After that, these Qi clan Gu Immortals were kept on the deck of Myriad Year Flying Warship, as they stood in a daze and with pale expressions.

After putting these Qi clan Gu Immortals under control, Fang Yuan retracted his immortal battlefield — Yama Web.

Yama web battlefield was modified from yama battlefield, it achieved Fang Yuan’s intended goal, combining the power of time path into it, it was now



stronger and more stable.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had been repaired long ago, it flew rapidly towards the crucial location.

After a while, the immortals saw that in the empty sky, a huge gatehouse appeared out of nowhere.

The gatehouse had a tall roof and two statues at the side of the gate. There was a huge plaque above the gate, writing the words 'Five Xiang's Bet Entrance'. The entire gatehouse seemed to be made of bronze, it radiated a majestic aura.

Initially, it was only a phantom image, but as time passed, it became solid and clearer.

After the gatehouse formed fully, a huge area of clouds gathered to hold up this gatehouse.

Fang Yuan's subordinates were shocked, they were seeing this for the first time. Qi clan's six Gu Immortals had complex expressions, a trace of hope was still lingering in the eyes of Qi Fa and the rest.

At this time, the door started to shine in five colors, representing the strength of the Five Xiangs.

First, red light shined down, causing the clouds to turn bright red.

Fang Yuan smiled, looking at Hei Lou Lan: "Go."

Hei Lou Lan was expressionless as she moved out of Myriad Year Flying Warship, flying towards the gatehouse. Fang Yuan waved his hand as an immortal killer move was used on her.

Hei Lou Lan's body shook as she landed before the gatehouse.

The red light surrounded her and faded away rapidly, acknowledging Hei Lou Lan's identity.

“Impossible!”

“Oh heaven, what is going on?”

“Her bloodline was recognized! Is she really a descendant of Xue Xiang’s Xue clan?”

Qi clan’s six Gu Immortals were deeply astounded, they could not believe it.

Fang Yuan turned around to look at them as he smiled, instructing the rockman Gu Immortals: “Go.”

Several rockman Gu Immortals were hit by Fang Yuan’s killer move, their auras changed profoundly, they passed the inspection of the yellow light and obtained the rights to enter the Five Xiangs grotto-heaven.

Seeing this, the six Gu Immortals from Qi clan shook intensely.

Some were even shaking so intensely like they would fall.

Earlier, Hei Lou Lan was a human, she had a possibility of having Xue Xiang’s bloodline. But these variant human rockmen? There were only male rockmen, they could not have children with other races.

However, the gatehouse acknowledged them.

The cruel fact stabbed into these Qi clan Gu Immortals’ hearts like a sharp sword.

They finally abandoned all hope, they had to admit that this was the work of Fang Yuan’s method.

Qi clan’s first supreme elder Qi Fa had a bitter expression, he surrendered to Fang Yuan earlier because he did not want to die, and also because he wanted to use the Five Xiang’s agreement and heaven form to coax Fang Yuan and find a chance to escape.

But now it seemed like it was impossible.

Fang Yuan's preparations were too ample, he came here prepared, all the different signs showed that he was not lying earlier.

"In the previous life, I'm afraid that Fang Yuan really obtained heaven form!"

"He has Spring Autumn Cicada, he can start over again countless times. This is too absurd, who can stop him?"

"The ancient bet... to think that an outsider would benefit from it... hehehe..."

Qi clan's Gu Immortals felt deep rage, some were furious at Heavenly Court's weakness, while some were dealt a huge impact, they were completely dejected.

They had very intense emotions.

And it was only understandable.

They had arrived here with deep hopes and excitement, but abruptly, Fang Yuan ambushed them and took them as prisoners, the treasure that Qi clan had worked hard to get for so long, heaven form, was now in the hands of an outsider!

The contrast was too big, it was too sudden and cruel.

"These people are so pitiful..." Lady White Rabbit looked at Qi clan's Gu Immortals as she felt some sympathy for them.

"Hmph, Fang Yuan wants that treasure, how can they even compete?" Bai Ning Bing had a cold expression, she has the clearest understanding of Fang Yuan's methods.

Next, several Gu Immortals landed in front of the gatehouse, passing the bloodline test.

Fang Yuan did not let Qi clan's Gu Immortals in, they were still restrained on the deck, they watched as their places were taken by Lady White Rabbit

followed by Fairy Miao Yin, obtaining Qi Xiang's acceptance.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing went together, they also got in.

As for Myriad Year Flying Warship and these Qi clan captives, he kept them inside his immortal aperture.

# **Chapter 1815 - Reaching the Heavens In One Step, Qi Path**

## Chapter 1815 Reaching the Heavens In One Step, Qi Path

As their field of vision changed, Bai Ning Bing focused and looked around, thinking: “This is Five Xiangs grotto-heaven?”

As she thought about that, an unknown source of information appeared in her heart, she understood the arrangements of the Five Xiangs immediately.

“This is a public grotto-heaven, the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs had once donated a portion of their grotto-heavens each to form this place. The entire grotto-heaven has five segments, they are not directly connected to each other, only the most central mountain range is shared among the five. The treasure of this bet is at the center of the grotto-heaven, as long as a Gu Immortal is acknowledged by the gatehouse and is teleported inside here, they can go after the treasure. Along the way, the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs have also set up some resources, stronger experts can try to take them away, but it is recommended that they do not take everything, so as to allow the resources to grow again in the future.”

Bai Ning Bing looked towards Fang Yuan, hesitating for a moment before deciding to inform him.

But Fang Yuan looked ahead as he waved his hand: “I’ve already gotten the information, no need to tell me.”

Bai Ning Bing nodded as she stopped talking.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan faced a hurdle at the gatehouse, not only was familiar face seen through, causing him to be pushed outside, he even had to use the light of wisdom to deduce a killer move that succeeded in allowing him to enter the Five Xiangs grotto-heaven under disguise.

After entering Five Xiangs grotto-heaven, the information was not provided to him. He had only learned about it after Bai Ning Bing told him.

But this time, after Fang Yuan's modifications and deductions, he conceptualized an immortal killer move that could not only be used on himself, but also other people.

So now, once he stepped into Five Xiangs grotto-heaven, the information immediately appeared in his mind, telling him of the situation.

“Let's go to the peak at the center!” Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing traveled together.

In the previous life, he had to rush against time because Qi clan's Gu Immortals were also here, he needed to compete with them over heaven form.

But now, Fang Yuan chose to act in advance and kick his competitors out of the competition, this entire Five Xiangs grotto-heaven was his.

Even though the situation was calm now and he could relax and collect resources along the way, slowly taking it down, Fang Yuan knew that at the center of the mountain range, the Immortal Gu House that contained heaven form might seem rough but it was the control area of this grotto-heaven, once he gains control over the Immortal Gu House, it would help with the movement of resources later on.

While flying, Bai Ning Bing was shocked to realize that Five Xiangs grotto-heaven had a lot of resource points.

Ice mirror snow lotus, hundred years profound ice, thousand years profound ice, mystical frost water, heaven craft divine jade, jade frost antelopes...

“Even though there are no large or giant resource points, and all of these are just small or mid sized ones, these resource points are so closely packed and each have a huge amount stored up, since this place only opens up once a hundred years, it has naturally accumulated many resources.”

Bai Ning Bing felt envious internally.

There was no question about it, these resources would all end up in Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture.

If she obtained them, she could expand her foundation rapidly, her assets would increase by multiple times, she would become rich instantly! But for Fang Yuan, this was just icing on the cake.

The journey was very smooth, Fang and Bai safely arrived at the central mountain range.

In the previous life, Qi clan's Gu Immortals made arrangements here and created a beast tide, they lured two immemorial desolate beasts to stop Fang and Bai, obstructing them and creating trouble for their advancement.

But now, they were all captured in advance, trapped inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, they were already unable to decide their own life and death.

There was nothing special about the Immortal Gu House palace at the top of the mountain range, Fang Yuan lost his interest quickly.

In front of the palace, there were many Gu Immortals gathered already, they were all Fang Yuan's subordinates, they had entered before him.

After paying respects to Fang Yuan, the Gu Immortals reported what they saw along the way.

Fang Yuan looked around, there was no surprise or anything amiss, he nodded as he led the immortals into the hall.

Heaven form was at the center of this hall.

It was shaped like a one-legged white crane, it was covered in pure snow-white feathers that had no dust or dirt on it. Its long beak was red in color, it was craning its neck and hanging its head, its wings were tucked in as its eyes were shut tight, as if it was sleeping.



“Rank nine aura...” Bing Yuan and the rest gasped and breathed in deeply as surprise and joy showed on their faces.

Fang Yuan led the immortals as they sat around the heaven form flying crane, instilling their wills into it.

The gatehouse was the bloodline inspector for the Five Xiangs, but they did not do anything to this heaven form killer move, thus, anyone could instill their will into it.

All sorts of wills gushed in as they obtained the information left by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable the moment they entered.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable told them that he had once found a natural heavenly spirit in immemorial white heaven, after spending a lot of effort, he captured it but found that heaven form held deep mysteries, he could not refine it immediately even with his great strength.

Thus, he designed the killer move heaven form and left this half-inheritance to a lucky person in the future.

After the Five Xiangs found this inheritance, they did not back off, the ancient bet was thus created.

The immortals understood the origin of this killer move, they gasped and sighed in admiration.

Fang Yuan had heard this in his previous life, he felt no emotions, but he gained a new understanding of the existence of heaven form.

“Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable has killer moves like ghostly concealment, divine concealment, heaven form, and others, they are able to exist indefinitely and would not break apart.”

“In my previous life, I thought that this was the style of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, but after the battle of fate Gu’s restoration, I noticed that all the Immortal and Demon Venerables had similar methods. This was true

for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, and Limitless Demon Venerable.”

“These killer moves and methods all have vast power, they are able to exist for a long time. Normally, they stay hidden without making any waves, but once they are used, the effects are simply shocking.”

“If only one or two venerables have such methods, that could be considered their specialty. But if all the venerables were like this, then it is not something regarding a path or a person, it is about attainment level.”

Every venerable had supreme grandmaster attainment level, this was a publicly recognized fact.

“Then this means...”

“Master attainment level generates intuition.”

“Grandmaster attainment level allows mimicking of other paths.”

“Great grandmaster attainment level allows the use of natural dao marks.”

“Supreme grandmaster attainment level allows killer moves to last indefinitely and operate on their own?”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved quickly, even though he was just guessing, he felt like his hypothesis was likely to be true.

Even though there was no description of this in the true inheritance that he obtained, with Fang Yuan having two paths at quasi-supreme attainment, he had the ability to take a peek at the heights of a supreme grandmaster.

Hours later, Fang Yuan successfully took down the last bit of heaven’s will inside heaven form.

This lump of heaven’s will had used a tactic of showing weakness in the previous life to deceive the Qi clan Gu Immortals, they suffered a huge loss while Fang Yuan benefited from it overall.

This time, Fang Yuan controlled even more wills here, he exterminated this stubborn heaven's will.

No unexpected mishaps happened during this process.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan was afraid that Bai Ning Bing would betray him, but this time, he had more subordinates here, those variant human Gu Immortals were very loyal to Fang Yuan.

This was Fang Yuan's leadership talent, he was skilled at politics, after defeating Heavenly Court multiple times, his personal charm and grand aura surged overwhelmingly, he did not need to use any enslavement path methods to achieve this.

The variant human Gu Immortals were very obedient, while Shadow Sect's immortals did not dare to defy Fang Yuan.

Even though they were just refining heaven form and had to exterminate the remaining heaven's will, there was also a large number of sturdy Gu Immortal wills that were inside the killer move.

These wills were accumulated in the last thousands of years by the wills of the descendants of the Five Xiangs.

Without exterminating these wills, Fang Yuan would not be able to use heaven form.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan was prepared for it, he modified several killer moves, including the one that used wisdom sword Immortal Gu as the core which had become his main method here.

“In my previous life, I used wisdom sword Immortal Gu alone, the effect was ordinary. Now that I have a killer move, I will gain control of heaven form rapidly!”

Fang Yuan stored away heaven form but he did not keep the Immortal Gu House, he directed the Gu Immortals to control the Immortal Gu House and relocate all of the resources here.

Five Xiangs grotto-heaven had once devoured a nine heavens fragment, it no longer faced any calamities and tribulations, but Fang Yuan could also not annex it now.

After making the arrangements, Fang Yuan led the remaining immortals out of the grotto-heaven, they went towards the direction of Qi Sea grotto-heaven.

Within Qi Sea grotto-heaven, there was a rank six Qi clan Gu Immortal guarding it.

But even the first supreme elder, second supreme elder, and third supreme elder had surrendered, this Qi clan Gu Immortal became stunned before he let Fang Yuan inside.

After the Qi clan Gu Immortals saw Fang Yuan's heaven form killer move, they no longer had hope, their expressions turned pale.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan ordered Bai Ning Bing to attack Qi Sea grotto-heaven, she was even attacked by unlimited qi sea.

But this time, the heavenly spirit in Qi Sea grotto-heaven had not woken up yet, it was still sleeping.

“Lord Fang Yuan, how do you want us to move these resources?” The variant human Gu Immortals asked.

Qi clan's Gu Immortals looked at each other as someone said anxiously: “We are willing to defend this place for Lord Fang Yuan!”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “No need, watch as I annex it!”

His qi path attainment level was grandmaster long ago. After the second battle in the River of Time, he repaired Myriad Year Flying Battleship and entered the River of Time, he captured his required immemorial year beasts.

In this long process of searching, he stayed inside the ship as he explored dream realms, letting his subordinates handle the matters outside.

He only took action when it was time to fight.

Thus, he saved a lot of time, he could succeed in many dream realm explorations!

Fang Yuan's attainment level in many paths had risen, especially qi path, it rose to great grandmaster.

With this attainment level, he could annex Qi Sea grotto-heaven!

During the process of annexing, the heavenly spirit of Qi Sea heavenly spirit was rudely awakened, but Fang Yuan was prepared and quickly suppressed it.

The heavenly spirit scolded the Qi clan descendants for being unfilial, while Qi clan's Gu Immortals had defeated expressions, they were in deep despair.

Eventually, they watched as their homeland was devoured by Fang Yuan, fused into the sovereign immortal aperture.

He gained a vast amount of qi path resources that could not be calculated at the moment.

His greatest gain was unlimited qi sea, this killer move was the trump card of Qi Sea grotto-heaven, it was the key that allowed them to defend against tribulations.

Unlimited qi sea used rank eight Immortal Gu Big Qi, rank seven Immortal Gu Big Family Qi and others, there were countless qi path immortal materials, like metal qi, water qi, fire qi, and others, and also special ones like luck qi, divine qi, there was a variety of different types of qi.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan dismantled this killer move, but now that he had great grandmaster attainment level in qi path, his foundation was deep enough, he decided not to destroy it.

And worth mentioning was that Qi Sea grotto-heaven gave Fang Yuan a million qi path dao marks!

Fang Yuan's qi path foundation grew immensely, it was truly reaching the heavens in one step!

# **Chapter 1816 - Absorbing Qi Sea Grotto-heaven**

## Chapter 1816 Absorbing Qi Sea Grotto-heaven

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini White Heaven.

The dragonman clone smiled as he stretched out his hand.

Before him stood a fawn.

The fawn lowered its head before the dragonman clone, stretching out its tiny pink tongue and licking the dragonman clone's palm.

“Master.” The fawn spoke in human language.

It was not an ordinary fawn of course, it was created from the obsession of Qi Xiang fusing with the heavenly power of the grotto-heaven, resulting in this Qi Sea heavenly spirit.

Qi Sea heavenly spirit had the appearance of a snow-white fawn, its eyes were golden in color, extremely dazzling.

But on the fawn's back, near the right side, there was a deep wound that exposed the bones, it extended towards its stomach, leaving behind a dense amount of dao marks.

Dragonman clone sighed: “Your injuries are severe, my methods might not work.”

This was the injury the fawn sustained when it used unlimited qi sea against Qi Sea grotto-heaven's myriad tribulation.

In the previous life, when Bai Ning Bing attacked Qi Sea grotto-heaven, the heavenly spirit had fallen asleep due to its injuries, it was rudely awakened.



The fawn was a heavenly spirit, it was a special existence created from the fusion of obsession and heavenly power.

To heal the fawn, wisdom path methods were the most appropriate.

Thus, Fang Yuan tried but had no success.

Even though Fang Yuan's refinement path methods were stronger, he did not dare to use them rashly.

It was not that he was helpless against one wound, but these methods were too powerful and uncontrollable, they were harmful to the heavenly spirit fawn. Very likely, the treatment might kill this Qi Sea heavenly spirit.

If the treatment kills Qi Sea heavenly spirit, what was the point of wasting effort in trying to save it?

For now, Fang Yuan could not heal this fawn.

But this heavenly spirit did not mind that, it was in fact quite happy. After Qi Sea grotto-heaven got annexed, it did not die, it still existed.

Every life form would have basic survival instincts, heavenly spirits were the same, they were inclined to finding a master and preserving the grotto-heaven.

Of course, they would only submit to masters who fulfilled their conditions. Or if methods like blood light spirit suppression were used.

Fang Yuan was thinking about the mystery of land spirits and heavenly spirits.

The Gu world had countless mysteries, the more Fang Yuan interacted with them, the more he realized how little he knew.

When ordinary Gu Immortals annex apertures, even if land spirits existed, they would die when the annexation is completed. But the sovereign immortal aperture broke this rule, there had to be a reason for it.

But Shadow Sect had no records of it.

Maybe Spectral Soul Demon Venerable hid the details, or maybe Shadow Sect's true inheritance was not everything that Spectral Soul had.

Or maybe even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had no idea that the sovereign immortal aperture would end up like this.

It was like how Fang Yuan could only understand the general concept behind an unknown Immortal Gu that he just refined, even though he had such strong refinement path attainment, he could not comprehend it entirely. A newly created and unprecedented Gu was especially so, only by using it could the Gu Immortal learn more things about it.

Right now, Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture had many land spirits and heavenly spirits.

Land spirits were more abundant, among them, Lang Ya land spirit was the most unique, he was made from two obsessions.

There were also a snake, star core, black hound, land spirits in all sorts of forms were scattered in different locations over the sovereign immortal aperture.

They were all useful assistants in managing the sovereign immortal aperture, they were in charge of their own territories.

Fang Yuan did not kill these heavenly spirits and land spirits, he preserved them.

Now was not the time, in the future, he was going to understand the logic behind their existence.

This was also why he wanted to save Qi Sea heavenly spirit.

After Qi Sea grotto-heaven was assimilated, Fang Yuan placed it in Mini White Heaven.

There were evident changes to the sovereign immortal aperture now.

All sorts of qi were growing and interacting, Mini White Heaven had the most evident signs, countless white clouds were forming and spreading.

The other eight mini heavens were the same, they all had their own colors.

These clouds were still like thin fog, they had not grown into cloud soil of their respective colors.

But this was just the start.

According to Fang Yuan's deductions, for the following period of time, different qi would appear in all parts of the sovereign immortal aperture.

These qi were of different types of varieties, most were mortal Gu materials.

But after a while, after enough mortal level qi are accumulated, they would start producing qi path immortal materials.

And after an even longer time, these qi path immortal materials would stabilize and create a special connection with the environment, that would be the initial formation of a resource point.

If it develops well, these tiny resource points might grow into small, mid, and large sized resource points.

Of course, without human interference, the chances of the sovereign immortal aperture generating a large sized resource point was simply too small, it was negligible.

All these changes were due to the addition of a million qi path dao marks.

These qi path dao marks were the accumulation of Qi Sea grotto-heaven, now that Fang Yuan annexed it, these qi path dao marks spread out and became distributed all over the mini five regions and nine heavens.

Each time he annexed an immortal aperture, he would gain dao marks, the environment of the immortal aperture would change slightly.

Like in the previous life, Fang Yuan annexed Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, gaining transformation path dao marks, this caused the entire sovereign immortal aperture to produce a larger variety of living beings. For example, the ordinary foxes in Mini Northern Plains would reproduce and have a greater chance of becoming red foxes, grey foxes, wind foxes, cloud foxes, or others, even becoming mutated beasts like autumn water fox or flowing light fox...

After annexing Xia Cha grotto-heaven, he gained a bunch of time path dao marks, the tributary of the River of Time became wider. Fang Yuan could control the upper and lower limit of the rate of time to a greater extent as a result.

Very evidently, randomly annexing apertures was not a good thing.

Because the increase in dao marks would cause the environment to change dramatically, without wisdom path methods to absorb these changes, the Gu Immortal's development inside the immortal aperture would be ruined, they would lose all their assets.

The living habitat of the immortal aperture world was always a tight chain. If one small species of grass became extinct, it could lead to a crisis for countless species higher up in the food chain. In comparison, the annexing of immortal apertures would cause huge environmental shifts!

The reason why Fang Yuan gained from it was because the sovereign immortal aperture was too big and vast, it made these influences negligible when spread out.

Most Gu Immortals had tiny immortal apertures compared to this sovereign immortal aperture.

When the same volume of water is stored in a bottle and a vat, the bottle would be full while the vat is only filled to a negligible amount.

Other than that, fang yuan had deep wisdom path attainment, along with other paths that allowed him to easily deal with all the changes that happened.

“It was still okay when I annexed Xia Cha grotto-heaven, but after annexing Qi Sea grotto-heaven, the gain of a million qi path dao marks has made an evident change to the sovereign immortal aperture!”

Xia Cha did not pass any myriad tribulations, she only had seventy thousand time path dao marks.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan annexed Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, which had over a hundred thousand transformation path dao marks. And this was because Beast Calamity Immortal had gone through one myriad tribulation before dying, the Beast Calamity grotto-heaven that he left behind did not pass a second myriad tribulation.

Qi Xiang was very strong in the past.

After all, the Five Xiangs were united and dominated the two heavens, their reputation was high in the five regions, they were incredibly famous.

After Qi Xiang died, Qi Sea grotto-heaven was left behind, it did not devour any fragment of the nine heavens, it still had to face endless calamities and tribulations.

Difficulties led to wealth!

After thousands of years, Qi Sea grotto-heaven had gone through more than ten myriad tribulations, each one gave around a hundred thousand dao marks.

Along with Qi Xiang's accumulations in his life, there were over a million qi path dao marks.

This was a shocking achievement.

It was not easy!

Myriad tribulations were terrifying, even rank eight Gu Immortals were fearful of them, they could only pass with great difficulty.

But Qi Sea grotto-heaven had survived for such a long time.

Mainly by relying on unlimited qi sea! The heavenly spirit controlled this move and with sufficient rank eight immortal essence, Qi Sea grotto-heaven managed to pass each time.

“Of course, this move is incredible, it not only consumes immortal essence but also different types of qi. By expending qi, the immortal essence expenditure could be reduced, while also increasing this move’s power!”

“For the last thousands of years, Qi clan’s Gu Immortals had been going all over the world collecting these types of qi.”

Compared to it, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was just a child.

Even though Lang Ya blessed land had an even longer history, it had purposely fallen to a blessed land, it did not have to face myriad tribulations, the strongest tribulations it faced were grand tribulations, so it gained much fewer dao marks.

Other than that, Lang Ya blessed land also used killer moves to influence the contents of the calamities and tribulations, allowing it to gain a large number of water path dao marks.

These water path dao marks worked with the refinement path dao marks, creating refinement water.

In order to create a man-made secluded domain of heaven and earth, Lang Ya blessed land had expended a vast number of refinement path and water path dao marks.

“If I did not annex this Qi Sea grotto-heaven, with the heavenly spirit fawn’s injuries, it would not be able to survive much longer. With a few more myriad tribulations, this grotto-heaven would be destroyed.”

Thus, one could not say that Lang Ya land spirit’s decision was wrong. If Lang Ya blessed land was kept as a grotto-heaven, even if it obtained ten times the number of refinement path dao marks, it would not exist until today.

Fang Yuan continued to cultivate.

On one hand, he was trying his best to assimilate Qi Sea grotto-heaven entirely, on the other hand, he started practising qi path killer moves.

The consecutive hit method that Ba Shi Ba possessed was given up after Fang Yuan tried it.

The most important thing now were qi path killer moves, especially unlimited qi sea!

The power of unlimited qi sea was truly tremendous, it helped Qi Sea grotto-heaven pass so many myriad tribulations.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan lacked foundation and time, he also needed resources so he dismantled the killer move unlimited qi sea.

But now, as a qi path great grandmaster who annexed Qi Sea grotto-heaven, this unlimited qi sea killer move was usable by him.

The sovereign immortal aperture's time flow was much faster than in the previous life as well!

This gave Fang Yuan even more time to practise his killer moves.

Fang Yuan's qi path foundation soared to a peak, after he turns it into battle strength, he would definitely gain a huge amount of strength that would surpass his current state!

"If my qi path battle strength is formed, it will surpass time path and become my main offensive method."

"A million qi path dao marks, hehe, it is truly not a joke."

"By then, I can try to subdue Dragon Palace, I will be able to fight for it against multiple rank eight Gu Immortals, forcefully taking away this Immortal Gu House."

Fang Yuan's gaze was eerie, he had made his plans long ago.





# **Chapter 1817 - Training in Qi Path Killer Moves**

## Chapter 1817 Training in Qi Path Killer Moves

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan practised his qi path killer moves.

Several Immortal Gu moved in the sky, while a large number of mortal Gu flew around them like a tornado in the sky.

Large amounts of astral winds were mixing into them.

As rank eight immortal essence was injected, these Gu worms' auras started to merge.

But after a long time, the killer move was not activated.

Sweat appeared on Fang Yuan's forehead, after more than ten breaths of time, Fang Yuan barely controlled the situation, the killer move finally succeeded, it was unleashed.

Qi path immortal killer move — Heavenly Astral Cloth Robe!

A grey-white cloth robe appeared on the dragonman clone's body.

It looked like normal clothing but upon closer inspection, one could see that every thread on this cloth was made of astral qi.

This was a rank seven killer move, but after the amplification of Fang Yuan's one million qi path dao marks, its power had risen by a thousand times!

After inspecting it, Fang Yuan saw that while this robe was thin, it had incredibly shocking defense.

“It has rank eight power without doubt, it is even stronger than winter coat.” Fang Yuan sighed internally.

Of course, it could not compare to reverse flow protection seal.

A million qi path dao marks was truly not a joke.

Even through mere amplification, a rank seven killer move could have the power of rank eight, and most importantly, the expended immortal essence is at the level of rank seven!

“After one myriad tribulation, a Gu Immortal will gain eighty-thousand dao marks on average. The stronger the tribulation, the larger the number of dao marks obtained.”

“Theoretically, after three myriad tribulations, a Gu Immortal can become venerable, they would have at least three hundred thousand dao marks!”

“A million qi path dao marks is on the level of something only rank nines can possess.”

“The core Immortal Gu of heavenly astral cloth robe is only rank seven, after the qi path dao mark amplification, it has reached the level of rank eight peak. If the core Immortal Gu is rank eight, after the qi path dao mark amplification, would it have rank nine power?”

Fang Yuan had a thought as bright light shined in his eyes.

He recalled the battle in his previous life, and all the methods left by the venerables. At the same time, his main body also made deductions.

Soon, Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone shook his head.

The possibility was small.

“Most likely, rank nine killer moves need rank nine Immortal Gu. Dao mark amplification cannot reach this extent.”

“Or more accurately, I cannot breakthrough to that level using just a million qi path dao marks.”

“Maybe if I have ten times the dao marks, the quantity will induce a qualitative change, and reach rank nine perhaps?”

Fang Yuan was not certain.

Even though he was a rank eight Gu Immortal, when he looked up towards the level of a rank nine, it was still shrouded in complete mystery.

In a purely theoretical situation, each venerable would start with at least three hundred thousand dao marks.

But from what Fang Yuan learned from Lang Ya land spirit as well as his own experiences, each venerable was an absolute monster, they could not be looked at with logic or common sense.

Just Limitless Demon Venerable alone, when he was a Gu Master, he already possessed Gu Immortal level dao marks. At that rate, when he became venerable, how many dao marks would he have?

Fang Yuan could not imagine it.

As for the other venerables?

When they just became a venerable, would they have merely three hundred thousand dao marks?

Fang Yuan smiled, the possibility was close to zero!

In this world, there were no invincible Gu worms, only invincible Gu Immortal.

If these people only had three hundred thousand dao marks when they became venerable, how could they dominate the world and gain the reputation of invincibility?

Right now, Fang Yuan was already one of the greatest experts in the world! He was at the peak, he could look down on most of the people in this world. There were few who could fight him evenly in a one-on-one battle.

However, whenever he looked up, he could still see those ten giant mountains above his head, concealed within the clouds!

They were the ten strongest people in history, each was a legend of legends, throughout the long history of humanity, they were the ten most dazzling suns.

Other than them, no matter who it was! Even the extremely talented individuals who were dazzling like the stars paled in comparison to them, their tiny light was forever shrouded by these ten's shadows.

Fang Yuan was no exception.

He was able to reach this stage because he had relied on these predecessors, especially the venerables.

Just looking at the sovereign immortal aperture alone.

This belonged to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Even today, when cultivating, Fang Yuan would often sigh in admiration towards the heaven defying advantage that the sovereign immortal aperture gave him.

For example, the annexing of Qi Sea grotto-heaven, under normal situations, who could annex it?

Almost nobody!

Unless Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was alive now.

Because immortal apertures could only annex smaller ones, the 'big and small' here referred to foundation.

In this world, only Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had the qi path foundation to annex Qi Sea grotto-heaven, which had a million qi path dao marks.

And if the grotto-heaven was dissected and annexed piece by piece, the losses would be severe.

Each time a grotto-heaven was cut apart, it would suffer immense damage, the qi path dao marks that were weaved like a web would suffer huge losses!

And because of conflicting dao marks, Gu Immortals could not truly gain many of these dao marks.

If Qi Sea grotto-heaven was dissected to a certain extent, the winds of assimilation would start blowing due to its severe damage. The remaining portions of the grotto-heaven would be destroyed in this case.

But the sovereign immortal aperture could devour “larger” apertures.

Originally, Fang Yuan had no foundation in qi path, but he was able to annex Qi Sea grotto-heaven, this was not like a snake devouring an elephant, it was an ant devouring an elephant!

The most scary was that with non-conflicting dao marks, Fang Yuan could perfectly absorb his gains, he could assimilate every single dao mark without any bit of wastage.

It was too heaven defying!

No wonder the Heavenly Dao could not condone its existence, in order to stop Spectral Soul, it nurtured the otherworldly demon Fang Yuan, plotting endlessly and sending him back five hundred years to stop Shadow Sect’s plan.

The more heaven defying the sovereign immortal aperture was, the more it showed how scary Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was.

Every time Fang Yuan used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth, he could gain a deeper understanding of Red Lotus Demon Venerable's terrifying power.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable...

Using the foundation of these venerables, Fang Yuan became the current generation demon overlord, but with every step he took, he increasingly felt the difference between him and a venerable, it was too vast to calculate!

Fang Yuan felt no dejection whenever he looked up at them, all he felt was admiration.

He had never been arrogant nor proud, he respected each of these predecessors.

One could only learn from capable people!

Mixed in with his admiration were traces of indescribable excitement.

"Even as strong as these ten venerables, none of them could attain eternal life, they died one by one."

"Then, can I truly succeed?"

The possibility was as slim as none!

In fact, as long as fate Gu still existed, it would not allow any life form to gain eternal life.

This was already confirmed within u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e!

"That is why it is interesting to pursue it." Fang Yuan smiled.

After collecting his thoughts, Fang Yuan's main body continued to train his qi path killer moves.

As for the dragonman clone, after testing heavenly astral cloth robe, he flew away and looked into treasure yellow heaven.

He wanted to purchase many qi path immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven.

Many qi path killer moves needed to use these qi path immortal materials.

For example, the heavenly astral cloth robe earlier needed a large amount of astral qi.

Using the dao marks inside immortal materials to unleash killer moves was not a rare thing. Grandmaster formation path Gu Immortals were able to use immortal materials to set up formations.

Long ago, water path killer moves also used a large number of water path immortal materials in huge quantities. But afterwards, due to the absurd cost involved, Gu Immortals chose to use Gu worms instead, they abandoned this method.

This trait was most evident in qi path.

No matter how low their qi path attainment level was, a Gu Master (Gu Immortal) would always be able to use Gu materials in place of Gu worms to unleash killer moves.

The reason was that qi path materials were the most mobile and simple to use. Water path materials were slightly less useful, while the dao marks of earth and rocks were much harder to use.

Fang Yuan did not care about this, he was very rich now and had abundant wealth, he searched and bought qi path immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven.

He did not ask for qi path immortal materials from Southern Border's Gu Immortals.

In terms of his qi path battle strength, he wanted to keep it a secret for now.



“Profound yin qi, minor sun qi, astral qi, domination qi... I’ll buy all of them! Hmm, blood qi?”

The dragonman clone looked as he pondered.

Even though blood path was detested greatly, would any righteous path force not research it secretly? Thus, in treasure yellow heaven, blood path Gu materials were very popular.

These blood qi were just mortal materials, but the quantity was huge.

If it were any other type of qi, Fang Yuan would not want these mortal materials, his sovereign immortal aperture could produce it! But blood qi was different.

Not only did this qi contain qi path dao marks, it also had blood path dao marks. Therefore, it was considered a blood path mortal material.

And blood path had a terrifying advantage, if the quantity was high enough, it could be treated as an immortal material.

“Such a huge quantity sold, this can be seen as an immortal material.” The dragonman clone thought of this as he hesitated no more, immediately buying it.

Central Continent.

“What, there is no more blood qi?” Gu Yue Fang Zheng looked into treasure yellow heaven with disbelief: “You had such a huge quantity last time.”

The Gu Immortal’s will who sold the blood qi in treasure yellow heaven shook his head: “A few hours ago, an incredibly affluent Gu Immortal swept the entirety of treasure yellow heaven’s market, buying all of the qi path immortal materials available. You also know that these blood qi can be accumulated and used together, that is why this happened.”

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was stunned!

Sweeping the whole of treasure yellow heaven's market and buying all of the available qi path immortal materials, what sort of wealth could allow one to do that?

Gu Yue Fang Zheng had already become an immortal for some time.

He knew deeply that wealth was a form of representation of strength.

If a Gu Immortal had immense wealth, it would mean that they own a large amount of resources, with such a foundation, it would help them advance smoothly in their cultivation journey!

"Maybe it is not a person, but a super force's action." Gu Yue Fang Zheng muttered to himself.

His divine sense went to many more stalls, but there were no gains as expected.

There was no blood qi left in the market.

But Gu Yue Fang Zheng cultivated blood path, he needed blood qi.

After his divine sense left treasure yellow heaven, Gu Yue Fang Zheng started to think: "Do I ask the sect for blood qi?"

He quickly dispelled that thought.

He decided to collect it himself.

# **Chapter 1818 - Heavenly Court's Righteousness**

## Chapter 1818 Heavenly Court's Righteousness

Blood qi was very easy to obtain! One could get a bunch from killing mortal beasts and using blood path methods to extract them. By raising desolate beasts in the immortal aperture, there would be an endless supply of immortal material blood qi.

Precisely because blood path resources were easily obtainable, blood path was incredibly threatening, the righteous path of the five regions prohibited it.

If it were other immortal materials, Fang Zheng might get help from the sect, but this was just blood qi, and Fang Zheng did not need a lot.

In Fang Zheng's case, it was just a little troublesome to obtain the blood qi that he needed, he only had to spend some time.

Thinking about this, Fang Zheng informed Fan Xi Liu of his plan, because of his unique identity, he could not leave Fei He Mountain casually.

After Fan Xi Liu learned about it, he gave Fang Zheng a mission: "Perfect timing! There is a golden mountain ox at the northwest area wreaking havoc, go and settle that issue. Kill or enslave it, if you can capture it alive, you will get double the sect contribution points."

Fang Zheng's heart shook, the golden mountain ox was a desolate beast, he had never fought against a desolate beast before.

But soon, he felt a little excitement in his heart as he agreed.

Fang Zheng was no longer the young lad from before, he had gone through many hurdles in Lang Ya blessed land, after thinking about it, he made up his mind.

He did not head to the golden mountain ox immediately, he went to the information tower of Immortal Crane Sect.

White Crane Information Tower was an Immortal Gu House with nine floors, it was situated at a secluded area on the mountainside of Fei He Mountain.

It was covered in deep fog and lush greenery.

Fang Zheng flew over on a crane.

Even though he cultivated blood path, he had been tutored in Immortal Crane Sect and was the disciple of Lord Sky Crane, he was familiar with the manipulation of flying cranes.

When he was in Lang Ya blessed land, he had participated in the huge war of three continents, he did not have a chance to subdue cranes, but he still retained his interest in them.

But due to a twist of fate, he was saved by Feng Jiu Ge and returned to Immortal Crane Sect, because Heavenly Court decided to nurture him, he became an immortal.

With Gu Immortal cultivation level, he even became a supreme elder of Immortal Crane Sect, Fang Zheng easily obtained a crane for himself as a movement tool.

Before White Crane Information Tower, there were no guards, only two desolate beast cranes were resting here. If anything happened, these cranes would appear and act as guardians.

Fang Zheng rode on his crane as he got near White Crane Information Tower, the flying crane below him started shivering as its vocalizations became jittery.

Fang Zheng could not help but sigh: “This flying crane is a rank five mutated beast, when I was in Immortal Crane Sect in the past, I felt that it was incredibly powerful, but now, it is nothing special.”

“The difference between immortal and mortal is truly too great.”

After Fang Zheng landed in front of White Crane Information Tower, his crane almost fell down from fear.

Fang Zheng sighed as he kept it in his immortal aperture.

He had the status of a supreme elder, White Crane Information Tower was open to him without question, Fang Zheng stepped in.

Every floor of the information tower had a large number of information path mortal Gu.

If Fang Zheng wanted to obtain information from them, he would need to exchange for it using sect contribution points.

The information tower itself could store information, but Immortal Crane Sect would not do that. Because if the tower got destroyed, the information would also be ruined. This information tower was an Immortal Gu House that only managed one aspect, it was like Heavenly Court's Immortal Gu Houses, it only had the power of information path.

If it were a complete Immortal Gu House, having both offense and defense, it would not need two desolate beast white cranes to defend it.

Fang Zheng had no foundation in information path, he could not see the mysteries of this tower. But he could guess that this tower had some sort of arrangement towards preserving, transporting, and destroying these Gu worms.

White Crane Information Tower had the ability to collect and update information, most types of intelligence could be found in it.

Of course, true secrets could only be obtained by the higher-ups.

Even though Fang Zheng was a supreme elder, he could not become a higher-up of Immortal Crane Sect. Because of his special identity, he was excluded by the rest of them.

In the past, Fang Zheng was still ignorant and innocent, but after these years, he had understood these politics.

He did not feel proud for having this understanding, instead he only had a bitter smile.

He could now understand the circumstances that Fang Yuan faced back in Qing Mao Mountain. With Fang Yuan's situation back then, he was not welcomed by the higher-ups, in order to get stronger, he could only use schemes and robbery.

“The truth is, since the creation of Immortal Crane Sect, haven't they been doing this all along? They occupy lots of resources, many of these resource points were once owned by demonic path or lone immortals.”

“And even though Heavenly Court is known for righteousness, that is not entirely true. Looking at history, all of its territory was snatched away from variant humans.”

“Heavenly Court only represents the righteousness of humanity.” Fang Zheng thought to himself.

Other Central Continent righteous path Gu Immortals would not think like this normally, it was a heretical idea.

But Fang Zheng had lived with the hairy men. Even though he was ostracized, he had truly felt the culture and living habits of the hairy men, he understood them.

How could other Gu Immortals live and grow in an environment dominated by variant humans?

His unique experience gave Fang Zheng a unique perspective. All his hardship in the past had now become his wealth, even though his vision was not broad, it was unique.

“But one's position determines one's views and behavior, I still prefer the righteousness of Heavenly Court.” Fang Zheng smiled bitterly as he

inspected the information.

“Desolate beast golden mountain ox, hmm, this is the one.” He went up several floors as he found the corresponding information path mortal Gu.

After his divine sense looked into it, he gained waves of information.

The golden mountain ox was large as a mountain, it was a female-only species and liked to eat metal essence. After eating several hundred kilograms of metal essence, it would enter a cave and sleep.

“Eat and sleep, sleep and eat?” That’s a good life.” Fang Zheng laughed.

He continued to look: “The horn is the most valuable part of the golden mountain ox’s body. Every hundred years, the horn grows by ten feet, it will continue to grow and extend, curving until it coils around the entire head, neck, and stomach. After it reaches the stomach, the sharp horns will turn into thick leather skin. As long as the ox moves its head, it would pull forward and cut the skin of its womb, the descendants that are called golden calves will jump out of this wound and become born.”

Fang Zheng’s eyes flickered as he muttered: “This reproduction method is quite like rockmen.”

Fang Zheng continued to look.

After the golden mountain ox gives birth, because the wound is huge, it would be in great pain, it would cry out loudly as it bleeds profusely.

If newly born golden calves choose to lick the wound of the mother, the dao marks on their tongue would heal the golden mountain ox rapidly, until they fully recover.

But if they choose not to, the mother would die. The calves can drink the blood of their mother and become stronger rapidly, passing the weak period of being a calf quickly.

“Very interesting!” Fang Zheng sighed to himself.



The life of a golden mountain ox was to eat and sleep. This meant that after giving birth, if the calves choose to save the mother, she would not take care of them, after ingesting lots of food, she would hibernate.

For the calves' own survival, it was more beneficial to not save the mother.

Thus, most calves would watch as their mothers die, only a small portion would lick the wound and save her.

“When an ox gives birth, it often means a tragedy. But for survival, this is necessary, but I still like those calves who save their mothers more.”

Fang Zheng watched as he decided on his plan.

He left the information tower, his confidence in this sect mission was completely different from before he saw the information.

He decided to target the golden mountain ox's habits.

Didn't it like to eat metal essence?

Then he would make some metal essence, like how people used fish bait to fish, he would use metal essence to bait the ox!

Fang Zheng had above average strength, having familiarized himself with many blood path immortal killer moves during this period of time inside his immortal aperture, he was able to fight against the golden mountain ox now.

But if he could use half his strength, why would he go all out?

The best way was to fight the enemy with wisdom, using all the advantages that he could find, to preserve his remaining strength for possible accidents.

This was the habit that Fang Zheng had gained after the countless battles in his mortal life.

Days later, Fang Zheng arrived at his destination.

He entered the valley stealthily, leaving behind a large amount of metal essence at the area where the golden mountain ox often roamed around.

When the golden mountain ox came nearby, it sniffed as brilliance shined in its eyes, it quickly discovered the deeply buried metal essence.

The golden mountain ox started to use its hooves and horns to dig.

Rocks were tossed as dust clouds rose, the metal essence was quickly excavated, the joyful golden mountain ox started to devour it.

“I did it!” Fang Zheng watched personally, he was secretly overjoyed.

He waited patiently for the golden mountain ox that had eaten its fill to go back to the cave and sleep.

Three days later, the golden mountain ox’s cries could be heard from within the cave.

Fang Zheng who was sleeping woke up in shock, after reacting, he cheered: “The poison has finally spread, it is working now.”

But he did not enter the cave, he waited outside patiently.

The intense pain of the poison made the golden mountain ox go berserk, it rampaged in the cave, causing the entire mountain to shake, the surrounding forest went into chaos as a large number of living creatures scattered.

After a long while, the commotion in the cave gradually calmed down.

Fang Zheng entered the cave now and fought intensely against the half crippled golden mountain ox.

After some time, seeing that the golden mountain ox was completely agitated, Fang Zheng left the cave.

Fighting against the golden mountain ox in the cave was too dangerous, if it caved in, even as a rank six Gu Immortal, Fang Zheng would be in trouble.

And Fang Zheng was here to capture the golden mountain ox alive, he did not want to destroy the area and cause all the living creatures to lose their homes.

Fang Zheng left the cave, the golden mountain ox followed.

The two fought in the valley, eventually, Fang Zheng used the killer move blood turns cold to freeze the golden mountain ox and captured it alive.

However, when he was about to send the golden mountain ox into his immortal aperture, a strong aura surged from the body of this golden mountain ox.

At the same time, a bronze-gold cauldron forced its way out of the golden mountain ox's body.

“This is?!” Fang Zheng was deeply shocked.

At the next moment, a rank eight Gu Immortal flew out of the golden cauldron.

“Spirituality hides within the metal essence, divine light slumbers for three hundred thousand years.”

“Owing to great fortune I see the light of day, with thanks to the martyr of righteous blood.”

This female rank eight immortal sang slowly as she landed in front of Fang Zheng, smiling at him: “Little friend, you are the one who awakened me?”

Fang Zheng was dumbfounded, he had not anticipated such a situation!



# **Chapter 1819 - Sword Path Grandmaster**

## Chapter 1819 Sword Path Grandmaster

Immortal killer move — Golden Thread Sword!

Fang Yuan shouted loudly as he used the killer move.

Instantly, countless golden threads burst out of his body, stabbing towards his surroundings like a porcupine, piercing everything in their path.

Crack crack crack...

The three Gu Immortals around him were pale and shocked, they wanted to dodge but it was too late, their bodies and souls were completely penetrated by countless golden threads.

Plop, plop, plop, the three Gu Immortals fell onto the ground, lifeless.

Fang Yuan breathed roughly, this was a tough battle, after finally killing the enemy, he was extremely tired.

The world he was in started to vanish until it was completely gone, only Fang Yuan's desolate soul was left inside the sovereign immortal aperture's Mini Green Heaven with heavy injuries.

"I finally passed the final scene."

"It was really difficult."

"If I did not use unravel dream at the most crucial moment, to find that tiny loophole, I would have failed for sure!"

After Fang Yuan's soul returned to his body, he still felt some emotions from earlier.

This was a sword path dream realm.

Inside this dream realm, Fang Yuan's strength was low, especially in the final scene, every Gu Immortal enemy was stronger than him.

He had to keep trying and making use of the conflicts between these enemies to disrupt them, creating chances for himself so that he could remain standing.

Eventually, after a hundred tries and incredible luck, he managed to kill the last three Gu Immortal enemies.

“But I passed after all.”

“Not bad, my sword path attainment level has reached grandmaster.”

Fang Yuan inspected himself, he became quite happy.

He had quite a number of sword path Immortal Gu, he only lacked sword path attainment level.

This weakness was finally removed, in the future, his sword path battle strength would also rise greatly.

After resting, Fang Yuan recovered fully and continued exploring dream realms.

“This is likely a human path dream realm.”

Fang Yuan's desolate soul arrived in the next dream realm as he looked with anticipation.

Extorting Southern Border's righteous path was a correct choice. This gave Fang Yuan a large number of dream realms to explore.

The value of these dream realms were extremely high to him.

Because Fang Yuan did not lack resources, Immortal Gu, killer moves, or Immortal Gu recipes, he only lacked attainment level and actual experience.

His desolate soul entered the dream realm.

The world that he was seeing changed immediately.

This was a battlefield.

It was filled with smoke and dust, shouting and killing were all around him.

“Clan leader, be careful!” Fang Yuan had just taken a look when someone shouted at him.

Fang Yuan sensed something amiss, he quickly dodged.

However, his body could not move as fast as his thoughts, an intense pain assaulted him.

Fang Yuan fell onto the ground, looking at the hole on his chest, only half his heart was left.

“This...” Fang Yuan was speechless, he shouted loudly: “Where is the healing Gu Master?”

But no answer came.

The world started to spin, it turned dark rapidly.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan’s desolate soul suffered heavy injuries as he was pushed out of the dream realm.

Using guts Gu, Fang Yuan’s desolate soul recovered quickly, after resting, he entered the dream realm again.

“Dodge!” Fang Yuan entered and immediately dodged.

“Clan leader, be careful!” The Gu Master beside him shouted.

Fang Yuan’s movements suddenly froze as he suffered a fatal hit again.



The moment he fell to the ground, he realized: “The Gu Master who called out to me earlier is a spy. He used an information path method that pretends to alert me but is actually a mortal killer move that restrains my actions!”

“There are no healing Gu Masters around me, with this spy around, I can only try to pass this using my own strength.”

In the dream realm, Fang Yuan’s strength was greatly restricted, he could only use the abilities of the character within the dream.

Originally, Fang Yuan did not want to do this, because he had too little time to react, he could not check the Gu worms that he had.

Before he inspected them, he would definitely get killed.

Fang Yuan could only accept his loss and try a third time.

Plop!

He died again.

Back to reality, Fang Yuan was troubled: “How can this be? I can’t check my own aperture? How can I do anything without even knowing what Gu worms I have?”

The dream realm restricted him, he could not inspect what Gu worms he had.

Guess? That was unrealistic.

Fang Yuan tried for a fourth time.

Different from the previous two explorations, Fang Yuan used unravel dream this time.

“Clan leader, be careful!” The Gu Master beside him shouted.

Plop!

Fang Yuan suffered a fatal blow, he fell on the ground.

“Clan leader!”

“Impossible, lord clan leader has justice Gu on him, how could he be defeated so easily?!”

The traitor shouted beside him.

After the exploration failed, Fang Yuan’s desolate soul was thrown out of the dream realm again.

“Immortal killer move unravel dream only gave me one hint.”

“The traitor spoke an extra sentence, pointing out that I have justice Gu.”

“Then let’s use it.”

During Fang Yuan’s fifth exploration, at the crucial moment, he used justice Gu.

“Clan leader, be careful!” The traitor screamed.

Fang Yuan’s dodging movement froze again.

Justice Gu!

Piercing white light burst out of Fang Yuan’s body, his speed went back to normal as he dodged the fatal blow.

“Huff! I succeeded.” Fang Yuan rolled on the battlefield as he quickly looked around, assessing the area.

This was a village.

Everywhere, there was rubble and corpses lying on the ground.

“The conflict between two clans? This is already at the step of exterminating a clan.”

But Fang Yuan found that he was not the victim, he was the invader, his side had the absolute advantage.

“This is a mortal level fight and I am the clan leader, by just leading these Gu Masters, we can win.” Fang Yuan had a calm and composed mood.

“But is the condition for clearing this dream realm winning the battle? Let’s try.”

After that, Fang Yuan was joyful to find out that his aperture could be inspected again.

The dream realm character had rank five cultivation level and many mortal Gu, there were five to six rank four Gu, and one rank five Gu which was justice Gu.

Fang Yuan immediately understood as he smiled: “With these Gu worms, I can settle this myself.”

Be it leading the troops or fighting personally to obtain victory, it was extremely easy for Fang Yuan.

“Lord clan leader!” At this time, the traitor appeared, showing a concerned expression.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: “I will kill this traitor first!”

He attacked immediately, killing the traitor with one killer move.

“Clan leader, what are you doing?”

“The vice clan leader is dead, the clan leader killed him!”

“I was right after all, Chen clan is trying to take down our Shan clan.”

“Rebel! Rebel! Let’s take revenge for Lord Shan!”

Fang Yuan was shocked, he killed the traitor but half of the Gu Masters started to rebel and attack.

The scene fell into chaos, a three-way battle started.

Fang Yuan noticed that this was bad: “I have rank five justice Gu, it can give me great strength. With my strength, I can still win and kill all opposition. But... this traitor should not have been dealt with this casually.”

As expected, even though Fang Yuan won, there were only a few Gu Masters left standing on the battlefield.

Corpses and broken body parts were everywhere, blood flowed like a river.

The world dissipated as Fang Yuan’s desolate soul was thrown out again.

But this time, he did not suffer much injuries.

This result made Fang Yuan gain a deeper guess: “This means that victory is indeed the condition to pass the first scene. However, the type of victory is crucial. If the losses are too high, I will not be able to pass it.”

Fang Yuan entered the dream realm again with newfound knowledge.

This time, he tolerated the existence of the traitor, he went as the vanguard and used justice Gu along with many killer moves to slaughter the enemies, obtaining a perfect victory!

“Lord clan leader is so courageous!”

“We have won, we are victorious!”

“Nie clan has finally been exterminated. Hahaha.”

Amidst a wave of fun and laughter, the dream realm entered the second scene.

Within the hall, bright lights were shining. There were delicious food and wine on the table, dozens of Gu Masters were gathered here as they enjoyed a luxurious feast.

Fang Yuan found that he was sitting beside the main seat, towards his left was Chen clan leader, who was sitting at the main seat.

“What is going on?” Fang Yuan was shocked: “In the previous scene, I was in the role of Chen clan leader, but this time, I actually became the traitor vice clan leader?”

Fang Yuan was seeing this for the first time, he did not know whether to laugh or cry.

However, he soon thought: “No wonder I could not kill the traitor in the first scene. Because he is the next character that I should portray, now then, how do I pass this?”

Fang Yuan looked at the situation with cold eyes.

Chen clan leader drank a huge mouthful of wine as he placed down the empty wine cup, sighing: “We finally won! Brother, to speak the truth, I have finally relaxed only now. When I heard that Nie clan was planning to destroy the mountain, I could not sleep at all. They were unable to compete with the alliance of our two clans, so they created such a vicious plan, it was truly evil. Thankfully, heaven is not blind, they got what they deserved, these people died because of just deserts.”

Fang Yuan did not know what to say.

This Chen clan leader was ignorant, he had not realized the ill intentions of this vice clan leader.

But it was not surprising.

During the first scene, even though the vice clan leader used an information path method, he disguised it as a warning of concern, there were no traces left behind, it was truly hard to notice.

Fang Yuan had a sharp sense because he was a Gu Immortal, he realized the vice clan leader’s vicious scheme.

When he tried to kill the traitor in the first scene, a rebellion occurred.

“Wait, even if the vice clan leader’s members see him getting killed, they would not act so united, right?”

“There has to be some people who are hesitant during the chaos.”

“But these people rebelled in unity, after the vice clan leader was killed, they acted together and took revenge on the Chen clan members without holding back.”

Fang Yuan suddenly had a flash of inspiration, he understood: “So that means that the vice clan leader’s intentions to harm Chen clan leader is not his own plan, it is the collective plan of the entire Shan clan.”

Fang Yuan thought of this as Chen clan leader’s expression suddenly changed, he held his stomach as he stood up, taking several steps back: “This wine... is poisoned!”

# **Chapter 1820 - No Justice in Heaven and Earth**

## Chapter 1820 No Justice in Heaven and Earth

“The wine is poisoned!” Chen clan leader’s body shook as he looked at Fang Yuan angrily: “Vice clan leader Shan, this is your wine, what are you trying to do?!”

This was a sudden change of events, Fang Yuan was slightly dazed.

But before he said anything, the Gu Master beside him stood up and chuckled: “What are we doing? We are killing you, we are eliminating the Chen clan members. Throughout history, this mountain has belonged to Shan clan, be it Chen clan or Nie clan, you two were initially servants of my clan!”

“You are bullshitting! This was my Chen clan’s mountain to begin with, our ancestors were kind and took in both of your clans after you were forced to vacate your destroyed mountain.” Chen clan’s Gu Master rebuked in a loud voice.

The Shan clan Gu Master who spoke continued in a cold voice: “Shameless servant, there is no point in talking. It is too late now, your clan leader has already drunk this poisoned wine, we created this using woman’s heart Gu, it counters your clan leader’s justice Gu. Without your clan leader, how can you Chen clan members resist our Shan clan?”

Chen clan’s Gu Masters turned pale as they realized the problem now.

Fang Yuan was dazed again, he turned around and asked the Shan clan Gu Master beside him: “Who told you that woman’s heart Gu can create a poisonous wine that counters justice Gu?”

The Shan clan Gu Master was the vice clan leader’s aide, he was stunned as he asked in a stupefied tone: “What? Lord, didn’t you tell me that



yourself?”

“What?!” Fang Yuan was speechless.

Boom!

Chen clan leader burst out with a blinding white light, the paleness and anger vanished on his face as his expression turned solemn.

He stared with furious eyes towards Fang Yuan, he shouted in a heroic tone: “Shan Xing! You unscrupulous scoundrel! You dared to use this vile scheme on me, I was wrong about you, I had misjudged your personality, I had actually thought that you were willing to sacrifice yourself for the big picture and hand the role of clan leader to me. So you were always afraid of justice Gu and my strength, which was why you chose to conceal your ambitions.”

Fang Yuan felt a sharp headache as he thought rapidly: “Chen clan’s leader has rank five cultivation level, I am only rank four now, my Gu worms are also weaker than him, if we fought, I will not be Chen clan leader’s match.”

The aide beside him screamed in fear: “What, what is going on? He drank the poisoned wine but justice Gu is still working! Lord Shan Xing, didn’t you say...”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly instantly, he thought of the solution to this.

Indeed, as long as justice Gu stopped working, Chen clan’s leader would be poisoned, his strength would fall, he would not be an impossible opponent.

“So that’s it.” Fang Yuan died from the attacks of Chen clan’s leader but he carried a faint smile.

The second attempt at the dream realm.

Within the hall, bright lights were shining. There were delicious food and wine on the table, dozens of Gu Masters were gathered here as they enjoyed a luxurious feast.

Chen clan leader drank a huge mouthful of wine as he placed down the empty wine cup, sighing: “We finally won! Brother, to speak the truth, I have finally relaxed only now. When I heard that Nie clan was planning to destroy the mountain, I could not sleep at all. They were unable to compete with the alliance of our two clans, so they created such a vicious plan, it was truly evil. Thankfully, heaven is not blind, they got what they deserved, these people died because of just deserts.”

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, saying lightly: “There is a reason behind this. Nie clan did not come up with such a vicious plan, I was the one who arranged it and deceived you. The people you killed were all innocent.”

“What?!” Chen clan leader was completely shocked, he looked at Fang Yuan in disbelief: “Brother Shan, did you drink too much? What nonsense are you spouting!”

Fang Yuan looked at Chen clan leader with an eerie gaze: “You are too naive, you were kept in the dark all along. You are a cold blooded murderer, how many innocent people have you killed? Your hands are filled with blood, your justice is just a facade. You are a brute and a fool, also, you drank too much.”

“What?! You poisoned the wine?” Chen clan’s leader held his stomach in shock as he fell to the ground.

Chen clan’s Gu Masters were shocked and fearful, while Shan clan’s Gu Masters were ready and attacked immediately.

Chen clan’s leader wanted to put up resistance but he could only watch helplessly.

Fang Yuan’s aide shouted excitedly: “The wine was effective after all, Chen clan leader’s justice Gu has been neutralized.”

Fang Yuan wanted to roll his eyes.

To activate justice Gu, other than primeval essence, the Gu Master also needed to believe that they were on the side of justice.

Fang Yuan's words made Chen clan's leader enter a chaotic state, he suspected himself and felt incredibly ashamed, he could not activate justice Gu anymore.

The battle erupted and ended quickly.

Shan clan came prepared, all of the Chen clan members, from clan leader to clan members, were all dealt with.

When the hall returned to quietness, Chen clan's Gu Masters were either dead or injured, those who were alive were captured.

The second scene was passed.

During the third scene.

Fang Yuan was inside a cell, the only cell mate he had was that Chen clan leader.

He was covered in injuries, his vitality was weak, his face was pale, his eyes were dyed in a purple-dark color, he was deeply poisoned.

Fang Yuan looked at his injuries, he had obviously been interrogated and was on the verge of death.

Even so, the four limbs and neck of Chen clan's leader were chained up, he was lying on the ground, barely breathing.

"What is this situation?" Fang Yuan looked at himself, speechless. He was also chained up, his body was old and weak, he was thin like a twig, he was in about the same state as Chen clan's leader.

Even though he had a rank four aperture, it was already destroyed, he had no Gu worms either.

"What am I supposed to do? I am not the traitor vice clan leader but another person now. Hmm... right now, other than me, only this guy is in the cell. I guess I need to talk to him to find out." Fang Yuan laughed to himself and

wanted to speak but Chen clan's leader spoke in advance: "No need to mock me, father."

"Father?!" Fang Yuan was surprised, he was acting as the father of Chen clan's leader? Then why was he locked up here? Looking at the situation, he had been kept here for a long time, he was not a new entrant like this Chen clan leader.

Chen clan's leader continued: "Father, I was the one who defeated you and locked you in here. But I have never regretted it! You were corrupt, the evidence was clear, you were neither impartial nor fair, you were not fit to be Chen clan's leader. According to the rules, you deserved this punishment."

"So you are the snitch." Fang Yuan quipped.

Chen clan leader added: "Similarly, I do not regret my current situation, I deserved this! I killed so many innocent people, my hands are stained with the blood of Nie clan's members. I deserve death!"

"Hehehe." Chen clan's leader laughed pitifully: "Shan clan wants to force me to hand over justice Gu, but what can they do? Their screaming, the sound of their whipping, the sound of hot iron scalding my flesh, all these sounds are like the cries of anguish and injustice of Nie clan's members."

"I would rather they whip me more and let me suffer more pain! But this cannot atone for my sins! It cannot undo my mistakes! I want to die, just let me die! I deserve this."

"Ah!"

Chen clan's leader grunted as he shook, he had died.

His death alerted the guard, soon, Shan Xing who had taken his position arrived.

"Damn it! We can't get justice Gu now." Shan Xing was furious, he gritted his teeth.

Suddenly, he turned around and looked at Fang Yuan with rage: “Old timer, didn’t we agree that you would urge your son to hand it over! What did you do? You are useless, go join your son!”

Crack.

Shan Xing said this as he acted, chopping off Fang Yuan’s head.

The exploration failed, Fang Yuan’s desolate soul was chased out of the dream realm again.

This time, Fang Yuan rested for a long time.

The third scene was the final scene, Fang Yuan’s exploration failed, his desolate soul suffered huge injuries.

While recovering, he thought about it: “In the third scene, I am Chen clan leader’s father but I am crippled, there is no hope in escaping with my strength.”

“The key to this should be Chen clan’s leader.”

“Then, what is the condition for passing the third dream realm?”

Fang Yuan had a lot of experience in dream realms now, he was the number one person in the world. This question did not stump him for long, he soon understood.

“The first two dream realm scenes have different identities but the conditions were the same. That was to satisfy the needs of the character.”

“In the first scene, I was the Chen clan leader, I needed to obtain victory with my clansmen, and it needed to be a beautiful victory without much losses.”

“In the second scene, I was the vice clan leader Shan Xing, I needed to succeed in my scheme and suppress his justice Gu.”

“And now in the third scene, I am Chen clan leader’s father, my son locked me up in the prison cell for a long time, I want to regain freedom. Thus, I chose to work with Shan Xing to get my son to hand over justice Gu, so that I can be free.”

Fang Yuan entered the dream again.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly.

Chen clan leader spoke in advance: “No need to mock me, father.”

“You are my son, isn’t mocking you like mocking myself for failing to raise you well? I simply regret it, I sacrificed myself for your sake, I wanted your justice to lead Chen clan towards glory and prosperity, but to think that you would become a prisoner that does not even believe himself. I was wrong about you, had I known this, I would not have created fake evidence of my corruption.” Fang Yuan said.

Chen clan leader was dazed, he was curious: “Father, what do you mean?”

Fang Yuan laughed coldly but did not speak.

Chen clan leader shook his head: “No father, you were corrupt, the evidence was there, how could it be fake?”

Fang Yuan laughed coldly again: “You think it is real, so it has to be real? Then what about Nie clan’s matter?”

Chen clan leader was lost for words.

Fang Yuan continued: “I pretended to not care for you but I was secretly nurturing you with great effort. To use justice Gu, the Gu Master needs to believe firmly in his own justice. Because you were too young, and your understanding of justice was too superficial, I had to do this and sacrifice myself so that you would understand your justice.”

“Father, speak clearly, what was the truth back then?”

Fang Yuan chuckled: “Is the truth really that important?”

Chen clan's leader did not hesitate, he answered immediately: "Of course! Without the truth, how can there be justice?"

"That is why I said your understanding was too superficial. Is justice closely related to the truth?" Fang Yuan said slowly: "Let me ask you, when you slaughtered Nie clan, was it an act of justice? Even if they really had a plan to destroy our mountain, from their perspective: You are a murderer trying to slaughter their whole clan, by resisting you and defending their homes and family, wasn't that justice too?"

"This..." Chen clan's leader pondered.

"The enemy of an enemy is a friend. From their perspective, the so-called plan to destroy the mountain was just a form of deterrence, they were afraid that our Chen clan and Shan clan would ally. But in the end, even though you wiped them out, they did not destroy the mountain, right?" Fang Yuan asked.

Chen clan's leader was silent.

Fang Yuan smiled: "I see you realized their side of justice too. You triggered the battle, slaughtering the enemies and also causing deaths and injuries to our clansmen, you thought that it was an act of justice, was that wrong? You were afraid that they would destroy the mountain's foundation, in that case, it would collapse as the spirit spring vanishes, lives would be lost and homes would be destroyed, you were thinking for your clan, you eliminated the problem in advance, that was not wrong. It was also a form of justice."

"Now look, both sides had their own perspective of justice, right?"

Chen clan's leader fell into deep thought.

He had never considered this problem before.

Fang Yuan observed his expression as he said: "Let me ask you, is it justice that a sheep eats grass?"

“This... how can that be a form of justice?” Chen clan’s leader was dazed.

“From the sheep’s perspective, without grass, there would be no food, it would starve to death, it had to eat grass. But from the perspective of the grass, it had worked so hard to stay alive, getting out of the soil and growing larger to get more rain and sunlight. It worked so hard but the sheep decided to eat it, even uprooting and devouring everything the grass had, without any hope for survival. Isn’t the grass an innocent victim? Isn’t it pitiful?”

Chen clan’s leader shook his head: “Isn’t sheep eating grass just a natural thing? I have never pitied the grass because this is how the world is meant to be.”

“Precisely.” Fang Yuan nodded: “The truth of this world is the law of the jungle, big fish eats small fish, and small fish eats shrimp, this is what nature entails. What crime can there be? There is no such thing as justice here. Sheep eats grass, humans eat sheep, that has nothing to do with justice, it is just for survival.”

“There is no such thing as justice in heaven and earth, there is only justice made by humanity.”

“Since time immemorial, humans had to unite to gain strength for the sake of survival, in order to live in this cruel world!”

“Then, how can humans become united?”

“Through organizations, through law, and through morals.”

“We organize clans or sects, distributing work according to an individual’s ability. We use laws to restrain people, to tell people what they cannot do. We use morals to provide direction, to encourage people to do certain things. Mothers are doting and children are filial, neighbors live in harmony, they all follow the rule of justice and morals. Be it intentionally or unintentionally, from the start of time, any organization would always promote this, because organizations follow their own survival instincts.”



“Or rather, the organizations with comprehensive laws, realistic morals, and proper class systems find it easier to survive. After a long time passes, this becomes the norm of society for the future generations.”

Chen clan leader was tongue-tied, he was completely stunned by Fang Yuan’s words.

He had never considered this.

He knew that justice was good, but he did not know why.

He knew that morals were good, but he did not know why.

And now, Fang Yuan told him the answer, justice and morals were man-made creations. This could be either a conscious or a subconscious creation, people follow these guidelines and allow themselves to survive better in a hostile environment, they can stay united as a group for a long time.

Fang Yuan concluded: “When you understand the core meaning of justice, you will know — this so-called justice is like iron armor, it is a human tool. When you wear it, you need to use it like a tool. But look at you now, this iron armor has become your chain, it is binding you down.”

Chen clan leader looked at Fang Yuan in a daze, he did not speak.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “The truth and justice, are they really related? What is the truth behind Nie clan, what is the truth behind my corruption? What does this have to do with justice? Son, you must understand, your justice is just a tool, you must make use of it, do not get restrained by it.”

Chen clan’s leader was silent for a long time, after a while, he said in a hoarse voice: “Father, I understand now.”

Saying so, a white light burst out of his body, it was dazzling and bright, filling the entire surroundings.

This dream realm faded into nothingness amidst the sharp light.

Fang Yuan’s desolate soul returned to reality.

The dream realm exploration succeeded.

“I guessed correctly.”

“The father and son were both clan leaders of Chen clan, they hate Shan clan’s action. If I help Shan Xing and Chen clan’s leader hands over the Gu, even if I regain freedom, I would not pass the final scene. At most, I would be chased out without injuries.”

“Only by teaching Chen clan’s leader and resolving his guilt can I make him use justice Gu once more to break out of this prison. That is the condition to clearing the final scene.”

“This dream realm is quite interesting.”

“Oh? I advanced to human path grandmaster.” Fang Yuan inspected himself and smiled plainly.

# **Chapter 1821 - Gaining Heaven Form Again**

## Chapter 1821 Gaining Heaven Form Again

“Heavenly Court...” Qin Ding Ling stood on Heaven Overseeing Tower as she looked at the scenery of Heavenly Court, showing a look of nostalgia.

A long time later, she sighed softly: “Even though the changes are huge, I can still vaguely remember the scenery of three hundred thousand years ago in my memories.”

Beside her stood Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei had a reverent expression.

This senior female immortal here could not compare to Duke Long’s seniority, but she had a huge background as well.

She was originally a certain generation’s first supreme elder of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, Heaven’s Envy Manor, the day before she was going to become a member of Heavenly Court, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made one declaration and she was forced to be his concubine.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable collected a harem and had many concubine palaces, they were present in Southern Border, Northern Plains, Western Desert, Eastern Sea, and Central Continent.

Qin Ding Ling was the immortal empress of Central Continent’s concubine palace in her time!

After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable died, Qin Ding Ling vanished mysteriously, but to think that she would appear a few days ago.

“Senior Qin Ding Ling’s identity is not false, but according to history, she cultivated metal path, why did she transform into a luck path Gu

Immortal?” Fairy Zi Wei had questions in her mind.

At this time, Qin Ding Ling suddenly turned around, there was a sharp light in her gaze that could see through worldly affairs.

She was not a beauty in the most traditional sense, even though her nose bridge was tall, the tip of her nose was a little sharp, her lips were thin and her eyes were thin and long. However, when blended together, she had a unique sense of beauty, her appearance would be deeply engraved into people’s hearts when they see her.

She was taller than normal people, her shoulders were broad, she stood straight and had a heroic aura. She wore a huge cape on her back that extended from her shoulders to the ground.

The cape was made of a special material, it seemed to be made from pieces of golden armor, when put together, from time to time, golden light would flow along the cape in thin waves.

The broad cape emphasized the beauty of her majestic body. Especially her long legs, they were also covered in armor that were black and golden in color.

She had outstanding presence, she was like a born royalty that ruled above the common man. When she looked at people, because of her height, she often had to look down. She had an authoritative aura that was fermented naturally within her, people would lower their heads and not dare to look at her directly, it was as if they could only look at her feet in order to not offend her.

Qin Ding Ling spoke lightly: “Fairy Zi Wei, I know the questions you have. The truth is, I had intentionally gone missing. Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was invincible in the world, he controlled the entire era, nobody could resist him. Thankfully, he was not a Demon Venerable, even though I was forced to be his immortal empress, I also had my own objectives, that was to learn the profundity of luck path from him.”

“After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable died, I gained a lot of insight, I decided to abandon metal path and cultivate luck path. But I already had rank eight cultivation level back then, the risks were too great if I were to cultivate luck path. I gained the help of Heavenly Court and obtained a chance to hibernate. I also abandoned all of my metal path dao marks and turned them into a metal coffin in which I was buried deep within the earth vein, entering closed cultivation to comprehend luck path.”

“This slumber continued for three hundred thousand years, when I woke up, the world had already changed beyond my comprehension.”

Qin Ding Ling’s tone was filled with deep emotions.

Three hundred thousand years later, everything had changed.

The huge shadow cast down upon her, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, had died long ago.

After him, there were Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

Right now, the world was facing the wave of the great era, all sorts of prophecies and signs showed that a supreme venerable was going to appear.

“So that’s it.” Fairy Zi Wei let out a breath of air, joy was expressed on her face: “Senior, you came at the perfect timing. I must admit fault for this, Heavenly Court failed time and time again. One of the reasons for this was our weakness in luck path, we were restrained and often lost to that demon.”

Qin Ding Ling nodded: “I’ve seen the information, to think that a demon like Fang Yuan emerged. This is very rare even in human history. However, don’t think too lowly of yourself, your decisions were not wrong, it was just that the enemy is too crafty and has multiple venerable inheritances. Especially the latter, it made Fang Yuan extremely hard to deal with.”

“I am afraid that the reason I woke up this time is also most likely to deal with Fang Yuan.”

Fairy Zi Wei was surprised: “What does senior mean by that?”

Qin Ding Ling smiled with deep meaning: “Fairy Zi Wei, there is profundity in my awakening. Let me ask you, who woke me up?”

“It was Gu Yue Fang Zheng.”

“Exactly.” Qin Ding Ling said slowly: “The otherworldly demon does not exist within fate, it is an anomaly of the world. Heaven’s will tried to use this pawn against Spectral Soul’s heaven defying attempt, it naturally created a way to restrain the otherworldly demon too. Like how the antidote for a venomous snake often exists near it, Gu Yue Fang Zheng is the safety measure that the Heavenly Dao created against Fang Yuan.”

As she said this, Qin Ding Ling looked at Fairy Zi Wei with an expression of praise: “You know little about luck path, but you managed to deduce this and nurtured Fang Zheng to become an immortal, it was not easy.”

“I do not deserve this praise, this junior was only doing her best to defend Heavenly Court, and protect the righteousness of humanity.”

“Hahaha, well said, this is the spirit of Heavenly Court, even after three hundred thousand years, it has not changed!”

Qin Ding Ling chuckled as she continued saying with happiness: “The otherworldly demon Fang Yuan is an uncertain variable, Gu Yue Fang Zheng is the key to restraining him, he will change as Fang Yuan changes. Spectral Soul failed to defy heaven, while Fang Yuan escaped from the control of heaven’s will. He is becoming stronger, he has no weaknesses and is growing extremely quickly at a shocking pace, even Heavenly Court is without options against him. Thus, to mend this problem, Fang Zheng woke me up and caused me to interfere in this world again.”

“Fate is constant while luck is a variable, the higher the cultivation level and strength of the Gu Immortal, the stronger and grander their luck will be. This is because every thought and action of theirs can cause great changes in the surroundings. Fang Yuan has incredibly strong luck, but you nurtured Fang Zheng and made him an immortal, this caused him to exert enough

influence to wake me up and resist Fang Yuan's current advantage. In the future, I am sure that similar situations will continue to occur, this demon Fang Yuan will not be free for long."

At this point, Qin Ding Ling instructed Fairy Zi Wei: "You need to continue putting in resources to nurture Fang Zheng and ensure his safety. As long as we have him, we can follow the arrangements of heaven's will, we will achieve success with less effort."

"Junior understands." Fairy Zi Wei's eyes shined with bright light.

All along, she had not made much progress in dealing with Fang Yuan, that was because he was too crafty and well defended, Fairy Zi Wei could not deduce his whereabouts.

Fairy Zi Wei knew the purpose of Gu Yue Fang Zheng but she did not place emphasis on him, she believed in her and Heavenly Court's strength, her arrangements regarding Fang Zheng were just a supplementary move.

But after getting Qin Ding Ling's alert, Fairy Zi Wei understood that Gu Yue Fang Zheng was the most useful pawn in dealing with Fang Yuan!

Right after she nurtured Fang Zheng to become an immortal, a good result had already occurred — Qin Ding Ling awakened.

As long as she continued investing in him, more people similar to Qin Ding Ling would show up.

"The stronger Fang Zheng becomes, the grander his luck will be, and the more variables he will be able to create. These are all the arrangements of heaven's will, specially used to counter Fang Yuan."

"In that case, we will focus on Fang Zheng, with Heavenly Court supporting him fully."

Fairy Zi Wei grasped the situation with great clarity, she immediately changed her tactic to the most suitable one.



“Oh, one more thing. I have many incomplete Immortal Gu recipes here, I had secretly obtained them by probing Giant Sun Immortal Venerable in the past. These recipes have to do with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path Immortal Gu, I need you to complete them and refine them.” Qin Ding Ling took out an information path Gu worm.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly received it with both hands: “I will do my best to deduce them, please rest assured, senior!”

Immemorial white heaven, Five Xiangs grotto-heaven.

Fang Yuan had been cultivating here recently.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Thought Sword Waterfall!

Rumble!

With a loud sound, a grand waterfall appeared inside heaven form killer move, the silver waterfall was majestic and vast, it slammed into the wills that were stored up at the bottom of heaven form.

Each drop of water in this waterfall was a thought, it had the appearance of a sword.

The waterfall crashed down and instantly created a huge crevice, decimating a large amount of wills.

After a few breaths of time, the waterfall vanished, a lake appeared within the land of wills, within the lake was a pool of sword thoughts.

Immortal killer move — Swordsman!

Fang Yuan willed as he activated another move.

Once this move was activated, the lake water started to bubble like it was boiling, next, warriors jumped out of the lake one by one. They all had Fang Yuan’s appearance and held longswords in their hands, they hacked and slashed at the lingering wills, each attack caused cracks to form on the collective wills.

These two moves had outstanding origins, Fang Yuan had created them as compound killer moves.

Myriad thought sword waterfall used wisdom sword Immortal Gu as the core, it contained sword path, it was more effective on these wills compared to using wisdom sword Immortal Gu alone.

Meanwhile, the killer move swordsman contained sword path and human path, Fang Yuan had successfully created it recently after becoming a human path grandmaster.

Two hours later.

Suddenly, the loud cry of a crane filled the entire Five Xiangs grotto-heaven.

The white crane which was sleeping had been awakened from its dreams, it stretched its body and flapped its wings, it was very elegant.

“I finally grasped control of heaven form again!”

“Haha, I spent less than half the time compared to the previous life.”

“It is time to move out and find Beast Calamity grotto-heaven and Profound Literature grotto-heaven.”

Fang Yuan smiled as bright light shined in his eyes.

Good events came in succession, he obtained a report from Lang Ya land spirit: Another rank six luck path Immortal Gu had been successfully refined.

Fang Yuan had not obtained regret Gu yet, he did not want to do a mass refinement to raise the rank of his current Immortal Gu for now.

But he extorted the Southern Border righteous path and obtained lots of luck path immortal materials, he had been trying to refine these luck path Immortal Gu for the current period of time!

Immortal Gu were unique, once he refines them, others would not be able to.

The sovereign immortal aperture had already developed to a certain extent, Fang Yuan was affluent enough to feed mere rank six Immortal Gu with no problems!

# Chapter 1822 - Using Soul Replacement Twice

## Chapter 1822 Using Soul Replacement Twice

“According to my memories, it should be around here.” Fang Yuan stopped at a certain location in immemorial white heaven.

There was nothing here, but according to the memories of Fang Yuan’s previous life, he knew that Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was right here.

The grotto-heaven’s entrance was closed and hidden in empty space, it could not be seen with the naked eye. Fang Yuan had used heaven form in the previous life to discover the existence of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven. It was not as troublesome this time, he could directly locate it.

“Go, heaven form.” Fang Yuan willed.

Heaven form was a one-legged crane that was covered in snow-white feathers which had no dust or dirt, it had a long beak that was red in color.

After it flew out, it flew round and round the empty space nearby.

As it moved, information from heaven form went to the depths of Fang Yuan’s mind.

These were all information regarding Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan soon learned about the details of the inside world.

“Even though I successfully annexed this grotto-heaven in the previous life, I came at a slightly different time in this life, some unexpected mishaps

might occur. If Heavenly Court has some arrangements inside and I go right in, there would be huge problems.”

Fang Yuan acted vigilantly, after investigating it for a long time, he confirmed that Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was still an isolated world that did not interact with the outside world.

He relaxed at long last as he activated a killer move that he had prepared for a long time.

After some effort, the killer move was completed, Fang Yuan spat out lightly from his mouth.

A grey soul ball shot into the grotto-heaven at lightning speed. It was so fast that it vanished without a trace, as if all that happened was an illusion.

After the grey soul ball entered Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it quickly descended.

Any living being that entered Beast Calamity grotto-heaven would be affected by the myriad beings assimilation transformation killer move that was in the grotto-heaven, they would be turned into a beast calamity.

The last time Fang Yuan attacked, he had met with this issue as he turned into Bull-headed Demon God, he slaughtered countless beings and caused a river of blood to flow, corpses lay on the ground everywhere. Even though he was invincible and rampaged unhindered, he only managed to snatch the Beast Calamity inheritance, he did not gain the acknowledgement of the qilin heavenly spirit, he managed to use myriad beings assimilation transformation with difficulty, but obtained no Immortal Gu, it was merely half an inheritance.

After that, because of the battle in Eastern Sea over Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan stopped his plans here and went to Eastern Sea, but gained nothing.

Eventually, he had to come here and change his tactics, he annexed the entire Beast Calamity grotto-heaven after subduing it.

All these incidents made his efficiency very low, Fang Yuan wasted lots of time and effort, the Beast Calamity grotto-heaven that he obtained was also heavily damaged by himself, he killed almost all of the Gu Immortals inside the grotto-heaven.

That would not do!

Fang Yuan decided to change his tactics against Beast Calamity grotto-heaven this time. He wanted to preserve it at its full strength, he wanted to gather all of the Gu Immortals here and place them in his sovereign immortal aperture to increase the scale of his subordinates.

The grey soul ball descended rapidly in the sky.

Myriad beings assimilation transformation started to exert its influence on the soul ball, but it had all sorts of transformation path dao marks on its surface.

The number of transformation path dao marks continued to be expended as it resisted the power of myriad beings assimilation transformation, maintaining the soul ball's shape.

Fang Yuan was outside, using heaven form to observe this.

The grey soul ball had limited time, it could not be replenished after leaving Fang Yuan. Even though it had a lot of transformation path dao marks to resist myriad beings assimilation transformation, the expenditure was heavy, it would be destroyed after some time.

If not for the transformation path dao marks protecting it, the grey soul ball would be transformed into a beast calamity due to the power of myriad beings assimilation transformation.

It would likely become an ancient soul beast.

By then, not only would he be exposed, he would also be attacked by the alerted Gu Immortals.

In that case, Fang Yuan's plans would end in failure.

But thankfully. Fang Yuan had planned this meticulously.

Soon, the soul ball reached the ground, it sneaked into a bustling city.

It roamed in the alleys, hiding in the dark corners as it moved rapidly like a fish in water.

“Beat, beat him up harshly!”

Boom boom boom.

In a small alley, a few rich youngsters were beating up a poor kid of their own age.

The poor lad wore a thin shirt, he was covered in wounds everywhere.

He was already beaten to a pulp, he could not resist, he had to bend down and hold his head, shrinking into a ball.

Eventually, he fainted from the assault.

Seeing this, the rich young masters quickly stopped.

“Don’t tell me we killed him?”

“No, no, that’s too scary!”

“This lad is so weak.”

“How dare this lad get close to Lin clan’s young miss, he did not even heed the warning of young master Lin, hmph he deserves it even if he dies!”

The youngsters walked away with smug expressions, feeling agitated.

“Good chance, my luck is quite good!” The grey soul ball arrived just in time as ripples appeared on the surface.

This good luck was not a coincidence, it was influenced by Fang Yuan’s own luck.

Seeing that there was nobody around, the grey soul ball did not hesitate, it entered the chest of the poor lad and enveloped his soul entirely.

The young man had a weak soul, he was resisting instinctively.

But Fang Yuan's grey soul ball was a portion of his desolate soul, it was incredibly powerful, how could a mortal soul defend against it?

In almost an instant, the young man's soul was destroyed by the grey soul ball entirely.

The grey soul ball expanded rapidly, turning into the young man's appearance. It occupied the young man's body and controlled his mind, taking over and becoming a native person.

"From today onwards, I am the young lad, Zhan Bu Du[1]."

That's right, this grey soul ball was none other than the soul path killer move — Soul Replacement.

In the past, Shadow Sect had used this move to successfully plant spies in Lang Ya blessed land. Until now, the traitor Sixth Hair was still alive.

The grey soul ball originated from Fang Yuan's desolate soul, it could not be detected by land spirits or heavenly spirits.

This was the specialty of soul replacement.

If not for this, Lang Ya land spirit would have discovered the secret of Shadow Sect's spies long ago.

And Fang Yuan had modified soul replacement on that foundation, adding in many transformation path Immortal Gu to supplement it.

Thus, the grey soul ball had transformation path dao marks and could resist the influence of myriad beings assimilation transformation.

"However, after soul replacement succeeded, all my actions will be observable by the heavenly spirit, I need to act with caution from now on."



“Thankfully, I have already destroyed the young lad’s soul and obtained his memories, I know everything about his life.”

Even though the heavenly spirit was unlikely to place attention on this tiny area, who knows?

At the next moment, Fang Yuan’s clone started his performance.

The young man grunted as he opened his eyes, he had rage and helplessness on his face.

“Damn it.” He climbed up with difficulty, because of his injuries, the intense pain made him gasp loudly.

Eventually, he held onto the wall as support, walking out slowly.

Fang Yuan’s main body observed for a while longer, seeing that this clone had adapted well without any accidents, he stopped heaven form and left.

He rapidly arrived near Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

This information path grotto-heaven was quite troublesome to take down.

Fang Yuan lacked information path attainment, while there was an information path rank eight Gu Immortal inside the grotto-heaven defending it.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan failed because of this rank eight Gu Immortal, he was stopped outside and could not get in.

Like earlier, Fang Yuan investigated this place again.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven was also not a trap, it had not been affected by the ink effect, there were no negative changes for Fang Yuan.

Thus, Fang Yuan instilled immortal essence and activated heaven form, creating a white light passage.

“Such guts! Which vile fiend dares to invade my homeland?!” A vast and mighty voice resounded from within, speaking with righteousness.

Next, an old man resembling a white robed scholar, possessing rank eight aura, showed up at the other end of the white light passage.

“He came out after all.” Fang Yuan was not surprised, he opened a slit of the sovereign immortal aperture’s entrance, a large number of desolate beasts, ancient desolate beasts, and immemorial desolate beasts were let out.

Heaven form itself could not transport killer moves, once Fang Yuan uses any killer moves, the white light passage would break.

But the white light passage could transport living beings, like how Fang Yuan had used it to invade Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

“Don’t even think about it!” The white robed old man shouted loudly, he used an information path offensive method to create a rain of written characters that slaughtered the beast groups.

A few breaths of time later, the white light passage collapsed, an immemorial desolate beast was in a pitiful state as its head had just entered when the passage broke.

Thus, its head was left in Profound Literature grotto-heaven while its body was outside.

“No matter who you are, you will have to pay an unimaginable price to invade this place.” The white robed old man called out.

Fang Yuan smiled nonchalantly.

He went to another area and started to do the same thing.

But similar to the previous life, the white robed old man arrived quickly, slaughtering the invading beast groups again.

Fang Yuan changed several locations, but each attempt ended in failure.

“No matter who you are, with me around, don’t think of succeeding!” The white robed old man had great morale.

“Is that so?” Fang Yuan laughed coldly as he retreated.

Within Profound Literature grotto-heaven, at a certain courtyard, a young male scholar looked at his reflection in the well water as he thought: “From today onwards, I am Li Xiao Bai[2].”

[1] Trivia – This is the name of the MC in Mashin Hero Wataru, an old anime that was popular in China in the 1990s.

[2] Trivia – Reference to the famous poet Li Bai. Xiao Bai also can be slang or shorthand for a couple of different things, like novice or a man who lives off a woman.

# Chapter 1823 - Cooking Luck Po

## Chapter 1823 Cooking Luck Po

Immemorial white heaven.

Fang Yuan rode on spontaneous auspicious cloud as he flew in the sky.

The heaven form white crane was following closely, circling around him.

The killer move spontaneous auspicious cloud was obtained by Fang Yuan from Hei Fan grotto-heaven, after some modifications, he used it as a movement killer move.

But the auspicious cloud did not follow Fang Yuan's will, but moved according to the mystery of luck path.

The route that the auspicious cloud moved was the one with the greatest luck.

Spontaneous auspicious cloud and heaven form worked together very well, Fang Yuan had used this in his previous life to find Beast Calamity grotto-heaven and Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had already used soul replacement in both the grotto-heavens.

After that, Fang Yuan waited for his clones to develop while he continued cultivating and gathering strength.

His qi path killer moves were still in the process of familiarization, after intense practice, he could already use them to fight against rank eight Gu

Immortals. But the trump card unlimited qi sea killer move was still quite foreign to Fang Yuan.

Other than training killer moves, Fang Yuan's main body also patrolled immemorial white heaven and used both spontaneous auspicious cloud and heaven form to attempt to find more grotto-heavens.

But until now, Fang Yuan had found nothing.

“Even though heaven form has a wide range, against this huge immemorial white heaven, it is just too tiny in comparison.”

“But along this route, I had great gains, I obtained a lot of rank eight immortal materials.”

“This is truly the best route for me, I was lucky all along the way, it was filled with surprises!”

“Oh? My time path clone has obtained results from deduction?”

Fang Yuan's eyes shined with bright light.

His main body cultivated diligently but had no great gains, but after so much time spent on deductions, the time path clone obtained quite a good result.

“Another Immortal Gu House's deduction is completed! Very good!”

Fang Yuan was overjoyed, he diverted some of his attention to his immortal aperture as he started assembling it.

Immemorial white heaven was very dangerous with countless immemorial desolate beasts roaming around, there were even immemorial desolate beast groups occasionally. If ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals explored this place they would need to be vigilant. Some rank seven experts would also explore immemorial white heaven for cultivation resources occasionally, but they were all fearful and careful.

However, Fang Yuan had spontaneous auspicious cloud, he only had good luck along the way. With the help of heaven form, he could detect any danger in advance, Fang Yuan was able to easily avoid them ahead of time.

Iron wall Gu.

This was a rank six metal path Gu worm, it was the size of an adult's fist, heavy and resembling a rhinoceros beetle, but be it the head or back, it was squarish and straight, its body had almost no curves at all.

Evidently, iron wall Gu was a defensive Gu worm, it had been taken from Lang Ya Sect's inventory, used by Fang Yuan now to create his second Immortal Gu House.

Once iron wall Gu was activated, a large number of mortal Gu followed.

These mortal Gu were of various types, there were three thousand of them, among which fire path and metal path were the most numerous, they were all rank five Gu.

Iron wall Gu was fixed at the center while the mortal Gu surrounded it as they moved like a wave.

A wave of black light appeared among the mortal Gu like spreading ink, it enveloped all of the Gu worms as a black ball of light was created.

The black ball floated in the sky, its surface was uneven as the Gu worms inside started to fly even faster now.

After reaching a certain speed, the black ball became extremely smooth, there were no bumps anymore, it was completely round.

At this point, Fang Yuan started to activate his fire path Immortal Gu.

He activated three fire path Immortal Gu and a large number of mortal Gu, creating a flame.

The flame had an intense scarlet color, coiling around the black ball as it burned continuously.

An alluring fragrance started to spread, mortals who breathed it in would indulge in it and feel deep desires and imaginations that could not be stopped.

After burning for many hours, the black ball turned into a golden ball of light on the surface, the black color earlier seemed to be soot that was removed by the flames.

Fang Yuan maintained this golden ball of light as he stopped the flame, taking out water path and wisdom path Immortal Gu as he created a clear spring.

The spring water doused the golden ball as sizzling sounds were heard, it was like red-hot iron submerged in water.

But no steam was produced, all of the water had fused into the golden ball.

The golden ball of light started to become slower in rotation, the Gu worms inside looked like tiny golden meteors that spun around endlessly.

The pattern of their traces became more complicated and disorganized, it would make people feel dizzy when looking, but no collisions had taken place at all during this period.

At this time, Fang Yuan took out his second supplementary Immortal Gu.

Food path Immortal Gu — Cook.

It looked like a giant water bug that was the size of a basin. It had a triangular head and short feelers, under its feelers were two compound eyes shining in golden light.

Its body was flat and oval shaped, it was dark-red in color and had the sensation of touching sand, it was very warm.

It had three pairs of legs, the front pair was the strongest, looking like two thick and powerful pincers.

Immortal Gu Cook was obtained by Fang Yuan when he extorted the Southern Border righteous path.

By now, Fang Yuan had already returned the bodies and souls of the Southern Border Gu Immortal captives, he started to exchange Immortal Gu with them.

Fang Yuan spent an hour before he placed Immortal Gu Cook into the golden ball of light.

The golden ball expanded by double its original size as a result.

Fang Yuan was already covered in sweat, he had finally gotten past this hardest part of the first step.

Assembling an Immortal Gu House was not easy, it was much more difficult than using normal killer moves. If it failed, the Gu Immortal would face a backlash, the Gu worms used would also be damaged or destroyed.

Thus, Fang Yuan was extremely careful and vigilant.

As he continued, Fang Yuan added Dog Shit Luck, Qi Luck, Luck Inspection, Connect Luck, Time Luck, and his other luck path Immortal Gu into the ball.

His luck path attainment level was master, while formation path was grandmaster, he already had intuition.

Thus, during the process of assembling it, if any bad feelings emerged, Fang Yuan would pay close attention to them and make appropriate adjustments.

The most important thing was that his method of assembling the Immortal Gu House was deduced by the time path clone using the light of wisdom, it was very exemplary.

Half a month later in the sovereign immortal aperture's time, Fang Yuan succeeded.



The golden light ball exploded as a brand new Immortal Gu House was formed.

Different from Myriad Year Flying Warship, this Immortal Gu House was smaller and had the size of a regular bowl.

It was shining in golden light, it was covered in a pure white light, sacred and royal.

It was a pot, the pot's rim was about a thumb's thickness, the internal space was large but there was nothing inside now.

Outside the pot, there were eight dragons, six were vivid and lively, while two were blurry and crude.

These eight dragons were all at the base of the pot, coiling around each other and extending their claws to become the legs of this pot.

The eight dragon tails pointed in eight different directions, towards the north, south, east, west, northeast, northwest, southeast, southwest.

Each dragon claw was attached to the surface of the pot, the dragon bodies moved upwards as the dragon heads hung on the edge, looking inside. The dragon eyes were shut as if they were sleeping.

Rank six Immortal Gu House — Cooking Luck Pot!

Even though rank seven Immortal Gu like food path Immortal Gu Cook were used, the core luck path Immortal Gu were still rank six, thus this Immortal Gu House had a slightly lower rank.

This Immortal Gu House was within the records of Giant Sun's true inheritance, Fang Yuan's time path clone had improved upon and modified it. Evidently, this was a luck path Immortal Gu House.

It could not carry Gu Immortals into battle, it was tiny and had another use.

In fact, it was quite similar to Star Constellation Chessboard.

Fang Yuan instilled his immortal essence as Cooking Luck Pot started to vibrate, it turned into a golden light and flew above Fang Yuan's head, vanishing from sight.

Even Fang Yuan could not see this Immortal Gu House with his naked eye, he had to use methods to verify its existence.

It was quite easy to 'see' it. Fang Yuan willed as he instilled immortal essence, activating one of Cooking Luck Pot's killer moves.

Luck inspection!

Fang Yuan's vision changed rapidly, he saw that his luck was flowing into Cooking Luck Pot continuously.

After a while, Cooking Luck Pot became filled with luck.

"Luck inspection Immortal Gu is only rank six while I have rank eight cultivation level, just this Immortal Gu alone cannot inspect my luck."

"Cooking Luck Pot is only rank six, I can only see the luck inside this pot, but not the full extent of my luck."

Even so, Fang Yuan could still see a bit of his luck on the outside of the pot.

There was a river-like luck with clear and bright water, it seemed like a miniature River of Time, it was most connected to Fang Yuan. One end of the river extended into the pot while the other merged into empty space.

This was the luck of Fang Yuan's time path clone.

The time path clone had stable luck, but a trace of black qi was forming and growing continuously. This was Spring Autumn Cicada's drawback, it generated bad luck. Once in a while, Fang Yuan would need to use luck path methods against it.

There was another luck, it looked like a layer of pink fog, it was floating near the pot, circling around it.

This was the luck of Fang Yuan's dream path clone.

The pink fog was weak and thin, it continued to change forms as it resembled a vague shadow.

Only after the dream path clone becomes rank six would it have comparable luck with the time path clone.

Other than that, there was the dragonman clone's luck, it was a tiny purple dragon flying near the pot. Fang Yuan's clone in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven had a grey and dirty sparrow luck while his Profound Literature grotto-heaven clone had a flower bud luck that was wilting.

"These two clones have weak luck. It seems that the grey soul ball consumed a lot of luck. And because they and my main body are separated by a small world, there is some obstruction."

"In that case..." Fang Yuan willed as he activated Cooking Luck Pot.

Cooking Luck Pot started to rise in temperature as the luck started to boil.

Two dragons at the edge of the pot opened their eyes and mouths, sucking at the luck in the pot.

Immediately, two portions of luck were absorbed into the dragons' stomachs.

The dragons started to move as their heads turned towards the grey sparrow and flower bud, spitting out at them.

The two spurts of luck shot out and fused into the grey sparrow luck and flower bud luck.

Instantly, the grey sparrow chirped and turned into a sharp beaked eagle, it spread its wings and flew. Meanwhile, the flower bud luck seemed invigorated as it bloomed profusely in vibrant colors!



# Chapter 1824 - Egg Falling From the Sky

## 1824 Egg Falling From the Sky

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's self luck true inheritance had a comprehensive description of all the different forms of luck.

Generally, the seven main colors of luck were black, grey, white, red, gold, azure, purple. But there were also uncommon colors that were created by the mixing of the above colors.

Luck had all sorts of special forms and appearances, they varied according to the situations and conditions that the individuals were in.

Fang Yuan, for example, had very different luck compared to his various clones.

Fang Yuan owned the complete self luck true inheritance of Giant Sun and a portion of all living beings luck true inheritance, he only needed to take a look at these colors and shapes to learn about their conditions and deduce a lot of information.

Cooking Luck Pot had Time Luck, Luck Inspection, Dog Shit Luck, Qi Luck, Connect Luck, and other Immortal Gu, the abilities of these luck path Immortal Gu were just the basic functions of Cooking Luck Pot.

The main ability of this Immortal Gu House was — Cooking Luck.

The shape, size, and color of one's luck was a representation of their current situation and possible changes.

For example, if Fang Yuan had a dense black coffin luck now, it meant that he was going to face fatal danger. Fang Yuan could use Cooking Luck Pot to cook and change this black coffin luck into a brand new luck within the pot.

For example, fortune luck or peach blossom luck.

Giant Sun's self luck true inheritance revolved around researching on one's own luck and how to modify it. This Cooking Luck Pot was the peak creation within this true inheritance, it had the ability to cook any form of luck and convert it into something the user wants.

"However, I have rank eight cultivation level while Cooking Luck Pot is only rank six, it can barely affect my main body's luck."

"However, my other clones are different, with the highest being rank seven and most of the rest being mortals."

"With the cooking luck I used earlier, the effect and change should be immediate."

Fang Yuan tested it for a while before continuing to cultivate and practise his qi path killer moves.

He definitely had to raise Cooking Luck Pot's rank, but currently, regret Gu was inside the paradise, dragon whale grotto-heaven.

Fang Yuan could command the hairy man Gu Immortals to refine rank six luck path Immortal Gu en masse, but to advance them to rank seven, he lacked some crucial elements.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Fang Yuan's clone, Zhan Bu Du, was walking slowly.

The crowd was noisy, people moved rapidly like a current.

“This is the largest Gu Master market in the city, it is bustling.” Zhan Bu Du observed and thought.

He was only rank one now, he was too young.

And because he was broke, he came here this time to collect information and increase his understanding of the surroundings.

“Gu Masters need resources to cultivate, I am totally broke now. My most important task now is to earn money.”

Zhan Bu Du had an innocent young face but he was full of confidence internally.

He was a split soul of Fang Yuan, a Gu Immortal, how hard was it to find a method of earning a fortune as a Gu Master?

But after some observation, Zhan Bu Du’s brows became covered in a thin layer of bitterness.

“Gu Masters are known as Combat Beast Envoys in this place. Even though they both use Gu worms, these Gu worms are used to nurture combat beasts or to fuse with wild beasts and plants. There are no instances of Gu Masters fighting alone in this place.”

Fang Yuan walked around the market, he found very few Gu worms here, most shops were selling beasts or plants.

“It is no surprise.”

“This Beast Calamity grotto-heaven has the power of the killer move myriad beings assimilation transformation, it is very easy for Gu Masters to fuse with beasts or plants.”

“In the outside world, they would need to pay more than ten times the price to achieve it.”

“Because the method of fusing with beasts and plants is too easy and advantageous, traditional Gu cultivation has been buried in history.”

“Of course, this is also the intention of Beast Calamity Immortal.”

Even Beast Calamity Immortal died after suffering heavy injuries from his first myriad tribulation, he had placed a lot of effort in developing this grotto-heaven in the past, he probably created this trend so that he could control the living beings inside well.

After all, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven had a really large number of people.

Zhan Bu Du wanted to take over this place, he could not use the traditional Gu cultivation method, he had to assimilate and become a Combat Beast Envoy.

Becoming a Combat Beast Envoy could be said to be easy but also hard — it only required the Gu Master to successfully fuse with a wild beast or plant.

This was the most basic step.

After that, he could go to the Combat Beast Guild and spend money to register and become a guild member.

Inside Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, the Combat Beast Guild was the largest and sole super force.

If Zhan Bu Du joined it, he would have the lowest ranking Combat Beast Disciple status. Above disciple level would be the main forces of the Combat Beast Guild — Combat Beast Envoy.

Above Combat Beast Envoy was Combat Beast Warrior, this needed Gu Immortal cultivation level and they were mostly city lords.

And above Combat Beast Warrior was the one and only Combat Beast King.

The structure of the organization was simple and crude.

Zhan Bu Du not only lacked Gu worms now, he also lacked combat beasts and combat plants. Especially the latter two, they were expensive.



After collecting enough information, Zhan Bu Du had a plan in his mind.

“According to my plan, in a month’s time, I will have enough finances to buy a Gu worm.”

“After another month, I will be able to purchase the lowest grade combat beast.”

“I will buy the incisor rat first and use it for some time. This wild beast is greatly underestimated by everyone, it is very valuable for its price.”

“With sufficient strength, I will join the Combat Beast Guild and use it to receive missions and increase my strength rapidly.”

“Hmm?!”

At this moment, Zhan Bu Du heard a shout: “Careful, above you!!”

He quickly looked up and saw a black figure descending rapidly from the sky.

Even higher in the sky, an old man was manipulating the huge bird below him, descending quickly as he tried to catch the black figure, but it seemed like he was too late.

“What is it?”

“Quickly run!”

The surrounding people quickly dispersed.

Zhan Bu Du also quickened his pace, hiding under the roof of a shop.

Boom!

Almost instantly, the black object crashed into this shop’s stairs as it shattered.

Shrapnels flew everywhere as the surrounding people screamed out in pain and agony.

Zhan Bu Du was the closest to it, but he was completely unharmed.

“This is... an egg?” Zhan Bu Du looked at the egg that was as tall as a person, thinking: “This aura, it is clearly a desolate beast egg.”

While he was thinking, the egg shell broke as a cute little eagle made its way to the world.

The young eagle looked at Zhan Bu Du as it chirped, it jumped onto him and used its tiny beak to peck at Zhan Bu Du’s cheeks.

“How could this happen?!” The old man riding a huge bird landed on the ground as he looked at this with dumbfounded expression.

“Hello old sir, my name is Zhan Bu Du.” Zhan Bu Du was knowledgeable, he knew this old man was a Gu Immortal, he did not dare to wait and quickly paid his respects.

Before the old man spoke, that tiny eagle that Zhan Bu Du shrugged off went towards him again as it patted his back using its tiny wings.

The old man had a complex expression as he looked at this tiny eagle, he assessed Zhan Bu Du closely: “Sigh, my partner has been pregnant for thirty years, it finally laid the egg today. So coincidentally, it landed here and hatched as a young arrowtail eagle. You were the first person that it saw, so it treated you as its closest kin.”

Zhan Bu Du was stunned, he quickly waved his hands: “Old sir, I am so sorry, I... I did not mean to do that.”

The old Gu Immortal chuckled: “Your name is Zhan Bu Du? I will call you Little Du. Oh Little Du, don’t be nervous, I am not blaming you. In fact, I need to apologize to you, the egg almost killed you earlier.”

“This truly feels like an arrangement of fate, if my grandson was still alive, he would be as old as you. Oh Little Du, are you willing to cultivate with

me? You obtained the young arrowtail eagle's recognition, you might be able to become a Combat Beast Warrior in the future."

"Combat Beast Warrior?" Zhan Bu Du's eyes widened as it shined with light, he had the expression of an innocent and excited boy.

He clenched his fists: "My greatest dream is to become a Combat Beast Warrior! Old sir, can I really do it? Can I cultivate by your side?"

The old man laughed loudly: "Oh Little Du, it will depend on your hard work to determine if you can become a Combat Beast Warrior. But for now, let's leave."

"Yes, old sir." Zhan Bu Du followed the old man as they rode on the arrowtail eagle, flying away under plain sight.

"Heavens!"

"What did I just see?"

"Isn't this youngster's luck way too good?"

"That old man is the city lord of Mountain Cliff City."

"He is Mountain Cliff City Lord? Oh! I heard that the Mountain Cliff City Lord would come to our city one of these days to negotiate matters with our city lord."

The surrounding people exploded into a commotion, their discussions got increasingly louder.

"Who is that young man? He seems to be called Zhan Bu Du? Why is his luck so good!"

"Sigh, why wasn't it me?"

"Had I known this, I would have pushed him aside."

“Damn it! This Zhan Bu Du wore tattered clothes, he is clearly a poor lad but he was actually taken in by that esteemed Combat Beast Warrior. He has truly changed his fate, his future is incomparably bright now.”

“He even gained the acknowledgement of the arrowtail eagle, this is an immortal beast, an immortal beast!”

“Indeed, compared to an immortal beasts, all of the beasts and plants in the market are trash, they are less valuable than the eagle’s faeces!”

Some were angrily stomping their feet, feeling extremely regretful, why did they not grab onto this rare opportunity earlier?

Some stared with wide opened eyes that had turned red, some were shouting and screaming, their saliva spitting everywhere.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

A poetry competition was going on.

A famous great scholar looked at the students in the hall as he laughed: “This city is filled with literary talents, I see that all your students are overflowing with scholarly aura. It seems that Brother Jiang’s teachings has paid off.”

“I am flattered, Brother Shen, these students of mine are shallow in knowledge, they are still too young. This is their great opportunity and luck to be able to watch our literary battle.” The teacher of this place, Teacher Jiang, said humbly.

Great Scholar Shen held out his hand: “Brother Jiang, we are quite evenly matched in this battle, let’s consider it a tie. Next, let’s play a game of passing the flower[1], the three students who win will recite their poems, let me see the literature skills of these juniors, how about that?”

“Alright.” Teacher Jiang thought about it and nodded in agreement.

Immediately, the eyes of many students below the stage lightened up.

This was an incredibly rare opportunity, there were two great scholars on the stage, no matter how good their poems were, as long as they could showcase their works, their reputation would spread among the people.

The drums rolled.

“Choose me, choose me!”

“Pass it to me, pass it to me.”

“Sigh! The drums have stopped.”

“Who has the red flower? Please do recite your poem.” Great Scholar Shen opened his eyes as he smiled.

As everyone looked with gazes of anticipation, Li Xiao Bai walked up the stage while rubbing his nose.

[1] It's like musical chairs but whoever has the flower when the music stops wins

# Chapter 1825 - Getting the Red Flower

## 1825 Getting the Red Flower

“Student Li Xiao Bai greets both teachers.” Li Xiao Bai walked up the stage and said politely.

Great Scholar Shen smiled at him, nodding.

Meanwhile, Teacher Jiang of this school asked: “Xiao Bai, do you have any poems?”

Teacher Jiang had a bit of worry shown between his brows. This Xiao Bai was very ordinary in talent, hopefully he had some sort of preparation before this, otherwise with his current standards, this would be a disappointing show.

It was okay if he was the only person disappointed, but right now with Great Scholar Shen here... Especially when the first half of this competition was very interesting and would become renowned in the world, if the later half was disappointing, everyone in the world would know that Teacher Jiang was a talented person but could not teach young talents himself.

“Teacher, I have a poem prepared.” Li Xiao Bai immediately answered, he was quite confident.

“Then let us hear it.” Teacher Jiang was slightly more assured now.

This Profound Literature grotto-heaven was not like any other place, it had a flourishing literary culture.

If anyone could make a good poem, even if nobody rewards them, heaven and earth would provide them benefits!

Thus, the art of creating poems was an important task, it directly affected the person's livelihood, status, reputation, and future.

Normally speaking, most scholars would accumulate their foundation and save some good poem lines as secrets, even if they could not compose a poem with those lines, they would save it for the future.

Thus, even though many scholars could create great poems, they would not publish them. They would conceal their strength and use them to deal with difficult poem competitions.

Because of this, it was not strange or surprising that Li Xiao Bai had a poem prepared.

Li Xiao Bai had his considerations.

“I have read countless poems in my life, most are world shocking creations, they are famous on Earth even after thousands of years, and after such a long time, the literature on Earth flourished greatly.”

“But if I try to use these poems, it will be a problem!”

“This grotto-heaven world has an information path environment, it most excels at collecting information. Especially the method to observe literary qi and talent qi, almost everybody has such methods, they only vary in the depth of abilities.”

“I lack literary qi and talent qi, before I used soul replacement, this was just an ordinary student. By creating a world shocking poem now, not only would people not believe me, they would also be suspicious and start investigating me.”

“Even if I try to explain that it is not my work afterwards, it would be too late. I’d be seen as dishonest, in this world, everyone will despise and loathe me.”

Fang Yuan had planned many things before infiltrating Profound Literature grotto-heaven to deal with all sorts of situations.

The clone Li Xiao Bai lacked literary qi and talent qi to begin with, it was not that Fang Yuan’s own talents were lacking.

However, Li Xiao Bai had a large number of famous poems in his memories, other than those from Earth, there were also Fang Yuan’s own creations.

Thus, Li Xiao Bai chose one of them and started to recite.

Teacher Jiang let out a breath of air, this poem was quite well constructed, it was barely living up to the standards of today’s competition.

“What, it is nothing impressive.”

“I sat beside Li Xiao Bai for three years in class, this is way beyond his usual standards, hahaha.”

“Isn’t that great? With his poem as the anchor, the next two winners will be very lucky.”

The students below the stage became increasingly lively.

Even though Li Xiao Bai’s poem was quite compatible with his known abilities, he still had many more talented classmates around.

Especially when some students had many precious poems that they prepared already in advance.

These poems were composed meticulously by them, using a lot of time and effort to create, they were too good for other situations, but this was an appropriate setting to use them.



When the drums started rolling and the red flower got passed around, these elite students became very excited, their eyes were shining.

The drums stopped.

Most of the students were disappointed, why were they not chosen?

Next, their eyes turned red, it was him again!

The red flower stopped at Li Xiao Bai's table.

"Oh?" Li Xiao Bai was also quite surprised.

"The rules are the rules, you can come up again." Great Scholar Shen laughed as he shook his head.

Teacher Jiang got worried again, according to Li Xiao Bai's nature and foundation, he had already performed above standard last time, this time...

But Li Xiao Bai started to recite his poem again.

This poem was on the same level as the previous one.

Teacher Jiang finally relaxed as he looked at Li Xiao Bai with a gentler expression: "It seems that even though this student is not as talented, he is very hardworking, he stored up two poems as backup. These two should be his own creation, it was not easy that he managed to compose them."

Li Xiao Bai did not put up a shameful performance, Teacher Jiang was very glad about it.

"The final person."

"Both chances went to Li Xiao Bai, sigh, that was truly bad luck!"

"If I had gone on stage, the two great scholars would definitely be pleasantly surprised. But I was not given a chance."

“I wonder who will get the third chance? If it is not me, I hope it is not them either.”

The students were unable to sit still, they had their own thoughts as they lost their cool.

The drums rolled as the students looked at the red flower with bloodshot eyes.

“Pass it to me! Pass it to me!”

“Sigh, it has passed me... I hope the drumming continues and it makes its way to me again.”

“Bang!”

The drums stopped abruptly with a loud sound.

Great Scholar Shen opened his eyes as he smiled: “Who is it this time, ough.”

He was dazed, a strange expression was shown on his face as he pointed at the final lucky star, he did not know whether to cry or laugh: “Why is it you again?”

Li Xiao Bai held the flower as he walked up the stage with a grim expression.

He first cupped his fists at the two scholars before turning to the students below the stage: “Fellow classmates, I really did not do this intentionally, getting up the stage thrice is less of a surprise and more of a shock to me. I know that most of you are more talented than me, but I have to recite three times, I sincerely apologize.”

Originally, his classmates were shocked and furious, but after hearing Li Xiao Bai’s words and expression, the anger in their hearts dissipated.

In fact, a portion of the people started to feel pity for Li Xiao Bai.

After all, Li Xiao Bai's talent and literary skills were inferior to them, wasn't he suffering by going up the stage?

"Your luck is too incredible. Forget it, start reciting." Teacher Jiang laughed as he spoke.

Li Xiao Bai started his recital again, the standard was ordinary but the final line was quite impressive.

Even though it was just a minor point, it elevated the entire poem to a new level.

Not only did Great Scholar Shen laugh and praise it, even Teacher Jiang was a little surprised: "The final line of your poem is quite interesting. How did you conceptualize it?"

Li Xiao Bai smiled bitterly: "Teacher, I don't dare to lie, this poem had only three lines originally, I thought of and added the final line earlier when I was anxious, to think that both sirs would enjoy it, I was also quite surprised!"

Teacher Jiang was stunned before laughing loudly.

Great Scholar Shen shook his head: "Li Xiao Bai, you are very honest."

It turned out that he had used a method secretly to inspect Li Xiao Bai's literary qi and talent qi, he obtained information that this person had quite an ordinary talent.

"But it is not something rare that he can have a flash of inspiration and perform better than normal." Great Scholar Shen had no suspicions.

Teacher Jiang reassessed Li Xiao Bai in a new light.

He looked at Li Xiao Bai inconspicuously as he thought: "Even though Li Xiao Bai is very ordinary in talent, he is very hardworking normally, that is how he had three poems prepared. Being able to gain inspiration and make up the verse on the spot shows that he has potential. But the best thing about him is that he said those words earlier before the third round, he

apologized to his classmates, that was his good interpersonal skills. Being able to articulate as well as his writing, and sophisticated in human interaction, he is not bad.”

“Wait.” Teacher Jiang suddenly thought: “This competition is going to be famous in the world, my reputation has already spread throughout the world before this, that is not key. But Li Xiao Bai is going to become famous from this, if there were three students who performed, it would be less impactful, but he actually took all three chances, this way, he will be the center of attention.”

“After ending in a draw against Brother Shen, nobody will find me for a duel in the short period. But there might be some devious people who would target my student in order to affect me!”

And the problem was, Li Xiao Bai was a common and ordinary student.

Teacher Jiang frowned as he made up his mind: “After this, I need to nurture Li Xiao Bai and secretly give him tuition! After this competition, everyone will know that Li Xiao Bai is my student. Even though I have many students, he is the only famous one.”

“In the future, if anyone mentions Li Xiao Bai, my name will also come up. Our reputation is already tied together, I need to nurture him well, otherwise...”

Teacher Jiang felt very pressured, he decided to make sure Li Xiao Bai was a proper scholar even if he had to spend a huge amount of effort and resources. Even if he was a cheap piece of wood, he needed to be carved into jade in appearance!

Central Continent, Fei He mountain.

Gu Liu Ru stopped his killer move as he wiped the sweat off his forehead, he let out a breath of air: “It is done, his immortal aperture time has been shifted to its limit, he will face calamities and tribulations very often.”

“Thank you for the hard work.” Qin Ding Ling smiled as she looked at the sleeping Gu Yue Fang Zheng, suddenly, she gasped.

“What is it?” Gu Liu Ru asked in confusion.

Qin Ding Ling said: “I was using a killer move to inspect luck, I found that after your killer move was activated, Fang Zheng’s luck changed again. His original luck was like a hill, lush and squarish, but now it has turned into... hmm... it looks like a pot lid.”

Gu Liu Ru was very perplexed: “What premonition is this?”

Qin Ding Ling shook her head, she was troubled too: “In the short term, I cannot understand it.”

Two months later.

A certain news made Fang Yuan’s main body stop his cultivation.

“I finally found out the location of Dragon Palace.”

“Good, I have basically learned all the qi path methods there are, I should act in advance and steal this Immortal Gu House in secret before Heavenly Court does!”

# Chapter 1826 - Dragon Palace's Tes

## 1826 Dragon Palace's Tes

Above the blue ocean surface, waves were rumbling, with the ebb and flow of tides, seagulls were flying above in the sky.

Plop.

With a soft sound, a Gu Immortal dived into the water, swimming deeper.

A thousand feet, ten thousand feet, a hundred thousand feet...

The sea was extremely deep, there was a large number of fierce sea beasts living here.

After reaching a million feet deep, immemorial level sea beasts started to appear.

Of course, there were precious treasures here as well.

"Eastern Sea is truly the number one in the five regions in terms of resources." The Gu Immortal sighed as he continued to dive deeper.

After reaching ten million feet, in the abyss-like darkness of the sea, there was a beautiful and colorful dream realm.

As the Gu Immortal got closer, the dream realm expanded within his vision. By the time he arrived, this dream realm resembled a small mountain.

“Dragon Palace should be here!” The Gu Immortal had a heated gaze.

He was muscular and handsome, he had a tall nose bridge and sharp lips. He had golden dragon scales on his body, he had a pair of dragon eyes resembling topaz, there was also a pair of golden coral-like dragon horns on his head.

This was Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone.

Fang Yuan knew that Dragon Palace was hidden in Eastern Sea, but he did not find out where exactly it was in the previous life.

Back then, Duke Long had brought Feng Jin Huang to try and subdue Dragon Palace, they were obstructed by the Four Dragon Generals. Thus, a battle ensued and Dragon Palace took the chance to fly into the sky, escaping from him.

Even though Duke Long chased after it, the huge commotion caused Eastern Sea’s rank eight Gu Immortals to approach him. When news of this spread throughout the five regions, Fang Yuan had just reached a certain stage in his plan against Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, he was also moved and decided to head to Eastern Sea.

Eventually, he was discovered and did not gain anything. And in the River of Time, the second stone lotus island appeared.

Fang Yuan made his decision to abandon Dragon Palace and went after the Red Lotus true inheritance in the second stone lotus island.

However, even though he stopped Heavenly Court’s plans, Feng Jiu Ge summoned the winds of assimilation and destroyed the stone lotus island.

This caused Heavenly Court to obtain Dragon Palace, suppressing it within Hidden Dragon Cave. Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals were unwilling to give up, they went to cause a huge battle with Central Continent — the battle in Hidden Dragon Cave.

After rebirth, Fang Yuan already included Dragon Palace in his plans.

He had started planning long ago, he collected information and made deductions on this, drawing a circle around its possible area. After that, he sent subordinates to explore and investigate Eastern Sea secretly.

Fang Yuan did not know where Dragon Palace was initially, but his hard work was not in vain, his efforts paid off, he found out the location of Dragon Palace recently!

The dragonman clone searched around the area, he did not find any immemorial desolate beasts around, it was a safe zone.

Immortal killer move — Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation.

He acted quickly, using a killer move against this dream realm.

His choice was the same as Duke Long's, he wanted to isolate the dream realm and target Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace directly.

And above the sky of this sea area, Fang Yuan's main body was hidden among the clouds. He was inspecting the area around him and guarding the dragonman clone. On the other hand, he was also getting the dragonman clone to probe the area.

If any accidents happen, Fang Yuan's main body would be able to rapidly escape to safety.

After all, Fang Yuan did not know the clear details regarding Dragon Palace, this was not like his plans in the River of Time and Tao Zhu's true inheritance where he had sufficient information.

What if Heavenly Court ambushed him?

Even if they did not, Dragon Palace itself was very dangerous. Because it had an offensive dream path killer move, Fang Yuan was quite wary against it.

As Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were created one by one, the dragonman clone's progress remained quite successful.



But this dream realm was too huge, at this rate, he would need several days and nights to completely transform it.

“Ignoring anything else, just the dream realm itself is a huge fortune. In the previous life, Heavenly Court obtained it, they had no way of using it. But in my hands, it is different.”

Fang Yuan’s main body had a clear view of the situation in the sea.

Next, he looked above himself.

After using luck path methods, he saw the Cooking Luck Pot that was above his head.

This pot was floating above it, it moved up and down slightly, like it was floating on water.

Fang Yuan could not check his own luck, but he could check the dragonman clone’s luck.

He saw that beside Cooking Luck Pot, the purple dragon that was the dragonman clone’s luck coiled around in the air motionlessly.

It opened its mouth and had an anxious expression, it was looking around alertly.

Around it, black traces of qi were gathering into a lump, forming many black clouds.

“This black cloud luck shows a premonition of death. It seems that the dragonman clone is in danger of dying!” Fang Yuan frowned.

He immediately made his calculations: “After using rebirth, looking at the time, I have found Dragon Palace much earlier than Heavenly Court in the previous life, I acted in advance.”

“I should be ahead of them looking at the situation, but time is moving quickly, a bad change is about to occur in a few days.”

In just this time, the black clouds became thicker as they surrounded the purple dragon in all directions, trying to bury and suffocate it.

Fang Yuan immediately used Cooking Luck Pot.

The dragons on Cooking Luck Pot became active as they started to devour the black clouds and spit them out into the pot.

The pot started to cook the luck, boiling all of the black cloud luck into a beneficial luck instead.

The luck then got devoured by the pot dragons before being sent to the purple dragon.

The purple dragon received such help, it became energetic and invigorated. Even though the black clouds were still thick and overwhelming, the purple dragon no longer looked so weak against them.

Fang Yuan saw this as he gasped lightly, thinking: “My Cooking Luck Pot is only rank six but it is the epitome of Giant Sun’s self luck true inheritance, it can control the luck of rank six Gu Immortals and even influence rank seven Gu Immortals.”

“Right now, my dragonman clone is already a rank seven after immense nurturing, thus, it can only affect the purple dragon. But this black cloud luck...”

Fang Yuan frowned lightly, pondering: “This black cloud luck was influenced by me but the effect is mild, this is a rank eight level crisis! However, looking at the purple dragon’s reaction, it seems to have some form of attraction to this black cloud luck.”

“Dragons[1] like wind and rain, while this black luck has a cloud shape, it seems that this is not only a dangerous situation for the dragonman clone, it is also an immense fortuitous encounter!”

Of course, this was all built on the foundation that Fang Yuan was not going to take action.

Once Fang Yuan's main body acts, the luck would change intensely!

Because Fang Yuan was not an ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal, his every action would cause a huge change to the situation.

"Sigh, it is too bad I cannot inspect my own luck. The self luck true inheritance has the killer move luck inspection, from rank one to nine. But my luck inspection Immortal Gu is only rank six, even if I make a killer move, the killer move would be able to inspect the luck of rank seven Gu Immortals."

Fang Yuan already had Cooking Luck Pot, he also added luck inspection Immortal Gu into it as one of the cores.

Thus, he did not need any killer move to inspect luck, just by activating Cooking Luck Pot, he could observe the dragonman clone's luck.

"Cooking Luck Pot is too low ranked."

"In the future, I need to advance all its core Immortal Gu, I also need to add in all living beings luck, so that it can affect other people and objects."

Fang Yuan planned.

Even though he could use Cooking Luck Pot to help his clones, they were the same entities as him. Thus, he was just helping himself, this was within the boundary of self luck, it was not all living beings luck.

Fang Yuan sensed the crisis that dragonman clone was going to face but he chose not to act. He controlled the situation while activating Cooking Luck Pot.

Even though it was not very helpful to the purple dragon, his influence on the black cloud luck was small, but any bit of help counts, as it accumulates, the amount would be quite significant.

After all, it was better than nothing.

The dragonman clone also received the main body's information as it continued to transform the dream realm.

After a day and half a night, four Eastern Sea Gu Immortals arrived from different directions.

The east one was a white robed young looking man with a handsome face, it was Yang Zi He.

The west one was an old woman with a hunched back, she had deep wrinkles on her face that resembled the pattern of a purple venomous snake, extending from her face, to her arms and to her whole body, it was Granny Rong.

The north one was a muscular Gu Immortal with triangular eyes shining in cold light, it was Shi Miao.

The south Gu Immortal wore a black robe, his face could not be seen, he was silent like an eerie ghost, filled with dark energy, this was Zhang Yin.

"Four rank eight Gu Immortals came? It is them..." Fang Yuan's main body did not move, because he sensed something strange from the dragonman clone's luck.

Right now, the purple dragon luck was surrounded by a huge and thick layer of black clouds, it could not break out.

But this black cloud luck was transforming slightly.

There was water sounds from the east, resembling a river. From the west, there was the silhouette of a purple venomous snake, from the north, there was a mountain shape, and at the south, the cloud was dark like an abyss, forming a black hole.

"These four rank eight Gu Immortals are not normal!"

"Their lucks are all a part of the black cloud, are they in an alliance?"

Fang Yuan did not know about the Four Dragon Generals of Dragon Palace, because there was no information about them in his previous life.

But soon, he found out.

These four rank eight Gu Immortals arrived before dragonman clone, their cold expressions relaxed a little.

“He is a dragonman indeed!”

“You have rank seven cultivation level, you are qualified to participate in the test.”

“These dream realms are your test, if you pass it, you will gain the acknowledgement of the Dragon Spirit and become the owner of Dragon Palace.”

“Quickly return the dream realms, undergo the test by exploring the dream realms, otherwise, we, the Four Dragon Generals, will make sure you regret ever coming here!”

The four Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals spoke one after another, while they spoke, they also revealed their dragonman identities.

At once, be it Fang Yuan or his clone, they were both shocked.

[1] Chinese dragons have the power to summon wind and rain

# Chapter 1827 - Controlling Ants in Dream

## 1827 Controlling Ants in Dream

The dragonman clone's action of transforming the dream realms drew the attention of the Four Dragon Generals.

If he was a human Gu Immortal, the Four Dragon Generals would attack him together, but Fang Yuan's dragonman clone was a genuine dragonman, be it body or soul, he was the real deal without any flaws.

Thus, the Four Dragon Generals exposed their identities, Fang Yuan gasped upon hearing this secret.

In the previous life, he had only seen Bai Ning Bing control Dragon Palace and Di Zang Sheng to participate in the final battle at the crucial moment, he did not see the Four Dragon Generals.

"So these four rank eight Gu Immortals are servants of Dragon Palace, they were subdued by Dragon Palace and made into dragon generals!"

"This is quite a deep scheme."

"Should I take action personally?"

Fang Yuan had countless thoughts as he quickly deduced.

With his current strength, he had a high chance of dealing with all four rank eight Gu Immortals at the same time.

Fang Yuan's strongest methods were qi path now, just the number of qi path dao marks alone were far beyond any of these four Eastern Sea rank eights.

"But they are still rank eight Gu Immortals, even though I can win and even kill them, there would be a huge commotion, I cannot gain victory quickly."

"Looking at the fight between Duke Long and these four, Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace also can act on its own, it is able to fly and escape."

"If I try to fight them forcefully, it might not end up well, I will be in the same state as Duke Long in the previous life."

Fang Yuan immediately deduced the most likely outcome.

He had come here to take Dragon Palace in secret, if he caused a huge commotion and exposed his rank eight cultivation level as well as his qi path battle strength, it would not sit well with his other plans.

Fang Yuan thought of this as he looked at the Cooking Luck Pot above him.

The purple dragon was completely submerged by the black clouds, but it was excitedly grinding its teeth, waiting to take action.

Especially when there was a trace of azure-purple[1] qi vaguely inside this black cloud.

"These traces of azure-purple luck are extremely noble and profound, it shows that the dragonman clone has a chance of becoming the owner of Dragon Palace."

"The dragonman clone only has rank seven cultivation level while the four generals are rank eight, they did not discover my presence so it is unlikely they are lying to me."

"If the dragonman clone follows the rules and explores the dream realms, after passing, I will obtain Dragon Palace as well as these four rank eight

Gu Immortal subordinates!”

“It seems that Dragon Palace is truly an enslavement path Immortal Gu House. It can enslave four rank eight battle strength experts at once, truly amazing!”

“According to the information of my previous life, I still have a lot of time.”

Thinking so, Fang Yuan’s main body decided to wait and let the clone explore the dream realms, participating in the test.

This was the most beneficial method.

The dragonman clone was secretly informed by the main body to return the dream realms.

This action made the Four Dragon Generals show more amicable expressions.

Granny Rong said: “To participate in the Dragon Palace test, your soul and body needs to enter the dream realms, you need to have the courage to risk everything in order to become the Dragon Palace Lord.”

The dragonman clone’s expression changed mildly, but considering that the main body was watching and guarding him from the sky, he nodded his head and entered the dream realms.

Once he entered the dream, he immediately landed in an area of deep darkness.

“Wu Shuai, wake up, wake up.” A person beside the dragonman clone nudged him.

The dragonman clone opened his eyes, seeing a young dragon girl, she was innocent and cute, showing a look of helplessness: “Why are you still sleeping? Everyone is waiting for you. Don’t forget that today is the day we arranged the battle with stakes against Chen Fu and Zhang Shuang.”



“So my name is Wu Shuai. Hmm... I have rank three Gu Master cultivation level.” The dragonman clone quickly inspected his own body condition.

“Quickly, quickly, let’s go.” The dragon girl could not wait, seeing that Fang Yuan opened his eyes, she quickly dragged him along.

They sprinted until they finally arrived at the school field.

Two groups of people were already gathered in the school field, they were separated into the east and west group, facing each other with a clear line in between.

The west group consisted of young humans, both male and female, their leaders carried the arrogance of human youngsters.

The east group were young dragonmen, they were fewer in numbers and had no leader now, they were currently being pressured by the humans.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was here, the dragonman youngsters became very excited, some were cheering while others chided him for being late.

“Wu Shuai, you finally showed up, I thought you were too scared and did not dare to come.” Over at the human side, one of the two youngster leaders shouted.

The dragon girl that brought Fang Yuan over immediately retorted: “Don’t be arrogant Chen Fu, now that Wu Shuai is here, he will beat you all to a pulp!”

“Cut the crap, Wu Shuai, let’s fight! This time, I will make sure I repay you for the humiliation of losing last time!” The other youngster Gu Master, Zhang Shuang, stood up, he was clearly impatient, he wanted to fight straight away.

“Wait.” Fang Yuan stretched out his hand, stalling for time: “Since this is a battle with stakes, where is the bet?”

He said as he assessed the school.

This school field was not simple at all, it was covered by an immortal formation!

This meant that Fang Yuan was not in an ordinary place, since there was an immortal formation here, this was likely a super force. Furthermore, Fang Yuan was currently at an important place in this super force's territory, creating an immortal formation at a school field meant that it was of great importance.

Looking at the clothing of both parties which was very alike, this was clearly a sect.

“This wager is clearly the impulse of youths.”

“These youngsters have at least rank two cultivation level, looking at them, they must have only started recently, their talent is really high.”

“I have the highest cultivation level, along with the two human leaders, Zhang Shuang and Chen Fu, they also have rank three cultivation level, we are all young geniuses. Below that is this dragon girl beside me, she has rank two peak cultivation level.”

“Wu Shuai, don't look down on me, I have already brought the betting item, look!” Chen Fu said as he carefully took out a Gu worm from his pocket.

Fang Yuan took a glance, it was a rank five Gu, called commanding leader Gu.

Commanding leader Gu looked like a longhorn beetle.

The longhorn beetle had a long and cylindrical body, its back was slightly flat and there were two long feelers on its head. This commanding leader Gu was similar, its body had a jade-like texture, its feelers were very long, more than ten times its body length, they were like two long red ropes.

The dragonman clone was slightly surprised.

Fang Yuan had many Immortal Gu, he did not care much about mortal Gu. But this commanding leader Gu was different, it was a mortal Gu but it was

a human path Gu worm with enslavement path effect, it had once gained huge fame in history but quickly went extinct.

According to rumors, commanding leader Gu had a great effect, it was also compatible with many types of Gu worms.

Fang Yuan's dragonman clone shared the same attainment level as his main body.

Fang Yuan had human path grandmaster and enslavement path master attainment levels, the dragonman clone was the same.

At master attainment level, one could generate intuition regarding the path.

Right now, the dragonman clone had a clear intuition: "As long as I pass this scene, I will get the recipe of commanding leader Gu."

"No wonder my purple dragon luck wanted to try it! This enslavement path dream realm is a huge fortuitous encounter after all!"

Thinking of this, the dragonman clone became even more excited.

While he was on the way, he had already checked what Gu worms Wu Shuai had, he had already prepared some methods that he could use.

As for how the battle worked, he did not know.

Immediately, Fang Yuan smiled as he said: "In that case, let's do it. In fact, I will give you the first move."

Zhang Shuang heard this as rage appeared on his youthful face: "Good, Wu Shuai, you are so arrogant, how dare you look down on me, I will show you!"

He took out ten or so primeval stones and scattered them around the school field.

The school field itself was an immortal formation, after the primeval stones landed on it, they got devoured by the ground like rocks falling into water.

Next, ants started to dig their way out of the ground.

Zhang Shuang stared widely as he used his method to manipulate these ants.

The dragonman clone was shocked: “These are not ordinary ants, they have some natural markings on their body that resemble human language characters. Is this the legendary army ant?”

Dragonman was not a natural variant human race, it was man-made.

The army ants and the dragonman were quite similar, they were not produced by nature but created by Gu Immortal great experts.

This type of army ant was used by enslavement path Gu Masters, they were able to resolve the feeding problem to a large degree.

A small number of army ants could be used for daily training, while a large group of army ants could form an ant tide with colossal power.

Zhang Shuang had good strength, he quickly enslaved ten or so yellow ants.

At this time, new ants came out of the ground, they were slightly larger than the ants before, being black in color.

Zhang Shuang was overjoyed and quickly focused his attention on refining these black ants.

The yellow ants had this word naturally carved on them — worker.

The black ants had this word naturally carved on them — soldier.

Seeing this, the dragonman youths became anxious while the dragon girl beside Fang Yuan shook his shoulders: “Brother Wu Shuai, start quickly. If we lose this duel, you will lose your vital Gu. The other party is shameless, he already has more than ten worker ants and three soldier ants.”

“Alright.” Fang Yuan smiled, he sat on the ground and focused his attention on these ants.

He activated a killer move, it used sight to enslave ants, the effect was incredible.

After a few breaths, dozens of ants on the ground gathered by Fang Yuan's side.

Among them were worker ants and soldier ants.

This result quickly overtook Zhang Shuang.

The human youths shouted in shock while the dragonman youths were stunned before cheering loudly and excitedly.

Zhang Shuang looked at Fang Yuan in disbelief, seeing that Fang Yuan's ants were multiplying in number rapidly, many times his own, his face turned pale as paper.

"I lost!" Zhang Shuang was straightforward: "But what killer move is this?"

The killer move was very powerful and profound, and even more importantly, Fang Yuan's soul foundation was very deep, far greater than mortal Gu Masters, not to mention this youngster.

Fang Yuan did not know the name of the move he had just created casually, he avoided it: "Since you lost, where is the bet?"

Zhang Shuang snorted coldly, placing commanding leader Gu in Fang Yuan's hands as he turned around and left.

Chen Fu had an ashen expression as he left his parting words before going: "Wu Shuai, to think that you are so devious, secretly learning a powerful enslavement path killer move, don't be too smug, we will definitely challenge you in this again!"

"Yay! We won, Wu Shuai, you are amazing!"

"As expected of Wu Shuai."

“Haha, they were so funny, Zhang Shuang and Chen Fu had ugly expressions earlier.”

Fang Yuan smiled, he was about to respond to the youths here when he suddenly saw their expressions freezing, they all looked behind Fang Yuan with stiff expressions.

“Father...” They called out quietly.

Fang Yuan turned around and saw a dragonman Gu Immortal staring at him with a deep and dark gaze.

Fang Yuan was shocked:” Duke Long?”

[1] Ancient high ranking officials have ribbons/sashes/belts of this color, thus it signifies royalty and high status.

# Chapter 1828 - Talk Between Father and Son

## 1828 Talk Between Father and Son

Observing closely, the dragonman clone realized.

Even though it was a dragonman Gu Immortal who appeared in front of him, it was not Duke Long, they only looked similar.

“Even so, this person likely has a close relationship with Duke Long, I wonder if this person is the father of my character in the dream realm?”

Fang Yuan was thinking when the dragonman Gu Immortal arrived: “Wu Shuai! You are too daring, I told you so many times to not create trouble, don’t provoke them! But you actually won against them again. Do you know that Zhang Shuang and Chen Fu are bloodline descendants of supreme elders of our sect!”

The dragonman Gu Immortal that resembled Duke Long had a stern expression, his eyes were almost spewing fire.

The young dragonmen who were still cheering earlier became silent, they did not dare to say anything, they looked down at their feet. This showed how high this person’s status was in their hearts, he was normally strict on them.

Fang Yuan was not sure of his relationship with this dragonman Gu Immortal, he had to mimic these youngsters and keep silent.

The dragonman Gu Immortal got more furious as he knocked on the back of Fang Yuan's head with his palm, the force almost pushed him to the ground.

Fang Yuan stumbled forward for a step but regained his balance quickly.

“Wu Shuai, follow me, come to the study room for your punishment!” The dragonman Gu Immortal snorted coldly, turning around and leaving.

Fang Yuan took a glance at these dragonman youngsters, they all looked at Fang Yuan with sympathy, guilt, and schadenfreude.

“It seems that I can only follow this dragonman Gu Immortal.” Fang Yuan thought as he quickly followed after the Gu Immortal.

After a few steps, the surrounding world changed rapidly.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan found himself in a study room.

The study room was huge, there were beautiful flower vases here, the study table was about ten feet long, there was ink and paper on it, at the center, there was calligraphy of three words — Long Xing Tian.

“Is this dragonman Gu Immortal's name Long Xing Tian? No, there is still some space at the end for one final word.” Fang Yuan had a thought.

Right at this moment, he heard a stern shout beside him: “Unfilial son, kneel down right now!”

Fang Yuan raised his head and saw that the dragonman Gu Immortal was standing behind the desk, staring at him with a cold and strict expression.

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes internally as he thought: “You should have said that earlier, I would be able to confirm your identity.”

Immediately, he knelt down without hesitation with a loud sound.

The dragonman Gu Immortal was stunned for a moment before smiling coldly: “Your attitude has really improved this time in apologizing, huh.”



“Father, your words are reasonable. I was too young and ignorant, I did not know your intentions, please forgive me!” Fang Yuan immediately gave a perfunctory speech but had a vivid expression that made people feel a sense of sincerity.

The dragonman Gu Immortal was stunned again before his smile became even colder: “Hmph! Acting obedient while having other intentions, you dare to lie to me! You deserve a beating!”

Saying so, he took the paperweight on the table and used it to whack Fang Yuan.

The paperweight was made of metal, it was long and hard, thick and heavy. It was originally used to hold down the paper and straighten it.

The paper on the desk was about the size of a door plaque, one could imagine how big the paperweight was.

This paperweight hit Fang Yuan’s back, it caused intense pain, his soul foundation fell by a huge amount.

But Fang Yuan could not resist, in this dream realm, he was not the dragonman Gu Immortal’s match.

But Fang Yuan was very crafty, he fell to the ground as he got hit, his forehead landed on the ground and created a dull sound.

He grunted as he knelt and straightened his back, he gritted his teeth and endured the pain, but showed a look of desperately holding back the pain.

The dragonman Gu Immortal was the father of this person after all, seeing this, he had a thought: “Did I hit him with excessive force earlier?”

“Sigh!” He sighed deeply, sitting down on his chair, looking at his kneeling son across the table.

He said with deep emotions: “Wu Shuai, you are my most outstanding son, your enslavement path talent is rarely seen in a hundred years. I spent so much effort to nurture and teach you, I want you to succeed in life. But you

went ahead and forgot all of my teachings, how many times have I told you to not argue with those people.”

“You are a genius, you have superior insight than the people of your age. I’ve already described the current situation to you, the higher-ups of the sect are increasingly unhappy with our dragonman race which is getting stronger. Even though I am a supreme elder that has seemingly great status, I am pushed aside by them.”

“Even though you defeated Chen Fu and Zhang Shuang, you also infuriated the Gu Immortals behind them. These human Gu Immortals will not show me any good attitude, they will become even stricter against the dragonman race.”

“Even though you won this time, you harmed the entire dragonman race’s benefits and intensified the sect’s conflicts. You are too rash, you do not consider the consequences when you do something! I am truly disappointed in you!”

“I am beating you for your own good, for the sake of the dragonman race and the peace of the sect, do you understand my intentions?”

Fang Yuan wanted to reply ‘understood’, but he took a look at the dragonman Gu Immortal’s expression and his heart shook.

The dragonman Gu Immortal might have a gentle gaze, but a cold icy feeling was in the depths of his heart.

Only someone like Fang Yuan who was aged and experienced could sense it clearly.

Instantly, Fang Yuan became incredibly alert, he thought rapidly as all sorts of clues appeared in his mind.

In this dream realm exploration, even though the main body was outside, his soul and body had entered the dream, he could not afford to fail once.

If he failed, he would lose the qualification to become the Dragon Palace Lord, he might even die.

Of course, the main body would not do nothing, but in that case, when the main body fights, he would face the same situation as Duke Long, the commotion would be huge.

To obtain the greatest benefit, Fang Yuan was willing to take this risk, so he had to be very careful with every step.

“This question seems simple but it might be the key to this scene, if I answer wrongly, I will fail!”

“My analysis should not be wrong... I will go ahead with this!”

Thinking of this, a sharp dagger-like light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

He raised his head and looked at the dragonman Gu Immortal, his expression changed as he smiled: “I am grateful for your concern, father. But father, you are willing to hold back and endure it for the big picture, I do not agree with that at all.”

“Unfilial son! You are unrepentant!” The dragonman Gu Immortal was enraged, he stood up and grabbed the paperweight again.

Fang Yuan quickly added: “I know you want to beat me, even if you beat me to death, I will not hate you at all. But father, your action of giving in and showing subservience is not helping the big picture, you are harming the entire dragonman race!”

The dragonman Gu Immortal’s eyes were spewing fire, he held the paperweight and pointed at Fang Yuan, shouting loudly: “Such guts! You dare to accuse your father of being wrong! Good, I’ll give you a chance, tell me, how am I wrong?”

Fang Yuan felt even more certainty now, he said slowly: “Father! Must our dragonman race always put ourselves at a lower status than humans? We

have talent and aptitude, we are born with enslavement path dao marks, what do the humans have?”

“We do not necessarily need Gu worms, our bodies alone give us great stamina, strength, and recovery.”

“Our bodies are tough and sturdy, our claws and teeth are sharp, while humans are weak and fragile.”

“And in terms of lifespan, our lifespan is tens or hundreds of times of humans! As we continue to live, the humans of our age will die one by one. Even without us doing anything, they will all die of old age!”

“We dragonman are born with such superiority, and even rarer is our unity, we recognize each other and trust each other, we are not like the humans who turn on each other and enjoy internal conflict!”

“Father, everybody can see your contribution to the sect. I won this duel but should I really have lost on purpose?”

“On what basis do these humans look down on us, how dare they treat us so badly! We dragonman deserve a greater status!”

“In fact, these normal people should rank below us dragonmen!!”

“Insolent, you are too insolent!” The dragonman Gu Immortal flew into a rage, he quickly walked past the table as he waved the paperweight in his hand, almost about to hit Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan suddenly stood up abruptly, he had tears in his eyes as he shouted at the dragonman Gu Immortal: “Father! I am unresigned, I refuse to accept this! Even if you beat me to death, I will never agree to this, I will not submit!”

“Wu Shuai!!!” The dragonman Gu Immortal walked to Fang Yuan, looked down at this youngster, his bloodshot eyes were staring straight at him but his paperweight did not hit.

Fang Yuan had no fear, he looked at the dragonman Gu Immortal directly as his eyes also spewed fire, it was the deep anger and hatred in his heart!

Both father and son looked at each other for a while, after the dragonman Gu Immortal confirmed something, he threw the paperweight in his hand away.

He grabbed Fang Yuan's shoulders with both hands as he shook his son, laughing loudly: "Wu Shuai, you are truly my precious son! I was not wrong about you!"

"Father? You..." Fang Yuan was stunned, his expression contained suspicion and shock that seemed extremely natural.

"I will tell you the truth, I think the same as you. I was trying to probe you earlier, I was unable to speak the truth, there is a reason behind all this." The dragonman Gu Immortal sighed deeply.

"What do you mean? Father, do you mean that...?" Fang Yuan seemed to have reacted as his eyes shined with delight and surprise, it was as if he had just understood what happened but did not dare to believe it, his expression was precise and flawless.

But internally, he sighed in relief: "This was it after all, my analysis was right."

"Within the sect, the conflict between the dragonmen and humans is intensifying, we can see this from just the youngsters' conflict."

"That school field earlier was an important area with an immortal formation, the sect higher-ups must have sensed something. If the dragonman Gu Immortal wanted to endure it, why would he not know of it? Why would he arrive after it ended?"

"Looking at this study room, the furniture is huge and placed in a grand fashion, this displays the dragonman Gu Immortal's huge ambition in full view."

“He called me Wu Shuai in front of the youngster dragonmen but called me unfilial son when we got to the study room, he was saving my reputation.”

“He wants to nurture me into his assistant, his successor.”

Thinking so, Fang Yuan finally understood the workings of this dream realm and the intentions of Dragon Palace in holding this test!

# Chapter 1829 - Green Ant Recruiting Disciple

## 1829 Green Ant Recruiting Disciple

Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan's main body which was hidden within the clouds had a change of expression: "Oh? My clone's luck transformed again!"

Fang Yuan took a look at the huge and dense black cloud luck beside Cooking Luck Pot.

Within the black cloud luck, four different phenomena that represented the four rank eight Gu Immortals defended this black cloud luck.

The purple dragon luck of Fang Yuan's clone was surrounded by the black cloud luck, it was growling inside.

The purple dragon was more energetic now, traces of azure-purple luck continued to be converted from the black cloud luck as it entered the dragon's body.

With this boost, the purple dragon expanded in size, its claws and teeth also became sharper.

The most evident change was that this dragon was originally lying down in a circular manner but now, it stretched its body and took the initiative to attack, it started to probe the black cloud luck.

“From motionless to active with greater morale, it seems that my clone has made a breakthrough in the dream realm, he knows how to act now so he has the initiative. This is a good thing!”

“It is a pity that I cannot use luck path methods to help my clone anymore.”

If the dragonman clone went in with his soul only and his body was outside, Fang Yuan could still barely send him good luck.

But now, the dragonman clone went inside with both body and soul, completely isolated by the dream realms, all luck path methods were kept out of range.

Fang Yuan’s main body was helpless too, unless he could take away some of the dream realms and expose the dragonman clone’s body.

Or in the future, when his dream path research results gets to a higher level and Fang Yuan learns how to mix luck path with dream path, he would be able to target the dream realm’s concealment.

The dream realm continued.

Dragonman clone analyzed the surroundings clearly and considered his options, because of his ‘heartfelt’ declaration, his father recognized him and he passed the second scene of the dream realm.

However, he needed to probe for more information.

Within the study room, Fang Yuan asked: “Father, since we are on the same side, can you tell me how we can make the dragonman race prosper? I am sure father has a plan, please teach me.”

The dragonman Gu Immortal smiled: “We have a plan since long ago, I will tell you the truth, not only me but many of our dragonman comrades are working together. But you cannot learn of their identities yet, this is to protect them and also yourself.”

“The first step to any great plan is secrecy. It is easier to work in secret than acting openly. I understand that.” Fang Yuan nodded but he asked again:



“But any great plan would have a resolution, right?”

“Our resolution is this.” The dragonman Gu Immortal smiled as he lifted his pen, writing the final word of the paper on this table — ‘Xia’!

When put together with the first three words, it made up the phrase[1] ‘Dragons Roam The World’.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light.

The dragonman Gu Immortal suddenly let out a breath, it cut the paper like a sharp blade.

The dragonman Gu Immortal took a small portion of the paper and passed it to Fang Yuan, there was only one word on it — ‘Xia’.

The remaining ‘Long Xing Tian’ was burned to ashes by the dragonman Gu Immortal, he waved his sleeves and incinerated the paper.

The dragonman Gu Immortal looked at the ashes on the table as he sighed: “One day, our dragonman race will soar the heavens, the world will be beneath our feet. But now, humanity is incredibly strong, they are the overlords of the world. Looking at the situation, our dragonman race is too weak and small, we do not have any alliances with variant humans in the outside world, while we are still a subordinate force of the humans ourselves.”

“To soar the heavens, we need to ascend first. Right now, we need to endure our position below the humans, to accumulate and gather foundation. Our dragonman race has just been created, our foundation is too thin, but thankfully, because we were born from humans, our relationship to them is also the deepest. Especially in Central Continent, we have members in all ten great ancient sects. We need to learn and accumulate our foundation to catch up to the humans.”

Fang Yuan continued asking: “Then what should I do?”

The dragonman Gu Immortal smiled: “You are already contributing now. When you were a child, I saw your potential and purposely nurtured you to be an enslavement path Gu Master. Now that your enslavement path attainment is already decent, I have made plans for you to attend Green Ant Ascetic’s disciple recruitment ceremony.

“Green Ant Ascetic?” Fang Yuan purposely acted unaware but his heart shook as he thought of a name — Ascetic Wine Couple.

These two were husband and wife, a famous lone immortal great expert couple in Central Continent’s history. The man was called Green Ant Ascetic while the woman was called Wine Fairy. The two of them were childhood friends, they were extremely close.

They were originally mortals but had their own immortal opportunities. Because of a disaster, they were forced to separate when they were still youths, but they missed each other and thought the other was dead.

After becoming Gu Immortals, neither the male nor the female thought of marrying anyone. Thanks to a coincidence, they met one day and fell into disbelief and joy, it was like a dream come true.

After talking to each other about their situation, the woman told the man: “I remember that you enjoyed playing with mud and ants when you were a kid.”

The man also laughed: “When we were young, your family operated a tavern, your life was much better than mine. You went to the streets and alleys to sell the wine that you carried on a pole, I accompanied you by your side during that time, I wish we could continue that forever.”

Thus, the man called himself Green Ant Ascetic while the woman also changed her title to Wine Fairy.

The two possessed great talent and morals, after becoming a couple, they lived in harmony and bliss.

The dragonman Gu Immortal continued: “Green Ant Ascetic had once lost a bet with Hong Zhen of the ten great ancient sects, he agreed to recruit a disciple and let them inherit his legacy. The time for the agreement is now, but the ten great ancient sects have no proper candidate, because the Gu Immortal Hong Zhen who had caused this event died from tribulation long ago.”

“Green Ant Ascetic is a human great expert who is a lone cultivator. If you can become his only disciple, not only would you get to learn enslavement path methods, you would also build a relationship with the Ascetic Wine Couple. When the dragonman race faces difficulty in the future, these two rank eight great experts would be a huge help!”

So that’s it, I understand now.” Fang Yuan paused before continuing: “I will work hard and become the disciple of Green Ant Ascetic.”

The dragonman Gu Immortal nodded: “Good, the ceremony is at the start of next month, you will enter closed cultivation now as I teach and train you personally.”

The second scene faded away, the third scene started.

High in the mountains, fog and clouds shrouded the air.

In a bamboo forest, in front of a thatched hut on the empty land, the younger generation members of the ten great ancient sects were standing.

These were all young geniuses with great talent, they were here to fight for the position of Green Ant Ascetic’s disciple.

Fang Yuan was slightly dazed, he observed the surroundings and found himself among the youths.

However, most of the human youngsters avoided him subconsciously, there were only two dragonman youngsters around him.

At the center of the empty area, two young Gu Masters were fighting.

Fang Yuan recognized one of them, he thought: “Isn’t that Zhang Shuang?”

Right now, Zhang Shuang was at a disadvantage, he was fighting against a girl with yellow eyebrows, she had beautiful features and shining eyes that had double pupils.

Fang Yuan had just arrived in the third scene, he did not know the situation, he quickly probed: “What do you guys think?”

The two dragonman youngsters beside him heard this, the left one with azure scales said: “Wu Shuai, you are looking down on us. Even though we were eliminated and only you are left in this competition, the situation is very obvious, Zhang Shuang is going to lose in a few more exchanges of moves.”

The azure scaled dragonman youngster was a little proud and spoke in a cold tone.

But the yellow scaled youngster had a more gentle tone as he consoled: “Qing Suan, don’t act like this, victory is victory, loss is loss. Since you were defeated, why take issue? Brother Wu Shuai is not asking this to humiliate you.”

The azure scaled youngster Qing Suan was indignant, he gritted his teeth: “Those humans are too devious, knowing that I am strong, they sent three humans to fight me in succession, causing my strength to fall greatly before that Tai Qin defeated me easily. Huang Wei, don’t tell me you couldn’t tell?”

The yellow scaled youngster sighed: “Why would I not know? We were both obstructed, but the truth is that we lacked strength. If we were like Brother Wu Shuai, so what if they tried to obstruct us? He still made it into the finals!”

Fang Yuan listened as he thought: “The azure scaled youngster is called Qing Suan while the yellow scaled one is called Huang Wei, meanwhile, I am already in the finals.”

At this time, Huang Wei said: “Brother Wu Shuai, I truly admire your enslavement path attainment. But your next opponent is not simple, Tai Qin

has extraordinary strength, she is on par with you. But you have already gone through many rounds of tough competition to get to this point. Meanwhile, she was basically given free passes every round to reach this stage until she met with the strong opponent Zhang Shuang.”

Fang Yuan understood now, the yellow brows double pupils girl, Tai Qin, was his next opponent.

He had a heavy mood.

Because after some observation, he had some evaluation: “This Tai Qin is an enslavement path master, she mobilizes her troops without thinking in many situations, only relying on instinct but it still produces outstanding effects... she is a tough foe.”

Fang Yuan’s enslavement path attainment level was only at master.

He felt a little regret now, had he known this, his main body would have raised his enslavement path attainment level in preparation for this.

But nobody could predict that such a situation would happen.

“I lost.” After a while, Zhang Shuang had a pale expression as he cupped his fists shakily.

“It was an honor.” The young girl Qin Qin responded with a cold expression, before her eyes turned to look at Fang Yuan fixedly.

And at the final round.

Fang Yuan slowly walked up.

He walked past Zhang Shuang who had a complex expression. He wanted to encourage Fang Yuan as they were from the same sect, but thinking about his dragonman identity, he only opened his mouth but did not speak.

After resting for a while, both sides started to fight.

The youngsters surrounded them as they watched the battle closely.

Ants started to emerge from the ground one by one.

[1] Considering the language differences, I'll leave the words in pinyin but this is what they mean.

# Chapter 1830 - Battle Using Ants

## 1830 Battle Using Ants

Fang Yuan immediately used his full strength to enslave these ants.

Tai Qin did the same.

These ants were created by Green Ant Ascetic, the content of his disciple recruitment competition was obviously to test the ant manipulation abilities of the participants.

After Fang Yuan controlled thirty-eight worker ant and six soldier ants, he willed as they attacked Tai Qin with full force.

Tai Qin had more than thirty worker ants and five soldier ants, she chose a different tactic to Fang Yuan, she made the worker ants build an ant nest while the soldier ants protected them.

Fang Yuan's troops had a little advantage, he also acted very aggressively, the youngsters watching all gasped in shock.

Tai Qin frowned, flustered: "Why is this dragonman youngster Wu Shuai acting like a different person? He is so aggressive!"

She quickly mobilized her troops, diverting the worker ants from the ant nest to move out while the soldier ants defended the place, trying to prevent their hard work from getting destroyed.

Soon, both sides clashed in an intense battle.

“To think that this would happen so early on.”

“Wu Shuai’s tactic is different from before, he is taking too huge of a risk.”

“That’s right, as long as Tai Qin defends herself from this attack, her advantage would be huge. Wu Shuai did not build any ant nest but Tai Qin has one, their power levels will be different.”

“It will depend on their ant manipulation skill now. Because now is still early, just the difference of one or two ants will decide who gains victory here.”

“Even though Wu Shuai is strong, Tai Qin also has deep foundation, they are equally matched. In my opinion, Tai Qin has a higher chance of winning, how could Wu Shuai act so rashly?”

However, a moment later, the temporary victor was decided.

Tai Qin lost a bit more of her troops, she retreated slightly as Fang Yuan’s side pressured towards her.

“How could this be? Wu Shuai actually won against Tai Qin? Tai Qin made a mistake?”

“She did not! Tai Qin is performing normally but Wu Shuai has exceeded his usual standards. Did he use any enslavement path methods or is he at this level normally?”

“No wonder he had the confidence to attack directly.”

Tai Qin had a grim expression, while retreating, Fang Yuan killed more of her ants in the process.

By the time she retreated into the incomplete ant nest, she only had twelve ants left, it was a sad situation.

Of course, Fang Yuan was merely in a slightly better situation.



The ant nest had several routes, Tai Qin was clear about her own nest's situation, she stationed troops at the crucial positions while diverting some attention to enslave more ants outside.

Fang Yuan had a change of thought, he did not attack abruptly, now that the enemy was completely trapped, they had nowhere to go.

Fang Yuan was not sure about the design of this ant nest, if he attacked now, his troops would not be useful.

Thus, he sent them to guard the entrances and encircled the ant nest before he used enslavement path killer moves to enslave the ants outside.

Ants continued to emerge from the ground, first were worker ants, followed by soldier ants, and finally, arrow ants.

Arrow ants could shoot out sharp spikes from their mouth, after shooting three spikes, they would be weak, they would not be able to fight even a worker ant.

But even so, arrow ants were strong, a small number of them could defeat a larger army. If one had a large number of them, when they shoot together in a battle, the power would be overwhelming.

“Both sides will definitely compete to get these arrow ants.”

“Indeed, if Tai Qin gets these arrow ants, she would be able to use them to kill the enemy ants guarding the entrance. That way, the troops inside can come out and counterattack.”

“Even though Wu Shuai has the upper hand, the situation is not certain now, he can easily lose.”

“It is a pity, if armor ants appeared instead of arrow ants, Wu Shuai would be able to use them to charge and advance into the ant nest, destroying it.”

The youngsters went into an endless discussion.

The two sides were competing in the most popular game of the generation, ant manipulation. At the start, worker ants and soldier ants would show up, but after that, the types of ants would be random. With the emergence of these new ants, not only would the enslavement attainment of both sides be tested, the Gu Masters' understanding of ants would also be evaluated, as well as their management of the overall situation.

Fang Yuan and Tai Qin went all out, but he had the advantage still.

The youngsters saw this and were unable to believe it.

“This battle area has a Gu formation, the ants closer to the competitor are easier to enslave. Tai Qin is enslaving ants near her while Wu Shuai is doing it to ants far away from himself, how could he possibly still have the advantage?”

“Is this Wu Shuai's real strength? How strong is he?”

“We worked together to weaken him earlier, to think that he still had such strength left. Isn't he tired at all?”

If this was really Wu Shuai, he might feel tired, but Fang Yuan was not.

Fang Yuan had just entered the dream realm, he was in a good condition, especially his soul, it was created as the main body's split soul.

Afterwards, even though it was turned into a dragonman soul and had not undergone soul cultivation, the foundation was still much deeper beyond ordinary people.

Soul foundation directly affected enslavement path.

For example, Fang Yuan's main body was unable to capture many immemorial year beasts before the battle of Southern Border's ambush, but now he could capture more than twenty.

In the battle of arrow ants, Tai Qin lost.

The arrow ants that she had diverted attention to enslave were all wiped out.

Fang Yuan not only had arrow ants, he also had worker ants and soldier ants, they cooperated with his arrow ants perfectly. Tai Qin's troops were diverted into two, making her end up in a passive situation.

But thankfully, the arrow ants were not outstanding on offense when they were in terrain like the ant nest with many tunnels and paths.

“Even though I gained some advantage, it is not outstanding, especially when Tai Qin has been using her worker ants to build the ant nest rapidly in this period of time.”

Even though Fang Yuan was acting aggressively, he was actually using the most stable method to achieve victory.

Battle tactics were usually built on the foundation that one understands their enemies well.

“Next, as long as armor ants appear, I will be able to attack and destroy the ant nest. Even if other types of ants appear, as long as they are not the cannon ants, I will be able to obtain victory with my advantage in numbers.” Fang Yuan was assured of his victory.

He had a high chance of winning, the humans youngsters watching were not willing to see it happen, but they had no choice but to admit it was happening.

“Dragonman Wu Shuai is going to succeed.”

“To think that this competition would end up like this.”

“To think that Wu Shuai concealed so much strength, he is truly formidable.”

“Sigh! It is a pity that the great Green Ant Ascetic's enslavement path inheritance is going to a dragonman.”

Tai Qin had a stern expression, staring at the battle area without blinking. She also recognized that she was about to fail, but she did not want to give up.

She gritted her teeth as she had an intense thought: “If I lose to a dragonman like Wu Shuai, I might as well have lost to Zhang Shuang earlier! I cannot lose, I don’t want to lose!”

At this time, clouds started to form on the battle area, they quickly condensed into lumps of green clouds.

A few breaths of time later, acid rain started to fall from these green clouds.

Fang Yuan’s gaze turned cold while the youngsters gasped.

“This change did not occur on the ants but the battle area instead.”

“If an earthquake occurs, Tai Qin would lose without Wu Shuai doing anything. If any other change occurred, the situation would be unchanged. But this acid rain...”

“Indeed, Tai Qin’s ants are all inside the nest while Wu Shuai’s troops are exposed to the acid rain’s corrosion.”

“Wu Shuai has started to build his nest.”

“It is too late, this acid rain gave Tai Qin a chance for a comeback, Wu Shuai’s advantage that was created by taking a risk is all gone.”

Tai Qin was aided by the acid rain and got past her state of complete disadvantage.

Fang Yuan had to pull back his troops and build a nest to hide from the acid rain.

After the acid rain, even though the armor ants appeared, no matter how many Fang Yuan enslaved, he still lost the best opportunity.

But after a while, Fang Yuan used his deep soul foundation to suppress Tai Qin, he won a few small battles and accumulated enough advantage to force Tai Qin into a corner, edging towards defeat.

A huge battle was about to start, Tai Qin gathered her remaining forces to resist stubbornly when suddenly, an ant queen appeared.

To subdue a wild ant queen, the Gu Master needs to use enslavement path methods and also beat the ant queen with the troops until it submits.

But this ant queen appeared in the middle of Tai Qin's forces.

Fang Yuan immediately attacked, but no matter how large his army was, he could not break through Tai Qin's last few defensive lines.

Tai Qin gave it her all and used methods that carried backlash to herself but finally subdued the ant queen.

Even though the ant queen was injured, it had a special power to allow ally ants to move faster, have higher defense, and attack more fiercely, her overall strength increased greatly as a result.

Fang Yuan's ants were not powered up, even though he had a larger army, they were all cannon fodder.

After failing to take her down for a long time, Fang Yuan chose to retreat wisely, he left behind some troops to stall Tai Qin.

After the first ant queen appears, more would follow.

Soon, new ant queens appeared and got captured by both sides.

As such, the battle between them went into a deadlock again.

As the number of ants that both sides controlled increased, more ant nests were built, the battle area became dominated by both sides as their troops fought intensely.

Tai Qin had a pale expression, so did Fang Yuan.

However, with his rich experience, he gradually gained the upper hand.

Rumble!

Right when Fang Yuan was about to deal the decisive blow, an earthquake happened as Fang Yuan faced a devastating loss, most of his ant nests were destroyed.

Even though Tai Qin faced the same situation, she had fewer nests to begin with, her losses were smaller.

Both sides were evenly matched again.

The youngsters went into a commotion again.

“It happened again!”

“Whenever she gets into a disadvantage, changes occur to help Tai Qin.”

“Isn’t Tai Qin’s luck too good?”

“It has happened three times already.”

“Is someone cheating?”

“How can that be? This area was set up by Green Ant Ascetic personally, if Tai Qin could cheat, she would have won already!”

Fang Yuan’s gaze turned colder.

“This is trouble.” He thought.

According to his luck, even if he lost the connection to the main body, he would not be this unlucky.

“The most likely possibility is that this dream realm requires me to lose, I cannot defeat Tai Qin.”

“Thus, whenever I am about to win, a change would occur and cause me to lose my chance of victory.”

“Then should I hold back and just lose?”

In usual times, he would do this to probe the situation. But now, the dragonman clone only had one chance.

If he guessed wrong, he would be giving up this test, in that case, the dragonman clone would be trapped in the dream realm, his main body would need to take action.

The main body would fight the Four Dragon Generals, he would lose control of the situation, Dragon Palace would fly away.

Fang Yuan's plan would end up fruitless.

What should he do?

# Chapter 1831 - Heavenly Court Notices

1831

## Heavenly Court Notices

Heavenly Court.

Qin Ding Ling floated in the air, she had an extremely solemn expression.

She had been preparing this killer move for three days and nights.

“Go!” At the next moment, she burst out with a grand golden light, the light shot out like a five tailed peacock, chirping and spreading its wings as it flew.

When this golden light reached a certain area in the sky, it exploded and scattered into countless light specks.

Within the light specks, a huge tunnel was vaguely seen.

Fairy Zi Wei, who was beside Qin Ding Ling, became shocked as she shouted: “There was really a tunnel here!”

Qin Ding Ling was bleeding from her seven orifices, her body shook as her face turned pale, she went to rest.



“Thank you for the hard work.” Duke Long was around too, evidently moved.

Qin Ding Ling breathed deeply for a while as she sighed: “Too close! If I had not soul searched Zhao Lian Yun a while ago and learned some information regarding Giant Sun’s all living beings luck true inheritance, with just my own attainment, I would not have found Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangements here.”

Duke Long snorted coldly: “This Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had ill intentions, back when he toured Heavenly Court, he already set up this hidden path. This luck path true inheritance is truly profound, even our great Heavenly Court could not detect it. But heaven’s will favors our Heavenly Court, at the crucial moment, Fairy Qin woke up and exposed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s devious scheme.”

Fairy Zi Wei breathed in deeply too: “With this arrangement, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created a way to enter Heavenly Court. If it activates, Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals might likely attack us directly.”

“Indeed, that is the behavior of these Northern Plains brutes.” Duke Long said.

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes shined with bright light: “However, since we found this in advance, we can deal with this arrangement. We can even make use of it to ambush Northern Plains instead. This will be very helpful for the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention in a few years.”

Qin Ding Ling made a huge contribution but she still had a grim expression, she sighed: “Giant Sun Immortal Venerable has three true inheritances of self luck, all living beings luck, and heaven and earth luck. In order to deal with him, I cultivated all living beings luck alone, after so many years, I thought that I had reached his level. But today, I learned that our difference is still so immense.”

Fairy Zi Wei consoled her: “None of the venerables can be assessed using common sense. Senior’s luck path attainment is already Heavenly Court’s

blessing, it allowed us to overcome our greatest weakness. From now on, Heavenly Court also has a proper luck path true inheritance.”

Qin Ding Ling said: “To guard against accidents, I have already placed my luck path true inheritance in the treasury. But the best case is to obtain Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s true inheritances. It is a pity that even though Zhao Lian Yun saw the all living beings luck true inheritance in Imperial Court blessed land, she was too weak then and only obtained a tiny portion. That Ma Hong Yun was the user of Fortune Rivalling Heaven, he must have known more information, but Fang Yuan captured him instead.”

Mentioning Fang Yuan, Fairy Zi Wei frowned: “Speaking of which, Fang Yuan has not shown up for a long time, even though we placed a lot of defense in the River of Time, Fang Yuan is nowhere to be seen. He has Myriad Year Flying Warship but does not show much interest in Red Lotus’ true inheritance. Is it because we cannot detect his traces or...”

Mentioning Red Lotus’ true inheritance, Duke Long frowned too, he said: “Let’s make the worst case assumption, we will treat it as if Fang Yuan has already obtained Red Lotus’ true inheritance.”

“To subdue Fang Yuan, in my opinion, the focus is still on Gu Yue Fang Zheng.” Qin Ding Ling smiled.

Different from the previous life, Gu Yue Fang Zheng received a great amount of attention, he was already a significant figure to Duke Long and Fairy Zi Wei.

Through Heavenly Court’s arrangements and a great deal of resources, Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s strength was also improving rapidly.

Immortal killer move — Blood Turns Cold!

Three desolate beasts became slower as they eventually froze and fell on the ground, grunting.

The victor, Gu Yue Fang Zheng, floated in the air, looking at the three desolate beasts lying below him as his robe remained clean and untouched.

“Blood path killer moves are truly powerful.” Zhao Lian Yun was standing beside him as they fought together.

Fang Zheng cupped his fists: “It was all thanks to your help, fairy, otherwise, why would I get so many opportunities to fight in real combat?”

Zhao Lian Yun smiled: “We both have a common goal, we should work together, right?”

Similar to the previous life, Zhao Lian Yun also took the initiative to befriend Fang Zheng.

Zhao Lian Yun loved Ma Hong Yun but he was killed by Fang Yuan. Even though he died, the soul remained, there was a chance of reviving him.

“Heavenly Court follows the will of heaven, they do not want to revive Hong Yun. After all, if he revives, wouldn’t that defy fate?”

“Even though I am Spirit Affinity House’s current generation fairy, Heavenly Court only treats me as a pawn, they only want to make use of me.”

“Earlier, that female immortal Qin Ding Ling soul searched me, that is the best evidence. In this aspect, Fang Zheng and I are similar. We are both pawns, but Heavenly Court places greater importance on Fang Zheng.”

“Thus, if I want to revive Hong Yun, I can only rely on myself, I need to find an opportunity!”

Zhao Lian Yun made her own plans.

Zhao Lian Yun knew her own situation, Fang Zheng was also no longer ignorant, after his experiences, he knew his own situation and why Zhao Lian Yun was acting like this to befriend him.

Fang Zheng did not dislike Zhao Lian Yun, they were in similar situations, he felt a sense of empathy towards her.

As the two spoke, Gu Yue Fang Zheng kept the three desolate beasts in his immortal aperture.

The three desolate beasts did not die, after he familiarized himself with blood turns cold, he was now able to use it effectively to capture enemies.

Fang Zheng had put a lot of effort into this killer move indeed.

Originally, Fairy Zi Wei planned to nurture Fang Zheng through closed cultivation. But after Qin Ding Ling awakened, she told her to change this plan.

Therefore, Gu Yue Fang Zheng took the sect mission and came to suppress the three desolate beasts causing chaos.

The mission was completed now, Fang Zheng was planning to collect all his loot and return to Fei He Mountain.

But to think that within the desolate beasts' cave, there was a secret tunnel.

To prevent the desolate beast cubs from remaining in the tunnel, Zhao Lian Yun and Fang Zheng decided to fly into the tunnel after a discussion.

The result was surprising to both of them, this tunnel was incredibly long, as they continued to fly downwards, the tunnel became wider, it could basically fit a mountain.

“This should be an Earth Trench, the three desolate beasts we caught should have nothing to do with the Earth Trench.” Zhao Lian Yun analyzed.

Fang Zheng nodded but he had his suspicions: “I guess that too, but this Earth Trench is too strange. normally speaking, it should be filled with vitality, beasts and plants should be everywhere, but after we flew for so long, we saw no lifeforms. This Earth Trench is not simple, we should explore it deeper.”

Zhao Lian Yun wanted to return but hearing Fang Zheng's words, she followed him as they went down.

“Oh, there is a blessed land here?!” Not long after, Fang Zheng found something strange.

Next, Zhao Lian Yun also found out, she gasped: “This blessed land is undergoing tribulation, the blessed land got damaged and a loophole formed, causing it to be exposed to the outside world. It is so coincidental that we came at this exact moment, otherwise, if the blessed land’s entrance is shut, even if it were right in front of us, we would not be able to notice it.”

“Let’s go in and see.” Fang Zheng was slightly excited as he spoke.

Since this was a blessed land, there might be a Gu Immortal inheritance here, after all, blessed lands were created from immortal apertures of Gu Immortals.

The two easily got into the blessed land, it was facing a grand tribulation now as chaos ensued.

“Strange, the people here are really strange, are they the extinct beastmen?”

“Looking at the situation, there should be no Gu Immortals here.”

Zhao Lian Yun and Fang Zheng discussed for a while, they decided to help.

Even though their cultivation level was low, they were not ordinary Gu Immortals, they had powerful methods and they soon calmed the situation.

The people who survived in the blessed land knelt to the two immortals as they expressed their gratitude.

Fang Zheng asked and found out that these people in the blessed land were not humans, they were dragonmen.

“Dragonman, what variant human race is this? I have never heard of it.” Fang Zheng was confused.

Zhao Lian Yun had become the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House for quite some time, she quickly frowned as she said: “Dragonman is

a variant human race, but we are in trouble now.”

She knew that she and Fang Zheng were pawns of Heavenly Court, they seemed to be moving freely but Heavenly Court definitely had methods to watch them.

As expected, Gu Immortals descended soon after.

Two female immortals.

Fang Zheng and Zhao Lian Yun knew them, they were Fairy Zi Wei and Qin Ding Ling.

Fang Zheng did not understand: “This blessed land is so ordinary, it is not outstanding, why did these two great experts come here?”

Qin Ding Ling and Fairy Zi Wei were in a good mood, it was evident from their facial expressions.

“Fang Zheng, you made a huge contribution again, good work. Your job here is done, you can leave now.” Qin Ding Ling smiled as she sent Fang Zheng and Zhao Lian Yun away.

Fang Zheng and Zhao Lian Yun had to obey her as they flew back to their respective sects.

A moment later, Fairy Zi Wei obtained the information she needed: “This blessed land belongs to Duke Long’s grandson, Wu Shuai, no wonder it was hidden for so long, even Lord Duke Long was deceived.”

“The dragonmen in this blessed land are all Wu Shuai’s bloodline descendants, there are pure dragonmen and also dragonman-human mixed bloods.”

“These dragonmen are not important, but this blessed land hides the clues to Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace! Senior Qin, you were right, Fang Zheng is truly our lucky star!”

Fairy Zi Wei had a joyful tone.

Because one of the creators of Dragon Palace was Wu Shuai.

Heavenly Court had been looking for Dragon Palace but progress was slow. Now that they obtained this important clue, as long as they solved it, with Heavenly Court's efforts, they would be able to deduce Dragon Palace's location.

"There is no time!" Qin Ding Ling had a solemn expression: "Fang Zheng is the arrangement of heaven's will to deal with Fang Yuan. Since he found this blessed land and exposed Dragon Palace, it means that Fang Yuan must be trying to obtain Dragon Palace himself."

Fairy Zi Wei heard this and did not dare to waste time, she quickly went back to Heavenly Court to make her deductions.

# **Chapter 1832 - Changing Duke Long's Luck**

## **1832 Changing Duke Long's Luck**

Deep in Eastern Sea, the following scene of Dragon Palace's dream realm was undergoing.

The dragonman clone manipulated the ant army as it charged forward.

There were thousands of black ants moving in a tight formation. Among them, armor ants paved the way at the front while arrow ants stayed at the rear, the ant queen was well protected in the middle. At the very end of the army were cannon ants, they were bulky and moved slowly.

In front of dragonman clone, Tai Qin was similarly controlling her ant army.

"Senior brother, here I come!" The yellow eyebrows girl shouted as her army pressed forward, attacking Fang Yuan's troops.

Fang Yuan quickly willed as he stabilized his formation, defending with the armor ants while attacking with the cannon ants.

Tai Qin controlled mainly spear ants and sprint ants, they were very offensive in nature.

Fang Yuan smiled secretly to himself: "Ever since the disciple ceremony of Green Ant Ascetic, Tai Qin was motivated due to the defeat against me, she



changed her cautious attitude in battle and became very aggressive, often choosing to attack first.”

At this time, two groups of sprint ants encircled him from the left and right.

Tai Qin’s tactic was very clear, she wanted to use the sprint ants’ speed to rapidly attack Fang Yuan’s cannon ants.

Cannon ants had powerful long range attacks that could kill many spear ants in a frontal battle. But it moved slowly and had weak defense, if the two groups of sprint ants got close and attacked, it would definitely get killed.

“This is an appropriate tactic, however, since I moved in this formation, why would I not anticipate this weakness in the formation? Oh junior sister...” Fang Yuan smiled at the girl in front of him.

“Then let’s fight, senior brother!” The yellow eyebrows girl shouted, her eyes shined with bright light as she exerted her full force.

As the sprint ants move closer, Fang Yuan’s entire ant army retreated, encircling the cannon ants at the back. The entire process was fluid and smooth.

Tai Qin saw this and her eyes widened as she sighed with a cute expression: “So amazing! Senior brother, you are able to control all of the ants at the same time! You have already mastered our master’s ant thought killer move?”

Fang Yuan smiled as he nodded.

Tai Qin gritted her teeth: “Even so, I will not give up easily! Senior brother, I will take down your frontal troops.”

It turned out that in order to retreat, Fang Yuan left his armor ants at the front lines, blocking Tai Qin’s spear ants.

Fang Yuan’s ant army retreated successfully, but they were separated from the armor ants in the process.

The armor ants did not last long, they were quickly wiped out by the spear ants which had greater numbers.

Spear ants moved like the tides, pressing forward.

Fang Yuan had already prepared his arrow ants at the most outer layer, they continued to shoot out their arrows. At the same time, cannon ants flew into the sky and blasted the spear ant army, killing many of them in the process.

Due to Fang Yuan's barrage of attacks, Tai Qin finally lost as her ant army got obliterated.

"Sigh! I lost again, senior brother, you are really amazing!!" The girl let out a breath of turbid air as she looked at Fang Yuan with a glimmering gaze, there was a faint blush on her face.

Fang Yuan saw this and understood why.

Three scenes had passed since Green Ant Ascetic's disciple recruitment ceremony.

Thinking back, Fang Yuan still felt some lingering fear.

In the scene of the disciple recruitment ceremony, no matter what advantages he had, accidents would occur to erase them rapidly.

Fang Yuan did not surrender, he considered his options and chose to keep a stalemate, preventing the yellow eyebrows girl from winning.

Eventually, they ended in a draw after reaching the limits of a Gu Master, Green Ant Ascetic appeared to stop them and took both of them as disciples.

The reason was that Green Ant Ascetic chose his disciple using ant manipulation on the surface but he had his own intentions to test the nature of the Gu Master and how long they could persevere.

If Fang Yuan admitted defeat, he would not meet this criteria, the dream realm exploration would fail.

Thus, to pass the ceremony, he could not win or lose, it had to be a draw.

After that hurdle, in the following few scenes, Green Ant Ascetic imparted his knowledge to them. Fang Yuan gained many Gu worms and his main opponent was this junior sister Tai Qin.

Tai Qin had never won a single time when she sparred against Fang Yuan.

Initially, she was not convinced, but gradually, she admitted her inferiority and even had some sort of affection brewing that she was unclear of.

“Great, it seems that the clone is making good progress in the dream realm.” Fang Yuan observed his dragonman clone’s luck as he spoke.

This purple dragon luck had expanded in size by several times, its surrounding black cloud luck had shrunk by thirty percent.

At the same time, the azure-purple qi produced from the black clouds became denser and thicker.

But at this time, blood red light flew over from the west.

This blood red light was huge, it floated above the purple dragon’s head but did not merge with the black cloud luck.

Within the blood red light, there were the vague figures of a golden phoenix and a divine dragon, they had an incredible and threatening aura.

“What is going on? What changes are occurring?” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

He quickly deduced.

“This blood light luck is more than ten times the size of the original one! It is coming from the west, west from Eastern Sea is either Western Desert or Central Continent.”

“The blood light luck has not attacked yet, showing that now is not the time for its move. It is so big, it should be from Central Continent’s Heavenly Court!”

“How did Heavenly Court find their way here?”

“In the previous life, they did not come here at this time. Is it the ink effect from my rebirth?”

Fang Yuan lacked information, but he deduced many possibilities.

He was not shocked, in fact, he had plans against this.

Because Heavenly Court was his biggest enemy all along!

Heavenly Court.

In Central Great Hall.

Fairy Zi Wei stopped her actions as joy flashed on her face: “I deduced it after all.”

She grasped the location of Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace!

This was because Heavenly Court had been sending people to secretly investigate the five regions to search for Dragon Palace all along.

Even though progress was slow, after years of accumulation, they were close to success.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court found its own way to Dragon Palace. This time, with a critical clue, their accumulation led to great results, they quickly found success.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly told Duke Long and Qin Ding Ling about this news.

“Dragon Palace needs to be retrieved. This is my karma, let me go and take it back.” Duke Long took the responsibility for this matter.

Fairy Zi Wei immediately felt at ease: “With Lord Duke Long taking action, we will definitely succeed.”

At this time, Fairy Zi Wei's expression changed, she received some information: "Oh no, Myriad Year Flying Warship has appeared in the River of Time, Fang Yuan is taking action again!"

"Coincidentally at this time?" Qin Ding Ling frowned: "This is too coincidental, let me take a look at both of your luck."

Fairy Zi Wei and Duke Long did not reject her.

Qin Ding Ling first looked at Duke Long, his luck was in a dragon shape, it looked like a flaming cloud.

The old dragon lowered its head as it coiled its body, about to fall asleep — this was a sign that Duke Long's lifespan was ending.

Qin Ding Ling grunted as she observed closely, seeing that the scales on the old dragon's body were turning blood red, its dragon head became more wrinkled as it showed an upside-down 'mountain' character — this symbolized failure!

Qin Ding Ling was shocked: "There exists a person in this world that can make Duke Long fail?"

At this moment, her vision turned blood red, her luck inspection killer move was forced to stop, the backlash caused Qin Ding Ling to cough out a mouthful of blood.

"Senior Qin!" Fairy Zi Wei quickly went to support Qin Ding Ling.

After standing firmly with her eyes still bleeding uncontrollably, Qin Ding Ling smiled bitterly while having temporary blindness: "Senior Duke Long, you are truly powerful, your dao marks are too numerous, my luck inspection killer move could only take a glimpse."

Even though Qin Ding Ling had a rank eight level luck inspection method, the actual use of it depended on the target.

In Duke Long's case, his dao marks far exceed the peak of rank eight, he also had defensive killer moves in the form of dragon markings, they

activated earlier.

“It was tough on you.” Duke Long asked: “How is the result?”

Qin Ding Ling shook her head with a worrisome expression: “Not good, Senior Duke Long will face an intense battle if he goes, there is a chance of failure.”

“How can this be?” Fairy Zi Wei was shocked.

“This is not unimaginable.” Duke Long shook his head: “The world is vast and unpredictable, the River of Time moves endlessly throughout time, humans are merely a tiny segment of this. This is quite interesting, I am curious to know what can make me fail.”

Qin Ding Ling added: “Luck is a variable, this only hints that Senior Duke Long has a chance of failure in this trip. But it is not a problem, I cultivate all living beings luck, I can use luck path methods to amplify or change your luck, Senior Duke Long! However... I need a few days.”

“Okay, I will wait for a few days then.” Duke Long thought about it and made his decision.

# Chapter 1833 - Qi Sea Ancestor

## 1833 Qi Sea Ancestor

In the dream realm.

“Senior brother, was the dinner I made yesterday delicious?” After Green Ant Ascetic’s lesson, junior sister Tai Qin came to Fang Yuan and asked him in anticipation.

Fang Yuan smiled: “It was really not bad, to think that junior sister had such talent, you will definitely make a good wife in the future, I wonder who would be so fortunate as to become your husband?”

“Senior brother, you are making fun of me again.” Tai Qin’s face turned red as an apple as she spoke in a soft tone: “If senior brother likes it, I will make more for you.”

“Sure, then I will be happy to eat it.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

At this time, a dragonman Gu Immortal appeared: “My son.”

“Father, why are you here?” Fang Yuan was a little surprised.

“Oh, hello Uncle Wu.” Tai Qin quickly greeted nervously.

The dragonman Gu Immortal nodded at the young girl, smiling: “You are Tai Qin right, my son has mentioned you many times in his letters, this is a small gift from me, do accept it.”

“Ah, no I cannot...” Tai Qin wanted to reject it but Fang Yuan received it for her, putting it in her palm and forcing her to keep it.

“Take it, my father has come for important businesses, our lesson today has to end here.” Fang Yuan apologized.

“Ah, it is not a problem, no problem at all.” Tai Qin quickly waved her hand and thanked the Gu Immortal before respectfully taking her leave.

“Such a pure and innocent girl, my son, are you interested?” Seeing that Tai Qin had left, the dragonman Gu Immortal joked.

Fang Yuan smiled as he thought: the dream realm has changed again, he spoke cautiously: “Father, don’t you understand me well enough?”

“Hahaha.” The dragonman Gu Immortal laughed loudly as he patted Fang Yuan’s shoulders: “I came here for important businesses indeed. The daughter of Calligraphy Pavilion Lady, Shu Jiu Ling, has reached the age of sixteen and is holding a contest to find her husband, any remarkable young man can participate, I want you to join it.”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan was slightly surprised.

He knew about the matter of Shu Jiu Ling.

In the earlier scene, Tai Qin had mentioned it while they were chatting.

Shu Jiu Ling originally loved Gu Immortal Fan Ji, she was impregnated with his child but he refused to marry her, constantly giving excuses.

In the end, Shu Jiu Ling finally understood Fan Ji’s true nature, she felt extremely hurt, she stayed locked up within the residence of her mother, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady, never going out.

Calligraphy Pavilion Lady had rank eight cultivation level, she owned the Immortal Gu House Calligraphy Pavilion, she was a leader of Central Continent’s lone cultivators. As a mother, seeing that her daughter was in such a state, she became furious, she wanted to find that heartless man and settle the score with him.



But Fan Ji was the last disciple of Black Heaven Temple's first supreme elder Kong Yi Hen, he was also a rank eight Gu Immortal with no children but many disciples, his most beloved disciple was the final and youngest one, Fan Ji, he treated him like a son.

Calligraphy Pavilion Lady could not act rashly against him, she had to approach Kong Yi Hen and seek an answer.

Thus, Kong Yi Hen brought his beloved disciple Fan Ji to Calligraphy Pavilion as they negotiated.

But something happened during this, not only did they not have an agreement, they even fought. After Kong Yi Hen and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady fought for a few rounds, they stopped. Fan Ji and Shu Jiu Ling became complete enemies as Shu Jiu Ling said in a rage, threatening Fan Ji: "Don't regret this, you don't want me, but there are countless in this world who do."

Fan Ji smiled coldly: "I came here to negotiate with you but you are going too far. I want to see who has the guts to interfere in this. I want to see who has the passion to be with you even though this child is in your womb."

Shu Jiu Ling fainted from anger on the spot.

As her mother, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady definitely had to back up her daughter.

After Shu Jiu Ling woke up, she wanted to arrange an open competition to find a husband, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady could not convince her daughter, she also felt that maybe someone else could give her daughter happiness. Even if her daughter does not like him, this event can distract her and lift her from depression and constant thoughts of suicide.

Tai Qin had said it with excitement and joy, she was delighted and treated this as a joke.

Fang Yuan laughed then but now, he could not laugh anymore.

He thought: “The dragonman race wants to be independent and strong, they have a strong ambition. This is a good chance indeed, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady is a rank eight lone immortal who is going against Black Heaven Temple, if I can become the son-in-law of Calligraphy Pavilion Lady, with this relationship, I can lead her over to the side of my dragonman race.”

As for Shu Jiu Ling’s appearance, personality, and the baby in her womb, they were not a concern.

Fang Yuan did not care.

Compared to ambitions, so what if he had to make sacrifices?

Normally, only people who were able to endure things that were absurd could create unimaginable achievements that normal people could not do!

“But junior sister Tai Qin’s affection towards me is growing, if I do that, I will be letting her down. This girl will be very upset.” Fang Yuan felt a sense of guilt in his heart.

But immediately, he jolted in his heart as he realized: “No wait, what happened to me? This is the dream realm, I am Fang Yuan, not Wu Shuai, why am I feeling guilt?”

“What a powerful dream realm, it actually affected my emotions!”

“The last few scenes of the dream realm were very stable and safe, but it was subtly trying to influence me, I was actually affected.”

“That was close!”

If he had cold sweat, it would have formed on Fang Yuan’s forehead already.

But he was in the dream realm.

Normally speaking, when Fang Yuan explores dream realms, his body would be outside while his soul enters, he would often travel between inside and outside, there was a clear differentiation.

But now, Fang Yuan's dragonman clone went in with both body and soul, he explored it continuously for days, he was immersed in it. Even though Fang Yuan regained his clarity now and knew reality and dream, his emotions were actually affected earlier.

This was a forewarning of danger.

When exploring dream realms, the worst case was getting immersed in it and dissociating from reality. Emotions were the most powerful tool, once they were affected, all sorts of feelings would emerge, Fang Yuan would be trapped in quicksand, falling deeper and deeper until he got devoured by the dream realm.

The dragonman Gu Immortal observed Fang Yuan's expression for a while before nodding in satisfaction: "My son, you are truly unaffected by the restraints of love and affection, I will go and meet Green Ant Ascetic now, to tell him about this matter and get approval for a leave of absence for you."

"I will follow father's arrangements." Fang Yuan quickly said.

River of Time.

Boom boom boom!

Intense explosions occurred as waves of river water shot out.

Swoosh!

A flying boat was riding on this huge wave, flying with lightning speed resembling a silver ray of light.

It was Myriad Year Flying Warship.

And behind Myriad Year Flying Warship, five Immortal Gu Houses chased relentlessly.

Within Myriad Year Flying Warship, Bai Ning Bing and the rest went to their stations and fought with tense emotions.

“This Heavenly Court is truly rich, they managed to rebuild Present and Past Pavilion as well as Eternal Yacht.”

“Not just that, they also have Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, Shark Flow Lever, and that mysterious Immortal Gu House!”

“Heavenly Court is truly the number one force in the world, their foundation is shocking.”

Bai Ning Bing and the rest did not recognize Heavenly Court’s Moment Stage, in order to construct this time path Immortal Gu House, Fairy Zi Wei had taken out the core Immortal Gu of Million Heavenly King Gallery in Heavenly Court.

Forget about the other four Immortal Gu Houses, but this Moment Stage was a rank eight Immortal Gu House.

And there was rank eight time path Gu Immortal Gu Liu Ru inside Moment Stage.

As Myriad Year Flying Warship fought against Moment Stage, the other four rank seven Immortal Gu Houses were not idling, because the situation now was quite different, Bai Ning Bing’s side could only fight while moving away.

“No worries, we have advantage in luck, we can use the River of Time’s complex environment to cause damage to Heavenly Court.”

“That’s right, after we weaken them sufficiently, we will counterattack.”

A few days later.

Heavenly Court.

Duke Long was ready to move out, Qin Ding Ling who had a pale face and Fairy Zi Wei sent him off.

After changing Duke Long’s luck, Qin Ding Ling’s condition was bad, she could not accompany him or join the fight in the River of Time, she could

only recuperate in Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei had to stay in Heavenly Court to oversee the situation and prevent Longevity Heaven from launching a sneak attack.

“The Immortal Gu House battle in the River of Time has gone on for a few days but Fang Yuan has not shown up. With Feng Jiu Ge’s Dao Guardian luck, we can make up for the weakness in luck, thus, we have the upper hand now.”

“This Fang Yuan should not be underestimated, Zi Wei, pay more attention to him.”

Duke Long said with deep care and concern.

“Yes.” Fairy Zi Wei had a solemn expression: “Fang Zheng is ready now, he is inside Immortal Crane Sect’s Pine Crane Pavilion, he is already on the route of Lord Duke Long’s journey.”

“Good.” Duke Long nodded as he turned into a purple dragon-shaped qi, vanishing on the spot.

Fang Yuan inspected his clone’s luck again.

The dragonman clone’s purple dragon luck expanded by several times again, it was energetic and lively, moving casually within the black clouds.

Half of the black cloud was already an azure-purple color, this showed that the chances of Fang Yuan becoming the Dragon Palace Lord was much higher now.

However!

At the top of this black cloud luck, a huge blood light luck was already pressing down, it was very close.

Within the blood light luck, the golden phoenix phantom was gone, only the purple dragon figure was left, it was huge and menacing.

Compared to the blood light luck, the black cloud luck and the purple dragon were small and weak.

“It seems that only my main body can stop this variable.” Fang Yuan had his realization.

“Oh? He’s here.” At the next moment, his eyes shined with bright light.

He saw that in immemorial white heaven, an Immortal Gu House flew closer. It was Immortal Crane Sect’s Pine Crane Pavilion!

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply as he activated his battlefield killer move.

This qi path battlefield had been prepared for a long time, it had been waiting for this moment.

“What?!” Within Pine Crane Pavilion, Fang Zheng was deeply shocked as his vision warped greatly, he became trapped instantly.

“An enemy has ambushed me! But I have Pine Crane Pavilion, thankfully, thankfully... ugh!” Fang Zheng’s expression was filled with shock and fear.

Boundless qi currents shot out like arrows, gathering towards Pine Crane Pavilion in an immeasurable number.

The terrifying might made Fang Zheng’s heart skip a beat.

“Rank eight killer move!” Fang Zheng turned pale instantly, Pine Crane Pavilion was just a rank six Immortal Gu House, how could it block such an attack?

At the crucial moment, a figure appeared.

Who else could it be but Duke Long?

It turned out that Duke Long did not meet with Fang Zheng, he only followed secretly and instructed Fang Zheng to head towards Eastern Sea using Pine Crane Pavilion.

This was also Qin Ding Ling's suggestion, giving Fang Zheng some freedom would cause disturbance towards Fang Yuan naturally.

But Fang Zheng moved with peace and serenity, until this moment when he met his foe.

Without Duke Long, he would die without doubt.

Duke Long pushed with his palms as the surrounding qi currents broke apart and crumbled.

“Who is it? Come out!” Duke Long shouted.

“I am Qi Sea Ancestor.” Fang Yuan revealed himself but he had a different appearance now.

# Chapter 1834 - Fang Yuan Fights Duke Long

## 1834 Fang Yuan Fights Duke Long

“It’s Lord Duke Long!” Fang Zheng saw Duke Long and became surprised and joyful.

He knew Duke Long’s identity, in fact, they had met before.

“If not for Lord Duke Long’s appearance, I would have died already. With him around, I should be safe.” Fang Zheng no longer felt fear, he was assured.

He knew what kind of person Duke Long was, this was Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s master!

Fang Zheng took another look at the person who almost took his life — Qi Sea Ancestor.

This old man wore a white robe, his sleeves fluttered in the air, his long white beard drooped to his feet, he had a solemn expression and grand aura, the clouds floated quietly around him, giving him an immortal-like disposition.

Fang Zheng could not recognize this as Fang Yuan’s disguise, he was curious about the old man’s identity: “This old man has rank eight cultivation level, but he is not any of the known rank eight great experts of Eastern Sea. Who is he?”



Not just him, even Duke Long was curious. But Eastern Sea was vast and had the most resources among the five regions, it was normal to have a hidden rank eight cultivator.

Immediately, Duke Long smiled “Qi Sea Ancestor... as a rank eight, it is fine to call yourself an ancestor. But calling yourself Qi Sea in front of me, you are simply too arrogant.”

Fang Zheng heard this and had a thought: “That’s right, Lord Duke Long primarily cultivates qi path, followed by transformation path, he is a rare dual cultivator! This rank eight Eastern Sea old man also cultivates qi path, but he is going against Lord Duke Long. Hehe.”

Fang Zheng felt a little sympathy for Qi Sea Ancestor.

At this time, he heard Duke Long’s voice: “You have clear ill intentions, tell me, what is your motive for staying here and ambushing us? What is your relationship with Fang Yuan?”

Fang Yuan was slightly surprised, he thought: “How did he link my identity to Fang Yuan in this situation?”

On the surface, Fang Yuan smiled coldly: “I am a secluded cultivator of Eastern Sea, I do not bother people who do not offend me, but your Heavenly Court is too ambitious, you seek to take over all five regions and unify the world. In the future, you will look for trouble with me and attempt to kill me.”

Duke Long frowned slightly, he retorted: “Qi Sea Ancestor, you must have been deceived by that demon Fang Yuan. We have no grudges with each other, this is our first encounter, why would we attack you?”

“That demon Fang Yuan is crafty and likes to sow discord, you must not trust him blindly.”

Fang Yuan snorted coldly: “I did not believe him at first, but this Fang Yuan pointed out many of my secrets, he gave concrete evidence. He is someone from the future, should I believe him or you?”

Duke Long's frown became even deeper.

Fang Yuan's accusation was quite shameless.

If he targeted Heavenly Court's past or current actions, Duke Long could retort with evidence. But talking about Heavenly Court's future actions, Duke Long had nothing to say, even he was uncertain himself!

In fact, even Duke Long had his own interpretation: "How can a rank eight Gu Immortal be so easily deceived? Since Fang Yuan convinced this Qi Sea Ancestor to obstruct Heavenly Court, in the future, it is likely that we really went ahead to attack him. In that case, there is no point in talking."

Duke Long sighed as he thought about his mission to retrieve Dragon Palace, yet faced obstruction here. Qi Sea Ancestor was clearly here to stop him, with this deduction, Fang Yuan was likely going after Dragon Palace now.

"I need to settle this battle quickly!" Duke Long's eyes flashed with resolution!

Fang Yuan managed to deceive him after all.

This was not just because of Fang Yuan's modified familiar face killer move that was now compatible with his qi path methods. Most importantly, Qi Sea Ancestor was emitting a genuine rank eight aura now.

Duke Long thought that Fang Yuan was a rank seven Gu Immortal.

Not just Duke Long, the wisdom path great expert Fairy Zi Wei and the entire Heavenly Court, in fact, the entire world, had the same thought.

Different from the previous life, right now, the sovereign immortal aperture's secret was not exposed yet.

Fang Yuan had defended this secret very well.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Claw Strike!

Duke Long made up his mind, he wasted no time as he attacked with no hesitation.

This was a transformation path killer move, immediately, a claw mark appeared in the air.

Fang Zheng who was inside Pine Crane Pavilion gasped, to think that Duke Long was the first to attack, and he even launched a sneak attack!

Even though Qi Sea Ancestor got hit by the attack, he turned into cloud fog as he faded away.

Fang Yuan was guarded against Duke Long from the start, because this was his immortal battlefield, it was easy for him to dodge it.

Duke Long's expression did not change, the attack earlier was just a test.

Now that he probed it, this was truly a qi path battlefield, transformation path methods were greatly restricted here.

In that case, he would use different methods.

Duke Long did not turn around, he directly pointed behind him.

Air currents moved as a layer of bubbles quickly surrounded Pine Crane Pavilion, protecting it.

"Thank you, Lord Duke Long!" Fang Zheng did not dare to wait, he quickly thanked him.

Duke Long did not pay attention to him as he used another killer move, after a while, he pushed with his palms as multiple qi dragons emerged.

The half transparent qi dragon moved rapidly, once it finds Fang Yuan's location, it would attack on its own.

"Lord Duke Long is truly not an ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal!" Fang Zheng saw these qi dragons which were all over a hundred feet long, they were majestic and grand, he could not help but praise.

But at this moment, Duke Long raised his head, his eyes shining with a sharp light.

“What sound is that?” Fang Zheng also heard the loud sound as he raised his head to look.

At the next moment, his mouth opened wide as his pupils shrunk.

He saw that a grand blade qi that was a thousand feet long, thick and wide, resembling a deity’s war blade, slammed down with a force that sought to cut this world into two!

The blade qi was vast and grand, it created gusts of wind and rumbling thunder, Fang Zheng was shell-shocked, he was like a tiny ant, those majestic qi dragons from earlier looked like earthworms or snakes now.

At the crucial moment, Duke Long shouted and used his killer move.

Qi wall!

Qi wall was the most common defensive killer move of qi path, but the method that Duke Long used now was not simple.

He used a consecutive move, using qi wall three times.

The qi wall first had one layer, before it expanded twice, it became thicker and tougher, it was the fusion of three qi walls.

Boom!

The blade qi landed on the qi wall, causing a thunderous sound that exploded intensely.

Even though he was inside Pine Crane Pavilion, Fang Zheng’s vision still turned dark as he felt dizzy, his ears were bleeding as blood flowed out.

The qi wall collapsed while the blade qi dispersed to a large extent, the remaining portion was not able to do any threatening damage.

Pine Crane Pavilion was like a small raft, it shook intensely from the aftershock, constantly shaking.

Fang Zheng took a lot of effort to stabilize the Immortal Gu House as his face turned pale, he was breathing roughly in a pathetic state.

“How can this Eastern Sea Gu Immortal be so strong?!” Fang Zheng was still completely dumbfounded, his sense of safety from earlier had been completely erased.

Duke Long was unscathed but his expression was solemn, he no longer had a relaxed mood.

He raised his head to look at Fang Yuan who was high up in the sky, they were quite far apart.

The blade qi earlier had an obvious aura, Fang Yuan’s location was naturally exposed now.

Duke Long rose in altitude as he said to Fang Yuan: “That is a powerful blade qi, even though it is not elaborate, it has a lot of raw power. But how many times can you use this move?”

Fang Yuan smiled, he was calm and composed.

The killer move earlier had too much power, Duke Long thought that Fang Yuan had activated it after a long period of preparation.

This was quite an obvious thought, but he had no idea that Fang Yuan was a special exception.

“Oh, you mean this? It was just a casual attack.” Saying so, Fang Yuan pointed his index finger at Pine Crane Pavilion as he tapped.

Boom!

A grand blade qi gathered and shot out again with imposing might.

Fang Yuan tapped his finger again.

Boom!!

Another blade qi with vast power followed after the attack from earlier with might that could split heaven and earth.

Fang Yuan tapped his finger again.

Boom!!!

The third blade qi shot out with the same power, in fact, it was even larger than the ones before.

Fang Zheng's body froze on the spot, he was dumbfounded!

"This..." Duke Long was also deeply shocked, the enemy's blade qi killer move was very easily used, it was as simple as drinking water.

But how could this be possible?!

Of course it was possible.

Fang Yuan had a lot of qi path dao marks, it was more than a million! Adding in the qi path battlefield's amplification, it was reasonable that it reached this stage.

Duke Long also had qi path dao marks, but the numbers were only thirty percent of Fang Yuan's dao marks.

Thus, Fang Yuan's blade qi killer move needed three qi walls to block.

"He has such immense battle strength, to think that Eastern Sea contained such a character! Hehe, interesting." Duke Long's eyes shined with brilliance, his battle intent was completely drawn out.

He looked over, those three blade qi were approaching rapidly with an unstoppable might.

"It has been so long since I've last had a challenging battle." Duke Long breathed in deeply, before his overwhelming aura burst out in all directions.

Dragon roars were heard as he charged directly towards the blade qi!

While Fang Yuan and Duke Long engaged in fierce combat, the dream realm in the sea was quiet and tranquil.

“Junior sister, be careful, I’ve prepared this move for a long time.” The dragonman clone smiled as he spoke.

The yellow eyebrows girl Tai Qin smiled delicately: “Brother Shuai, go ahead, I am ready.”

“Good.” Dragonman clone waved his hand as the ant army flew, creating a golden river that crashed towards Tai Qin.

Tai Qin also waved her hand, flying ants appeared from the ground and moved like a river as well, retaliating.

The two ant groups met in the sky but they did not fight, instead, they fused together with no casualties.

The ant groups merged completely in the sky, they were an entity now.

Under the golden light, Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone looked at Tai Qin with a sincere gaze.

Tai Qin also looked at him bravely, her face was flushing but her eyes could not hide the affection that she had.

“Junior sister.”

“Senior brother.”

The two walked closer and felt deep love for each other, the ant army flew around them and danced in joy.

A moment later, it was time to separate.

“Junior sister, I need to go. Sigh, I want to be with you forever, but... I cannot defy my father, I have a family now. It has been hard on you these

years.” The dragonman clone kissed Tai Qin goodbye.

Tai Qin shook her head: “No, it has not been tough. Senior brother, you are forced to do this, while I had chosen this of my own accord. I will always be here, you can come anytime, I will be around.”

When dragonman clone returned to Calligraphy Pavilion, it was already midnight.

The moon was bright in the sky.

He looked at the pavilion at the peak of the mountain as he felt a sense of sorrow in his heart.

At this time, from the shadows, a dragonman Gu Immortal secretly flew up and met with dragonman clone.

“Brother, when you were not around, sister-in-law went to meet with that Fan Ji again in secret.” The dragonman Gu Immortal reported with displeasure on his face.

“Hmph, this slut.” The dragonman clone had a grim expression, at this moment, an intense rage emerged in his heart.



# Chapter 1835 - Snapped In Two

## 1835 Snapped In Two

“Wait! This is just the dream realm, I am not the real Wu Shuai, why is there a need to feel hatred?” The dragonman clone was stunned as he quickly regained clarity.

He blinked and subconsciously touched his forehead.

He did not feel any cold sweat, instead, he could feel a pair of warm coral-like dragon horns.

He felt a deep chill in his heart!

“Brother, what do we do now?” The dragonman Gu Immortal informant asked again.

Fang Yuan looked at him.

This dragonman Gu Immortal still had a trace of his appearance in his youthful days, it was Huang Wei. He had once competed with Wu Shuai to become the disciple of Green Ant Ascetic, but had failed.

But this person had enough talent and aptitude, due to the dragonman race’s diligence, they were highly united compared to the humans, they rarely had internal strife, this allowed all of the dragonman young geniuses to grow properly, especially geniuses like Huang Wei, they were nurtured intensely.

Fang Yuan’s character, Wu Shuai, knew of his talent and wanted to befriend him, due to a coincidence, Wu Shuai saved Huang Wei’s life and they ended

up becoming sworn brothers.

A few scenes of the dream realm made rapid progress in terms of time, Fang Yuan was already a Gu Immortal now.

Fang Yuan thought about it as he snorted coldly: “A little impatience will spoil great plans, we will continue to pretend we don’t know this as always.”

This Shu Jiu Ling had once been pregnant with Fan Ji’s child, she got abandoned and in a fit of anger, chose to have a competition to find a husband.

Wu Shuai obeyed his father’s orders and became the husband of Shu Jiu Ling as they wanted to create a relationship with Central Continent’s rank eight lone immortal Calligraphy Pavilion Lady.

Honestly speaking, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady played a significant role in Wu Shuai’s ascension to become a Gu Immortal, she provided lots of resources.

But Shu Jiu Ling still could not stop thinking of Fan Ji even after giving birth to her son.

After some time, Fan Ji was also reminiscing about Shu Jiu Ling, he decided to approach her again.

Shu Jiu Ling could not control herself, she kept in contact with Fan Ji, they met with each other countless times, it almost became an open secret.

Originally, Wu Shuai becoming her husband already made him the laughingstock of Central Continent’s Gu Immortal world, now, it was only worse.

Ordinary Gu Immortals who had a weak nature would not care, but Wu Shuai was a heroic genius with great aptitude, it was not easy for someone like him to endure this.

“The higher my cultivation level, the more easily I will succumb to this dream realm.”

“After staying in this dream realm for so long, I’ve almost thought that I was Wu Shuai myself.”

“Or maybe... this is the true test of Dragon Palace?”

Fang Yuan’s clone had a burst of inspiration, he realized the truth.

This dream realm was the test for Dragon Palace’s inheritor, it did not just test their personality, because choices in the dream realm might not necessarily reflect one’s true intentions.

The dream realm was not just testing him, it was also creating an inheritor.

Even if a person was unsuitable, as long as they passed the dream realm, after such a long period of brainwashing, the Gu Immortal would emerge as someone who hated Heavenly Court and loved dragonmen, they might even become like Wu Shuai, taking on the responsibility of the uprising of the dragonman race!

“It is possible that those four Eastern Sea rank eights tried to explore this dream realm but failed. In this process, their minds were warped and turned into dragon generals!”

“What do I do?”

“I have already started to succumb to it, it is not easy to stay awake.”

“The more I explore this, the worse the situation becomes! If I fail, I will become a dragon general. If I win, I will be modified into the Dragon Palace Lord, my main body might not even be my priority anymore, I will solely want to revitalize the dragonman race!”

Fang Yuan’s clone felt his heart turning cold as he realized this.

Regardless of success or failure, neither result was favorable to him!

And the scariest thing was, even if he wanted to leave now, it was impossible. The main body had no idea this was the situation, no information could be transmitted out of this dream realm.

“I had actually fallen into the trap of this Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace!” Noticing this, Fang Yuan’s clone did not know whether to laugh or cry.

He suddenly thought of the previous life: “Wait, why was Bai Ning Bing able to control Dragon Palace and become the owner of Dragon Palace in my previous life?”

Fang Yuan had never been able to deduce the truth behind this.

“In the previous life, Duke Long had taken away Dragon Palace but he did not pass the dream realm test. Afterwards, it became Bai Ning Bing’s possession for some reason. This means that Duke Long did not truly obtain Dragon Palace, he only suppressed it forcefully.”

“But even if he only suppressed it, how could he not know it himself? If he knew, why would he place Dragon Palace in Hidden Dragon Cave instead of Heavenly Court which was a safer location?”

“Dragon Palace is an enslavement path Immortal Gu House, according to the battle in my previous life, Di Zang Sheng had also participated, it was likely enslaved by Dragon Palace. Thus, this means that Duke Long was trying to use Dragon Palace to subdue Di Zang Sheng?”

“In the end, Dragon Palace subdued Di Zang Sheng but turned against Heavenly Court...”

“Bai Ning Bing should have no time to explore the dream realms, even if she does, she has no ability to explore these dream realms.”

“However, because the dream realms were taken away by Heavenly Court, Bai Ning Bing became a lucky winner?”

The dragonman clone shook his head, after considering all this, his brain started to hurt.

There was too little information, he could not figure out the truth of the matter.

“Currently, I need to stall for time until my main body notices this problem and saves me.” The dragonman clone did not know the situation outside, Fang Yuan’s main body was currently fighting intensely against Duke Long.

In this current situation, if he aggressively explores the dream realm, he would definitely be brainwashed, he would succumb to this dream and be unable to wake up.

If he fails, he will become a dragon general. If he succeeds, he will become the Dragon Palace Lord but would betray the main body, his personality, values, and life goals would all change.

Neither one was what he wanted.

Immemorial white heaven.

Qi path battlefield.

Boom!

An intense explosion whipped up a strong shockwave.

Air currents surged, blowing towards the entire world, Pine Crane Pavilion was like a paper boat that swayed helplessly in this tsunami, it would break apart at any moment.

Fang Zheng was completely dizzy inside, his face was pale without any trace of liveliness.

“I am a Gu Immortal but I am not even qualified to watch this battle! If not for Lord Duke Long’s protection, I would have died without a proper corpse already.”

Looking at Duke Long's figure, Fang Zheng felt admiration and gratitude.

After such a long battle, Duke Long was still energetic as he stood straight, his dragon scales shined brightly in the light, but his dragon eyes were blazing with anger: "Qi Sea Ancestor, you are such a powerful expert but you choose to attack the weak, you truly do not possess the disposition of a great expert."

Fang Yuan laughed: "Attacking the enemy's weakness is a righteous path tactic, that just happens to be my style of fighting. Furthermore, I am very curious, who is inside this Immortal Gu House, why are you, Duke Long, protecting them time and time again?"

Fang Zheng did not know that Qi Sea Ancestor was Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan was also unaware that his brother Gu Yue Fang Zheng was inside Pine Crane Pavilion.

Even though these brothers were meeting, they did not know each other's identity.

And similar to the battle in the previous life, Fang Yuan also sensed acutely that the person inside this Pine Crane Pavilion was harmful to him.

Fang Yuan attacked many times, Pine Crane Pavilion was within the range of his attacks.

And because this was Fang Yuan's domain, fog spread out and concealed his true self, allowing him to use killer moves with ease.

Duke Long was kept in a passive spot, he defended more than he attacked, Fang Yuan suppressed him for now.

But at this moment, waves of dragon roars resounded within the dense fog.

"What's going on?" Fang Yuan was bewildered.

Following the waves of dragon roars, clouds started to gather and turned into giant dragon qi currents.

Spiral currents continued to form and expand, they were like the undercurrents of the sea, splitting up the battlefield into multiple areas, a large amount of fog were drawn in by these currents and got devoured, as these currents expanded continuously.

“This is a split move, what an ingenious killer move.” Without the fog to conceal him, Fang Yuan’s true body was exposed, he sighed in admiration.

There were four main killer move manipulation techniques that existed, split move was one of them.

Back then in the battle of Snowy Mountain blessed land, when many parties went after Ma Hong Yun, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had displayed a split move technique, he displayed incredible battle strength.

Right now, Duke Long was also using this technique without causing a commotion prior.

When Fang Yuan was fighting with him, he thought that these were just minor moves, but to think that they were all part of the same qi path killer move. When Duke Long activated them fully, a terrifying power was unleashed.

“What is the name of this move?” Fang Yuan looked at these currents as he sighed, he knew that in the short term, he could not do anything to these currents.

Duke Long laughed heartily, the anger on his face was completely gone, he was just acting earlier to stall for time.

In a battle between experts, words and expressions were weapons.

Duke Long’s battle experiences were richer than Fang Yuan, he could use these techniques casually in battle, even Fang Yuan was caught off guard.

“This move is called reverse worm dragon, I only succeeded after ten years of practicing it. It was correct that you did not attack them immediately, because any qi path methods you use will only help them to grow, from

worm to dragon, their power will rise by a hundred times, you will not be able to guard against it.” Duke Long explained plainly.

He was not explaining for fun, he wanted Fang Yuan to be less inclined to attack, at the same time, he was preparing a powerful killer move, his grand aura could barely be contained.

Fang Yuan’s brain worked rapidly.

He did not see Duke Long use this reverse worm dragon move in the previous life.

In fact, when Duke Long rampaged in the previous life, he had not used his expression or words to deceive his enemies.

This meant that Duke Long was treating Qi Sea Ancestor as a powerful enemy, he was serious now!

Reverse worm dragon’s profundity was not inferior to the killer move unlimited qi sea. Fang Yuan had also not forgotten about Duke Long’s trump card qi path killer move — Triple Qi Retraction.

“This reverse worm dragon seems to have been created to counter battlefield killer moves, these worms are so troublesome to deal with, if they evolve into dragons, they would become even stronger.”

“But so what?”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan smiled arrogantly, he attacked.

Blade qi gathered and slashed down again.

Duke Long was stunned: “He had clearly seen this move’s profundity, he should avoid it. By attacking now, is he trying to stop me from using my killer move, to disrupt my tempo and continue suppressing me?”

Activating killer moves needed time. But Fang Yuan did not give Duke Long a chance. He did not feel disheartened, he stopped the killer move activation as he brought along Pine Crane Pavilion to dodge the attacks.



“You want to suppress me but you are actually helping to raise reverse worm dragon’s strength, they will grow from worm to dragon, I will get a chance!” Duke Long was burning with battle intent, he wanted to fight with his full power.

As expected, the blade qi landed on the spiral currents and got absorbed by them to a large extent.

The currents grew rapidly, exploding on the spot as more than ten of them fused into one divine dragon, its body was long and majestic, it also filled this entire qi path battlefield.

Compared to it, Pine Crane Pavilion was like a tiny mosquito beside an elephant!

“Such a powerful killer move, Lord Duke Long is finally retaliating.” Fang Zheng saw this and became overjoyed.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan spoke slowly in a calm tone: “So this is turning worm into dragon, it is powerful. But... it is not enough.”

Saying so, he activated his killer move.

Qi path killer move — Yin-yang Great Killer Hands!

Rumble!

With a loud explosion, two huge hands, one black and one white, appeared out of nowhere.

The two hands were so large they could loom over heaven and earth, they had an intrinsic pattern, at this moment, they grabbed at the qi dragon’s neck and tail.

The huge dragon growled and struggled intensely, but the giant hands were unmoving like they were made of metal.

Fang Yuan pulled with both hands from afar.

Boom—!

The huge dragon was directly snapped in two by him without putting up a resistance.

Fang Zheng opened his mouth wide, he was unable to close it.

Fang Yuan stretched his fingers as he looked at Duke Long, saying plainly: “Alright, I’m done warming up.”

Duke Long had a serious expression, his dragon pupils shined with a domineering light, he stared fixedly at Fang Yuan.

He opened his mouth, revealing his sharp white teeth as he said: “Great, it seems... you are truly a worthy opponent.”

# Chapter 1836 - Steal Life Hits Duke Long

## 1836 Steal Life Hits Duke Long

Dream realm.

“This is Censure Peak?” The dragonman clone looked at the floating mountain in the sky as he showed some amazement: “This is not a real mountain, it is like a phantom image.”

“Indeed brother, I was shocked when I first saw it too.” Dragonman Gu Immortal Huang Wei was by his side.

Two scenes had passed in this dream realm.

They were currently inside Gu Immortal Wen Xiu’s grotto-heaven, because the tribulation was too strong, loopholes formed and a connection to the outside world was created, it got discovered.

Wen Xiu was a legendary woman, an information path great expert that had died long ago. She was a lone cultivator and lacked resources, the reason she became a rank eight great expert was because she owned a special area — Censure Peak.

A Central Continent Gu Immortal observed for some time before gasping: “Wen Xiu was truly formidable, this Censure Peak is man-made and is full of information path dao marks, it is akin to half a secluded domain of heaven and earth!”

Along with Fang Yuan's clone were many Central Continent Gu Immortals.

All of the immortals were looking at Censure Peak, undeniably, it was the essence of this grotto-heaven as well as the most valuable resource here.

Everyone wanted it!

Huang Wei transmitted: "Brother, when we contest for it later, give it your best effort, I will help to defend you and stall for time."

"Okay." Fang Yuan's clone was answering when the surrounding Gu Immortals turned to attack him.

"Strike first!"

"Wu Shuai is the strongest person here, if we fight him alone, none of us are his match."

"How can we let the great Censure Peak end up in the hands of a dragonman?"

It turned out that while Huang Wei and Fang Yuan's clone were conversing, the other human Gu Immortals had already made their agreement.

Instantly, Fang Yuan's clone and Huang Wei fell into an encirclement.

From all directions, killer moves approached.

"Such guts!" Fang Yuan's clone shouted angrily as his dragonman body charged to the sky with imposing might.

A vast amount of ants flew with him, forming a golden river current that protected Huang Wei and himself.

Boom boom boom!

The human Gu Immortals attacked fiercely, soon, Fang Yuan's carefully nurtured ant army suffered immense losses.

Fang Yuan retaliated immediately, his methods were profound and powerful, quickly salvaging the situation. After a few rounds, he broke out of the encirclement and went into a deadlock with the immortals.

After a dozen rounds, the Gu Immortals who encircled him became suppressed in the battle.

Enslavement path Gu Immortals were usually able to fight a group of enemies alone, this dragonman Gu Immortal Wu Shuai that Fang Yuan was portraying had immense talent, he eventually forced these Central Continent Gu Immortals to retreat.

Of course, Fang Yuan's clone paid a terrible price while Huang Wei also sustained heavy injuries.

"It was a difficult victory, but at least we obtained Censure Peak." Huang Wei smiled bitterly.

But when Fang Yuan's clone was about to obtain it, he met with an obstruction.

"What is going on?" They quickly found the reason, someone had secretly gone to take this Censure Peak as his own while they were fighting, stealing the fruits of the battle.

This was none other than Fan Ji, the person who was having an affair with Wu Shuai's wife, Shu Jiu Ling!

Fan Ji had fainted on the spot, his soul foundation was too weak to refine the entire Censure Peak.

"This fellow!" The dragonman clone gritted his teeth in anger, he was filled with rage, he almost attacked and killed him.

"You can't kill him!" The dragonman Gu Immortal Huang Wei who was beside him quickly shouted.

"Why not?" Fang Yuan's clone turned around with bloodshot eyes, he was filled with killing intent.

Huang Wei explained: “Oh brother, I know your pain, but we both know this person’s identity. If you kill him, his grandfather will take action. He is now a member of Heavenly Court, but he does not move around normally. If his beloved grandson gets killed, he will investigate the truth and take revenge on you.”

Fang Yuan’s clone was stunned before his gaze turned dark, his face was distorted from anger.

After a long time, he sighed deeply: “Brother, you are right. I cannot kill him, otherwise, the best case scenario is that I get involved. But worse is that others might use this as a chance to deal with our dragonman race. How can I, Wu Shuai, implicate the entire dragonman race because of my personal emotions?”

At the same time, in immemorial white heaven.

“It should be here.” Shen Cong Sheng frowned a little, after inspecting the empty sky for a long time, he stopped frowning as he spoke with certainty.

Standing beside him was Song Qi Yuan, he smiled: “Brother Shen’s investigative methods are very effective, in that case, let’s work together.”

Shen Cong Sheng answered: “Of course, I want to know why Immortal Crane Sect’s Pine Crane Pavilion came to Eastern Sea sneakily and vanished here.”

These two were not ordinary Gu Immortals, one was Shen clan’s first supreme elder and the other was Song clan’s first supreme elder, they had rank eight cultivation level.

The two were originally on an important mission, but they found Pine Crane Pavilion by chance.

At that time, Fang Zheng was inside this Immortal Gu House, having entered Eastern Sea.

The two Gu Immortals were authority figures with deep knowledge, they recognized Pine Crane Pavilion as they wondered: “What is an Immortal Gu House of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects doing in Eastern Sea?”

Shen Cong Sheng also found that a Gu Immortal expert was hidden near Pine Crane Pavilion.

The two Gu Immortals thus followed from afar. Using Shen Cong Sheng’s investigative method, they did not lose track of this Immortal Gu House.

And because they were afraid of alerting the enemy, they were too far away, when Fang Yuan ambushed Duke Long and Pine Crane Pavilion, they did not see anything.

By the time they arrived, Fang Yuan had already succeeded in trapping Duke Long and Pine Crane Pavilion in the qi path battlefield.

But Shen Cong Sheng’s method was incredible, after some investigation, he found a lot of clues, he deduced that an immortal battlefield was hidden here.

The two Gu Immortals immediately attacked!

“What is going on? Shen Cong Sheng and Song Qi Yuan actually came here? Did they have any agreements with Heavenly Court?” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

The attack of the two Eastern Sea immortals made him immediately get into a situation of facing internal and external threat.

Against Duke Long, he had to give his full attention without distraction. But now, he had to deal with Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng. It was really troublesome now, Fang Yuan could not deal with so many aspects at once.

Rumble!

The qi path battlefield shook as Duke Long noticed it, he became joyful: “What is going on? Someone is attacking this qi path battlefield? This is a good chance!”

Duke Long roared as he attacked with even greater force.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, he used the qi path battlefield to dodge attacks while aiming his moves at Pine Crane Pavilion.

Attacking the enemy’s weakness was the best strategy, because Duke Long’s weakness was grasped, he had to go on the defensive and continually take hits.

But good times did not last long, the qi path battlefield soon gave way as more loopholes formed.

Duke Long had been searching for a chance, he laughed loudly: “Qi Sea Ancestor, your luck is pretty bad, even though you set an ambush, external forces came to attack. You have been targeting my weakness all along, but now your qi path battlefield is your weakness, break!”

Saying so, Duke Long unleashed his killer move as the qi dragon soared to the sky, it could roam freely in heaven and earth, it could move unhindered over the universe.

Fang Yuan quickly tried to stop it but the qi dragon was very agile, it directly targeted the qi path battlefield’s weakness.

Fang Yuan could not stop it, he sighed as a huge loophole formed in the qi path battlefield, it rapidly expanded until the battlefield broke apart.

Fang Yuan grunted as the backlash assaulted him.

Duke Long did not attack him immediately, instead, he pushed Pine Crane Pavilion: “Go.”

A wave of dragon-shaped qi carried Pine Crane Pavilion and Fang Zheng as it rapidly retreated, attempting to escape the battlefield.



After the battlefield was broken, Duke Long returned to Eastern Sea, but he found that the ones who destroyed the battlefield were Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng.

These two were Eastern Sea rank eights, they were not allies, instead, Qi Sea Ancestor had genuine Eastern Sea aura.

Thus, Duke Long first made a move on Fang Zheng to send him away, so that he would have no reservations in the fight.

“What is going on?!” Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng saw this, they became stunned.

“Duke Long?!” They immediately recognized Duke Long’s identity, their hearts shook.

Duke Long was extremely famous, he was the master of Red Lotus Demon Venerable, he had great seniority. Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng had not thought that they would see Duke Long in this situation.

And more unexpectedly, Duke Long seemed to be ambushed by a person who seemed to be an Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal!

Heavens!

Since when did Eastern Sea have such an expert, he dared to ambush Duke Long!

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng looked at each other in disbelief, they had a similar thought: “Crap, we seemed to have disrupted this Eastern Sea friend’s plans, instead, we helped Central Continent’s Heavenly Court.”

“Friend, we...” Song Qi Yuan wanted to explain but Fang Yuan grunted as he flew like lightning towards Pine Crane Pavilion.

Duke Long saw this and became enraged: This person seemed like a gentleman and an old expert but he was still targeting Pine Crane Pavilion even now!

Thus, he gave chase.

Duke Long was very fast, he soon caught up to Fang Yuan.

The two began exchanging moves again.

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng took a few glances, they burst out in cold sweat.

“These are both monsters!”

“Since when did Eastern Sea have such an expert, he is able to fight Duke Long evenly?”

“Forget this, he is obviously targeting Pine Crane Pavilion, what does this Pine Crane Pavilion contain?”

“Even if there is nothing, we foiled his plans, we can take down this Immortal Gu House to explain our stance.”

Song and Shen quickly moved, getting away from the battlefield and grabbing Pine Crane Pavilion from the horizon.

“You cannot kill me, I am a prospective member of Heavenly Court, I am protected by Duke Long. I am Gu Yue Fang Zheng, I am also Fang Yuan’s brother!” At the moment of life and death, Fang Zheng, who was well experienced now, felt no sense of shame as he shouted, he did everything to preserve his life.

Song and Shen stopped their actions indeed, they looked at this mere rank six Gu Immortal in surprise.

Fang Zheng barely calmed himself down as he gulped: “Heavenly Court wants to use me as a weapon against Fang Yuan, they place great importance on me. You can use me as the hostage to extort resources and even Immortal Gu from Heavenly Court, I believe that Heavenly Court will give you a satisfactory amount.”

Shen Cong Sheng waved his hand as Fang Zheng immediately fainted, he looked towards Song Qi Yuan: “Brother Song, what do we do?”

Song Qi Yuan was frowning deeply: “It seems like we really cannot kill him. This situation is out of my expectations, let’s go back and watch the battle.”

“Alright.”

The two went back to the battlefield, they saw from afar that Duke Long had the upper hand, he was attacking fiercely. That Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal finally made a mistake when defending, he revealed a weakness.

Duke Long had gotten rid of the burden Fang Zheng, he immediately grasped this weakness, attacking fiercely.

Fang Yuan defended himself desperately.

“Oh no, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal is in danger.”

“What do we do? Do we reinforce him?”

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng hesitated.

They had interfered in this matter coincidentally, they were still very suspicious now. Unlike the previous life, they had no idea what was going on!

But at this moment, the two gasped.

It turned out that Fang Yuan had changed his tactic, he moved rapidly and approached Duke Long.

“Duke Long, you fell for it, have a taste of this.”

Immortal killer move — Steal Life!

Duke Long had a stunned expression as the killer move steal life landed on him directly.

It turned out that Fang Yuan had pretended to be heavily injured and exposed a weakness so that he could obtain this chance.

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng looked at each other, feeling the immense shock in each other's emotions.

Because after Duke Long got hit by this move, his condition became quite weird, he floated in the air without moving at all.

“Steal Life... why is it in your hands?” Duke Long looked at Fang Yuan.

# **Chapter 1837 - Duke Long Recruiting Fang Yuan**

## **1837 Duke Long Recruiting Fang Yuan**

Duke Long was hit by the killer move steal life!

But Fang Yuan's expression sank a little, because nothing really happened to Duke Long.

Back then when Fang Yuan attacked Thunder Ghost True Monarch in Lang Ya blessed land, the effect of Steal Life was immediate. In the previous life, when Lang Ya land spirit used steal life Immortal Gu, he also heavily injured Fairy Zi Wei, Chen Yi, and Feng Jiu Ge, while Thunder Ghost True Monarch died.

But this time, against Duke Long, this steal life killer move had no effect. This was out of Fang Yuan's expectations.

But soon, he recovered as he said casually: "Fang Yuan gave it to me, but it seems to have no effect on you, why is that?"

Duke Long said plainly: "I had once used the killer move heavenly dragon's last stand, my lifespan will continue to dwindle as my strength rises proportionately. This is like Gu Immortals who overuse lifespan extension

methods, lifespan Gu no longer work on them, my heavenly dragon's last stand also causes other lifespan extension methods to stop working on me."

"And Steal Life merely exerts influence on the dao marks corresponding to lifespan. This might be why it failed."

"So that's it." Fang Yuan nodded as he smiled: "Such tricks do not work on you, but it will still be quite effective against other Heavenly Court immortals, I will save it for the future."

Duke Long's expression turned dark, he was worried about this.

Even though the killer move steal life was ineffective on him, it was still very useful against most of the other Heavenly Court members.

In this current situation, Fang Yuan failed to defeat Duke Long because of Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng's interference. Duke Long was aware that this was likely the result of Qin Ding Ling's change luck, and also because of Fang Zheng's presence.

However, it would be extremely difficult if Duke Long tried to destroy steal life Immortal Gu.

Because he had fought Fang Yuan for a long time, he knew that this Qi Sea Ancestor was very strong, he was not like any other ordinary peak rank eight Gu Immortal. It was possible to defeat him, but trying to kill him would be very difficult.

Because he could not set up an immortal battlefield now, he could not trap Qi Sea Ancestor. At the same time, two Eastern Sea rank eights were watching near the periphery.

Thus, after getting hit by steal life, Duke Long did not make a move.

He spoke to Fang Yuan warmly: "Qi Sea Ancestor, as the saying goes, friends are often made after a fight. You cannot defeat me, but I cannot do anything to you either. The truth is, why do we even need to fight so intensely?"

Fang Yuan had a thought as he said: “Oh, Duke Long, you want a truce?”

He had deep wisdom path attainment, he could easily understand Duke Long’s intentions, he felt a bit of admiration internally.

“Duke Long was ambushed by me and took a beating in the fight earlier. He has such a great status and seniority, his strength is also at the peak, but he has no arrogance at all, he remained calm and observed the situation with clarity. Once he understood that a truce was more advantageous, he immediately stopped the fight. This person truly has terrifying self-control.”

Even though he was thinking about this, Fang Yuan spoke something different: “This is because Heavenly Court came to disturb and provoke me, I do not want to contest with anyone, I cultivate in seclusion, but your Heavenly Court is too greedy, you want to devour all five regions and unify the world. My existence itself was your biggest obstacle, therefore, you used a devious scheme to plot against me, and also gathered a large number of rank eights to encircle and attack me.”

Duke Long heard this as he felt helpless.

He felt maligned, Heavenly Court had done no such thing as of this moment. In fact, this was the first time he had heard of Qi Sea Ancestor!

But he had no words to rebuke him.

Because it was likely that Heavenly Court would do this in the future.

“Let’s not discuss the fact that this could be Fang Yuan’s lie.” Duke Long nodded: “Even if this is true, that happened in the previous life. Looking at the River of Time, it is a matter at the downstream, it has not happened yet. In that case, since we know about it, why don’t we change it?”

Fang Yuan laughed mockingly: “Haha, did I hear wrongly? Isn’t your Heavenly Court proclaiming to be the leader of the righteous path, you defend heaven’s will and try all means to repair fate? You actually want to change the future, isn’t that trying to change fate itself?”

Fang Yuan pretended to be unaware, this was a crafty accusation.

Duke Long smiled: “Heavenly Court does defend the Heavenly Dao, we want to repair fate Gu. But this Heavenly Dao is the Heavenly Dao that wants humanity to rule, this fate is the fate Gu that defends the human race. Qi Sea Ancestor, we do not have a huge grudge between us, we can coexist in peace. I will represent Heavenly Court here, we can make an alliance of mutual non-interference!”

Duke Long spoke solemnly and with great sincerity.

At the edge of the battlefield, the two Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals heard this and their expressions changed.

Shen Cong Sheng gasped in dismay while Song Qi Yuan also had an ugly expression.

Originally, after seeing that Eastern Sea had someone like Qi Sea Ancestor who could fight Duke Long alone without being suppressed, they were very happy.

In the five regions, Eastern Sea had the most abundant resources but the Gu Immortals were not united, their battle strength varied greatly among each other.

With the currently moving earth veins, new Earth Trenches were forming all the time, the five regional walls were weakening and the five regions were merging into one, this was no secret to anyone now.

Once the five regions merge into one, the other four regions would face the intense threat of Central Continent.

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng were both first supreme elders that were rank eight Gu Immortals, they had great authority and could clearly see the threats of the future.

In this situation, if Qi Sea Ancestor went against Heavenly Court, it would greatly benefit Eastern Sea’s super forces.



Firstly, Qi Sea Ancestor had outstanding battle strength, he was on par with Duke Long, when Heavenly Court invades Eastern Sea, he would be a huge threat to them.

Secondly, Qi Sea Ancestor was a secluded cultivator, he had not shown up after so many years, it showed that he had no ambition, because he was alone, he could definitely coexist with all the super forces in Eastern Sea.

Finally, Qi Sea Ancestor clearly cultivated qi path, this path had been on the decline for many years, why would any super force in Eastern Sea cultivate qi path primarily? Thus, in terms of resources, there was no conflict.

“Alliance with Heavenly Court?” Fang Yuan pretended to be stunned, he stopped his actions as he suppressed his aura and did not make a move.

Duke Long said energetically: “Qi Sea, our conflict can definitely be resolved peacefully. Regarding your potential future losses, we, Heavenly Court can also compensate you.”

Duke Long was an experienced person, he spoke frankly and had great magnanimity, his concern was regarding the big picture.

“You can’t!” Shen Cong Sheng could not control himself as he shouted, flying over quickly.

Song Qi Yuan followed behind him, saying: “Heavenly Court has a deep foundation, their so-called compensation is nothing to them. Right now, they have grand ambitions, they just want to stabilize this situation now, senior, you must not trust them.”

“That’s right senior! We were rash earlier and ruined your plans, we regret it deeply now.” Shen Cong Sheng said again.

“Furthermore, alliance agreements are bullshit, any agreement can be broken given enough time or if they pay a huge price. Senior cultivates qi path instead of information path, but Heavenly Court is different, they cannot be trusted.” Song Qi Yuan added.

The two of them spoke like juniors because they saw Fang Yuan's incredible strength.

But why would Fang Yuan agree in the first place! He was merely stalling for time now, but it seemed that these two Eastern Sea immortals were more anxious than him.

Fang Yuan smiled internally, he knew what these two were thinking with just a thought.

Duke Long nodded: "Indeed, at our level, agreements cannot restrict us. However, friend Qi Sea has steal life, right? You must know its value, with this move, you have Heavenly Court's weakness in your grasp. This is the foundation of our alliance. With this restricting us, why would we break our agreement?"

Once he said that, Fang Yuan assessed Duke Long deeply. In the previous life, Fang Yuan saw Duke Long's immense battle strength, but to think that he was so eloquent as well, he was not inferior to a wisdom path Gu Immortal.

According to Duke Long's understanding, steal life Immortal Gu and the killer move were both given to Qi Sea Ancestor by Fang Yuan to deal with him. But these things were now used by Duke Long to push for an alliance with Qi Sea Ancestor instead.

Fang Yuan was silent.

He knew about Duke Long's plans, he must be thinking that Qi Sea Ancestor was not an otherworldly demon, as long as fate Gu was repaired, he would pose no threat to them. He could even be recruited to become Heavenly Court's battle strength. This was the power of a sect system, how could clan based forces even attempt this? Normally, super forces could not recruit Qi Sea Ancestor, at his level that was equal to Duke Long, only the number one force, Heavenly Court, had the foundation to recruit him.

The two Eastern Sea immortals were extremely anxious.

They immediately spoke and pointed out that if fate Gu was repaired, due to the influence of heaven's will, Heavenly Court would be unbeatable. Heavenly Court had a huge ambition, they wanted to take over the world, senior should not be blinded by them.

These two Eastern Sea rank eights were also not stupid.

Fang Yuan smiled to himself, with the two of them here, he did not have to waste his own effort, he looked at Duke Long without speaking.

Duke Long looked at these two Eastern Sea immortals coldly, exerting pressure.

But Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng looked at him fearlessly.

Even though they knew that they were not Duke Long's match, in the previous life, they dared to fight against him over Dragon Palace, in this life, they also dared to face him.

This was not about courage, it was about benefits.

Qi Sea Ancestor's stance was too important, they needed to speak up now, the two Eastern Sea immortals were not wimps.

Shen Cong Sheng smiled coldly: "Lord Duke Long, why are you not letting us speak? Did we hit a nerve?"

Song Qi Yuan added: "Look senior, this is Heavenly Court's attitude, they are truly overbearing."

Duke Long snorted and laughed: "If not for Heavenly Court, why would there be the human race of today? Even if heaven's will exerts influence, how much influence can there be? Can it kill you directly? If heaven's will had such power, we would have unified the five regions long ago, why would we wait until now?"

"At this point, I might as well increase the offer. Friend Qi Sea, why don't you just join our Heavenly Court! After cultivating alone for so many years, you gained such strength, this shows your immense talent. But you must

know about the pains of a lone cultivator, let's just talk about tribulations. How many people in this world can actually help you with them? In Eastern Sea, is there anyone who can match you? You want to rely on these people for help? In fact, these two even ruined your qi path battlefield earlier."

"If you join Heavenly Court, I can help you with tribulations. Even without me, Heavenly Court's immortal graveyard has countless sleeping rank eight Gu Immortals. We also have the wisdom path great expert Fairy Zi Wei, who possesses Star Constellation Chessboard, she can help you with deductions. Qi path has already become a declining path, but Heavenly Court has Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable's inheritance. If you make any outstanding contributions, you can even obtain Primordial Origin's true inheritance in the future!"

# **Chapter 1838 - Fighting For Fang Yuan's Suppor**

## **1838 Fighting For Fang Yuan's Suppor**

Duke Long made a huge offer!

But nobody felt anything strange about it.

Fang Yuan's strength was apparent to everyone, his attitude could affect Eastern Sea and even Central Continent to a large extent.

This was his value! In the Gu cultivation world, strength was supreme!

Song Qi Yuan became increasingly anxious as he laughed coldly: "Lord Duke Long, you are truly shameless, earlier you were fighting to the death with Senior Qi Sea, but now you want to recruit him, who can believe your words?"

Duke Long smiled calmly: "To trust or not to trust, that is up to the individual. You two do not trust me because you are afraid that Heavenly Court will go after your benefits, you both have your own clans and territories, you own many sea areas and you want to protect your forces. But Qi Sea is alone, he is not like you."

"Laughable! Senior Qi Sea is an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, if he joins your Heavenly Court, he will definitely be isolated and pushed aside by you all!"

Shen Cong Sheng shouted.

“Isolated and pushed aside?” Duke Long looked at Shen Cong Sheng in disdain: “With this kind of small-minded thinking, no wonder Shen clan has not done anything significant after you led it for so many years. The sect system is extremely accepting of outsiders, we only look at talent. And what is that talk about Eastern Sea and Central Continent? The five regions are merging into one, every Gu Immortal in this world will belong to the same region in the future.”

Duke Long was eloquent, Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng were quickly rebuked until they were silent.

However, even if Duke Long made sense, would Fang Yuan possibly join Heavenly Court?

If Duke Long knew that he was talking to Fang Yuan himself, who knew what expression he would show.

Shen Cong Sheng wanted to speak again, he did not want to give up.

Duke Long snorted coldly, showing ruthlessness in his eyes: “Your tiny Shen clan wants a piece of this world? Ambition has to fit one’s strength. Otherwise, you will only attract trouble in the future. In fact, I can act as that trouble now and give your Shen clan what it deserves.”

Shen Cong Sheng was threatened by Duke Long, he was furious and shocked but kept his mouth shut. He was here to convince Qi Sea Ancestor, he did not want to implicate Shen clan in this, or become the eyesore of Heavenly Court. Otherwise, when the five regions chaotic war starts, Shen clan would become the cannon fodder, that was not what he wanted to see.

Song Qi Yuan knew that he could not show weakness at this moment, he clapped: “Such dominance, Duke Long, as a Central Continent Gu Immortal, you are threatening three rank eight Gu Immortals of Eastern Sea now, are you trying to take advantage of our good temperament?”

Fang Yuan also snorted coldly, he had an ugly expression: “I am familiar with this tone as well, in the future when your Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals attack me, you will use this tone as well, thinking that you are the supreme overlords of this world and that everyone should submit to you unconditionally.”

Once he said that, Shen Cong Sheng and Song Qi Yuan felt revitalized as they straightened their backs.

They did not know that Fang Yuan was helping them out a little and supporting them because he saw that they were currently intimidated by Duke Long’s overbearing aura.

This situation was quite peculiar now, earlier, Duke Long and Fang Yuan were fighting, but now, Eastern Sea’s two immortals and Duke Long were fighting for Fang Yuan’s support.

Fang Yuan was happy to see this situation, he stood in the middle and watched the two sides, he would step in to help whichever side was weaker when the chance occurred.

“This is a really rare opportunity. If I handle this well, maybe Shen clan and Song clan will become the eyesores of Heavenly Court after this.”

Fang Yuan decided to sow discord, he was going to use this chance to intensify the conflict between the two sides, so as to influence the entire Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world!

Duke Long saw that Qi Sea Ancestor’s expression turned dark, he felt a little annoyed.

He was not annoyed at Qi Sea Ancestor but Fang Yuan instead.

“This demon has ill intentions, he is most skilled at devious schemes, when he got Qi Sea Ancestor to help him, he must have aggravated the story!”

“Friend Qi Sea.” Duke Long thought about it and spoke: ” There is mutual benefit in us working together and mutual harm if we become enemies.

Many of these devious people are trying to sow discord and use you as their cannon fodder.”

He spoke with both a soft and hard stance, he was not promising rewards solely, he was also displaying Heavenly Court’s deep strength.

On the other hand, seeing that Qi Sea Ancestor spoke up for them, the two Eastern Sea rank eights thanked him while speaking ill of Heavenly Court, they were even more daring than earlier.

Fang Yuan stayed at the center, sowing discord as he watched the two sides accuse and blame each other.

After a while, they became more heated, their words were also more offensive.

Fang Yuan observed his expression and saw that Duke Long was getting impatient, he knew that he could not overdo it, he smiled with deep meaning: “Why would I not know what that Fang Yuan is planning? But that junior is quite interesting, he promised me many things, he was even willing to offer venerable true inheritances. Even though I cultivate qi path, I also have descendants inside my immortal aperture. It is always good to make preparations for them in advance.”

Fang Yuan was completely shameless, these true inheritances were his to begin with, he could say anything he wanted.

Duke Long heard this and realized, did Fang Yuan also try to recruit Qi Sea Ancestor?

But it was not surprising! This person was so powerful that in the absence of an Immortal Venerable, almost nobody could threaten him. Even Duke Long himself was only on par with him. Even though his killer moves were not very exquisite and he did not seem to have many qi path rank eight Immortal Gu, his dao marks were at an absurd number, it was truly a mystery how he managed to cultivate to this extent!



Duke Long did not know that Fang Yuan had deceived him again, he laughed: “Fang Yuan is merely someone who got lucky, he is a pawn of the venerables, they needed him in their arrangements so they gave him some benefits and made him slog for it. In terms of foundation, how can he compare to Heavenly Court?”

“Qi Sea, if you join Heavenly Court, you would not need to contribute your immortal aperture, you can keep it. Forget it, let’s not talk about joining Heavenly Court now, I just want to express my sincerity. In the future, if you want to join us, I will definitely invite you with open arms.”

“Let’s talk about the compensation. Since you cultivate qi path, my Heavenly Court is willing to provide a batch of rank eight qi path resources that are extinct in the outside world, as well as qi path inheritances that are all exceptional for you to peruse.”

Duke Long decided to take it slowly.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light when he heard about the qi path resources mentioned.

They were indeed extinct, only Heavenly Court could keep them until now from the Remote Antiquity Era.

Other forces could not compare with Heavenly Court in age, they would not have such treasures stored up.

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng saw that Fang Yuan was moved, they quickly called out: “Senior Qi Sea, do you know that Duke Long came to Eastern Sea secretly because he wants to obtain Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace. We just captured Gu Yue Fang Zheng earlier, we soul searched him and obtained a lot of information.”

“That’s right, Duke Long only wants to stabilize senior now and retrieve the crucial Immortal Gu House first. Once he completes his task, who knows what attitude he will have later.” Song Qi Yuan added fuel to the fire.

Fang Yuan was very happy internally: This Immortal Gu House, Dragon Palace, was rank eight, both Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng were very moved by it. They were even more anxious than him in wanting to stop Duke Long.

But on the surface, Fang Yuan had a stern expression, he said solemnly: “I know some information about this Dragon Palace matter. I have also obtained a venerable true inheritance from Fang Yuan, we made an agreement. Duke Long, stop here. If you want to express your sincerity, this is the best action to take. I will not pursue what happened in the future of the previous life, in fact, we can indeed have a truce in the future. Otherwise, even if I cannot defeat you, I will go visit Central Continent first.”

Duke Long snorted coldly, thinking in his heart: This Qi Sea Ancestor looks like he has a cool disposition and a sage-like demeanor, but he is actually so shameless in personality.

Fang Yuan said he wanted to visit Central Continent, but he was clearly not going to just ‘visit’ it. Duke Long did not question the possibility of this, because earlier, Fang Yuan focused all his attacks on Pine Crane Pavilion, it caused Duke Long to end up in a passive spot, he had to withstand the attacks.

Like how the two Eastern Sea immortals had their territories and were afraid of Heavenly Court’s threat, Central Continent’s Heavenly Court also had a great amount of territory, much more than Shen clan and Song clan, they were afraid of people like Qi Sea Ancestor who would be unrestrained and wreak havoc.

Qi Sea Ancestor was a lone cultivator, he was all alone without any territory holding him back, he could come and go as he pleased. And most importantly, he was very strong, Heavenly Court did not have any effective methods of dealing with him!

Other demonic path, lone immortals or even Fang Yuan (Heavenly Court thinks he has rank seven cultivation level) were not too threatening to Duke

Long. Because they were not strong enough, even if they joined forces, they were not Duke Long's match.

But Qi Sea Ancestor was different, after their encounter this time, Duke Long became very wary of him.

He had his trump card triple qi retraction, but would Qi Sea Ancestor lack a trump card?

He definitely had one!

Honestly speaking, reaching Qi Sea Ancestor's level as a lone immortal was extremely rare. Such a person would have a huge influence on the forces around him, even if he cultivated in seclusion, he was still a huge obstacle to Heavenly Court's domination.

According to Duke Long's mentality, such a person needed to be eliminated! Because they were too threatening to the repair of fate Gu!

Thus, when Fang Yuan lied that they would attack him in the future, Duke Long believed it in his heart.

But now, due to Fang Yuan's interference, Qi Sea Ancestor was alerted.

And Duke Long did not want to give up on the Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace either.

What should he do?

Duke Long felt a headache.

He thought that if he fought against Qi Sea Ancestor, Fang Yuan would want to see that happen, or rather, that was Fang Yuan's scheme all along. But if he stops fighting against Qi Sea Ancestor now, should he really give up Dragon Palace?

Impossible!

“Qi Sea, those things earlier are just Heavenly Court’s compensation.”

Duke Long said: “Next, we can talk about our transaction involving Dragon Palace. That demon Fang Yuan is too devious and scheming, he paid a huge price to get you to block us, it was a good move! But he is just a rank seven Gu Immortal, it is too laughable that he thinks he can toy with us rank eight Gu Immortals.”

As he said this, Duke Long’s tone turned solemn: “Whatever resources he gave you, our Heavenly Court can give you more! Furthermore, I do not need you to take action, I just want you to watch by the sidelines.”

“Oh? Are you for real?” Fang Yuan showed a slightly stunned expression.

“Absolutely!” Duke Long said with certainty.

“Senior Qi Sea...” The two Eastern Sea immortals wanted to interject but Fang Yuan waved his hand, stopping them from speaking.

Fang Yuan looked at Duke Long as he smiled with a slightly mocking expression: “Duke Long, Fang Yuan gave me a venerable true inheritance.”

# **Chapter 1839 - Using Venerable True Inheritance as Bargaining Chip**

## **1839 Using Venerable True Inheritance as Bargaining Chip**

“Venerable true inheritance?” Eastern Sea’s two immortals stared with wide eyes.

Duke Long gritted his teeth: “May I ask which one?”

“Spectral Soul’s true inheritance.” Fang Yuan said immediately: “If you don’t believe me, I can show you a portion of the content.”

Duke Long pondered for a moment before nodding: “I believe you.”

At the same time, he thought: This demon Fang Yuan is truly crafty! Spectral Soul was already captured by Heavenly Court, in the future, we will obtain his Spectral Soul true inheritance as well, it is not an issue. This true inheritance has very little value to Fang Yuan now, so he used it for a transaction. But Qi Sea Ancestor does not have Spectral Soul in his possession, it is normal that he took the offer.

Fang Yuan continued: “Duke Long, if you want me to step aside, are you going to offer a venerable true inheritance too?”

Duke Long gritted his teeth again: “Of course.”

“Really?” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly: “Honestly speaking, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable is the person I admire the most.”

Duke Long could feel his lips twitching, he thought to himself: This old man is also really devious, if he really admires Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable so much, why would he fight so ruthlessly earlier, he even used Steal Life, he totally wanted to kill me! But he cultivates qi path, it is logical that he wants Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, that can be my bargaining chip.

“Friend, you may not know, the bulk of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance lies in creating Heavenly Court grotto-heaven, the rest of the content is quite little, due to many changing eras, they are no longer usable in the present world.” Duke Long purposely said.

Fang Yuan frowned as he showed some disappointment: “That means you cannot give me Primordial Origin’s true inheritance? Then what can Heavenly Court offer? Star Constellation’s or Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance?”

Regardless of which, they were useful to Fang Yuan.

Duke Long chuckled, he gave Fang Yuan some hope, replying ambiguously: “We can discuss this.”

The two Eastern Sea immortals looked at each other, they felt troubled, Duke Long was very ambitious, in order to recruit Qi Sea Ancestor, he actually decided to offer a venerable true inheritance!

And the worst thing was that neither Shen clan nor Song clan could make such an offer.

Duke Long was the leader of Heavenly Court, he had abundant wealth, he could directly use resources or venerable true inheritances to ‘flood’ Qi Sea Ancestor, he wanted to ‘overwhelm’ him.

This was the foundation that Heavenly Court had accumulated over countless eras, Song clan and Shen clan were truly unable to match even a small fraction of it.

Fang Yuan suddenly felt that Duke Long was actually quite likable. His style of doing things made Fang Yuan want to give a thumbs up.

He was truly straightforward!

Immediately, Fang Yuan and Duke Long went into a deep discussion.

He wanted to stall time for the dragonman clone anyway.

The two Eastern Sea immortals could only watch, they felt anxiety but also helplessness.

Fang Yuan did not forget them of course, during the conversation, he continued to talk to them and allowed them to maintain hope.

After he did that for many times, Duke Long noticed the problem, his gaze turned deep and dark.

He knew that this Qi Sea Ancestor was using these two Eastern Sea rank eights to vie for more benefits! But it was not a problem, as long as Qi Sea Ancestor was willing to negotiate, it was a good sign.

“But Gu Yue Fang Zheng is in Shen Cong Sheng’s hands, this is a small problem, I need to take him back.” Duke Long conversed with Fang Yuan while thinking about this as well.

Fang Yuan was also thinking about Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

Earlier, Eastern Sea’s two immortals had mentioned Gu Yue Fang Zheng, but Fang Yuan’s acting was too good, he acted like did not mind it at all, he was a complete outsider that showed no flaws.

But Fang Yuan had his own thoughts: “This dear little brother of mine was not just saved by Heavenly Court, he was even nurtured into becoming a Gu Immortal? Very interesting!”

“There must be a reason why Heavenly Court is placing such importance on him. I do not know the exact reason but it is not a problem, I will take him away later and directly kill him.”

Long ago, Fang Yuan had wanted to refine Fang Zheng into Blood Deity, but because of Heavenly Court’s pressure and due to many reasons, Fang Zheng was left to live in Lang Ya blessed land for a long time.

In the end, an unexpected mishap occurred and Fang Zheng got saved by Feng Jiu Ge!

This was not really a mistake but since Fang Yuan found him now, he decided to settle it for good.

Fang Zheng was not very important to Fang Yuan, but since Heavenly Court thought highly of him, Fang Yuan would kill him. This was Fang Yuan’s usual vigilance.

As for blood path, he had not many options back then, he needed to raise his battle strength. But times were different now, Fang Yuan’s interest in developing blood path was very low.

As long as the Demon Judgment Board existed, if he cultivated blood path, he would be giving Heavenly Court information on where he was.

Sometimes, Fang Yuan guessed that in the previous life, he cultivated blood path likely because of the influence of heaven’s will, it was a method to trap him.

Thankfully, he had always been cautious, he did not attempt to continue using his previous life’s signature path for a shortcut.

The more Duke Long talked, the more energetic he got.

He could tell that Fang Yuan was very sincere, he really had a lot of interest in the venerable true inheritance.

“Indeed, this Qi Sea Ancestor has incredible strength, in this world, maybe only venerable true inheritances are of interest to him. Eastern Sea actually



had such a person, I need to properly investigate his background after I return.”

Qi Sea Ancestor was actually Fang Yuan, and not only did Fang Yuan want Heavenly Court’s venerable true inheritances, he also wanted to kill Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

If Duke Long were to know of this, he might just cough out blood on the spot.

Dragon Palace dream realm.

The study room had a heavy atmosphere.

Fang Yuan’s clone who was acting as Wu Shuai looked at his father with an ugly expression, he asked: “Are we really going to give ownership of Censure Peak to that Fan Ji? I clearly won the contest, he was the one who tried to steal it. If I did not hold back, he would have died already.”

The dragonman Gu Immortal shook his head: “Censure Peak involves huge benefits and complex relationships, Black Heaven Temple is refusing to give in. And worse is that even though we contacted Calligraphy Pavilion Lady and Green Ant Ascetic, these two are not helping us to exert pressure on them.”

“Damn it!” Wu Shuai clenched his fists: “I am the last disciple of Green Ant Ascetic, but now that I am facing this problem, this master is showing no care or concern.”

“And that Calligraphy Pavilion Lady is even worse! I am her son-in-law while Fan Ji is the guy who harmed her daughter, yet she is not even saying a word.”

The dragonman Gu Immortal sighed: “How can we influence rank eight Gu Immortals? This was all my fault, I had been too naive in the past. The truth is, did Green Ant Ascetic and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady really not know about our intentions? They were just playing dumb.”

“That’s why, father!” Wu Shuai stared at the dragonman Gu Immortal, his eyes shining with brilliance: “Only our race’s own rank eight Gu Immortal is dependable. Our dragonman race has been relying on the humans and developing until today, wasn’t it because of Ancestor Duke Long’s influence?”

Wu Shuai’s father nodded: “My son, you are right. But rank eight Gu Immortals are just too rare, even though our dragonman race is stronger than the humans, we lack their special spirit. Right now, we have many rank seven Gu Immortals, but we do not even have a single rank eight Gu Immortal other than our ancestor.”

Wu Shuai had a bright gaze: “That is why we cannot wait any longer. External rank eight Gu Immortals are not dependable while we are also unable to produce any, we need to use an Immortal Gu House as a substitute.”

The dragonman Gu Immortal sighed again, he shook his head: “Immortal Gu House? We have thought of that in the past, but to create a rank seven Immortal Gu House would require too many resources, we cannot afford it. And our dragonman race’s current strength is already causing a lot of commotion, more and more human Gu Immortals are onto us. Conspiracy theories against dragonmen are also increasingly common, in this situation, if we still build an Immortal Gu House, wouldn’t they lose their minds?”

“Father!” Wu Shuai stared with wide eyes as he said loudly: “Are we not going to build our Immortal Gu House just because of some resources and rumors behind our backs?”

“Isn’t it enough? My son, our dragonman race relies on the humans, this relationship is our foundation, we cannot be rash. If we really build an Immortal Gu House and ruin the relationship, not to mention a rank seven Immortal Gu House, we would not even have hope of building a rank six Immortal Gu House. Sigh, all these years, I have been in this position and dealing with them. You will not understand the feeling of ostracism.” The dragonman Gu Immortal sighed continuously.

Wu Shuai felt some disappointment, he argued: “Regardless of the difficulties, we need to do this. Ordinary rank seven Immortal Gu Houses are not enough, we need to create a rank eight Immortal Gu House. That is the only way to establish the foundation of our race!”

“Rank eight Immortal Gu House? Hahaha, my son, I am very happy to see that you have such drive. But some things cannot be rushed, progress takes time. Sigh, let’s forget about Censure Peak.” The dragonman Gu Immortal waved his hand.

Wu Shuai thought about it before nodding: “I guess we have no choice.”

Scenes after scenes occurred, Fang Yuan’s clone wanted to stall for time so that his main body could save him, but his main body was stalling for time so his clone could obtain Dragon Palace.

Dragon Palace was like quicksand, Fang Yuan’s clone was helpless, he gradually sank and became unable to save himself.

It was almost as if he had become Wu Shuai, he was experiencing all of these scenes personally.

After the matter of Censure Peak, Wu Shuai finally realized the reality. His master Green Ant Ascetic was unreliable, his mother-in-law Calligraphy Pavilion Lady was also unreliable, even his own father, the dragonman Gu Immortal, was weak-willed, he was also unreliable.

He could only rely on himself!

Wu Shuai had this realization, he started to strive for strength and excellence.

He had great talent and incredible aptitude, with ample hard work and network resources, not only did his cultivation level soar, a portion of the dragonmen also became stronger, they became the most prominent branch of the dragonman race.

On the day Wu Shuai became rank seven, he also became a higher-up of the dragonman race, the youngest supreme elder with real authority!

# Chapter 1840 - Dragon Cour

## 1840 Dragon Cour

Wu Shuai was smart and resolute, he had great foresight and a strong personality, he was not weak-willed like most of the dragonman Gu Immortals. Due to his leadership, the dragonman race became stronger and stronger.

Secretly, he gathered resources and did not forget about the plan to create a rank eight Immortal Gu House.

But good times did not last long, the strengthening of the dragonman race made the humans more antagonistic towards them, they started to use more underhanded methods. Many people were very jealous, in fact, even Wu Shuai himself admitted that much of the reason why the dragonman race was able to get stronger was because they occupied the human Gu Immortals' benefits.

But due to Duke Long, the human Gu Immortals would not find them for trouble over many things.

On Duke Long's birthday, there was a huge celebration.

The red 'longevity' character written in the hall was very conspicuous.

Duke Long sat at the main seat, surrounded by dragonmen.

One by one, dragonman Gu Immortals walked up and gifted the presents that they had prepared meticulously.

“Father, I wish you great blessings and longevity.” A dragonman Gu Immortal gave a bundle of white python grass.

This grass was an immemorial desolate plant, it contained dragon essence and had the shape of a white python with exquisite scales and dragon horns.

“Father, I wish you eternal prosperity and a long life ahead.” Another dragonman Gu Immortal offered a soft jade flower.

“Father, I wish you...” Wu Shuai’s father also appeared.

Duke Long had a solemn expression as he nodded, his attendants beside him collected all of these gifts for him.

After his sons had finished, his grandchildren came up.

At this time, Duke Long’s expression also became gentler, he smiled warmly.

“Grandfather, I am here to offer birthday wishes! I wish you blessings as deep as Eastern Sea, and longevity as tall as Southern Border mountains. This is a desolate beast that I hunted personally for you, I hope grandfather likes it.” A dragonman youngster half-knelt on the ground as he held a plate in front of him, there was a tiny seahorse on the plate.

“This is the desolate beast happiness seahorse, it is very fast and hard to kill.”

“Seventh young master only has rank six cultivation level, it is very hard for him to kill it, but to think he actually captured it alive!”

“I heard that in order to capture this happiness seahorse, seventh young master spent a month at the bottom of the sea without moving, his filial piety is truly touching.”

The surrounding people discussed, many human Gu Immortals also participated in this joyous celebration.

Little Seventh was Duke Long's favorite grandson, he smiled kindly as he held the plate carrying the seahorse, he said: "Good, good, good, Little Seventh, I will happily accept this gift."

But when it was Wu Shuai's turn, Duke Long retracted his smile as he looked at Wu Shuai: "In the current situation, you are the most accomplished grandson I have, but remember that going too far could end up being detrimental."

"Yes, grandfather." Wu Shuai respectfully walked away.

That night of the celebration, Duke Long asked someone to secretly call Wu Shuai to his study room.

"Return that South Flower Island to them." Duke Long said openly.

Wu Shuai was slightly shocked, he forced a smile: "Grandfather, you may not know, I had won this South Flower Island fair and square, I plan to make this island a home for our dragonmen."

Duke Long had a solemn expression, a sharp light flashed in his eyes, it made Wu Shuai feel a little pain on his face: "Wu Shuai, don't think that nobody can see through your little tricks! South Flower Island belonged to Wind Cloud Manor but you snatched it through a scheme. What are you trying to do? Lead your dragonmen properly, isn't it good to stay in the sect? Why must you relocate and move all the way to South Flower Island? Tell me, what is it that you want?"

Wu Shuai held his breath, after a moment, he replied: "Grandfather, I do not have much ambition, I just want my people to have a better life."

"A better life? You mean a greater ambition!" Duke Long's voice resounded.

Wu Shuai shuddered as he confessed: "Grandfather, even if this is ambition, so what? Shouldn't we have ambition? Do we not have the right to strive for a better life?"

“Why must we stay here? Grandfather, do you not know of how those human Gu Immortals ostracize and take advantage of us?”

“What ostracism? How are they taking advantage of you? All these years, I have only heard about your actions. Do you know why I like Little Seventh the most? Because he sees the world’s beauty, he is kind from the depths of his heart, he has never considered the difference between human and dragonman. But you? You use my name to act rashly in the outside world, you devour people’s territory and take your sect’s benefits for yourself, quickly stop all these actions!” Duke Long shouted coldly.

“Grandfather, if these human Gu Immortals did not treat us like this, why would we act like this?”

“What human, what dragonman, dragonman is human to begin with, what difference is there?!” Duke Long chided.

“If there is no racial difference, what are these dragon horns on my head? What is this dragon tail on my back?” Wu Shuai said angrily, he shouted: “Grandfather, you were a human who turned into a dragonman, most of your life was spent as a human, you have only been a dragonman for a short period of time.”

“But us?”

“Grandfather, have you thought about it! We were born as dragonman, we were born with horns on our heads and a tail on our backs.”

“I have been educated by my parents from a young age, they told us that we originated from humans, but when I was little, the kids around me mocked me for my appearance, they ostracized me, they pulled my tail and scales. All these tell me that I am not part of this human race!”

“After growing up, I realized that not just the kids, even those human adults treat us differently, they are just more subtle with it.”

“If I fail, they will say that it is normal for dragonmen to lose to humans. If I succeed, they will say: A dragonman was able to reach this stage? Did he



use any tricks or schemes?”

“Those humans always think they are the greatest beings, they look down on dragonman as an inferior race. How dare they?”

“Man is the spirit of all living beings, but us dragonmen are not inferior. We are born with enslavement path dao marks, our body physique far surpasses these humans, if human Gu Masters do not use Gu worms, their punches and kicks cannot even hurt the dragon scales on our bodies. And even more special is our long lifespan, all of these humans die so quickly compared to us.”

“So many Gu Immortals become dragonmen because they want to extend their lifespan. They have clearly abandoned their human identity but they still look down on dragonmen, this is merely the fault of these decadent ideas of the past.”

“Enough!” Duke Long slammed the table, interrupting Wu Shuai, his face was extremely dark.

“Not enough.” Wu Shuai’s tone became calm, he looked at Duke Long bravely, enduring those dragon eyes that were emitting great pressure: “Grandfather, you are the one who created the dragonman lifespan extension method, without you, the dragonmen will not exist, you are the ancestor of the dragonmen, why must you constantly side with those humans? We are your family! I will not return South Flower Island even if I die. Grandfather, if you insist on it, then you will have to end my life first.”

After saying that, Wu Shuai did not look at Duke Long, he turned around and left, walking out of the room.

Duke Long did not stand up to stop him, he remained seated on his chair, having complex emotions.

“Sigh... my descendants are all growing up, they have their own ambitions now.”

“But they have never placed the big picture of humanity in their hearts.”

“Was I negligent in my education? Or have the dragonmen already formed into a flood, I was just the person who pushed open the floodgates?”

Wu Shuai schemed against Wind Cloud Manor, after realizing it, they went to Duke Long to settle this, wanting to take back South Flower Island, but Wu Shuai did not listen, he insisted on his actions.

Wind Cloud Manor did not give up, they used all sorts of methods to find trouble with Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai dealt with whatever they threw at him, he maintained stability with much difficulty. Duke Long did not do anything to help his grandson, but the rest of the dragonman Gu Immortals did something to help be it secretly or openly.

Due to their help and Wind Cloud Manor being wary of Duke Long, they did not act too aggressively, Wu Shuai succeeded in relocating all of his people to South Flower Island to live.

But the matter regarding South Flower Island did not end here.

Even after a hundred years, Wind Cloud Manor did not give up on it, they continued to act and try to reclaim South Flower Island.

Wu Shuai dealt with all of these problems with impeccable methods, Wind Cloud Manor was unable to succeed.

“After a hundred years, my plan finally comes to fruition!” On this day, Wu Shuai looked at the Immortal Gu House in front of him as he shed tears of excitement and joy.

Back then, he snatched South Flower Island because he needed a secretive location to build the Immortal Gu House.

Wu Shuai’s father stood beside him, having an incredulous expression: “You actually succeeded! My son, you are more capable than me.”

“Even though the sects have been suppressing and isolating my South Flower Island these years, I have been gaining fortuitous encounters

constantly, I had a stream of resources. At the same time, with the help and contribution of the dragonman Gu Immortals, after a hundred years, this rank seven Immortal Gu House has finally been created.” Wu Shuai smiled: “Give me a few hundred more years, I might be able to make this a rank eight Immortal Gu House.”

“This has not been named?” Wu Shuai’s father asked.

“The Gu Immortals all have their own suggestions, but as the creator, I overruled all suggestions and gave this the name — Dragon Court!” Saying so, Wu Shuai’s voice became louder as his eyes shined with bright light.

“Dragon Court?” Wu Shuai’s father heard this and his expression changed: “Isn’t this too... inappropriate?”

“Hahaha, why is it inappropriate? It complements Heavenly Court!” Wu Shuai laughed loudly.

“Son, you should reconsider it. In the eyes of these human Gu Immortals, Dragon Court is not a name that complements Heavenly Court, it is clearly a rebellious sign.”

“Hehe.” Wu Shuai laughed coldly: “They can think what they want.”

“You can’t say that, humans are still the overlords of the five regions.”

“Father.” Wu Shuai raised his hand: “Say no more, I have made up my mind, this will be called — Dragon Court!”

# **Chapter 1841 - Renowned in the World, Promising a Future**

## **1841 Renowned in the World, Promising a Future**

Eastern Sea dream realm.

An intense battle was reaching its climax.

Song Tao Zi was covered in injuries but his aura was strong, firmly suppressing Wu Shuai.

“Wu Shuai, you did not stop my killer move, that was your greatest mistake, now lose!” Song Tao Zi shouted as he raised his head, his body glowing in a dense green light.

The green light covered Song Tao Zi and spread rapidly, traces of green light resembling the leaves of a pine tree. Layers and layers stacked as they swept towards Wu Shuai in an unceasing manner.

Wu Shuai did not move, he continued to lie in the deep pit, seemingly accepting defeat.

The observing Gu Immortals saw this as they all sighed.

“Wu Shuai is going to lose.”

“That is natural! Song Tao Zi is a peak rank seven of Wind Cloud Manor, his battle strength is definitely top three within Central Continent’s rank seven Gu Immortals. Wu Shuai wanted to challenge him, he was truly out of his league.”

“He is just a dragonman Gu Immortal, it was amazing that he could fight to this extent.”

“Hehe, so what? Wu Shuai had already set the agreement with Wind Cloud Manor before the battle, this would decide the ownership of South Flower Island. This defeat is really a shame. His hundred years of hard work is going to end up wasted.”

“That’s right, I heard that Wu Shuai and his dragonman comrades have managed South Flower Island very well, it is full of resources. Now, Wind Cloud Manor is going to gain from it.”

“You can’t say that, back then Wu Shuai used a devious scheme to take South Flower Island from Wind Cloud Manor. This is just retribution, he deserves it.”

The humans Gu Immortals were happily watching by the side, enjoying his misery.

Tai Qin watched at a corner alone, her eyes were filled with tears as she muttered worriedly: “Darling Wu...”

Meanwhile, those dragonman Gu Immortals had defeated expressions.

Only a few of the ones who knew the secret had excited and expectant expressions.

“Brother, use it, shock the entire world!” The former dragonman youngster Huang Wei idolized and admired Wu Shuai with all his heart, he yelled internally.

At the next moment, looking at the green light that spread towards him like an endless tsunami, Wu Shuai smiled lightly.

“You finally used this move, Song Tao Zi, do you know that I have been waiting for this for a long time.” Wu Shuai laughed.

“What do you mean?”

“Hmph, he is putting up a front.”

“Can a mere dragonman Gu Immortal like him accomplish a comeback?”

“This move is Song Tao Zi’s famous killer move — Green Heaven Pine Wave! In Central Continent, no, in the entire five regions, how many rank seven Gu Immortals can actually successfully defend against this move?”

However, at the next moment, a huge castle appeared from nowhere.

Wu Shuai went inside it and charged up while manipulating this palace.

The palace soared towards the sky, up into the clouds.

“What is this?!”

“An Immortal Gu House!”

“I have never seen an Immortal Gu House like this, did Wu Shuai create it himself?”

“Most likely. This battle has been announced to the world, both sides can use their own possessions. Since Wu Shuai is using it, this must be his according to the rules!”

“Oh heaven, the dragonmen have an Immortal Gu House now, and it is a rank seven Immortal Gu House.”

“Look, this palace is completely unaffected, it is as if green heaven pine wave does not exist, it easily carved out a pathway. This is not an ordinary rank seven Immortal Gu House, it can definitely resist rank eight existences!”

Everyone gasped.

Song Tao Zi was furious and shocked.

He looked at his proudest killer move being treated as harmless air, his heart sank to rock bottom.

Wu Shuai was currently using Dragon Court!

Dragon Court approached as Wu Shuai's voice resounded: "Song Tao Zi, kneel down and beg for mercy, I will spare your life."

Song Tao Zi had a pale expression, he said in a rage: "Don't even think about it! You, a mere dragonman, dare to humiliate me?!"

Even though he was in a desperate situation, Song Tao Zi refused to back down in this fight.

"Have mercy!" The surrounding Wind Cloud Manor Gu Immortals saw this and quickly shouted.

Within Dragon Court, Wu Shuai heard his words and laughed coldly. His dragon pupils burst out with killing intent as he used Dragon Court to directly charge over.

"Ah—!" Song Tao Zi could not dodge in time, he screamed pitifully as he was crushed to death by Dragon Court!

"What? Song Tao Zi died!"

"He actually killed Song Tao Zi! Is he trying to cause a war?"

"A dragonman Gu Immortal killed a member of our human race, what is he trying to do?"

All sorts of furious emotions erupted, the dragonman Gu Immortals present turned pale while Huang Wei had a look of nervousness.

At this moment, Dragon Court floated in the sky, Wu Shuai shouted from within: "Shut up! My battle with Song Tao Zi was a life-and-death battle,

this was announced to the world long before the fight. If anyone has any objections, come out now and face me — receive your death!”

Instantly, the surroundings went silent.

In the next scene of the dream realm, it was the celebratory banquet.

There were a hundred tables here filled with delicious food and wine, everyone was happily celebrating.

The spotlight was naturally on Wu Shuai who was sitting at the main table!

“Congratulations to brother, after this battle, nobody will contest South Flower Island anymore, Wind Cloud Manor also lost a powerful general.” Huang Wei offered a toast, he was filled with excitement and admiration.

Wu Shuai patted his shoulders: “Brother, this was not all due to me, you have credit too.”

“Brother...” Huang Wei was choked with tears.

“Brother Shuai, this battle made you renowned in the world, I will congratulate you now.” Tai Qin raised her wine cup, she spoke normally but her tone was filled with affection.

“Junior sister, thank you for the concern.” Wu Shuai knew what Tai Qin was worried about in her heart.

Thus, he shouted loudly: “My battle with Song Tao Zi was a battle of life-and-death, the world can attest to that, whoever dies has to accept their fate! Song Tao Zi was a good opponent, he deserves the glory of dying in a heroic combat. I would like to assume that Wind Cloud Manor has no objections?”

Wind Cloud Manor had naturally sent an envoy to this banquet, it was an ordinary rank six Gu Immortal.

Song Tao Zi was killed by Wu Shuai’s insistence, Wind Cloud Manor also lost South Flower Island, but for their righteous reputation, and to show



their magnanimity, they still sent an envoy to attend the banquet.

Wu Shuai's words made this envoy's face turn red, he hesitated before standing up and calling out: "Is my Wind Cloud Manor a small sect? Since this was agreed upon, we would definitely not go against it!"

"Please take a seat, envoy." Wu Shuai waved his hand, laughing loudly.

The envoy gritted his teeth in anger, he wanted to blow up but there were many people looking at him, because the sect's reputation was at stake, he had to sit down.

"Friend Wu Shuai, I am an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, Gu Liang, I watched your battle with Song Tao Zi and how you overwhelmed him with power, I offer you a toast." A male Gu Immortal wearing a robe and crown walked out.

He called himself Gu Liang, he was a middle aged man but had a smile that gave off the air of a person of authority.

Wu Shuai felt overjoyed internally: This battle really made him renowned in the world, even Eastern Sea Gu Immortals came to attend his banquet.

"Calligraphy Pavilion Lady has arrived—!" At this moment, the doorman shouted loudly.

The hall went into a commotion, a rank eight Gu Immortal had just shown up in this event after all.

Calligraphy Pavilion Lady did not come alone, she brought her daughter along, it was Wu Shuai's wife-in-name, Shu Jiu Ling.

"My son-in-law, congratulations on your victory." Calligraphy Pavilion Lady smiled lightly, even though she said just one simple sentence, everyone's expressions changed.

"Mother-in-law, my virtuous wife, I have been saving seats for you, please come and sit." Wu Shuai smiled as he invited them, feeling surprised internally.

From Wu Shuai's perspective, he would definitely invite Calligraphy Pavilion Lady for such an important event, at least on the surface, he would always do his part as a good son-in-law.

But the truth was, he did not expect Calligraphy Pavilion Lady to come.

But now, she came personally and even brought her daughter along, this was out of Wu Shuai's expectations.

"Lord Green Ant Ascetic has arrived—!" After Calligraphy Pavilion Lady got seated, another rank eight Gu Immortal arrived.

This was Wu Shuai's master, but for the last few decades, Wu Shuai had not been in contact with him.

Wu Shuai also sent him an invitation, of course.

"Disciple greets master!" Wu Shuai quickly went to greet him.

"My disciple, I have come to visit you." Green Ant Ascetic looked at Wu Shuai as he nodded in praise: "Mm, you are quite energetic."

"Master, please take a seat." Wu Shuai had an excited expression, he was not pretending, it was his true emotion.

The influence and gains from this battle were far beyond his expectations!

After the banquet, Wu Shuai sent off the two rank eights but Calligraphy Pavilion Lady left her daughter Shu Jiu Ling behind.

"You two have been separated for so long, how can that continue? You should stay together." Calligraphy Pavilion Lady said in a plain tone, but she had deep meaning behind it.

Shu Jiu Ling did not speak, she was not impatient as always, she was very quiet now.

But at night, Wu Shuai left her in an empty room: "My virtuous wife, take a rest first, I need to settle some work first."

He was still so polite, it was the same as their first encounter.

Shu Jiu Ling was silent for a moment before nodded obediently: “Go and do your work, husband.”

Wu Shuai was not busy at all, he was meeting with Tai Qin.

“Junior sister, I have come.”

“Brother Shuai, I thought you were not coming today.”

“How could that be? You need to know how important you are in my heart, that woman cannot even compare to a strand of your hair.”

Tai Qin was very happy when she heard this, after they enjoyed each other’s company for some time, Tai Qin asked worriedly: “Brother Shuai, I am still quite worried, you killed Wind Cloud Manor’s signature rank seven expert, would they let this go?”

“Of course they will not let this go, but so what?” Wu Shuai sneered, looking at the cold and bright moon in the sky, he sighed: “Today, after this banquet, I, Wu Shuai, have finally realized the truth.”

“Realized what?”

Wu Shuai’s eyes flickered with cold light: “In this world, strength is all that matters. Why do you think Master Green Ant and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady came here to attend my banquet? That is because I own Immortal Gu House Dragon Court. Even though I have rank seven cultivation level, I can use this house to fight rank eight, this is my foundation, I am now qualified to talk to them.”

“Wind Cloud Manor will definitely remember this grudge, but they have too many concerns if they want to deal with me. That is because of my Dragon Court!”

“As long as I possess this strength, there is nothing to fear.”

“No, I will definitely become a rank eight Gu Immortal, I will elevate Dragon Court to rank eight as well. By then, I want to see who can look down on me in this world.”

“Brother Shuai...” Tai Qin placed her head on Wu Shuai’s chest as she looked at him endearingly.

Wu Shuai lowered his head and met with her gaze, he caressed her hair gently as he promised: “Oh junior sister, I will give you happiness, I will give you a good life. Right now, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady is still a threat to me, but when I become rank eight, I will definitely give you a proper status.”

“I don’t need any status, Brother Shuai, I am satisfied with just being by your side.”

“But I am not satisfied, I want to have many children with you in the future, I want us to enjoy the happiness of watching our descendants grow up.”

“Will that day come?” Tai Qin’s face flushed red with embarrassment.

“It will.” Wu Shuai held her tightly: “Believe me, it will!”

# Chapter 1842 - Uprising Plan, Stealing Fate

## 1842 Uprising Plan, Stealing Fate

Wu Shuai accumulated for a hundred years, he constructed an extraordinary rank seven Immortal Gu House, Dragon Court.

Next, he made a bet with Wind Cloud Manor, using Dragon Court to kill Song Tao Zi in front of everyone, becoming renowned in the world.

During the celebratory banquet, Green Ant Ascetic and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady showed up, this confirmed that Wu Shuai's influence had grown — he was now qualified to speak on equal terms with rank eight existences!

During the night of the celebratory banquet, Wu Shuai had a nice dream.

In this dream, he fulfilled all of his aspirations, he reached all of the goals that he was willing to fight for.

He became the dragonman leader, he had peak rank eight battle strength, Duke Long stepped down from his position for him.

He controlled Dragon Court and led his dragonman people to live freely, becoming equals with the humans.

He imprisoned Fan Ji and tortured him to death in front of Shu Jiu Ling, before he went to deal with Shu Jiu Ling herself. Calligraphy Pavilion Lady

came in time and fought against him, after she lost, she begged him to spare her daughter and offered herself as his subordinate, Wu Shuai agreed to it, he only made Shu Jiu Ling a servant while Calligraphy Pavilion Lady became his subordinate for good.

He made Green Ant Ascetic and Wine Fairy his dragonman external supreme elders, even though they did not want to, the dragonman race was too powerful, Wu Shuai's strength forced them to submit.

And the happiest thing was that he finally made Tai Qin his sole dragon empress, they had many children together. All of his kids had great talent and aptitude, they were like shining stars in the sky. Even though they were still young, they would definitely become great figures in the future.

On the second day, Wu Shuai woke up with a smile.

He looked at his beloved Tai Qin as she slept, he covered her with a blanket affectionately.

Next, he walked out of the room quietly, starting to do his work.

His battle with Song Tao Zi did not just lead to his own rise, even the dragonman race was feeling a lot of motivation and excitement.

Due to this influence, the dragonman race became more active and had a stronger attitude.

For the next few decades, the conflict between the dragonmen and humans intensified as they clashed with greater intensity.

Duke Long learned of this and summoned Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai flew all the way for thousands of li, but was scolded by Duke Long.

These years, he had been the main culprit behind the conflict of the dragonmen and humans.

Next, Duke Long ordered him to announce his crimes and step down as the owner of South Flower Island, at the same time, he had to change Dragon Court's name to Dragon Palace.

Wu Shuai was unwilling but against Duke Long and Heavenly Court, he was still too weak.

He had a dark expression and deep anger as he returned to South Flower Island, following Duke Long's instructions reluctantly.

Gu Liang came to visit.

The first time Wu Shuai saw him was during the banquet after killing Song Tao Zi.

For the last few decades, Gu Liang had been very close with the South Flower Island dragonmen, they had worked together many times, their cooperation was harmonious.

“Wu Shuai, I heard about the situation in South Flower Island, why are you admitting to such crimes? Is there anything I can help you with?”

Wu Shuai sighed deeply: “Gu Liang, this is the order of my ancestor Duke Long, I have no choice but to obey him, I am helpless now.”

Wu Shuai spoke firmly: “I will tell you the truth, when I killed Song Tao Zi, I thought it was a turning point that will lead to the rise of my dragonman race. But after these decades, I seem to be stuck in a sandpit, all my actions are showing little effect, I am facing pressure from all directions.”

Gu Liang smiled as he consoled: “Don't think too lowly of yourself. These years, I have seen all of your hard work. If not for your management of South Flower Island, this force created by the dragonmen would have been devoured by all the greedy people out there. After all, it is the ten great ancient sects and Heavenly Court that you are going against.”

Wu Shuai was silent for a while, he was filled with deep rage and anger, but also helplessness, in the end, he sighed deeply as he raised his head: “The

rise of the dragonman race, it is easier said than done, it is harder than ascending heaven.”

Gu Liang still had his smile: “One step at a time, back then when Heavenly Court rose to power, wasn’t it the same situation?”

Wu Shuai said in a defeated tone: “With my ancestor’s instructions, my decades and even centuries of hard work have gone to nothing. The humans have control of the world, this is the trend.”

Gu Liang said: “I have a method, it can solve your problem.”

“Oh? What is it? Quickly tell me, there is no need to hesitate with our friendship.” Wu Shuai immediately asked.

“This is a simple plan, you are only worried about the morale of the dragonman race. Especially since you and South Flower Island are the war flags that hold up the entire race, yet Duke Long wants to exterminate that. But what if you advance to rank eight now?”

“Advance to rank eight? Why would I not want that! But the final tribulation, even with Dragon Court, I am afraid...” Wu Shuai was hesitant.

“Hahaha, you have taken charge of South Flower Island for so many years, you truly cannot take such a risk. You know how important you are to the entire island and dragonman race. But all these worries are holding you back, you no longer have the same bravery back then. I am here to lend you a hand, I will help you pass the final tribulation and become a true rank eight Gu Immortal!” Gu Liang said as his aura transformed, turning from rank seven to rank eight.

It turned out that he was a rank eight Gu Immortal disguising as a rank seven.

Wu Shuai was deeply shocked: “Gu Liang... no, senior... you...”

Gu Liang raised his hand, stopping Wu Shuai: “Wu Shuai, let’s continue talking as friends. The truth is, I approached you for my own intentions.



Central Continent is too powerful, the rest of the four regions are weak. As an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, I am willing to see internal conflict in Central Continent. But I am not helping you because of that, I really appreciate and admire you. To speak the truth, we are quite alike.”

Wu Shuai was overjoyed: “These years, I have been finding a rank eight Gu Immortal to help me with my tribulation. But even Green Ant Ascetic and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady are constantly giving excuses, your help has truly come at the best timing. I, Wu Shuai, will never forget this favor!”

The next scene of the dream realm was his tribulation.

But because Wu Shuai and Gu Liang were very close in the earlier scenes, he was helped by Gu Liang.

Gu Liang had extraordinary strength, with his help, Wu Shuai successfully passed the tribulation without danger.

Wu Shuai finally became a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Even though he obeyed Duke Long’s instructions and did everything, causing a huge commotion and fear among the dragonmen, when news that he became a rank eight Gu Immortal spread in the world, the tides shifted towards the dragonman race again, their morale rose greatly, it was even higher than before.

Wu Shuai became the second rank eight of the dragonman race, he surpassed his father’s generation, only Duke Long was the sole person above him.

Wu Shuai had genuine rank eight cultivation level now, he could finally speak on equal terms with Green Ant Ascetic and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady.

Duke Long’s attitude towards him also changed, he no longer summoned him and scolded him so casually.

It was like he had broken out of a hopeless encirclement, Wu Shuai felt his pressure lifting, most of the undercurrents involving South Flower Island for the last few decades were swept away after he reached rank eight.

“The scenery of rank eight is truly different!”

“From today onwards, I am also a peak existence of the Gu Immortal world.”

Wu Shuai was extremely grateful to Gu Liang, their cooperation deepened continuously.

Gu Liang told Wu Shuai of many secrets: “The foundation of Heavenly Court is fate Gu. In history, two Demon Venerables attacked Heavenly Court, but why did they fail? The reason was because they could not destroy fate Gu, and because of Star Constellation’s assimilation, they are unable to destabilize Heavenly Court’s foundation.”

“However, while Star Constellation’s assimilation defended the reign of Heavenly Court, it also infuriated the Heavenly Dao. The way of heaven is balance, but humanity is flourishing and strengthening without restraint at the moment. This goes against the true heaven’s will!”

Wu Shuai learned many important things from Gu Liang. Even though he lived in Central Continent and was a supreme elder of one of the ten great ancient sects, he had never understood Heavenly Court’s true secrets, he did not have any sources of information.

“Wu Shuai, if you really want to lead the dragonman race to rise up, rank eight cultivation level is not enough. In fact, even if you get more rank eight Gu Immortals, it will not affect Heavenly Court’s status. Heavenly Court has many more rank eights than you’ll ever have!”

“In fact, if I put this bluntly, if your dragonman race really surpasses the bottom line of Heavenly Court one day, they will definitely take action against you. Don’t they always say this? Those who are not my race having different motives[1]!”

Wu Shuai thought about it, there was deep meaning in this, he quickly asked Gu Liang for advice.

Gu Liang told him: “The rise of dragonmen is extraordinary, you have to target the source of everything!”

“The source? You are referring to fate Gu?” Wu Shuai smiled bitterly: “Fate Gu is kept strictly by Heavenly Court, it is too difficult.”

“It is difficult indeed but there is still hope. Especially now, we have the greatest opportunity of all time.” Gu Liang’s eyes flickered with bright light.

Wu Shuai was moved: “You are referring to that person... Red Lotus?”

“That’s right, Heavenly Court originally wanted to nurture Red Lotus into an Immortal Venerable, but he has other intentions, he chose to defy them. Your ancestor Duke Long has been very busy over this matter, it is giving him such a headache that he has relaxed his control over your dragonman race. From this point, you need to thank Red Lotus for lowering the pressure that you are facing.” Gu Liang said.

“We need to borrow Red Lotus’ power? That is a good idea, but how do we contact him?” Wu Shuai asked again: “Red Lotus is too mysterious, there is almost no way of tracing his movement.”

“We cannot find Red Lotus directly, even if we want to meet him, he will reject us, he might even attack or destroy us.” Gu Liang’s expression changed, he showed some wariness.

He said with deep meaning: “Regardless of whether Red Lotus is an Immortal Venerable or Demon Venerable, he is still a human Gu Immortal.”

“If he does not want to cooperate, how will we borrow his strength?” Wu Shuai asked.

Gu Liang laughed: “Red Lotus wants to revive his family and his lover, he has to go against the Heavenly Dao and defy fate. This conflict cannot be

resolved, and precisely so, he turned on his teacher and Duke Long remains unable to get Red Lotus to turn back. Red Lotus will definitely attack Heavenly Court and attempt to destroy fate Gu. When he attacks Heavenly Court, it will be our opportunity to take action.”

“When will Red Lotus Demon Venerable attack Heavenly Court?”

“That I am not sure. It can take many years, or it can be at the next moment.”

Wu Shuai realized: “I get it, from now on, we need to get close to Heavenly Court, we need to constantly enter Heavenly Court to find more information and peek into deeper secrets. When Red Lotus attacks, we will use the prime opportunity to try and steal fate Gu!”

[1] A common phrase in Chinese

# Chapter 1843 - Making Sacrifices

## 1843 Making Sacrifices

Wu Shuai became rank eight, he broke the encirclement and swept the pressure away. Not only that, he even found the only chance to defeat Heavenly Court, that was to borrow Red Lotus' power.

Red Lotus had yet to become a venerable, but he was already predestined to become a future venerable. Even though this was just a guess, the entire Gu Immortal world was inclined to believe it. If not for this, why would Duke Long and Heavenly Court try all ways to convince him? Back then, Duke Long descended and took him in as a disciple, it was an obvious sign.

After talking to Gu Liang, Wu Shuai changed his strategy, he started to keep a low profile, he no longer acted like before.

Originally, after becoming rank eight, the dragonman race was very excited, there was finally a rank eight great expert that could back them up.

However, Wu Shuai started to get close to Heavenly Court and Central Continent's ten great ancient sects, many dragonmen could not understand him.

Wu Shuai put in a lot of effort to show a repentant attitude, he gradually won the trust and favor of the ten great ancient sects. He purposely got close to Heavenly Court and tried all ways to get information about them.

In fact, he even put in funds to make an Immortal Gu House for Heavenly Court.

As for the conflict between dragonmen and humans, he also changed his stance, he suppressed dragonmen to protect the benefits of the humans.

After a hundred years, even though Wu Shuai gained some success, he could not gain Heavenly Court's trust.

"What should I do?" Wu Shuai was anxious, he discussed with Gu Liang.

Gu Liang said: "You are a dragonman, Heavenly Court has always been extremely wary of variant humans, they look down on variant humans from the depths of their hearts. Our only hope is Duke Long, we need to target him."

"How do I gain Duke Long's trust? His impression of me is..." Wu Shuai smiled bitterly as he shook his head.

Gu Liang looked at Wu Shuai solemnly: "It will depend on whether you can make sacrifices."

Wu Shuai did not hesitate, he immediately answered: "I've been planning for the dragonman race all along, so what if I have to make sacrifices?"

"Good." Gu Liang clapped: "Only a person like you can accomplish great things."

Gu Liang gave his plan but Wu Shuai hesitated. Because Gu Liang was asking Wu Shuai to sacrifice Huang Wei on purpose!

Huang Wei was a rank seven dragonman Gu Immortal now, he had followed Wu Shuai since his youth, he had always been working hard in developing South Flower Island with Wu Shuai, he was loyal and had made many accomplishments, there was no chance he would ever betray Wu Shuai.

Gu Liang urged him: "Everyone in the world knows about your relationship with Huang Wei. We can create a situation where you need to make a choice. If you defend the interests of the humans and sacrifice Huang Wei, Duke Long will definitely change his opinion towards you!"

“But... you want me to kill my greatest general, and he is the person who trusts and idolizes me the most...” Wu Shuai gritted his teeth, he was hesitant and unwilling to do so.

“I believe that if Huang Wei knows the purpose of his sacrifice, he will definitely do it. Am I right?” Gu Liang’s words lifted a lot of Wu Shuai’s hesitation.

Wu Shuai sighed deeply as his eyes turned red: “I know Huang Wei like I know myself, if he knows that is my plan, he will definitely sacrifice himself.”

“No!” Gu Liang quickly interjected: “This plan is too important, the fewer people who know, the safer it is, only the two of us should know of it. Friend, you need to know that even the dead can be investigated upon to look for evidence, we cannot let Huang Wei know of our plan.”

“This...” Wu Shuai shut his eyes as he shook his head: “Let me think about it, let me think about it...”

He hesitated for half a year before he finally made up his mind.

Compared to the individual Huang Wei, the entire dragonman race was more important.

Wu Shuai and Gu Liang plotted secretly, creating conflict and killing human Gu Immortals before gathering evidence to accuse Huang Wei.

After this matter happened, it attracted a lot of attention in Central Continent.

Huang Wei screamed out in innocence: “This was not done by me, brother, you know me, I will definitely not do that!”

Wu Shuai defended Huang Wei at first, but as more evidence got exposed, he had no choice but to ‘uphold justice’ and kill Huang Wei.

This matter caused a great commotion, the dragonmen became very upset with Wu Shuai, many dragonmen started to move out of South Flower

Island.

The ten great ancient sects praised Wu Shuai greatly, even Duke Long heard about this matter and nodded in praise of Wu Shuai: “He has grown up a lot over these years, I am very pleased.”

Wu Shuai successfully gained Duke Long’s trust after this.

But he felt emptiness in his heart.

Before his execution, Huang Wei’s last words were deeply etched into his heart, he could never forget it in this lifetime —

“Brother, I have never regretted following you! If you want to execute me, regardless of the reason, I will accept it! But brother, I have not done anything like this. You need to be careful, be very careful, those human Gu Immortals are trying to deceive you. These years, they have not done anything against you, they have actually changed their tactics, they are accusing me now to get rid of me, they want to gradually clip your wings.”

“Brother, you told me about the future of the dragonman race, I have never reached it. So be it if I die, I hope you will carry on this dream. The future of the dragonman race cannot be achieved without you!”

Huang Wei knelt on the ground, crying as he said that, Wu Shuai felt his heart bleeding with every sentence.

Wu Shuai almost lost control and wanted to tell Huang Wei the truth behind everything. The one who framed him was this beloved brother right here!

In fact, there was a moment where Wu Shuai had the intense urge to kneel down and beg for Huang Wei’s forgiveness, but in the end, he controlled himself.

He snorted coldly: “Huang Wei, you have committed a great crime and killed people, you still refuse to admit your sins even now. Sigh, I have trusted you in vain, you are too disappointing, I am deeply hurt.”

Halfway through, Wu Shuai started to cry, his voice became shaky.



He did not dare to look at Huang Wei, he quickly turned around and left.

“Brother!” Huang Wei knelt on the cold floor of the prison cell, looking at Wu Shuai who was leaving, he shouted: “Brother, let me call you that for the final time before I die!! Don’t forget the grand aspiration of the dragonman race.”

Wu Shuai walked even more quickly now, he seemed to be escaping.

Many Gu Immortals came to watch Huang Wei’s execution, but Wu Shuai did not go.

That night, he had a dream.

In the dream, he saw Huang Wei who was pointing at him and scolding loudly.

Wu Shuai told him the truth.

After hearing it, Huang Wei started to cry as he knelt down on the ground, saying: “Brother, you have worked too hard, I was too ignorant, I blamed you wrongly. For the sake of the dragonman race, you took on all these accusations and made such sacrifices, I am willing to sacrifice myself too.”

Wu Shuai quickly held Huang Wei as he stood up, he patted his shoulder: “Brother, I’m glad you understand me!”

After waking up, Wu Shuai still carried a smile.

He did not get out of bed, he opened his eyes and looked at the ceiling.

The smile did not fade from his face, but tears flowed down from his eyes.

Huang Wei’s death caused a lot of commotion. South Flower Island was in turmoil, morale fell to rock bottom, the dragonmen were all very disappointed in Wu Shuai.

But Wu Shuai started to go in and out of Heavenly Court regularly.

This was a major breakthrough.

Once, Heavenly Court decided to build Central Heaven Gate.

Wu Shuai grabbed onto this great opportunity and reported to Duke Long that he was willing to contribute his Dragon Palace.

All these years, Dragon Palace had remained as a rank seven Immortal Gu House.

Wu Shuai had done this after much consideration, losing Dragon Palace was not a big deal, he could rebuild it in the future. The most important thing was fate Gu!

Duke Long's reaction was not out of Wu Shuai's expectations. Duke Long said: "Wu Shuai, I am very happy that you are willing to do this. But Central Heaven Gate is an information path Immortal Gu House, while your Dragon Palace is enslavement path, it is not appropriate. Furthermore, with Heavenly Court's foundation, we do not need you to spend your own wealth."

Wu Shuai sighed: "Grandfather, I was too arrogant when I was young, I did many atrocious things. Now that I regret it, I've been thinking about ways to make up for my mistakes. Please give me a chance grandfather, I will not disappoint you!"

Duke Long laughed loudly: "Alright, you and your father will be in charge of building Central Heaven Gate."

Wu Shuai was overjoyed: "Thank you, grandfather."

To build Central Heaven Gate, many resources were needed, Gu Liang came to offer some help.

He said to Wu Shuai: "Heavenly Court has devious ambitions indeed, they actually want to create Central Heaven Gate, it can connect to grotto-heavens. But this is truly a great opportunity! We can target this Central

Heaven Gate and leave a backdoor while probing for more secrets and information of Heavenly Court.”

Wu Shuai started to work harder, he went around in preparation of creating Central Heaven Gate.

The dragonman race were very unhappy with him, many dragonmen started to scold Wu Shuai, they called him the traitor of the dragonman race.

These dragonmen held deep expectations for Wu Shuai in the past, it was all converted into intense disappointment and hatred now.

Even Wu Shuai’s own father was very cold to him.

Wu Shuai endured these misunderstandings as he put in all his effort to complete Central Heaven Gate.

Creating a backdoor in Central Heaven Gate was not easy, especially under the supervision of Heavenly Court.

While he was working hard and was about to gain some results, an accident occurred.

His father returned from Heavenly Court, he was gravely injured, before dying, he called Wu Shuai over.

“I got into contact with fate Gu, my son! I received the revelation of fate Gu, we dragonmen will reign supreme, dragonmen will reign supreme!!” Wu Shuai’s father was very excited, he grabbed onto Wu Shuai’s hand tightly.

“What?!” Wu Shuai was deeply shocked, he was tongue-tied: “What is going on? Father!”

His father explained the situation: “I had found out by coincidence, but even though I got discovered, I was smart enough to purposely fail in constructing Central Heaven Gate, I suffered intense backlash and used this excuse to escape from Heavenly Court, to return to you.”

“Dragonmen reign supreme! My son, our dragonman race is meant to hold the heavenly fate, we are meant to replace humanity! This is the revelation given by fate Gu, it is definitely true!!” Wu Shuai’s father had shining eyes: “Do you know what this means? Quickly heal me, spread news of this to the world. The dragonman Gu Immortals will be extremely excited!”

“Father, you should recuperate in peace now, I will handle this.” Wu Shuai was also very excited, after settling down his father, he left the room.

Not long after, he met with Gu Liang.

Gu Liang learned that Wu Shuai’s father had returned with heavy injuries, he came to console him but seeing that Wu Shuai had a struggling expression, he asked for the reason.

Wu Shuai and Gu Liang had worked closely together, he had learned of Gu Liang’s true identity, he was not a human but a variant human Gu Immortal!

After a moment of silence, Wu Shuai told him the truth.

Gu Liang was also shocked but after reacting to it, he understood why Wu Shuai hesitated.

“Wu Shuai, you did not rally the dragonmen and announce this news, it was the right thing to do. If Heavenly Court learns of this secret, they will definitely wipe out the dragonmen in this world!”

“But we need to continue deceiving Heavenly Court and make them think that this secret is still safe, we are currently not safe enough.”

“Your father’s actions were too abnormal, there is a chance that they will find out he contacted fate Gu. Next, Heavenly Court’s investigators will definitely come to seek information.”

“Gu Liang, you know me well, that is my current dilemma!” Wu Shuai sighed: “What do we do?”

Gu Liang hesitated but he still spoke: “You have already thought of the method, haven’t you? In this situation, only by sacrificing your father and

pretending that he had died from his injuries after coming back can we escape this terrible crisis of extinction!”

Wu Shuai had a pale face, he stumbled backwards as he shook his head continuously: “You want me to kill my father?! No, I will definitely not do that!”

“You will not do that? If Heavenly Court learns of this, your dragonman race will be wiped from existence.” Gu Liang sighed: “I finally understand why your ancestor Duke Long treats the dragonman race like this. Heavenly Court must have known of fate Gu’s revelation that dragonmen will reign supreme all along.”

# **Chapter 1844 - Killing Father, Dream Revelations**

## **1844 Killing Father, Dream Revelations**

Wu Shuai frowned deeply, he had a bitter expression: “I am suspecting that this might be a plot against my father and me, they are trying to harm my dragonman race, what should I do? Dragonmen reign supreme might just be a lie, the culprit might have done this to find an excuse to wipe out dragonmen.”

Gu Liang pondered for a moment and denied the possibility: “This possibility is very small. According to your father, there were many coincidences that led to him contacting fate Gu. These are not man-made coincidences, many of these elements were chosen by your father himself.”

“Precisely because there are many coincidences, I am very suspicious of it.”

“Back then, how did the humans obtain the revelation of heavenly fate from fate Gu? Isn’t your father in a similar situation now?” Gu Liang’s words made Wu Shuai speechless.

At this moment, a loud voice was heard in the sky, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had come to pay a visit due to the injuries of Wu Shuai’s father.

“They came so quickly!” Gu Liang’s expression changed: “Wu Shuai, you must decide now, if you wait, all of your efforts will be in vain, your entire dragonman race will face extermination!”

Wu Shuai’s expression immediately turned ashen, his face turned pale and his body shook, he also fell to the ground.

The situation was forcing him to make a rapid decision.

He knew that this choice would bring him pain for eternity, but he had to do it!

Even though he was uncertain if the heavenly revelation of dragonmen reign supreme was real, or if others were harming them, he could not gamble.

If he lost the gamble, he would not just lose his father, he would lose the entire dragonman race.

That day, Wu Shuai’s father died from the backlash of failing to build Central Heaven Gate, his soul was completely erased.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals gained no evidence, even though they were suspicious, they could not do anything to the rank eight Gu Immortal Wu Shuai, they left.

For the next ten nights, Wu Shuai could not sleep.

Tai Qin consoled him as Wu Shuai cried in the arms of his beloved woman.

Tai Qin said gently: “People cannot revive after dying, senior brother, you need to move on. Uncle died from building Central Heaven Gate, Heavenly Court will definitely compensate you.”

Wu Shuai did not dare to tell Tai Qin about the truth, he had to endure this pain himself.

He could only say: “Junior sister, do you know? Back then, after I killed Song Tao Zi, I often had the same dream at night.”

“In this dream, I became the king of the dragonman race, I led my people to prosperity, we lived a life of freedom and peace.”

“I stayed within Dragon Court and ruled meticulously. The dragonmen lived in peace and prosperity, there were no conflicts or inequality.”

“Huang Wei remained as my greatest right hand man, he handled many affairs for me.”

“My father said I was his pride and joy, he often said: ‘My son, you finally did it, I am so proud of you.’”

“And the two of us lived in bliss, we had many children, they could freely play around without worries.”

Saying so, Wu Shuai lowered his head and cried: “But now, I only have you left! My beloved junior sister.”

Tai Qin was also extremely sad, all these years, she did not manage to bear a single child for Wu Shuai.

When dragonmen copulate, they are able to have many children, more than humans. But mixed blood between variant humans and humans are very unlikely to have children. Not just dragonman, even the other variant humans were the same.

This was terrible news to Wu Shuai, for the next half a year, he was immersed in anguish.

Gu Liang came to urge him: “Wu Shuai, I can understand the pain that you are feeling, but please be mindful of Heavenly Court, don’t put too much of the blame on yourself and cause Heavenly Court to sense something. If our efforts end up in vain, wouldn’t your father have died for nothing?”

Wu Shuai jolted like he was hit by lightning, he realized at once as he wiped the cold sweat off his forehead, he cupped his fists to thank Gu Liang: “Thank you for the reminder, otherwise, I would have committed a grave mistake.”



Gu Liang nodded as he smiled: “You have been overwhelmed by sadness these last days, you have not been working on Central Heaven Gate. It is time to continue.”

“But the revelation of fate Gu, can we trust the notion that dragonmen will reign supreme?” Wu Shuai was still thinking about it, he could not let it go.

Gu Liang smiled: “To prove this, the best way is to get into contact with fate Gu. But the risk is great, the truth is, there is no need to be anxious, as long as you wait, you will be able to find evidence.”

“You mean?” Wu Shuai had some sort of realization.

Gu Liang nodded: “Indeed, if dragonmen are meant to reign supreme, heaven’s will will definitely give your dragonman race more care and concern. Your father is like Yu Ji from history, when he was still a Gu Master, he was just a slave in charge of cleaning the Rockman Sacred Hall, in the end, when he got close to fate Gu, he learned the heavenly revelation that humans would reign supreme. He followed the guidance of fate Gu and stole it, contributing it to the most crucial human — Primordial Origin who had yet to become an Immortal Venerable.”

“I know about Yu Ji, he was the Dao Guardian of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable. He obtained the heavenly revelation but did not die, instead he managed to steal fate Gu. So why did my father...” Wu Shuai had a pained expression.

Gu Liang explained: “I have some guesses about this. Remember I told you that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had once assimilated with heaven’s will? From then on, her will started to interfere with heaven’s will. This is likely the reason why your father met with disaster, but he was able to successfully tell us the secret that dragonmen will reign supreme, he has died for a good cause.”

Gu Liang continued to encourage him: “Your father told you this secret, Wu Shuai, you might be the crucial person chosen by the heavenly fate, someone like Primordial Origin. You cannot give up, you cannot be dejected, you need to work harder!”

Wu Shuai shook his head: “How can I be compared to a venerable? And we variant humans cannot become venerable.”

Gu Liang was silent for a moment before he showed a peculiar expression: “Variant humans cannot become venerable, that is a phenomenon indeed, but nobody knows the exact reasons behind it, there are all sorts of theories.”

“The truth is, we have been researching about the reason why variant humans cannot become venerable.”

Wu Shuai questioned: “Isn’t it because man is the spirit of all living beings?”

Gu Liang chuckled: “Hehe, that is likely just a cover. There is a huge secret behind becoming a venerable, it depends on the spirit to some degree but that is definitely not the only reason. In human history, there were some exceptions. Some Gu Immortals with exceptional strength passed all of their rank eight tribulations but could not become venerable. Their cultivation level could not rise to rank nine.”

“Your ancestor Duke Long should be very clear of this. He was one such example, even with his extremely high strength, he could not become rank nine, he only became a dragonman afterwards.”

“If you can find out the truth behind this, my tribe is willing to pay any price to learn of this secret!” Gu Liang promised solemnly.

“Do not worry, if I can learn of this secret, I will definitely share it with you at no cost!” Wu Shuai swore.

Before leaving, Gu Liang advised him again: “Friend Wu Shuai, do take care. Even though fate Gu is not in your hands, if you are truly the fated individual, you will get some revelations. You are definitely a crucial person, these revelations might come to you or the people around you, do pay close attention to them.”

“I know.” Wu Shuai nodded: “Let time prove everything.”

But to Wu Shuai's disappointment, he did not receive any revelation.

He continued to build Central Heaven Gate to ease Heavenly Court.

The dragonman race, especially many dragonman Gu Immortals became upset with him, they called Wu Shuai a dog. His father had died from building Central Heaven Gate but this son was actually going to continue that job, he was truly enslaved and incorrigible. He truly deserved to be left with a dead father.

Thus, more and more dragonmen moved away from South Flower Island, it gradually became a trend.

On this day, Wu Shuai dreamed of his father again.

His father told him: "Continue to work hard, I understand you deeply. This sacrifice will definitely lead to great accomplishments! The dragonman race needs your leadership, my child."

He also dreamed that he had children with Tai Qin at long last. It turned out that deep within an Earth Trench in Eastern Sea, there was a nameless weed.

This weed was an ancient desolate plant, it spread over a large area and was guarded by immemorial desolate beasts.

If he and Tai Qin ate this seaweed, they would be able to have children, getting past the obstacle of cross breeding.

When he woke up, Wu Shuai had a realization, he jolted: Was this the heavenly revelation?

He recalled carefully.

Before Huang Wei died, he dreamed that Huang Wei was saying goodbye to him.

Before his father died, he also dreamed that his father was talking about his deceased mother, he spoke with great affection and said he was going to

join her.

It was quite easy to confirm this point as well.

Wu Shuai immediately made plans, using Gu Liang's strength to head to Eastern Sea and retrieve the unnamed seaweed in the Earth Trench.

According to the method in the dream, Wu Shuai and Tai Qin used the seaweed together. Months later, Wu Shuai received great news — Tai Qin was pregnant with his child!

This was truly immensely great news.

Not only because he had obtained his offspring, but also because he confirmed his guess. He finally understood that the heavenly revelations had appeared long ago, he just failed to recognize them.

The dreams started to change, more revelations came to Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai followed these revelations and achieved great success with minimal effort.

Not only did he build Central Heaven Gate, he even successfully made his backdoor without Heavenly Court noticing it at all, even when they checked.

In order to gain Heavenly Court's trust, he stopped developing the dragonman race, he focused on his own cultivation level.

Using the dream revelations, his cultivation level continued to rise, along with Gu Liang's help, he passed tribulations after tribulations.

The dreams started to change again, the revelation to build rank eight Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace appeared!

“The core Immortal Gu of rank eight Dragon Palace is rank eight — Dream Token? This is a dream path Gu, it corresponds to the great era!” Wu Shuai was extremely excited, he immediately traveled in the five regions and two heavens, searching for dream path immortal materials.

These dream path immortal materials are very rare, they were often buried in some corner, completely inconspicuous.

But Wu Shuai followed the revelations, he slowly found and gathered them, refining them successfully.

# Chapter 1845 - A Life of Tragedy!

## 1845 A Life of Tragedy!

During this period, Wu Shuai purposely went back to South Flower Island.

Tai Qin finally gave birth!

“We finally have the next generation of our bloodline! Tai Qin, it has been hard on you.” Wu Shuai hugged the baby that was just born, spinning around several times in joy.

Next, he carefully placed the baby on the bed beside Tai Qin.

He looked at Tai Qin who was still weak after giving birth with deep affection, his gaze was extremely gentle.

“What are we going to name our child?” Tai Qin smiled, she was filled with motherly love.

“This child has large, lively and spiritual eyes, let’s call him Long Ling.” Wu Shuai said.[TL Note: This is Dragon Spirit in Chinese]

Tai Qin nodded: “Long Ling, Long Ling it is a good name.”

Their son, Long Ling, was just born, Wu Shuai was very happy now, but he also sensed that the burden on him had become heavier.

“Huang Wei and my father have both passed away.”

“I only have junior sister Tai Qin and my new son left now.”

“I need to give Tai Qin a proper status, I need to give my child a bright future, he cannot live in an environment full of ostracism. I want him to live properly and proudly as a dragonman, he will grow up with pride!”

The responsibilities were pushing and motivating him, after resting for a few days in South Flower Island, Wu Shuai went on a journey around the five regions and two heavens again, collecting dream path immortal materials.

The process of refining dream token Immortal Gu was very mystical.

It all happened within his dream.

As immortal materials were refined one by one, dream token Immortal Gu was finally at its final step to completion.

“This?!” Wu Shuai was immensely shocked.

The final revelation in his dream was that he had to sacrifice Tai Qin, as long as she willingly sacrificed her own life, it would complete the last step of refining Dream Token.

“No, I absolutely cannot do that!!!” Wu Shuai was deeply shook, his face turned pale, he could not accept this revelation.

For a few days, he was completely daydreaming, he moved around in immemorial white heaven like a ghost that had no soul.

Only until he met an immemorial desolate beast that almost killed him, he finally came to his senses abruptly.

He killed the immemorial desolate beast but was very vexed, he could not find a solution to this.

“Should I really sacrifice junior sister? No, absolutely not.”

“There must be some way, there must be!”

Wu Shuai decided to halt the plan of refining Dream Token, he wanted to get more revelations from the dreams.

On the second night, he got a new revelation from his dream.

This revelation was beyond shocking — “Ancestor Duke Long has an immortal killer move that can exterminate my entire dragonman race?! And Duke Long has already been wanting to use this move many times already?”

Even though he trusted his dream revelations deeply, this news was just too unbelievable, he could barely accept it.

He pondered for some time, he decided to return to Central Continent and investigate the truth.

Wu Shuai had spent a lot of time and effort trying to refine dream token Immortal Gu. During this period, Central Continent was filled with undercurrents, conflict between Duke Long and Red Lotus was intensifying by the day.

Because of the death of Wu Shuai’s father, even though Heavenly Court suspected him, Duke Long trusted him deeply.

Wu Shuai deployed all of the manpower that he could use to investigate this matter.

At the same time, the dream realm continued giving him more revelations.

With the help of dream revelation, Wu Shuai gained more and more clues. These clues all proved that his dream revelations were true, in fact, Wu Shuai even learned about the name of this move — Dragonman Extermination!

“Back then, Duke Long created the dragonman lifespan extension method, creating the dragonman race. As the number of dragonmen increased, they slowly developed into the current dragonman race.”



“Duke Long is the ancestor of dragonmen, the source of the race, when he created the dragonman race initially, he left behind a hidden card, that was the killer move dragonman extermination.”

“By using this move, all the dragonmen in this world would self-detonate and die, none would survive!”

“Furthermore, Duke Long has been wanting to use this killer move for a long time, he has only been waiting as a result of Star Constellation’s will. Ancestor, you are too cruel! You are really so cold-hearted!”

Wu Shuai felt a chill, he was helpless, anxious, and furious!

All of his hard work, the future of the dragonman race, they were all a joke compared to this killer move, they were living in a real and yet illusory bubble!

“What do I do?”

Wu Shuai raised his head and screamed, he had no ideas left.

“Right, I still have my dreams!” Suddenly, he realized as hope sparkled in his eyes, he still had a final trump card.

That night, the dream’s content went back to a few years ago.

Regarding the refinement of dream token Immortal Gu.

The final step of dream token Immortal Gu was for Tai Qin to make a self sacrifice.

The dream told Wu Shuai that in order to deal with dragonman extermination, he had to refine dream token Immortal Gu first.

Wu Shuai woke up in shock from the dream, in the darkness of the night, he cried soundlessly.

He looked at his lover in a daze, the woman that he loved the most in his life — Tai Qin.

Tai Qin was originally sleeping soundly, but she seemed to have sensed something as she opened her eyes, she saw Wu Shuai's expression which was full of anguish and sadness.

"What is it?" Tai Qin quickly embraced Wu Shuai gently.

Wu Shuai hugged her, he hugged her tightly. He used so much force, but never had he ever felt so weak and useless in his life!

Wu Shuai had to tell Tai Qin the truth.

Tai Qin was able to accept it quickly, she used her warm hands to touch Wu Shuai's face, she smiled gently: "So that's the reason, my Brother Shuai. I love you, I am willing to sacrifice everything for you, including my life. This is nothing much, but in this life, I not only have you, I also have another concern, that is our child."

"After I die, you must take good care of him, nurture our child well. Promise me that, okay?"

"I promise you, I promise you on my life and dignity, I promise you with everything I have!" Wu Shuai cried profusely, he was filled with anguish and sadness.

Dream Token was refined.

Next, rank eight Dragon Palace was also constructed.

After it was created, Wu Shuai stayed inside most of the time, he often walked around the palace as he touched the walls and pillars. He pretended that he could feel Tai Qin's warmth, but the reality was that he could only touch the cold icy walls of the Immortal Gu House.

The child he had with Tai Qin gradually grew up, sometimes, he would ask: "Father, where is mother? Why is she not back yet?"

Each time he asks this, Wu Shuai would feel like a sharp spear was stabbing into his heart, causing him to bleed.

Each time, he would squat down and hug his young son Long Ling, he would hold him tightly and warmly as he lied to him.

The young and innocent Long Ling was like his antidote, the only thing in this world that could heal his broken heart.

He possessed rank eight Dragon Palace but Wu Shuai did not have any intention to fight for fame or glory.

He secretly targeted Green Ant Ascetic, Wine Fairy, and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady, enslaving them all. He achieved his former dream, he could imprison Shu Jiu Ling, capture Fan Ji, and even torture him to death in front of her.

But Wu Shuai did not do that, he let Shu Jiu Ling go be with the person she truly loved.

He no longer cared about the past glory or humiliation, even though he had once felt pain from them and had fought intensely to achieve them.

Wu Shuai had experienced many things in life, he let go of many things.

Now, Wu Shuai felt very tired, he was very tired but he could not stop, he had to continue because the matter regarding dragonman extermination had not been resolved yet.

Dream revelations came time and time again, in order to settle the matter of dragonman extermination, he had to use rank eight Dragon Palace while doing experiments on the dragonman body.

Dragonmen were the product of the dragonman lifespan extension method, while dragonman extermination was created through this source. The three were tightly connected together.

Wu Shuai already grasped the dragonman lifespan extension method.

Using the power of Dragon Palace, he could totally reverse-deduce the killer move dragonman extermination killer move through it.

But to do that, Wu Shuai alone was not enough, he gathered all of the dragonman Gu Immortals and told them the truth, he begged them for help.

In the huge Dragon Palace, there was an unprecedented meeting, almost all of the dragonman Gu Immortals had gathered together.

These dragonman Gu Immortals did not believe him initially, but when Wu Shuai provided facts and evidence that could not be denied, they had to believe him. At the same time, Gu Liang was present to testify that Wu Shuai's father had found out the secret of the heavenly revelation, it was all announced to them!

“To do experiments, we need a vast number of dragonmen, these people will almost all die, even if they survive, they will wish they were dead. However, I cannot stop this plan, if anyone objects, speak up now.”

“I object!” Immediately, someone jumped out.

Everyone turned to look, it was Wu Shuai's cousin, the beloved seventh young master that Duke Long doted on the most.

Seventh young master pointed at Wu Shuai who was on his throne as he scolded: “You scoundrel, you are insane!!!”

“In order to gain Heavenly Court's trust, you killed your most loyal sworn brother!”

“To conceal the secret of dragonmen reign supreme, you caused the death of your own father!”

“To refine dream token Immortal Gu, you actually used your most beloved wife as the Gu material!”

“Now, to deal with dragonman extermination killer move, you even want to sacrifice all of your innocent dragonmen and do experiments on them?”

“Why is your heart so wicked, why are you so cold-hearted?!”

“You think that this so-called evidence will make us believe you? Hehe, you are too laughable, do you think we are all fools?!”

“Hehehe, no, you are not laughable, you are pitiful and sad!”

“You want to give your wife happiness, and in the end? You sacrifice her to refine a Gu. Hehehe.”

“You wanted to make your father proud, and in the end? You killed him! You killed him with your own two hands!!”

“You promised Huang Wei a bright future, you gave him hope. But in the end you killed him yourself. And now, what future is there?”

“Hehehe, hahaha!” Seventh young master laughed maniacally, his tears were almost falling out: “You tried so hard to lead the dragonman race to rise up, and in the end? In the end, the dragonman race is about to be wiped out, we are going to be extinct!”

“It was you, it was you! If you were not ambitious and took over South Flower Island, relocating our people, developing rapidly and causing conflict with the humans, why would all this happen? If the dragonman race lived quietly and peacefully, ancestor would not have the intention of wiping us out!”

“Wu Shuai, oh Wu Shuai, you are the strongest person in the dragonman race besides our ancestor, but what you gave us was not glory or hope, it was neither equality nor dignity. It was... destruction!”

“You are a real tragedy! Your whole life is a tragedy!!”

The entire hall was silent.

Wu Shuai sat on his dragon throne, expressionless...

At this point, the dream realm finally faded away.

In the depths of the sea, only a beautiful palace was left, along with the Four Dragon Generals.

The dragon generals looked at Fang Yuan's dragonman clone with complex and subservient expressions, they walked out of Dragon Palace's door.

The door of Dragon Palace opened on its own.

The dragonman clone took huge steps out of this Dragon Palace.

He was expressionless, but the vicissitudes of life were seen deep in his eyes.

Looking at Dragon Palace, he could almost still hear the accusations of Little Seventh, as well as the gathering of the surrounding dragonman Gu Immortals.

But taking another glance, the hall was empty, everything was gone.

"It has... already been a million years."

"I am back." The dragonman clone's voice resounded in the hall, it was like the cry of a lingering spirit.

"But I... am no longer myself." The dragonman clone smiled bitterly.

This was not his voice, this was not his face, this was not his body, it was not even his soul.

Only his will was left —

The will that had endured through a million years, waiting until today!

"Dragon Spirit greets master!" Dragon Spirit appeared with a reverent expression, there was a trace of happiness in its eyes: "Finally, Dragon Court finally has a new master!"

The dragonman clone looked at Dragon Spirit intently, his eyes turned red rapidly.

He really wished that at this moment, Dragon Spirit could call him — Father!

But it was impossible now.

“Tai Qin, I have let you down after all, I could not even complete your final and only request.” Wu Shuai raised his head, he sighed deeply, his tone was filled with endless guilt and sadness.

But he did not cry.

A million years ago, his tears had already run dry.

# **Chapter 1846 - Obtaining Primordial Origin“s True Inheritance**

## **1846 Obtaining Primordial Origin“s True Inheritance**

After spending a lot of effort, Duke Long finally reached an agreement with Fang Yuan.

The two rank eights of Eastern Sea, Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng, watched the process but could not stop them.

Duke Long not only compensated Fang Yuan a large amount of qi path cultivation resources, most importantly, he even gave one Primordial Origin true inheritance to Qi Sea Ancestor!

This made the two Eastern Sea immortals helpless, but they also could not help but admire Duke Long’s resolution!

Of course, they only made a fraction of the transaction on the spot.

Qi Sea Ancestor, which was Fang Yuan’s disguise, agreed on a truce with Heavenly Court, they would coexist now, Heavenly Court would also hand over the resources gradually. As for Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, it would also be handed over in portions.



After all, neither side was following any alliance agreement.

They finally finished their negotiation, but not only did Fang Yuan not leave, he led the way for them.

“Fang Yuan is trying to get Dragon Palace now, Duke Long, maybe your Heavenly Court will be able to resolve your enmity with him today.” Fang Yuan smiled as he said.

From his expression, he looked like someone who was going to watch the show by the side.

But Fang Yuan decided to stop stalling for time, if he continued wasting time, Duke Long and the two Eastern Sea immortals might sense something.

In that case, he should grasp this situation firmly instead.

They did not set any alliance agreements anyway, when it is time to fight, Fang Yuan will attack directly.

As for those negotiations they made, who cares!

Duke Long flew straight, he looked calm and composed, he replied plainly: “If that really happens, we will have one less problem ahead.”

The two Eastern Sea immortals looked at each other, this matter concerned Dragon Palace, they were not going to leave yet.

When the entire group reached the location where Dragon Palace was hidden after diving into the depths of the sea, Dragon Palace had vanished already.

“Was Dragon Palace really here?” The Eastern Sea immortals did not believe it, they were suspicious that Fang Yuan had brought them to a wrong location but they did not dare to say it.

Duke Long did not suspect that, even though Fang Yuan brought them here, this was the route that Fairy Zi Wei had deduced as well, there were no

deviations.

“It seems that Dragon Palace really flew away.” Duke Long sighed.

Fang Yuan smiled: “It is truly a pity, if Dragon Palace was taken by Fang Yuan, your Heavenly Court would have lost to him once again.”

Fang Yuan had the expression of a curious and excited bystander, he tried to provoke Duke Long with words.

Duke Long replied plainly, he was completely unaffected.

Because he knew a lot about Dragon Palace, back then when his descendant created it, it was designed such that only a dragonman could become the Dragon Palace Lord.

In that case, Duke Long, who had the killer move dragonman extermination, was basically holding a trump card against it. If Fang Yuan really subdued Dragon Palace, he would have either turned himself into a dragonman, or had a dragonman subordinate.

“Fang Yuan is a vigilant person who was reborn from the future, there is little chance that he turned himself into a dragonman. But even so, my dragonman extermination can kill one of his capable subordinates.”

“But killing is just an added bonus, the key is to retrieve Dragon Palace.”

“Even though I failed this time, it was not completely without gains, at least I managed to improve Qi Sea Ancestor and Heavenly Court’s relationship, there might even be a chance of recruiting Qi Sea Ancestor in the future.”

“As for Dragon Palace... now that it has appeared, it will definitely leave clues behind, I will find it once more.”

“Sigh, Fang Yuan’s advantage from using rebirth is too great, he could set up arrangements in advance to strike early. I was late in this contest over Dragon Palace.”

Duke Long thought about it for a while, he was not in a hurry to use dragonman extermination yet.

This trump card was best saved for a crucial moment in the future, to catch Fang Yuan off guard.

Of course, Duke Long also thought that Fang Yuan might know about dragonman extermination. But if he knew, he would be guarded against it, Duke Long would not gain much from activating it.

Regardless, not using it now was still a wise decision for Duke Long.

“I cannot let Dragon Palace fall into Fang Yuan’s hands. The matter of retrieving Dragon Palace and dealing with Fang Yuan should be considered one problem, Fang Zheng, who is useful against Fang Yuan, should be saved first.”

Thinking so, Duke Long approached Shen Cong Sheng.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was currently in Shen Cong Sheng’s hands.

Shen Cong Sheng was already prepared for it, he was not surprised by Duke Long’s request.

After all, his Shen clan and Duke Long’s Heavenly Court were both in the righteous path, they handled matters similarly.

Shen Cong Sheng was willing to undergo transaction with Duke Long of course, exchanging Gu Yue Fang Zheng for a lot of benefits.

He had no interest in Gu Yue Fang Zheng, he was useless anyway. Shen Cong Sheng was secretly excited, he decided to extort Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court was extremely affluent, he had seen the conversation earlier.

Fang Yuan watched by the side and was slightly moved too. But if he competed against Duke Long now, it would not be a good idea.

Firstly, he had just arrived at an agreement with Duke Long, if he acts against him now, this would go against Qi Sea Ancestor's character.

Secondly, Fang Yuan was not confident in competing with Heavenly Court.

If he tried to kill Shen Cong Sheng to snatch Fang Zheng away, the chances were very slim.

However, Fang Yuan did not give up, he secretly transmitted to Shen Cong Sheng and inquired.

Shen Cong Sheng heard that Qi Sea Ancestor was also interested in Fang Zheng, he quickly replied: "To speak the truth, I had just soul searched Fang Zheng, I know about his recent encounters. It seems that he indeed counters Fang Yuan, somehow or another, he manages to exert negative influence on Fang Yuan."

Bright light shined in Fang Yuan's eyes as he immediately asked Shen Cong Sheng secretly: "Even though this Fang Yuan is only rank seven and I have only met him once, he left a deep impression on me. Since Fang Zheng counters Fang Yuan, you should keep him and negotiate with Fang Yuan. After all, he has many venerable true inheritances in his hands. If you really transact with Heavenly Court, will they want to give you venerable true inheritances?"

Fang Yuan attempted to convince Shen Cong Sheng to keep Fang Zheng so that he could find a chance to strike.

After all, the difficulty of planning to take Fang Zheng, who was in Shen Cong Sheng's hands, was completely different from him being in Heavenly Court's hands.

Shen Cong Sheng answered very quickly, he did not dare to keep Fang Yuan waiting, he smiled: "Ancestor is right, this is a good suggestion!"

He said that as he turned to Duke Long: "If Heavenly Court wants Fang Zheng back, give me a venerable true inheritance."

“Hahaha.” Duke Long laughed loudly in amusement: “Oh Shen Cong Sheng, you are too greedy. Do you think you are on the same level as Qi Sea? Friend Qi Sea was able to get a venerable true inheritance through fighting and gaining my acknowledgement. If you can get a venerable true inheritance from just trading a captive, wouldn’t you be treating Qi Sea as a joke?”

“Shen Cong Sheng, watch your attitude.”

“If you still have unrealistic goals, then let’s have a fight first.”

Duke Long’s change of attitude was very clear, he spoke domineeringly, completely different from when he spoke to Fang Yuan.

Shen Cong Sheng felt a little troubled, Duke Long was very eloquent, he purposely mentioned Qi Sea Ancestor, praising him and using this as a bargaining chip.

But Shen Cong Sheng had done soul search on Fang Zheng, he understood the value that this person had, he smiled coldly as he said without fear:

“Duke Long, I know that I am not your match, but so what? You can defeat me but you cannot kill me now. Furthermore, Fang Zheng is in my hands, I can kill him with a single thought.”

“If you do not want to give a venerable true inheritance, what do you want to offer? Let me see Heavenly Court’s sincerity.”

Shen Cong Sheng was not stupid, he spoke in a tone mixed with hard and soft words, he had taken a step back and stopped requesting for a venerable true inheritance forcefully.

After all, Duke Long was much stronger than him!

Both sides negotiated for a long time but did not come to an agreement.

Shen Cong Sheng wanted a lot because Fang Zheng was really important to Duke Long and Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan watched by the side as he gained a clearer understanding of the situation. The more Heavenly Court placed importance on Fang Zheng, the more likely he was trouble to Fang Yuan, and the greater Fang Yuan's killing intent became.

He secretly spoke to Shen Cong Sheng: "In my opinion, you should contact Fang Yuan first and talk to him. He might give a higher price than Heavenly Court."

But Shen Cong Sheng had already made up his mind, he replied: "Senior Qi Sea Ancestor, I am more willing to hand Fang Zheng over to Heavenly Court. Firstly, Heavenly Court is a righteous path force, it has a reputation to upkeep, it also needs a living Fang Zheng. But Fang Yuan only wants a dead Fang Zheng, he might not negotiate with me peacefully. Secondly, in terms of wealth and foundation, who in this world can match Heavenly Court?"

Shen Cong Sheng was a righteous path member after all, he had an innate barrier with the demonic path Fang Yuan, he was more willing to interact with Heavenly Court even though he was full of wariness against them.

Fang Yuan saw that he could not convince him, he could not overdo this in case they found anything suspicious, he could only think of new plans.

Duke Long became increasingly impatient.

He had already spent all his effort negotiating with Fang Yuan earlier, it was not his usual way of handling things. Now that he also had to talk to Shen Cong Sheng, Duke Long felt an impulse to attack.

But Fang Yuan was right beside him, considering that Shen Cong Sheng and Qi Sea Ancestor were both Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, Duke Long held down his urge.

At this time, Fairy Zi Wei gave Duke Long a piece of information.

Duke Long heard it and his eyes shined, this was an important bargaining chip, he quickly transmitted to Shen Cong Sheng.

Shen Cong Sheng's expression changed, he cried out: "Really?"

"Of course." Duke Long nodded: "How about that? The resources I mentioned earlier and this intel."

Shen Cong Sheng agreed without hesitation.

This made Fang Yuan and Song Qi Yuan feel surprised, they wondered what transaction those two had just done.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was handed over to Duke Long by Shen Cong Sheng on the spot.

Fang Zheng had already fainted, Duke Long held onto him as he bid farewell to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan could not make him stay, he had to say goodbye as well.

The remaining two Eastern Sea immortals said the same thing, they invited Fang Yuan to be their guest in the clan, they promised to gift some resources to Fang Yuan as the compensation for destroying the immortal battlefield unintentionally.

Fang Yuan nodded, he needed these two people to influence Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world.

After agreeing on a time, Fang Yuan turned around and left.

After flying for a while, he stopped at a certain cloud.

From within the cloud, an Immortal Gu House appeared, the dragonman clone walked out.

Fang Yuan and his clone smiled at each other.

On this expedition to retrieve Dragon Palace in Eastern Sea, even though there were many hurdles, nothing bad had happened in the end, his gains were even more than expected!





# Chapter 1847 - Dream Token

## 1847 Dream Token

“This is dream token Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan inspected Dragon Palace.

Dream Token was shaped like a dragonfly, it had a round head and long body, with a pair of pink ruby eyes and four pairs of transparent wings. Looking closely at its thin wings, one would also see a faint layer of rainbow halo.

Fang Yuan felt a sense of joy in his heart.

All along, he had been holding deep expectations towards dream path Immortal Gu. He had many dream path killer moves, but he still had zero dream path Immortal Gu until now.

For example, unravel dream used the wisdom path Immortal Gu Unravel Mystery, Fang Yuan used a large number of dream path mortal Gu to replace the effect of the supposed dream path Immortal Gu. This caused unravel dream to expend a large number of dream path mortal Gu each time.

In the initial period of getting unravel dream, Fang Yuan had laboriously refined those dream path mortal Gu one by one.

If he had a dream path Immortal Gu to replace them, he would not have had such trouble.

Fang Yuan had always lacked a dream path Immortal Gu, but now, he finally had his first one, and it was actually the rank eight Dream Token!

“Thinking back to the dream realm exploration, it was truly dangerous, I almost lost myself in it.” The dragonman clone who was to the side sighed heavily, he still felt deep lingering fear: “If I had not sensed something amiss in advance and secret set up unravel dream beforehand, and made it activate when I came out, I would have betrayed the main body already.”

Fang Yuan had always used unravel dream on the dream realm, but this time, he targeted himself.

Dragon Palace was able to enslave rank eights and create a new owner because of the power of the dream realm. Thus, when Fang Yuan’s clone used unravel dream on himself, it was also targeting this problem, effectively solving it.

Killer moves were fixed, but people could think.

The exact use of Gu worms depended on the user’s intentions.

Of course, unravel dream itself could not deal with rank eight level Dream Token. In this aspect, he had to thank the four Eastern Sea Gu Immortals including Granny Rong and Zhang Yin.

Fang Yuan’s main body nodded: “This was truly the most difficult dream realm I have ever explored. But earlier when I used luck inspection, those azure-purple qi were not a lie, they signified that you had a chance of becoming Dragon Palace Lord without losing yourself.”

Because Fang Yuan saw a chance of success, he let his clone enter the dream to try the test.

If not for those azure-purple qi, he would only fail regardless, Fang Yuan’s main body would have taken action already.

At this moment, Fang Yuan and his clone had already finished communicating, they learned of each other’s encounters during this period.

Fang Yuan's main body critiqued: "Dragon Palace's dream realm was very complex and deep, because both body and soul went inside, it was normal that emotions were pulled and manipulated. The dreams within the dream also made one sink deeper and unable to awaken themselves."

"Externally, there was Heavenly Court's action, had I not been careful, a huge battle would occur, the situation would go out of control rapidly."

Even though these two Eastern Sea immortals looked harmless, they were not benign people. In the previous life, they had fought against Duke Long in order to obtain Dragon Palace. After Duke Long won, during the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, they even joined with the other rank eight Gu Immortals to invade Hidden Dragon Cave, they had never given up on Dragon Palace.

The truth was, Duke Long chose to negotiate because Qi Sea Ancestor had incredible power, but he had also made considerations for this.

Looking at the entire situation, Fang Yuan's trip was full of danger this time, it was like he was walking on a tightrope, any carelessness and he would lose complete control.

But in the end, no actual danger happened, he kept control over the situation, this showed Fang Yuan's expertise in strategic planning.

Firstly, he had a lot of experience in exploring dream realms, he was the number one person in the world. Even though it was his clone who took action this time, Fang Yuan had given him methods like pure dream reality seeker transformation and unravel dream.

Secondly, Fang Yuan constructed Cooking Luck Pot, he could inspect luck. Fang Yuan had seen the azure-purple qi personally and knew there was hope of success, that was why he gave it a go.

Thirdly, Fang Yuan sent Bai Ning Bing and others to the River of Time and used Myriad Year Flying Warship to fight against five time path Immortal Gu Houses, he drew Heavenly Court's attention away. Next, by using

schemes, he deceived Duke Long and meticulously balanced the forces of Eastern Sea and Heavenly Court, using both sides to his advantage.

And finally, even if he failed, Fang Yuan would only lose a clone, his main body was safe and his foundation would be intact. Even if the dragonman clone betrayed him, Fang Yuan could use the connection between him and his clone to pursue and kill him. Forget about the rest, just the luck path tracking methods could not be concealed by Dragon Palace.

Because Dragon Palace was created during Red Lotus' era, while luck path was created in the future by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Because of all these reasons, Fang Yuan was able to face Heavenly Court, Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals, and the Four Dragon Generals while showing great strength and control, he created a situation where he could advance or retreat at all, he had a great advantage throughout.

Of course, the risks were high.

If he lost the dragonman clone, Fang Yuan would lose all of his dream path methods.

After all, unravel dream and pure dream reality seeker transformation were with his clone.

But he had to take the risk.

How could any grand plan have no risk? And this was involving a rank eight Immortal Gu House like Dragon Palace!

As for Wu Shuai's will, it did not exist.

No will could live in the dream realms for over a million years.

The dragonman clone had thought he was Wu Shuai for some time, it was the effect of Dream Token's modification, twisting his own will, causing the dragonman clone to think that he was Wu Shuai, having been revived.

But how could Fang Yuan's will be so easily distorted?

Even if he were deceived, he would sense it in the future and gradually wake up. Unless the dragonman clone stayed inside Dragon Palace all the time and imprisoned himself, subjecting himself to the effects of Dream Token.

Wu Shuai's arrangements and considerations back then were truly meticulous, his effort was praiseworthy.

After Fang Yuan's main body learned of the clone's encounter, he was moved and praised loudly: "He was truly a formidable person!"

It was a pity that Wu Shuai failed.

It was not that he lacked capability. Otherwise, how could he resist the pressure of the ten great sects of Central Continent and develop South Flower Island properly?

His talent and aptitude was very high. That was why his father nurtured him since he was a child, afterwards he even got picked by Green Ant Ascetic, finally becoming rank eight, even though he received external help, his own strength was the foundation to everything.

Regrettably, his enemy was too strong. Forget about Heavenly Court, just Duke Long alone could wipe out the dragonman race. And behind Duke Long, there was still Star Constellation.

The heavenly revelation that dragonmen would reign supreme was the decree of the Heavenly Dao. But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was too fearsome, after assimilating her own will into heaven's will, she actually managed to twist the Heavenly Dao.

Precisely because of that, the three Demon Venerables who appeared after Star Constellation did not manage to destroy Heavenly Court, it was only Red Lotus Demon Venerable who managed to damage fate Gu. Just this small accomplishment was already beyond the expectations of everyone, after all, Red Lotus Demon Venerable was not an otherworldly demon!

Thus, Wu Shuai's defeat was predestined from the start.

Even Demon Venerables failed, more so Wu Shuai?

Wu Shuai could make sacrifices, but Heavenly Court had countless members who were willing to sacrifice too. Duke Long exterminated the entire dragonman race, wasn't it a sacrifice? Star Constellation Immortal Venerable became one with the Dao, she sacrificed herself.

From Wu Shuai's life, Fang Yuan's main body learned about the strength of Heavenly Court!

This organization's foundation was just too deep.

The immortal graveyard had countless slumbering rank eights...

After a million years, Duke Long was still alive...

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei, Chen Yi, and Thunder Ghost True Monarch, all of these people were very influential and powerful...

Today, the great power of Heavenly Court was already established, it suppressed everything in history. Even Demon Venerables could not defy it.

Just this alone could make one feel suffocated! No wonder Shen Cong Sheng and Song Qi Yuan felt so wary, looking at the Earth Trenches emerging and the five regions fusing, they got more anxious by the day.

Fang Yuan wanted to overturn this current trend!

"Only by destroying fate Gu can I have any hope of eternal life."

"If I fail, will anyone feel moved when they hear of my story in the future?"

"Hehe, they would merely be moved."

After inspecting Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan kept his clone and Dragon Palace in his immortal aperture, he summoned Xue Er, Shi Shi Cheng, and Mo Tan Sang.

Fang Yuan used Omni-directional Travel with them, rapidly leaving Eastern Sea.

Ever since Fang Yuan annexed Qi Sea grotto-heaven, the killer move jade flow pearl stopped being effective. He had to use Omni-directional Travel instead to move around.

The ancient battle formation had its unique advantage too, Fang Yuan could naturally use Myriad Year Flying Warship to travel, this rank eight Immortal Gu House was not slow at all. But it was currently fighting inside the River of Time.

Even if Fang Yuan had it with him, he would not use it to travel, it was too eye-catching.

# Chapter 1848 - Collating His Gains

## 1848 Collating His Gains

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

A grand purple-gold palace floated in the air.

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

The dragonman clone manipulated this Immortal Gu House, producing a large amount of dense smoke.

Wherever the dense smoke went, it devoured everything. Fang Yuan used it as a test, he brought over an immemorial year beast, it could not resist as it growled while being overwhelmed by the dense smoke, vanishing without a trace.

“Gather.” The dragonman clone willed, the dream path smoke shrunk back into Dragon Palace like a python returning to its cave.

Everything that it had engulfed also naturally went into Dragon Palace.

This was the dream path killer move that Fang Yuan had personally witnessed in his previous life. Back then, Dragon Palace produced dense smoke that corroded Heaven Overseeing Tower, even though it had turned phantom, it was still hit.

One skill to dominate the world, in this current period of time, the Gu Immortal world and even Heavenly Court lacked ways to deal with dream



path methods.

The effectiveness of dream path was immediate.

But now that Fang Yuan personally used it, he realized that this dreamy light smoke was not a dream path offensive killer move as he had thought, it was used for capturing enemies instead.

Like earlier, Dragon Palace only used this one move to capture an immemorial year beast that had rank eight battle strength, suppressing it inside the palace easily.

Dragon Palace was an enslavement path Immortal Gu House, even though it had the rank eight dream path Immortal Gu Dream Token, its roots did not change.

The killer move dreamy light smoke was meant to assist with Dragon Palace's enslavement, by first capturing the target and trapping them, before enslaving them afterwards.

Other than dreamy light smoke, Dragon Palace also had two other dream path killer moves.

One was called dream revelation, it had wisdom path effect, allowing a Gu Immortal to dream in their sleep and attain revelations.

The other was called dream within dream, it was a dream realm that allowed one to construct dream realms within dream realms. Like the time the dragonman clone explored the dream realm and became Wu Shuai, while Wu Shuai went into another dream to gain dream revelations, this was the power of dream within dream.

As for the dream realm that shrouded Dragon Palace earlier, it was the power of Dream Token itself.

Fang Yuan considered it for a while, at his current stage, dreamy light smoke had the most practical use.

Even though dream revelation was profound, it not only consumed immortal essence but also heaven's will! That was to say, this killer move needed the participation of heaven's will.

In Wu Shuai's case, he held the heavenly fate, dragonmen were meant to reign supreme. Thus, heaven's will helped the dragonmen, it was okay for him to use this move, he would receive the guidance and assistance of the Heavenly Dao.

But Fang Yuan could not.

Fang Yuan was an otherworldly demon, he was suppressed and targeted by heaven's will. All along, he had been enemies with heaven's will, he had a killer move called heaven's will dissipation, it was specially used to eliminate heaven's will.

How could he expect heaven's will to help him?

As for dream within dream, this killer move targeted dream realms instead of living beings.

After activating it, it could form a deeper layer of dream realm within a dream realm.

What use was that?

It allowed one to modify dream realms.

Wu Shuai used this to modify Dragon Palace's dream realm back then, creating a dream within a dream. When Fang Yuan's dragonman clone explored it, he faced this type of dream constantly. Undeniably, this made the dream realm much more complex, it became easier for the explorer to lose themselves and succumb to the dream realm.

What use did Fang Yuan have for it?

In the short period of time, Fang Yuan's thoughts were on dream realm explorations — he could modify these dream realms to create a dream within a dream.

These dreams within dreams were created by Fang Yuan, they belonged to him. In that case, he could construct a safe zone in the dream realm so that he could recuperate or recover in it.

But the most important thing was dream token Immortal Gu!

This Immortal Gu was similar to the Soul Beast Token that Fang Yuan had, the former was a dream path Gu worm that had enslavement path ability, while the latter was a soul path Gu worm with similar enslavement path ability.

Fang Yuan had already learned of the exact use of this rank eight dream token Immortal Gu from the Dragon Spirit.

Back then, Duke Long wanted to unleash dragonman extermination, Wu Shuai was not safe from it. But after a lot of hard work and experimentation, he had some gains, he could delay his death.

Using his final bit of time, he activated dream token Immortal Gu.

He expended not just all of his rank eight immortal essence, but also his emotions, memories, and wills.

After he made his arrangements, he became extremely thin, only a bit of his soul was left, in the end he sat on his dragon throne, because of the huge expenditure earlier, he died after a while.

In the end, he sacrificed even himself.

He contributed everything he had.

Thus, currently speaking, the price of activating dream token Immortal Gu was huge! Wu Shuai was not killed by dragonman extermination, he died from using Dream Token.

Fang Yuan evaluated secretly: “He was an enslavement path Gu Immortal at the peak of rank eight, he sacrificed himself to activate Dream Token and created this Dream Token dream realm.”

“In the current era, the blessed land that Dragon Palace was hiding in got destroyed, it left and went into the bottom of the sea, subduing Granny Rong, Zhang Yin, and the other Dragon Generals.”

“Even though it gained four rank eight battle strength experts, the foundation of the dream realm fell greatly, so when the dragonman clone explored it, Dragon Palace’s dream realm showed traces of weakness in some areas.”

The most obvious being Wind Cloud Manor and Black Heaven Temple.

These two sects were part of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, they were not sects that had existed a million years ago during Red Lotus’ era.

The dream realm could not display them properly, it had to rely on the dragonman clone’s memories.

This was a flaw, it indicated that the dream realm was already at its limit during that time.

“This means to say, by sacrificing a peak rank eight Gu Immortal like Wu Shuai, I can enslave four rank eights and one rank seven.”

If this was the Dragon Palace dream realm in its complete form, the dragonman clone would likely still get modified even if he used unravel dream. Thus, he had to thank the four Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals for using up a lot of the dream realm’s power.

If Dream Token was used alone, the user would die from using it because this Immortal Gu uses all of the Gu Immortal’s foundation to create a dream realm.

The size and power of the dream realm would depend on the situation and which Gu Immortal was used to create the dream realm.

Of course, rank six and seven Gu Immortals did not have rank eight immortal essence, they could not use dream token Immortal Gu in the first

place.

And rank eight Gu Immortals could not be forced to do it, they had to do it out of their own will.

“That means, each activation of dream token Immortal Gu would expend one rank eight Gu Immortal?” This price was huge, Fang Yuan was not willing to try it.

“But in the future, when my dream path attainment level rises, I can use dream token Immortal Gu as the core to create corresponding killer moves to limit Dream Token, to prevent it from draining the Gu Immortal entirely so as to create restricted dream realms.”

“But it’s not very useful.”

Fang Yuan thought about it, dream token Immortal Gu alone was not very useful to him.

Even if he had killer moves to create dream realms in the future that would not kill the Gu Immortal using it, Fang Yuan would still need to expend his own foundation, immortal essence, and soul foundation, but most importantly, his true meaning would also be converted and expended. This meant that Fang Yuan’s attainment levels would fall.

Without true meaning, the dream realm would just be a weak illusion. Precisely because dream realms contained true meaning, emotions could be used to trap a person in the dream realm. If the Gu Master succeeds in exploration and ignores the interferences of emotions, they would gain true meaning and raise their attainment levels.

“But in the future, when dream realms become common everywhere, I can spend some attainment level to create a trap and plot against crucial people. I can turn them into my subordinates, my enemies will be caught unguarded.”

Dream Token, dreamy light smoke, dream within dream, dream revelation, these were his dream path gains.

For Fang Yuan, not all of them were practical, but they did cause his dream path abilities to skyrocket several times. In particular, these killer moves were part of the Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace, making it very convenient for Fang Yuan to use them at will without much practice at all.

Other than dream path, he had great gains in other areas too.

The most obvious were the Four Dragon Generals that included Zhang Yin and Granny Rong, Fang Yuan was happy to gain new rank eight battle strength experts, four in fact!

The accumulation of Wu Shuai and his dragonman race was all kept in Dragon Palace for the future, they were all now Fang Yuan's possession.

These legacies were mostly contents related to enslavement path. But the most valuable ones were relating to the Qian Kun Crystal Wall, Censure Peak, and army ant.

Wu Shuai suppressed and enslaved Calligraphy Pavilion Lady back then, he gained her Immortal Gu House Calligraphy Pavilion. Wu Shuai found that the reason Calligraphy Pavilion was so strong was because there were many Qian Kun Crystal Wall fragments stored inside.

The Qian Kun Crystal Wall was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it was recorded within The Legends of Ren Zuo, but it had always been in a state of fragmentation. Calligraphy Pavilion's Qian Kun Crystal Wall fragments were just a portion of the original.

The value of Censure Peak, to make a comparison, was similar to the incomplete Refinement Sea. The white haired Lang Ya land spirit wanted to create the secluded domain of heaven and earth Refinement Sea, he paid a huge cost but did not succeed. Censure Peak was already completed, yet it could only be considered on the level of an incomplete secluded domain of heaven and earth, it was inferior to Refinement Sea in essence.

Army ant was the true inheritance of Green Ant Ascetic, after Wu Shuai inherited it, he made good use of it, it was his main offensive method back

then, as long as they grew to a certain number, they would have terrifying might, one would be able to fight a group of rank eight Gu Immortals alone.

And finally there was Dragon Palace itself, the Dragon Spirit, and enslavement path attainment level.

After the dragonman clone passed the dream realm, his enslavement path attainment level rose directly to quasi-supreme grandmaster.

Back then, Wu Shuai's enslavement path attainment level was merely one level away from supreme grandmaster, even though he had the bonus of a dragonman's latent enslavement path talent, his aptitude was truly terrifying.

Throughout history, there were countless heroes and geniuses that ascended the stage of fame. In the long river of history, there were countless shining stars that had their own dazzling light, even though there were ten venerables standing above them with unparalleled power, they did not lose their own unique colors.

The gains were immense, Fang Yuan had basically inherited the legacy of the entire dragonman race!

To process these gains, he would need countless years.

Fang Yuan was a little helpless, he had limited time, he could only choose to utilize those that were helpful to him.

Army ant was not going to be practiced now, this method was just icing on the cake, Fang Yuan already had the battle strength to fight an entire group of rank eights alone. Furthermore, building an ant army from scratch would require an immense amount of resources.

Qian Kun Crystal Wall and Censure Peak were foundations of information path, Fang Yuan lacked methods in this aspect. Earlier, he made Li Xiao Bai enter Profound Literature grotto-heaven for this purpose as well.

What made Fang Yuan feel slight regret was that Dragon Palace lacked dream path defensive methods. If it had any, in the current world where dream path was too advanced for the era, it would be even more powerful and useful than winter coat and reverse flow protection seal!

But thinking about the previous life, Fang Yuan could accept this fact. If Dragon Palace had such dream path defensive methods, it would not have been invaded by Duke Long.



# **Chapter 1849 - Ancestor of the New Dragonman**

## **1849 Ancestor of the New Dragonman**

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The Long Hair refinement path formation made a loud noise as a large amount of white litchi immortal essence was instilled, a huge flame that soared to the sky appeared.

Within the raging flames, the dragonman clone sat cross-legged with his eyes closed, he was expressionless as if he had fallen asleep.

Meanwhile, his body was beginning to melt away, resembling iron which had just begun to melt into liquid.

This was naturally a painful thing, but the dragonman clone's soul had left the body in advance, it was standing beside Lang Ya land spirit now.

Fang Yuan's main body personally controlled the refinement path formation while Lang Ya land spirit, Sixth Hair, and the rest assisted him.

Fang Yuan mobilized almost all of his refinement path manpower here, he was giving it his all!

As the flames burned, the flesh and skin of the dragonman clone gradually swelled and blistered, and soon he was completely disfigured. It looked like colloids or bubbles that were about to pop completely.

“Be careful and hold steady. I’ll leave this to you, Lang Ya land spirit.” Fang Yuan himself presided over the situation while giving out instructions.

Lang Ya land spirit nodded.

Fang Yuan did not need to completely scorch and melt the dragonman clone, if he did so, it would be tantamount to killing him.

What Fang Yuan needed was this current condition, where the dragonman clone had reached the limit of what he could bear, but was only on the verge of destruction.

To maintain this state, the Gu Immortal had to manipulate the intense flames while paying close attention to the dragonman clone’s condition.

Fang Yuan passed this job to Lang Ya land spirit, he had already turned into the white haired land spirit who was stable and calm, he had deep refinement path experience that Fang Yuan could not compare to. This was the step that could not accept any careless mistakes, Fang Yuan was assured with Lang Ya land spirit handling it.

Next, Fang Yuan started to activate the refinement path formation as traces of lightning gathered.

These lightning sparks were pitch black and thick like chopsticks, they crackled continuously.

The lightning sparks entered the raging flames like they were entering empty space, they were completely unaffected by the flames.

Under Fang Yuan’s control, the lightning sparks stabbed into the dragonman clone’s body, piercing through the lumps of blood and flesh, attaching themselves to the soft skeleton.

The pitch-black lightning sparks fixed the skeleton in place as they slowly moved out, taking one of the dragonman clone's arm bones out along with them.

The arm bone was not heat resistant, it started to show signs of melting, but at this time, Sixth Hair who was already prepared activated the refinement path formation and sent out waves of bubbles.

Fang Yuan quickly tossed the arm bone into the bubbles.

The bubbles surrounded the arm bone and quickly flew up, getting out of the top of the raging flame.

Hairy man Gu Immortals were already waiting there, they prepared a pool of lightning plasma. The arm bone was put into the lightning plasma and got refined continuously, this was the first step.

The second step, another hairy man Gu Immortal took over, placing the arm bone in a green current to wash it.

The third step, others took charge. The arm bone was baked, washed, and cleaned, it shrunk greatly, and got buried in a pile of soil made from pale white bone.

Next, the refinement path formation used the power of time path to accelerate the time of the bone soil.

The bone soil continued to be absorbed by the arm bone as it got smaller in size. The arm bone only absorbed half of the soil before it stopped, it was taken out, three steps were still waiting.

This was an arm bone, while the dragonman clone had a total of more than three thousand bones in his body, they were all going to be processed similarly.

And this was just the bones, the dragonman clone's flesh, blood, brain, organs, fingernails, and hair, they all needed to be refined.

This was an extremely tedious job, Fang Yuan alone had too low efficiency, that was why he mobilized all of his refinement path experts.

Thankfully, even though the refinement of the dragonman clone was tedious, it was not hard. The biggest difficulty was that attention was needed at all times to maintain the dragonman clone's condition. Lang Ya land spirit was in charge of this so Fang Yuan felt assured.

Following this process, after three days and nights in the sovereign immortal aperture, the Long Hair refinement path formation finally stopped.

His bones were put back, his hair, blood, flesh, fingernails, organs, and brain were all refined properly, he was now immune to the dragonman extermination killer move.

Back when Duke Long created the dragonman lifespan extension method, he used the profundity of transformation path, qi path, and human path, but Fang Yuan did not lack expertise in these three aspects now.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan's refinement path foundation was something Duke Long could never match up to.

And with his wisdom path ability, if given enough time, Fang Yuan would definitely be able to break the killer move dragonman extermination.

There were no killer moves that could not be broken.

It was just that a gradual process was necessary, a long time was needed to continuously attempt trial and error.

After gaining Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan obtained the research results of the dragonman experiments, it helped him greatly.

In fact, Wu Shuai was very close to success back then, even though he did not truly break dragonman extermination killer move, he had conceptualized many ideas, he just lacked time to experiment on them. During the final period before dragonman extermination, the dragonman Gu Immortals cooperated with Wu Shuai, they placed their immortal apertures

in Central Continent as test locations, they tried all these methods respectively, they were spreading the seeds of hope.

The dragonman blessed land that Fang Zheng encountered was one of them. Of course, it was not from the first batch of blessed lands, the dragonman Gu Immortals that appeared in the blessed lands had placed their own immortal apertures, taking the place of the previous generation each time.

Fang Yuan did not know how many generations had gone by, he did not care either. But he used this precious information to deduce which was the most likely plan to succeed from all of the methods that Wu Shuai had conceptualized.

Information regarding the matters involving Fang Zheng was obtained by Fang Yuan after Shen Cong Sheng gave him the results of his soul search. Shen Cong Sheng did not know how precious this information was, he was basically handing Fang Yuan the solution!

Fang Yuan had the ability and clues to finally modify the dragonman race. From this day onwards, the dragonman clone would be completely immune to the killer move dragonman extermination.

Of course, that was only Duke Long's dragonman extermination. If Fang Yuan created one himself, the dragonman clone would still be affected by it.

After all, Fang Yuan had personally created the new dragonman clone, he knew everything about it.

At this point, his work was not done.

Fang Yuan's dragonman clone's soul had adapted to the original dragonman body, thus it was also under the influence of Duke Long's dragonman extermination killer move.

Therefore, he had to modify the dragonman clone's soul next.

There was no need to use the refinement path formation for this, Fang Yuan had a vast number of soul path methods.

Dealing with the soul was much easier than the body.

Coincidentally, the dragonman clone's soul foundation needed to be improved anyway, so Fang Yuan temporarily put the dragonman clone in the soul expending myriad guts formation to cultivate.

Soul foundation was the foundation of enslavement path.

Currently, Dragon Palace had enslaved the Four Dragon Generals, it was the limit. To enslave more living beings, the Dragon Palace Lord would need to sustain it with their soul.

Noting this, Fang Yuan started to understand why the Dragon Spirit acknowledged Bai Ning Bing in the previous life.

“It must have been an emergency back then, Dragon Palace needed Bai Ning Bing's soul to split the burden and enslave Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng.”

“The Dragon Spirit can control Dragon Palace to begin with, it is similar to heavenly spirits and land spirits, it can acknowledge a master and exist indefinitely.”

“Of course, one needs to have dragonman identity and the aspiration to develop the dragonman race in order to gain the Dragon Spirit's acceptance.”

Thinking so, Fang Yuan smiled.

Developing the dragonman race was not impossible. Fang Yuan had already started to raise variant humans on a large scale, one was to comprehend human path, another was to manage the immortal aperture and finally, to try and obtain the variant human inheritances.

Whether he would develop dragonmen or not, was there a difference to him?

No!

Of course, Fang Yuan was going to raise his new dragonman race, he would definitely not develop the old dragonman race.

Therefore, in a way, Fang Yuan was now the ancestor of the new dragonman race!

Heavenly Court cared about race, it was their basis. But Fang Yuan did not care.

So what if dragonmen reign supreme? Fang Yuan did not care about that at all.

His only goal was eternal life!

If developing the dragonman race could help him achieve this goal, then he would do it. If they obstructed him in the future, he would eliminate them.

It was so simple!

If becoming a dragonman meant he could achieve eternal life, Fang Yuan would immediately abandon his human identity and change sides, even if countless people took pride in their human status.

The dragonman clone lacked a name? He would be called Wu Shuai then.

Fang Yuan was completely fine with that.

The dragonman clone started to cultivate and modify his soul.

The time path clone was still using the light of wisdom to make endless deductions.

The dream path clone was still waiting. Fang Yuan originally wanted Dragon Palace to help the dream path clone with his tribulation, but after obtaining it, he realized Dragon Palace had no dream path defensive killer moves.

This made Fang Yuan's plan flop.

If there were to be a dream path tribulation, how would Fang Yuan defend against it? Even reverse flow protection seal would be useless at that time.

There was a way, which was to use dream token Immortal Gu as the core to deduce a usable dream path killer move.

But this move had to be rank eight! Fang Yuan had wisdom path attainment but his dream path attainment level had not even reached master!

This was troublesome.

He would need to spend a lot of time and effort, Fang Yuan thought about it and decided to defer this.

He was not going to give heaven's will a chance to plot against him!



# **Chapter 1850 - Making Arrangements in Eastern Sea**

## Chapter 1850 Making Arrangements in Eastern Sea

Eastern Sea.

Shen clan headquarters, purple rosewood myriad sparrow island.

Shen clan first supreme elder Shen Cong Sheng said with enthusiasm: “Senior Qi Sea, this is the six sound tea from my Shen clan, please enjoy.”

Fang Yuan nodded as he looked at the cup in front of him.

Six sound tea was the signature tea of Shen clan, it was incredibly famous in the five regions, it was superior compared to Spirit Affinity House’s qingpu tea, Myriad Dragon Dock’s dragon shadow tea, Southern Border Qiao clan’s bewitching tea, and Fang clan’s seven li fragrant tea.

Six sound tea was not drunk in just one cup, it was a set of six tea cups.

These six cups of tea had very specific details when it came to the brewing process, temperature, cup used, sequence of drinking, and exact way to drink.

Fang Yuan first held the first cup, this tea was crystal clear, it was like the sky devoid of clouds, extremely pure and intact.

“Autumn wood sound.” Fang Yuan thought to himself as he savored the tea.

The moment he drank it, he felt refreshed as his mind became clear, it was pure and cleansed.

It was as if he had turned into a carefree flying bird, or a cool breeze, moving casually in the autumn skies.

After a moment, Fang Yuan drank the second cup of tea, cloud flow sound.

This tea had a special texture, it was soft as cotton unlike normal tea. It melted when it entered the mouth, turning into a slightly cold stream of water that flowed down his throat, it was drunk in one mouthful without doubt.

After the tea went into his stomach, faint fog started to appear on his tongue, throat, and intestines, this dense tea fog filled his body and even permeated to his internal organs.

“Good tea.” After savoring it for a while, Fang Yuan went on to the third cup.

This tea was called river mournful cry.

The tea was held in a long cup, the tea inside was not calm, there were slight ripples in it, this looked like a miniature river.

Fang Yuan poured the tea into his mouth as he felt an incredibly profound feeling, he forgot about himself, he felt like a river that had gone through countless twists and turns, after much turmoil, he entered Eastern Sea in the end.

Autumn wood sound.

Cloud flow sound.

River mournful cry.

Jade harp.

Phoenix cry.

Hibiscus laughter.

These six cups were excellent tea if drank on their own, but the most amazing thing was that they were interlinked, after Fang Yuan drank all six

of them, he felt dazed as an incredibly indescribable feeling engulfed his five senses, he was deeply entranced.

By the time he came back to his senses, two hours had passed.

“Good tea.” Fang Yuan praised extensively after the experience: “Even though I live in seclusion, I have heard of the six sound tea’s reputation. Today, I have truly experienced it for myself, it lives up to its name.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was satisfied, Shen clan’s first supreme elder, Shen Cong Sheng, became incredibly happy as he laughed: “Getting Senior Qi Sea’s praise was worth the three days and nights of preparation by my clan’s Gu Immortals.”

Six sound tea was made of immortal materials, only Gu refinement experts among Gu Immortals could make it. To refine an entire set of the six sound tea, Shen Cong Sheng even had to be involved himself.

This tea had different levels of ingredients that could be used, since Shen Cong Sheng was refining it, he used the top grade ingredients, expending a large amount of rank eight immortal materials.

Rank eight immortal materials were expensive, using them to refine Gu was normal, but he was using them for tea now. After Fang Yuan drank it, there was nothing left, this was truly a luxury but it showed how enthusiastic Shen Cong Sheng was about hosting Fang Yuan!

After drinking the tea, Shen Cong Sheng invited Fang Yuan to tour this purple rosewood myriad sparrow island.

This island itself was a giant resource point, the island was not made of soil or rock, it was an immemorial desolate plant, sea suppressing purple rosewood.

The purple rosewood was rooted at the bottom of the sea, its crown grew above the water, the branches intertwined into this island.

Countless species lived on this island, they were mostly sparrows.

When these sparrows cry, the branches of the purple rosewood would shake and emit wonderful sounds. These sounds would spread far and wide, calming the surrounding seas.

The sea here was calm and tranquil like a mirror, there was no wind in the sky at all.

This was the reason for the ‘sea suppressing’ purple rosewood’s name.

Shen Cong Sheng warmly attended to Fang Yuan for two whole days, he personally accompanied him the entire time, while sometimes also inviting a few of the female Shen clan immortals to serve Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan talked to him very harmoniously, before leaving, Shen Cong Sheng presented gifts to him with both hands.

These gifts were very valuable, not only were there a large amount of immortal materials, there were even two stalks of ancient desolate plant sea suppressing purple rosewood.

Shen clan’s sea suppressing purple rosewood was an immemorial desolate plant, it could only produce a special branch every eight hundred years.

Grafting these branches would allow one to grow an ancient level sea suppressing purple rosewood.

Even though the sea suppressing purple rosewood had many branches, the rest of its branches could not be grafted for this purpose.

These two stalks of sea suppressing purple rosewood were not just ancient desolate plants, they were two large sized resource points.

In order to befriend Qi Sea Ancestor, Shen Cong Sheng invested a lot, much more than Song Qi Yuan.

Before coming to Shen clan, Fang Yuan already went to Song clan and received Song Qi Yuan’s welcome and hospitality.

“After these two trips, my reputation should have spread in Eastern Sea, no, it should have spread in all five regions.” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

Fang Yuan’s Qi Sea Ancestor identity was destined to be renowned in the world.

This was decided the moment he fought toe-to-toe against Duke Long.

“Next, I will wait for the reactions of Eastern Sea’s other super forces. They will all invite me to visit them.” Fang Yuan planned.

It seems that for this period of time, his main body was going to attend banquets everywhere.

This was what Fang Yuan wanted!

Eastern Sea was rich with resources but it lacked a unified voice, it did not have a leader that had great aspirations or foresight.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Eastern Sea was suppressed by the other regions. In this life, even though Eastern Sea mobilized several rank eights to act together, they only went after Dragon Palace, they did not have thoughts of attacking Heavenly Court or Emperor City.

Eastern Sea was not like Southern Border which had Wu clan, it had the formidable character Wu Yong.

It was not like Northern Plains which had Longevity Heaven.

And it was not like Central Continent which had Heavenly Court.

Eastern Sea was quite like Western Desert, but Western Desert Gu Immortals were used to working together, their resources were also much poorer compared to Eastern Sea.

In Fang Yuan’s memories, Eastern Sea had never done anything outstanding. Even though Eastern Sea’s super forces had deep foundations, while their lone immortals were also much richer than those in the other four regions.

But they were too disunited.

What if a strong leader appeared? What if they had a unified voice?

A person like Qi Sea Ancestor who cultivated qi path, he had no conflict with Eastern Sea's super forces or even most of the Gu Immortals in terms of resources. He even had battle strength on the level of Duke Long, this was his greatest foundation in intimidating the rest.

Could Qi Sea Ancestor successfully become the leader of Eastern Sea?

Of course, Fang Yuan did not expect Eastern Sea's super forces to listen and obey his arrangements, that was not realistic.

But to become the alliance leader in name, it was possible!

Weren't Shen Cong Sheng and Song Qi Yuan thinking about this? They wanted to make sure Qi Sea Ancestor stayed with Eastern Sea, in the future when war starts, they would be able to gain his protection.

But they did not know that Fang Yuan wanted this too.

Even if he was just an alliance leader in name, and could not interfere in the super forces' internal affairs, as long as he could influence Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world, Fang Yuan's goal would be achieved.

Don't forget that four rank eight lone immortals of Eastern Sea, Zhang Yin, Granny Rong and the others, were already Dragon Palace's dragon generals.

With their support and Fang Yuan's status as the alliance leader, he would exert great influence. Forget about the rest, just during the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, when Heavenly Court tries to repair fate Gu, Fang Yuan could lead Eastern Sea and use its power in an appropriate setting!

Eastern Sea's rank eights wanted to gain Fang Yuan's favor, not only were they hospitable, they even gave him expensive gifts.

Even during normal times, Qi Sea Ancestor's battle strength and stance would already make them want to win him over. Now, with the Earth Trenches emerging and the five regions merging into one, it was even more necessary.

Dragon Palace dived into the sea and descended until it reached the bottom of the sea.

This sea area seemed very ordinary, but after Dragon Palace waited for a while, the dragonman clone's voice resounded from within: "Dragon Palace has arrived, where is Gu tribe?"

His voice spread out and reverberated in the depths of the sea.

The dragonman clone waited patiently, after some time, the scenery in the sea changed as an entrance opened, showing a blessed land that was hidden inside.

A rank eight Gu Immortal walked out and looked at Dragon Palace with an alert gaze that had traces of excitement in it, he cupped his fist: "I am the thirty-nine thousand seven hundred and sixty-seventh Gu tribe leader, who is the current owner of Dragon Palace?"

Fang Yuan's dragonman clone walked out: "I am Wu Shuai."

The expression of Gu tribe's shook, he asked: "What relationship do you have with Fang Yuan?"

The dragonman clone laughed heartily: "Mutual cooperation, without Fang Yuan's help, how could I have revived?"

Gu tribe's leader nodded, he was not surprised.

News of Duke Long, Fang Yuan, as well as the fight between Qi Sea Ancestor and Duke Long had already spread far and wide.

The dragonman clone had a solemn expression: "The world is changing rapidly, the crucial moment is arriving. Gu tribe leader, will your tribe still uphold our agreement from a million years ago?"



Gu tribe's leader smiled, he did not reply immediately: "We need to discuss this matter deeply, Senior Wu Shuai, please come in."

Saying so, he gave way.

# **Chapter 1851 - Interfering in Three Regions**

## Chapter 1851 Interfering in Three Regions

The dragonman clone first entered Dragon Palace, before flying into the blessed land while inside this Immortal Gu House.

The blessed land was Gu tribe's headquarters, it was outsider territory and Gu tribe's leader had rank eight cultivation level, it was much safer to be vigilant in this situation.

Once he entered the blessed land, he saw a vast area. This blessed land was huge, it was larger than some grotto-heavens.

Within the blessed land, he could see various types of immortal materials around, most were extinct in the current era already, Fang Yuan's clone gained quite a bit of insight.

“Even though this blessed land's foundation cannot compare to Lang Ya blessed land, it is not far off.” Dragonman clone Wu Shuai thought.

Among the blessed lands that Fang Yuan had seen, Lang Ya blessed land had the deepest foundation, followed by Imperial Court blessed land, this current one was the third.

“Gu tribe blessed land, development of over a million years! The generations of Gu tribe leaders had at least rank seven cultivation level, most were rank eight, with such an expert defending it, this blessed land's calamities and tribulations were not a threat.”

“Furthermore... Gu tribe does not consist of humans, it receives the help of heaven's will. Even if there are calamities and tribulations, they would not be very strong.”

Wu Shuai thought to himself.

The way of heaven was to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits, it emphasized on balance. Currently humans were the overlords of the world, and all the variant human forces were forced to live pitifully in some corners of the world.

Thus, any variant human group would receive the help of heaven's will.

“Senior Wu Shuai, please come with me.” Gu tribe's leader said politely while leading the way.

Dragonman clone Wu Shuai followed closely, after flying for some time, the two landed in a dense forest.

In this primordial forest, there was a huge tribe that had over ten thousand people, the ones living in this tribe were all beastmen.

Indeed, this Gu tribe was a beastman tribe.

According to human historical records, beastmen were extinct, but the truth was, heaven left them a chance of survival, a lineage of beastman bloodline had survived and lived until today, isolated from the world.

Wu Shuai received a warm welcome from the entire tribe.

Soon, the banquet was ready, Gu tribe's leader invited Wu Shuai to take a seat.

Wu Shuai walked out of Dragon Palace, he was accompanied by two dragon generals as his bodyguards.

Gu tribe leader's pupils shrank a little as he laughed loudly, his attitude was even more enthusiastic than before.

Wu Shuai only exposed half of his dragon generals, but each of them had rank eight cultivation level like Gu tribe's leader. Within this beastman blessed land, other than Gu tribe's leader, there were no other rank eight existences.

Because of his dream realm explorations, Fang Yuan's clone had a great understanding of this beastman tribe.

After talking for some time, Wu Shuai gained a clearer understanding of Gu tribe. Gu tribe's leader also dispelled the suspicions in his heart after this conversation.

This beastman tribe consisted mostly of fish head and human body members, their cheeks had gills, their ears were fins, and they had spiky fins on their backs. Other than that, some had frog legs, some had seabird wings, some carried turtle shells, and some had a ring of green seaweed on their heads.

These beastmen originally lived in the sea, back then, the beastman race went from domineering to weak, they were wiped out on the mainland, only this small group living in the sea were spared.

Because the beastman race became weak while humans dominated the world, this group of beastmen had to recuperate in the sea, they did not dare to take any actions.

But their enmity with humans had never been forgotten. Almost every generation's Gu tribe leader had such intentions, they wanted to create internal conflict in humans and allow themselves a chance to rise up.

In history, the real Wu Shuai met his generation's Gu tribe leader and it was because of their alignments that he helped Wu Shuai become an immortal, they went after fate Gu together, he was a formidable person!

In order to deal with dragonman extermination, Wu Shuai talked with Gu tribe's leader, they came up with an alliance agreement of both races.

Earlier at the door of the blessed land, Fang Yuan's clone and this generation's Gu tribe leader conversed, they were talking about this agreement.

This was the arrangement left by the real Wu Shuai, he had prepared it to lead the dragonman race to prosperity. Now that Fang Yuan inherited

Dragon Palace, he naturally wanted to make use of this arrangement.

Gu tribe had developed under the sea for so many years, while Gu tribe's leader was a rank eight expert, with their deep foundation, Fang Yuan wanted to make good use of their strength.

Gathering more strength to deal with Heavenly Court, this was something Fang Yuan wanted to do.

While Fang Yuan's Wu Shuai clone and Gu tribe's leader were conversing happily, in Western Desert, Yang Zi He and Zhang Yin had succeeded.

Rumble!

With an intense sound, Yang Zi He finished his last attack.

Taking a look, the prosperous oasis here had turned into rubble, nothing was left.

This was a large resource point of Fang clan, it was destroyed without any possibility of recovery now.

“We should go!”

“This is the third place we destroyed, according to master's orders, we can return already.”

“Let's inspect first, and see if we left any clues behind.”

The two dragon generals inspected carefully, they left after making sure nothing was left behind.

Fang clan went into a commotion!

Losing three large resource points in one day, Fang clan's losses were not small at all.

Dong clan was also shocked!

Because in the rubble, there were some words written and left behind — Dong Lu Chen was here.

Dong Lu Chen was the first supreme elder of Dong clan, earlier, Fang clan had taken revenge on him, using a theft path Immortal Gu House to destroy one of Dong clan's oasis resource points.

After hearing the news, Dong Lu Chen's face turned dark as he scolded: "These shameless people, the so-called righteous path! They dare to frame me and actually used such a terrible method! If I find the culprit, I will not let them off!"

Dong Lu Chen did not suspect Fang Yuan of course, his suspicions were on the super forces besides Fang clan and Dong clan.

This was an obvious plot to sow discord, if Fang clan fell for it and started to retaliate against Dong clan, those Western Desert super clans were the first ones to benefit.

Dong Lu Chen could not sit and wait, he quickly sent a letter to Fang clan's first supreme elder, Fang Gong.

Fang clan had the wisdom path Gu Immortal Fang Di Chang, they would not fall for such a plot, after thinking about it, Fang Di Chang asked Fang Gong to send Dong Lu Chen a letter and work together to find the real culprit.

This was a great move.

After Dong Lu Chen received the letter, he realized it was a little troublesome.

He knew that Fang clan was trying to rope in Dong clan and make them allies on the same side.

But Dong Lu Chen was not stupid.

Dong clan and Fang clan shared borders, when Fang clan gets stronger in the future, they would first eat into Dong clan's territory and benefits.

But if he did not try to find the culprit, would it imply that he had a guilty conscience?

Dong Lu Chen thought about it for a while, he decided to head to the crime scene and try to find the culprit with Fang clan's Gu Immortals.

They would obviously not be able to find the truth, since Fang Yuan sent two dragon generals to deal with this matter, he definitely had ways to divert them away from the truth.

Thus, Fang clan and Dong clan got their answer, it pointed to the other forces near them.

But Fang clan and Dong clan were calm, they did not go to question the others, they only remembered this in their hearts.

Both of them were very restrained.

Dong Lu Chen memorized these few clans, he did not want to expose them, he needed them to deal with Fang clan after all.

And Fang clan, in order to maintain stability, would not resist these super forces openly. After all, it was all alone, while Divine Bean Palace was still far from being refined.

“Second supreme elder, the situation is getting more dangerous, can you really unravel Divine Bean Palace alone, isn't it too tiring? That Suan Bu Jin is a wisdom path Gu Immortal, maybe he can help you and do some of the work for you.” Fang Gong suggested to Fang Di Chang.

In his opinion, Suan Bu Jin had participated in the battle over Divine Bean Palace, he had entered it before, now that he was Fang clan's external supreme elder, he was one of them and was trustworthy.

Fang Di Chang thought about it but could not make up his mind, in the end he sighed: “Let me think about it.”

Southern Border.



In Xia clan's headquarters, Xia Cha was also sighing.

She had been released by Fang Yuan, even though she had her body and soul, her immortal aperture was taken by Fang Yuan and annexed by his sovereign immortal aperture.

Xia Cha was no longer a rank eight Gu Immortal, she was a mortal.

Even though she was still the first supreme elder of Xia clan in name, Xia Cha felt like this status was a joke.

"I am a cripple now!"

"Even if I was rank eight in the past, so what?"

"Fang Yuan! You have amazing methods, if I can ever take revenge for this immense hatred, I will tear off your skin, pull out your tendons, and grind your bones till they turn to dust!"

Thinking so, Xia Cha sighed again.

She knew herself that this hope of revenge was too slim.

"Good news, good news, Lady Xia Cha!" At this moment, Xia clan's third supreme elder came running excitedly.

"What good news?" Xia Cha frowned as she looked at him.

Xia clan's third supreme elder handed Xia Cha an information path mortal Gu: "This was the letter that demon Fang Yuan sent over using treasure yellow heaven."

Xia Cha laughed coldly: "This demon is devious and greedy, not only did he capture us, he separated our bodies and souls, extorting us time and again, he truly deserves death!"

"Right now, Fang Yuan does not have much to extort us already. I do not need to read this letter, it is merely a new idea from Fang Yuan to extort our Southern Border righteous path."

Xia Cha shook her head continuously.

Xia clan's third supreme elder nodded: "Lady Xia Cha is right, Fang Yuan's intentions are obvious. He has been buying luck path immortal materials recently, he seems to be refining many luck path Immortal Gu. But this time, his offer is truly..."

"What? He is offering Immortal Gu? Or does he want to exchange Gu for Gu?" Xia Cha frowned before waving her hand: "You do not need my agreement for this matter, let second supreme elder handle it. If it is an Immortal Gu beneficial to our clan, let's exchange for it."

"This time, Fang Yuan is offering a mortal Gu."

"Hmph, wanting to exchange a mortal Gu for Immortal Gu or immortal materials? Wishful thinking!"

Xia clan's third supreme elder smiled: "Lady Xia Cha, you should look at this first."

Xia Cha received the information path Gu worm as she looked and sneered at it: "Has Fang Yuan gone insane? He wants to get so many immortal materials with just one mortal Gu. I want to see what Gu this is!"

"Hmm?!" Xia Cha saw the crucial information in the letter, her expression changed abruptly.

She quickly stood up and said in an unquestionable tone: "I must have mortal Gu, we need to get it regardless of the price! Fang Yuan wants luck path immortal materials? Give him, give them all to him!"

# **Chapter 1852 - Contest Over Gu Refinemen**

## Chapter 1852 Contest Over Gu Refinement

Southern Border.

Ba clan, Mansion Mountain.

Ba Shi Ba carefully held a rank one mortal Gu as he stared without blinking, he was deeply concentrating: “This is second aperture Gu?”

He observed carefully, this Gu worm looked like a beetle with two sharp ends and a fat midsection, it was the size of a young man’s fist. It was like blue jade, and felt soft and cool to the touch. There was a golden eye on its plump back. The golden eye flashed with lightning, seemingly having a mind of its own.

To exchange for this Gu worm, Ba clan had used up almost all of the luck path immortal materials that it had in its inventory.

Fang Yuan was extorting them but Ba Shi Ba had to accept it, even though this was a tiny rank one Gu, it gave him the courage and hope to continue living in this world!

Second aperture Gu was very easy to use, it did not require primeval essence or immortal essence, by just dripping one’s blood onto the Gu, and feeding it until it was full, it would self-detonate and take effect.

After second aperture Gu self-detonated, it created a tiny aperture in Ba Shi Ba’s body.

This was a rank one aperture, the lowest rank of cultivation.

But Ba Shi Ba’s eyes turned red after seeing this, he was so excited his body started shaking intensely.

“Even if that demon Fang Yuan extorts us, I needed to buy this!”

“With this aperture, I can cultivate again. From rank one to five, I can use relic Gu. After rank six, I can have the help of Gu Immortals in the clan to undergo tribulations.”

“But to reach the foundation and achievements of my first immortal aperture, it would be too hard.”

Thinking of this, Ba Shi Ba gritted his teeth, he was filled with hatred towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan captured and soul searched him, even taking his first aperture away. Even if he gave a second aperture Gu, this was another form of extortion!

For Ba Shi Ba who originally had rank eight cultivation level, it was a great humiliation.

“Fang Yuan, just you wait, one day, I will take revenge for this humiliation. I will return you a hundredfold the pain that you have caused on me, you will get to enjoy this feeling yourself!”

Ba Shi Ba had a ruthless expression, he had not been having a good time these last days.

He was still the first supreme elder of Ba clan, but after getting captured by Fang Yuan, not only did his reputation fall, he was also turned into a cripple now.

Compared to Xia Cha, Ba Shi Ba was in a worse state.

Because during the time he got captured, Ba clan gained a new rank eight Gu Immortal.

Ba De!

After Ba De became a rank eight Gu Immortal, he immediately became the second supreme elder and led the affairs of Ba clan.

Ba Shi Ba's authority was taken away.

"Thankfully, I have this second aperture Gu now!"

"I have ample cultivation experience, I have gone through tens of tribulations, it will be easy to become an immortal again, I am certain of it."

"I need to use my time well and quickly become a Gu Immortal again. After all, my influence will become smaller over time, I need to use the rest of my influence well and try to help my cultivation process to make it as smooth as possible."

Ba Shi Ba had his own plans, he already prepared enough relic Gu.

Immediately, he used them all, quickly becoming a rank one peak stage Gu Master.

But at this point, no matter how Ba Shi Ba attacked his aperture walls, it remained motionless.

"What is happening?"

"My cultivation level is stuck! This second aperture has issues!"

Ba Shi Ba became furious and shocked after checking it, he felt like he was deceived, he had bought a fake product with a huge price.

He quickly called the Gu Immortals who were close to him and asked them to contact Fang Yuan, to ask what was this situation about.

Fang Yuan was researching on Primordial Origin's true inheritance, his expression shifted slightly into a smile as cold light flashed in his eyes: "It seems that they have discovered the problem already."

However, he was prepared for this, he quickly responded.

Ba Shi Ba heard his response and broke his favorite teacup in anger:

"Demon, you are going too far!"

It turned out that Fang Yuan had only mentioned his second aperture Gu could awaken a second aperture, it did not say that there was a restriction on cultivation advancement. To mislead the Southern Border immortals, Fang Yuan described his own feelings and experiences when he first used second aperture Gu.

Ba Shi Ba foolishly thought that this second aperture Gu would allow him to rapidly become a Gu Immortal again.

Over on Xia Cha's end, a wisdom path Gu Immortal noticed this problem. Fang Yuan thus told Xia Cha that this second aperture Gu was originally an Immortal Gu, he had modified it into a series of Gu from rank one to six. Rank one second aperture Gu could allow one to have rank one cultivation level, the others from rank two to five followed the same logic.

Xia Cha immediately wanted to buy the rank six second aperture Gu but Fang Yuan's response made her speechless: "I am only selling rank one second aperture Gu!"

"It seems that Ba Shi Ba is in a worse state compared to Xia Cha." Fang Yuan smiled, he could see the anxiety in Ba Shi Ba's heart from just this small incident.

"This means that Ba De has become a rank eight already, even though Ba clan is keeping quiet about it."

"This is a good thing."

The Southern Border immortals had an immense grudge with Fang Yuan, but they shared the same common enemy — Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court wanted to repair fate Gu, in the previous life, Fang Yuan had already seen the attitude of Southern Border's righteous path.

Thus, Fang Yuan returned the bodies and souls of the Southern Border immortals, even though he annexed their immortal apertures, he gave them second aperture Gu as well.

His motive was to ensure that the Southern Border immortals had some level of battle strength remaining, sufficient to find trouble with Heavenly Court.

After experiencing so many things, through hurdles and difficulties, Fang Yuan finally managed to live through the great pressure of Heavenly Court. He now had deep foundation and many subordinates, he was able to interfere in the politics of the five regions, he could secretly use many methods to form a huge plan that would encircle Heavenly Court!

Unconsciously, he had already grown from a pawn to a chess player.

“Fang Yuan, I want to eat your flesh and drink your blood!” Ba Shi Ba looked at the letter as his body shook in deep anger.

He finally understood Fang Yuan’s goal.

Fang Yuan refined a set of second aperture Gu, if Ba Shi Ba wanted to regain his cultivation level from rank one to two to three... he would need to use an entire set until rank six second aperture Gu, to gain a proper immortal aperture and finally rise back to rank eight cultivation level.

That was to say, if Ba Shi Ba wanted to regain his former glory, he would need to be extorted by Fang Yuan six times!

Ba Shi Ba cursed and threw a few more items around before he slowly calmed down.

Looking at the messy study room, he pondered for a moment before laughing loudly: “Ba Shi Ba, oh Ba Shi Ba, how can you behave like this? You had lost in the first place and got captured, it was already immense fortune that you survived. How can you still act so worried over losses and gains?”

“So what if I cannot regain my cultivation, so what? As long as I work hard enough, I will have no regrets even in death.”

He muttered, it seemed like he was rationalizing with himself.



After saying that, his body relaxed, he felt his mind clearing up, he could also see at a greater height, a scene that he could not observe when he was still a rank eight in the past.

This was the scenery of human life!

He had completely calmed down, a smile showing at the corner of his lips.

“Fang Yuan, you demon, you are truly formidable, I fell for it once again.” The hatred in his heart did not go away, but Ba Shi Ba started to smile and face reality, he no longer acted like before.

At this moment, even though he did not have high cultivation level, he was much more carefree and composed than the time when he was a rank eight.

“I don’t have much of a choice now, I need to accept his extortion. After all, becoming an immortal is the most important matter now!” Ba Shi Ba felt clarity in his heart.

The clan could be relied on, but only for some time. His influence and favors that were accumulated from the past would slowly dwindle with the passing of time.

Especially when a new rank eight Gu Immortal appeared in the clan.

He needed to act quickly!

“Rotten soil blood powder, treasure flower in the earth. Jade bone turned into petals, ice muscles into stalks and golden relic into the heart of the flower. A bright stellar fire, gather ice and snow into plains. Yang cloud burns with elixir fire below and yin clouds scatter sand like gold above, add beast phantoms in the middle until lightning crackles, creating beast strength placenta, and start collecting apertures...”

This was the Gu recipe of his second aperture Gu.

Fang Yuan had obtained it from Three Kings blessed land.

The former part was the same as the original, Fang Yuan did not modify anything, but the latter part was completely changed, it could not be recognized from before.

Fang Yuan modified this Gu recipe, from the rank six Immortal Gu recipe to a series of Gu.

Fang Yuan had refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster and human path grandmaster attainment level, he even had the light of wisdom helping him, it was not hard to make this deduction.

“With this set of Gu worms, I can extort them all the way. If there is no chance for extortion, I will create my own opportunities.”

“In fact, this method can be used in Eastern Sea, Western Desert, and Northern Plains as well. As for Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, I’d rather just kill them instead.”

Fang Yuan was an unscrupulous merchant with no sympathy.

Mortal level second aperture Gu had an extremely low cost of production, it did not need lifespan Gu or immortal materials.

It needed more human apertures instead.

Human apertures were simply Gu Master apertures.

Fang Yuan simply captured some human Gu Masters to use as Gu materials, it was easy and cheap.

But he sold them to the Southern Border immortals at an extremely high price, he earns hundreds or even thousands of times the profit.

And these Southern Border immortals treated second aperture Gu as their life-saving rope, the only hope in their lives, no matter what price Fang Yuan asked, they would accept it without resistance.

Of course, Fang Yuan had considered their bottom line and also the overall situation of resisting Central Continent in the future.

“Success, Lord Fang Yuan, we refined another luck path Immortal Gu!” The hairy man Gu Immortals transmitted good news again.

“Very good, keep up the good work.” Fang Yuan praised casually.

This extortion of the Southern Border immortals was very successful because of second aperture Gu, many of the clans handed over their precious luck path immortal materials.

With them, Fang Yuan ordered the hairy man Gu Immortals to start refining luck path Immortal Gu without restraint.

The price of refining Immortal Gu was high, his luck path immortal materials dwindled in numbers, but his gains were immense.

These last days, several luck path Immortal Gu were refined, becoming Fang Yuan’s possession.

Heavenly Court.

“Damn, I failed again.” Yuan Qiong Du had an ashen expression, looking at the pile of ashes in front of him, he had an ugly expression.

During this period of time, he simply could not believe this was reality!

First, he tried to refine fixed space Gu, he failed.

Recently, he tried refining several luck path Gu worm, he failed, failed, and failed!

“My methods are not wrong, the process was smooth too, but Immortal Gu are unique.”

“Many of these Immortal Gu exist already, I cannot refine them!”

“Sigh, if only I can find out which Immortal Gu are already in existence, that would be great.”

Fang Yuan's tactic of refining the luck path Immortal Gu first made Heavenly Court suffer great losses.

This was a hidden showdown, whoever had the initiative would reap the greatest benefits.

Even though Heavenly Court had a deep foundation and bottomless inventory, Fang Yuan made use of Southern Border's righteous path and firmly suppressed Heavenly Court in this regard.

Unless Fang Yuan stopped now, Yuan Qiong Du would continue to fail, he would not have many gains.

## **Chapter 1853 - Good Child**

## Chapter 1853 Good Child

Coo coo coo...

Sounds of the strange birds resounded in this sky. The size of the bird group was huge, it looked like a gigantic dark cloud that approached Mountain Cliff City.

Within Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, Mountain Cliff City was one of the ten most special cities.

This city was built at the top of a cliff, at its highest point. The people and social behavior here were all quite special.

“Fat butt birds are coming!”

“Quick, quick, prepare for defense!”

“Everyone, don’t panic, our Combat Beast Envoys have not arrived yet.”

At this moment, Mountain Cliff City was filled with voices and extreme vigilance.

The fat butt bird group made shriek noises as they flew towards the top of Mountain Cliff City.

They had a crown on their heads, their bodies were covered in messy feathers, their bodies were fat, they had especially large butts.

Within the bird group, there was a bird king that was twice the size of an ordinary fat butt bird. It flew on top of Mountain Cliff City as it looked down, its butt moved with force as it squeezed, a lump of bird shit fell down immediately.

This bird shit was smelly and dark, it was huge, about the size of a hut, falling from the sky.

Swoosh—!

Boom!

The bird shit fell with increasing speed, there was a sharp sound as it crashed down, destroying a segment of the city walls.

Fortunately, there were not many people around, few got injured.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Boom boom boom!

The bird king's attack started the offensive streak of the bird group, lumps of bird shit started to fall from the sky, crashing on Mountain Cliff City.

At once, it was as if the sky started to rain heavily.

But this rain contained peculiar raindrops, they were oversized bird shit.

A large number of houses collapsed as they got crushed, the walkway, gardens, fountains, and even the City Lord statue at the center of the city got mercilessly covered in bird shit.

After the first wave of attacks, the bird king flapped its wings and rose into the air with its army. There were a huge number of them, they circled around before returning and approaching Mountain Cliff City again.

“Combat Beast Envoys, attack!” At this moment, the leader of the troops defending Mountain Cliff City shouted loudly as he led the way, flying into the sky and facing these fat butt birds in battle.

A large number of Combat Beast Envoys followed, at once, humans and birds engaged in a huge aerial battle.

“Little eagle, let’s go fight too, do you dare or not?” Youngster Zhan Bu Du had already sneaked out of the City Lord’s manor, he spoke to the arrowtail eagle on his shoulder.

The arrowtail eagle screeched as arrogance flashed on its cute and young face. It flapped its wings and pecked Zhan Bu Du’s face lightly, as if it was angry at its master’s belittling attitude.

“Since you are not afraid, let me go with you!” Zhan Bu Du smiled, he seemed like an innocent youngster but was actually Fang Yuan’s clone, he had been taken in as a disciple of Mountain Cliff City Lord, he had spent a lot of time with the young eagle, he had a good grasp of its nature. With just a little provocation now, the young arrowtail eagle burst out with battle intent.

“Come, little arrowtail eagle.” Zhan Bu Du shouted loudly.

The young arrowtail eagle screeched as it flapped its wings, it shot towards the sky like an arrow before flying back towards Zhan Bu Du.

Zhan Bu Du shouted again: “Combat Beast Envoy — Transform[1]!”

He activated his Gu worm as his body shined with dazzling azure light. The young arrowtail eagle slammed onto his body and fused with the human shaped light figure.

At the next moment, the human shaped light figure went through rapid collision and changed form.

As the azure light faded, Zhan Bu Du grew to a three meter tall giant with an eagle head and human body, he had azure wings on his back, his arms and legs had turned into yellow bird claws.

Zhan Bu Du flapped his wings intensely as wild winds blew, he soared into the sky and entered the battlefield.

“Look, it’s Little Du. He sneaked out to join the battle after all. This child!” A middle aged beauty looked at Little Du’s flying figure with worry.



She was the daughter-in-law of Mountain Cliff City Lord, she had one son but he had died when he was still a child.

After Mountain Cliff City Lord took Zhan Bu Du in as his disciple, he quickly became a member of this family. The middle aged beauty made him her godson and placed all the love she had for her deceased child onto Zhan Bu Du.

Beside her was a middle aged man, he only had his upper body left, his lower part was cleanly cut off. But his face was still lively, he was quite spirited.

He looked at Zhan Bu Du as he praised after a while: “Hahaha, this kid’s fighting ability is getting higher. As expected of the person who received my teaching, father, you took in a good disciple.”

“He is your godson too.” The old Mountain Cliff City Lord stroked his beard as he said happily.

He had originally adopted Zhan Bu Du through a coincidence, because the young arrowtail eagle had treated Zhan Bu Du as its family, he could not separate them. But after teaching him well, Mountain Cliff City Lord found that Zhan Bu Du was actually a raw talent, the more he taught him, the more he shined.

Zhan Bu Du displayed great comprehension ability, he also worked very hard, Mountain Cliff City Lord was very satisfied. And even more satisfying was that Zhan Bu Du had a helpful nature, he was brave and kindhearted, he was like the sunlight which could penetrate into people’s hearts.

“Be careful!” In the sky, Zhan Bu Du shouted as he raised his speed.

He slashed with his right claw, shooting out a wind blade.

The azure wind blade was like a curved blade that directly slaughtered the fat butt bird that chased after him.

“Thank you, Little Du.” The Combat Beast Envoy who was saved was a guard of Mountain Cliff City, at this moment, he had a complex feeling.

Because normally, he looked down on Little Du, he laughed at his weak strength, he had only gained the arrowtail eagle’s recognition because he was lucky.

But now it seemed like Zhan Bu Du’s combat ability far exceeded him, even saving him without minding their past conflict.

“Don’t worry about it, we are all people of Mountain Cliff City.” Zhan Bu Du opened his beak as he spoke human words.

After hearing his words, the Combat Beast Envoy felt even more complex than before.

“Quickly regroup, fight the fat butt bird group and protect the city!” Zhan Bu Du urged.

“Okay!” The Combat Beast Envoy nodded seriously as he joined the intense battle again.

Mountain Cliff City Lord watched this scene as his evaluation of Zhan Bu Du rose again.

“This child.” The middle aged beauty eased her frown: “I will deal with him when he comes back!”

“Hahaha.” The wheelchair bound middle aged man laughed cheerfully.

Mountain Cliff City Lord nodded lightly, he did not say anything.

“After this battle, everyone’s impression of me will improve again.” Zhan Bu Du was very calm, he analyzed the situation.

The Combat Beast Envoy he saved was very grateful to him, but the truth was, Zhan Bu Du was very grateful towards him as well.

“Without someone like him, how could it display my superior character?”

After gaining the arrowtail eagle's recognition, his status rose immensely as he became the disciple of Mountain Cliff City Lord, this made a lot of people envious.

Fang Yuan made use of everyone's mentality as he chose a seemingly vicious enemy who was actually harmless to him.

After he purposely met with the enemy by 'coincidence', they went into a verbal brawl.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan intensified this conflict and even got beaten by his enemy in a public area.

Afterwards, he went home with bruises and spoke to Mountain Cliff City Lord, asking to intensify his training without explaining the reason. That way, Mountain Cliff City Lord would be able to interpret it himself.

Originally, Fang Yuan wanted to use this enemy to raise his own reputation. But with this fat butt bird calamity, he had an even better chance.

Once the chance appeared, Fang Yuan's clone immediately used the chance to save his enemy under everyone's supervision.

"After entering this place, my luck has always been good, even though the descending bird egg had expended a lot of my luck. It seems that the main body's luck path attainment is getting deeper and more profound, he can provide me with a lot of help."

After the intense battle, the fat butt birds lost.

Zhan Bu Du's performance was very eye-catching, he was almost about to kill the bird king when Mountain Cliff City Lord transmitted his voice and stopped him.

After the battle, Zhan Bu Du purposely went to ask Mountain Cliff City Lord, showing his confusion: "Grandfather, why didn't you let me kill that vicious bird king? Without it, our Mountain Cliff City Lord will not face such a calamity anymore."

“Little Du.” Mountain Cliff City Lord patted Fang Yuan’s clone’s tiny head, he said with joy: “Even if you kill the bird king, they would choose a new one.”

“Then why didn’t grandfather deal with them personally? With your strength, you can wipe out the bird group.” Fang Yuan asked innocently.

Mountain Cliff City Lord smiled again: “That is because the bird faeces are a good thing. It can make our soil fertile, it can help the wheat grow more healthily, in fact, many caravans want to trade goods for our bird faeces.”

“Is that so? The smelly bird shit is a treasure?!” Fang Yuan’s clone was deeply surprised.

Looking at him, Mountain Cliff City Lord laughed heartily: “Oh Little Du, grandfather taught you not to judge a book by its cover, you must not just look at the appearance of the things in this world.”

“I understand now, I will remember grandfather’s words deeply.” Fang Yuan’s clone nodded solemnly.

“Mm, good boy.” Mountain Cliff City Lord smiled again, he thought to himself: “Other than that, there are other reasons of course. But you are still young and innocent, my disciple, it is still too early for you to learn about those reasons.”

After saying goodbye to Mountain Cliff City Lord, Fang Yuan left the City Lord’s manor.

The city lord manor was huge and tall, it was a city within a city. Fang Yuan could see the entire city from this altitude.

Within the city, the people were already starting to rebuild and recuperate. The mortals stopped hiding, they came out of their bunkers and caves.

This fat butt bird calamity did not just give Fang Yuan’s clone a huge amount of reputation, he even gained a deeper understanding of this world.

“The fat butt bird king is a mutated beast king, it has rank five Gu Master battle strength. I am just a rank one Gu Master, but with the arrowtail eagle’s power, after fusing with it, I could almost kill it. Battle strength is too easily obtained inside this grotto-heaven, thus the traditional Gu Master cultivation cannot prosper.”

“But if this Gu Master cultivation way flourished, this city would not just be made of simple rocks and mud, it would have dozens of Gu Houses as defensive towers. The fat butt bird calamity would not have caused such losses.”

“However, there are great merits in keeping the calamity around.”

“Mountain Cliff City is located at the top of a cliff, it is surrounded by hard mountain rocks, bird faeces are needed to fertilize the land so that farming can take place efficiently. The bird faeces are also a huge resource that can attract merchant caravans to come from afar, engaging in trading.”

“Mountain Cliff City can use this test to recruit more talents. Giving the city some external pressure will also promote unity, these city inhabitants will also place their faith in the ruler.”

“The killer move myriad beings assimilation transformation affects the entire grotto-heaven. Gu Masters can use the killer move’s power to transform in here, the process would require them to expend their positive emotions. Thus, Combat Beast Envoys are usually people with rich positive emotions.”

“But this does not mean that the people here are innocent, the higher-ups still possess crafty scheming abilities and methods.”

Fang Yuan thought about this as he went to the outer city.

“Ah, Lord Zhan Bu Du.”

“Young master Zhan Bu Du.”

“Hello, young master!”

“Young master fought heroically, all of us watched it from here.”

Along the way, Fang Yuan was well received with everyone’s greetings.

He opened his mouth and scratched his head, he smiled in an embarrassed manner, revealing his white teeth: “Hi everyone, hi everyone, don’t call me young master or lord, just call me Little Du!”

“Here, uncle, let me help you.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined as he walked forward to an old man, snatching his shovel away.

“Uncle, take a break, let me help you dig the faeces up.” Fang Yuan said.

“Oh, Little Du, you came to help me again. You are such a good child, you are a good child!” The old man was so moved his eyes turned red.

Even though Combat Beast Envoys had rich positive emotions, strength often changed people, many people would mind their own statuses, who would act like Fang Yuan, even though he was the Mountain Cliff City Lord’s disciple, he came to the mortal area and had no fear of getting tired or dirty, he helped these mortals with his own strength.

Fang Yuan worked as he thought: “Looking at the time, my main body is about to take action. My progress alone will not reach my goals in the short time, I need the main body to unleash a beast calamity while I cooperate with him.”

“The main body’s beast calamity will not be a tiny problem like the fat butt birds.”

While the city people praised Fang Yuan immensely, they had no idea that he was plotting a devious and vicious scheme that would harm the entire grotto-heaven right now.

[1] Henshin!

# **Chapter 1854 - Twelve Zodiac Battle Formation**

## Chapter 1854 Twelve Zodiac Battle Formation

The water of the River of Time flowed slowly, emitting beautiful lights of various colors.

Compared to the River of Time, this river water was not wide or deep, it was just a tributary.

This was Beast Calamity grotto-heaven's tributary of the River of Time, because of it, time could flow in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it was not a still and motionless world.

A figure suddenly appeared.

He had a pale face that resembled jade, he had a divine and unparalleled appearance, his nose bridge was tall and his eyes were dark like the abyss, his long hair extended to his waist, resembling a black waterfall.

It was Fang Yuan's main body!

"Let's do it here." Fang Yuan looked at this tributary of the River of Time, he waved his hand.

Suddenly, twelve balls of light shot out .

The balls of light landed in the tributary of the River of Time, turning into twelve immemorial year beasts.

These twelve immemorial year beasts had different forms, they were the rat, ox, tiger, rabbit, dragon, snake, horse, sheep, money, chicken, dog and pig. Among them, the immemorial year rat, ox and dog were the most powerful and outstanding.



Back then, when Fang Yuan fought against Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals in the River of Time, he had used Myriad Year Flying Warship to defeat them. But towards the end, these three immemorial year beasts came to fight Fang Yuan, the immemorial year ox crashed into Myriad Year Flying Warship and damaged it, the immemorial year dog's bite crushed the sides of the vessel, while the immemorial year rat directly went inside and took away Years Flow Like Water!

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had prepared for this and created a fake Years Flow Like Water as bait, the immemorial year rat was deceived and took away the bait, it attracted a lot of attention and helped Fang Yuan's Myriad Year Flying Warship to escape from danger.

After the matter, Fang Yuan recovered and went back into the River of Time using Myriad Year Flying Warship, he went to find these immemorial year beasts. After some effort, he finally subdued them all.

As a result, Fang Yuan finally collected all twelve immemorial year beasts.

While cultivating, Fang Yuan used this foundation to assemble his Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

"Right now, I have not practiced Twelve Zodiac battle formation enough to fight against Heavenly Court, but against Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it is more than sufficient." Fang Yuan had a plan in his mind.

The Twelve Zodiac battle formation was an ancient battle formation, it was not the same as the current era's Gu formations.

And because Fang Yuan's main body was not inside controlling it, there was a great difficulty in trying to manipulate this ancient battle formation.

It was still effective against Beast Calamity grotto-heaven's inhabitants, but against Heavenly Court's experts, it would expose too many flaws, they would not be threatened by it.

Immemorial year beasts roared as the Twelve Zodiac battle formation activated, twelve lumps of piercing light formed into twelve golden pillars

that stabbed into the bottom of the river, while extending up towards the sky.

The pillars were tightly connected together, golden radiance burst out as the twelve golden pillars vanished, only a dense golden fog remained, it shrouded over the tributary of the River of Time, it was so thick one could not see anything inside.

Swish swish swish!

The golden fog influenced the tributary of the River of Time, causing the river water to move quicker and quicker.

The Twelve Zodiac battle formation was an offensive battle formation, but Fang Yuan was a quasi-supreme in time path, when he activated it, he could break free from the limitations of the battle formation, creating a profound change to influence the time flow in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven itself.

This influence was naturally very severe.

“At this moment, the qilin heavenly spirit should have noticed it.” Fang Yuan smiled as he waved his sleeves, opening his immortal aperture’s entrance and letting out a large number of year beasts.

Among these year beasts, there were desolate beasts and also ancient desolate beasts.

The year beasts growled and roared, they charged out of the golden fog as they invaded Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Any time path Gu Immortal attacking a grotto-heaven or blessed land would have a different route that other paths could not use, that was the tributary of the River of Time.

As a time path quasi-supreme, he naturally had such a method.

Fang Yuan was a huge demon of the current era, once he acted, he caused an overwhelming influence on the entire Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven's qilin heavenly spirit was shook awake: "Oh no! The tributary of the River of Time has been altered, there is a time path great expert forcefully modifying the time flow of this grotto-heaven, we need to stop them!"

The cultivators in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven went on another cultivation way and did not know the outside world, they thought that Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was the entire world, they could not even connect to treasure yellow heaven.

But the qilin heavenly spirit was born from the obsession of Beast Calamity Immortal, it was not restricted by this.

The qilin heavenly spirit had a lot of knowledge, after Fang Yuan made his move, it immediately sensed that Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was in an incredibly dangerous state.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven's rate of time was raised several times by Fang Yuan, this meant that calamities and tribulations would descend very rapidly. Even though Beast Calamity grotto-heaven had the protection of myriad beings assimilation transformation, it could not endure the non-stop occurrence of the calamities and tribulations.

The qilin heavenly spirit did not show up, but it had control of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it had many ways to hint the Gu cultivators of this place. Furthermore, Fang Yuan purposely wanted them to notice him, he sent a large number of year beasts that left the tributary of the River of Time, showing up everywhere in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

A mighty tribulation instantly formed, it caught all of the Gu Immortals in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven unguarded.

Because of the year beasts' destruction, a lot of areas suffered great losses, lives were lost, the entire grotto-heaven was in a state of chaos and commotion.

Mountain Cliff City was implicated as well, as a Gu Immortal, Mountain Cliff City Lord was also mobilized to fight.

“To settle this tribulation, we need to deal with the source. After I leave, Mountain Cliff City will be in your hands.” Mountain Cliff City Lord instructed.

His subordinates in the city quickly nodded as they showed solemn expressions.

Without Mountain Cliff City Lord here, they lacked confidence.

“Master, don’t worry, I am here!” Zhan Bu Du shouted loudly, his innocent face was filled with fighting spirit, this made everyone chuckle.

“The future belongs to you, my disciple.” Mountain Cliff City Lord patted the shoulder of Fang Yuan’s clone as he turned to leave.

Fang Yuan watched the old man leave as he thought: “The main body attacked and set a formation in the tributary of the River of Time. After Mountain Cliff City Lord arrives, he will be trapped within the formation, awaiting my rescue. The stage has been set, all it needs is a protagonist, me.”

Time passed rapidly, months went by in an instant.

Year beasts continued to spread out, but Fang Yuan’s main body controlled the source, he prevented this calamity from spreading to the core area of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

As the sole super force in the grotto-heaven, the Combat Beast Guild started to deploy young Gu Masters.

Zhan Bu Du was among them.

He was brought to a valley with a group of similarly aged Gu Masters.

This was an entrance that the qilin heavenly spirit had secretly created, it could allow one to enter or leave the tributary of the River of Time.

The guild master was the current generation Combat Beast King, he was a thin old man, speaking to these youngsters about the situation personally:

“...We found out from our investigation that the golden fog in this river has many peculiar traits. The younger and stronger an individual is, the easier they can enter or leave. Right now, most of the Combat Beast Warriors are trapped inside the golden fog, you need to save them and bring them out.”

This was naturally the arrangement of Fang Yuan, his purpose was to ensure that his clone would be chosen for this mission.

Zhan Bu Du had already reached rank two, his cultivation level was outstanding. Furthermore, he had the future desolate beast, arrowtail eagle!

Along with Zhan Bu Du's own determination and desire to save his master, he wanted to go even if his life would be sacrificed.

His incredible acting made everyone believe it was the truth, he gained huge prestige.

“We will be relying on all of you, even though you are all young, the world is in great danger, we need your strength to deal with this crisis. You will be the saviors of the world!” The Combat Beast King proclaimed as he stirred the fighting spirits and enthusiasm of the youngsters.

Zhan Bu Du rolled his eyes in his head but he had the most enthusiastic performance, he was overflowing with fighting spirit as he became the first to rush into the tributary of the River of Time.

The tributary of the River of Time had spreading golden fog, Gu Masters could step inside like they were stepping on land.

There were wild beasts in here, the strongest were mutated beasts, there were no desolate beasts. Of course, for these youngsters, they were a huge obstacle already.

The Combat Beast Warriors who came in earlier were all suppressed, their bodies were shrouded in golden fog as they became golden statues that could not move with ease. Meanwhile, the first batch of warriors who entered the golden fog were all stiff like statues, they could not move at all.

Zhan Bu Du went in and started killing mutated beasts, saving his comrades, he acted as a leader and was incredibly outstanding.

As Gu Immortals got saved one by one, Zhan Bu Du became the benefactor of them all.

“To think that I would be saved by a young Combat Beast Envoy one day.” Many Gu Immortals sighed with similar thoughts.

“Thank you, young lad, if you face trouble in the future, come look for me in Sacred Eagle City!” This Eagle Warrior was killed by Fang Yuan in the previous life, to think that Fang Yuan’s clone would save him this time.

“My master is Mountain Cliff City Lord, did anyone see him?” Zhan Bu Du asked whenever he saved someone, even though he knew where Mountain Cliff City Lord was kept by his main body.

“Little Du is such a great child, he had never given up on saving his master.”

“He is a good child that knows how to repay gratitude.”

“I really envy Mountain Cliff City Lord, he has taken in such a good disciple!”

“Little Du, you cannot go in anymore, this golden fog has an incredibly fast rate of time, your lifespan will be used up quickly.”

“I am not afraid!” I need to save my master. All my achievements today are due to my master’s guidance and teaching. Even if I need to give up my life, I will save him!” Zhan Bu Du did not waste any chance to act, he spoke righteously.

“And this is a good thing too, the faster the time, the faster I cultivate, look, after just a few days, I am already a rank three Gu Master. The stronger I become, the more people I can save, I will definitely save my master!” Zhan Bu Du shouted loudly, he made sure many people could hear him.

“Child, I will not let you sacrifice yourself in vain, this is a lifespan Gu, it can raise your lifespan and supplement your losses.” The Combat Beast King arrived in time, he gave Zhan Bu Du a lifespan Gu.

Zhan Bu Du pretended to be surprised and joyful, he quickly rejected: “Old grandpa, you are so old already, you should use it instead, it can make you live longer.”

Combat Beast King was very happy, he had not chosen the wrong person after all, he told Zhan Bu Du with a joyful tone: “Good child, good child. I have more here, you need this lifespan Gu now to maintain a youthful state, otherwise you cannot get inside the golden fog.”

“Ah, I almost forgot! No wonder I felt like it was getting harder to enter the golden fog.” Zhan Bu Du realized at once, he was quite troubled, after a ‘tough decision’, he nodded as he took the lifespan Gu and used it.

Fang Yuan’s clone was the greatest contributor in this situation, most of the Combat Beast Warriors were saved by him, the Combat Beast King definitely wanted to ensure his safety.

Naturally, he did not know that this was all Fang Yuan’s scheme.

Fang Yuan’s clone had a great excuse to gain a huge boost in strength, soon, he rose to rank five cultivation level under everyone’s view!

# **Chapter 1855 - Comprehending Qi Wall**



## Chapter 1855 Comprehending Qi Wall

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, tributary of the River of Time.

Fang Yuan's clone Zhan Bu Du went into the golden fog time and time again, saving the Gu Immortals who were trapped inside.

Each time, he had to undergo tough battles, he had to face many fierce beasts, he was covered in injuries as a result of his hard work. The youngsters who came with him slowly accepted his leadership, because the battle results showed that Zhan Bu Du's decision making was very wise.

"There are three beast groups this time from the southeast, north, and southwest, they are encircling you." Fang Yuan's main body transmitted.

"Oh okay. I will lead them to break out then. Also, get rid of the white robed youngster beside me." Fang Yuan's clone Zhan Bu Du responded.

"Sure." Fang Yuan's main body stood at the densest part of the golden fog, he was lying down casually, with a relaxed expression.

He willed as the year beast army charged out, towards the group that his clone was in.

Most of his attention was placed on Primordial Origin's true inheritance.

During the battle in Eastern Sea over Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan not only obtained Dragon Palace, he also obtained a Primordial Origin true inheritance after deceiving Duke Long!

This Primordial Origin true inheritance segment only contained the first half, but even so, Fang Yuan praised it with deep admiration.

From just this half of the true inheritance, he understood the style of the Remote Antiquity Era, qi path had been grand and incredibly powerful. He also learned about the talent of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, he was truly extraordinary, as expected of a venerable, he could not be looked at using common sense.

“The content of this true inheritance is still very applicable even in today’s context.”

“Of course, after so many years, qi path has developed a lot of new styles. The unlimited qi sea killer move that I possess is the greatest proof.”

This part of Primordial Origin’s qi path true inheritance mainly talked about the killer move qi wall.

Initially, Duke Long did not want to hand it over, but Fang Yuan had a firm attitude, qi wall was the signature method of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, it was renowned in history, almost everyone knew about it.

Duke Long wanted a truce with Qi Sea Ancestor, seeing Fang Yuan’s firm attitude, he gritted his teeth and handed it over.

“Using this qi wall killer move, I will gain a deeper understanding of Heavenly Court’s qi wall, I will try to be able to break it!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court’s qi wall was a huge problem to Longevity Heaven.

If Fang Yuan could unravel this move, it would be a huge blow to Heavenly Court.

But evidently, this would be a tough mission, after all, it was Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s arrangement. The only good thing was that Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable created this qi wall killer move back then, it had lasted until today, it was outdated already.

This was likely Fang Yuan’s chance of unraveling it.

Of course, it would not be surprising if he failed.

It was still the same logic, there were no invincible Immortal Gu, only invincible Gu Immortals. There was no perfect or invincible killer move, every killer move could be unraveled and broken, but the same killer move would have vastly different effects in the hands of different Gu Immortals.

It was a huge uncertainty whether Fang Yuan could unravel the qi wall killer move that Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had personally used.

Or maybe Duke Long noticed this himself, that was why he gave details of the killer move, qi wall, to Fang Yuan without much concern.

“At the same time, this half of the true inheritance is a huge bait to lure me into joining Heavenly Court.” Fang Yuan sneered.

If there was really a Qi Sea Ancestor who lived in seclusion in Eastern Sea, upon seeing this temptation, he might not be able to control himself.

As a rank eight secluded cultivator for so long, Qi Sea Ancestor naturally had no interest in political authority. At the same time, he cultivated qi path, it had been declining for so long, Heavenly Court solely held the most valuable qi path true inheritance in the world.

But the truth was that Qi Sea Ancestor was only one of Fang Yuan’s disguises. If Duke Long knew that he was helping his enemy now, who knew how he would feel.

“The timing is about right.” Fang Yuan researched this qi path true inheritance as he left some attention on the Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

After this bit of time, he had already worked with Zhan Bu Du to perform another show for everyone.

Several of the youngsters around Zhan Bu Du were sacrificed and died in battle. These people were an obstacle to him, Fang Yuan had gotten rid of them in advance for his future plans.

Zhan Bu Du saved a Gu Immortal and returned again.

There were only two Combat Beast Warriors left in the golden fog, one of them was Mountain Cliff City Lord.

After Zhan Bu Du saves Mountain Cliff City Lord, Fang Yuan would recall his Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

Things had to be done in sequence, Fang Yuan had already reached his current goal in nurturing the clone.

Other than an increase in cultivation level, Zhan Bu Du also grew his network a lot, having relationships with many experts. After this battle, almost all of the Gu Immortals in this Beast Calamity grotto-heaven were indebted to him.

This was not just an ordinary favor they owed him, it was the favor of saving their lives!

In the outside world, Gu Immortals might not want to repay such favors. but here, any Combat Beast Warrior would be filled with deep positive emotions, all of them were people who would follow the rule that a droplet received in need will be repaid with a whole spring.

Zhan Bu Du would not lack resources henceforth, his future was bright. But he would not act like these people owed him, he would be even more polite and courteous, he would not mind small losses and would perfectly display his exemplary personality and graciousness.

Fang Yuan could originally kill them all, but these Combat Beast Warriors were all spared.

In the previous life, he attacked Beast Calamity grotto-heaven openly and killed many Combat Beast Warriors. This time around, he changed his plan, he wanted to annex it using another plan, he wanted to preserve Beast Calamity grotto-heaven's value to the highest level.

“The Gu Immortals in this Beast Calamity grotto-heaven should all be taken in as my subordinates, this will greatly increase the strength of my forces.”

“During the period of the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, if I send them to battle, there should be effective results.”

“Of course, their fighting style is too simple, they can catch an enemy off guard but once their methods are seen through, these Gu Immortals would suffer huge losses.”

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven’s Gu Masters took a shortcut, because strength was obtained too easily, they did not have many methods, this was not the traditional Gu cultivation.

Like how Fang Yuan assembled a simple Twelve Zodiac battle formation and toyed around with all of the Gu Immortals in this Beast Calamity grotto-heaven. Even the Combat Beast King could not tell the truth, he thought it was the golden fog causing problem, he did not even discover the hidden Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

With just this difference in cultivation method, Fang Yuan could easily suppress them completely.

Like in the previous life when Fang Yuan killed Eagle Warrior, he turned into the Bull-headed Demon God and slaughtered countless people. These Combat Beast Warriors and Combat Beast King had thought Fang Yuan was a beast calamity, he had many powerful combat techniques. They did not think that he had Gu worms or killer moves, they simply lacked knowledge.

Days later, Fang Yuan retracted the Twelve Zodiac battle formation, the golden fog that shrouded the tributary of the River of Time vanished.

To prevent the enemy from feeling suspicious, Fang Yuan left a large batch of year beasts behind, making it look like the golden fog’s final struggle.

After a tough battle, the Combat Beast Guild gained victory, everyone cheered and celebrated.

The Gu Immortals were all saved, they began to move around, killing or capturing the powerful year beasts that were scattered all over Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

The golden fog vanished, but Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was still affected by Fang Yuan's killer move, time was moving very quickly.

Zhan Bu Du became the hero and recipient of every Gu Immortal's gratitude.

The Combat Beast King even rewarded him on the spot, he shouted: "Oh Little Du, you are truly our little savior. You saved everyone, you saved the entire world indirectly!"

Zhan Bu Du quickly waved his hand as he expressed his thanks, he was very polite.

From this moment on, the title of little savior became the symbol of Zhan Bu Du.

Next, he would wait for the next 'fortuitous encounter' to become a Gu Immortal. After that, he would accept the test openly and become the inheritor of Beast Calamity Immortal's true inheritance.

Fang Yuan's main body left the tributary of the River of Time, he used heaven form to inspect Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

As Fang Yuan's clone, Li Xiao Bai did not have as much progress as Zhan Bu Du, but his life was still quite good.

Ever since the previous poet recital, Li Xiao Bai became the focus of Teacher Jiang's teaching, he gave him many private tuition sessions that were held in secret.

Li Xiao Bai gradually displayed great talent and aptitude to Teacher Jiang's surprise, he started to teach him more wholeheartedly.

"At this rate, I am still far from getting close to Profound Literature grotto-heaven's higher-ups."

"It is a pity."

“Profound Literature grotto-heaven is different from Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, the latter is shut and isolated, while the former has a rank eight Gu Immortal, this is also an information path grotto-heaven, it most excels in collecting information. There isn’t much that I can do.”

“At least, I cannot use the tributary of the River of Time, if I use the Twelve Zodiac battle formation, it would be seen through easily.”

Fang Yuan decided to wait for Li Xiao Bai to develop slowly.

He could use the tributary of the River of Time to lead his beast army into Profound Literature grotto-heaven. But that way, he would need to fight against a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan had no fear of course, but it would be hard to win quickly. For Profound Literature grotto-heaven, the losses would also be great when battle ensued.

Fang Yuan did not want to see this happen.

If attacking forcefully worked, he would have done it long ago.

He could not annex Profound Literature grotto-heaven itself, but the information path inheritance and all of the resources inside were things that Fang Yuan wanted.

Fang Yuan had five clones now.

The time path clone was the earliest clone, its purpose was to make use of the light of wisdom, it was still a rank six.

The dragonman clone had the highest cultivation level at rank seven, it controlled Dragon Palace and was the strongest among them. He was currently engaging with Gu tribe, he had some surprising gains.

After getting help from Fang Yuan, Zhan Bu Du developed rapidly. Li Xiao Bai needed to rely on his own hard work, it was not time to make any move yet.

As for Fang Yuan's fake identities, he had even more of them.

On this day, Fang clan contacted Fang Yuan.

Or more precisely, they were not looking for Gu Yue Fang Yuan, but his disguised identity — Suan Bu Jin.

“Elder Suan Bu Jin, we need your help, assist second supreme elder to try to refine Divine Bean Palace as soon as possible!”

Fang Yuan was overjoyed, he joined Fang clan not just to develop green ghost desert, his other goal was to try to get Divine Bean Palace.

This rank eight Immortal Gu House was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it had great power, Fang Yuan had seen its power himself.

“I also have karma divine tree with me, this is the crucial trump card in getting this palace.”



# **Chapter 1856 - Am I, Suan Bu Jin, Such a Person?**

## Chapter 1856 Am I, Suan Bu Jin, Such a Person?

Fang clan headquarters.

An Immortal Gu House that was made of green bricks and golden tiles, it was lofty like a mountain, liveliness mixed in its solemnity, and emitted dense fragrance of plants and trees.

The wide and enormous palace hall could be seen through the open door. There were dozens of large pillars in the hall, they were thick and sturdy, glittering with bronze radiance.

Carved on the plaque of the palace door were three large words — Divine Bean Palace!

And around Divine Bean Palace was a crescent shaped wisdom path Gu formation that surrounded half of Divine Bean Palace.

This wisdom path Gu formation flickered with light blue radiance that shone upon Divine Bean Palace. The blue light was like water that tried its best to seep into Divine Bean Palace but did not attain much effect.

After continuing for a while, the wisdom path Gu formation stopped and two Gu Immortals came out from inside.

One wore a yellow robe, he was bearded and had an ordinary appearance, he was like a mortal. Right now, his face was pale with sweat covering his forehead, he was Fang clan's second supreme elder, Fang Di Chang.

The other person was wearing a black robe, he was a skinny middle-aged man with long grey hair and appeared to be proud and arrogant, he was Fang Yuan's disguise, Suan Bu Jin.

Fang Yuan sighed: “This Divine Bean Palace is truly amazing, it feels like a living creature even without anyone controlling it. It is like a gigantic tree while we are like two worms using all our efforts to infiltrate it, but we can barely make a dent in Divine Bean Palace.”

“Indeed.” Fang Di Chang nodded: “Even worse is that we destroyed some of this giant tree’s branches but they will regrow not long later.”

Fang Yuan analyzed: “This is indeed Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s style. According to historical records, he was the venerable with the most abundant immortal essence and the highest recovery ability, which is the essence of wood path. Second supreme elder, we are wisdom path Gu Immortals, it will be very difficult for us to refine this wood path Immortal Gu House! How about we invite one or two wood path great experts to cooperate with us, there will definitely be great results.”

Fang Di Chang smiled bitterly: “Brother, do you think I did not try it? Unfortunately, wood path is rare in Western Desert, moreover, news of my clan obtaining Divine Bean Palace has already been exposed, the other super clans are jointly obstructing us in this aspect.”

“Naturally, there is also a force who took the initiative to send wood path Gu Immortals, brother, can you guess which force it is?” Fang Di Chang asked.

Fang Yuan’s thought moved and replied immediately: “It should be Heavenly Court, right?”

“You are right, it is Heavenly Court! Duke Long said he would send wood path Gu Immortals to retrieve Divine Bean Palace, he guaranteed all our past conflicts will be written off and also promised countless resources.” Fang Di Chang smiled coldly.

After the Eastern Sea battle, Fang Yuan had an even deeper understanding about Duke Long, so he was not surprised to hear Duke Long willing to compromise.

He said: “Heavenly Court is indulging in wishful thinking, they want to use the current situation of Western Desert to make our Fang clan give in. No matter how many resources they give, how could it compare to the rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace? As long as we can use this Gu House, we can simply loot resources.”

“Hahaha.” With a loud laughter, a Gu Immortal walked towards Fang Yuan and Fang Di Chang.

“Brother Suan Bu Jin, you are truly correct.” This Gu Immortal was an old man, he was tall and sturdy, with long white hair and beard spreading around his head like a lion’s mane, he was Fang clan’s first supreme elder, Fang Gong.

Fang Gong patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder and said passionately: “Brother, it was hard on you; the moment you arrived, you had to start making deductions in the formation before even getting to rest. I have already arranged a banquet to welcome you.”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Thank you for the concern, first supreme elder. Deciphering Divine Bean Palace has stimulated my excitement and morale. Moreover, I am Fang clan’s external supreme elder as well, helping Fang clan is helping myself, isn’t that so?”

His mind, however, was clear: “Fang clan is facing too much pressure so they finally asked for my help to refine Divine Bean Palace as quickly as possible, Fang clan’s enthusiastic attitude towards me is not strange at all. Looks like I can use this chance to extort them and get some benefits.”

No doubt about it, Fang Yuan was wicked and calculating!

Not only was he conspiring to seize Divine Bean Palace, he was even going to squeeze benefits out of Fang clan in the process.

Fang clan was quite unlucky to have recruited him. In the previous life, without Fang Yuan’s interference, Fang clan’s situation had been good. They resolved their predicament with their own strength, though they did

not seem to have refined Divine Bean Palace even by the time of the Refinement Path Convention.

The banquet was dignified, Fang clan truly wanted to get Suan Bu Jin's help. Fang clan's higher ups had a warm attitude and the rank eight Fang Gong was even more amiable.

Fang Yuan promised on the spot to use all his strength to help.

Both the hosts and guest were happy.

Were Fang clan to know that this Gu Immortal that they were passionately entertaining was the mastermind behind their problems, they might want to directly skin Fang Yuan alive and pull out his tendons!

In the coming days, Fang Yuan followed Fang Di Chang and assisted him in refining Divine Bean Palace through the wisdom path formation.

Divine Bean Palace had never-ending vitality, it could restore itself and also repel the infiltration. If the progress of infiltration was ten today, it would be reduced to three or four tomorrow.

Every time Fang Yuan and Fang Di Chang deduced, they would only stop when their minds were heated and used to the limit.

"Although I haven't used all my strength, I am displaying the standard of a first rate rank seven wisdom path Gu Immortal."

"Even with such help, Fang Di Chang's progress is slow. There is no need to think about what kind of progress he had without my help."

Fang Yuan understood the situation, feeling a trace of pity towards Fang Di Chang but also a trace of joy.

It was because Fang Di Chang used all his strength every time to refine Divine Bean Palace and had no spare energy left that Fang Yuan's scheme against Fang clan could succeed.

If they were to really contest, Fang Di Chang was a wisdom path great grandmaster, a level higher than Fang Yuan.

Both exhausted their strength every time, Fang Yuan was concealing a portion of his strength but he also slowly began to feel tired.

Fang Di Chang was even more so because he was using his full effort

With such a desperate and stubborn spirit, although the refinement of Divine Bean Palace was still very difficult, the progress had accumulated quite a bit.

“Fang clan has wisdom path and formation path attainment, they want to use this to forcibly take over Divine Bean Palace.”

“This is a true forceful refinement!”

“There is naturally hope of success. But the price they have to pay is enormous, just the immortal essence alone will amount to a huge sum.”

“This might be a lot easier if they get help of wood path and refinement path. Naturally, if I use all my strength without hiding my attainment, that would be another outcome.”

But Fang Yuan would not do this.

Sensing the time was right, he stopped on a certain day and did not appear in time.

Fang Di Chang quickly inquired: “Brother, are you injured? Is it serious? I have already made appropriate arrangements for the treatment.”

Fang Yuan coughed: “Thank you brother for the concern, I am injured indeed but it is not serious, I can deal with it myself. It is just that... my immortal essence reserves suffered a huge loss. My mind is also tired, the amount of work is too much and too heavy. Who knows when we will be able to completely refine Divine Bean Palace. I feel like I won’t be able to persevere on.”

Fang Di Chang's eyes opened slightly wide.

Suan Bu Jin wanted to quit the task!

What should they do now?

They had made some progress with much difficulty, if they did not persist in it every day, this progress would be lost rapidly.

Thinking of Fang clan's situation as well, Fang Di Chang was anxious.

"Brother!" Fang Di Chang smiled: "Our Fang clan won't mistreat you, you can rest assured."

Fang Yuan said earnestly, "Brother, please don't think I am intentionally trying to quit! I am not that kind of person! I believe in Fang clan and joining Fang clan is the best proof of it. At the same time, our collaboration had begun long ago, back then when we fought for Divine Bean Palace, we struck an agreement. I have never forgotten this agreement."

Fang Yuan spoke earnestly, and as a wisdom path great grandmaster, Fang Di Chang immediately understood the underlying meaning.

He laughed: "Brother, I understand, hahaha. We also have not forgotten about the agreement back then. You helped our Fang clan to fight for Divine Bean Palace, and according to the agreement, our Fang clan needs to give an Immortal Gu, but it has been delayed until now, this is my Fang clan's mistake! I apologize for this. Tell me which Immortal Gu you need, I will immediately arrange someone to send it over."

"Sigh! I don't mean that, I don't mean that. Second supreme elder, I really didn't mean this, you misunderstood me." Fang Yuan said.

"Misunderstood? I misunderstood you?!" Fang Di Chang mentally snorted.

He had already seen through Suan Bu Jin, this was an ambitious person who would not act without benefits!

Back then, when they fought for Divine Bean Palace, he had used the chance to make an offer and took away great thief Immortal Gu.

He was playing the same trick again!

Fang Di Chang really wanted to slap this greedy Fang Yuan, but he forcibly restrained himself.

There was nothing he could do about this, he needed Suan Bu Jin's help! There was indeed good progress with Suan Bu Jin helping him.

Thereupon, Fang Di Chang strongly insisted on giving Fang Yuan an Immortal Gu, but Fang Yuan kept on rejecting him firmly.

Fang Di Chang felt a bad premonition, Suan Bu Jin definitely had a bigger scheme. After a few rounds of back and forth, Fang Di Chang said directly: "Brother, just speak your thoughts."

Fang Yuan said righteously: "Brother, please don't look down on me, I am also a member of Fang clan, how could I add to Fang clan's troubles by extorting it in this current situation? Am I, Suan Bu Jin, such a person? I felt that the previous Immortal Gu reward was too big so I am willing to take a step back, I do not need the reward to be an Immortal Gu."

Fang Di Chang felt even more uneasy as he heard Fang Yuan continue: "If you truly want me to speak, then I will be open with you. Brother, we are on the same side, hehe, I also can't hide anything from you. To tell the truth, I have some interest towards Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable's theft path true inheritance. I don't need any theft path Immortal Gu and only want to take a look at the contents of the true inheritance. Naturally, brother, if you think this is too much, then forget it."

Even Fang Di Chang, a wisdom path great grandmaster who had an excellent bearing normally, had a change in his expression as he glared at Fang Yuan and cursed in his head: "So your target was my clan's Thieving Heaven true inheritance all along! Such huge guts!"



# **Chapter 1857 - Comprehending Thieving Heaven's True Inheritance**

## Chapter 1857 Comprehending Thieving Heaven's True Inheritance

Boom!

Fang clan's first supreme elder Fang Gong slammed the table and stood up from his chair with flames of fury burning in his eyes: "This Suan Bu Jin is really greedy! He actually dared to demand my clan's theft path true inheritance, who does he think he is? He is only a lone cultivator with rank seven cultivation, he dares to blackmail my Fang clan! He deserves to die! We should kill him!"

Fang Gong was filled with endless fury when he listened to Fang Di Chang's report.

Fang Di Chang had already calmed down: "Suan Bu Jin has some skills indeed. Our decision to recruit Suan Bu Jin was to deal with the situation back then. Suan Bu Jin is a wisdom path Gu Immortal and is extremely shrewd, he chose this timing to ask for the theft path true inheritance when we cannot refuse him easily."

"What? Are you really thinking of giving the theft path true inheritance to him? That is Thieving Heaven's true inheritance!" Fang Gong's eyes were wide open.

Fang Di Chang smiled bitterly: "If we don't give it to him, he won't work, what can we do to him? Yes, he is currently in our clan headquarters and we might be able to get rid of him if we attack together. But what about after killing him? Without his help, it is extremely difficult for me to refine Divine Bean Palace and it will take way too long. But in the current situation, Fang clan is facing pressure from everywhere, even rank eight Gu Immortals made a move not long ago!"

This was the task that Fang Yuan sent two dragon generals to do, but their actions were clean and their traces were erased, Fang Di Chang's energy and attention was mostly focused on Divine Bean Palace so he was not able to see through this.

Everyone in Fang clan believed that this was either the work of Western Desert's super clans or some Western Desert demonic immortals with evil intentions, it could even be Heavenly Court.

Fang Gong was silent, he was the first supreme elder after all, he also began to calm down.

With Fang clan's current state, they truly needed Suan Bu Jin's help. Once they got control of Divine Bean Palace, they could make a comeback and change this predicament. If Fallen Flower Hall, Inquiry Dock, and Chicken Dog Coop were restored in the future, Fang clan's overall strength would probably surpass almost all the Western Desert righteous path super forces.

Suan Bu Jin was the key for Fang clan to pass the predicament and rise up to the top!

"He is indeed a wisdom path Gu Immortal, requesting to quit at such a juncture, hehehe, this Suan Bu Jin has guts and has skills as well." Fang Gong smiled coldly.

Fang Di Chang knew Fang Gong well and realized from his tone that he had agreed.

Naturally, when Fang clan passes this dangerous moment, Fang Gong would definitely put Suan Bu Jin in his place and vent this grievance!

Fang Di Chang smiled: "Actually, Suan Bu Jin has a sense of propriety. He did not ask for my wisdom path inheritance and also did not covet the secrets of our clan's Immortal Gu Houses. If he had mentioned these requests, we would be in a real dilemma."

Fang clan's foundation was not theft path.

It never was.

Theft path was only a chance gain that Fang clan schemed from an otherworldly demon.

Over these years, Fang clan's usage of this Thieving Heaven true inheritance had already reached the limit.

The theft path Immortal Gu House they used to retaliate on Dong Lu Chen was actually an incomplete product. Just this already answered many questions.

Fang Di Chang laughed: "This Suan Bu Jin has a deep attainment in wisdom path. Moreover, I made quite a lot of progress with his help over these days. Just look at his request, he had a perfect and experienced grasp of the timing, he did not cross the bottom line while achieving the highest benefit for himself. It is not easy to accomplish this."

Fang Gong also laughed: "Hehehe, you really think highly of this guy, you are actually still praising him."

Fang Di Chang's eyes shone: "Talent is talent, how can I belittle him because of my own bias? If this kind of talent can really work for our clan, it would be an excellent thing."

Fang Gong squinted his eyes: "It won't be easy to make an audacious guy like Suan Bu Jin submit and be loyal to our clan."

After a round of discussion, Fang clan agreed to let Fang Yuan browse the Thieving Heaven true inheritance.

Fang Yuan obtained the contents of the true inheritance.

It was indeed a Thieving Heaven true inheritance, the essence of it was the killer move steal dao.

Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was able to create theft path because of this killer move.

This killer move obviously had huge significance, it was the origin of theft path!

Fang Yuan was in awe as he looked at it.

In this true inheritance, the majesty of steal dao was shown completely. Because what it stole was not just lives or objects, but the natural world itself. Any dao mark in the world could be stolen by it!

Besides this, there was something that made Fang Yuan look at it time and again while feeling lingering desire.

This was the theft path Immortal Gu House recorded in the Thieving Heaven true inheritance — Thieves Den.

“My theft path attainment level is great grandmaster while none of Fang clan’s Gu Immortals have such attainment. So even though Fang clan’s superiority lies in constructing Immortal Gu Houses, they have always been without options to repair Thieves Den and left it incomplete.”

Fang Yuan only took a few glances at the relevant contents of Thieves Den and saw the efforts Fang clan’s successive generations had made — they had all tried to repair this Immortal Gu House.

“Although there were many creative thoughts, they did not match theft path and they were at most at a superficial level.”

“But if I were to try to repair it, it would be a different case!”

Fang Yuan was inwardly moved.

But asking for the contents of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance was already the limit. Fang Yuan knew: Fang clan was almost about to fall out with him but had forcibly held in the thought. Even though Fang clan outright gave the true inheritance, they had firmly engraved this matter in their minds.

If he went a step further and demanded Thieves Den, that would be excessive and way beyond Fang clan’s bottom line, they would never agree!

“Moreover, a wisdom path Gu Immortal like me having so much interest in theft path would be questionable.”

“Fang Di Chang does not have any doubts because I had worked up to it properly. Previously, I used great thief ghost hand, then I used wisdom grasp to kill Wan Liang Han, these left an impression on Fang clan, thus it felt natural to them.”

“But are these all the contents of this Thieving Heaven true inheritance?” Fang Yuan was unable to tell, at least, he was not able to see any unsatisfactory details in this true inheritance. But it was hard to say since Fang clan had the wisdom path great expert Fang Di Chang.

“What if I make a move now and loot them directly?” Fang Yuan thought.

It was not hard for him to deal with Fang clan with his strength. Fang Gong was strong and was a rare strength path rank eight Gu Immortal in the present age, but he was still inferior to Duke Long. There was still a gap between his and Fang Yuan’s strength.

However, Fang Yuan was not confident in defeating him conclusively, Fang Gong had once suppressed Chen Yi and his strength was first rate even among rank eights. Also, this was Fang clan’s headquarters with multiple arrangements which Fang Yuan was not aware of.

The biggest probability was for a huge battle to begin and the whole world to learn of it. At that time, not only would Fang Yuan’s identity be exposed, Western Desert righteous path super forces would also find the perfect reason – help Fang clan to eliminate the demon – to flock over and deal with Fang clan. Moreover, Heavenly Court would not stay idle, they were sure to send Gu Immortals if there were to be such a good opportunity.

Fang Yuan thought for a long while before deciding to help Fang Di Chang and maintain this situation.

This was the best plan which matched with his benefits.

Fang Yuan browsed the Thieving Heaven true inheritance and no longer groaned about tiredness or suffering. He used 'all his effort' to cooperate with Fang Di Chang in forcefully refining Divine Bean Palace. At least, from Fang clan's perspective, he was using all his strength.

The progress was still difficult, but it accumulated every time and finally quantitative change led to qualitative change — Divine Bean Palace's door opened, Gu Immortals could enter it.

This was enormous progress!

Everyone in Fang clan was excited, Fang Di Chang also laughed in joy. They all saw the rise of Fang clan!

However, the following fact was like a basin of cold water that poured down on the feelings of Fang clan's Gu Immortals.

No matter how Fang Di Chang tried, there was not even a trace of progress in refining Divine Bean Palace. This formed a stark contrast to the previous situation.

"Looks like from here on, Divine Bean Palace's structure is different from what I previously deduced and it has underwent a complete change."

"We can only progress by changing the whole wisdom path formation." Fang Di Chang said to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nodded: "But how do we change this wisdom path formation? Previously, we could still probe Divine Bean Palace and gather a lot of information. Sigh, if we had a wood path great expert to help us, it would be much easier. With just us two wisdom paths, we can only make blind guesses!"

Fang Di Chang smiled bitterly: "What else can we do other than make guesses?"

Divine Bean Palace's matter fell into an impasse.

Divine Bean Palace was worthy of being Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's creation, the more Fang Di Chang and Fang Yuan researched into it, the more they felt its majesty and ingenuity.

Fang Di Chang racked his brains and thought long and hard, but was still unable to find a good solution.

On the contrary, Fang Yuan had many ideas but he did not mention anything.

In this period of time, he did not have any opportunity to use karma divine tree. If he used this move, there would definitely be huge progress.

“Sitting here in a daze trying to think of a solution is not my way of cultivating. I am going to roam around and relax my mind, maybe I will gain some inspiration in the process.” Fang Yuan made an excuse to take his leave.

Fang Di Chang and Fang Gong tried to make him stay but could not, and thinking that they would still need Suan Bu Jin's help later, they let Fang Yuan leave.

Fang Yuan left Fang clan and entered green ghost desert, but it was actually to explore dream realms secretly.

He and Chi Qu You had continued their transactions over this period of time, and by using second aperture Gu, he continued to extort Southern Border's righteous path, asking for wood path related dream realms.

There was no wood path great expert to help them?

Who cares!

Wouldn't it be okay if I became a wood path great expert myself?

Fang Yuan's solution was simple and crude.

These wood path dream realms were of no difficulty, Fang Yuan was already the number one person in the world in terms of experience in



exploring dream realms. People like Duke Long could not hold a candle to Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan's wood path attainment level had always been ordinary, he did not have much contact with it in the five hundred years of his previous life.

But not long later, he became a wood path master.

A few more days passed in the outside world, he became a wood path grandmaster!

He had once again finished exploring all the dream realms he had, Fang Yuan began to research karma divine tree and Divine Bean Palace with greater confidence.

Countless ideas immediately surfaced in his mind and most of them were feasible!

"It seems I need to modify karma divine tree."

"But to modify this killer move, I need to refine a suitable wood path Immortal Gu! These wood path Immortal Gu I have are not suitable."

Fang Yuan was hesitant.

It was not a problem for him to refine wood path Immortal Gu. After all, he had Lang Ya Sect!

But if he did this, the refinement of luck path Immortal Gu would need to be halted.

The two Eastern Sea immortals soul searched Fang Zheng and told the information to Qi Sea Ancestor, thus Fang Yuan knew Heavenly Court's plan and also knew about Qin Ding Ling.

Based on the refinement progress of the hairy man Gu Immortals regarding luck path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could deduce Heavenly Court was also rushing to refine luck path Immortal Gu. Although they were unable to

succeed in most of the refinements, they were able to refine a small portion successfully.

If he changed his plan now and started refining wood path Immortal Gu on a large scale, it would mean giving up on the competition of refining luck path Immortal Gu.

But if he persisted in refining luck path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could only rely on the current karma divine tree killer move to subdue Divine Bean Palace, and this would be much more difficult.

Fang Yuan had a vague premonition that the current chance was invaluable, if he wasted this opportunity, there would be extremely low hopes of getting Divine Bean Palace later on in the future.

# Chapter 1858 - 1858 Omniscience and Omnipotence

## 1858 Omniscience and Omnipotence

Fang Yuan placed great importance on this premonition.

In the previous life, he had accidentally witnessed the activation of Tao Zhu's true inheritance in the Five Regional Mountain Range but was unable to obtain it. He had a similar feeling back then and knew that he had missed an important fortuitous encounter. That lost opportunity made the future him feel deep pity as a result.

As expected!

In the large Central Continent battle, the five regional limit formation played a crucial role. If Fang Yuan had grasped this method, he could not only have dealt with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's unceasing formation, he could have even responded to heroes among people by using five restriction profound light qi.

And this time, this feeling came when he was facing Divine Bean Palace.

“But it is different from the premonition in the previous life. This happened before I made a choice, while in the previous life, it occurred after the event had happened, I felt it after I had already missed Tao Zhu's true inheritance.”

“Is this some kind of progress as well?”

“If so, what was the factor that led to this progress?”

Fang Yuan fell into deep thought.

Fang Yuan was extremely interested in the premonition itself. But what he was even more interested in was what led to this premonition.

After deducing, Fang Yuan got an answer — attainment levels!

“My wisdom path attainment level should be the main reason. Wisdom path masters can produce intuition while wisdom path grandmasters can imitate other paths. Wisdom path Gu Immortals cultivate thought, will, and emotion, the emergence of any feeling is an omen with huge significance, it is different from other paths.”

“Secondly is luck path. Luck path is about variables and changes. My luck path is at master, it can also produce intuition.”

“After that is time path. In the previous life, my time path attainment was involved when I had the premonition regarding the missed opportunity of Tao Zhu’s true inheritance. In this life, my time path attainment is already at quasi-supreme grandmaster, so I can sense certain future situations even better. Because of this, I have this premonition in advance and know the importance of this choice!”

The increase of time path attainment had changed the order of the premonition from after to before, this was a qualitative change!

“Lastly is wood path attainment level. Because it concerns Divine Bean Palace and my wood path attainment level was ordinary before, the premonition felt vague and hazy. But when I became a wood path grandmaster, the missing element in the premonition was filled and it condensed into a concrete form.”

Wisdom path attainment, luck path attainment, time path attainment, and wood path attainment...

These four attainment levels supplemented and complemented each other to form a miracle-like premonition.

Ordinary Gu Immortals could never accomplish this. From ancient times until now, there was probably no other person who cultivated every path like Fang Yuan.

To be more accurate, in the five hundred years of Fang Yuan's previous life, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had refined sovereign immortal fetus Gu which created the sovereign immortal body.

Of course, the future was uncertain.

In the future, dream realms would emerge everywhere, Gu Immortals could obtain a rapid increase in their attainment levels of all kinds of paths through these dream realms.

When these attainment levels were combined, who could say if they could not produce premonitions.

Fang Yuan continued to analyze: "The foundation for premonition is wisdom path attainment. The level of time path attainment decides whether the premonition will occur before the event or after the event. Luck path attainment can make me even more sensitive towards certain changes. And the attainment level in wood path or other relevant paths affect the scope of the premonition."

"My premonition gave a clear sign after my wood path attainment level increased. If I were to raise my other paths sufficiently in the future, I could reach premonitions in everything. What realm will this be?"

At that instance, two words flashed in Fang Yuan's mind — Omniscience! Omnipotence!

"No, omnipotence is likely impossible, but omniscience can be achieved." Fang Yuan's expression was pensive.

When the attainment level of all the paths reached a certain degree, they could create premonitions about all things. This level of premonition was very close to omniscience.

“And if the cultivation of all paths was built on a foundation like the sovereign immortal body, it should be close to omnipotence as well, right?”

“Omniscience, omnipotence...” Fang Yuan muttered, his heart shook and his gaze turned sharp: “If I reach this level, I should definitely be able to clearly observe the path to eternal life!”

Fang Yuan was inwardly excited.

Although he had plenty of experiences and had reborn multiple times, the past experiences were already of not much help to him.

There were many things that needed him to probe and speculate.

For instance, rank nine venerable cultivation, Fang Yuan’s quantity of dao marks had already broken the limit of rank eight, and after devouring Qi Sea grotto-heaven, all the calamities and tribulations were skipped, so he should have already surpassed rank eight.

But he did not reach rank nine.

He needed to probe the way to become rank nine.

Currently, he explored and learned the profundity of the various paths from this premonition and also realized the added benefit of cultivating all paths.

Ordinary Gu Immortals might stop here, but Fang Yuan felt the hope of eternal life from this foundation!

All the venerables in history were unable to achieve eternal life, eternity was also only a goal for Fang Yuan. He had no clue on how to achieve this goal, nor had any practical ideas.

Today, finally, from this small premonition, he finally found the road to eternal life!

“Although I still don’t know how to achieve eternal life, omniscience and omnipotence are the foundation. First, fate Gu has to be destroyed to make

eternal life a possibility. Then, I will continue to work towards achieving omniscience and omnipotence!”

“To achieve omniscience, I will need to explore dream realms and increase my attainment levels in every path.”

“To achieve omnipotence, I will cultivate every path with the sovereign immortal body and grasp all kinds of methods.”

Be it omniscience or omnipotence, just one of them could already surpass all the predecessors in history!

Even venerables only cultivated two or three paths, and were unable to achieve omniscience. Their strength might be beyond ordinary and even Fang Yuan could not imagine such strength, but without the sovereign immortal body, omnipotence could not be achieved.

If Fang Yuan could become omniscient and omnipotent, he would definitely surpass all the venerables. At that time, the eternal life that venerables could never achieve would become a possibility for him!

“Wait a second, the Prophecy of Three Venerables clearly pointed that Great Dream Immortal Venerable would be the strongest venerable. Could it be because she would be able to reach the level of omniscience?”

This was highly possible.

Great Dream Immortal Venerable would definitely be a great expert in exploring dream realms, her attainment level in every path would be at an extremely high standard. It was not strange to achieve omniscience from this.

Fang Yuan’s heart jolted slightly, he had a completely new and deeper understanding regarding the Prophecy of Three Venerables as well as the future!

He currently had rank eight cultivation and his battle strength could match Duke Long’s, he was already an expert at the peak of the world. However,

he was still minuscule when compared to heaven and earth, and the future. There were many, many things that he still needed to study and understand, there were still countless aspects he needed to improve on.

Omniscience and omnipotence was an extremely distant target. Most people would be frightened to just think of it and might even feel suffocated from the hopelessness, they would have not even a trace of desire to try.

Fang Yuan, however, was filled with bottomless fighting spirit!

“Like this, my life will become filled with vibrance from all the struggles and all the efforts.”

Several days later.

Lang Ya blessed land.

“Quick, quick, turn up the flames!” White haired Lang Ya land spirit urged while controlling the Long Hair refinement path formation.

The hairy man Gu Immortal in charge of the intensity of fire immediately used all his strength to turn up the fire.

But Lang Ya land spirit was not satisfied, still shouting: “The fire needs to be hotter, much hotter!”

“But lord, this is already the highest temperature.” The hairy man Gu Immortal shouted.

Lang Ya land spirit was filled with plenty of experiences, within just a moment, he thought of a solution and commanded: “Sixth Hair, activate the wind formation, we will use wind to grow the fire! Eighth Hair, use refinement path killer moves to gather the remnant wind and purify the incomplete Immortal Gu!”

If there was wind, there would be contamination of wind path dao marks. Only by purifying it could the Immortal Gu refinement proceed smoothly.



Lang Ya land spirit had precise control over the formation, his actions were numerous, but not disordered. The refinement path formation shook suddenly, a bright light burst out and shot towards the sky before disappearing just as quickly.

The formation gradually stopped; a completely new wood path Immortal Gu was refined.

“Success again!”

“As expected of Lord Lang Ya land spirit.”

Hairy man Gu Immortals were elated as they praised endlessly.

Lang Ya land spirit, however, was filled with admiration: “This was due to master’s Gu recipe!”

Fang Yuan was refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster and wood path grandmaster, the wood path Immortal Gu recipes he modified were at an extremely high level.

Adding on Lang Ya land spirit’s peak level refinement path attainment, they produced greater results with fewer efforts, the success rate was very high.

The other hairy man Gu Immortals agreed as well.

“Lord land spirit is correct!”

“The success rate of Immortal Gu has always been extremely low, it is limited by refinement path attainment and the Gu recipe. Most Gu Immortals don’t cultivate refinement path even as a secondary path, it can be well imagined what their refinement path attainment is like. And a Gu recipe’s modification not only requires the attainment level of the corresponding path, it also requires refinement path attainment and wisdom path attainment.”

Immortal Gu refinement had always been a money trap, but it had gradually become an ordinary process to Fang Yuan.

It was because Fang Yuan possessed wisdom path methods like the light of wisdom, and had refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level, along with his other paths' attainment levels being quite high as well.

Therefore, the several obstacles of Immortal Gu refinement became nonexistent to Fang Yuan.

The sovereign immortal aperture's time flow was very fast, within a few days, Fang Yuan obtained several wood path Immortal Gu.

He chose to refine wood path Immortal Gu in the end.

Actually, there were a lot of wood path Gu Immortals in Southern Border as well as many wood path Immortal Gu, but Fang Yuan did not demand these Immortal Gu.

Southern Border's righteous path was starting to construct Beacon Towers on a large scale and gradually beginning to unite. They also cooperated with Heavenly Court to suppress Fang Yuan's businesses in treasure yellow heaven.

This situation had occurred in the previous life as well, this signified Wu Yong was starting to exert force to unite the whole of Southern Border's righteous path.

Were Fang Yuan to extort wood path Immortal Gu from Southern Border's righteous path, Heavenly Court would definitely learn of it.

Fairy Zi Wei would start having suspicions: "Fang Yuan is gathering wood path immortal materials, does he want to progress in wood path? He wants to refine wood path Immortal Gu? What is he trying to do?"

Heavenly Court was paying special attention to Fang clan because of Divine Bean Palace.

It was quite easy to connect the two.

# Chapter 1859 - 1859 Suan Bu Jin, Please Rest In Peace

## 1859 Suan Bu Jin, Please Rest In Peace

Fairy Zi Wei was a wisdom path great expert and also had Star Constellation Chessboard, she was very likely to deduce Fang Yuan's traces around Fang clan, and from there, interfere and destroy his plan.

Beforehand was a similar situation as well.

Fang Yuan cultivated qi path and required qi path immortal materials, but he did not extort them from Southern Border's righteous path.

But in Eastern Sea, Duke Long immediately pointed out a relation between Qi Sea Ancestor and Fang Yuan, which had surprised Fang Yuan.

Were Fang Yuan to have extorted qi path immortal materials from Southern Border's righteous path, during the battle for Dragon Palace in Eastern Sea, Duke Long might have seen through Fang Yuan's facade at first glance.

He had precariously succeeded in deceiving Duke Long, he was just a step away from being exposed.

Many times, people needed to look at the long term instead of coveting cheap benefits. Had Fang Yuan coveted cheap benefits before and extorted qi path immortal materials from Southern Border's righteous path, Heavenly Court might have seen through Qi Sea Ancestor's true identity.

Thereupon, Fang Yuan would not have obtained a portion of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable's qi path true inheritance.

Fang Yuan had a cautious nature.

The risks he took – besides the times where he had no alternative – were mostly taken after careful planning.

He had struggled for hundreds of years, walked on countless roads, experienced many life and death situations, and moved in the gaps between the fights of venerables and heaven's will to finally reach his current stage.

Hardships and setbacks were the wealth of human life. With such mental fortitude, Fang Yuan would not be arrogant and lose his way.

Stability, he demanded stability in everything!

During the battle in Eastern Sea over Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan obtained information about Fang Zheng and knew that the latter had disturbed him twice, and also learned of Qin Ding Ling's existence.

Qin Ding Ling was a person of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's era, a Central Continent immortal who cultivated metal path but changed to luck path later, and had hibernated for three hundred thousand years.

According to Fang Yuan's deductions, Qin Ding Ling's luck path attainment level was at least great grandmaster, and quasi-supreme grandmaster was not impossible as well.

With such a luck path attainment level, if she were able to refine just two or three luck path Immortal Gu, she could create and modify killer moves and have comprehensive luck path methods.

Under this situation, there was not a big significance in rushing to refine luck path Immortal Gu.

Previously, Fang Yuan had prioritized investing in luck path because Heavenly Court's foundation in luck path was shallow, Fang Yuan could gain ten times the return of his investment.

But now, the prospect of his investment fell.

It was like earlier, when Fang Yuan obtained Shadow Sect's true inheritance but did not choose to focus heavily on soul path. Spectral Soul was captured by Heavenly Court so that soul path true inheritance did not have much value. His soul path strength could very likely be deciphered and countered by Heavenly Court!

Because of these several aspects, Fang Yuan chose to stop luck path Gu refinement for the moment and change to wood path.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace was something that could increase Fang Yuan's strength by a huge margin!

Heavenly Court had always been Fang Yuan's greatest obstacle.

Stopping Heavenly Court from restoring fate Gu was not a matter of just one battle, it involved a struggle of information, disguise, deceit, Gu refinement, resources, and many other aspects.

Only after estimating the trump cards of the enemy could he find flaws and deal with them appropriately.

So, information was an extremely important aspect. In history, many famous wars looked like they were won easily, but who knew the intensity of the hidden struggles, the preparations made, and how many times they racked their brains from planning!

Pushing forward brainlessly would only lead to death, stupid people could not go far.

Since there was an enormous change in the investment to productivity ratio, Fang Yuan chose to halt the investment to stop his loss.

After careful consideration, Fang Yuan hesitated no more and chose this plan resolutely.

Time passed, it was a scene of tranquility in the outside world of the five regions, with turbulence surging in secret. The time flow in the sovereign immortal aperture was much faster and changes could be seen every day.

The whole sovereign immortal aperture had developed a step further.

The one million qi path dao marks from annexing Qi Sea grotto-heaven had already influenced every part of the sovereign immortal aperture.

The current mini nine heavens were filled with large amount of mist. These mists were of all kinds of colors; mini yellow heaven had yellow mist, mini white heaven had white mist...

A portion of these mists condensed and formed clouds.

Fang Yuan had originally planned to bring in clouds, but at present, it had already progressed very well through just the sovereign immortal aperture's natural development, saving a lot of Fang Yuan's resources.

“Dao marks are the true foundation of the immortal aperture's growth.”

“With these one million dao marks, the immortal aperture can produce all kinds of favorable changes just by developing naturally.”

“Naturally, there are also risks. In this process, I have to pay attention at all times and make timely adjustments to prevent these changes from endangering the previous ecology.”

Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture was too spacious, the influence of one million qi path dao marks was spread over all parts, and could be borne by the sovereign immortal aperture itself.

In the mini five regions, qi flows appeared in many areas. There were mists around some famous and special mountain ranges in Mini Southern Border. Frost and icy air had started to cover the atmosphere of Mini Northern Plains. Hot air started to rise in Mini Western Desert, while qi vortexes appeared in many areas of Central Continent.

The truly enormous increase was in the basic two qi— heaven qi and earth qi!

Fang Yuan could clearly observe that a remarkable amount of earth qi had accumulated in the vast underground depths of the sovereign immortal

aperture.

There was an endless amount of heaven qi spread in the sky, but it was not as obvious as the concentrated earth qi.

As heaven qi continues to increase, there would be even more mists and clouds in the mini nine heavens and a faint qi wall would form in between the mini nine heavens. As this qi wall develops, it would finally become the heavenly wind qi wall.

Earth qi, however, had two directions for growth.

One was that Fang Yuan could ignore it and let it condense into one lump. This lump of earth qi would continue piling up and form some underground caves. Anything that entered these earth qi filled caves would be corroded by the earth qi and turn into stone statues. If this kind of earth qi became too dense, it could form earth qi sandstorms, which would have a vicious effect towards the surroundings. However, a large amount of earth path immortal materials would be produced during earth qi sandstorms.

The second direction was that Fang Yuan could meticulously divert this giant lump of earth qi, digging out tunnels around the earth qi to let it flow and spread to all directions.

There would not be earth qi sandstorms if the earth qi were to be distributed to various parts of the immortal aperture. This could make the soil of the mini five regions even more fertile and increase the productivity of plants, ores, and other resources. And those long and narrow tunnels that moved the earth qi would widen gradually as they get eroded by earth qi, these tunnels would be filled with earth path dao marks and finally become Earth Trenches.

These two development directions had their advantages and disadvantages.

Fang Yuan did not even have to consider, he chose the second path.

He did not lack earth path immortal materials. Digging tunnels and creating earth trench veins would elevate the whole sovereign immortal aperture

comprehensively! It would greatly expand the development prospects!

Fang Yuan entrusted all the development of the sovereign immortal aperture to his subordinates. These Gu Immortals worked hard and would never idle.

As for Fang Yuan's main body, he was working hard on cultivating karma divine tree.

Previously, Fang Yuan could barely activate the killer move karma divine tree by using rank seven mature bamboo Immortal Gu as the core and other rank six wood path Immortal Gu as supplementary. He lacked the core rule path Immortal Gu 'Cause', and the core wood path Immortal Gu 'Effect', Fang Yuan had to use a vast number of mortal Gu as replacement. Back then, because he lacked wood path Immortal Gu and wood path attainment level, Fang Yuan did not overly invest into it.

Because of this, the steps became complex, he had to spend a lot of effort on it, karma divine tree took longer to activate and it could not be used in actual battle. Not only this, the karma divine tree that used rank seven core Immortal Gu instead had its might reduced to rank six level.

After this period of improvement, although karma divine tree's two main core Immortal Gu – Cause and Effect – were still lacking, mature bamboo Immortal Gu was replaced by much more suitable wood path Immortal Gu.

At the same time, because of the increase in Fang Yuan's wood path attainment level, the killer move karma divine tree had obtained a huge improvement as well. At present, this move's preparation time had shrunk greatly and could be used in real battles. Its might had already advanced to rank seven level.

“This move is clearly lacking in dealing with rank eight Gu Immortals. At most, I can use it to bully rank sevens, its most important use is still to subdue Divine Bean Palace!”

“As for the killer move karma relocation, I am still unable to restore it for the moment.”



With karma divine tree, Fang Yuan was itching to have a go. As long as he used karma divine tree, there would be a huge breakthrough and progress regarding Divine Bean Palace.

However, Divine Bean Palace was in Fang clan's headquarters. Fang Yuan had only been assisting Fang Di Chang before and had no good opportunity to make a move, even though he was in contact with Divine Bean Palace all the time.

How would he create this opportunity?

Before Fang Yuan resolved this issue, Fang Di Chang requested him to return to Fang clan once again.

In fact, during this period of time when Fang Yuan was cultivating wood path, Fang clan had already urged him to return again and again.

But this time, Fang Di Chang personally sent a letter unlike the previous few times. In the letter, Fang Di Chang clearly informed Fang Yuan: He had already found a way to refine Divine Bean Palace. As long as they went by this method, they could definitely refine Divine Bean Palace and grasp this Immortal Gu House!

This made Fang Yuan develop an intense curiosity, Fang Di Chang had also obtained a breakthrough?

“What is going on?” Fang Yuan disguised as Suan Bu Jin once again and returned to Fang clan.

“This is my plan, Brother Suan Bu Jin, what do you think?” Fang Di Chang explained his plan to Fang Yuan and asked.

Fang Yuan went into thinking.

Fang Di Chang was indeed a wisdom path great grandmaster, he really thought of a feasible way. That was to use a house to break the house!

Fang Di Chang's concrete plan was to build a temporary Immortal Gu House inside Divine Bean Palace. This Immortal Gu House would first

deduce and probe before self-detonating, the powerful explosion would instantly break Divine Bean Palace's internal defense.

Fang clan was not like Fang Yuan, they could not achieve a breakthrough in wood path in such a short period of time and obtain a wood path grandmaster. But Fang Di Chang fully displayed Fang clan's specialty to deal with Divine Bean Palace.

“But such a forceful move might result in a damaged Divine Bean Palace.” Fang Yuan said.

Fang Di Chang smiled bitterly: “Nothing can be done about it, Fang clan's situation is worsening day by day. But, as long as we refine Divine Bean Palace and keep its damaged state as a secret, who would be able to tell clearly?”

Fang Yuan frowned: “First, although it is difficult to construct an Immortal Gu House inside Divine Bean Palace, it should be possible with our Fang clan's foundation. But what about after that? To probe Divine Bean Palace's deeper operation mechanics, there needs to be a Gu Immortal to control the Immortal Gu House to resist Divine Bean Palace at all times and activate the Immortal Gu House according to the changes in Divine Bean Palace. And, on this basis, under the premise that the Gu Immortal has to keep the Immortal Gu House activated at all times, the Immortal Gu House has to detonate to destroy a portion of Divine Bean Palace and make it have no defensive strength.”

“But if so, isn't the Gu Immortal inside the Immortal Gu House in great danger?” Fang Yuan fixed his gaze onto Fang Di Chang.

The candidate for maneuvering the Immortal Gu House was no doubt a wisdom path Gu Immortal. It was between Fang Yuan or Fang Di Chang.

Who to send?

Fang Yuan understood immediately why Fang clan insisted on him returning this time.

But he would never do such a dangerous thing!

Fang Di Chang knew Fang Yuan's thoughts as he smiled: "Don't worry brother, we won't make you control the Immortal Gu House alone, we will be doing it together. After this task is finished, Fang clan will make sure to repay your contributions."

"I can agree, but, I need to take part in the whole process of the Immortal Gu House construction."

Fang Di Chang's eyes flashed with a sharp light, he hesitated for a bit before nodding: "It can be done! Come, let's start the work right away."

Constructing an Immortal Gu House inside the palace was not easy, it was much more difficult than setting up a formation within a formation. Many times, the constructed Immortal Gu House inexplicably broke apart.

Fang clan's losses were a lot, but fortunately, their foundation in this aspect was truly deep.

Together with Fang Yuan using his actual ability to provide several logical concepts occasionally, the Immortal Gu House was constructed successfully.

Fang Di Chang and Fang Yuan entered the Immortal Gu House that looked like a tent with a circular top, they began to probe the inner mechanics and profundities of Divine Bean Palace.

Their progress was indeed huge with this Immortal Gu House.

Not long later, Fang Di Chang felt the timing was right and said to Fang Yuan: "We can start the final step. Are you ready?"

"Yes." Fang Yuan nodded.

"Good." Fang Di Chang said and activated the Immortal Gu House; chains shot out from all around and tightly bound Fang Yuan instantly!

Fang Yuan was pale with fright: "Brother, what are you doing?"

Fang Di Chang looked at him deeply and said with deep meaning: “Brother Suan Bu Jin, Fang clan will not forget your sacrifice.”

“So it was like this! What you want to destroy is me and not this Immortal Gu House!” Fang Yuan suddenly came to a realization.

“The Immortal Gu House needs to be detonated as well.” Fang Di Chang said: “But just the power of the Immortal Gu House’s detonation is only ordinary. Only by sacrificing a wisdom path Gu Immortal like you can I make an instant breakthrough and reach an even higher level in wisdom path. I can then use the grand power of detonation to subdue Divine Bean Palace!”

“Oh Brother Suan Bu Jin, I know that this is unfair to you.”

“But there is no other way left, you have also seen Fang clan’s situation, please die for the sake of Fang clan’s future.” Fang Di Chang bowed deeply towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan panicked and started cursing loudly.

Fang Di Chang’s expression turned cold: “You are also a Fang clan member, you are dying for a good cause. Rest in peace.”

Once he said that, he activated the final method.

# **Chapter 1860 - You Know Too Much**

## Chapter 1860 You Know Too Much

Fang Gong, who was hiding near Divine Bean Palace, was feeling anxious.

“What is going on? Why is there no movement from Divine Bean Palace? Did something happen?” Fang Gong calculated the time.

Fang Di Chang’s scheme against Fang Yuan naturally was not his decision alone, he had run through this plan with Fang Gong and others.

Because they were worried that Suan Bu Jin, who was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, would become suspicious, Fang Gong had been hiding outside the palace to prevent any accidents from happening.

“First supreme elder, please be at ease. Second supreme elder took action only after making a proper plan, his strength is also above Suan Bu Jin’s and adding on the immortal formation outside the palace and the support of the Immortal Gu House inside the palace, Suan Bu Jin’s defeat is almost a certainty. What’s more, if there were to be any mishaps on second supreme elder’s end leaving him unable to control the situation, he will definitely send us a message.” Third supreme elder who was standing on the side assured.

He was an old man with gray hair, dressed in a yellow robe.

“You are right.” Fang Gong nodded. Right at this time, an explosion occurred from inside Divine Bean Palace.

Fang Gong and Fang Hua Sheng glanced at each other before the latter spoke: “It has started! The Immortal Gu House has detonated.”

“Let’s go take a look!” Fang Gong ran immediately towards Divine Bean Palace.

Divine Bean Palace's door was tightly closed before, but Fang Di Chang had already refined a portion of the palace with Fang Yuan's help, allowing Fang Gong and Fang Hua Sheng to enter directly.

"Second elder!" Fang Gong's eyes narrowed as he saw the heavily injured and bloodied Fang Di Chang among the ruins of an Immortal Gu House.

"Second elder, are you okay? Hold on!" Fang Hua Sheng also arrived soon after and immediately started using healing methods.

He was the most proficient healing Gu Immortal in Fang clan.

Sure enough, with his treatment, Fang Di Chang slowly came to his senses.

He spoke weakly: "That Suan Bu Jin was hiding his strength, although I succeeded in ambushing him, I was still struck by his counterattack and need to rest for some time. But Divine Bean Palace..."

Before Fang Di Chang finished speaking, Fang Gong interrupted: "Second elder, don't mention Divine Bean Palace. You are the brain behind our Fang clan, our strategist, Fang clan cannot be without you. Let third elder heal your injuries."

Fang Gong's words were heartwarming.

Fang Hua Sheng added: "Second elder, don't overexert yourself, your injuries are not light, you should listen to first elder. Come, let me take you to the secret room so I can heal you properly."

"Alright." Fang Di Chang weakly closed his eyes.

He was taken to the secret room and treated by Fang Hua Sheng.

The treatment lasted a day and two nights.

After the treatment finished, Fang Hua Sheng visited Fang Gong alone and reported.

"How is the situation?" Fang Gong asked.

Fang Hua Sheng replied: “Reporting to first supreme elder, there is no issue. I inspected second elder’s blood, soul, and body, they are all authentic. Moreover, as there is no change in life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu in the ancestral hall, second elder should still be himself!”

As it turned out, Fang Hua Sheng was not just treating Fang Di Chang but also had the secret task of inspecting Fang Di Chang.

Fang Gong nodded: “I trust second elder, but inspection is a necessity. How did Southern Border righteous path become a laughing stock in the five regions? It is because they let Fang Yuan infiltrate them. Although Suan Bu Jin is not at the level of that demon Fang Yuan, he is a wisdom path Gu Immortal after all; we still don’t know about all his methods, we can never be too careful. Moreover... second supreme elder himself had asked me to arrange this identity inspection.”

Fang Hua Sheng laughed: “You two really have a lot of worries, from what I see, that Suan Bu Jin might be a rank seven wisdom path expert but he is a lone cultivator after all, he has limited foundation. Our Fang clan is a super force, we used almost all our strength to scheme against him and even detonated an Immortal Gu House, it could be said that we spared no expense for this! With such a strength difference, getting rid of Suan Bu Jin is not a difficult matter.”

“I must see his body if he is alive, if he is dead, I must see his corpse. I haven’t seen Suan Bu Jin’s corpse or soul, so I am somewhat worried.” Fang Gong’s gaze was slightly heavy.

“Hahaha, he cultivates wisdom path, not transformation path. Even without second supreme elder’s explanations of the details, I can make a rough guess. That Suan Bu Jin must have used some method to gain a sudden increase in his strength when he counterattacked, resulting in a powerful explosion which destroyed his own corpse and soul.” Fang Hua Sheng said.

Fang Di Chang who was lying in the bed opened his eyes.

“It has already been a day and a night since Fang Hua Sheng reported. Looks like I managed to deceive them!” Fang Di Chang thought.



He was not the real Fang Di Chang, but Fang Yuan's clone!

Going back to the moment when Fang Di Chang started on his scheme.

"Oh Brother Suan Bu Jin, I know that this is unfair to you."

"But there is no other way left, you have also seen Fang clan's situation, please die for the sake of Fang clan's future." Fang Di Chang bowed deeply towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan panicked and started cursing loudly.

Fang Di Chang's expression turned cold: "You are also a Fang clan member, you are dying for a good cause. Rest in peace."

Once he said that, he activated the final method.

Silence.

"Huh?" Fang Di Chang was slightly dazed as he activated the method again.

Still silence!

"What's going on?!" Fang Di Chang's pupils shrunk and his expression changed as he quickly inspected.

He looked at Fang Yuan with disbelief: "You actually tampered with this Immortal Gu House!"

Fang Yuan's panicked expression disappeared completely and a sinister smile replaced it: "Oh, yeah, damn it, you actually found out!"

"How is this possible? I was personally in charge of the whole process, you only gave a few suggestions and nothing more!" Fang Di Chang suddenly felt a chill as he said this: "Could it be...."

"Hahaha!" Fang Yuan clapped: "You are indeed a wisdom path great grandmaster, you realized so quickly. That's right, although I only gave a

few suggestions, you accepted them. An Immortal Gu House constructed from those suggestions has many areas that corresponds to Divine Bean Palace. You set up a Gu formation outside the palace and a Gu house inside to infiltrate Divine Bean Palace and refine it forcefully. But from another aspect, Divine Bean Palace also infiltrated your Gu formation and Gu house. As for me, I just happen to be able to influence Divine Bean Palace.”

Divine Bean Palace was like a locked treasure chest. Fang clan’s Gu formation and Gu house were like a crowbar that was inserted into a gap in the chest lid, which could forcibly break the lock of the chest and open it, at the same time, this treasure chest, Divine Bean Palace, was like a large mouth that bit the crowbar.

What Fang Yuan did now was to influence Divine Bean Palace and make it bite the crowbar tightly. This created the current situation — Fang Di Chang activated his method but there was no effect.

Fang Di Chang glared at Fang Yuan and said: “Who in the world are you? It is not easy to accomplish this! First, you need extremely high formation path attainment, and second, you also need to have a method to influence Divine Bean Palace.”

Fang Yuan smiled, although his wisdom path attainment level was lower than Fang Di Chang’s, he was still a grandmaster. His formation path was also at grandmaster level, this was double grandmaster attainment level.

So, when Fang Di Chang was modifying the immortal formation outside the palace and constructing the Immortal Gu House inside the palace, Fang Yuan had already seen through his plot.

Fang Yuan was not angry, but was pleasantly surprised. He restrained himself and worked this plot to his own advantage, Fang Di Chang had thought the situation was within his control, but he was already seen through by Fang Yuan.

Immortal killer move — Karma Divine Tree!

Green smoke rose above Fang Yuan's shoulders and head, and formed a huge divine tree. The divine tree was green and lush, and there were several fruits scattered among the leaves.

Divine Bean Palace began to shake.

Fang Di Chang's eyes opened wide with shock and anger as he pointed at Fang Yuan: "So you sided with Heavenly Court! You despicable bastard!!"

He was familiar with karma divine tree because he had once fought Chen Yi and had experienced this killer move.

Now that he saw this move again, his first thought was not about Fang Yuan, but that Suan Bu Jin had sided with Heavenly Court and that Heavenly Court had given karma divine tree to him to retrieve Divine Bean Palace.

Ever since Fang clan seized Divine Bean Palace and chased Chen Yi away, they treated Heavenly Court as their main enemy.

Sweat started to appear on Fang Di Chang's forehead because of the fright. Because he naturally had the thought: If this truly is Heavenly Court's conspiracy, Suan Bu Jin definitely had backup. Maybe, Heavenly Court's rank eight Gu Immortals are already hiding outside Fang Clan headquarters!

Seeing Fang Di Chang's misunderstanding, Fang Yuan did not explain but focused on karma divine tree.

This was the first time he was openly using this move, Fang Yuan soon discovered Divine Bean Palace was responding to this move and slowly began to put down its resistance and accept him, the owner of this killer move.

Soon, Fang Di Chang was unable to even budge.

The temporary Immortal Gu House had the effect of imprisoning Gu Immortals, Fang Di Chang had intended to use this ability against Suan Bu

Jin but Fang Yuan's influence was much greater than Fang Di Chang's, and with Divine Bean Palace's suppression, Fang Di Chang became the prisoner.

"Good, very good, Suan Bu Jin! I admit defeat, kill me." Fang Di Chang sneered without any fear of death.

He fully displayed his bravery at the juncture of life and death.

Fang Yuan also sneered: "You want to use your death to trigger a change in life tablet Gu and other methods, to notify Fang Gong and others who are outside? Such mentality is praiseworthy, but I won't be baited. I will extract your soul and then use my split soul to possess you, your body won't die and your soul also won't dissipate, so there will be no change in life tablet Gu."

"From now on, I will use this Fang Di Chang clone to replace you and infiltrate Fang clan. I will search your soul clean, I will plunder all your experiences, memories, and information."

"Hmph! Impossible! You can forget about it." Fang Di Chang snorted coldly: "You think a split soul cannot be inspected? The details about my soul are recorded in Fang clan, any difference will result in you getting exposed."

"Moreover, you have too little time. I have already set a time limit with first supreme elder and others. if they don't see me before the time limit, they will immediately charge in to reinforce me!"

"At that time, even if you have Heavenly Court's reinforcements, how long can you hold on for? The furious first elder Fang Gong will definitely turn you into meat paste!"

"So, Suan Bu Jin, cooperate with my Fang clan. Heavenly Court is using you, although they are scheming against me, they are practically disregarding your life." Fang Di Chang urged.

Fang Di Chang was indeed worthy of being a wisdom path great grandmaster, his words were incisive and without faults. He was actually instigating Fang Yuan! His words were even extremely logical.

Fang Yuan smiled as he gazed deeply at Fang Di Chang.

Fang Di Chang had been staring at Fang Yuan as well and paled as he saw Fang Yuan's expression.

Because he thought of an even more frightening truth.

“You played me at my own game, there must be a reason for such confidence. To complete this plan, you need to have a high formation path and wisdom path attainment, moreover, you must also have extraordinary soul path methods!”

“No, you are not sent by Heavenly Court!”

“You! You are Fang Yuan!!”

Fang Di Chang's face turned deathly pale.

He realized.

It was not necessary for him to be from Heavenly Court just because he had karma divine tree. Chen Yi was killed by Fang Yuan, this matter was publicized by Fang Yuan himself.

Clap clap clap.

Fang Yuan clapped: “Truly worthy of being a wisdom path great grandmaster.”

Fang Di Chang blinked as he swallowed his saliva: “Fang Yuan, we can cooperate. There is no need to create such a conflict, please believe in our Fang clan's strength and sincerity... urgh!”

Fang Di Chang's eyes opened wide all of a sudden.

Veins bulged on his forehead and his face turned red as if an invisible hand was clenching his neck and covering his nose, suffocating him.

While conversing with him, Fang Yuan had been concentrating on influencing Divine Bean Palace. This influence had finally reached a qualitative change!

“Fang... Fang Yuan, everything... can... be discussed...”

Fang Yuan shook his head with a smile: “It is truly a pity for a wisdom path great grandmaster to die here. But you... know too much.”

“Ahh.” At the next moment, Fang Di Chang’s eyes rolled back and his mouth foamed, his body twitched a couple times before he died.

# **Chapter 1861 - Fang Gong Lifts His Suspicions**

## Chapter 1861 Fang Gong Lifts His Suspicions

Fang clan headquarters.

‘Fang Di Chang’ was resting in bed, his face still somewhat pale.

A young rank six Gu Immortal was standing by the bed, he was Fang Yun.

Fang Yun was Fang Di Chang’s adopted son, he was young, handsome, and his eyes were bright like stars. Right now, he had a concerned expression as he bowed: “Father, you have suffered such heavy injuries, you need to rest properly. Please tell me what I can do for you.”

Fang Yun was completely unaware that the father in front of him was someone else, a clone of Fang Yuan.

In a way, Fang Yuan could be considered his father’s murderer, Fang Yun was treating the enemy as his father.

Fang Di Chang coughed and waved his hand weakly: “Yun Er, don’t put on an act. Can father still not understand your nature? Come, sit here, don’t be so restrained.”

Fang Yun’s expression immediately relaxed as he shrugged his shoulders and raised his eyebrows, sitting by the bedside: “Father, you really gave me a scare. I didn’t think you would make such a big move this time, it was truly risky! Such a pity that Senior Suan Bu Jin lost his life.”

Fang Yun had a sad expression.

Fang Yuan had once saved Fang Yun’s life as Suan Bu Jin. Fang Yun had all along remembered this and had high regard for Suan Bu Jin.



And this time, Fang Di Chang had not told the truth of the plot to Fang Yun. The people who were in on the plan to get rid of Suan Bu Jin were limited to Fang clan's first supreme elder, second supreme elder, and third supreme elder.

This plan could not have too many people, especially Fang Yun.

Suan Bu Jin had much contact with Fang Yun, he was a shrewd wisdom path Gu Immortal and could easily make Fang Yun expose the conspiracy had Fang Yun known the truth.

Fang Di Chang was a wisdom path great grandmaster, he paid attention to every detail.

In all fairness, had it been any other Gu Immortal, they might have really been done in by Fang Di Chang. Even Fang Yuan, if he didn't have the premonition which made him improve karma divine tree, might have been in some trouble.

Fang Di Chang did not make any slip-ups, he had already overestimated Suan Bu Jin as much as possible. But when he knew Suan Bu Jin's true identity, he immediately realized: he had greatly underestimated Fang Yuan.

In fact, not only Fang Di Chang, even Heavenly Court's wisdom path great expert Fairy Zi Wei was underestimating Fang Yuan. It was such that the whole Gu Immortal world of the five regions was greatly underestimating Fang Yuan — they thought Fang Yuan was still a rank seven.

Fang Yuan had long since advanced to rank eight and even used his Qi Sea Ancestor identity to get a portion of Primordial Origin's qi path true inheritance out of Duke Long's hands.

Fang Di Chang was only a rank seven, the Gu formation and the Gu house he was relying on were completely seen through by Fang Yuan. At the same time, Divine Bean Palace also became Fang Yuan's support.

Fang Di Chang had treated Suan Bu Jin as a crocodile and had never imagined there to be a vicious dragon under the crocodile skin.

Thus, he was crushed. He made such a huge mistake that there was no chance to make a comeback.

“Yun Er, come, give me your hand.” Fang Di Chang said.

Fang Yun was puzzled, but he did not want to disobey his father’s order and obediently stretched his arm.

Fang Di Chang put three Immortal Gu in his hand.

“Father, what are you doing?” Fang Yun was shocked.

“I intend to hand over my wisdom path inheritance to you.”

Fang Yun was dazed for a moment before he said: “But father, I cultivate cloud path, not wisdom path. Moreover, didn’t you allow me to cultivate cloud path before?”

Fang Di Chang nodded: ” I allowed you to cultivate cloud path before because you have a lively nature and did not want to take on responsibilities, which suits cloud path. But cloud path is only a minor path, it can never compare to wisdom path.”

“Most importantly, this event made me question myself. Suan Bu Jin’s death is the best reminder to me. I need to look for a wisdom path inheritor for the clan, if something happens to me, there will be someone to replace me.”

“Father, don’t talk about such things.” Fang Yun quickly replied.

“Life is uncertain, what accidents cannot happen? Life is full of the unexpected. I am now heavily injured and lying in bed, it was something I had never imagined before. Moreover, you know about our clan’s situation. I must prepare for the future of our clan.” Fang Di Chang said in a sincere and serious tone.

Fang Yun nodded and had a rare look of solemnity: “Father, you are right. I will change to cultivating wisdom path.”

Fang Di Chang nodded with a smile before shaking his head: “You are my son, as your father, I know you don’t suit wisdom path, cloud path is the most suitable for you. I am planning for the clan but won’t overlook you. So, father’s arrangement is to first hand the wisdom path inheritance to you, but you don’t need to change to cultivating wisdom path. You already have cloud path foundation, it will be troublesome and a great loss for you to change now.”

“Currently, you only need to hold onto this wisdom path inheritance. If there is a critical situation in the future requiring you to make the sacrifice, change your cultivation path then. If father passes away someday, select a suitable inheritor to pass on this wisdom path inheritance, understood?”

“Father, your arrangements are very wise, I understand!” Fang Yun laughed, he immediately relaxed after knowing that he did not have to cultivate wisdom path.

“Leave, you brat, father needs to rest. Get used to these three wisdom path Immortal Gu first. There is your Senior Suan Bu Jin’s distracting thoughts Immortal Gu among them, although he died, I need to pass on his inheritance.” Fang Di Chang said while waving his hand.

“I will take my leave.” Fang Yun left quickly and closed the door gently.

Only Fang Yuan’s clone was left in the room.

He closed his eyes and pondered inwardly with an exhausted look: “My physical body is Fang Di Chang’s, so there was no flaw in the blood. Fang Di Chang has not died, so there is no change in life tablet Gu. His soul was personally taken care of by the main body. After splitting the soul, many soul path methods were used and adding on the advantage of the time flow in the sovereign immortal aperture, the soul matches with the body extremely well and there is no flaw.”

“However, just these are still not enough.”

Fang Di Chang thought of Fang Gong.

Although Fang Yuan had not been in much contact with Fang Gong, he understood the latter's nature.

From the outside, Fang Gong was bold and reckless, he did not bother about little things, but in fact, under his bold appearance, he was highly shrewd and cautious.

This could be seen from when he schemed against Chen Yi.

He was a grand rank eight Gu Immortal, but he actually hid his cultivation level and disguised as an ordinary Gu Immortal. When he saw the timing was right, he suddenly erupted with his strength and struck Chen Yi viciously, Chen Yi was caught off-guard and suffered a huge loss.

Fang Yuan knew that to deceive this kind of person, he could not rely on just having 'no flaws that could be found'.

He needed to put up a performance as well.

"Oh? Second elder intentionally gave his wisdom path inheritance to Fang Yun?" Fang Gong soon received this news.

The one who reported the news was his own biological great grandson, an outstanding expert among rank six and Fang clan's possible successor — Fang Leng.

Fang Leng had a square face and was slightly older than Fang Yun. Fang Yun was very close to Fang Leng, when he obtained Fang Di Chang's inheritance, he did not hide it from this respected senior brother.

Fang Leng was clearly much more shrewd than Fang Yun, that very night, he reported this news to Fang Gong.

Fang Gong frowned slightly, not speaking.

He knew Fang Di Chang's intention.

Fang clan's external situation was troubling and there was huge pressure on them, but there were also internal struggles inside the clan.

Places with people have conflicts, even if there were more and more resources, they still needed to consider how to distribute it. The clan's resources were limited, who used them now, who used them later, who could use them better, who used them worse, these were natural conflicts and could never be reconciled.

The two biggest factions in Fang clan belonged to Fang Gong and Fang Di Chang.

These two factions cooperated closely but it did not mean there was no strife between them. In fact, these two factions were always contesting with each other, it was just that Fang Gong's faction had third supreme elder Fang Hua Sheng while Fang Di Chang was only a rank seven, they had always firmly grasped the highest authority in the clan.

Fang Di Chang possessed the wisdom path inheritance which had always been the foundation of the second faction.

Fang Gong's frown was because he had been thinking if he could take the chance to ask for this wisdom path inheritance.

Look, you almost lost your life this time, the wisdom path inheritance is in your hands, it will be Fang clan's greatest loss if there were to be an accident!

This was for the sake of the clan, if they pressured him with it, there was indeed a chance to force Fang Di Chang to hand over the inheritance or at least a portion of it.

There was a difference between the politics of a clan and a sect.

The clan's politics prioritized family relationship, their inheritances were passed down through bloodline ties. Although Fang Yun was Fang Di Chang's adopted son, the relationship was extremely good. This was because Fang Yun had been personally raised by Fang Di Chang since a young age. Fang Di Chang truly loved this son, if not, he would not have let him cultivate cloud path. He cared about his feelings and future happiness.

In the future, when Fang Di Chang retires, his second supreme elder position would be taken by Fang Yun according to the custom.

Fang clan had a lot of Gu Immortals, but this position could only belong to Fang Yun.

Unless Fang Di Chang raises an inheritor who cultivates wisdom path and is much more outstanding than Fang Yun.

Fang Di Chang's wisdom path inheritance belonged to Fang clan in name, but in fact, it was held by his faction and passed on from generation to generation.

Fang Yun cultivated cloud path and did not have the qualifications to inherit this wisdom path inheritance, this was the most obvious weakness of Fang Di Chang's faction.

Fang Gong was just thinking of striking this weakness but had never expected Fang Di Chang to put a stop to his plan before he even started.

"As expected of a wisdom path great grandmaster." Fang Gong's brows relaxed and a smile appeared on his face as he waved his hand.

Fang Leng understood: "I will take my leave."

"We lost our chance this time, so forget it. After all, we are all members of Fang clan, we are on the same side." Fang Gong was not too upset but was somewhat worried.

After all, Fang Di Chang's scheme succeeded and Suan Bu Jin was sacrificed to refine Divine Bean Palace. With this rank eight Immortal Gu House, the strength of Fang clan's second faction rose greatly, Fang Gong felt a huge pressure because of this.

As a higher up, he needed to consider a lot of things.

Fang clan's first supreme elder, who was in control of Fang clan for so many years, not only had to look after his own cultivation and nurture later generations, he also had to lead Fang clan in resisting external enemies and

expanding their territories. At the same time, he also needed to pay attention to the internal forces of Fang clan.

“Second supreme elder took action so quickly, his true intentions can be seen from this. He absolutely cannot be Suan Bu Jin’s disguise.” Right now, the final trace of doubt had disappeared from Fang Gong’s mind.

# **Chapter 1862 - Rank Eight Ant Nest Gu**

## **1862 Rank Eight Ant Nest Gu**

in the depths of eastern sea, gu tribe headquarters.

over half a month had passed in the blessed land, the dusty seal was completely unlocked.

there were many gu immortals at the scene, fang yuan's dragonman clone wu shuai, two dragon generals, gu tribe's leader, as well as several beastman gu immortals.

seeing the seal unlocked, gu tribe's leader nodded in his mind, he was even more certain of wu shuai's identity.

this seal was arranged by wu shuai himself and was further strengthened by generations of gu tribe leaders.

back then, wu shuai had realized he did not have much chance and arranged for a portion of his inheritance to be preserved in gu tribe headquarters.

gu tribe's leader looked at wu shuai and smiled: "please."

wu shuai waved his hand, a large grey rock rose to the air and was stored by wu shuai into his immortal aperture.



wu shuai activated his method to dissect the rock. because of the correct method, the rock was dissected quickly and revealed two immortal gu inside.

one was rank eight immortal gu ant nest which looked like an ordinary inverted bowl, it was brown and had a rough appearance. however, this immortal gu was the core immortal gu of green ant ascetic. this gu could breed all kinds of army ants.

army ant was a species created by green ant ascetic, it was extremely suitable for enslavement path gu immortals. in history, the real wu shuai's most used method was also army ant.

naturally, the queen ant of army ants could also breed other ants. but the queen ant could not breed another queen ant, this was a huge disadvantage.

after the dragonman race's extermination, duke long had sent the order to remove all the related things and records.

back then, green ant ascetic had already been enslaved by dragon palace and army ant had also become one of the symbols of the dragonman race, thus it was also implicated.

with all these reasons, army ants were like a shooting star, disappearing instantly from history.

besides ant nest immortal gu, there was also an information path immortal gu, it was rank seven and was called letter seal.

letter seal immortal gu contained a large amount of contents regarding army ants. besides this, letter seal immortal gu had been used to seal ant nest immortal gu.

ant nest immortal gu was at rank eight, it was not easy to preserve it as an inheritance. because for an immortal gu's existence, it needed to be fed in time, or else, it would die of hunger.

wu shuai used letter seal immortal gu to cover ant nest immortal gu with a thick layer of rock membrane, creating an immortal gu rock. as the price, letter seal immortal gu had to be left inside the rock as well.

gambling den gu masters would create some fake rocks for profits, they would put gu worm inside the rocks then make people open them, increasing the gambling den's reputation.

wu shuai's method was similar to it. it was just that he made the false rock not for profit but to preserve ant nest immortal gu.

this method was quite effective as ant nest gu was still alive after so many years.

naturally, when fang yuan's clone wu shuai dissected the rock, ant nest immortal gu was at an extremely weak and hungry state, letter seal immortal gu was also the same.

but it was not serious, fang yuan had already prepared the food and given them to wu shuai.

wu shuai fed the immortal gu while walking back with the gu tribe immortals.

on the way, wu shuai thanked: "your noble tribe kept your word! you preserved my inheritance until now, you are really my dragonman race's most trustworthy friend!"

the current gu tribe leader laughed: "lord wu shuai, i won't hide it from you, there have been ups and downs. it is not that my tribe's gu immortals did not covet your inheritance, but the tribe leader back then set a rule that every gu tribe leader had to first add a seal to this inheritance when they took the position."

"and we have always kept fate gu's revelation in mind, so this inheritance was able to be preserved until now."

gu tribe's leader was frank, making wu shuai laugh heartily.

wu shuai guaranteed on the spot: “my friendship with your tribe has lasted for a million years, and it shall continue in the future as well! right now, i am collaborating with fang yuan and have already solved the dragonman extermination killer move. this move had once killed me, and exterminated my clan, but from now onwards, it will have no effect.”

the eyes of gu tribe’s leader brightened: “this is extremely good news! dragonmen reign supreme, this is the decree of heaven. senior, to be honest, i have a favor to ask of you.”

over these days in gu tribe headquarters, fang yuan’s clone had enjoyed warm hospitality and they had even taken the initiative to return wu shuai’s inheritance.

mutual benefit was the foundation for allies, it was fair for gu tribe’s leader to make some requests right now.

fang yuan’s clone replied immediately with no hesitation: “just speak your mind, as long as it is within my abilities, i will help you.”

“i want to transform a portion of my tribe’s members to dragonmen. senior, what do you think...” gu tribe’s leader asked with anticipation.

fang yuan nodded: “my close friend back then, gu liang, who was also your tribe’s leader, had this intention as well. at present, since i already have a completely new dragonman lifespan extension method, i can naturally help you.”

gu tribe’s leader was joyous: “many thanks, senior! my tribe has already prepared the raging wave rising dragon fire, please tell us what other immortal materials are needed.”

gu tribe had been hiding in the depths of eastern sea and its successive generations had actively searched and gathered raging wave rising dragon fire. over the million years, and with eastern sea being the number one region in resources, the present gu tribe treasury had a rarely seen reserve of raging wave rising dragon fire.

fang yuan's clone gave a few instructions and gu tribe's leader immediately acted accordingly.

several days later, immortal materials and candidates arrived before wu shuai.

wu shuai brought out dragon palace, using the dragonman lifespan extension method inside this immortal gu house could receive the assistance of dragon palace itself.

this batch of gu tribe members had over ten people. most were rank five gu masters while two were gu immortals. among them, half were elderly with their lifespan nearing the end and with no other lifespan extension methods left, the dragonman lifespan extension method became their only hope. the other half were young adults, the elites of the current gu tribe.

several days passed again, with the dragon spirit's help and the methods of fang yuan's clone, the dragonman lifespan extension method was used. most of the gu tribe candidates turned into dragonmen, but a portion were unlucky and lost their lives. after all, the dragonman lifespan extension method still had risks.

even so, gu tribe's leader was very happy at this result: "senior, your modified method has a much higher success rate than the original."

"my race's extermination was the price to obtain this achievement." fang yuan's clone heaved a sigh.

gu tribe's leader immediately consoled: "senior, i am sorry for your loss."

as he said this, he presented a batch of immortal materials.

for ant nest immortal gu to create army ants, immortal essence was only one of the conditions, it still required specific immortal materials. fang yuan's clone required these immortal materials. the gu tribe leader of back then knew this secret and had gathered these materials, the current gu tribe leader offered them, which showed their sincerity.

fang yuan's clone rejected: "i converted your tribe members as thanks, we did not discuss any remuneration."

"senior, please don't stand on ceremony, this is only a small gift from us."  
gu tribe's leader smiled.

but fang yuan's clone still persisted: "it has not been easy for you to survive, you are also my dragonman race's most trustworthy and reliable ally. how can i, wu shuai, treat my ally like this? although i don't have the immortal materials, i am already in collaboration with fang yuan, i can ask for him to provide the immortal materials."

"senior, fang yuan is a devil of this age, he might only have rank seven cultivation, but even heavenly court is unable to handle him. he is sinister and crafty, vicious and malicious, he can do anything as long as there are enough benefits. i hope you are vigilant, senior."

fang yuan's clone could not help but laugh in his mind.

gu tribe's leader was speaking ill of fang yuan in front of fang yuan, were he to know that wu shuai was fang yuan's clone, who knew what spectacular expression he would show.

fang yuan's clone nodded: "your words make sense, but heavenly court's force is huge, and fang yuan is no doubt a huge help that cannot be neglected. even if i am taking favors from a tiger, as long as it can increase my chance of victory against heavenly court and duke long, even if slightly, i am willing to take the risk."

gu tribe's leader nodded and sighed: "senior, you are right. to be honest, my gu tribe might be hiding in this corner, but we have made many reliable allies. eastern sea's merman imperial court is one of them. my gu tribe has received a lot of help from them."

"merman imperial court... this is indeed good news!" the gaze of fang yuan's clone brightened.

merman imperial court was a super force that had once received support from paradise earth immortal venerable. the human race had dominance, gu tribe was a beastman tribe hiding in the bottom of the sea, it was not strange for them to have a close relationship with mermen.

gu tribe's leader continued: "besides this, my tribe has some connections with the other four regions as well. for instance, we have stable trade with murong tribe in northern plains. some years ago, when imperial court blessed land was destroyed and eighty-eight true yang building collapsed, i had gone to northern plains to participate in northern plains' auction, i received warm hospitality from murong tribe back then."

wu shuai thought: "so it was you."

fang yuan's main body had also participated in northern plains' auction.

this auction was hosted by qin bai sheng.

back then, gu tribe's leader had worn a tall hat and large cloak and had an ordinary face, it was clearly a disguise. right now, wu shuai was looking at the real appearance of gu tribe's leader.

fang yuan had converted gu tribe members to dragonmen, it had clearly deepened their friendship and gu tribe's leader took the initiative to reveal many secrets.

gu tribe might have been living in hiding, but over such a long period of time, they had a lot of contact with the outside world and had an extremely firm foundation.

using gu tribe as a focal point, he could influence all five regions. naturally, this influence was limited.

but this limited influence could display a huge effect through fang yuan's planning.

"this is good news!" fang yuan's main body was quite happy when he received this information.

right now, he was no longer in western desert, but had arrived at northern plains.

he rapidly descended, below him was a giant pit.

the pit's entrance was almost circular and spanned hundreds of kilometers, it looked extremely grand.

fang yuan looked down and saw a scene of wilderness. there was a thick rainforest, having both yellow and green colors. from time to time, desolate beasts growled, large numbers of featherless birds flew out, their red bodies looked like the historical pterosaurs of earth.

it was one of the ten great fierce areas of northern plains, crazed demon cave!

# **Chapter 1863 - Walking Through The Seventh Layer Again**

## **1863 Walking Through The Seventh Layer Again**

fang yuan was dressed in a white robe, slowly descending to crazed demon cave.

two gu immortals were already waiting for a long time on the ground.

one gu immortal had a pale face and black beard, he had long wide sleeves and eyes that were shining like stars, he had an extraordinary air. he was known as not immortal and he cultivated rule path.

the other gu immortal was short, his height only reaching fang yuan's knee. his tiny eyes were shining brightly, he was secret schemer and he cultivated wisdom path.

the current fang yuan could not be compared to the past, he had trampled on heavenly court in the battle of lang ya and two battles in the river of time. he had even captured a large group of southern border immortals, which included two rank eights! not long ago, there was even news from eastern sea's gu immortal world that fang yuan borrowed qi sea ancestor's strength to block duke long, while he took away immortal gu house dragon palace.



in terms of who was the strongest and most famous demonic path gu immortal of the current generation, no one fit better than fang yuan.

“friends, we meet again.” after fang yuan landed, he greeted politely with a smile.

secret schemer and not immortal returned the greeting hurriedly.

not immortal smiled: “after the previous parting, when we heard of brother liu’s true identity being gu yue fang yuan, we were truly surprised and joyous. since you have come here this time, you must have a method to break through the current barrier, we have been waiting anxiously for a long time.”

fang yuan had undergone the crazed demon agreement using liu guan yi’s identity, and had become a member of crazed demon cave like chu du.

therefore, not immortal addressed fang yuan as brother liu.

as far as the three crazed demon eccentrics were concerned, fang yuan’s appearance had not changed because liu guan yi’s appearance was the original appearance of fang yuan’s sovereign immortal body.

“why don’t i see pang shan?” fang yuan asked.

“he seemed to have gained some insight when he explored the seventh layer and is currently in closed cultivation.” secret schemer replied.

“so that’s it.” fang yuan smiled, understanding in his head.

the three crazed demon eccentrics were taking precautions against him!

back then, when he went under the name of liu guan yi, his strength was not high. the current fang yuan was progressing rapidly, the whole world acknowledged that fang yuan could battle rank eight despite being only at rank seven. the three crazed demon eccentrics were naturally concerned about fang yuan suddenly making a vicious move against them.

after all, fang yuan was the biggest demon at present, his nature was vicious and cruel. don't be fooled by his smiling expression, he was, in actuality, a ruthless murderer who killed without even blinking his eyes.

although the three crazed demon eccentrics had long secluded themselves inside crazed demon cave and were only engrossed in cultivating, they were not fools. especially the head of the three eccentrics, secret schemer, his performance in fang yuan's previous life was quite spectacular and made heavenly court suffer major losses.

the three crazed demon eccentrics were wary of fang yuan, thus pang shan did not appear and was hiding somewhere.

it was very likely that him being in closed cultivation was only an excuse just in case fang yuan went crazy and attacked them! as long as there was at least one eccentric left, they would not have the worry of fang yuan killing them all.

“not only this, the three crazed demon eccentrics might have some backup methods, which is why they are keeping a person outside.” fang yuan deduced inwardly.

although fang yuan had undergone the crazed demon agreement, he had already gotten rid of its restrictions.

the three crazed demon eccentrics also had the killer move do not care, and could completely ignore the crazed demon agreement.

the three crazed demon eccentrics were wary of fang yuan and were on guard, but fang yuan did not actually want to attack them.

at least, he did not want to attack now.

“this is already the third time i am inside crazed demon cave. i hope there will be some gains!” fang yuan's main target for this trip was still limitless' true inheritance.

not long in the future, heavenly court would definitely hold the central continent refinement path convention to restore fate gu.

at that time, there would definitely be a huge battle involving gu immortals of the five regions!

in this battle, no matter how powerful fang yuan became, he could not control the situation. any venerable methods could easily topple the situation.

fang yuan had already realized this in the previous life.

the best example was duke long.

duke long was unmatched, but he was nothing against venerable methods. limitless demon venerable bound him instantly and made him unable to even budge for a long time. it was because of genesis lotus immortal venerable's method that duke long got free from the bindings and regained his freedom.

fang yuan's plan was that in this life, he would not only actively increase his strength but also gather some venerable true inheritances, if he could trigger venerable methods, it would be the perfect support in his plan to destroy fate gu!

and the most reliable clue was here — crazed demon cave!

fang yuan's timing was also perfect.

his current strength had already risen a lot. although he only had rank seven cultivation on the surface, he had already advanced to rank eight, even if the three crazed demon eccentrics went against him, he could quickly counterattack without any worry about his safety.

moreover, after some time, longevity heaven's bing sai chuan would awaken. his awakening would have a huge influence on longevity heaven and the whole northern plains gu immortal world.

were fang yuan to come to northern plains at that time and make a big commotion, he might have to face longevity heaven led by bing sai chuan, which would be hard to deal with.

not immortal guided the way ahead while secret schemer accompanied fang yuan and conversed with him.

fang yuan followed the two eccentrics deep into crazed demon cave.

crazed demon cave had nine layers.

the first layer was the most external layer, it was also the scene fang yuan saw from high in the sky.

the second layer was an incredibly hot land of burning rocks.

the third layer was covered in white fog, ferocious beasts moved in the fog and there was also the fog city. it was extremely dangerous.

...

every layer had completely different environments, demonic sounds spread from the deepest ninth layer to the whole of crazed demon cave at every set interval of time.

when the demonic sounds spread, all beings went crazy and would start killing each other, creating extreme chaos.

the deeper one went, the stronger the demonic sounds became.

but the method created by the three crazed demon eccentrics could defend against a portion of the demonic sounds' might.

however, what fang yuan used was not this method. before he came here, he had modified the previous method and the new method had extraordinary effects, it could be considered an advanced version.

after all, his current rule path attainment level was at great grandmaster.

while the demonic sound was active, the activation of immortal killer moves would be greatly affected. this was because the demonic sounds were chaotic dao marks, insanity was only the side effect.

the three moved down the curved pathways before finally reaching the seventh layer, which was also the third lowest layer.

back then, fang yuan's endpoint had been this layer.

the three crazed demon eccentrics similarly were stopped here for several hundreds of years. it was because they were stuck at this barrier without any breakthrough that they took in chu du and fang yuan.

however, their gains were also a lot.

the seven layers they explored had scattered traces of limitless demon venerable's inheritance.

the three crazed demon eccentrics researched these clues and were able to roughly deduce the scene at the final layer, although they had never been there.

fang yuan's sight was filled with dazzling light.

all sorts of colors emanated from the rocks, soil, and grass in this place.

this was dao mark light.

when the density of dao marks reached a certain level, they would let out this kind of brilliant radiance naturally.

in this seventh layer, every grain of soil and every piece of rock was a quasi-rank nine immortal material! the extremely unfortunate thing was these dao marks were chaotic and could not be used.

"fang yuan, after you." secret schemer gave way.

"ever since the previous failure, i have reflected on it and gained much insight." fang yuan laughed heartily as he walked in the front.

secret schemer and not immortal glanced at each other before following fang yuan closely.

in the recent period of time, fang yuan's reputation shook the world, but how much strength did he truly have?

three crazed demon eccentrics were not sure, and this situation was the best chance to ascertain it. secret schemer and not immortal's attention were gathered on fang yuan.

fang yuan walked leisurely.

the first ten steps were like strolling in sunshine.

twenty steps, he was relaxed.

thirty steps, his expression started to become serious.

forty steps, he was beginning to pant.

fifty steps, he looked exhausted.

over sixty steps, fang yuan stopped for a breather.

secret schemer looked at not immortal while not immortal also looked at secret schemer, both saw shock in each other's eyes.

the countless conflicting dao marks needed to be overcome to move in this place. the three crazed demon eccentrics' furthest limit had been over ten thousand steps, but they had rested again and again before continuing. if they were to move without resting like fang yuan, they would at most be able to walk forty-fifty steps.

"the terrifying thing is that fang yuan walked over sixty steps but it is obvious he has not used all his strength and is still at ease!"

"just this alone has surpassed us three. but where do his limits lie?"

thoughts surged up and down in the minds of not immortal and secret schemer.

but in fact, fang yuan had sovereign immortal body, he simply did not suffer any conflict from dao marks, so the exhaustion was only his disguise and act.

fang yuan would rather put up a show because he wanted to awe the three crazed demon eccentrics while also hiding his abilities.

fang yuan was a vigilant person who liked to keep his secrets hidden, if he could keep his cards under the table, he absolutely would not reveal them lightly.

“as expected of fang yuan.”

“right, such strength makes us three feel ashamed about ourselves.”

fang yuan narrowed his eyes: “you don’t need to be modest, i have been reborn several times and have many memories. the three crazed demon eccentrics have a famous reputation, you all have your own unique methods that even i have a high opinion of.”

not immortal and secret schemer were shaken inwardly.

fang yuan’s words had deep meaning, they could be taken as praise but also taken as a warning — i have been reborn, i am familiar with your methods, don’t make an enemy of me!

the three continued to walk forward.

the deeper they moved, the harder it became, and the more the pressure increased.

“we will save a lot of effort by relying on our respective path’s dao marks on the upcoming paths, fang yuan, let’s split up for now.” not immortal said.

he chose to walk towards the front-left where there were relatively more rule path dao marks, since he cultivated rule path.

not long later, secret schemer also bade farewell, he chose to walk the path with more wisdom path dao marks.

fang yuan naturally could move in a straight line, but he did not do so, instead choosing to hide his skills. he carefully chose a path to walk.

the two eccentrics saw this and had their own thoughts.



# **Chapter 1864 - Oh Fang Yuan, You Are Dead Mea**

## **1864 Oh Fang Yuan, You Are Dead Mea**

Crazed Demon Cave's seventh layer was quite large, and it felt even more huge in Not Immortal and Secret Schemer's perception.

Because they had to think carefully for every step they took while also enduring the conflict from countless dao marks.

The more they walked, the more difficult it became. This difficulty further widened the sense of distance they felt.

Fang Yuan moved like a normal Gu Immortal would for some time, while feeling some sympathy towards Not Immortal and Secret Schemer's situation.

"If I didn't have the sovereign immortal body, I would have to choose a dao mark path as well. But this dao mark path will keep on becoming narrower; there are many choices at the start, but the deeper you go, the fewer choices you have."

Fang Yuan walked for a while before stopping.

His path was cut.

The path ahead was filled with dao marks of other paths.

Fortunately, after passing this section, the path ahead had the dao marks Fang Yuan selected.

Fang Yuan discreetly glanced at Not Immortal and Secret Schemer.

These two were already left behind by him and were walking with a lot of difficulty.

Similarly, these two were also paying attention to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan clenched his teeth as he continued to move forward.

He pretended to be in a lot of difficulty, stopping at every step. After a while, he finally conquered the difficulty and once again walked the dao mark path that suited him, his face revealing a relaxed expression again.

“These conflicting dao marks are nothing to me. Instead, it is the acting that is more energy consuming.” Fang Yuan smiled bitterly in his mind.

Not Immortal and Secret Schemer glanced at each other from far away.

Fang Yuan’s strength was still above their current estimation!

In that small section, although Fang Yuan moved with difficulty, his speed was still fast. Were Not Immortal to be in the same situation, he might have spewed blood!

These two became slower the more they walked and even their hearts became heavier.

The surrounding dao marks pressured them constantly, making it very hard for them to move. Not Immortal was already spitting blood while Secret Schemer’s face looked yellowish purple.

After a while, the two had no choice but to stop.

They had reached their limits.

Fang Yuan was still moving in front, his expression looked much more exhausted than before. But it was obvious he still had a lot of strength left.

“Fang Yuan is truly a monster!”

“Sigh, he has many venerable inheritances, he is someone who has won against Heavenly Court repeatedly. It is not strange for him to have this achievement.”

Not Immortal and Secret Schemer conversed secretly, they sighed while feeling helpless.

“Then, let’s watch him from here. I want to see how far he can walk!” Secret Schemer snorted coldly.

Not Immortal hesitated for a moment before asking: “Do you think he can walk out of the seventh layer and enter the eighth layer?”

“How is that even possible?” Secret Schemer denied immediately, not even thinking of the possibility. But shortly after, he said with a heavy voice: “This possibility is not high, there are at least tens of thousands of steps before someone can walk out of seventh layer. The distance we have walked currently is not even ten percent! Fang Yuan is indeed powerful and is a rank seven demon that seldom appears in a hundred or even a thousand years. But in the end, he is not at rank eight, I even feel that only a venerable can get out of the seventh layer and enter the eighth layer.”

“Venerable...” Not Immortal thought and said: “Should we tell Fang Yuan of the clues that several venerables came here?”

“Yes.” Secret Schemer nodded: “Wait till Fang Yuan reaches his limits, we will tell this information to him after we return.”

Secret Schemer witnessed Fang Yuan’s strength and admitted Fang Yuan was stronger than him. Informing Fang Yuan of this information might spur Fang Yuan’s fighting spirit and make him stay in Crazy Demon Cave, accompanying the Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics to break through this place together.

Fang Yuan walked for a while before pausing slightly.

“This was the place where I saw Secret Schemer the previous time.” Fang Yuan sized up his surroundings but did not see any traces.

Back then, Fang Yuan remembered the dao marks here were mainly of metal path and earth path, but it was completely different now.

Fang Yuan was not surprised because the dao marks in the seventh layer could transform.

Every time the demonic sounds start from the ninth layer, they will spread to the eighth layer, then to the seventh layer, all the way to the first layer.

When they reach the first layer, the demonic sounds would be sealed by a formless force, not spreading to the outside world and affecting other beings.

Fang Yuan continued to walk forward.

Secret Schemer and Not Immortal stopped on their spots, watching his receding figure from the distance.

When Fang Yuan crossed Secret Schemer’s furthest record, this wisdom path Gu Immortal’s eyelids twitched.

Despite him expecting this situation, when he saw this happen for real, he could not help feeling a deep sense of loss.

“I was surpassed.” Secret Schemer heaved a deep sigh inwardly: “I am the head of the Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics, the person who explored the furthest. I have lived here for hundreds of years and have engrossed myself in researching this place, I never expected to be surpassed by Fang Yuan so easily.”

Envy and even hatred, as well as anger towards himself, bitterness, sadness, and all kinds of emotions surged in his heart.

Not Immortal's feelings were much better than Secret Schemer, after all he was the one with the worst performance among the Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics.

Seeing Secret Schemer's expression, Not Immortal heaved a sigh and was about to comfort him when his expression changed suddenly.

The demonic sounds started!

"What's going on?" Not Immortal was pale with fright.

Secret Schemer was also horrified: "How could the demonic sounds appear at this time?"

Not Immortal said: "Your previous deduction was correct, the demonic sound's timing is already messed up and we can no longer grasp its timing. Quick, let's retreat! This place is too dangerous!!"

Secret Schemer's face was already perspiring with sweat, he shouted towards Fang Yuan: "The demonic sound is here, retreat quickly! We can only be safe after exiting the seventh layer."

Fang Yuan turned around to look at them two.

These two no longer had the secluded cultivator demeanor of the Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics, they were panicking and were rapidly retreating.

"It doesn't look like they are trying to harm me." Fang Yuan frowned slightly.

Not Immortal and Secret Schemer had no time to choose a path, they could only barely make out the correct direction and retreat towards the outside.

The demonic sounds had just started and the dao marks here were already restless. Even more terrifying was when the demonic sounds truly resonated, there would be a wild tsunami of dao marks in the seventh layer! Immortal killer moves would immediately break upon activation. At this time period, even Duke Long would be in grave danger if he was here, he

would be as weak as a baby and his death would be an unchangeable outcome.

The seventh layer had already become a forbidden land that devoured everything, only a venerable might be able to contend it.

The two eccentrics used all their methods and staked all their strength. They were spewing blood as they retreated.

“Quick, we are almost out of here!” Secret Schemer’s eyes shone with wild joy as he looked ahead.

“I cannot go on!” Not Immortal crashed onto the ground.

Secret Schemer said through clenched teeth: “Persevere!”

The two had a very close relationship, Secret Schemer disregarded the danger and carried the unconscious Not Immortal.

At the moment of danger, his true nature was revealed.

Secret Schemer kept on moving, finally charged out.

His seven orifices were bleeding, his face was pale and green, he was blacking out time and again, and he felt as if his whole body was weighed down by heavy lead.

However, he did not dare to rest, the demonic sounds had just started, the seventh layer had become a dangerous zone and there was only hope for survival by returning to the sixth layer!

The demonic sounds had begun to spread and the warning alarms were ringing louder and louder in Secret Schemer’s mind. He clenched his teeth and exerted his final trace of strength to drag himself and the unconscious Not Immortal to the sixth layer.

“Wait, where is Fang Yuan?” Before leaving the seventh layer, he took the risk to take a look behind.

“Wha?!” His eyes widened as if someone had struck the back of his eyes.

He was stupefied!

Fang Yuan had not retreated, but instead had moved even deeper.

“You, you, you!” Secret Schemer could not make up any words in his agitated state.

Fang Yuan heard the sound and turned around to look at him, smiling: “It was already too late for me to retreat from where I was. But I have a life saving secret technique so I have a slim chance to survive. There is deadly danger in exploring here and I have already prepared myself mentally, so no worries. Secret Schemer, I hope we have the opportunity to meet again!”

Secret Schemer was silent, he wanted to say ‘Oh Fang Yuan, you are dead meat’, but was unable to speak it out.

In the end, he said: “Fang Yuan, we will definitely meet again!”

These words had deep meaning.

On one hand, he was encouraging Fang Yuan, hoping he could persevere and not give up trying, maybe, there was a hope for survival. On the other hand, he was also foretelling himself that as he continued to explore like this, he would be trapped in a situation like Fang Yuan’s sooner or later, and they would meet again in death.

Fang Yuan ruminated and smiled: “This Secret Schemer is indeed friendly and loyal.”

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Secret Schemer was like this. He did not want to go out of Crazy Demon Cave, but Not Immortal and Pang Shan were pulled into the five regions chaotic war.

To protect his companions, Secret Schemer left Crazy Demon Cave.

Although he only had rank seven cultivation, his wisdom path attainment was very deep, he became a huge problem for Central Continent and

Heavenly Court.

The Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics were secluded cultivators and did not have any blood relation, but their friendship was extremely deep, even surpassing many righteous path Gu Immortals.

A man is not a stalk of grass or a tree with no feelings. These three with a common goal lived together in seclusion for hundreds of years and helped each other, their relationship had already reached the point of staking one's life for another.

Fang Yuan looked at the swaying dao marks ahead, his expression was calm and at ease!

Even if these dao marks formed into a tsunami from the turbulence, it had no effect on him.

Sovereign immortal body, non-conflicting dao marks.

Fang Yuan was instead much more relaxed than before because Not Immortal and Secret Schemer had already left.

He smiled lightly and walked forward with ease.

He looked at the dazzling and grand dao mark waves in front of him. This was truly the most extraordinary scene in the world!

In the five regions and two heavens, there were many extraordinary sights; some were majestic, some were elegant, some were mighty, some were exquisite. Including both his previous lives and the present life, Fang Yuan had almost traveled the whole world, his vision was broad, he had plenty of experiences and seen many extraordinary things.

But right now, those magical scenes in his memories were all inferior to the waves of dao marks in front of him.

“If I leave my inheritance in the future, I will definitely record this scene and pass it to the later generations.” Fang Yuan thought.





# **Chapter 1865 - New Dao Mark, Venerable Paths!**

## **1865 New Dao Mark, Venerable Paths!**

Crazed Demon Cave, sixth layer.

The two heavily injured eccentrics were collapsed on the ground. Secret Schemer was kneeling and healing Not Immortal, disregarding his own injuries for the moment.

Not Immortal slowly opened his eyes, he was dazed at first before coming to his senses shortly after as he thanked with great joy: “I actually escaped, leader, you saved me once again!”

He then asked in doubt: “Where is Fang Yuan? Wait a second, he didn’t retreat in time?”

Secret Schemer smiled bitterly: “No. He is still at the seventh layer. But, his parting words were right, it was already late for him to retreat from that distance.”

Not Immortal was astonished, and after a long while, he sighed: “This is life, who could have imagined that the mighty Fang Yuan would perish here.”

Even though Fang Yuan's reputation was so illustrious, Not Immortal did not think he had much chance of survival.

Because Not Immortal knew the terrifying might of Crazy Demon Cave!

Secret Schemer had calmed down, his expression was a little bizarre: "It might be unbelievable but I have a strange feeling that Fang Yuan can survive. Although my rationality tells me it is impossible and I also can't deduce any way for him to survive, I still have this feeling inside me."

"Leader, you are a wisdom path Gu Immortal." Not Immortal was also dazed.

"Does every feeling of a wisdom path Gu Immortal have to be correct?" Secret Schemer shook his head bitterly: "Maybe, this is only my hope for Fang Yuan? He is so strong, far stronger than us, the whole world is shaken by him and even Heavenly Court is unable to deal with him. But such a character is going to perish inside Crazy Demon Cave. Sigh, maybe his ending will be our ending in the future. I must be feeling empathetic."

Not Immortal was silent.

After a good while, Secret Schemer broke the silence: "Let's go! Let's retreat and rest properly. When the demonic sounds stop completely, we will go to the seventh layer to search for Fang Yuan."

Not Immortal nodded despite him knowing Fang Yuan had almost no chance of surviving.

He stood up with difficulty but his body staggered and fell.

Fortunately, Secret Schemer held him in time.

Secret Schemer supported him and the two moved forward slowly while resisting the penetrating demonic sounds.

The path ahead was covered in darkness.

The two gradually merged into the darkness, both were moving while staggering.

They were completely unaware that in the seventh layer, Fang Yuan was still alive and had even made a new discovery.

“This is a new type of dao mark?” Fang Yuan’s gaze brightened in surprise.

In the dazzling dao mark waves, he started to discover some brand-new dao marks.

Fang Yuan was no longer the same as before, he had a great improvement in every path and had inherited several venerable true inheritances. His vision had broadened greatly.

But right now, he was certain he had never seen this kind of dao mark.

This was a completely new dao mark!

“These dao marks were originally still, because they were too low in quantity and scattered everywhere, they were quite inconspicuous. But right now, due to the demonic sound, all kinds of dao marks are in constant movement, and also because of the conflict of different dao marks, dao marks of similar paths are beginning to unite. This increased the size of these new dao marks and made them easier to discover.”

Fang Yuan rapidly deduced the reason.

When the demonic sounds had just started, all kinds of dao marks were mixed and woven randomly, complex and colorful.

After the demonic sounds had rang for a period of time, dao marks of each path gathered together and formed a united color. It was much clearer and more magnificent than before.

In front of Fang Yuan, metal path dao marks were wriggling around like a giant golden python. On his left, the soul path dao marks were even larger, they were like dark clouds as large as a city wall and were pushing forward

grandly. Beside Fang Yuan's feet was that brand-new dao mark, it was like a brook that was flowing gently.

Fang Yuan stopped and observed it carefully.

Not long later, his face was filled with astonishment.

From the new dao mark, he 'saw' blades and swords, he 'smelled' axes and halberds, he 'felt' hammers and spears, he 'heard' darts and arrows...

Fang Yuan's expression was solemn as he pondered: "This new dao mark represents a brand-new path. This path is quite grand, it actually contains blades, swords, axes, halberds, and other weapons. If someone creates this path in the future, it will definitely encompass sword path and blade path. This new path's battle strength will be very strong, and it also clearly has many profundities of human path."

But short after, Fang Yuan shook his head: "However, who knows how many generations it will take and how long is needed to create this path."

"Maybe, someone has the thought and the foundation to create this path, if he or she can witness this scene, it will definitely be a huge help to him or her. Or perhaps, no one in the world will have this thought, this path will always be hidden like a treasure chest buried deep underground and there will never be anyone to open it."

Fang Yuan did not have any feeling of regret.

This situation was normal in the Gu world.

There was a common saying, 'talent is often overlooked due to a lack of opportunity, everyone needs a scout to excavate their talent'. In fact, an exceptional path needs talented people to unearth it.

Fang Yuan did not want to use this to create a new path.

He already had his hands full with the paths he cultivated. Moreover, creating a new path required an extremely huge amount of time and energy. He did not have such spare time.

Fang Yuan continued moving forward.

Along the way, he saw many new dao marks.

Some dao marks had gathered into a ball, round and smooth; Fang Yuan seemed to smell light scent of grass from it, but when he smelled carefully, it felt like the aroma of food.

Fang Yuan made a guess, was this the rumored pill path dao mark?

There was also a patch of dao marks that were spread on the ground like a carpet. It was clearly a similar kind of dao mark but lights interwove on its surface to form mountains and rivers at times, and at times, form birds and animals.

When other dao marks came flooding, this patch of dao marks became like leaves in the wind and flew away, lightly attaching onto the surface of the other dao marks. It did not affect these foreign dao marks nor did its tiny self crumble apart. It was truly mystical.

Fang Yuan's heart shook slightly the moment he saw this: "If I am not wrong, these are painting path dao marks!"

He had the intention to take these dao marks. But the demonic sounds were ringing now and he had no method to capture the dao marks.

"Fang clan has Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable's inheritance and that Immortal Gu House Thieves Den. If I use it, can I steal the dao marks here?" Fang Yuan's heart was moved as he gained an inspiration.

Immortal materials were common in Crazy Demon Cave but they had no value at all.

It was because the dao marks in these immortal materials were chaotic and of every path.

The immortal materials were useless but not the dao marks!

Fang Yuan used the plot against him to his own advantage and dealt with Fang Di Chang. The current Fang Di Chang was his clone.

Fang Yuan had plundered almost all the information about Fang clan from Fang Di Chang's soul. It naturally included Thieves Den.

This was indeed Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable's Immortal Gu House, but it was very damaged because it involved theft path which Fang clan was not proficient in. When Fang clan obtained this Immortal Gu House, they had not obtained its complete contents so they had not been able to restore it.

The present Thieves Den only had one ability, that was to use a theft path immortal materials as the catalyst, the theft path dao marks in the immortal materials would be consumed instantly and the dao marks in the outside world would be stolen.

The stolen dao marks would be attached to these theft path immortal materials. In the end, these immortal materials would be filled with disorderly dao marks from every path and have no more value.

This was similar to the situation in Crazy Demon Cave.

Thieves Den had the ability to steal the outside world's dao marks but did not have the method to use them. This was the main reason Fang Yuan had not thought of seizing Thieves Den.

"But this situation is different here."

"When these identical dao marks gather together, I can use Thieves Den to create immortal materials of the respective paths."

"These immortal materials would have identical dao marks and should be usable."

Fang Yuan's chest started to heat slightly at this thought.

If this idea worked, then he would possess a channel to create endless rank eight and even rank nine immortal materials!

How enormous was this wealth!

Even Fang Yuan could not estimate it.

The created immortal materials could not only be used in transactions and Gu refinement, they could also be used to comprehend the respective paths. For instance, using these new dao marks to create painting path, pill path, and other paths' immortal materials, these immortal materials were great reference for creating the corresponding path.

“But, similar dao marks can only gather during the time when the demonic sounds appear.”

“At this time, there is an extreme risk in activating immortal moves. The dao marks of the immortal move can very likely turn chaotic because of the identical arrangement of the dao marks, it would fail and lead to backlash.”

“There is no need to talk of Thieves Den, I might not even be able to bring it out. It is not the sovereign immortal body, it will suffer conflicting force if brought out and shatter!”

Fang Yuan calmed down.

There were huge technical difficulties in completing his idea.

His current foundation allowed him to look down on the world, but he still did not have any certainty.

Fang Yuan let out a sigh and gave up on this thought for the moment, continuing to move forward.

He began to move faster.

No matter what the dao marks ahead were, they were all harmless like a light breeze to him.

Not long later, he saw dream path dao marks.



Crazed Demon Cave could be said to have all the different types of dao marks, even dream path dao marks were included.

Fang Yuan stopped cautiously and probed before finding that the dream path dao marks were similarly harmless to him.

These were only dao marks and not a dream realm. To the sovereign immortal body, it was just a kind of moving immortal material.

If it were a dream realm, Fang Yuan would have to make a detour.

Fang Yuan moved in a straight line, his path unimpeded.

The ringing of the demonic sounds gave him some trouble. Fortunately, he had created an outstanding method, this killer move was specially created and could last for a long time when activated. Although with the disturbance of the demonic sounds, the long term effect became short term, everything was within Fang Yuan's tolerance range.

Even if his mind was eroded by the demonic sounds and he went into a killing spree, this land had no beings that could threaten him.

Even if he were to crash onto a boulder, the sovereign immortal body's constitution would guarantee his safety.

There were irregular and turbulent multicolored waves in the surrounding; at times, they were like a huge tsunami, at times, they were like a group of running horses, at times, they were like a waterfall, and at times, they were like birds flying around. And Fang Yuan was moving in the middle of these.

Were the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics to see this scene, their jaws might drop from the shock.

This was not toppling their common sense, this was directly shattering it!

Fang Yuan moved deeper, reaching the depths that the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics could not even imagine.

When he finally reached the eight layer's entrance, he exclaimed lightly and paused.

He actually saw three paths!

One path was filled with golden light, luck surged around it.

One path was dark and horrifying, killing intent filled it.

One path was humble and plain, giving a virtuous aura.

Fang Yuan's eyes shone as he understood: "These three paths are probably the traces of past venerables. These paths are filled with luck path, soul path, and earth path dao marks, they should belong to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable respectively!"

These three venerables had been here!

The mighty demonic sounds and the chaotic dao marks formed a horrifying situation, the might was so powerful that it could wipe out almost any Gu Immortal without leaving even a trace behind.

But the dao marks in these three paths were incomparably firm. Even though all kinds of dao mark currents were colliding, engulfing, and crashing into each other, the dao marks in these three paths stood still. It was just that some dao marks were peeled off at the very edges like they were residue or debris.

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes slightly.

He knew he possessed the sovereign immortal body which had non-conflicting dao marks so he could come here, it was like he was cheating.

But venerables were different!

Dao marks of venerables conflicted, they could come here because they had charged forward forcefully.

This was the supreme power of the three venerables!

The Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics' talents and attainment levels were rarely seen in the world, but they still needed to look for a path to walk on.

But venerables did not need to.

Wherever they walked on was a supreme path in itself!

Fang Yuan was not surprised at finding that venerables had come here, he had already somewhat predicted it, in fact.

After all, Limitless Demon Venerable was a person of the Olden Antiquity Era, the third venerable in history after Primordial Origin and Star Constellation. His Crazy Demon Cave had lasted to this day, although it was secluded, if the Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics could find this secret, what about others?

As the supreme beings among Gu Immortals, these venerables were terrifying existences. It was logical for them to discover this place.

Only ignorant and naive youngsters would think that priceless inheritances, treasures and legacies that no one has ever discovered before would be found specially by them.

Humans were ordinary, but every person was unique. If you could have such a fortuitous encounter, why couldn't others have it?

"But, why are there traces of only these three venerables?"

"Why did the paths left behind by these three venerables only appear near the entrance of the eighth layer?"

There were some doubts in his mind, but Fang Yuan did not stop and jumped through the eighth layer's entrance.

The darkness in front of him passed in an instant, at the next moment, Fang Yuan landed on solid ground.

“How could this be?” Fang Yuan was dumbstruck.

Crazed Demon Cave’s eighth layer showed a scene far surpassing his expectation, there was no similarity to the seventh layer at all.

# **Chapter 1866 - Eighth Layer, Heaven Path**

## **1866 Eighth Layer, Heaven Path**

This was a vast grassland.

Green grass, blue sky, and white clouds.

There was no sun in the sky but it was bright.

There were many beautiful wild flowers that were in full bloom.

Strong flowery fragrance floated in the wind and brushed across Fang Yuan's face along with a light breeze.

Fang Yuan was stupefied.

“This is Crazy Demon Cave's eighth layer?” He was astonished.

According to the Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics' deduction, Crazy Demon Cave's last three layers should be the same as the seventh layer's scene, with chaotic dao marks everywhere. The eighth layer's dao marks scale would definitely be bigger than the seventh layer's. And in the ninth layer was the immortal formation arranged by Limitless Demon Venerable, the core of this immortal formation was the legendary rank nine Immortal Gu — Derivation!

But after Fang Yuan entered the eighth layer, he discovered this was actually a small world.

“Did I enter a blessed land?” A thought surfaced in Fang Yuan’s mind.

But he denied this guess quickly.

When he used investigative methods to inspect his surroundings, a subtle change appeared in his expression: “This world doesn’t seem ordinary, it is not a normal blessed land or grotto-heaven. This world is a little... frail.”

Just as Fang Yuan was thinking, he heard a loud crackle.

A giant tear spread in the sky like lightning, spanning across the whole land.

At that instant, Fang Yuan’s hairs stood on end as warning signals rang loudly in his mind!

He felt an intense threat from this giant tear, he was certain that as long as he was touched, he would die. Even if he used reverse flow protection seal, he might only last for a few breaths of time.

Fortunately, although the tear was extremely fast, it did not focus on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan dodged with ease when he heard crackling sounds.

“This is the sound of a small world! It is crumbling apart and is about to perish.” Fang Yuan sized up everything with a cold and aloof gaze.

That giant tear was enlarging and spreading continuously. The small world seemed to be cut into two and would soon split completely.

The blue sky, white clouds, grassland, and the flowers were all devoured by the tear!

However, there was nothing in the tear, as if it was a peerless vicious beast that was in perpetual hunger.

Fang Yuan's pupils shrunk slightly: "This is phantom path's strength, a void tear!"

Seeing this, he quickly used his methods to hide himself.

The tear spread towards him, Fang Yuan did not dodge and instead threw himself in.

He entered the tear but did not suffer any destructive attack.

When the void tear had just begun to spread, it was extremely dangerous. But after its might was spread, Fang Yuan was barely able to shelter himself inside.

The small world was becoming smaller and smaller while the void tear was growing bigger and bigger.

Fang Yuan flew higher up along the tear and soon left the boundaries of this small world, arriving at the outside world.

"This is!" His body and mind shook at the sight.

He was like a water bug that had suddenly arrived in a vast ocean. This ocean was the void!

This void was vast and wide with no limits to its boundary. Fang Yuan was an extremely insignificant existence inside it.

But he was not alone.

Alongside him were countless worlds!

These worlds were like multi-colored air bubbles: some were just forming, some had grown firmly, and some were being destroyed.

That small world Fang Yuan was in earlier was being destroyed. In just a short period of time, only two crescent shaped fragments had remained of it.

Fang Yuan's mouth opened slightly but was unable to say anything from the shock!

He suddenly realized this was the true appearance of the eighth layer.

The seventh layer had countless dao marks while the eighth layer had an infinite void. And in this void, countless worlds were being born and destroyed!

“Eh? This!” Fang Yuan caught a strange movement.

The small world he was in earlier had already been destroyed completely, leaving behind only a long white thread.

This thread could not be destroyed by even the void, it was extremely tenacious.

It was a dao mark!

Although it was only a thread of dao mark, it was extraordinary and twinkled with dao mark light.

“What dao mark is this?” Fang Yuan had never seen this dao mark and observed it with undivided attention.

It was very obvious that this dao mark was beyond extraordinary.

Because that small world had its own heaven and earth, so it had space path, living beings moved, so it had time path, there were grasses and flowers, so it had wood path, there was land, so it had earth path, there were clouds, so it had cloud path.

But these dao marks no longer existed as they were destroyed by the void, only this translucent white thread-like dao mark remained.

From this dao mark, Fang Yuan saw space path, sensed time path, tasted wood path, and felt cloud path.



“What path’s dao mark is this? It actually has a kind of all-inclusive capacity?” Fang Yuan was confused, when he suddenly thought of an answer.

“I got it, this is heaven path!”

“Dao marks of the Heavenly Dao!!”

He had felt strange when he moved in the seventh layer: he saw all kinds of dao marks including dream path, as well as other completely new dao marks. But there were two kinds of dao marks missing.

One was human path and the other was heaven path.

Fang Yuan had seen human path dao marks, but this was the first time he was seeing heaven path dao marks.

“Other dao marks are all destroyed, only heaven path dao marks remain... What is this indicating?” Fang Yuan stared rigidly at this heaven path dao mark.

The thread-like heaven path dao mark seemed to be floating in the wind, it twinkled with dazzling white light, and its movement deeply attracted Fang Yuan’s gaze.

Fang Yuan was cautious and did not attempt to make a move on this dao mark.

He followed the dao mark, after flying for a while, there was suddenly a strange change in the void ahead of him.

Currents surged and a vortex formed instantly, swallowing this heaven path dao mark.

The dao mark held on for a while in the void vortex before collapsing.

At that instant, the void vortex was dyed in all kinds of colors, forming a multicolored rotating disk.

The vortex rotated for a long while, and with a light sound, it suddenly burst.

The void in this area resumed its calm. But a blue-white air bubble had suddenly appeared out of thin air.

This air bubble was extremely small at first, only the size of Fang Yuan's little finger. But soon, it expanded rapidly.

Fang Yuan used investigative methods to check and discovered to his shock: this blue-white air bubble was a newly created small world. The land in this small world was expanding rapidly, the sky was spreading, everything was undergoing dramatic changes following some profound and mystical law.

After dozens of breaths of time, this small world had already expanded to a size that Fang Yuan could enter.

The small world's growth speed had slowed, everything was gradually stabilizing inside.

Fang Yuan entered it.

This small world was no longer like what he saw before. Clouds were drifting in the sky, islands were floating in the air, and countless huge green vines spread and interwove into a net that surrounded this world.

"It is the same heaven path dao mark, but this small world's appearance has changed a lot." Fang Yuan's mind jolted, he was about to comprehend something but was not able to grasp onto it, like it was separated by a barrier.

Fang Yuan had an intense premonition that as long as he grasped this inspiration and comprehended it, he could obtain a huge increase in strength. And this increase was a qualitative increase!

So, he fixed his gaze on these small worlds, observing their birth and destruction.

His body and mind was absorbed into it, he was completely obsessed, unable to free himself.

“Crazed Demon Cave’s seventh layer derives dao marks, and this eighth layer derives worlds!”

“No, deriving worlds is only the superficial appearance, what it is actually doing is deriving heaven path dao marks.”

Fang Yuan carefully observed, usually, after every round of a small world’s birth and destruction, that heaven path dao mark would grow by a bit.

The situation was much more complex in reality.

Sometimes, the void vortex absorbed not just one but three to four heaven path dao marks together.

After these heaven path dao marks scatter, the small world that formed would be more vast and have deeper foundation, growing rapidly.

But after its destruction, it would only leave behind one or at most two heaven path dao marks.

In terms of the total length, the length of the previous three to four heaven path dao marks was no doubt greater than the length of the new dao marks.

“Heaven path dao marks can also be lost.”

“Or maybe, the heaven path dao marks that I have seen still haven’t reached the standard that Limitless Demon Venerable wants.”

“He wants to create heaven path dao marks that match his expectations!”

If so, what kind of heaven path dao marks did he want to create?

Fang Yuan’s mind jolted as he suddenly thought of the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics’ analysis — Limitless Demon Venerable wanted to pursue eternal life, so he settled in Crazed Demon Cave in his later years in search of the correct method.

“Limitless Demon Venerable wants to pursue eternal life, but the Heavenly Dao does not permit it. The Legends of Ren Zuu states, fate Gu determines that every being in the world must die and their soul has to return to the Door of Life and Death.”

What was fate Gu?

Gu were the essence of heaven and earth.

Fate Gu, in essence, was a fragment of heaven path!

“Limitless Demon Venerable wants eternal life but he is unable to bypass the Heavenly Dao. He realized this so he directly targeted heaven path and researched it.” Fang Yuan guessed.

Limitless Demon Venerable had once attacked Heavenly Court, but he was not an otherworldly demon and was unable to destroy Fate.

But he did not give up, instead he worked even harder and advanced forward. He wanted to find out the reason he was unable to destroy fate Gu and wanted to completely understand the truth of heaven path!

Such ambition!

Such methods!

Even Fang Yuan could not help but feel admiration.

“So how do I collect these heaven path dao marks?” Fang Yuan was extremely troubled.

He tried many methods but they were of no use.

He even had a premonition: even if he brought out Thieves Den right now, he would be unable to do anything to these heaven path dao marks.

Thieves Den was only a rank eight theft path Immortal Gu House and was highly damaged at that. And this immortal formation was obviously rank nine, it was even personally constructed by Limitless Demon Venerable.

“I should directly take the immortal formation!” Fang Yuan fell into another dilemma.

Because he did not know how to reach the ninth layer!

The path in the seventh layer was extremely clear, but at the eighth layer, Fang Yuan was in a boundless void without any signs and clues. How would he enter the ninth layer?

Fang Yuan did not know what direction to choose.

He could only drift aimlessly.

Who knew how long had passed, he discovered a world.

“Until now, this is the largest world I have seen. But it looks like it is about to be destroyed. Let’s take a look inside.” Fang Yuan entered this world.

“We pay respects to the sage!!” This world actually had living creatures. When they saw Fang Yuan, they immediately kowtowed excitedly.

“Sage, did you come to create a Dao field to save this world?”

“Sage, please take me in as your disciple!”

These living creatures had misty body with human shapes. They had noses and eyes and they talked without stopping.

“Sage?” Fang Yuan frowned slightly before immediately realizing the huge meaning behind this, “That means there are other sages like me?”

“Yes. There was a sage who wore a green robe and white headband, there were lotuses blooming at his every step, he created the Green Lotus Dao field.”

“Another sage was bare-footed and wore yellow clothes, he was filled with compassion, he saved the Yellow Earth Great World.”

“There was also another sage with a ferocious appearance, he was tall and burly, countless beast roars could be heard from his every action. He created Savage Wilderness Great World!”

These cloud people scrambled to inform Fang Yuan.

# Chapter 1867 - Spiri

## 1867 Spiri

“Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, and Reckless Savage Demon Venerable?” Fang Yuan’s heart jolted.

According to the descriptions of these misty human shaped indigenous people, Fang Yuan quickly matched these three sages with three venerables in history.

All kinds of thoughts flashed like lightning in Fang Yuan’s mind: ‘These three venerables came here? In the seventh layer, I also saw the dao marks path left by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable... that means, at least five venerables have come here.’”

Fang Yuan realized a little but was even more confused.

When he saw the three venerables’ paths in the seventh layer, he had a doubt: Only these three venerables came here? If other venerables came, why are there no paths created by them?

“Now, it looks like that although other venerables come here as well, like Reckless Savage and Genesis Lotus, even if they left behind their paths back then, they might have been destroyed by the passing of time.”

Limitless Demon Venerable was a venerable from a million years ago during the Olden Antiquity Era, after him came Reckless Savage and Red Lotus.

In the Medieval Antiquity Era, three hundred thousand years ago. Genesis Lotus, Thieving Heaven, and Giant Sun appeared in succession. Long Hair Ancestor appeared in this era as well. Because he was a hairy man, he lived for a long time and had worked with Thieving Heaven and Giant Sun.

After Medieval Antiquity Era was Late Antiquity Era, one hundred thousand years ago from present. Spectral Soul and Paradise Earth appeared in this era.

After this era was the present age. The Prophecy of Three Venerables stated that Great Dream Immortal Venerable would be born. She would be an unprecedented venerable who would surpass the ten great venerables.

Giant Sun, Spectral Soul, and Paradise Earth left behind their paths in the seventh layer. The paths were actually the traces of them charging in.

They were the most recent three venerables so their dao marks could exist until now.

And the previous venerables, even if they left behind a dao mark path, they were erased because of the passing of time.

Fang Yuan's doubt was resolved but he had even more questions now.

“Why did these venerables come one after the other?”

“Crazed Demon Cave has way too much attraction to these people.”

“Did these venerables go to the ninth layer after reaching here?”

“The ninth layer's grand formation should still be working, so if these venerables went to the ninth layer, why didn't they destroy the formation and take away the rank nine derivation Gu?”

“If they did not reach the ninth layer and stopped in the eighth layer, why did they create their Dao fields or worlds?”

Fang Yuan pondered for a while and decided to go take a look at these venerables' worlds.



He was unable to find the path to the ninth layer.

When he was in the seventh layer, he had never imagined the eighth layer would have such a grand scene.

Maybe he could find relevant clues in these venerables' Dao fields or worlds?

Even if there were no relevant clues, even if these venerables did not enter the ninth layer, those worlds could very likely have their inheritances!

Even if there was no true inheritance, as long as there was something left behind, even if it was something insignificant to the venerable, it would be a huge gain to Fang Yuan.

“This is interesting. Do you know where these Dao fields and worlds are?” Fang Yuan asked.

These several human shaped mist shook their heads, expressing they did not know and had only heard of them.

“Sage, we live in this world and have no ability to go out. The outside is too dangerous, we cannot set foot in it.”

Fang Yuan frowned: “Then how did you know this information?”

A human shaped mist replied: “Every set interval of time, the disciples or students of these sages will cross the void and interact with the worlds, either making transactions or plundering. We obtained this information from them.”

Fang Yuan's pupils shrunk slightly: “These disciples came from each generation's venerable, what is their strength? It should be extraordinary considering they are able to travel through the void into different worlds!”

But shortly after, Fang Yuan realized something wrong as he asked: “Since there are a lot of these disciples, why did you address me as sage the moment you saw me?”

A human shaped mist replied: “Because all sages have an appearance like you, but their disciples are of all kinds of shapes.”

Fang Yuan immediately understood: “So it seems there are no humans here, the so-called disciples or students of the sages are probably some other races? Like these human shaped mist people?”

Come to speak of it, this was the first time he had seen these human shaped mists, they were neither wild beasts nor plants, they were not variant humans as well, but they had vague human appearances.

“Sage, please save me!”

“Sage, please make your arrangement and save this world.”

Several human shaped mists kowtowed again.

“Sure, sure.” Fang Yuan smiled as he attacked suddenly.

“Sage!”

“What are you doing?”

“Ahh—!”

Cries of shock and screams resounded in Fang Yuan’s ears for a moment.

In two breaths of time, Fang Yuan captured these human shaped mist. His gaze towards these human shaped mist shone with a captivating coldness.

How could this information gained from just questioning be reliable?

If these human shaped mists wanted to deceive Fang Yuan, it would be too easy for them.

While talking, Fang Yuan had secretly scanned most of the surroundings and immediately made his move at this moment.

He then used soul search methods to inspect them.

But the result was somewhat awkward.

These human shaped mist did not have a soul!

Without a soul, could they still be considered living beings?

Even plants had their own souls.

Fang Yuan was dazed for a moment before realizing: “It seems this small world has no soul path dao marks so the living beings here don’t have souls.”

This was a new and interesting discovery.

In the five regions and two heavens, all living beings had their own soul because of soul path dao marks.

These human shaped mists, however, did not have any.

It was somewhat difficult to search their memories now.

But these problems were quickly subdued by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan obtained all the information grasped by these human shaped mists.

From this information, he saw that these human shaped mist did not deceive him. Their existence was monotonous, after they gained sentience, they always stayed here until this world was on the verge of destruction. Even if the sage’s disciples had arrived here and transacted with them, it was only once, the time period was too short and thus the nature of these human shaped mists was also quite simple, with unworldly mindsets.

Fang Yuan also discovered these human shaped mists were not an individual entity but were a part of this world. They could not leave this world.

“These human shaped mists are quite similar to land spirits and heavenly spirits.” A sudden light of inspiration flashed past Fang Yuan’s mind.

Land spirits and heavenly spirits were formed from the fusion of obsession of the Gu Immortal and heavenly power, they also did not have souls, but they were sentient and could undergo transactions.

In fact, not only land spirits and heavenly spirits, Fang Yuan also had the Formation Spirit and Dragon Spirit.

The Formation Spirit was born from formation spirit Gu while the Dragon Spirit was a secret creation of the dragonman race.

“Does this mean these human shaped mists are the embryonic forms of land spirits and heavenly spirits? If I can understand their profundities, can I mass-produce land spirits and heavenly spirits?”

Fang Yuan’s gaze brightened as he saw the most valuable gain.

However, after about half a day, he looked at this world’s destruction with regret.

He really wanted to comprehend the mysteries of the birth of these human shaped mists, but he did not have enough worlds. He had just begun his research and had made a little gain when this world was destroyed.

“No matter, I can continue to search.”

“This kind of world, although rare, still exists.”

“If I can find the Dao fields of those venerables, that would be even better!”

Thereupon, Fang Yuan began to travel through the void and searched everywhere for valuable targets.

Puff!

Pang Shan coughed out a mouthful of blood and took a step back.

He was huge, and this one step firmly stamped on the ground, producing a huge sound. If it were ordinary ground, there would be a deep crater, but in

this seventh layer, every inch of soil was a quasi-rank nine immortal material, they were extremely solid.

“I didn’t find any traces of Fang Yuan.” Pang Shan said while wiping off the bloodstains on the corner of his lips.

Not Immortal was silent.

Secret Schemer sighed.

The Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics had gathered together now. They were split before as a precaution against Fang Yuan, but now after the demonic sounds ended, they immediately reunited.

On one hand, they felt even if Fang Yuan was alive, he would be at his last breath and could never be a threat.

On the other hand, they wanted to use their greatest effort to save Fang Yuan.

Gu Immortal’s injuries were often very troublesome and difficult to heal.

Not Immortal and Secret Schemer were injured, only Pang Shan had been completely fine but he was also injured now.

It was a bad idea to use investigative killer moves in the seventh layer.

The dao marks here were too concentrated almost like a battlefield killer move. The conflicting dao marks made it hostile to all the paths.

Pang Shan’s investigative range was extremely limited because the dao marks that suited his path was only a small portion among all the dao marks here.

“I know what the seventh layer looks like when the demonic sounds start. Brothers, let it be. Fang Yuan’s hope is...” Pang Shan slowly shook his head.

“Who could have expected Fang Yuan to die like this.” Not Immortal heaved a sigh.

Secret Schemer also felt extreme regret.

They did not have any feeling of having gotten rid of evil, their life goal was simple and similar, they wanted to explore the ninth layer and grasp the derivation formation to thus search for a certain possibility of eternal life.

Fang Yuan’s main body did not come out of the eighth layer even after a long time, and his clones were getting nervous.

Fang clan headquarters.

Divine Bean Palace floated in the air, letting out dazzling jade light.

Right now, Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong, third supreme elder Fang Hua Sheng, as well as Fang Leng and Fang Yun were watching the place from far away.

The jade light transformed suddenly, changing into countless lightning spheres that exploded in the surroundings.

Rumble...

A chain of explosions sent soil and rocks flying everywhere and created hurricanes.

After the explosions ended, green grass started growing in the sunken and pit-filled ground while young trees started growing at a visible speed, their roots piercing into the soil as they grew into gigantic trees.

This was Divine Bean Palace’s killer move — Myriad Life Spring Lightning!

This killer move was activated smoothly, signifying that Fang Di Chang had control over Divine Bean Palace.

The palace door opened and Fang Yuan's clone Fang Di Chang walked out with a smile.

“Good!” Fang Gong laughed heartily: “Second elder, you have made a huge contribution.” Although this was somewhat worrying for the balance of the internal factions of Fang clan, it was undoubtedly very good news for the whole clan.

“With this palace, our Fang clan can breakthrough our predicament and rise up for real!” Fang Yun exclaimed jubilantly.

Fang Di Chang smiled: “With this palace, we can no longer be taken down. But there is no hurry, there are still some areas that can be improved in Divine Bean Palace. The most important divine bean soldiers have to be prepared beforehand.”

“No worries, you can take any amount of wood path immortal materials you require from the treasury.” Fang Gong laughed once again, his joy was truthfully coming from his heart.

# Chapter 1868 - Respective Progress

## 1868 Respective Progress

This was a barren land with grey-white soil.

The land was dry with many gullies, it had no fertility and not even a blade of grass grew on it.

Fang Di Chang looked at this vast land and scattered yellow jade bean seeds.

Divine Bean Palace stored many bean seeds, it mainly consisted of yellow jade bean seeds, green jade bean seeds, red jade bean seeds, and black jade bean seeds. Besides them, there were also the rather special blue pea seeds and white frost broad bean seeds.

After these bean seeds were planted and cared for a period of time, they grew into all kinds of divine bean soldiers.

Divine Bean Palace's trump card, divine bean soldier, was not an instant killer move, it required a long period of time before they could form into a sizable number with powerful might.

It was because of this that when Chen Yi suppressed Qing Chou back then and used karma divine tree to influence Divine Bean Palace to fight against Fang clan, he was unable to use this move. Chen Yi could only use soul beasts as a replacement.

Fang Di Chang was currently planting yellow jade bean seeds.



This was the most basic type of seed among all the bean seeds. After they were planted, they grew into yellow bean divine soldiers.

Right now, yellow jade bean seeds were already scattered here.

Fang Di Chang activated Divine Bean Palace, gale blew immediately and formless wind condensed into light-green hoes.

The hoes began hoeing the ground.

After a while, Fang Di Chang waved his hand again, rain started to fall from the sky.

The amount of rain needed to be specific, it could not be too much or too little. It mainly had to moisten this dry land.

The land was moistened, yellow jade bean seeds began to experience a mystical change.

But this change was quite slow, Fang Yuan's clone activated another method.

The moment the killer move was activated, the land began flickering with emerald-green waves of light that constantly washed the yellow jade bean seeds in the ground like tides.

When the yellow jade bean seeds absorbed these emerald-green waves, their growth speed rose explosively, they sprouted out of the ground and grew firmly.

“According to this speed, yellow bean divine soldiers will sprout after a day and a night.” Fang Yuan's clone nodded, satisfied.

At his will, he suddenly moved back into the main hall of Divine Bean Palace.

He took a glance at the mural on the wall and saw a change.

The mural had been of a dry land, but at this moment, a small portion of the land was filled with bean sprouts.

“This is a method of painting path. Divine Bean Palace contains painting path Immortal Gu, the land in the mural is not illusory. This is such an amazing method.”

“Planting bean sprouts in this painting can grow divine bean soldiers. After they are constantly taken care of and mature, these divine bean soldiers will leave the mural and arrive in the main hall.”

“The land is extremely barren but it is not a big issue. Not much fertility is required for planting beans, and as beans are planted more often in the future, the fertility of the land in the mural can increase and the soil itself will become a type of an immortal material.”

“The expenditure includes water path immortal materials and wood path immortal materials.”

The former was used to moisten the soil while the latter could increase the growth speed of the bean seeds.

The immortal materials were all stored inside Divine Bean Palace, Fang Yuan’s two killer moves were activated by expending the stored immortal materials.

“This effect is quite good, but the price is also significant. Fortunately, I don’t need to worry about this and can report the expenses to Fang clan.” Fang Di Chang smiled.

Divine Bean Palace had already become Fang Yuan’s possession, Fang clan was kept in the dark and was even helping Fang Yuan in providing resources to cultivate divine bean soldiers.

In the depths of Eastern Sea.

Gu tribe headquarters.

“That will do.” Fang Yuan’s clone Wu Shuai slowly stopped the killer move, his forehead filled with sweat.

In front of him was another batch of new dragonmen.

But these new dragonmen were not just former beastmen, there were also some mermen.

“Many thanks to Lord Wu Shuai for your help, this is my tribe’s gift of thanks, please accept it, senior.” A merman Gu Immortal swayed his tail and slowly floated to Wu Shuai, gifting an immortal material with both hands.

This immortal material was a lump of water that emitted a putrid smell. It was restrained to a lump by the merman Gu Immortals’ killer move. Although the merman’s hands were shaking, this water lump did not move like it was frozen.

“So it is unmoving rotten water. It just so happens that I need it to raise army ants, I will accept it. I appreciate the gift.” Wu Shuai accepted it directly.

He wanted to raise arrow ants, which needed unmoving rotten water.

Ever since he started raising army ants, they were expanding with a horrifying speed.

Other than Fang Yuan investing massive amounts of his resources into this, Gu tribe and the mermen had also helped greatly.

Naturally, Fang Yuan’s clone did not extort them but obtained the resources from transactions.

Wu Shuai used his killer move to convert beastmen and mermen into new dragonmen as a repayment.

“My strength is increasing rapidly every day, the changes are very obvious.”

“Interacting with Gu tribe has proven to be quite good, I even have a connection with the merman race now.”

“Adding on the influence of Qi Sea Ancestor, I have an increasingly deep control over Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.”

Eastern Sea’s Merman Imperial Court was a super force with deep foundations.

This was the sole variant human super force in the world, it received Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s help and was able to develop and continue to exist until now.

Even so, merfolk were under huge pressure from everywhere. Previously, their situation was already unsteady from the suppression of Eastern Sea’s human forces. Now that five regions chaotic war was about to start, the wise people among merfolk began to search everywhere for a survival route for their race.

Once the five regions chaotic war starts, the previous fragile balance would definitely collapse.

The merman race’s future was bleak, as a variant human race, they would definitely become the first target for human forces!

A portion of the merfolk saw the growth prospect of dragonmen and did not hesitate on changing their identities.

This was because the higher-ups of the Merman Imperial Court had always been helping Gu tribe in secret to conceal their traces. They had learned of the dragonman secret of the past from Gu tribe.

After knowing that fate Gu had revealed that dragonmen reign supreme, a portion of merfolk higher-ups brought up this idea.

This was the reason for the merfolk to convert to dragonmen.

“The Merman Imperial Court has already begun investing everywhere for the survival of their tribe.”

“Human forces have also foreseen the chaotic era in the future, they are especially wary against Heavenly Court, I can exploit this wariness.”

“Maybe I can persuade the merman race to dispatch some merfolk Gu Immortals to participate in the war when Heavenly Court restores fate Gu.”

Wu Shuai’s head was filled with such secretive thoughts.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

The situation was extremely dangerous and permitted no delay.

“Little Du, you really want to do this?” Mountain Cliff City Lord worriedly looked at Fang Yuan’s clone Zhan Bu Du.

Zhan Bu Du raised his head, his eyes shining brightly and his tone firm: “Yes, master! You are heavily injured, and in this situation, we cannot beat that monster. But if we let it run amok, Mountain Cliff City will be completely destroyed! Who knows how many people will die! I can only take the risk to make a breakthrough, as long as I become a Combat Beast Warrior, I can display the complete strength of the arrowtail eagle and get rid of this detestable monster.”

Mountain Cliff City Lord Looked at Zhan Bu Du for a long while, knowing his beloved disciple had already made up his mind and that his persuasion would have no effect. He waved his hand: “Sigh, go then.”

Zhan Bu Du did not hesitate, immediately leaving to begin his immortal ascension.

Mountain Cliff City Lord and others watched him nervously, countless ordinary people were kneeling on the ground and praying silently, cheering on Zhan Bu Du. Many Combat Beast Envoys were staking their lives to delay the monster.

What made them joyous was that the giant monster might be tired, its attacks slowed down.

This was actually the secret manipulation of Zhan Bu Du, the current situation was also a plan that had already been determined before.

“I have a portion of my main body’s memories and foundation, my immortal ascension is practically a certainty. But I still need to act like I am taking a risk, not only to deceive everyone in Mountain Cliff City but also this grotto-heaven’s heavenly spirit!”

The whole process was filled with ups and downs, causing Mountain Cliff City Lord and others to feel their hearts jump. But the outcome was without any mishaps, Zhan Bu Du finally advanced to an immortal, becoming a Combat Beast Warrior!

Zhan Bu Du then showed his mighty prowess as he defeated the monster.

“Wow! Little Du is so powerful!”

“Little Du, you saved the lives of the whole city, we really don’t know what to say.”

“As expected of our little savior, Little Du.”

“Little Du, you might be the youngest Combat Beast Warrior in history.”

People surrounded Zhan Bu Du and lifted him up, tossing him into the sky and catching him.

Zhan Bu Du became a hero in the hearts of everyone in the city, he had unmatched reputation right now.

Aside from the crowd, the injured Mountain Cliff City Lord looked at this with satisfaction, a sincere smile showing on his face.

# **Chapter 1869 - Main Body's Breakthrough**

## **1869 Main Body's Breakthrough**

The eighth layer of Crazy Demon Cave was much more vast than Fang Yuan's expectations.

After he learned there were venerable Dao fields here, he began searching for a long while but he did not get any good results.

Fang Yuan saw the creation and destruction of many worlds and also entered some large worlds, but was unable to find venerable Dao fields.

But he was not without any gains. These days of searching deepened his understanding of the eighth layer.

"There is no such concept as direction in this void, like up, down, left, or right, so it is both finite and infinite."

"The eighth layer had only been a cave originally, but after Limitless Demon Venerable's arrangements, it became a boundless area."

"Perhaps, I am only moving in a small circle over these days. In fact, I might not be able to find venerable Dao fields without comprehending the arrangements here."

Fang Yuan guessed.

To find his destination in this void, Fang Yuan no doubt needed to raise his phantom path attainment level.

Phantom path was only a minor path, derived from rule path.

However, this minor path had quite an achievement.

Phantom path focused on the illusory and reality, if one could not be hit, they could not lose.

Turning phantom was the signature method of phantom path, when Heaven Overseeing Tower had turned into phantom, it had been extremely secure with no methods able to deal any harm to it besides dream path.

Phantom path also had supreme profundities, just like how one of soul path's supreme profundities was to cultivate a hundred million desolate soul, like Spectral Soul's Three Headed Thousand Arms Demon Soul. Transformation path had two supreme profundities, one was to undergo myriad changes as one willed, the other was to gather the power of all paths into one, like myriad beings assimilation transformation.

Heavenly Court's members offered their own immortal apertures, and whenever they left Heavenly Court, they would be given a phantom aperture for storing immortal essence, Immortal Gu, and other resources.

This phantom aperture was a supreme profundity of phantom path.

And presently, Fang Yuan was in this void where countless worlds were created and destroyed. Obviously, this void was also a supreme profundity of phantom path.

Although phantom path was only a sub-branch of rule path, advancing phantom path attainment level was essentially still rule path true meaning.

But this path held profound depth, just based on Fang Yuan's current rule path great grandmaster attainment level, there was still some distance before he could comprehend this void.



Since he was unable to breakthrough directly, Fang Yuan considered for a while and decided to try from another angle.

He willed it and activated Cooking Luck Pot, blessing himself with luck path might be able to create a breakthrough.

Although Cooking Luck Pot's level was rather low and unable to completely influence the main body's luck, it was still able to change a portion.

At least, Fang Yuan could casually change the luck inside Cooking Luck Pot.

With Cooking Luck Pot, changing his luck was extremely quick and convenient, and Fang Yuan soon completed it.

He inspected his clones' luck.

His time path clone's luck was still the same like before. A miniature River of Time-like luck was flowing gently while glistening beautifully. When inspected carefully, there were traces of black qi forming and accumulating continuously on the surface of the river.

Fang Yuan's dream path clone had the smallest luck, after all, it only had rank five Gu Master cultivation and its aperture was even sealed.

The grandest was clone Wu Shuai's. Wu Shuai was already a peak rank seven Gu Immortal, had obtained Dragon Palace, and was currently cultivating army ants. Right now, Wu Shuai's luck was like a roaming dragon with glistening dragon scales and dragon eyes, and sharp horns and claws. There were waves of light-blue water halo around the dragon luck and the dragon contacted the water, this meant he had obtained external help — Gu tribe and merfolk. And there was a giant dragon pearl in the dragon's mouth. The dragon pearl contained a palace, it was actually a shrunk image of Dragon Palace.

Another dragon pearl with a much smaller size was held by a dragon claw. This dragon pearl contained densely packed ants, representing army ants.

The second biggest luck was of clone Fang Di Chang's.

His luck was rather special, it was like a giant tree, its trunk was not thin but was also not extremely thick. The tree crown was verdant and stacked ingeniously to form Divine Bean Palace's shape. Below the ground, the tree roots were tangled with many of them exposed outside the ground — this implied countless ties of Fang Di Chang and Fang clan, an unbreakable deep connection.

Besides these were Zhan Bu Du's and Li Xiao Bai's luck.

Zhan Bu Du's luck was much bigger than Li Xiao Bai's, it was like a strong eagle spreading its wings to fly high.

Zhan Bu Du had just recently become a rank six Gu Immortal while Li Xiao Bai was still at Gu Master level.

Li Xiao Bai's luck was like a flower in full bloom, there was even a thin layer of nectar in the stamens. This layer of nectar was the result of Li Xiao Bai's hard effort in cultivating in this period of time. Outside the flower luck was a butterfly, white as snow, it flapped its large wings and blew cold wind while softly drifting towards the flower.

“This luck indication...” Fang Yuan's brows slightly furrowed.

“Butterfly usually indicates female, it wants to collect the nectar and is also giving rise to cold wind, which means it is of no benefit to the flower.”

“From their size, the butterfly is slightly larger than the flower. The cold wind, however, is vast and powerful, it represents a certain large trend. More importantly, the main element is not the butterfly, the butterfly is only a prologue.”

“Li Xiao Bai's situation is currently good, but the future doesn't look that bright. If there is an unexpected mishap and the cold wind descends, the flower will wither. But the butterfly is so close to the flower, which indicates a fortuitous encounter.”

Clone Li Xiao Bai was all along trying to conquer Profound Literature grotto-heaven, but this grotto-heaven was different from Beast Calamity grotto-heaven because a rank eight Gu Immortal guarded it, Fang Yuan could not use his strength freely like in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

In Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan was free to use strategies and make all kinds of arrangements. But in Profound Literature grotto-heaven, his hands were tied, and to preserve the greatest result and benefits, he could not use most of his methods.

As such, support in the luck aspect became the biggest help that Fang Yuan's main body could give to Li Xiao Bai.

On the spot, Fang Yuan mobilized Cooking Luck Pot to change Li Xiao Bai's luck.

After a while, Li Xiao Bai's flower luck became beautiful red like peach-blossom in spring — it was peach blossom luck! [TL Note: Peach blossom luck is commonly used to describe a relationship or marital affair.]

Transforming luck was not random but followed a certain rule.

For instance, after Li Xiao Bai's luck transformed into peach blossom luck, there was double the efficiency as it ingeniously interacted with the butterfly!

“It will now depend on the clone if he can grasp the opportunity.” Fang Yuan continued to move forward.

Luck was only a kind of a variable, when the true opportunity arrives, it still depends on the person themselves, on whether they had the ability to grasp it or not.

“Hmm?” Fang Yuan's brows jumped, he made a joyous discovery not long after modifying his luck.

He saw a giant floating fish, it was traveling in the void while swaying its large tail. Its speed looked slow but it was actually frighteningly fast.

This was the first time Fang Yuan had seen a living being that could roam the void and escape the world.

“This is probably a sage disciple that human shaped mist mentioned.” Fang Yuan gave chase.

That grey fish looked like a goldfish. After it saw Fang Yuan, it was extremely shocked and kowtowed quickly: “Yellow Earth Sage’s disciple Little Flower pays respects to sage!”

The giant grey fish’s size was comparable to a whale but it made a human sound, and it was a young girl’s voice.

“Good, good. I have been searching for Yellow Earth Dao field for a long while, lead the way. You will gain benefits as well.” Fang Yuan laughed.

But the giant grey fish shook its head: “Sage, it is not that I don’t want to help you, but I am unable to find the location of Yellow Earth Dao field.”

“What? You were banished?” Fang Yuan frowned.

The giant grey fish shook its head again: “No, no. My cultivation reached a barrier, I bade farewell to my fellow disciples and left Yellow Earth Grand World to travel outside and train myself to make a breakthrough.”

As it said this, the giant grey fish’s eyes looked at Fang Yuan with hope.

If this sage enlightened it, its barrier would be nothing.

But was Fang Yuan that kind of person? He was not willing to engage in any further talk as he immediately imprisoned this giant grey fish and wantonly searched its memories.

“So it was like this.”

“Although these venerable Dao fields exist forever, they are always moving.”

The giant grey fish was born in Yellow Earth Dao field, Fang Yuan saw the rich scene of this world from its memories.

Yellow Earth Dao field was vast, not the least bit inferior to even the sovereign immortal aperture. There was a dense amount of earth path dao marks with a good amount of other dao marks as well. Its immortal material treasury was abundant and had many Gu worms including Immortal Gu. There were also all kinds of living beings, although there were no humans, it was truly a land of treasures.

Even Fang Yuan with his current assets coveted this Yellow Earth Dao field.

“If I can obtain the Yellow Earth Dao field and devour it completely, my assets will increase by at least three times!”

Fang Yuan was refining Immortal Gu on a large scale, the expenditure was huge and had already consumed most of his resources. His immortal material reserve had already shrunk to a serious level.

If he could obtain the Yellow Earth Dao field, it would definitely be a huge replenishment, like a skinny guy becoming obese in an instant.

However, it was difficult to reach the Yellow Earth Dao field.

There were all kinds of beings in Yellow Earth Dao field, and when Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had arranged it back then, he taught everyone with no discrimination.

All these living beings possessed souls, and because Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had left Gu cultivation method, most of the living beings possessed apertures and had started Gu Master cultivation. The outstanding ones among them even advanced to Gu Immortal level, although the numbers were few.

And there were elites among these Gu Immortals as well. These elites had the ability to leave the world, and when they encountered a barrier and were unable to advance further, they would leave the Dao field and travel everywhere to train themselves.

When they left the Dao field and were in the void, they had no way to find the way back home.

But they did not have to worry, when they have the opportunity and break through their barrier, they would see the Dao field and be able to return smoothly.

This was all the information Fang Yuan obtained from the giant grey fish.

This giant grey fish looked like it was easily captured by Fang Yuan, but it possessed rank seven cultivation and was an elite Gu Immortal in the Yellow Earth Dao field.

Fang Yuan frowned even more tightly.

He deduced even more information.

“When the opportunity comes, they can return to the Dao field naturally — this is a saying passed down in Yellow Earth Dao field. Moreover, in the memories of the giant grey fish, many of its seniors returned like this.”

“Looks like Yellow Earth Dao field itself possesses the ability to respond to these beings that have gone outside. Every interval of time, the Gu Immortal elites of Yellow Earth Dao field will go out to train themselves, and when their training is accomplished, the Dao field will pick them up.”

Why was this arranged?

There was an answer in the giant grey fish’s memories.

This was because Dao fields did not coexist peacefully, there were wars between them.

The living beings nurtured by the Dao fields fought each other and tried to invade each other’s Dao field.

“Back then, the venerables probably made this arrangement when they created the Dao fields.”

“But what benefits are there in these beings fighting each other? What goal did the venerables have?”

Fang Yuan shook his head.

He might only be able to get the answers when he entered a venerable Dao field.

Fang Yuan’s gaze landed on the giant grey fish.

He smiled: “Didn’t you want me to enlighten you? Meeting me is your fortune.”

The giant grey fish trembled, it stammered but was unable to say anything, it was frightened by Fang Yuan.

Although it had not been long since it came into contact with Fang Yuan, the giant grey fish was deeply aware that the sage before it was extremely terrifying and possessed a cruel and indifferent demonic nature. He was absolutely not a good person like the Yellow Earth Sage!

Running into him was truly its misfortune.

“Alright, even if you don’t speak, I know your questions.” Fang Yuan had searched all the memories of the giant grey fish and was clear of what its barrier was.

He immediately guided it in concise and easy to understand words.

The giant grey fish’s body stopped shaking gradually as it was immersed in Fang Yuan’s words, temporarily forgetting its predicament.

“Why is there still no breakthrough?” Fang Yuan frowned, he had spoken till his mouth was dry.

The giant grey fish was still muddled.

Although it had intelligence, it was not equivalent to a human.

Fang Yuan was patient as he continued to teach it. By helping the giant grey fish break through its barrier, he might be able to trigger a response from the Yellow Earth Dao field.



# **Chapter 1870 - I Will Take Responsibility**

## Chapter 1870 I Will Take Responsibility

Profound Litef

rature grotto-heaven.

A warship with five decks was moving on a large river flowing towards the east.

“The jade river spans across the land, reflecting the red jade heart of people! It is hard to imagine the unrivaled talent of Emperor Gu Wen. He could actually write such a verse when he was just seven years old.” Su Qi Han sighed while gazing at the vast river.

She was the current imperial minister’s daughter. She was graceful, beautiful, cultured, and elegant. Besides her beauty, she was most praised for her literary talent. Her mind was filled with poems and had a good knowledge of the historical records, putting most men to shame.

“Young miss, wind has started blowing, you need to be careful of catching a cold. How about we return to the room.” Her maid urged.

Su Qi Han sighed but still stood behind the ship railings and watched the flowing river.

The maid persisted: “Young miss, are you worried about the journey? Wasn’t that thief forced away by you? We have already selected eight of the ten great scholars, can’t we just choose the next two casually?”

Su Qi Han shook her head: “You don’t understand. Choosing the ten great scholars is not just an imperial edict but also concerns my Su clan’s prosperity.”

The maid curled her lips: “Young miss, I don’t understand these imperial laws but you must take your medicine now.”

Su Qi Han smiled bitterly: “What effect can common herbal medicine have on my injuries? It is just to comfort myself, it doesn’t matter even if I drink it.”

The maid stomped her foot: “Young miss, don’t try to deceive me. This herbal medicine has no effect on your injuries, but you’ve always been weak to the cold since you were a child, if you do not drink this warm medicine, your lungs might get damaged. So, you must drink this medicine.”

“Alright, alright, bring it over.” Su Qi Han was helpless against her personal maid, she took the bowl and finished it all.

She had just finished drinking when she heard a wild laugh.

Soon after, a figure jumped out of the water and landed on the deck.

“Who is it?”

“That thief again!”

The ship guards moved immediately and surrounded the person.

But this person was very strong, after a chaotic battle, the guards ended up lying on the ground.

“You are not his match, retreat for now.” Su Qi Han’s expression was solemn as she moved to the front and prepared to fight.

The person had an ugly and ferocious-looking face, he had a large and broad body with his skin having a color of bluish black like a shark, this was the result of using shark skin Gu.

“Miss Su.” He greeted with a wide smile, revealing his sharp teeth which made him look even more ferocious.

Su Qi Han smiled coldly: “Shark Bandit, you lost to me not long ago, was that lesson not enough? You still dare to come back!”

Shark Bandit laughed sinisterly: “Lady Su, I am not your match but that was before you drank that medicine. Don’t you feel your limbs becoming numb?”

Su Qi Han’s expression changed immediately.

“The medicine was tampered with?!” She looked towards her personal maid.

The maid quickly shook her head, her face pale as paper: “Impossible! The medicine had always been in my sight. Young miss, you must believe me.”

“The medicine... cough cough, has no issue. Cough, cough... but the herbs have... cough, been tampered with.” Right at this moment, an uninvited guest climbed the ship rails and stepped on the deck.

Su Qi Han’s brows furrowed tightly, her heart sinking to rock bottom: “Medicine Demon, you are still alive!”

Medicine Demon looked like an elderly man but he was actually only in his twenties. He cultivated poison path and blindly pursued strength, causing him to suffer a backlash which made his whole body aged, internally and externally.

Medicine Demon’s eyes showed deep hatred: “All thanks to your elder cousin, I won’t live for long. But being able to have a taste of Lady Su’s body before I die will be worth it.”

Su Qi Han’s expression paled as she took a step back: “What drug did you give me?”

She felt her whole body beginning to turn numb.

Medicine Demon laughed loudly: “Naturally — the strongest aphrodisiac! It can make the most chaste girl into the most lewd and obscene slut!”

Before he even finished speaking, Shark Bandit pounced forward.

Boom boom boom!

Sounds of explosions rang as Su Qi Han was forced to retreat again and again.

“Young miss, leave quickly, I will hold them back!” At the crucial moment, the maid stood out and sacrificed herself to stall for time for Su Qi Han.

Su Qi Han fell into deep hesitation.

“Young miss, leave quickly!” The maid activated a forbidden technique, her battle strength rose explosively but the outcome would be her certain death.

Su Qi Han cried as she jumped out and ran across the water: “Shark Bandit, Medicine Demon, I will never forgive you. The Imperial Court will also execute your nine generations!”

In a pavilion by the river.

There were two people.

One was Fang Yuan’s clone Li Xiao Bai, the other was his master, Teacher Jiang.

Teacher Jiang gazed at the scene of the river in the night and said to Li Xiao Bai: “Come, write a poem and recite it to me. You have ten steps of time.”

The ten steps referred to the time taken by a normal person to walk ten steps.

Li Xiao Bai’s talent was not as good as the main body’s, but through this period of painstaking effort and training, there was huge progress and he was able to immediately recite two lines.

After a while of thinking, he added another two lines.

Teacher Jiang was silent for a while before shaking his head: “Little Bai, you have made huge progress during this time, but with your talent, you are still lacking to fight for the position of a great scholar.”

“Teacher, I know poem composition within ten steps is Emperor Gu Wen’s test. Emperor Gu Wen created the scholar selection test, the Imperial Court will choose ten great scholars every twenty years. This poem composition within ten steps is the first test for the scholar selection. I have already passed it, teacher, why do you not recommend me to participate in the selection?” Li Xiao Bai asked in confusion.

Teacher Jiang turned around and looked at his favorite student, speaking with a smile: “Little Bai, you don’t know the whole situation. The ten great scholars selection looks like a glorious competition on the surface, but it is in actuality a competition to cultivate future Imperial Court officials.”

“Teacher, you are talking about immortal ascension?” Li Xiao Bai was astonished.

Li Xiao Bai was only acting, naturally. In fact, he already knew about everything.

Fang Yuan’s heaven form killer move was a powerful method to inspect grotto-heavens, even if Profound Literature grotto-heaven had a rank eight Gu Immortal guarding it, it was helpless against the constant inspection by heaven form from outside the grotto-heaven.

In this Profound Literature grotto-heaven, information path was the main path, every time a Gu Master wrote a great literary piece, they would be rewarded by the grotto-heaven.

Originally, this grotto-heaven was filled with many individual forces, with Gu Immortals establishing independent territories. But later, someone called Emperor Gu Wen appeared. This person’s natural aptitude was extremely high and had unsurpassed talent, he became a Gu Immortal at a frightening speed. Later, he made a move against other Gu Immortals, either killing them or making them submit. He created the Imperial Court and put the whole grotto-heaven under his rule.

In his latter years, he created ten great scholars selection to choose the most outstanding talents in the whole world, giving them honor and titles.

The Imperial Court selected suitable people among these scholars and recruited them, giving them resources and raising them to Gu Immortals, before appointing them as officials.

As such, the Imperial Court was the strongest super force in Profound Literature grotto-heaven. Every high ranking official was a Gu Immortal with no exception.

The current emperor naturally was also a Gu Immortal. And the rank eight Gu Immortal guarding this grotto-heaven was the retired emperor from three generations ago.

As it involved the chance of becoming an immortal, the ten great scholar selection looked like a beautiful competition, but the hidden undercurrents reeked with blood.

Every force contended and fought using all kinds of connections and relations, they tried to get the position by hook or by crook.

“Great Scholar Shen who competed against Teacher Jiang was one of the ten great scholars in one of the selections. But his political talent is not outstanding, or maybe, he doesn’t have a powerful background, so he is still at rank five peak stage.”

“This teacher of mine is also the same. He had once been one of the ten great scholars, but was not recruited to be an official.”

“My talent barely meets the standard of the selection. Moreover, I am my teacher’s disciple and have his influence, the Imperial Court won’t like this, even if I am selected, I probably won’t be a high-ranking official. At most, I will only be a junior official who will have to work hard for the Imperial Court and this will delay my cultivation. I have no one to back me up so my cultivation will keep on being delayed my whole life.”

“Teacher Jiang and Great Scholar Shen probably saw this future, so they were not willing to become officials and wandered outside the Imperial Court. One opened a private school while the other roamed everywhere.”

Li Xiao Bai was clear in his mind.

It could not be said Teacher Jiang and Great Scholar Shen did not have a future. If they could solve the mystery of immortal ascension and successfully pass the tribulation, they would also become Gu Immortals.

But this Profound Literature grotto-heaven was small when compared to the five regions, and had very limited resources. Moreover, the colossal Imperial Court controlled almost all the immortal materials, it was extremely difficult and almost hopeless for people like Teacher Jiang and Great Scholar Shen to become Gu Immortals.

Teacher Jiang invited Li Xiao Bai alone to the riverside and conversed with him to persuade this student to give up on the current ten great scholars selection. He was actually showing deep concern.

He knew Li Xiao Bai’s strength was low, although it fulfilled the minimum standard, there was simply no hope.

The ten great scholars selection was a whirlpool which had killed many young scholars. Teacher Jiang had made painstaking efforts to teach and guide Li Xiao Bai, he did not want this student to be implicated and die a miserable death.

However, he did not know Li Xiao Bai was aware of everything, he was even clear of how to become an immortal.

But the show still had to be performed.

Li Xiao Bai asked questions first which was then followed by him expressing his regrets and unwillingness to give up. Finally, he solemnly thanked Teacher Jiang and said he was willing to give up on this selection, and even give up on the future selections.



“This child is worth teaching!” Teacher Jiang felt huge relief and left with a relaxed heart.

Li Xiao Bai moved along the riverside towards the way back home.

“I can become an immortal by myself. But if I rashly undergo immortal ascension at such a fast speed, it will definitely make that rank eight Gu Immortal vigilant. He will definitely investigate and if he finds any clues or even has only a trace of doubt, I will be in a fatal danger.”

This was not the outcome Li Xiao Bai and Fang Yuan’s main body wanted to see.

Fang Yuan had used soul replacement and secretly arranged this clone, Li Xiao Bai, to save time and let the clone open the way, and even gain control of this Profound Literature grotto-heaven alone.

Although this was only a small move, if it succeeds, it would definitely save a lot of Fang Yuan’s time and energy.

Naturally, there was also a backup plan.

When Li Xiao Bai grows to a certain stage, he could cooperate with the main body outside to scheme against the rank eight Gu Immortal.

“But it is too early for that.”

“I can be considered as having established my footing because of Teacher Jiang. I studied hard in this period of time and have gained some fame. But this environment is not enough to continue my progress.”

“If I can be selected as a great scholar, it will definitely be a springboard for me. Unfortunately, I have no power or background, and only have a teacher. I will definitely not have a good ending if I participate in the selection.”

“Actually, joining the Imperial Court is the best cultivation path. The Imperial Court controls most of the immortal materials, even if I become an immortal in the future, it will be hard to achieve anything further without these cultivation resources.”

Li Xiao Bai was lamenting inwardly when his steps paused.

He saw a person lying on a bush in the riverside.

“Miss, what’s the matter with you?” After confirming the surrounding condition, Li Xiao Bai went to help the girl.

When he carried the unconscious girl to the shore, he shockingly discovered this person was actually Su Qi Han!

“What happened?”

“This Su Qi Han is the current high ranking official Chancellor Su’s daughter, and is in charge of this current ten great scholars selection competition. She was actually injured to the point she was unconscious!”

“Chancellor Su is a rank six Gu Immortal, Su Qi Han is also a predetermined future official of the Imperial Court, she definitely has immortal methods to protect her. But she actually fell into such a predicament, this ten great scholars selection’s hidden undercurrents are truly too deep.”

Inside Profound Literature grotto-heaven, men and women could become immortals without discrimination, both could become officials as well, naturally. Many women were even more talented than men.

A large number of all-girls private schools and institutes were spread all over Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

And the ten great scholars naturally were not only males and also included women.

Just as he was thinking, Su Qi Han woke up with a light sound.

“You saved me?” She looked at Li Xiao Bai with a heated look.

Li Xiao Bai thought: “Why is there something wrong with this gaze?”

He nodded his head and was just about to speak.

Su Qi Han covered his lips and turned around suddenly, pressing Li Xiao Bai to the ground.

“This, what is she trying to do?” Li Xiao Bai’s body tensed up, he was a little muddled, what was she playing at?

Su Qi Han sat on his body and began to remove his clothes in a hurry.

Li Xiao Bai was bewildered and said while stammering: “Miss Su, Miss Su, please behave yourself!”

Su Qi Han’s movements paused as her eyes narrowed: “You know me?”

Li Xiao Bai gulped his saliva, his forehead filled with cold sweat: “Miss Su, you are selecting the ten great scholars, of course I know you. Miss Su, I am Teacher Jiang’s student and had parted with Teacher Jiang just earlier.”

Li Xiao Bai was truly afraid, Su Qi Han had rank five peak stage cultivation, he was not her match.

At present, there were only the two of them at the riverside. Su Qi Han was in a strange state, Li Xiao Bai mentioned Teacher Jiang to prevent himself from being harmed.

Su Qi Han took a deep gaze at Li Xiao Bai, an unnatural blush floated on her face as she gave a deep sigh: “It’s too late, your teacher is already far away. Right now, within ten li of distance, there is only you and me.”

“What are you trying to do? Ah!” Li Xiao Bai was struck gently by Su Qi Han and fell into a daze.

This was absolutely not something he wanted.

According to his plan, he could grow stably. But now, he was like meat on the chopping board, others could do whatever they wanted.

If his secret were to be discovered, that would be extremely bad!

Li Xiao Bai wanted to remain clear-headed, but Su Qi Han's methods were unique. He used all his strength to struggle but could not even budge.

In his dazed state, he felt like he had landed in an icy cave, next, it was like he had fallen into raging waves, moving up and down.

Then, the cave became warmer like a gentle wind had brushed past his face, light rain drizzled as it became more warm and moist.

Finally, he felt like he had turned into a waterfall, with a torrential explosion, he fainted in pleasure.

Who knew how long passed, he woke up slowly.

He was extremely exhausted and a trace of weakness surged in his body.

He quickly inspected the situation and saw his clothes were already torn completely and he was lying inside a cave.

Su Qi Han was in the midst of dressing herself beside him.

"Miss... Miss Su..." Li Xiao Bai barely opened his mouth, he did not even have the strength to speak much.

Su Qi Han continued to put on her clothes without looking at him, her voice was calm: "It has already been three days and three nights since we met."

"Relax, I..." She paused as she was finally unable to hide the turbulence in her heart, her voice even shaking a little: "I will take responsibility."

# **Chapter 1871 - Chicken Dinner**

## Chapter 1871 Chicken Dinner

Eastern Sea, Gu tribe headquarters.

A grand banquet had already lasted for several days inside the palace.

At this time, servants served platters of delicious roasted chicken.

These were naturally not ordinary chickens, they were immortal chickens of at least desolate beast level. Moreover the ones that Gu tribe's leader and Fang Yuan's clone enjoyed were ancient desolate chickens.

After staying here for so many days, Wu Shuai had fully realized the beastmen's customs — eating a lot, drinking a lot, bold to the point of being arrogant, and enjoying comfort to the point of being indulgent. If you received the beastmen's acceptance, you were their honored guest, enjoying the best wine and food. If you didn't have their acceptance, you would forever be despised and loathed, even hated.

At the sight of immortal chickens, the beastman Gu Immortals moved their fingers with salivating mouths.

These immortal materials could not be eaten regularly, they were often used as Gu refinement materials, It was never so luxurious as today.

But based on the historical records, when the beastman race was at its height, these immortal materials could be eaten casually by beastman tribes. They had been extravagant and wasteful.

Gu tribe's leader grabbed the millstone-sized roasted chicken.

“Lord Wu Shuai, please look.” As he said so, he activated a certain food path killer move.

The killer move activated, Gu tribe's leader opened his mouth and inhaled lightly, directly swallowing the huge roasted chicken.

Gulp, Gu tribe's leader's throat moved up and down as the roasted chicken went down his throat.

His stomach immediately bulged and looked like a pregnant woman.

Gu tribe's leader rubbed his belly and laughed: "This ancient desolate chicken will need half a day more to be completely digested. During this time, my luck is strengthened. This is my tribe's food path killer move — Chicken Dinner."

Wu Shuai nodded his head while praising: "Chicken dinner is such an exceptional ability, to use a food path method to produce luck path effect. From what I see, this luck strengthening emphasizes on the aspect of survival."

Gu tribe's leader said in admiration: "Very insightful, senior, that is exactly the case. Based on historical records, when my tribe's Gu Immortals faced dangerous situations, or a large scale battle royale, this move is the reason they managed to survive."

Wu Shuai nodded as he tore a piece of the chicken and devoured it: "Let me show you an enslavement path killer move."

This banquet was of course not simple, it was an exchange of inheritances between Fang Yuan's clone and Gu tribe.

Gu tribe possessed transformation path and food path inheritances and were willing to exchange a portion of them with Fang Yuan's enslavement path inheritance.

Gu tribe was already preparing to develop dragonmen, dragonmen were born with enslavement path dao marks and thus there was demand for enslavement path inheritances.

Fang Yuan had no reason to reject it.

He could exchange for the inheritances held by Gu tribe with some contents of enslavement path.

Their inheritances were unique, the transformation path inheritance had the essence of the Olden Antiquity Era and the food path inheritance also made Fang Yuan pleasantly surprised.

Food path was originally created by a beastman Gu Immortal.

Gu tribe had been hiding in the depths of Eastern Sea and had gradually developed a rather complete food path inheritance.

The killer move that Gu tribe's leader displayed just now was one of the contents of the inheritance — Chicken Dinner.

Because of their nature, the beastmen made their killer move names extremely simple and crude, but their effects were very practical.

Fang Yuan and Gu tribe's cooperation continued to deepen.

Previously, Fang Yuan helped convert them to dragonman, now, they were exchanging inheritances.

Fang Yuan's clone Wu Shuai performed the enslavement path killer move, the beastman Gu Immortals in the banquet were deeply moved and cheered repeatedly.

Gu tribe's leader clapped and summoned a group of female dragonmen: "Lord, please enjoy the dance."

These dragon women were the female beastmen that had just recently converted, their dance and songs were from the olden era, full of wildness and temptation.

One of the dragon women danced even more flirtatiously.

The dance ended but these dragon women did not leave, instead flocking to Wu Shuai's side.



“Lord Wu Shuai.” Gu tribe’s leader said with great sincerity: “I noticed you have no servants to serve you, so I am offering these women, I would be deeply honored if you accept them.”

Wu Shuai laughed heartily as he pulled that extremely flirtatious dragon lady to his chest: “I won’t refuse this good intention. My dragonman race has few people, spreading my seed is also an important task. I shall take this one as my wife while the rest shall be concubines.”

Gu tribe’s leader was overjoyed as he raised his cup of wine, everyone present also cheered and celebrated the relationship of two races deepening by another layer.

After the banquet, Wu Shuai took these dragon ladies to Dragon Palace and started “working on his responsibilities”.

Not long later, Fang Yuan’s main body, which was far away in the eighth layer of Crazy Demon Cave, received Wu Shuai’s message.

“Marriage with Gu tribe? This is a good thing.” His eyes shined with bright light.

Wu Shuai taking in a wife and concubines was naturally an alliance marriage. Intercourse with the girls also made Gu tribe stop worrying. In the future, if they had children, the relationship between the two would deepen even further.

“When the time is ripe, I can use the children to quietly take in Gu tribe.”

Gu tribe wanted to cling onto Wu Shuai, little did they imagine, this was all within Fang Yuan’s expectation.

Fang Yuan’s intention was to take in the whole of Gu tribe.

Fighting and killing was only one of the methods available to a mature person, there were many other ways to deal with things.

Fang Yuan intended to use gentle political tricks to swallow Gu tribe. Although this would consume much more time, it was a tactful method that

saved as much foundation of Gu tribe as possible and would give Fang Yuan the greatest benefits.

“Gu tribe’s inheritances are truly extraordinary. They are definitely hiding even more outstanding methods. The contents of the inheritances they exchange also had a lot of points worth seeing. Especially the food path inheritance.”

Fang Yuan had the original food path inheritance that was left by the beastman Gu Immortal who created food path, it was legitimate and authentic.

And Gu tribe’s inheritance, that was developed through many generations of modifications, was also exceptional with many creative methods. For instance, the killer move chicken dinner that could imitate luck path effect.

Just at the first glance, this inheritance gave Fang Yuan many inspirations. Fang Yuan sent a command to his time path clone to try deducing in this aspect.

His main body was sitting on the giant grey fish and was still roaming in the void aimlessly.

The giant grey fish’s aura was different from before.

Through Fang Yuan’s repeated enlightenment, even though it had limited intelligence, it could achieve a breakthrough. The bottleneck that had been troubling it before no longer existed.

However, Fang Yuan’s anticipated matter had yet to appear.

Fang Yuan enlightened the giant grey fish to use it to trigger a response from Yellow Earth Dao field.

But so many days had passed and he had yet to even see a trace of Yellow Earth Dao field.

According to the giant grey fish’s words, this was because the timing had yet to arrive.

But Fang Yuan scoffed as he inwardly guessed: “Affinity and timing are just excuses to deceive people. Looks like this Yellow Earth Dao field can act on its own, or maybe there is an autonomous will that saw through my scheme, thus it did not reveal itself.”

“Let’s see how it goes after I continue exploring for some time.”

Several days later.

“Where are you going?” Fang Yuan, who was sitting on the back of the giant grey fish, smiled coldly.

He activated his killer move; a strength path giant hand flew out and grabbed a fat rhinoceros.

“Spare me, sage, spare me!” The rhino begged loudly while struggling but the strength path giant hand held it firmly.

Fang Yuan chuckled and pointed his finger, immediately extracting the soul of the rhino.

Within several breaths of time, he understood all the life experiences of this rhino.

This rhino came from Reckless Savage’s Dao field, and just like the giant grey fish, it had also encountered a bottleneck and left its world to find an opportunity to breakthrough.

Unfortunately, it encountered Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan attacked it without saying anything and captured this rank seven rhino easily.

The giant grey fish witnessed the whole process, its heart shaking in fright from Fang Yuan’s horrifying strength.

“Running into me is your fortune, let me enlighten you.” Fang Yuan gave a malevolent smile.

The rhino's soul was put back in its body. It had learned this time, quickly kneeling and kowtowing to Fang Yuan.

Several days went by again.

"You can leave, remember to cultivate properly." Fang Yuan looked at the giant grey fish and the fat rhino.

The giant fish and the rhino said together with trembling voices: "Goodbye, sage!"

"Try to return as early as possible, I will come back again." Fang Yuan smiled.

The giant fish and the rhino trembled fiercely, only when Fang Yuan completely disappeared from their sight did they stop kowtowing. They glanced at each other, both rejoicing madly at surviving from fatal danger.

Naturally, Fang Yuan's parting words that implied he would come back became a giant shadow that shrouded these two's hearts.

Crazed Demon Cave, seventh layer.

Secret Schemer took a step forward cautiously with a pale face.

This was already near his limits.

"Let's rest for a while." Secret Schemer had no choice but to do this.

He sat down cross-legged and turned into a rock statue to rest.

Not Immortal and Pang Shan rested behind him.

After a while, Secret Schemer opened his rock eyes and stood up.

"Leader, let's return."

"Yes, demonic sounds are irregular and with no set pattern, we cannot predict them now. Moreover, there has been no demonic sound for some

time. This location is too risky.”

“Yes, wasn’t Fang Yuan a lesson for us?”

Not Immortal and Pang Shan reminded.

Secret Schemer sighed and nodded helplessly: “Alright, let’s leave.”

Fang Yuan’s death had made the Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics somewhat downcast.

But just as Secret Schemer was about to turn around, he suddenly opened his eyes and remained still.

“Leader, what’s... ah!”

“Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan? Is that you!”

Not Immortal and Pang Shan looked at Fang Yuan walking slowly towards them.

“It’s me.” Fang Yuan nodded.

“This is great, you didn’t die!” Not Immortal shouted.

“But why didn’t we see you?” Secret Schemer asked in confusion.

Fang Yuan nodded again: “That is because I went to the eighth layer and received the reminder left by a venerable.”

“Eighth layer?!”

“A venerable’s reminder?!”

The Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics were shaken.

“Yes, I will tell you in detail later. But in short — Fate must be destroyed to obtain eternal life.” Fang Yuan made up a story as he showed a sincere expression.



# **Chapter 1872 - Fighting Thousand Transformations**

## **1872 Fighting Thousand Transformations**

Western Desert.

Fang Yuan was standing proudly on the deck of Myriad Year Flying Warship with his hands behind his back and without hiding his trace.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was like a sharp sword that pierced through the sky towards a light yellow cloud.

“Fang Yuan, you dared to come back!” A woman’s shout spread from the light yellow cloud, expressing the anger and hatred of its owner.

The ordinary looking light yellow cloud was actually an immortal formation.

The formation covered a dream realm, inside which Immortal Gu Mutation and Gu Immortal Dancer Hong Yun were trapped.

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan was maintaining the formation.

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan had rank seven cultivation and was a concubine of Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

Back then when Fang Yuan had been traveling in Western Desert and was chased by Feng Jiu Ge, he ran into Dancer Hong Yun and pretended to make an alliance, trading for Zhen Yuan Zi's formation path inheritance.

Fang Yuan's plan was to pretend to leave. Ying Wu Xie had still been in Fairy Cui Bo's body at that time, he detonated a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body and trapped Dancer Hong Yun and Thousand Transformations Ancestor's will.

Unfortunately, when Fang Yuan wanted to clean up the battlefield, Feng Jiu Ge caught up to him and he had to retreat.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor had been plotted against and felt something wrong, immediately sending Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan to inspect it.

After knowing Liu Guan Yi was Fang Yuan and feeling helpless against the dream realm, Thousand Transformations Ancestor could only make Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan construct an immortal formation around the area.

In fact, Dancer Hong Yun, who was trapped, here might be Thousand Transformations Ancestor's concubine, but he did not like her that much. What Thousand Transformations Ancestor was worried about was the mutation Immortal Gu trapped in the dream realm.

This was a rank eight Immortal Gu!

Back then, Thousand Transformations Ancestor inherited a Reckless Savage true inheritance and this mutation Immortal Gu was its core. Without it, Thousand Transformations Ancestor would have a very hard time activating most of the methods and their strength would also be reduced greatly.

Mutation Immortal Gu could not be lost!

Thousand Transformations Ancestor did not have Fang Yuan's methods and could only learn from Southern Border's righteous path, confining the dream realm.



The main culprit behind all this was Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan revealed himself now and attacked the formation, it was no wonder Immortal Concubine Qing Lan could not restrain her fury.

But this famous Western Desert beauty did not attack, instead she activated the formation and chose to defend.

“Fang Yuan might only have rank seven cultivation but he can fight rank eights. He also has Myriad Year Flying Warship which has defeated Heavenly Court before, I cannot resist it by myself! The urgent thing now is to defend and stall for time until husband and others arrive.”

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan sent an urgent message for help while controlling the immortal formation with all her strength.

Boom boom boom!

Fang Yuan’s attacks erupted on the formation, the endless silver flying swords rained down like a waterfall.

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan clenched her teeth as she activated the yellow cloud and held on firmly.

Under the ferocious attacks, the yellow cloud started disintegrating, its size shrinking continuously. But this disintegrating speed was quite slow.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had four main killer moves; torrential charge, daybreak sword, daybreak torrent, and myriad year hunting.

Every killer move was a rank eight move, but evidently, the immortal formation that formed the yellow cloud was also at rank eight.

“Fortunately, we reinforced the immortal formation, otherwise with the previous rank seven formation, it would be impossible to block Fang Yuan. This is Myriad Year Flying Warship? It is really amazing!” Immortal Concubine Qing Lan was pale as she had to bear a huge pressure because of Fang Yuan’s vicious attacks.

She had never imagined Fang Yuan to actually attack this place. There had simply been no warning signs.

The formation rumbled as several Gu Immortals teleported to myriad statue desert.

At the front was Night Temptress, the number one concubine of Thousand Transformations Ancestor, along with several other Gu Immortals who were all Thousand Transformations Ancestor's concubines.

“Where is husband?” Immortal Concubine Qing Lan's expression changed slightly.

Night Temptress said heavily: “It is not time yet for husband to make a move, the situation is much more complex than this. We received the order to help you defend this place.”

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan shook her head: “With just us, we are probably not Fang Yuan's match and will not be able to last for long.”

A female immortal scoffed: “Qing Lan, what are you afraid of? This formation is a rank eight...”

Boom!

Right at this time, a loud sound spread and almost half the yellow cloud disintegrated instantly.

The female immortals inside the formation were pale.

Night Temptress screamed: “What are you waiting for? Reinforce the formation, quick!”

The female immortals stopped quarrelling as they used all their strength to control the formation and defend against Fang Yuan's attacks.

Fang Yuan was still standing on the deck, his gaze flickering sharply.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had made big contributions. In the River of Time, it had killed Qing Ye and Li Huang who were rank eight experts, especially the latter who had extraordinary strength.

But at that time, Myriad Year Flying Warship occupied an advantage, because all its killer moves were amplified to a horrifying level in the River of Time.

On the contrary, Qing Ye, Li Huang and the rest had been greatly suppressed.

This time, Myriad Year Flying Warship was fighting an aerial battle in Western Desert, and without the environment's amplification, its killer moves only had normal strength.

It was because of this that even when Myriad Year Flying Warship attacked with everything, it was still unable to destroy the yellow cloud.

“This formation isn't simple, it is a transformation path Gu formation with extraordinary defense as well as having the ability to transport Gu Immortals, it is probably a portion of Reckless Savage's true inheritance.”

Fang Yuan thought of many things.

His guess was not wrong, this formation was the myriad li adaptation formation of Reckless Savage's true inheritance, it was a genuine rank eight formation.

A Rank eight Immortal Gu House could fight a rank eight immortal formation, both sides were evenly matched.

However, comparing the person controlling the Immortal Gu House and the Gu Immortals guarding the immortal formation, Fang Yuan undoubtedly won by a margin.

“Someone help me quick, I can't hold on for long!”

“Ahh! Fang Yuan is too fierce, I can't endure it.”

“Sisters, hold on, I am coming... Damn it, I am about to lose my defensive position as well.”

The foothold that these concubines of Thousand Transformations Ancestor had was slipping at an astonishing speed.

Night Temptress’s expression was ashen as she exhausted all her strength and coughed out blood, but was also unable to hold on.

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan was soaked with cold sweat. She was unable to understand why she was able to pull Fang Yuan into a deadlock when she had been defending alone, but now when she received huge support, they were failing bit by bit.

The remaining rank six female immortals were sweating madly, their limbs were numb and their fighting strength had already fallen to the lowest point.

Myriad li adaptation formation was indeed a good formation, but it was nothing against Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had time path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment, transformation path great grandmaster, formation path grandmaster, wisdom path grandmaster, as well as the light of wisdom and many methods to make deductions.

Daybreak swords could be used as he liked, and every attack was like a probe filled with deep intentions.

Although there was still a large distance from fully understanding the formation, what Fang Yuan needed to do was to destroy and not study, this was much simpler and straightforward.

“Thousand Transformations Ancestor, you are still not making a move? Can your concubines stop me? You are looking down on me too much and thinking too highly of yourself.” Fang Yuan sneered and spoke.

But he still didn’t see Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

The yellow cloud had already shrunk to a dangerous level, Night Temptress was panic-stricken and said decisively: “Sisters, activate the final method.”

“We are using it this early?”

“What choice do we have other than this?”

“It will be too late if we don’t use it now!”

The female immortals activated their final trump card, the yellow cloud suddenly emitted golden rays, although only a small portion was left of it, it was extremely firm and blocked all the silver flying swords without even budging.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, thinking: “This situation is also within my expectation. Using it so quickly, you are truly incapable! If it were others, they might be perplexed, but I have already understood its context, you are just speeding up your deaths by doing this.”

While thinking this, Fang Yuan immediately stopped daybreak sword and sent a command to his subordinates inside the warship: “Ram it!”

Myriad Year Flying Warship ferociously collided straight into the golden cloud.

Boom!

First collision; golden cloud shook, the female immortals started bleeding from their seven orifices and were struck with dizziness.

Boom!

Second collision; the golden cloud loosened, the female immortals fell to the ground after suffering such a fierce collision. They were panting hard, their faces were pale as paper and their gazes were somewhat dull and blank.

Boom!

Third collision; Myriad Year Flying Warship directly pierced into the golden cloud, the female immortals could not endure such a backlash and many of them fainted immediately.

The formation was on the verge of collapsing, Fang Yuan retreated inside the warship instead.

“Master, should we capture these female immortals to use them as hostages to negotiate with Thousand Transformations Ancestor in the future?” A variant human Gu Immortal suggested.

Fang Yuan, however, shook his head.

Just as Myriad Year Flying Warship was about to make a fatal move against these female immortals, a female immortal suddenly stood up. Her appearance had changed greatly and shouted: “Fang Yuan, you are going too far!”

“Husband!!” Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan had been barely able to remain conscious, they shouted in surprise and joy.

As it turned out, Thousand Transformations Ancestor had already come over but had disguised his identity and kept it hidden from all the people around him.

He had been patient for a long time and intentionally set up a trap to seize a golden opportunity.

But Fang Yuan simply did not give him the opportunity, he was extremely cautious and did not leave Myriad Year Flying Warship even once. He did not even make a move personally or have the thought to capture these female immortals.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was like a dazzling giant sword as it pierced Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

In the moment of danger, Thousand Transformations Ancestor laughed sinisterly and raised his left arm without dodging.

At the next moment, his left arm expanded rapidly and transformed into a berserk ape's arm, the giant arm was filled with purple-gold dragon scales.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor raised his left arm as Myriad Year Flying Warship smashed into him with a loud sound.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was thrown back a small step but Myriad Year Flying Warship was sent flying.

Fang Yuan's heart sank slightly.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was indeed the person who inherited Reckless Savage's true inheritance, his methods were amazing.

He had only defended just now but it revealed many profundities.

He had not transformed his whole body, but only his left arm. The left arm's transformation was also not simple, dragon scales and the berserk ape's arm were used together, multiplying the strength.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was without options against such defense.

But Thousand Transformations Ancestor had not just blocked forcefully, but had used a technique to divert the force of Myriad Year Flying Warship and send it flying.

"Exquisite killer move along with exceptional combat techniques." It was only one exchange of offense and defense, but Fang Yuan was able to learn a lot of information about Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

At the next moment, he turned Myriad Year Flying Warship around and charged towards Thousand Transformations Ancestor again: "Thousand Transformations Ancestor, you finally came out, now die!"

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was furious: "You, a rank seven Gu Immortal, are dreaming of taking my life by relying on an Immortal Gu House? You dare speak such shameless words!"

Fang Yuan scoffed: “Even Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals died from my ship, you will also follow in their footsteps.”

It was okay when Heavenly Court was not mentioned, but at the mention of Heavenly Court, Thousand Transformations Ancestor was even more infuriated: “Demonic scoundrel, you think I am afraid of you? You fool, only knowing to conflict with me but not realizing you have already fallen into Heavenly Court’s scheme. Heavenly Court’s members are probably watching the show secretly.”



# **Chapter 1873 - Heavenly Court's Ambush**

## **1873 Heavenly Court's Ambush**

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was boiling with anger and resented Fang Yuan for not realizing the bigger picture.

Fang Yuan knew it clearly as he laughed: "If Heavenly Court comes, I shall kill them. If one comes, I will kill one. If two come, I will kill two!"

Thousand Transformations Ancestor's eyes widened and could not help but think: "After winning a few battles, this Fang Yuan has actually become so arrogant, or does he truly have a trump card to make him so confident?"

Back then, Thousand Transformations Ancestor had undergone a myriad tribulation and barely survived from it, he had been recuperating secretly. At that very time, Fairy Cui Bo was killed by Fang Yuan, Thousand Transformations Ancestor sensed this but because of his heavy injuries, he could only send Dancer Hong Yun to inspect the situation. But he was worried his weakness would be seen through by others, so he handed rank eight Immortal Gu Mutation to Dancer Hong Yun to avoid showing weakness if she encountered strong enemies.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was a lone cultivator and didn't have a friendly relationship with Western Desert's righteous path forces. He was at his weakest state at that time.

Later, Fang Yuan schemed and trapped Dancer Hong Yun.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor received Heavenly Court's message and knew Fang Yuan was the true culprit.

But at that time, the dream realm had already entrapped Dancer Hong Yun and mutation Immortal Gu, Thousand Transformations Ancestor had no choice but to send Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan to construct a rank seven immortal formation around the dream realm.

He had not expected this action to expose his state to Heavenly Court.

Since then, Fairy Zi Wei had been actively plotting to kill this Western Desert rank eight in advance so as to prepare for the five regions chaotic war in the future.

Heavenly Court secretly sent its members while Fairy Zi Wei schemed repeatedly to form a trap targeted against Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was a rank eight Gu Immortal and not some ordinary person, he keenly sensed the abnormal situation occurring, but due to his injuries, he could only use schemes to compete with Heavenly Court.

Both sides fought secretly, although Heavenly Court had a wisdom path great expert like Fairy Zi Wei, she was occupied with important matters. Moreover, a mighty dragon cannot suppress the local snake, Thousand Transformations Ancestor had been developing his territory in Western Desert for many years.

Thus, after Thousand Transformations Ancestor sensed their actions, Heavenly Court's progress became halted time and again.

Fairy Zi Wei noticed this and took the initiative to recruit Thousand Transformations Ancestor, trying to repeat the success of recruiting Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

However, Thousand Transformations Ancestor was different from Old Ancestor Xue Hu, he had Reckless Savage's true inheritance and was in control of the whole of myriad statue desert. He had a lot of cultivation resources and was able to financially support his concubines to become immortals.

While Old Ancestor Xue Hu was almost bankrupt because of the failure in refining rank eight Immortal Gu Fortune Rivalling Heaven. He accepted Heavenly Court's financial aid to make a comeback.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor also did not refuse directly but promised Heavenly Court that he would consider it.

Both sides had yet not reached the point of truly getting into an unresolvable conflict.

Right at this time, Fang Yuan suddenly appeared and attacked the myriad li adaptation formation, Thousand Transformations Ancestor was not willing to show up.

But this problematic Fang Yuan immediately broke the deadlock, destroying Thousand Transformations Ancestor's plan to stall for time.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor and Heavenly Court's battle was like a bomb. Both sides were restraining themselves to find a much better opportunity to use it.

And Fang Yuan was like a spark that lit the bomb.

The balance was broken, Thousand Transformations Ancestor had no choice but to make his move. Once he exposed his cards, Heavenly Court would definitely attack!

Boom boom boom!

Repeated explosions resounded throughout the area.

Fang Yuan controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship to fight Thousand Transformations Ancestor, after a long while, neither side could do anything

to the other.

“Heavenly Court experts are probably hiding in the surroundings and watching, even if they weren’t, this commotion will attract them.”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor had this worry since the start, he did not chase after Fang Yuan and urged: “Fang Yuan, Fairy Cui Bo died because she was too weak, she died a worthy death in the battlefield. Our hatred is not irreconcilable. You must be clear that your true enemy is not me, but Heavenly Court!”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor did his best to persuade him while forcibly restraining the fury in his heart.

My situation is like yours, why do we need to fight each other to death? We are both targeted by Heavenly Court, this battle is just giving Heavenly Court an opportunity to strike us! Why do you need to be so irrational?

But Fang Yuan was irrational, laughing madly: “Thousand Transformations Ancestor, you don’t deserve being a rank eight great expert, you are actually such a coward that you want to make peace with me? Hehe, I fear neither Heavenly Court nor you. Die!”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was so furious from hearing this that he wanted to skin Fang Yuan alive.

Fang Yuan stood on the deck again and activated daybreak sword.

The sword lights were like a waterfall with mighty momentum as well as being extremely nimble. The daybreak swords had charged right into Thousand Transformations Ancestor when they split into ten groups, the ten groups passed around Thousand Transformations Ancestor and attacked the myriad li adaptation formation.

“This Fang Yuan is so insidious!” Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s eyes widened, he of course could not let Fang Yuan succeed. If this formation was broken, the female immortals inside would definitely die.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor inhaled fiercely and transformed into a giant.

He then turned his body around, his back part transformed into a giant tortoise shell which blocked five or six groups of daybreak swords.

Then, his neck lengthened like a snake.

His head also transformed into a beast mouth. The beast mouth inhaled and swallowed the remaining swords.

“Giant transformation! Whirlpool tortoise shell transformation! Divine green snake neck transformation! Taotie transformation!” Fang Yuan’s gaze was like fire as he instantly recognized Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s methods.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor used all kinds of transformations at will and with extreme skill, every transformation just perfectly shielded the formation behind him.

Fang Yuan realized immediately: he was unable to break through Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s defense just by relying on Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Not only this, Fang Yuan needed to avoid close combat as much as possible as the other might know many transformations that could restrain Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Myriad Year Flying Warship charging into him was what Thousand Transformations Ancestor wanted to see.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: “Worthy of being Reckless Savage’s true inheritance, alright, let’s stop here. Thousand Transformations Ancestor, we will meet again someday.”

Saying so, he controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship and activated the killer move torrential charge.

Shining water waves immediately appeared below Myriad Year Flying Warship, the killer move had summoned a phantom image of the River of Time!

Myriad Year Flying Warship borrowed the momentum of the river and left like a shot arrow.

But right at this time, a delicate voice resounded through the skies: “Fang Yuan, where are you going!”

Before the voice finished speaking, four Immortal Gu Houses came rushing from four directions along with four rank eight Gu Immortals.

“There was indeed an ambush!” Even Thousand Transformations Ancestor got a fright, Heavenly Court’s determination was too great, such an enormous force had actually been lying in ambush.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor suddenly realized: “Dangerous! I was intentionally stalling for time but Heavenly Court was trying to use that to make me lower my guard, and later, secretly mobilizing a large number of troops to besiege and even kill me! From this angle, looks like I need to thank Fang Yuan, had he not lured out this force, I might have still been in the dark.”

Although he knew the situation clearly, Thousand Transformations Ancestor did not show any gratitude towards Fang Yuan as he shouted: “Fang Yuan, look, my words came true!”

Fang Yuan’s expression was serious as he maneuvered Myriad Year Flying Warship to dash here and there, but its movement was all blocked by Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan did not try again, instead turning the ship around towards Thousand Transformations Ancestor: “Ancestor, the situation is like this, let us cooperate.”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor pointed at Fang Yuan furiously: “Fang Yuan, I have rarely seen such shamelessness in my life!”

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: “Then you want to continue fighting me?”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor choked and forcibly swallowed this grievance: “Hmph! We shall fight later, don’t be a burden to me.”

“I should be the one saying that. You have quite a huge burden there.” Fang Yuan ridiculed, hinting that the many concubines were Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s weakness.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s expression turned dark: “Stay further away from me, if you cross this line, I will fight you as well.”

He was naturally still wary towards Fang Yuan and did not have even a bit of trust in Fang Yuan. But there was no other choice in this situation, he could only collaborate with Fang Yuan to have a chance at winning.

Just like Thousand Transformations Ancestor expected, Heavenly Court had secretly mobilized a large force to ambush him.

But there was suddenly a change in the situation, Fang Yuan had attacked and fought Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

Heavenly Court’s forces did not expect this and quickly contacted Fairy Zi Wei who was in Heavenly Court. Fairy Zi Wei was exulted and commanded Heavenly Court’s forces to continue lying in ambush and watch the battle from the sidelines, waiting for the opportunity to reap the spoils.

But Thousand Transformations Ancestor was extremely shrewd and pointed out Heavenly Court’s existence while also displaying an extraordinary battle strength.

Fang Yuan seemed to be unable to break his defense and wanted to retreat.

The moment he tried to retreat, Heavenly Court’s troops had no choice but to make a move.

Previously, Heavenly Court wanted to deal with Thousand Transformations Ancestor, but Fang Yuan was a much bigger threat to Heavenly Court. He

had finally appeared and Heavenly Court's members were not willing to let him go.

As such, Heavenly Court's forces moved out and turned the whole situation upside down.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor and Fang Yuan had no choice but to collaborate, but even those two did not have any hopes for what their joint efforts could achieve.

"Fang Yuan, you ran away last time. This time, let me see where you can flee to." Prince Feng Xian closed in, intending to make up for his previous loss.

The expressions of Xing Ye Wang and Wei Feng were cold as they flew in without saying a word.

There was another rank eight Gu Immortal as well, it was a woman with a seductive body. She laughed alluringly: "You are Fang Yuan? So handsome, big sister likes you. What a pity, what a pity. Why would someone so handsome end up like this?"

Fang Yuan paid the most attention to this female immortal.

"According to my previous life's memories, this woman should be Wan Zi Hong. In the previous life, when Northern Plains invaded Heavenly Court, she had awakened. I didn't expect her to wake up so early in this life."

Prince Feng Xian shouted: "Attack!"

Four Immortal Gu Houses guarded four directions while the four rank eight Gu Immortals activated their killer moves simultaneously.

In an instant, flames erupted, starlight spread, fierce wind raged, and mist filled the air!

Four rank eight killer moves with grand might overwhelmed the surroundings.



“Come!” Fang Yuan controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship and directly charged head-on.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s eyes widened: “One’s nature can be seen at the crucial moment. This Fang Yuan is truly a demon that can fight Heavenly Court, he has such courage!”

Seeing Fang Yuan charging over, Heavenly Court’s four immortals controlled their killer moves to attack Fang Yuan.

“I’ll dodge!” Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly, lightly turning around his direction and flying behind the myriad li adaptation formation.

“This bastard...” Thousand Transformations Ancestor was dazed before cursing inwardly. Fang Yuan left and the killer moves that were lured by him flew at Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor needed to protect the formation behind him and could not dodge. He gave a furious shout and braced himself to defend the attacks!

Boom boom boom!

Continued explosions resounded while Fang Yuan flew away within Myriad Year Flying Warship.

“Thousand Transformations Ancestor, thank you, I shall leave now.” Fang Yuan laughed brightly.

Guh.

The aftermath of the battle settled, revealing Thousand Transformations Ancestor covered in soot. When he heard Fang Yuan’s laughter, he immediately coughed out a mouthful of blood.

# Chapter 1874 - Overturning Heaven and Earth

## 1874 Overturning Heaven and Earth

myriad year flying warship was like an arrow let loose as it flew to the sky. right as fang yuan was about to charge out of the encirclement, wan zi hong charmingly giggled: “scoundrel fang yuan, you cannot leave.”

at the next moment, the sky above fang yuan suddenly transformed into boundless land, myriad year flying warship had been flying to the sky, but in an instant, it started charging towards the ground.

fang yuan quickly stopped myriad year flying warship.

myriad year flying warship’s speed was too fast, but the phantom river of time below the warship played a crucial role in stopping it.

just before crashing into the ground, fang yuan succeeded in stopping the immortal gu house.

fang yuan carefully checked the surroundings, he saw the sky had change into land, while the land changed into sky, tossing and turning around. the entire sky and earth seemed to have become a rubik’s cube, the sky and earth seemed to casually interchange their positions, it was bizarre and absurd.

wan zi hong floated in the sky while prince feng xian was standing on the ground.

fang yuan felt he had become a small insect in this rubik's cube, unable to find his way. he seemed to look at the sky but it would change into land at the next moment.

if this was ordinary ground, myriad year flying warship could have charged right through it.

but this ground was evidently extremely firm and was like an impenetrable wall.

“what kind of method is this?” fang yuan asked wan zi hong with narrowed eyes.

wan zi hong replied: “this killer move is called overturning heaven and earth, to be honest, heavenly court specially designed this for you. the reason we brought it out to deal with thousand transformations ancestor was to test it in real battle. hehe, who could have expected you to be so impatient and come rushing over.”

fang yuan possessed fixed immortal travel and also had a relevant killer move, he even had omni-directional travel, he could flee quickly at the critical juncture.

heavenly court wanted to capture fang yuan, so they needed to first restrain fang yuan's escape methods. previously, they had fixed space gu but it was unfortunately looted by fang yuan. yuan qiong du had collapsed from trying to refine it but did not succeed. heavenly court's foundation was extremely deep, creating this overturning heaven and earth that could restrain both fixed immortal travel and omni-directional travel.

“fang yuan, it will be difficult for you to escape this time.” prince feng xian, wrapped in flames, charged with surging momentum.

“surrender now, maybe we can still spare your life.” wei feng sneered, wind blades following him from all sides.

the other two rank eight gu immortals attacked thousand transformations ancestor.

“heavenly court mobilized four immortal gu houses to maintain the activation of the killer move overturning heaven and earth. their true battle strength lies in the four rank eight gu immortals.” fang yuan’s eyes shone sharply.

he did not want to have a prolonged battle, there were no benefits in tangling with these gu immortals.

based on just myriad year flying warship and the strength fang yuan revealed on the surface, it was difficult to kill them.

if he wanted to kill them, he would have to reveal his rank eight cultivation. but like the analysis he made long ago, once his cultivation was revealed, the secret of fang yuan’s sovereign immortal body would also be exposed.

more importantly, did heavenly court’s side only have these people? once they began fighting, even if heavenly court did not have others lying in ambush, they could quickly mobilize other rank eight gu immortals as reinforcements.

if this matter was not handled properly, even duke long, fairy zi wei, and qin ding ling might join the battle.

fang yuan skillfully controlled myriad year flying warship, dodging or blocking the two rank eight gu immortals’ attacks while looking for a path to break through.

bam bam bam...

myriad year flying warship charged in all directions, colliding into the ground repeatedly.

whenever the immortal gu house’s charge was impeded, wei feng and prince feng xian grabbed the chance to bombard it violently.

heavenly court’s forces had clearly gone through a large amount of preparation, these two rank eight gu immortals coordinated remarkably; wind fueled the fire, while the fire increased the wind’s power.

myriad year flying warship was under increasingly greater pressure, but fortunately, there were still many of fang yuan's subordinates inside. these people were sweating hard as they hurried in repairing and replacing the gu worms in the warship.

through many failures and his wisdom path attainment, fang yuan made out many details: "this killer move, overturning heaven and earth, is absolutely exquisite. it cut this patch of sky and land to countless cubes and could constantly change the position of these cubes. it is only a killer move and not a battlefield killer move, so its activation is extremely fast. its effect is to transform the sky and land of an area while also forming a battlefield that traps the enemy."

battlefield killer moves needed time to activate. with fang yuan's vigilance and craftiness, this time was enough for him to make a getaway.

so heavenly court formed this overturning heaven and earth killer move, its activation was extremely fast, fang yuan was not able to escape in time even with myriad year flying warship's speed. heavenly court had put painstaking efforts in this.

ever since fang yuan had reborn, he defeated heavenly court time and time again. but heavenly court could never be underestimated, when they reacted, they had already prepared a killer move that turned fang yuan's most proficient movement methods into mere decorations.

"this overturning heaven and earth has flaws when compared to battlefield killer moves. as long as i deduce its essence, i can break or interfere with its operation and escape easily. now... is not the time yet." fang yuan pondered inwardly. he suddenly changed the direction of the ship and flew towards thousand transformations ancestor.

heavenly court had not expected fang yuan to have a change in plan so suddenly and were caught unprepared for an instance, letting fang yuan draw close to thousand transformations ancestor.

thousand transformations ancestor was protecting the formation behind him, letting the two heavenly court rank eights attack him wildly, but his defense

was still firm and stable.

overturning heaven and earth cut the whole battlefield, but they could not cut the area thousand transformations ancestor was in and it became the most spacious piece of land in the battlefield.

seeing fang yuan return, thousand transformations ancestor sneered: “fang yuan, why are you coming back?”

fang yuan smiled: “ancestor, the formation behind you has been restricted as well, right? currently, we both cannot escape, how about we join hands and collaborate? block heavenly court’s attacks for me and stall for time, i will concentrate on deducing and modifying the formation, it won’t be a difficult thing to escape then.”

thousand transformations ancestor spat out: “as if i can trust you!”

fang yuan was surprised, thousand transformations ancestor was not in a hurry and looked like he still had a trump card.

an ordinary rank eight gu immortal would find this situation extremely troubling. but thousand transformations ancestor possessed one reckless savage true inheritance, be it fang yuan or heavenly court, neither could guess what trump card he was hiding.

“you two, none of you shall escape!”

“kill!”

heavenly court’s four immortals charged over together.

fang yuan and thousand transformations ancestor had no way to retreat, they could only deal with whatever attacks were thrown at them.

both sides used killer moves repeatedly, the air burst, wind howled, flames burned, sword lights shone.

thousand transformations ancestor felt an explosive increase in pressure the more they battled, he scolded: “fang yuan, you are still playing tricks! if

you keep acting like this, i will fight you as well!”

fang yuan controlled myriad year flying warship and used the myriad li adaptation formation to block or evade heavenly court’s attacks like a slippery eel.

it was inconvenient to get close to thousand transformations ancestor, but the myriad li adaptation formation had a large size and could not be moved once constructed, becoming an extremely good shield.

fang yuan used this shield to block most of the heavenly court’s attacks. the gu immortals inside myriad year flying warship got time to recover and restore myriad year flying warship back to normal.

“ancestor, please continue to persevere, you need to hold on for a while longer. my deductions have already gotten some results, i can deal with this current predicament in just a short while.” fang yuan shouted.

thousand transformations ancestor was not a fool, why would he be willing to act as a shield?

he was deeply aware of fang yuan’s nature, if fang yuan deciphered this killer move, he would definitely escape alone and leave him as a target to attract the attacks of heavenly court’s gu immortals.

so, if fang yuan could truly break this killer move, it would instead be disadvantageous to thousand transformations ancestor!

boom!

thousand transformations ancestor really went to attack myriad year flying warship.

“ancestor, don’t be like this, you need to look at the big picture.” fang yuan called out.

thousand transformations ancestor rebuked: “you are talking about the big picture with me now? without your disturbance, how could there be this current predicament?! didn’t i tell you before that there was heavenly

court's ambush! didn't you yell that heavenly court was nothing? if one came, you would kill one, if two came, you would kill two, show it to me now!"

fang yuan said earnestly: "i didn't lie, but heavenly court sent four gu immortals and four immortal gu houses, i have no way to deal with this. ancestor, you really need to consider the big picture, if you attack me, how will you protect those women who love you?"

boom!

prince feng xian's fire meteor struck and shook the myriad li adaptation formation fiercely, the female immortals inside the formation cried out in fright.

persistent defense would only result in eventual loss, no matter how thousand transformations ancestor transformed, he was only one person and he was dealing with four of heavenly court's rank eights!

thousand transformations ancestor shouted furiously: "heavenly court, you are going too far! if there is an opportunity in the future, i will definitely pay you back one hundred fold!"

"first, you need to survive today." wei feng smiled coldly, as he threw an enormous wind blade towards the myriad li adaptation formation.

"your heavenly court doesn't deserve the reputation of being the righteous path leader!" thousand transformations ancestor shouted furiously.

he needed to defend the formation, so he was in an extremely passive state.

heavenly court's four rank eights specially targeted this weakness, they had indeed shown no 'righteous path demeanor'.

"look, what did i say? thousand transformations ancestor, you really need to consider the big picture." and right at this time, fang yuan made flippant remarks.



thousand transformations ancestor almost coughed blood from anger, shouting hoarsely: “neither of you will die an easy death!”

the battle continued, thousand transformations ancestor starting to feel a sense of helplessness, he was fighting heavenly court’s four immortals almost by himself while also paying attention to that insidious scoundrel fang yuan.

the myriad li adaptation formation was being attacked continuously and was unable to hold on for long.

finally, under wan zi hong’s killer move, a corner of the formation collapsed and revealed the space inside.

“a chance!” wei feng was coincidentally above this gap and saw the female immortals inside the formation.

these female immortals were in a very bad state, they all suffered backlash when the formation collapsed. most of them were already unconscious and only night temptress was barely able to keep conscious and hold on.

“we can use these female immortals to threaten thousand transformations ancestor!” wei feng activated a killer move, turning into a green wind and entering the formation.

“husband, save us!” night temptress’s aura was extremely weak, her face paled as she saw wei feng and shouted in panic.

“stop!” thousand transformations ancestor shouted from outside the formation.

“too late.” wei feng sneered and grabbed night temptress.

boom!!!

a huge sound rang as a large part of wei feng’s body flew out of the formation like a shooting star, leaving behind a trail of red blood.

his head was being held by night temptress, his expression before death was filled with unimaginable horror!

night temptress was letting out rank eight aura and her appearance slowly changed into thousand transformations ancestor.

heavenly court lost a rank eight all of a sudden, the remaining three were shaken: “why are there two thousand transformations ancestors?!”

# Chapter 1875 - Ignoring the Big Picture

## 1875 Ignoring the Big Picture

the change had occurred too suddenly, catching almost all the people off guard. night temptress actually transformed into thousand transformations ancestor and immediately killed a rank eight gu immortal of heavenly court, wei feng!

this thousand transformations ancestor opened his immortal aperture and waved his left hand, sending all the fainted female immortals inside the formation into his aperture.

his right hand that was still grabbing wei feng's head exerted strength and crushed it into pieces!

red and white brain matter splattered like a crushed watermelon.

“this is what will become of all of you!” thousand transformations ancestor said through clenched teeth and a vicious expression. his might shook the battlefield instantly.

he was a person who could silently endure. it was because of this nature that he did not make a move personally after fairy cui bo died, instead sending dancer hong yun to probe the situation.

he had arranged this trap meticulously, waiting for someone to bite. the trap had come into effect and heavenly court's wei feng paid with his life as the

price, contributing to thousand transformations ancestor's reputation.

“unfortunately, fang yuan did not take the bait.” thousand transformations ancestor glanced at fang yuan with some regret.

this brat was too crafty, he stayed inside myriad year flying warship the whole time, not giving thousand transformations ancestor any opportunity.

heavenly court's three immortals were shaken and infuriated!

the grand wei feng had actually perished right before their eyes.

after the shock and anger, a chill spread in their hearts.

let alone wei feng, even if it were them, they might not have a good ending in that situation.

thousand transformations ancestor had prepared for a long while without making a move, but when he moved, wei feng did not even have the chance to escape.

the chill passed away and heavenly court gu immortals were filled with doubts: “what is actually going on? how could there be a second thousand transformations ancestor? even if he inherited reckless savage's true inheritance, isn't it too strange for a second rank eight to appear out of thin air?”

fang yuan controlled myriad year flying warship and quietly moved away from thousand transformations ancestor, similarly having a perplexed look: “ancestor, what is going on?”

the night temptress who turned into thousand transformations ancestor sneered: “aren't you someone who has been reborn, even you don't know it?”

“ancestor, you think too highly of me.” fang yuan laughed: “if i could know all the secrets of the world, i would have already become a venerable, why would i be trapped here?”

after denying it, he praised: “ancestor, your methods are indeed beyond ordinary, worthy of the inheritor of reckless savage’s true inheritance. you killed a rank eight of heavenly court in one move, you were much more efficient than me. this junior is full of admiration.”

he instigated hatred on both sides, but had no doubts in his heart.

“the previous thousand transformations ancestor should be formed by myriad statue palace. the real night temptress should be inside the immortal gu house and assisting in controlling it. and the real thousand transformations ancestor disguised as night temptress and stayed with the concubines. on one hand, it was to protect them, on the other hand, it was to use them as bait to deceive others into biting it.”

in fang yuan’s first life of five hundred years, during the five regions chaotic war, myriad statue palace had shown its might, thus fang yuan already knew clearly about the secrets of this immortal gu house.

different from other immortal gu houses, myriad statue palace was rather special — it could transform into all things. this palace could transform into the appearance of every statue created inside it, even copying their innate abilities and methods.

evidently, there was a statue of thousand transformations ancestor inside the palace.

even if fang yuan knew of this, he pretended to be unaware. you don’t know that i know this, when you think i don’t know about your secrets, my knowledge will be my advantage.

this advantage seemed small, but fights between experts were decided by such minor details.

how was an advantage created? it was by adding accumulations like this, bits by bits.

fang yuan fought heavenly court and progressed until now, this was a far better result than the previous life at the same time period. after his rebirth,

his step by step progress, changing the past, winning small victories, didn't all these accumulate to become his advantage?

it was impossible for anyone to succeed without accumulations.

“who among you is the real thousand transformations ancestor!” xing ye wang shouted.

“alright, i will let you know that i am the real thousand transformations ancestor, and he is my twin brother, myriad transformations ancestor.” the real thousand transformations ancestor lied casually.

the myriad statue palace turned myriad transformations ancestor nodded lightly: “heavenly court, you didn't expect it, did you? you guys wanted to ambush my brother but did not expect to confront two rank eights! i have always cultivated in seclusion and wanted to keep my identity hidden my whole life, but regretfully, this secret has been exposed now. but it was worth it to take a rank eight gu immortal's life.”

heavenly court's three immortals glanced at each other, keeping silent. whether thousand transformations ancestor was telling the truth or not, regardless of what the truth was, the power structure of both sides had a huge change now.

previously, fang yuan and thousand transformations ancestor were fighting four rank eights of heavenly court.

now, wei feng was dead, but a myriad transformations ancestor was added. one side lost while the other side gained, both sides were now three against three, and they all had rank eight battle strength.

wan zi hong suddenly laughed: “if i were one of you two, i would have arranged a companion to stay behind in myriad statue desert. like that, the ones inside and outside can respond and help each other. but now, both of you are trapped, myriad statue desert is left unguarded and is free for my heavenly court's gu immortals to enter. ah, right, i wonder if you have brought myriad statue palace with you? it would really be unfortunate if you left it at myriad statue desert.”

wan zi hong's words were a threat as well as a probe.

however, fang yuan knew the secret: myriad transformations ancestor was myriad statue palace that was being controlled by thousand transformations ancestor, how could the two separate?

even if heavenly court had sent gu immortals to go to thousand transformations ancestor's territory, myriad statue desert, that place definitely had no valuable things.

but thousand transformations ancestor's expression changed slightly, shouting with anger and ridicule: "your heavenly court calls itself the leader of humanity and the righteous path, but this is your style of action?"

even fang yuan praised him inwardly for such acting skills.

thousand transformations ancestor would not be able to conceal the truth for long, although fairy zi wei was not present at the scene, she would be able to deduce the truth soon.

however, just like fang yuan hiding the truth that he knew, thousand transformations ancestor was also trying to fight for every little advantage he had.

although he killed wei feng, he was still in a weak position.

heavenly court was maintaining the killer move overturning heaven and earth, they held the initiative firmly. their remaining strength was still higher than thousand transformations ancestor and fang yuan together.

wan zi hong sneered: "so be it, i will be the main attacker this time, you two support me with all your strength."

she instructed xing ye wang and prince feng xian.

the two nodded without objection.

based on seniority, wan zi hong was the highest, based on strength, this female immortal was also the strongest.

immortal killer move — blood petals.

wan zi hong went on the offensive, her aura rising instantly.

she did not look like she had made any movements, but blood started spouting out of thousand transformations and myriad transformations.

blood spewed out of their bodies like floating petals and scattered randomly.

although myriad transformations ancestor was myriad statue palace, it had human form right now and thus received the injury of this move.

thousand transformations ancestor quickly changed form and flew out of the myriad li adaptation formation, not to retreat but to counterattack.

myriad transformations ancestor did not follow and stayed to guard the myriad li adaptation formation.

wan zi hong retreated slowly without any change in expression.

prince feng xian and xing ye wang flew out and held back thousand transformations ancestor.

thousand transformations ancestor was unable to close the distance between him and wan zi hong, he transformed again and attacked wan zi hong with long range attacks.

wan zi hong sneered as she used another move — helpless withering.

the petals around her whirled down. thousand transformations ancestor's attacks were all ruined by these falling flowers.

“thousand transformations ancestor, take this move and die!” wan zi hong shouted and pointed her finger.

immortal killer move — yellow flowers thinning life!



thousand transformations ancestor, who was fighting with xing ye wang and prince feng xian, shivered. his expression changed intensely as his body thinned and his lifespan shrank rapidly.

this yellow flowers thinning life was terrifying, it was wan zi hong's trump card, and although it was a wood path killer move, it could affect lifespan.

thousand transformations ancestor was struck by this move, he tried many transformations but was unable to break it and could only retreat.

xing ye wang and prince feng xian chased after him, thousand transformations ancestor had no choice but to control myriad statue palace to take them on.

myriad transformations ancestor came over to help out.

wan zi hong sneered as she used yellow flowers thinning life on myriad transformations ancestor.

myriad transformations ancestor's body, similarly, thinned rapidly, his speed and strength both fell. but he was essentially an immortal gu house and had no lifespan. thus, though he looked miserable, it was not a big issue.

thousand transformations ancestor was truly in trouble.

he was unable to break this killer move, and after repeated attempts, he found some transformations that could delay the effect of the killer move.

but that way, he could not transform casually and his battle strength was greatly restrained.

wan zi hong's offensive methods were extremely terrifying, it was no wonder she had been recruited by heavenly court back then even though she was a demonic immortal.

in the previous life, wan zi hong lacked immortal gu and could only take the position of a healing gu immortal. this was not her specialty, but even so, she had healed many heavenly court gu immortals and created much trouble for longevity heaven.

however, after using yellow flowers thinning life twice in succession, wan zi hong's face became extremely pale. for some time, she did not continue her attack and only panted heavily. clearly, these two moves put an extreme strain on her, and the risks were also high. if wei feng had not died, wan zi hong would not have used such a risky battle tactic.

thousand transformations ancestor was suppressed by wan zi hong and was anxious, shouting: "fang yuan, if you don't move now, it will be too late. if i fall, you also won't be able to escape!"

boom boom boom!

fang yuan made a move.

but he did not reinforce thousand transformations ancestor, instead attacking the myriad li adaptation formation!

without any gu immortals controlling it, this formation became a still target and was already torn apart by fang yuan in a few short moments.

thousand transformations ancestor's face reddened with anger and his eyes seemed to spout fire: "fang yuan, you bastard!"

he shouted with utmost fury.

previously, fang yuan had used him as a shield, so be it. later, he had cowered at the side like this battle was none of his business, forget that too.

but what in the world was he doing now?

argh!

he was not attacking heavenly court but attacking his formation?

this was too much!!

was he mad?! did he not know that the enemy was strong while they were weak, why was he not letting the past be bygones and collaborating to fight the enemy?

he was continuing the internal fighting even now, what was he thinking?

saying that he had a pig's brain was humiliating the pig instead!

was he still not seeing the big picture? not even a little?!

thousand transformations ancestor was exasperated, with such an 'ally', even heavenly court's three immortals felt sorry for him.

myriad year flying warship was like a sharp sword that pierced into the formation. fang yuan had quite a technique in disassembling formations, the myriad li adaptation formation was on the verge of collapsing but did not self-destruct.

fang yuan repeatedly looted the immortal gu inside.

he then targeted the dream realm.

the dream realm turned into a pure dream reality seeker physique body. he then grabbed mutation immortal gu in one hand and dancer hong yun's corpse in the other before entering myriad year flying warship.

"fang yuan, you thief, die!" thousand transformations ancestor's eyes were bloodshot when he saw fang yuan stealing his rank eight mutation immortal gu. he left myriad statue palace to fight heavenly court's three immortals and went to kill fang yuan.

after fang yuan obtained what he wanted, he immediately controlled myriad year flying warship to leave.

but thousand transformations ancestor was truly furious, he gave chase without giving up and bombarded myriad year flying warship wildly.

fang yuan had really bullied him too much, this rank eight gu immortal stared at fang yuan with clenched teeth, wanting to eat fang yuan alive.

thousand transformations ancestor's speed was slower than myriad year flying warship. but heavenly court's side controlled overturning heaven and

earth killer move to obstruct fang yuan's path while helping thousand transformations ancestor.

heavenly court's three immortals also slowed down their attacks, happy to watch fang yuan and thousand transformations ancestor fight to death.

"he is blinded by profits! fang yuan has made thousand transformations ancestor his mortal enemy by stealing his rank eight immortal gu."

"but i feel like there is something wrong, this is not fang yuan's style. if i were him, i would never do this."

"wait a second, did he loot the rank eight immortal gu because he already thought of a way out? is this why he is not afraid? we need to be careful!"

heavenly court's three immortals conversed secretly, they were not complacent but instead became more vigilant.

# **Chapter 1876 - Western Desert's Situation**

## **1876 Western Desert's Situation**

Fang Yuan secretly transmitted: "Thousand Transformations Ancestor, stop chasing me. I can find a way out of this, I will bring you out and you give me mutation Immortal Gu as the reward, how about that?"

Thousand Transformations Ancestor laughed coldly, he replied: "Hmph, wishful thinking, if you open the way out and return the Immortal Gu, we will spare your life."

After his rage subsided, he thought of Fang Yuan's action of stealing the Gu, it meant that he had nothing to fear. His intense anger earlier was real, but afterwards, it was mostly just acting.

The myriad li adaptation formation was broken, if Thousand Transformations Ancestor wanted to leave this place, the best choice was to borrow Fang Yuan's strength.

Even if he could not, he definitely could not let Fang Yuan escape.

If Fang Yuan really escaped, he would be left to deal with Heavenly Court, in the end, he would be overexerted, even if he escapes, this devious demon would ambush and attack him.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor had good foresight, his vision was not limited to just this battle. Thus, he chased Fang Yuan relentlessly, following

him closely.

As for Myriad Statue Palace, even if he left it inside overturning heaven and earth, it would only be temporary.

As long as he escapes, he would be able to attack the four Immortal Gu Houses outside the killer move.

The four Immortal Gu Houses maintained overturning heaven and earth, that was the biggest weakness of this move, once they were dealt with or disrupted, Heavenly Court's battlefield that was painstakingly created would have severe loopholes, they would not be able to maintain it.

At once, the three parties of Fang Yuan, Thousand Transformations Ancestor and Heavenly Court chased and escaped, they had many methods that created grand commotions, heaven and earth shook.

Secretly, they were engaging in psychological warfare, they schemed and plotted against each other.

After a long deadlock, the three Heavenly Court immortals' expressions changed.

From outside the battlefield, a large number of people charged in, there were many Gu Immortals including rank eight, they had four Immortal Gu Houses! The palace at the lead was lofty like a mountain, liveliness mixed in its solemnity, its green bricks and golden tiles emitted dense fragrance of plants and trees. What else could it be but Divine Bean Palace?

The one controlling Divine Bean Palace was Fang clan's second supreme elder, Fang Di Chang!

Beside him, there was Fang Gong, Fang Hua Sheng and the rest.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Life Spring Lightning!

Fang Di Chang did not speak, he directly manipulated Divine Bean Palace and shot out countless lightning balls.

The jade green lightning balls landed on Heavenly Court's four Immortal Gu Houses, they shook intensely from the explosions, a large number of vines grew out and infiltrated the Gu Houses.

Heavenly Court immediately went into chaos.

“Ah, Divine Bean Palace!” Seeing that Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's creation was used against them, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals had bloodshot eyes.

“They belong to Western Desert's righteous path!”

“Why are they here?”

“Western Desert's righteous path did not come together, only Fang clan, Tian clan, Dong clan, Shi clan, and Tang clan are here.”

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals immediately realized who had arrived.

After Fang Di Chang refined Divine Bean Palace, Fang clan's difficulties were resolved, Fang clan's rise was already unstoppable.

As long as they showed Divine Bean Palace, Western Desert's righteous path would understand reality and change their stance.

Fang Di Chang used this chance to secretly contact Western Desert's righteous path.

To cooperate with his main body, he had to act quickly while keeping it a secret.

Eventually, he only gathered four super clans, Tian clan, Dong clan, Shi clan, and Tang clan.

This level of strength was already enough to change the situation!

Heavenly Court was caught by surprise, their arrangements were strong on the inside but weak on the outside. Divine Bean Palace displayed terrifying

might, Heavenly Court's four Immortal Gu Houses were shaking intensely, they were greatly disadvantaged.

The killer move overturning heaven and earth was also severely disrupted, it could not be sustained perfectly.

"To think it was so convenient!" Fang Yuan laughed loudly as he escaped outside using the exposed route.

"Where are you going!" Thousand Transformations Ancestor chased him relentlessly.

Fang Yuan turned around as he sneered: "You really think I'm afraid of you?"

Myriad Year Flying Warship suddenly turned around as daybreak swords shot out like a torrent.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor shouted in anger but he could not defend against the full power of this rank eight Immortal Gu House, he was forced back into overturning heaven and earth.

He was trapped again.

"I'm leaving!" Fang Yuan laughed heartily as Myriad Year Flying Warship tore through the air, vanishing rapidly.

Western Desert's righteous path went into a commotion, some wanted to stop Fang Yuan but Fang Di Chang stopped them in a justified tone: "Let Fang Yuan go, he is the enemy of Heavenly Court, it will be helpful to us in the future!"

Fang Di Chang led the allied forces to fight against Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court was in an awkward state now, there was Thousand Transformations Ancestor inside and Western Desert's righteous path outside.



Xing Ye Wang shouted in anger: “Western Desert’s immortals, you are the shame of the righteous path, you are publicly helping demonic path Gu Immortals.”

Fang Di Chang sneered and replied: “The great Heavenly Court is far more shameless than us. You were the ones who took in that Western Desert demoness Wan Zi Hong yourselves, but you want to accuse us instead?”

Xing Ye Wang was stupefied and speechless.

Prince Feng Xian had a cold tone: “Are you really going to stand at odds against us, Heavenly Court, today?”

Fang Di Chang replied: “Not long ago, our Fang clan got into a dangerous situation, your Heavenly Court were the ones who added fuel to the fire, you have great ambitions. Do you really think Western Desert has no intelligent or outstanding people? When the regional walls vanish and the five regions become one, will Western Desert let you treat us as meat on the chopping block?”

Prince Feng Xian snorted coldly, he stopped speaking.

“Hehehe, to think that Western Desert would have such an interesting junior.” Wan Zi Hong’s face regained a bit of color as she looked towards Divine Bean Palace with interest, she said: “We will retreat.”

There was no helping it, retreating was the best option.

Heavenly Court retreated with composure and order, they were not anxious.

“No need to chase them.” Fang Di Chang said.

This made all of the Gu Immortals let out sighs of relief. After all, they did not want to fight with Heavenly Court to the end, if their losses were huge, the other Western Desert super forces would benefit.

Only Thousand Transformations Ancestor and Western Desert’s righteous path were left.

The door of Divine Bean Palace opened as Fang Di Chang stepped outside, smiling: “Thousand Transformations Ancestor, we have a common enemy. Not long after, the five regions will merge, the Gu Immortal world will face an unprecedented great era. We are willing to join forces with you and resist the enemy, what do you think about that?”

“This person can see the big picture!” Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s eyes shined, he nodded as he remembered Fang Di Chang’s words in his heart: “I will look for you.”

“Good, with your help, Heavenly Court will definitely have an even tougher time.” Fang Di Chang clapped and he laughed loudly.

“Let’s go.” He ordered as Western Desert’s righteous path allied forces left together.

They came quickly and left just as quickly.

But the Western Desert Gu Immortals had extremely excited faces.

Because they defeated Heavenly Court!

This was Heavenly Court!

Only Fang Gong had a look of worry.

He looked at the confident Fang Di Chang beside him leading the army as he, the first supreme elder, became an accompaniment.

He felt immense pressure.

“But so what?”

“Fang Di Chang and I merely have internal conflict. Fang clan’s rise to become the leader of Western Desert’s righteous path and defeating Heavenly Court is an external matter. How can I focus on internal conflict and cause harm to Fang clan? Even if my authority is taken in the future, our Fang clan will still be the Fang clan of Fang clansmen!”

Fang Di Chang knew that even though they had no physical gains in this battle, Fang clan's rise was already undeniable! Fang Di Chang obtained the greatest political wealth in his entire life!

The clans who came were originally disunited, they were only joined together forcefully. But after this battle, the glory turned into cohesiveness as these five clans started to unite. As for Fang clan, it was the leader of this group that sought benefits!

"Fang clan's Fang Di Chang, he is truly a formidable person." Thousand Transformations Ancestor watched Western Desert's righteous path leave as he sighed to himself.

Myriad Statue Palace returned to him without making a sound.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor looked at the directions where Fang Yuan and Heavenly Court escaped, he gritted his teeth: "Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court, just you wait!"

# **Chapter 1877 - Li Xiao Bai's Promotion**

## **1877 Li Xiao Bai's Promotion**

Fang Yuan looked at the mutation Immortal Gu in his hands.

This Immortal Gu had a peculiar shape, it had the body of a longhorn beetle, it had eight spider-like legs, it had a rhinoceros beetle horn on its head, it had cicada wings and two mantis arms. Its tail shined brightly like a firefly, but the light was a rainbow color.

Mutation Immortal Gu was the possession of Thousand Transformations Ancestor, but this was not a problem for Fang Yuan.

After Fang Yuan left the battlefield, he refined this rank eight Immortal Gu during the time he traveled.

There was no need to mention Thousand Transformations Ancestor's anger after sensing this, Fang Yuan tried several times and found out the effects of mutation Immortal Gu.

This was an offensive Immortal Gu, it had great power, it could mutate a portion of the enemy's body, it dominated rank sevens and could give huge problems to immemorial desolate beasts.

It could also be used on oneself to add transformations to one's transformations. For example, if Fang Yuan turns into a tiger, after using mutation Immortal Gu, he could gain two wings on his tiger body, he might

get a third eye on his tiger head, he might even grow a scorpion stinger at the end of his tail.

Of course, these were positive mutations.

There could also be detrimental mutations.

For example, the tiger's stomach might grow an elephant leg that is much longer than the tiger's entire body. The tiger's back might gain a butthole, it would be an obvious weakness that the enemy would target.

Using mutation Immortal Gu alone would have mixed effects, it was risky.

Because this Immortal Gu was rank eight, it would trigger rank eight level mutations, there would be huge effects on the body.

Thus, to play safe, he had to use other supplementary Gu worms with mutation Immortal Gu to form killer moves.

Using these moves to amplify oneself was the least risky way.

Other than attacking enemies with mutation Immortal Gu, it could also be used to manage the immortal aperture.

Using it as the core to display a killer move or immortal formation, it would cause more mutations to the lifeforms within the immortal aperture. Ordinary beasts would gradually grow into mutated beasts.

Of course, these mutated beasts could also be crippled, but due to natural selection, they would slowly phase out of existence.

As for those powerful mutated beasts, they would survive and reproduce, creating a brand new species.

Normally, these mutated lifeforms would develop into the specialty resource of a certain immortal aperture, they would not exist elsewhere. If they were well received in the market, this would become the Gu Immortals' long term income source, they would gain a huge profit from this over time.

“Mutation Immortal Gu has such a comprehensive effect, it should be one of the core Immortal Gu of Reckless Savage’s true inheritance. No wonder Thousand Transformations Ancestor became so nervous after losing it.” Fang Yuan thought.

Other than mutation Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan also gained several other Immortal Gu.

Most were transformation path Immortal Gu, there was also a rank seven rule path Immortal Gu — Pass.

This was an insect that seemed like a flightless cockroach, it had the size of a fetus’ fist, it was flat and shining in a metallic color, giving off a feeling of toughness.

Back then, when Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan first set an immortal formation, it was the core of it.

Feng Jiu Ge was hidden nearby, he saw this Immortal Gu and wanted to obtain it.

This Immortal Gu had great value to him.

To think that in the end, this Immortal Gu would end up with Fang Yuan.

“Just these Immortal Gu and Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s methods show how powerful Reckless Savage’s true inheritance is. It is a pity, I can’t act rashly.”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor had only gone through one myriad tribulation, his dao marks could not compare to Fang Yuan. But he had many methods and was a person with great endurance and acting skills, Wei Feng was done in by him. This was unless Fang Yuan could lure him into a battlefield killer move.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor still had Myriad Statue Palace guarding him, this rank eight Immortal Gu House had shocking strength, it

could transform into Thousand Transformations Ancestor at crucial moments to deceive enemies, it was quite an obstacle.

It was not easy to scheme against him.

Looking at Heavenly Court, they planned for so long and used overturning heaven and earth killer move, they mobilized four rank eights but ended up with no gains.

And most crucially, Fang Yuan could not display his true battle strength.

A little impatience will spoil great plans, if the secret that he had become rank eight gets exposed, the detriment would be huge.

Thus, when dealing with the Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics, he was very careful.

Fang Yuan was looking at the big picture.

“The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention is approaching.”

“Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world has Longevity Heaven, Southern Border has the ambitious Wu Yong, Eastern Sea is led by my Qi Sea Ancestor identity, Western Desert has Fang clan and Tang clan that I can make use of.”

“I can already see the situation of four regions attacking Central Continent.”

This was something Fang Yuan had been planning since rebirth.

Finally, at this moment, he could see some results from his work.

Fang Yuan was no longer just a single rank eight Gu Immortal, he had outstanding subordinates, he had many talented people under him.

He was also not just a normal super force, he plotted against the world, using everyone as his pawns to get rid of his biggest obstacle, Heavenly Court.

Heaven's will made use of him, Spectral Soul made use of him, Red Lotus Demon Venerable made use of him, Chu Du made use of him, Lang Ya land spirit made use of him... but now, he was finally one of the chess players.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

"Did I see wrongly? Why is my student's name on the list of the ten great scholars?" Teacher Jiang looked at this information, he felt deeply shocked, he was stunned.

"Teacher, are you inside? Your student Li Xiao Bai would like to see you." At this moment, Li Xiao Bai's voice resounded from outside the door.

Teacher Jiang quickly opened the door: "Come in, tell me, what is going on?"

Li Xiao Bai went through deep consideration and made up his mind, he told everything that had happened that night to Teacher Jiang.

He was very troubled: "Teacher, you need to help me."

Teacher Jiang heard this as he looked at Li Xiao Bai blankly, his expression turned weird, he shook his head in a seemingly smiling expression: "Oh you, I have no idea what to say about this."

In Teacher Jiang's perspective, Li Xiao Bai had no hope of becoming one of the ten great scholars.

But when luck came approaching, it could not be stopped.

His great luck made even Teacher Jiang feel a bit of envy and jealousy in his heart.

"After the matter, Lady Su Qi Han tested me before informing me that I will become one of the ten great scholars. I received your guidance and did not dare to be arrogant, I quickly rejected her but Lady Su Qi Han made up her mind already, I was helpless against her, after all, the weak cannot contend with the strong." Li Xiao Bai expressed his sadness.



“Your encounter would make everyone jealous, you want to reject it?”  
Teacher Jiang smiled.

“Teacher, stop making fun of me. I came here to ask you to save my life. I do not have enough talent, becoming one of the ten great scholars would simply push me into the pit of doom.” Li Xiao Bai cupped his fists and said.

Teacher Jiang stopped smiling, he nodded: “Yes, you are neither arrogant nor prideful, you can see reality. Clearly, I did not waste my time teaching you. But you are overthinking this, before becoming one of the ten great scholars, if you try to compete for a spot, you will face great danger. But now that you are already one of them, the Imperial Court will defend you. Whoever tries to harm you will also be attacking the reputation of the Imperial Court, do you understand this?”

Li Xiao Bai shook his head: “But I still feel very worried. Compared to the other nine, I am less renowned, people might come after me. Also, after that matter happened, Lady Su Qi Han is also being extremely strict towards me.”

Teacher Jiang nodded again: “Even though I am here, I have heard of this junior Su Qi Han, she has immense talent and a prideful nature. Since she wants to take responsibility for you... I am sure she wants to marry you, I mean, she wants you to marry into Su clan.”

“She is one of the most famous female scholars, her husband has to match her talent. But she will not act blindly, she wants to test you first, after seeing that you have some talent, she nominated you. In the future, she will pave the way for you and help you to advance even further.”

Saying so, Teacher Jiang looked at Li Xiao Bai with a complex expression.

He was also one of the ten great scholars in the past, he was proud of his talent and looked down on everyone. But reality was cruel, there was only one road of advancement, countless people wanted to fight for it.

He could not compete against them, after a long time, even though his reputation spread widely, he was only famous outside of the Imperial Court.

To think that his student who had inferior talent, background, and network would succeed due to immensely good luck!

For an absurd reason, he became Su Qi Han's man and was greatly supported by her!

Forget about Su Qi Han herself, but she was backed by Su clan, her father was the Court's Chancellor Su, Li Xiao Bai gained a huge background all of a sudden.

"To speak the truth, I was quite happy initially, but recently, I felt something amiss, I am getting more fearful. Lady Su Qi Han has so many admirers, this matter... cannot be known to anyone else, all of these young talented geniuses will hate me for becoming Lady Su's lover. Especially after the selection of the ten great scholars, I will need to enter the Court and meet the Emperor, along the way to the Imperial City, what should I do? I am helpless now, I need your help, teacher." Li Xiao Bai sighed deeply.

Teacher Jiang was a little unhappy, he grunted lightly: "Xiao Bai, don't look down on yourself, you have enough talent, do you think my teaching was a waste? As my student, when others target you, they need to consider my reputation as well. How about this... I will write a few recommendation letters for you, go visit them and they will provide you some help along the way."

Saying so, he paused a bit as Teacher Jiang made up his mind: "You can stay here for a few days, I will impart some of my methods to you."

Li Xiao Bai was overjoyed, he quickly bowed deeply: "This student thanks teacher!"

Su Qi Han wanted him to keep this a secret but Li Xiao Bai did not really care about that.

After the time was right, he immediately told the secret to Teacher Jiang, he seemed to be asking for help but he was actually displaying his own value.

Teacher Jiang was excluded from the Imperial Court, he could not enter the core, seeing that his student had a high chance of getting in, if his student becomes famous in the future, would he forget this valuable teacher?

Impossible!

Teacher Jiang was extremely familiar with Li Xiao Bai's nature, he was not an ungrateful person.

Even if he wants to disregard him in the future, he would be subject to public opinion, he would not dare to ignore this benefactor and teacher. The higher Li Xiao Bai's status, the more he would treasure his reputation, and the more he would repay this teacher.

Thinking of this, Teacher Jiang decided to do his best and use all his resources to help this student gain success and status.

His student's success would also be his own success!

# **Chapter 1878 - World Savior Little Du**

## Chapter 1878 World Savior Little Du

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, Sacred Eagle City.

In terms of size, Sacred Eagle City was much larger than Mountain Cliff City. Mountain Cliff City was only a sub-city but Sacred Eagle City was one of the main cities.

In the previous life, when Fang Yuan attacked Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, he turned into the bull demon and first landed in this city.

In this life, Sacred Eagle City was currently in a terrible situation.

The entire city turned into a swamp kingdom, yellow soil crocodiles moved around in the swamp, hunting the people in the city.

Eagle Warrior defended this place. he was strong but he was currently heavily injured.

An immemorial desolate eagle had injured him, it was still flying in the sky, if any warrior appeared, it would dive down and attack.

“How could this happen!” Eagle Warrior was bathed in blood, he lay in the mud as he watched his people get slaughtered, he was furious and shocked.

Nobody could imagine that such a large group of fierce beasts would attack Sacred Eagle City all of the sudden.

It was still peaceful earlier, this city was serene and bustling, but in a moment, it turned into a bloody slaughterhouse.

“No, I cannot watch this happen, I need to stop everything!” Eagle Warrior struggled to get up, he wanted to stand but his injuries were too severe, he fell down once more.

As he was about to fall to the ground, a young and muscular arm grabbed onto Eagle Warrior.

“Uncle Eagle, you cannot fight anymore, if you continue, you will die.” A youthful voice said.

Eagle Warrior turned to look at the youngster who supported him, he smiled bitterly: “Little Du, thanks for saving my life. But I am the Sacred Eagle City Lord, I cannot watch as the beast calamity continues to cause destruction, I cannot let my people become the food of these beasts.”

“Uncle Eagle, let me do it!” Little Du had shining eyes as he spoke with determination.

“You?” Eagle Warrior looked at the injury on Little Du’s chest, he shook his head: “Little Du, you are not a member of Sacred Eagle City, you came here because I invited you to come and tour the city to repay the gratitude of saving my life. You already got injured to save me, you are not these beasts’ match, quickly leave! Go now!”

“No, I am not leaving, I want to fight with you, uncle. Let’s defeat these evil beasts.” Little Du shook his head.

Eagle Warrior was moved, he patted Little Du’s shoulder, he said with joy: “Mountain Cliff City Lord had really taken in a good disciple. Why can’t I find a disciple like you? Little Du, you are still too young, you have a brighter future than me, you cannot die here. I want you to promise me something, after you leave here, wait for the Guild’s reinforcements to arrive, then come and retrieve my corpse. Remember, I want to be buried in the garden.”

“Uncle!” Little Du’s eyes turned red, tears could be seen in his eyes, he was choked with tears and could not speak.

“Quickly leave!!” Eagle Warrior suddenly exerted his strength and pulled Little Du’s hand away, he flew into the sky.

He turned into a heavily injured silver eagle again as he charged towards the immemorial desolate eagle in the sky.

“The Gu Immortals here are really different from the ones outside, they are willing to sacrifice their lives for mortals.” Little Du sighed in his heart, feeling moved.

“But it is useless, this immemorial desolate eagle was nurtured by my main body purposely to deal with you.”

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was not Profound Literature grotto-heaven, there was little restriction here. After Little Du received Eagle Warrior’s invitation, he informed the main body and set up this trap.

This was a great opportunity.

Because Beast Calamity’s true inheritance was split into several portions kept in the main cities of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Fang Yuan’s clone had no chance to get close to those true inheritances with a proper reason.

He wanted to create a chance, but Eagle Warrior personally handed this opportunity over to him.

If Eagle Warrior who was bathed in blood learned that the reason why Sacred Eagle City faced such a calamity was due to himself, who knew how he would feel.

Eagle Warrior was not the immemorial desolate eagle’s match, he quickly fell into a disadvantage.

The immemorial desolate eagle attacked again, about to peck Eagle Warrior to death, when Little Du turned into the arrowtail eagle once again and saved him at the moment of life and death.

“Little Du, why haven’t you left?!” Eagle Warrior was shocked and extremely anxious.

“Uncle, how can I watch you die here? How can I let everyone get into such great danger? Even if I have to sacrifice my life, even if my blood bleeds dry, I will fight till the end!” Little Du said with firm determination.

“Little Du...”Eagle Warrior was speechless, he was extremely weak now, he turned back into human form as Little Du’s claws grabbed onto him.

Little Du fought against the immemorial desolate eagle but he was not its match.

But the immemorial desolate eagle was the main body’s pawn to begin with, Little Du often got into dangerous situations where his life was at stake, he constantly got injured but managed to retreat each time.

Eagle Warrior watched with a palpitating heart, he fought without any fear himself, but when he watched Little Du fight, he became very concerned, he could not help but shout warnings due to his intense nervousness.

When he saw that Little Du was bleeding and gaining more wounds, he felt deep heartache.

Little Du had saved him earlier in the Twelve Zodiac battle formation, he was a benefactor. Now, he had saved Eagle Warrior twice, he was even fighting to the death for Sacred Eagle City. This moved Eagle Warrior deeply, he acknowledged Little Du’s nature and disposition, he felt deep admiration towards the young lad.

Fang Yuan was ruthless to others, but was even more ruthless to himself.

As his clone, Little Du had the same style and personality.

These were genuine wounds and injuries, Eagle Warrior was completely moved by him.

Little Du had just become a Gu Immortal, he was a new Combat Beast Warrior, the youngest one in the Combat Beast Guild. With this level of strength, he was definitely not the immemorial desolate eagle’s match.



After a while of fighting, he was smacked by the immemorial desolate eagle and fell into the City Lord Manor.

This was naturally his plan, Little Du fell heavily and crashed through the floor, entering the underground altar.

Eagle Warrior had already fainted earlier, when he woke up, he saw that Little Du was beside him.

“Uncle, you are awake!” Little Du was overjoyed.

Eagle Warrior was also overjoyed that Little Du was still alive, but he quickly frowned as he asked: “How long was I unconscious for?”

“Not very long, the guild’s reinforcements did not come, after the eagle attacked us, it remained flying in the sky instead of pursuing us.” Little Du answered.

“Sigh!” Eagle Warrior sighed deeply: “It seems that we cannot defeat this eagle in a frontal battle.”

Little Du analyzed: “Thankfully, this eagle is not smart, if we do not transform, it will not feel any threat, so it will not attack us.”

“We cannot transform into our immortal beast form now, we need to use other transformations to save the city’s people.” Eagle Warrior was very worried.

If he could not become an immortal beast, he would not be able to control the situation.

He could only fight against those yellow soil crocodiles and save all of the citizens one by one, the efficiency was too low.

There was no choice, they had to do that.

But when they were about to leave, they found that a large number of yellow soil crocodiles had formed into a group, they had sealed all the entrances.

There were two desolate beast yellow soil crocodiles too.

Eagle Warrior and Little Du could not turn into immortal beasts, they could not fight the two desolate beasts, they had to retreat.

Eagle Warrior sat on the ground, he had an ashen expression: “It seems that we can only wait for reinforcements. I hope they can arrive soon.”

“They won’t.” Little Du thought to himself: “According to my plans, the reinforcements will be obstructed, I still have some time to execute my plans.”

But on the outside, Little Du frowned as he slammed his fist on the ground: “Damn it! Are we just going to wait here until reinforcements come? Where are we? Why is there an altar here?”

Eagle Warrior answered: “We are below the City Lord Manor now. As for this altar...”

Before he finished, Little Du interjected.

Little Du’s brows were raised: “To think that there is so much space underneath the City Lord Manor. I’ve got it, we can move underground and get past the yellow soil crocodiles to escape.”

Eagle Warrior shook his head: “It is useless. This underground area only covers the City Lord Manor, we cannot go to the outer city. Those yellow soil crocodiles are also skilled at digging underground, they often live in swamps after all.”

“Damn it.” Little Du gritted his teeth, suddenly, he gasped: “Wait no, uncle, isn’t it strange? Why are those yellow soil crocodiles just surrounding this place but not attacking us? The eagle in the sky might be prideful and not feel like attacking us, but why are those yellow soil crocodiles waiting outside, they seem to be avoiding something.”

Eagle Warrior forced a smile: “Little Du, your observation is right. But don’t be too hopeful, these yellow soil crocodiles can’t get near because of

this altar. It is extremely old, legends say that the first generation Combat Beast King arranged it here, a portion of his power is sealed inside.”

“First generation Combat Beast King? Why did he seal his own power?” Little Du asked curiously.

“It seems that he wants to give it to an inheritor. There are several more altars in the other main cities, whoever can collect all of these powers will obtain the strength of the first generation Combat Beast King!” Eagle Warrior said slowly.

Little Du blinked multiple times: “Then, why don’t we use this power to defeat the beasts outside?”

Eagle Warrior smiled bitterly: “It is useless! These are all rumors, there are no actual records about it. Countless people tried but nobody has succeeded. These are likely false rumors, but these altars are very powerful indeed, they have a mysterious power and cannot be destroyed, beasts also cannot get hear them.”

Saying so, Eagle Warrior saw that Little Du was excited and laughed: “If you want to try it, go ahead. But remember my words, don’t be too hopeful, don’t get disappointed if nothing happens.”

“Okay, uncle.” Little Du took large strides and quickly got to the altar.

He walked several rounds around the altar but nothing happened.

He climbed up but there was still no reaction.

This was a normal situation, Eagle Warrior watched at the side.

But at this moment, Little Du knelt down and started to pray loudly: “First generation Combat Beast King, I don’t know you and have never met you before! But I hope you can help us, beasts are outside eating the people, every breath of time, a life is lost. I beg you, first generation Combat Beast King, if you can hear me in heaven, please do something, do something!”

Little Du spoke louder and louder as he teared up towards the end.

“Little Du... you are truly a kind hearted and innocent boy!” Eagle Warrior’s eyes turned red too, he felt deeply moved.

Then, at the next moment!

White light burst out of the altar, enveloping Little Du’s body.

“Hmm?” Eagle Warrior stared with wide eyes, he opened his mouth and became lost for words: “What, what is going on?!”

Bam.

A soft sound could be heard as the white light fused into Little Du’s body, the firm and indestructible altar shattered into pieces at the next moment.

“Little... Little Du?!” Eagle Warrior stammered.

Little Du turned around with an expression of joy: “Uncle, you were right. I inherited the power of the first generation Combat Beast King!”

“A miracle! This is a miracle!!” Eagle Warrior reacted as he raised his head towards the sky, becoming extremely happy.

He laughed for a while before turning to look at Little Du, his gaze was filled with seriousness and excitement: “Little Du, you actually inherited the power of the first generation Combat Beast King! Do you know what that means?”

“What?” Little Du was dumbfounded.

“This means that you can inherit the rest of the inheritances. You are the future Combat Beast King! No, more accurately, you are the world’s savior!” Eagle Warrior became incredibly excited.

“That’s right, you are the world’s savior.”

“World Savior Little Du!”

# **Chapter 1879 - Situation**

## Chapter 1879 Situation

Eastern Sea.

Dragon Palace.

Fang Yuan's clone, Wu Shuai, sat on his dragon throne as he manipulated his army ants.

During this period of time, the ant army had already developed to a certain size.

At this moment, there were over a hundred million ants, they moved like a golden river and circled in the sky.

Wu Shuai took out a rank eight immortal material.

It was a bunch of bird feathers, these feathers had a stone texture but looked very lifelike, they were covered in a grey-white light.

If one sniffed them, they would be able to smell the stench of a corpse.

This was the immemorial desolate beast corpse emperor bird's feathers.

Wu Shuai blew lightly as the feathers flew into the sky, fusing into the golden river of army ants.

Soon, he started to hear noises.

Countless army ants landed on the corpse emperor bird feathers and devoured them.

Even though there were only ten feathers, they were rank eight immortal materials after all, just a tiny bit was enough to feed an army of ten

thousand ants, it could last very long.

A moment later, the corpse emperor bird feathers got completely consumed by the army ants.

These army ants were not just fed, they even created a new batch of army ants.

The new ants were corpse ants, they emitted death energy, they could eat the corpses of army ants to get stronger. The more corpses they ate, the stronger the corpse ants became. There was a limit to this growth of course, the strongest corpse ant could match a king ant but could not match a queen ant.

“With these corpse ants, the army ants will be more usable and durable in battle. Before this, the ants would die in vain, but with corpse ants, I can make use of their corpses. In this regard, I can save quite a bit of cost too.” Wu Shuai let out a breath of air.

The army ants were extremely profound, they contained the essence of enslavement path.

Feeding the army ants not only maintained their numbers, new breeds could even be created. When countless different army ants work together, they would produce many unique effects.

But the army ants could only alleviate the weakness of enslavement path, they could not eliminate it.

Enslavement path truly used up too many resources.

After growing the army ants to this scale that could fight rank eight Gu Immortals, Wu Shuai was starting to feel a heavy burden.

“My main body is refining Gu, the expenditure is huge, the army ants I am raising are also a bottomless hole.”

“Thankfully, I have the help of Gu tribe and the merfolk, otherwise, my army ants would not develop to this size.”

Right at this moment, Wu Shuai's expression changed.

A Gu Immortal had appeared outside Dragon Palace, visiting Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai opened the palace doors and went to invite the person in.

“Tang Qiong greets Lord Wu Shuai.” It was a yellow scaled mermaid, she was adorable and gentle, she smiled as dimples were seen on her face.

She was an elder in charge of the Merman Imperial Court, she represented a portion of their will.

Fang Yuan's clone Wu Shuai helped to convert a portion of Gu tribe and the mermen into new dragonmen, the relationship between the three groups had deepened a lot.

Tang Qiong was the representative of the Merman Imperial Court, she interacted with Wu Shuai deeply and always kept a polite attitude, she treated Wu Shuai as an actual senior.

Wu Shuai brought Tang Qiong into Dragon Palace.

“Even though this is not my first visit, I am still in awe regarding Dragon Palace's grand appearance.” Tang Qiong sighed to herself, she had a sincere expression.

Wu Shuai laughed: “Fairy Tang Qiong, what brings you here?”

Tang Qiong showed a serious expression: “Senior, Qi Sea Ancestor is holding a banquet in Eastern Sea, he has invited the entirety of Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world to attend it. My Imperial Court received the invitation as well, our grand elder wants to ask senior if you are going to the banquet along with us?”

“Oh, that matter.” Wu Shuai heard this and his eyes shined with bright light.

After Fang Yuan's main body snatched mutation Immortal Gu, he used the identity of Qi Sea Ancestor to interfere in Eastern Sea's politics.



This Eastern Sea banquet was one of Fang Yuan's plans, but in his plan, he did not invite Wu Shuai.

Wasn't it easy to invite his own clone?

But Fang Yuan wanted to conceal Wu Shuai for now, he did not want to expose him yet.

The Merman Imperial Court actually invited Wu Shuai to go with them, this action had deep meaning. It showed that the merfolk really wanted to get closer with the dragonmen.

"I have rank eight Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace while the Merman Imperial Court has no rank eight Immortal Gu House. Their force was established with the help of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable back then, after so many years, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable's influence has dwindled, his protection will eventually vanish."

"As a variant human, the dragonman race is a natural ally indeed."

"Even so, the merfolk are taking a huge risk, this current generation grand elder has a lot of resolution."

Wu Shuai thought about it, he asked an obvious question: "Then, did Qi Sea Ancestor invite Fang Yuan as well?"

Within the palace, Tang Qiong shook her head: "Qi Sea Ancestor has announced that he will not invite Fang Yuan. He said that this banquet is an Eastern Sea banquet, Fang Yuan is not an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, he will not be invited."

Wu Shuai nodded.

That had to be the case.

If Qi Sea Ancestor invited Fang Yuan, it would be an act against Heavenly Court. He was not afraid of them, but Fang Yuan had to consider the feelings of the other Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

He was not afraid of Heavenly Court, but Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals were afraid and wary of Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court's reputation was deeply ingrained in everyone, it was after all the number one force in the world, it had a history of three million years!

If he invited Fang Yuan, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals might have second thoughts and decide not to attend the banquet, that would go against Fang Yuan's intentions.

Qi Sea Ancestor had also just taken half a Primordial Origin true inheritance from Duke Long. If he immediately approached Fang Yuan after that, it would be disadvantageous towards the big picture.

Tang Qiong observed his expression but had no findings. Wu Shuai was ambitious and unfathomable, it was normal that he showed no signs on his face.

Tang Qiong had to encourage him: "Senior Wu Shuai, pardon my disrespectful words but in my tribe's opinion, although you have an agreement with Fang Yuan and are working together, you are you and Fang Yuan is Fang Yuan, we cannot treat the two as the same entity. Even though Fang Yuan is strong, he is a human with a special identity, he is ruthless and hard to read. Dragonmen will reign supreme, but to truly rise up, you need to rely on yourselves, becoming a force of your own and dominating your own area."

"Haha, you are right." Wu Shuai laughed: "I will remember your tribe's sincerity. But now is not the time for the dragonman race to reappear in this world."

"Qi Sea Ancestor invited a huge range of Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals, even though he has some agreement with Heavenly Court and is in a neutral position, Heavenly Court will not want such an influential person to exist in Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world."

"If I join the banquet, Heavenly Court will be even more wary, they might even take action."

“By then, we cannot confirm what stance Qi Sea Ancestor will take. Furthermore, I am not an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal in identity.”

Tang Qiong pondered about it: “According to my tribe’s deductions, Qi Sea Ancestor is strong but as a lone cultivator, he likely wants to stay neutral. He has made agreements with both Heavenly Court and Fang Yuan, senior, if you go, he will have a good opportunity to express his stance, he will definitely welcome you, even though his attitude might not be too enthusiastic nor cold.”

“Hmm... give me some time to consider it.” Wu Shuai pondered and said.

“Alright, senior, if you want to go, please contact me. I will take my leave.”

Watching Tang Qiong leave Dragon Palace, Wu Shuai fell into deep thought.

From this matter, he could see the attitude of the merfolk, it was very advantageous to him, he could make use of it.

To speak the truth, he did not want to burden the main body excessively. He would rather settle most things himself through his own effort.

The merfolk were a part of Eastern Sea, their attitude was also the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world’s attitude towards Qi Sea Ancestor and this huge banquet.

It was a good attitude.

It was very beneficial to Fang Yuan’s plans.

With just Qi Sea Ancestor’s identity, wanting to set up a banquet and uniting the whole of Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world was wishful thinking. That was basically impossible.

Longevity Heaven had dominated Northern Plains for so many years but they had not united their Gu Immortal world either.

Fang Yuan did not dream of this, what he wanted was to influence Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world! He wanted to make sure that when dealing with Heavenly Court in the future, Qi Sea Ancestor's decisions and actions would greatly affect the choices made by Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals.

Before Qi Sea Ancestor's banquet began, Western Desert's Fang Di Chang, who was also Fang Yuan's clone, had also started doing something like this.

"Everyone, goodbye."

"Friend Xiao, please take care."

Fang Di Chang sent off the final Western Desert Gu Immortal.

A Western Desert righteous path meeting had just ended.

Fang Di Chang cooperated with the main body, leading the allied forces of five clans in Western Desert's righteous path, 'defeating' Heavenly Court. Fang Di Chang used this outstanding result to its limit, he invited all of the Western Desert super forces to come for a meeting.

"These guys... hmph!" Fang Gong walked out and looked at Xiao clan's Gu Immortal leave as he showed an unhappy expression.

This gathering did not have a good result.

Many forces were cold towards Fang clan, some even suspected Fang clan's victory over Heavenly Court.

They were simply provoking Fang clan!

Fang Di Chang smiled bitterly: "First supreme elder, don't be too angry, the truth is, Heavenly Court managed to retreat safely, they lost one rank eight because of Thousand Transformations Ancestor as well. The 'defeat' of Heavenly Court was merely our publicization to raise our reputation."

"Our Fang clan rose to power too abruptly, we have not won yet. These clans are too envious of our good luck in obtaining Divine Bean Palace."

“Right now, we rode on this wave and held a meeting, in their eyes, they think that our Fang clan just wants to be the leader hastily. Thus, they did not send any elders with authority, they only sent some insignificant members.”

Other than the four clans who allied with them showing a sincere attitude, most of the other super clans did not give Fang clan face.

But this was something that could not be helped.

Firstly, Fang clan did not obtain an actual victory, their battle strength was not threatening enough.

Secondly, they did not have true authority, these clans were not interested in entertaining them.

“Heavenly Court must be sowing discord as well. There is no helping it, our influence can only grow slowly.” Fang Di Chang said.

“Hmph, during the five regions war, when Central Continent attacks, I want to see what these people will do.” Fang Gong snorted coldly.

Fang Di Chang squinted but he sighed in his mind.

How could these super forces not understand the big picture?

They knew about it clearly, but so what?

These forces restrained and restricted each other, they had countless years of grudges and conflict, their individual interests and benefits were at stake, without any life-and-death crisis, their usual mindsets would not allow them to work together.

# **Chapter 1880 - Heavenly Court's Discussion**

## **1880 Heavenly Court's Discussion**

Heavenly Court. In the silvery white sky, countless immortal palaces were erected.

Within the discussion hall, more than ten Gu Immortals had gathered.

Duke Long sat at the highest seat, followed by Fairy Zi Wei and Qin Ding Ling. After them were Bai Cang Shui, Cong Yan, Che Wei, Yuan Qiong Du, Zhou Xiong Xin, and the rest.

Other than that, there were the wills of Gu Liu Ru, Wan Zi Hong, Prince Feng Xian, Xing Ye Wang, Jun Shen Guang, and others. These people had missions to do, they were unable to participate in this Heavenly Court meeting personally.

Once in a while, Heavenly Court's members would gather and hold a meeting to discuss matters and bring up their own opinions, to come to some consensus.

During normal times, Heavenly Court would usually be led by wisdom path Gu Immortals in terms of management. Currently, Duke Long was the psychological pillar holding up the organization while Fairy Zi Wei had control over the administrative affairs. Before her was Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord.

“Yuan Qiong Du, how is the research on second aperture Gu going?” Duke Long asked.

Yuan Qiong Du answered: “With Lady Zi Wei’s help, I have already deduced some secrets, we can refine rank one to five second aperture Gu now.”

The truth was that Heavenly Court’s refinement path foundation was deeper than Lang Ya Sect.

There were three refinement path supreme grandmasters in history, Long Hair Ancestor was just one of them, the other two had practically their entire inheritances collected by Heavenly Court.

Yuan Qiong Du was the current person in charge of refinement path, he had incredible talent and aptitude, he was the one responsible for repairing fate Gu in the previous life.

Along with Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions, the combination of these three things made it not so hard for them to deduce the recipe of Fang Yuan’s second aperture mortal Gu.

After hearing this, many of the immortals had joyful expressions as they started to converse.

I’ve heard of this second aperture Gu, it is a good thing.”

“That’s right, having a second aperture will give Gu Masters a huge boost in battle strength.”

“If we can obtain the Immortal Gu recipe, it will also be extremely meaningful to Gu Immortals!”

“From this point, we need to thank Fang Yuan, hahaha.”

Fairy Zi Wei spoke in a calm tone as she interrupted: “Is Fang Yuan such a foolish person? He had already expected second aperture Gu to be deduced when he threw it out to Southern Border’s righteous path. A second aperture has deep meaning indeed, but if Gu Masters had a second aperture, they

would need double the time and effort to cultivate. They would need more resources as well.”

“So that’s it.” The Gu Immortals here were all rank eight elites, Fairy Zi Wei had just said this when they understood the reasoning.

“Fang Yuan is intentionally doing this.”

“He gave out second aperture Gu to extort Southern Border’s righteous path but also to make plans for the five regions chaotic war.”

“That’s right, when the regional walls vanish and the five regions fuse, Gu Immortals and Gu Masters will not change in numbers, but this second aperture Gu will spread rapidly. By then, their need for resources will double, what will everyone do? They will need to fight and start conflicts to gather resources.”

“This demon is truly vicious and devious, but we have no choice but to take his bait.”

They had to.

Heavenly Court had obtained second aperture Gu from Southern Border’s righteous path. Southern Border would research second aperture Gu themselves, the other three regions would not ignore it either.

Second aperture Gu was something that would cause a storm in the world if it was circulated.

Like the time Blood Sea Ancestor created blood path, even if the five regions’ righteous path outlawed blood path cultivation, there were still many blood path Gu Masters and Gu Immortals.

“We can’t deduce the recipe of second aperture Immortal Gu yet?” Duke Long, who had been silent, asked suddenly.

He spoke very little but he often got to the point quickly, this was no exception.



Yuan Qiong Du smiled bitterly and shook his head: “We are still some distance from deducing the Immortal Gu recipe. If I can have the help of a few refinement path experts of my level, I might be able to deduce it more quickly. But currently, I have limited energy and time, I cannot attend to too many matters at once.”

Yuan Qiong Du was having a tough time recently.

Earlier, when Fang Yuan annexed Lang Ya Sect, he had to modify the formation to repair fate Gu. That was because the formation referenced Refinement Cauldron, it had to be changed for safety purposes.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan captured Southern Border’s righteous path, Yuan Qiong Du was in charge of refining fixed space Gu before the rest.

After that, Fang Yuan defeated Heavenly Court in the River of Time, Heavenly Court’s time path Immortal Gu Houses shattered. Yuan Qiong Du had to refine Gu once again, to try to refine these time path Immortal Gu.

Recently, Qin Ding Ling woke up, she handed Fairy Zi Wei a stack of luck path Immortal Gu recipes, Yuan Qiong Du was in charge of refining them.

Refining Gu was a dangerous task to begin with, Fang Yuan had refined many of these Gu before him, Yuan Qiong Du was faced with many failures during this period.

These last days, he had suffered great injuries from refining Gu, if Heavenly Court did not have superb healing methods, he might have died already.

“Next, Yuan Qiong Du has to prepare for the restoration of fate, before we fully repair fate Gu, second aperture Immortal Gu’s recipe will not be obtainable.” Fairy Zi Wei declared, it was a slight pity.

Duke Long nodded but did not speak anymore.

Qin Ding Ling sighed: “Without the recipe of second aperture Immortal Gu, Southern Border’s righteous path will not be able to escape from Fang Yuan’s threat and extortion.”

“Hmph, these Southern Border immortals are truly the shame of the righteous path, they were extorted to this extent!” Within the hall, Xing Ye Wang grunted in displeasure.

“The truth is, Southern Border’s righteous path has done quite a few things. They started to build Beacon Towers, this is an Immortal Gu House that is worth guarding against.”

“Southern Border’s righteous path is trying to break free from Fang Yuan, only Ba clan and Xia clan desire second aperture Immortal Gu, they are controlled by him. Meanwhile, Wu clan, Chai clan, and others are resisting him fully. They want to cooperate with our Heavenly Court, we have already started to suppress Fang Yuan’s businesses in treasure yellow heaven.”

“I need to remind everyone that Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world has a powerful lurking force that we need to be on guard against, that is the Virtue Paradise. This is the true inheritance that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had set up personally, they have many Gu Immortals, the strongest among them being Lu Wei Yin, they also include mushroomman Gu Immortals.”

“Even though Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable did not enter Heavenly Court, there was a friendly relationship between us. But what about the attitude of this Virtue Paradise? We need to probe further.”

“I have already considered that.” Fairy Zi Wei spoke: “After some time, I will personally head to Virtue Paradise and borrow Immortal Gu.”

Heavenly Court needed this Immortal Gu indeed, it was also their test towards Virtue Paradise.

If Lu Wei Yin showed a friendly attitude, Heavenly Court would try to rope them in as allies.

After discussing Southern Border’s matters, Heavenly Court’s immortals went on to talk about Western Desert.

Because of Fang Yuan's schemes, Western Desert's situation changed a lot. After Fang clan gained control of Divine Bean Palace, they 'defeated' Heavenly Court, causing their plan in maintaining internal conflicts within Western Desert to suffer a loss.

"Fang clan does have the ability to rise to power. But this time, there was a crucial person who caused this situation, Fang clan's second supreme elder Fang Di Chang!"

"This person has huge ambitions, he is a formidable character. He has already allied with multiple Western Desert righteous path forces, if not for the fact that we succeeded in sowing discord among them, Fang clan's rise would have been unstoppable."

"Now that Chen Yi is dead, we do not have any proper Genesis Lotus inheritor, how will we retrieve Divine Bean Palace?"

"I suggest that we assassinate Fang Di Chang!"

"Too difficult, this person is very crafty and vigilant. After getting Divine Bean Palace, he has basically stationed himself inside permanently."

"Fang clan's first supreme elder is Fang Gong, what is his attitude towards Fang Di Chang?"

"Fang Gong and Fang Di Chang have a close relationship, they do not have conflict between them, we cannot do anything to them for now."

...

After Heavenly Court's immortals talked for a while, they decided to add reinforcements in Western Desert!

Even though Heavenly Court lost Wei Feng, their main forces were still intact, there were not much losses.

Back then, when Heavenly Court set up their forces there, it was because Fang Yuan had tried to escape using the natural tributary of the River of Time there, in order to stop him, they set up immortal formations at the

tributary. After that, they noticed Thousand Transformations Ancestor's weakness and thus sent more people there to deal with him.

Even though Heavenly Court's plan to deal with Thousand Transformations Ancestor and Fang Yuan failed, they were not going to give up despite the setback.

After discussing, they decided in unison that they would send a number of Gu Immortals and Immortal Gu Houses to the River of Time during the crucial moment, by using the tributary of the River of Time to reinforce them rapidly.

Their main target now was not Thousand Transformations Ancestor, it was Fang clan!

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was a lone immortal while Fang clan was a righteous path clan that was gradually gaining influence over Western Desert's righteous path. If they were allowed to develop, Western Desert's righteous path would be an increasing threat against Heavenly Court.

After Fang clan took away Divine Bean Palace, it meant that Fang clan and Heavenly Court could not come to peaceful terms anymore.

Thus, Heavenly Court started preparing to deal with Fang clan, it was a logical move.

After Western Desert was Eastern Sea.

“Eastern Sea's politics are also changing, Qi Sea Ancestor is holding a banquet and inviting Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals, what is he planning to do?”

“Not long ago, Qi Sea Ancestor came to an agreement with Duke Long, he stopped helping Fang Yuan. This person seems to be a neutral party but we cannot relax our guard against him.”

“We have already infiltrated this Eastern Sea banquet. If Qi Sea Ancestor makes any move, we will know quickly.”

Duke Long spoke again: “Qi Sea Ancestor has extraordinary strength, he is not beneath me. My personal opinion is to actively entice and sway this person to our side. This is so Heavenly Court faces less threat before we manage to repair fate Gu.”

Duke Long’s words made the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals feel heavy emotions.

Eastern Sea had Qi Sea Ancestor who could rival Duke Long in battle strength, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were somewhat unable to accept this fact.

After settling the matter of Eastern Sea, they moved onto Northern Plains.

Heavenly Court paid a lot of attention to any movement from Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven.

Among the four regions, Heavenly Court was most wary in regards to Northern Plains.

Northern Plains’ politics had been influenced by Heavenly Court, the cooperation of Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Heavenly Court was a huge success for them.

If Longevity Heaven wanted to unite Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, Old Ancestor Xue Hu would be the biggest obstacle.

After the matters of Northern Plains, Duke Long mentioned the River of Time.

“Now, we have five time path Immortal Gu Houses, yet we cannot find any trace of the Red Lotus stone islands. Can we do anything about it?”

However, Heavenly Court’s immortals did not have any good ideas, these stone lotus islands were made by Red Lotus Demon Venerable after all.

Qin Ding Ling shook her head too: “In the aspect of luck path, we already have the Dao Guardian Feng Jiu Ge guarding it. He has powerful luck, if even he fails, then there is nothing we can do.”

Duke Long was silent, he felt a little disappointed.

The repair of fate Gu was Heavenly Court's greatest plan.

In Duke Long's mind, Wu Yong, Longevity Heaven, Fang Yuan, and Dragon Palace were all below Red Lotus Demon Venerable's threat level.

But there was no other way, Heavenly Court had already done its best, the river suppression lotus sealing formation was their greatest achievement. It was a pity that they were still far from finding a Red Lotus stone island.

The discussion hall went silent.

But at this moment, Fairy Zi Wei's eyes suddenly shined, next, Duke Long and Qin Ding Ling also showed surprised expressions.

Eventually, all of the remaining Heavenly Court Gu Immortals became very excited.

"News came so suddenly!"

"A Red Lotus stone island appeared in the River of Time."

"Gu Liu Ru has already confirmed it, this Red Lotus stone island is the real thing without doubt."

"We have finally found one Red Lotus true inheritance!"

"As long as we can get one, we will be able to find our way to the rest of Red Lotus' true inheritances."

Duke Long nodded: "This is a good thing, we need to try to get this true inheritance as soon as possible now. Also... beware of Fang Yuan."

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals turned solemn.

"Indeed, this commotion cannot be kept from him for long."

"By then, he will definitely show up."

“Set up the river suppression lotus sealing formation quickly, we need more reinforcements, if Fang Yuan comes. we will take his life!”

# Chapter 1881 - Setting Up Formation

## 1881 Setting Up Formation

Eastern Sea.

To the east of the flourishing bumpy sea area, to the west of the barbecue islands, there was a unique and large sea area — Qi Sea!

There was no water in qi sea, instead, countless qi currents intertwined and entangled, forming swirls of millions of qi currents.

During the Remote Antiquity Era, Qi Sea had an incredibly high status in the hearts of all Gu Immortals in the world.

Back then, qi path flourished, it was the main Gu cultivation path, all other paths were non-mainstream.

All paths were inferior to the number one qi path.

Qi sea was incredibly big, it was a whole different world inside, countless qi currents moved within it, destroyed and created at every instance. Back then, qi sea was the number one qi path resource point in the five regions.

But time passed quickly, eras changed.

Qi path went on the decline, qi sea started to shrink, right now, qi sea was less than one-ten thousandth of its original size, the qi currents inside had



all turned into pure water qi. Only at the most central area, there were still some qi path immortal materials left.

Qi sea had once been the most popular place, it was now the most deserted area.

It contained mostly water qi.

But in the whole of Eastern Sea, which sea area would have any lack of water qi?

It was easy to collect water qi anywhere, why would Gu Immortals go to qi sea on purpose to collect it?

Even if they wanted to get other qi path immortal materials, entering and exploring qi sea carried huge risks. They were better off just buying these immortal materials from treasure yellow heaven.

“By holding this Eastern Sea banquet now, qi sea will become renowned in the five regions again.” Fang Yuan’s main body sat on a cloud as he looked down at the qi sea sea area.

Looking from above, the qi sea sea area had waves of light blue in color as countless qi currents moved in turbulence, it was a huge contrast to the surrounding sea water that was dark blue in color.

Initially, when Southern Border’s rank eight Gu Immortal Qi Xiang created the killer move unlimited qi sea, he had obtained inspiration from this qi sea to a certain degree.

Fang Yuan called himself Qi Sea Ancestor, he had not picked it randomly. He had already made ample considerations before deciding.

For example, which sea area should Qi Sea Ancestor originate from, where in Eastern Sea did he live in seclusion?

Fang Yuan chose qi sea for this.

This place was deserted, barely anyone came here, it was extremely compatible with Qi Sea Ancestor's cultivation of qi path as well.

If he told others, they would believe him as this was very logical.

At the center of qi sea, dragonman clone Wu Shuai transmitted: "The formation has been prepared."

This Eastern Sea banquet had significant meaning to Fang Yuan, he had made many preparations for this.

Fang Yuan not only deployed Wu Shuai for this, he even set a formation at the center of qi sea.

This was naturally a qi path formation. Fang Yuan's time path clone had qi path great grandmaster and formation path grandmaster attainment levels, along with the light of wisdom, he spent a month to deduce this.

At the center of qi sea, countless currents surged, they were turbulent from time to time, the area was very dangerous.

Setting a formation in this place was quite difficult.

But it was not a problem for Fang Yuan, he did not lack formation path attainment and he had ample resources, he was not trying to create a complex formation like the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, he was merely going for a usable and realistic effect.

Fang Yuan's main body checked it with his divine sense and confirmed there were no problems, he shut his eyes and meditated.

This Eastern Sea banquet was extremely important to him.

He plotted using the world as his chessboard, he arranged pawns to influence the overall situation, such planning was not easy at all.

In Southern Border, Fang Yuan's influence was small, because Wu Yong was gathering allies with his good political manipulation, there was nothing Fang Yuan could do to stop him.

In Western Desert, even though Fang clan was rising, its influence would only grow with time. Furthermore, be they Heavenly Court or the other Western Desert forces, they would not want this to happen. Fang Di Chang had a lot to do in this situation.

Central Continent had Heavenly Court, it was impenetrable like an iron fortress. The Zombie Alliance that Shadow Sect created had already been uprooted along with the organization Defy by Fairy Zi Wei.

In Northern Plains, Fang Yuan and Chu Du had a close relationship but it could not affect the big picture. Even though Bing Sai Chuan had not awakened, Longevity Heaven was started to take control, Fang Yuan could not do anything there.

Thus, Eastern Sea was an important part of Fang Yuan's plans and arrangements.

Eastern Sea was the most abundant in resources, if he succeeds, when the five regions merge, Fang Yuan would have enough influence to affect the other four regions.

A few minutes later, Fang Yuan opened his eyes as he muttered while looking at the horizon: "They're coming."

An Immortal Gu House was flying in the sky, it looked slow but was moving at a rapid speed.

The Immortal Gu House slowly stopped as a girl with bright eyes walked out, she was wearing a long dress that had exquisite rainbow clouds drawn on it.

"Hua clan first supreme elder Hua Cai Yun greets Qi Sea Ancestor." Hua Cai Yun had rank eight cultivation level but she still acted very politely.

Next, from Hua clan's Immortal Gu House, several Hua clan Gu Immortals walked out and paid respects to Fang Yuan.

“It is not time yet, you have arrived early, please come in.” Fang Yuan stretched out his hand as qi currents gathered, forming a cloud.

Hua Cai Yun kept her Immortal Gu House in her immortal aperture as she took a seat, while the other Hua clan Gu Immortals stood behind her.

“I was too excited to meet you for the first time, this is a gift from Hua clan, please do accept it.” Hua Cai Yun said as the Gu Immortal behind her took out an item and presented it with both hands.

Fang Yuan took a look, this was a lump of qi that resembled a ball, Hua clan’s Gu Immortal was holding it out respectfully.

There was flashing of lightning and rumbling thunder inside this qi lump, there was rainy or sunny weather occasionally inside, there was even snow at times.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light, he knew what this was.

This was a rare rank nine heaven qi.

Heaven and earth qi were the foundational qi of living beings, they were very common. When Fang Yuan placed his immortal aperture and opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, he would absorb heaven and earth qi to stabilize his sovereign immortal aperture. He had many secluded domains of heaven and earth in his immortal aperture, they expended too much heaven and earth qi, the sovereign immortal aperture felt a heavy burden due to them.

Of course, after Fang Yuan annexed Qi Sea grotto-heaven, he gained a huge boost of qi path dao marks, his immortal aperture started to produce a lot of heaven qi and earth qi, Fang Yuan’s burden in this aspect had eased a lot.

But the heaven qi that Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture produced or absorbed were ordinary Gu materials, they were not even considered immortal materials.

If heaven qi was an immortal material, it would gather into a lump and could not be pulled apart easily. Its value would rise greatly, ordinary heaven qi could not compare to it.

The usage of immortal material heaven qi was very easy, one just had to scatter it.

Many Gu Immortals used it like that.

They would purchase a lump of immortal material heaven qi from treasure yellow heaven and scatter it inside their immortal aperture, creating different weather conditions like thunder, lightning, wind, or snow.

This type of weather would last for some time, the resource points of Gu Immortals would be altered in some ways as a result.

Most transactions in treasure yellow heaven would involve rank six or seven heaven qi. Rank eight heaven qi was very rare, while rank nine was barely ever seen, it was only sold once in a thousand years or more.

Hua Cai Yun gifted Fang Yuan a portion of rank nine heaven qi, it showed her sincerity as well as Hua clan's immense foundation, after all, Hua clan was most proficient in cloud path, they were experts in exploring black heaven and white heaven.

At the same time, in the River of Time.

Four Immortal Gu Houses flew above the river.

Present and Past Pavilion was not covered on all four sides, it was very simplistic, it traveled while riding the waves.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform was elegant and grand, the orange roof resembled cranes with their wings spread out. The Immortal Gu House was radiating three layers of autumn light, it was quite extraordinary.

Shark Flow Lever was white like jade, there were seven huge sharks in front of the lever, they had sharp teeth and were dragging the huge lever ahead.

Moment Stage was rank eight and had a ring of stone stairs around the outside, it spiraled upwards until it reached the red tiled pavilion at the top.

The four Immortal Gu Houses carried Heavenly Court and Central Continent Gu Immortals as they charged towards one destination — Red Lotus' stone island!

Within Present and Past Pavilion, a rank eight Gu Immortal stood as he watched the river water surging outside.

This person wore a red and white robe, standing straight like a spear or sword. His eyebrows were sharp like swords, a mysterious and profound light was hidden in his eyes. He had a calm and elegant aura, he was looking afar now as he continued to focus and comprehend.

It was Feng Jiu Ge!

“During this period in the River of Time, I have observed this long river, I watched the prosperity and downfall of eras, I witnessed the turbulence of the past and present. Destiny is like a wave, it rises at times and falls at times, it is slow at times while fast at times. The profundity contained within cannot be expressed in words, I can only sing it.”

Feng Jiu Ge had been comprehending destiny song all along.

Different from the previous life, Feng Jiu Ge's destiny had changed a lot this time around.

He was defeated by Fang Yuan in Lang Ya blessed land, he was transported away by Chen Yi using the killer move karma relocation, he obtained the inspiration of destiny song.

This was way earlier than in the previous life.

After gaining some insight, Feng Jiu Ge came to the River of Time, he grabbed onto this inspiration and started to comprehend it.

The River of Time was a time path secluded domain, but Feng Jiu Ge made use of Present and Past Pavilion to observe the life of people in the past and

present, he saw many scenes.

This was a great help towards his comprehension of destiny song.

Right now, his destiny song was sixty percent complete, it was ten percent higher than during the Central Continent fate battle in the previous life.

“My destiny song already depicts the destiny of living beings. But the destiny of venerables cannot be described so simply.”

“Last time in Heavenly Court, I looked at Reckless Savage’s blood skins and felt like they were incomprehensible. I hope that this journey to the stone lotus island will allow me to gain further growth in creating destiny song.”

“We have arrived, it is here.”

“Stone lotus island... Red Lotus’ true inheritance!”

The four Immortal Gu Houses stopped nearby, Eternal Yacht was already waiting above the stone lotus island.

Eternal Yacht was the first to discover the stone lotus island, the Gu Immortals within it quickly informed Heavenly Court, they sent the other four Immortal Gu Houses to join up with it.

Feng Jiu Ge looked over with an expectant gaze.

Gu Liu Ru who was within Moment Stage had a complex expression.

“We finally found it, the hard work of our Heavenly Court over generations has not been in vain. After countless years, we have finally gained the fruits of our labor.” Gu Liu Ru sighed deeply to himself.

He had many difficulties in his life, his lower body was crippled and could not be healed, he had an impassive attitude but at this moment, he was filled with excitement, pride, and satisfaction.

After breathing in deeply, Gu Liu Ru calmed down completely.

He sat on his wheelchair as his eyes flickered with cold light, he ordered: “Set up the river suppression lotus sealing formation now, I will lead Moment Stage while Feng Jiu Ge will lead Present and Past Pavilion. Eternal Yacht will move out to the tributary’s entrance and bring in our reinforcements. Shark Flow Lever and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform will patrol the surroundings, if anything shows up, inform me immediately.”

“Yes.” The immortals replied as they started to move, executing great efficiency.



# Chapter 1882 - Challenge

## 1882 Challenge

“The three supplementary formations are ready.” A group of Gu Immortals ended their work, they sat down in the Immortal Gu House to rest and recover.

The second group took over, on top of the three supplementary formations, they added a rank eight Immortal Gu — Suppression.

The second group had eight Gu Immortals that were either rank six or seven, they worked together with great coordination, after some work, they finally added in suppression Immortal Gu successfully.

This was the River of Time, a time path secluded domain of heaven and earth, as a rule path Immortal Gu, it was not easy to use suppression Immortal Gu here, the difficulty was high.

But rank eight Immortal Gu Suppression was one of the core Immortal Gu of the river suppression lotus sealing formation, it had to be the first rank eight Immortal Gu arranged here. After it, other steps could be taken.

At this time, the second group went to rest while the first group came back to work.

They were not continuing the setup, they were dismantling the three layers of supplementary formation that was created earlier.

These Gu formations were meant to help Immortal Gu Suppression find the proper area to be put in. After that, they had to be removed and make space for the next few steps of the immortal formation.

“Good, the three layers of supplementary formations have been removed. Next, we will set up the pale fire formation.” The third group of Gu Immortals took over.

The first group of Gu Immortals were exhausted, they quickly went to rest.

“After the pale fire formation, we will set up the paper cage formation, let’s go.” The second group of Gu Immortals took over.

If the river suppression lotus sealing formation was split apart, there were a hundred and thirty-eight sub formations, the pale fire and paper cage formations were just two of them.

“Be careful, something has happened in the River of Time, a huge wave is crashing towards us!” Someone alerted.

At this time, the first group was resting, trying to recover as much as they could, the second and third group were busy setting the formation, the fourth group of Gu Immortals meant to deal with emergencies were activated.

In order to create the formation, Heavenly Court split the Gu Immortals into four groups. The first group had the strongest formation path abilities, they were in charge of the core of the river suppression lotus sealing formation. The second and third groups had similar levels of strength, the fourth group had the least number of people, they had some level of ability in formation building but were meant to deal with emergencies.

The fourth group of immortals quickly acted and destroyed the huge wave.

The second and third groups let out a sigh of relief. While checking that the formation was intact, they started to make preparations for the future steps.

Gu Liu Ru and Feng Jiu Ge were stationed in Moment Stage and Present and Past Pavilion respectively.

Feng Jiu Ge's eyes were steady as he comprehended destiny, Gu Liu Ru had a deep gaze that was filled with alertness.

“We have found the stone lotus island, there is some commotion when we made the formation, Fang Yuan will definitely be alerted.”

“He will definitely come here to cause destruction!”

“The river suppression lotus sealing formation has not been completed yet, we are at our weakest now, Fang Yuan will definitely come to attack.”

“This is an important matter! I need to make up for my mistakes, I cannot let Fang Yuan succeed!”

While thinking, a silvery light appeared on the horizon.

Gu Liu Ru's heart immediately tensed.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and Shark Flow Lever that were patrolling outside changed directions immediately, trying to obstruct the invader.

It was Myriad Year Flying Warship!

“Gu Liu Ru, your Heavenly Court actually tried to take Red Lotus' true inheritance from under my nose, hehe, you are just dreaming.” Myriad Year Flying Warship came rapidly as Fang Yuan's voice resounded from within.

Gu Liu Ru snorted coldly, his voice spread in this entire battlefield: “Fang Yuan, you are merely a loser that we defeated, was the painful lesson last time not enough for you?”

He was a time path great expert, he was like a fish in water in the River of Time. Rank eight Gu Immortals of other paths would need a lot more effort to make their voice transmit around the entire battlefield.

“Haha, with me here, don’t think of setting any formation.” Before Fang Yuan finished his words, Myriad Year Flying Warship already started to shine with bright lights.

These lights converged into countless silver flying swords as they shot out rapidly, towards the incomplete river suppression lotus sealing formation.

Gu Liu Ru’s expression was grim, he felt a headache, Heavenly Court’s biggest weakness now was this formation.

Fang Yuan ruthlessly attacked the enemy’s weakness, Heavenly Court had no choice but to defend it, they were stuck in a passive situation.

Last time, when Fang Yuan attacked the river suppression lotus sealing formation, Heavenly Court could dismantle the formation, but this time, with this Red Lotus stone island, they would preserve it even if they had to pay a huge price to do so.

Boom boom boom!

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform arrived first, it fought against Myriad Year Flying Warship, there were many impacts that caused the water of the River of Time to splash and splatter.

Shark Flow Lever arrived shortly after.

As the three Immortal Gu Houses fought intensely in the River of Time, in the sky of Eastern Sea’s qi sea, the scene was harmonious and joyful.

After Hua Cai Yun, the Gu Immortals of Eastern Sea’s super forces, Song clan, Su clan, and Cai clan also arrived.

The one from Song clan was naturally Song Qi Yuan, he came to the banquet with Song Yi Shi.

“This is my granddaughter Song Yi Shi, after hearing of senior’s story, she became very excited, she asked me to bring her here and meet you.” Song Qi Yuan smiled, he introduced his granddaughter Song Yi Shi.

Song Yi Shi had lost her father long ago, as her grandfather, Song Qi Yuan doted on her, for this Eastern Sea banquet, he brought her here so that she would get to leave an impression on people.

“This junior pays respects to Qi Sea Ancestor.” Song Yi Shi said politely.

She had snow-white skin, her eyes were bright, she wore a blue-white dress and had an innocent aura, she was truly one of the six great beauties of Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

Similar to Hua Cai Yun, Song Qi Yuan also brought a gift, it was a qi path inheritance that Song clan had collected in its inventory, it originated from a historical qi path rank eight great expert. After Fang Yuan took a look, he saw that it was quite unique and had quite a bit of value.

Fang Yuan smiled as he looked at Song Yi Shi, he displayed the concern of a senior: “Song clan has a good descendant, a good junior. This is our first meeting, I cannot let you leave empty-handed.”

Saying so, he took out a rank eight water path immortal material, it floated towards Song Yi Shi.

Song Yi Shi was of great upbringing after all, she received the gift and quickly thanked him.

“Take a seat.” Fang Yuan waved his hand as qi currents gathered, forming a seat instantly, it was right below him and towards the left.

Song Qi Yuan saw this position and became very happy, he quickly brought Song Yi Shi to take their seats.

Song Yi Shi placed the rank eight water path immortal material in her immortal aperture, she acted very modestly and gracefully, displaying the demeanor of a young lady in an esteemed clan.

Hua Cai Yun laughed as she spoke: “Song Qi Yuan, this is the first gift that ancestor has handed out. Had I known this, I would’ve brought my grandson as well.”

She was the earliest person, she had already conversed with Fang Yuan for some time, their relationship had gotten much closer in this period.

Song Qi Yuan laughed, he was secretly proud of this, bringing Song Yi Shi here was really a wise decision.

Song Yi Shi was looking at Qi Sea Ancestor for the first time, she was awe-inspired by his aura: “This old senior is truly the number one person in Eastern Sea, a person who rivaled Duke Long. He has the demeanor of a great person, he is so magnanimous and grand.”

If she knew that this person was Fang Yuan, who had once acted as Xing Xiang Zi and watched her shower, she would not have such thoughts.

“Qing Yue An pays respects to Qi Sea Ancestor.” Qing Yue An was the third Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal who arrived.

“Junior Qing Yue Zhi Cheng greets Qi Sea Ancestor.” A youngster was behind Qing Yue An, he wore a green shirt and had a tall nose and flat face, his eyes were shiny like stars, he was a handsome and talented junior in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

“Good.” Fang Yuan sighed and praised, assessing Qing Yue Zhi Cheng: “Another good junior. I have a gift for you as well.”

He gave Qing Yue Zhi Cheng a rank eight immortal material as well, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng quickly received it with thanks.

Hua Cai Yun gradually saw a pattern as she thought to herself: “This Qi Sea Ancestor seems to enjoy helping talented juniors, just from this point alone, one can see that he truly has grand disposition.”

At this moment, Nan Gong clan’s Gu Immortals arrived at the banquet, Hua Cai Yun’s expression sank.

This was because Nan Gong clan’s first supreme elder brought Hua An along.

Hua An was originally a Hua clan Gu Immortal, but he betrayed Hua clan and joined Nan Gong clan. He had deep wisdom path attainment, he was one of the three wisdom path experts of Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world.

The saying goes: Jia Dan sits in twin polar, Hua An hides in Nan Gong, there is also Dragon Head Tortoise, living inside adversity sea.

Even though Hua Cai Yun was unhappy, she did not say anything. This was Qi Sea Ancestor's banquet, she wanted to get close to the number one Eastern Sea expert now, she had to endure it.

Eastern Sea's righteous path arrived one by one.

The last one who came was the grand elder of the Merman Imperial Court.

Fang Yuan said some words of consolation as he arranged for her to sit at the very end.

After the merman grand elder sat down, she sighed to herself internally: Even though this was her first meeting with Qi Sea Ancestor, this great expert was showing a good attitude towards the merfolk.

Of course.

The mermen were working with the dragonmen, they were Fang Yuan's natural allies.

Fang Yuan would not give her trouble.

Seeing Fang Yuan's treatment of the merman grand elder, Eastern Sea's righteous path Gu Immortals fell into contemplation.

River of Time.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was already at the inner area.

Immortal killer move — Daybreak Sword!

Swords moved out like an army of pythons, traversing the battlefield and attacking Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform started to shine with a bright orange light, the strength of the silver flying swords weakened continuously.

At the other end, Shark Flow Lever shot out three frost waves and froze the water of the River of Time under Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Fang Yuan grunted from within Myriad Year Flying Warship, silver flying swords turned around and gathered in the water below the river.

Immortal killer move — Torrential Charge!

Myriad Year Flying Warship shot out like a meteor, crashing into the river suppression lotus sealing formation that was still being set up.

Boom!

With a loud sound, Moment Stage blocked Myriad Year Flying Warship as the two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses collided.

Moment Stage had a slight disadvantage while Myriad Year Flying Warship's advancement was halted, it was stalled by Shark Flow Lever and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform which had caught up.

Heavenly Court had deep foundation, they already prepared some methods to deal with Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had gone through many battles, its methods were exposed, it could not do much in this situation.

At this moment, two more time path Immortal Gu Houses arrived as reinforcements.

One was Eternal Yacht carrying Xing Ye Wang, the other was Sun and Moon Temple carrying Nine Spiritual Fairy.

Heavenly Court's reinforcements arrived!



Four rank eight Gu Immortals, six time path Immortal Gu Houses!

Heavenly Court's morale soared.

Eastern Sea, above qi sea.

Qi currents surged and formed into a vast cloud, Qi Sea Ancestor willed as countless dishes and delicious wine emerged from these currents.

It was finally time, Qi Sea Ancestor wanted to raise his cup and announce the start of the banquet when a voice resounded in the sky: "Black Soul Sea Lord would like to request a spar with Qi Sea Ancestor."

Next, his rank eight aura filled with dark energy loomed over the entire area.

The Eastern Sea immortals were stunned before their eyes started to shine.

An Eastern Sea rank eight was actually challenging Qi Sea Ancestor!

# Chapter 1883 - Ancestor's Divine Might!

## 1883 Ancestor's Divine Might!

Moment Stage, Present and Past Pavilion, Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, Eternal Yacht, Shark Flow Lever, Sun and Moon Temple.

Gu Liu Ru, Feng Jiu Ge, Xing Ye Wang, Nine Spiritual Fairy.

Heavenly Court gathered its forces in the River of Time, it was bent on getting Red Lotus' true inheritance.

In contrast, Fang Yuan's side only had Myriad Year Flying Warship, even though it was rank eight, against Heavenly Court's grand force, it was too small.

Heavenly Court had six Immortal Gu Houses and four rank eight Gu Immortals, they surrounded Myriad Year Flying Warship completely.

Myriad Year Flying Warship fell into a tight spot, but Fang Yuan spoke calmly as he smiled: "Hehehe, you want to occupy the stone lotus island? Since I cannot get it, neither will any of you."

Immortal killer move — Myriad Year Hunting!

Fragrance spread from Myriad Year Flying Warship, it quickly dispersed and caused countless dao beasts to resonate and growl.

A wave of a year beast tide was rapidly forming.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan cooperated with Bing Sai Chuan and fought against Heavenly Court over this Red Lotus true inheritance, in the end, Feng Jiu Ge acted and destroyed the stone lotus island.

This time, Fang Yuan made the same choice, he used myriad year hunting to summon an endless beast tide that targeted the stone lotus island.

This method was Myriad Year Flying Warship's strongest ability, it had an evident weakness however, the year beasts did not differentiate enemy from ally, in fact its main target was Myriad Year Flying Warship itself.

Last time, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals fell for Fang Yuan's scheme, they thought that he could control the beast tide and slaughtered a large number of year beasts, taking most of the damage for Myriad Year Flying Warship. After suffering a loss, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals realized that Fang Yuan could not control this beast tide either.

The weakness of myriad year hunting was already known to Heavenly Court.

But this time, Fang Yuan used it to target Heavenly Court's weakness, they were setting up the river suppression lotus sealing formation now, they had no choice but to fight against these beasts.

Gu Liu Ru snorted coldly: "This scoundrel is very devious, he used this move after all."

He had a calm expression as he instructed his people, Eternal Yacht and Shark Flow Lever left the battlefield immediately to head to the outside. At the same time, Nine Spiritual Fairy jumped out of her Immortal Gu House, turning into an immemorial desolate beast to leave the battlefield.

Heavenly Court had the advantage while Fang Yuan's Myriad Year Flying Warship was encircled, he could not stop these people from escaping.

After leaving the battlefield, Eternal Yacht and Shark Flow Lever shined with a bright light, two auras resembling years flow like water Immortal Gu started to spread out.

The newly formed beast tide was instantly lured to these two Immortal Gu Houses as eighty percent of them rushed towards the two Immortal Gu Houses.

The remaining twenty percent were intercepted by Nine Spiritual Fairy who had turned into an immemorial desolate beast, she took control over them.

“It’s her indeed!”

“Nine Spiritual Fairy... a rank eight great expert that cultivated enslavement path and transformation path in Central Continent’s history.”

Within Myriad Year Flying Warship, a Gu Immortal had already discerned Nine Spiritual Fairy’s identity.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s main body was in Eastern Sea, only his will was inside the ship, the will could think and make comparisons to his previous life’s events.

Nine Spiritual Fairy did not wake up in the previous life, but this time, she woke up and even earlier in time.

This was a very different situation.

After she turned into the immemorial year beast, the River of Time was no longer an obstacle to her.

Even though Heavenly Court could not counter myriad year hunting directly, they found ways to deal with it.

They analyzed the concept of myriad year hunting and targeted it, resolving the year beast tide that had yet to fully form.

Next, even if year beasts emerge, there would only be a few of them, they would not be of a threatening scale.

This was Heavenly Court's foundation.

It was also the reason why Fang Yuan had been concealing his strength and methods all along.

Once he exposes his methods, Heavenly Court would rapidly react and make deductions, they would counter his actions in their next encounter.

This was the case for daybreak sword, torrential charge, and myriad year hunting.

Myriad year hunting, which could change the situation, was resolved by Heavenly Court before it even showed effect.

The remaining four Immortal Gu Houses surrounded Myriad Year Flying Warship tightly as they unleashed a barrage of attacks.

"Fang Yuan, if you still have any methods left, use them." Gu Liu Ru smiled coldly.

Within Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan's will was silent, he did not respond.

The battle continued, Myriad Year Flying Warship was kept suppressed and unable to turn it around. Even though it tried to break out several times, it did not succeed.

Over at Heavenly Court's four Immortal Gu Houses, Moment Stage was in front, as a rank eight Immortal Gu House and with the time path great expert Gu Liu Ru stationed in it, it was not inferior to Myriad Year Flying Warship.

At the same time, the other three Immortal Gu Houses worked together to assist it, their cooperation was not simple, they were very effective in their actions.

Evidently, during this period of time, these Gu Immortals did not slack off, they had practised extensively and their battle strength rose greatly.

“Fang Yuan is already trapped, he is not a threat.”

“Be careful, we cannot be careless against this demon.”

“Our river suppression lotus sealing formation is almost complete, what can Fang Yuan do to stop us?”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had a surge of morale.

Many of them could already see the sight of Fang Yuan’s defeat.

But at this moment, a grand aura surged from the stone lotus island.

Golden light flashed as a grey stone giant stood up slowly.

This giant was immensely tall, its muscles were bulging, its hair was thick, its eyes shined with a fierce beast light.

“What monster is this? It has time path aura!”

“We have not explored the stone lotus island yet, why did the guardian of this stone lotus island awaken?”

“Oh no, the river suppression lotus sealing formation has not been completed yet.”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had changes of expression.

The giant roared, it was actually the sound of a tiger’s roar, the sound waves spread out in all directions, causing huge ripples to form around the island.

The river suppression lotus sealing formation shook intensely, the Gu Immortals setting up the formation spat out mouthfuls of blood.

“Quick, stabilize the formation!”

“Paper cage formation was broken, we need to repair it.”

“Fourth group, Gu Immortals of the fourth group, quickly reinforce us!”

The Gu Immortals setting up the formation became very busy.

After the grey stone giant roared, it moved its arms, the muscles on his forearm and upper arm expanded like a balloon, to three times of its original size.

Pitch-black bull horns grew on its forehead, it lowered its head slightly as its arms gathered in front of its chest, it opened its palms and placed them together, air currents surged and gathered between its palms, creating a spiral ball made of currents.

Gu Liu Ru saw this as shock appeared in his eyes.

He understood, these air currents were just the physical appearance, these were actually time path dao marks!

More and more time path dao marks were drawn by the giant and gathered into a huge silver ball.

The ball became larger and larger, the giant monster growled and pushed with both arms, throwing the silver ball with all its strength.

The silver ball flew like a meteor, shooting out and causing endless gusts of wind to blow.

Central Continent's righteous path Gu Immortals were deeply shocked, their pupils shrunk when they saw this giant silver ball's might.

"Quick, we need to block it!" Gu Liu Ru gritted his teeth, he forcefully controlled Moment Stage to block the advancement of the silver ball.

Boom!

At the next moment, an intense sound erupted, the silver ball crashed into Moment Stage and burst out with terrifying might, Moment Stage was like a house swept by a typhoon, it flew away even when resisting.

"We blocked it." Moment Stage stopped eventually as Gu Liu Ru let out a breath of turbid air, Moment Stage was already damaged beyond words, it

was filled with cracks, countless mortal Gu died while many Immortal Gu were injured.

The Gu Immortals inside Moment Stage were already very busy, they could not stay as carefree as when they encircled Fang Yuan anymore, they quickly tried to repair the Immortal Gu House.

The aftermath of the silver ball explosion caused intense winds to blow, the river suppression lotus sealing formation was still affected and damaged, many Gu worms died, the Gu Immortals setting up the formation were very busy trying to fix it.

Seeing that its attack did not work, the grey stone giant started to gather a silver ball again.

Gu Liu Ru saw this and gritted his teeth, he controlled Moment Stage to charge down.

But as Moment Stage got close to the stone lotus island, it gave off a brilliant light and a formless force blocked Moment Stage from approaching.

Using this time, the grey stone giant gathered another silver ball in its hands.

The ball shot out, Gu Liu Ru had no choice but to grit his teeth and resist the silver ball again using Moment Stage.

Boom!

Another explosion resounded, after the intense impact, the front part of Moment Stage was completely devastated, a large number of tiles and bricks flew out and turned back into Gu worm corpses.

The grey stone giant saw that its method was obstructed once again, it became infuriated as it growled and gathered another silver ball.

Gu Liu Ru frowned deeply: "This giant is using a very familiar time path method! To think that Red Lotus Demon Venerable had left this behind."



“But even if I know about its information, for now I can only block its attack by sacrificing Moment Stage, I need to protect this river suppression lotus sealing formation! Thankfully, we have this Moment Stage.”

Gu Liu Ru felt glad in his heart.

The signature method of Moment Stage was to teleport from one location to another location in a moment's time.

This was not a space path method but a time path method instead, it was not teleportation in essence, but was the act of using Moment Stage to compress its time into a moment. If the distance was further, it would take several moments.

Gu Liu Ru wanted to protect the formation, he had a clear objective. As long as the formation was set up, it would isolate this place from the outside, the stone lotus island would not be able to escape, all of Red Lotus' arrangements on this island would weaken slowly and be resisted.

And against outside force, there would also be a strong layer of protection.

By then, even if Fang Yuan wanted to enter, with this formation and several Immortal Gu Houses around, it would be difficult.

Fang Yuan evidently understood this logic, Myriad Year Flying Warship tried to move in different directions, the remaining Immortal Gu Houses were just rank seven, they could barely contain it. This was like a thin fishing net trying to capture a shark.

Heavenly Court's situation was getting worse, Gu Liu Ru snorted coldly and came out of Moment Stage, joining the encirclement of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

He was a time path great expert, he could move and act freely in the River of Time, with his interference, Heavenly Court stabilized the situation once again.

“Persevere, persevere and we will gain victory!”

“After this period, when the formation is completed, it would be Fang Yuan’s time to die.”

Gu Liu Ru took charge of the situation, he dealt with Myriad Year Flying Warship while raising the morale of his people.

Eventually, the river suppression lotus sealing formation was completely set up, it formed a huge sphere that not only surrounded the stone lotus island, but also Myriad Year Flying Warship.

The formation activated, the grey stone giant grunted as it felt a strong suppression.

Myriad year hunting was also restricted, the fragrance could not spread out, a beast tide was unable to form.

“Get rid of Fang Yuan first, then explore the stone lotus island!” Gu Liu Ru shouted.

Without the threat of myriad year hunting, Eternal Yacht, Shark Flow Lever, and Nine Spiritual Fairy returned in time, they joined the encirclement against Fang Yuan.

“Fang Yuan, this will be your final resting place!” Gu Liu Ru’s eyes shined with bright light, he had a cold expression.

“Is a demonic overlord going to die here?” Feng Jiu Ge squinted, inspiration regarding destiny song emerged in his heart.

“Let’s not wait any longer, kill him!” Xing Ye Wang moved Shark Flow Lever and assaulted with deep killing intent.

Nine Spiritual Fairy was silent but her movements were not slow, she got around to the back of Myriad Year Flying Warship as her aura burst out, she prepared her killer move.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan’s cold snicker resounded in Myriad Year Flying Warship: “Oh Heavenly Court, you have already been trapped, can’t you sense it?”

Before he finished his words, stone lotus island erupted with a bright light, tens of water pillars shot up around the island.

The light and water pillars forcefully connected into the river suppression lotus sealing formation, the Central Continent Gu Immortals who were inside became dumbfounded. Someone shouted: “What is going on! We lost our control of this formation!!”

This was not a simple change of events.

Heavenly Court’s four rank eights were in deep disbelief but the facts were in front of them: This was all Fang Yuan’s trap!

“I did not waste a stone lotus island to trap you after all, this is not the place I will die, it is yours.” Fang Yuan said so as the grey stone giant on the stone lotus island grew chicken wings and feathers, its hands turned into tiger claws, its mouth turned into a beak, it flew up and barged past the encirclement, paving a way for Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Realization flashed in Gu Liu Ru, he finally understood what this grey stone giant was, he shouted in shock and anger: “This is the Twelve Zodiac battle formation! To think that Fang Yuan had this method.”

“This was all Fang Yuan’s trap!”

“He has already obtained Red Lotus’ true inheritance, he can control the stone lotus island!”

“This Twelve Zodiac battle formation is likely the content of the true inheritance, his time path foundation grew immensely, he is able to suppress our formation instead.”

“We cannot stay here, we need to retreat!”

The four Heavenly Court rank eights discussed and decided to leave.

But the awkward thing was, this river suppression lotus sealing formation that they set up with so much work was their biggest obstacle at this moment.

“Want to leave now? Too late!” Fang Yuan’s laughter could be heard inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, daybreak swords flew out and shot towards Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and Shark Flow Lever.

The grey stone giant growled loudly and pounced at Present and Past Pavilion.

Present and Past Pavilion had torrential waves around it but the grey stone giant ignored that, it advanced and slammed down with its fist.

The grey stone giant was just too big, its fist was larger than Present and Past Pavilion itself.

Before the fist landed, sounds of tiger and dragon roars resounded in the battlefield.

The might of the fist was simply destructive and unrestrained!

Feng Jiu Ge squinted while the other Gu Immortals were fearful, against this fist, they felt like the world was collapsing, any attempts to dodge it was futile.

They could not dodge!

Boom!!

An intense explosion resounded as Present and Past Pavilion crumbled at the impact of the grey stone giant’s fist.

The injuries and deaths inside were severe, Feng Jiu Ge barely managed to escape in a sorry state.

Moment Stage!

At the crucial moment, Moment Stage teleported over and took in Feng Jiu Ge.

The grey stone giant completely ignored the Moment Stage that was nearby, it turned around towards Sun and Moon Temple.

Sun and Moon Temple was a time path Immortal Gu House of Spirit Affinity House, it was weaker than the rest, when the grey stone giant approached, Sun and Moon Temple could not escape in time.

The giant was too fast, it was inside the River of Time and had the power of the stone lotus island boosting it, its current battle strength was simply unheard of!

Boom!!

With a second explosion, Sun and Moon Temple shattered, most of the Gu Immortals inside died.

“No!!” Gu Liu Ru gritted his teeth, his eyes were red from anger, his body was shaking from hatred.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were no longer as confident as before, they wanted to escape for their lives now.

The grey stone giant’s battle strength made them feel deep despair!

Eastern Sea, above qi sea.

The Gu Immortals were very excited as they looked at Qi Sea Ancestor and the owner of the black soul sea area, Zhang Yin.

Zhang Yin was a lone cultivator with rank eight cultivation level, everyone knew him in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

But they did not expect that he would challenge Qi Sea Ancestor. Although thinking about it, it was not strange, back then, the fight between Duke Long and Qi Sea Ancestor was only witnessed by Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng, and these two were righteous path Gu Immortals.

Under everyone’s gaze, Qi Sea Ancestor smiled lightly: “Gu Immortal Zhang Yin, you are very courageous, but will you be able to handle one move from me?”

Zhang Yin smiled arrogantly: “Ancestor, you underestimate me, not just one move.... ugh.”

He suddenly stopped as the other Gu Immortals’ expressions changed.

Instantly, they felt the entire world buzzing as countless qi currents gathered from all over the place.

Within all the surroundings, pressure intensified.

The immortals’ pupils shrunk, cold sweat flowed down as they felt unparalleled pressure, they were like insects trapped in amber, fragile and helpless.

“What killer move is this?”

“Is this Qi Sea Ancestor’s method?”

“We are merely feeling the side effect, what pressure is Zhang Yin, who is bearing the brunt of the attack, feeling?”

The immortals looked over, Zhang Yin’s face turned red, he did not move in the air, his eyes were bulging as he struggled, he only trembled as he could not break free.

The immortals were all shaken.

A loud sound could be heard from above their heads.

The Eastern Sea immortals quickly looked up and all of their faces turned pale as paper.

A huge hand completely made of qi currents was translucent and pale-white, it extended an enormous distance, shrouding the skies itself!

The giant hand pressed down as all of the Eastern Sea immortals felt suffocated, it was as if a mountain was crashing down upon them.

“What sort of power is this!”

“If I were not here personally, I would never believe it.”

“I’m afraid this strength is on par with rank nine?”

“Qi Sea Ancestor!!”

At the banquet, many Gu Immortals stood up uncontrollably, their bodies shook as fear overwhelmed them.

Zhang Yin shouted with all his strength, his entire body was radiating dark energy as mild lightning flashed weakly, he could not escape, he was trapped and fixed in the air.

Seeing this, Song Qi Yuan and the other rank eight Gu Immortals were all incredibly shocked and fearful.

“It looks like Zhang Yin has used his full strength, but he cannot escape at all?”

“Is he going to die?!”

“Qi Sea Ancestor’s battle strength is so terrifying. Does he wants to leave a deep impression on us and use Zhang Yin’s life to raise his reputation in Eastern Sea?”

It was unimaginable, a rank eight Gu Immortal was completely helpless against Qi Sea Ancestor!

But the truth was right here, Song Qi Yuan and the other Eastern Sea Gu Immortals had to believe it.

As the qi current hand approached Zhang Yin, it slowly disintegrated and went past Zhang Yin, slamming into qi sea.

There was no heaven shaking explosion, after the qi current hand came into contact with qi sea, it quickly scattered and fused into the sea.

Zhang Yin regained freedom, he felt deep lingering fear as his clothes were filled with sweat, he had a fearful look as he stared with wide eyes,

breathing roughly.

“Look at qi sea!” Song Yi Shi shouted.

Everyone turned to look, the treacherous and turbulent qi sea filled with countless spirals had been completely calmed, it was like a mirror now!

Eastern Sea’s immortals were very shocked, many of them opened their mouths but could not speak.

“Ancestor’s divine might, I have fully experienced it.” Zhang Yin let out a breath of air as he paid his respects: “Thank you for sparing me.”

Qi Sea Ancestor was still sitting at the main seat, his eyes were barely open as he waved his sleeves lightly: “Take a seat.”

“Thank you.” Zhang Yin took his seat amidst the silence.

Many of the Eastern Sea immortals were still standing, those who were seated were not feeling any better, they were all like statues.

Qi Sea Ancestor defeated Zhang Yin in one move, he had truly intimidated all of them.

“Ancestor has divine might!” After a while, Song Qi Yuan reacted as he stood up, respectfully praising.

“Ancestor has divine might!” Shen Cong Sheng also stood up and praised with respect.

“Ancestor has divine might. Ancestor has divine might.” Countless Eastern Sea Gu Immortals stood up to pay their respects, they were completely in awe.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly as he said: “Everyone, take a seat, the banquet is beginning.”



# Chapter 1884 - Qi Spreads in Five Regions

## 1884 Qi Spreads in Five Regions

The stone lotus island ambush that Fang Yuan planned had already ended.

A grand light filled Heavenly Court, but in Central Great Hall, the atmosphere was grim.

“At the crucial moment, Gu Liu Ru blocked Myriad Year Flying Warship while risking his life, I managed to live because of him.” Nine Spiritual Fairy said this as she coughed blood again.

Tears were in her eyes, the scene of Gu Liu Ru defending them with his life surfaced in her mind again.

Nine Spiritual Fairy had a beautiful face, she liked to wear a long robe and wave her sleeves around, she had a graceful aura but now, she was covered in blood, wounds were all over her body, her sleeves were cut and dangling. Nine Spiritual Fairy’s thin body was completely fragile at this moment, covered in this large robe.

In this battle in the River of Time, Heavenly Court had the absolute advantage at the start, but later, they lost completely, the six Immortal Gu Houses were destroyed, only two Gu Immortals, Nine Spiritual Fairy and Feng Jiu Ge, managed to escape.

Feng Jiu Ge was in the hall too, he lost his cool demeanor at this moment, his eyes turned dim as they lost their light, he showed an expression of loss and perplexity.

Fairy Zi Wei sighed to herself, she instructed them to go recuperate.

She learned of the result of this battle already, she called for Nine Spiritual Fairy so that she could gain more information about the minor details.

“To think that Fang Yuan obtained the stone lotus island long ago, how did he do it? We did not sense it at all.” Fairy Zi Wei deduced quietly, she could not find any answer.

Because of this, Heavenly Court lost this battle completely, they fell into Fang Yuan’s planned trap, their losses were severe.

Duke Long smiled bitterly: “The truth is, we had guessed that Fang Yuan might have a Red Lotus true inheritance already. But in the previous battle, Myriad Year Flying Warship was forced to escape from us, it was useless even if they tried to make use of the River of Time’s dangerous terrain. Now it seems that Fang Yuan had purposely did that so as to lure our attention, he wanted to fight for Dragon Palace and also to prepare for this battle, to make us underestimate him. This is truly a devious and scheming demon!”

“Then, when did Fang Yuan obtain Red Lotus’ true inheritance? So be it if he got it recently, but if he obtained this stone lotus island long ago, that would be a very scary situation.” Fairy Zi Wei thought about it as she felt a chill down her spine.

Right now, Heavenly Court was facing a difficult situation.

However, no matter how tough the situation was, Heavenly Court had to face it directly, they could not try to dodge it.

Duke Long said solemnly: “Even if Fang Yuan obtained one Red Lotus true inheritance and gained Twelve Zodiac battle formation from it, we need to continue putting our forces into the River of Time!”

This was only natural.

There was more than one Red Lotus true inheritance, if Fang Yuan obtained a second or third one, he would become even scarier.

From Heavenly Court's perspective, the River of Time was an important area they had to guard, Red Lotus true inheritance was something they had to obtain. This situation might only change after they successfully repair fate Gu, but now, Heavenly Court had to start all over again, after losing six Immortal Gu Houses, they would have to build six, or even ten more!

Fairy Zi Wei nodded slowly, she had a serious expression, she shared the same opinion as Duke Long on this matter.

“But...” Fairy Zi Wei showed a look of difficulty.

There were problems in this too.

If they wanted to send more time path battle strength into the River of Time, the best method was to send time path Gu Immortals.

But because of Red Lotus Demon Venerable, Heavenly Court's foundation in time path Gu Immortals was very weak.

Without any time path great experts, they could only make up for it using time path Immortal Gu Houses.

Heavenly Court lost six time path Immortal Gu Houses, the losses were too severe, they needed to rebuild these houses and needed a large number of time path Immortal Gu for them.

Even though Nine Spiritual Fairy and Feng Jiu Ge were still alive, they did not bring back many Immortal Gu.

Heavenly Court needed to refine many time path Immortal Gu to rebuild their Immortal Gu Houses.

And in this aspect, Gu refinement immortal materials were not a problem.

Heavenly Court had an immensely deep foundation of over millions of years, it was not for show. Heavenly Court's three million years worth of accumulation was split into three treasuries of 'early, middle, late'. Each one represented a million years of foundation, they had placed all of their gains in that time period into the respective inventories.

Any one of these million years treasury had more things in it than any of the ten great ancient sects.

In order to refine rank eight fortune rivalling heaven Gu, Old Ancestor Xue Hu went bankrupt. Even with Fang Yuan's current foundation, he did not dare to refine rank eight Immortal Gu. When normal super forces try to refine a rank eight Immortal Gu, they would expend a good deal of their foundation. But for Heavenly Court, not just one, even if they refined ten of them, their foundation would not be shaken.

Heavenly Court did not lack immortal materials at all, they lacked refinement path great experts.

Yuan Qiong Du was a refinement path expert, he had been in charge of repairing fate Gu. But asking him to refine time path Immortal Gu on top of this was just too much for him.

He was just one person, he had limited time and energy.

"If one or two refinement path experts could wake up in the immortal graveyard, it would be great." Fairy Zi Wei thought to herself, regrettably, the immortal graveyard was not subject to external influence, she could not wake up any Gu Immortal she wanted.

Duke Long also noticed this problem, he thought about it and said: "Then rally the ten great ancient sects, we can even unify the refinement path Gu Immortals of other sects and send them all here, get them to work together and refine time path Immortal Gu."

Fairy Zi Wei nodded, Yuan Qiong Du had important matters to do, he was in charge of repairing fate Gu, Heavenly Court had to do this now to deal with the current problem.

Fairy Zi Wei sighed internally: “If we had succeeded in invading Lang Ya Sect and taken control of it, that would be great. This would not be a problem for us now, it was a pity that Lang Ya Sect ended up in Fang Yuan’s hands.”

Heavenly Court had lost that great first step and now, they were facing problems because of it. In contrast, by using his refinement path advantage, Fang Yuan was giving problems to Heavenly Court now. Yuan Qiong Du could feel this most deeply.

Fairy Zi Wei and Duke Long had grim emotions.

Fang Yuan’s victory in the River of Time was a devastating blow to Heavenly Court.

But the River of Time was just one aspect, Heavenly Court’s overall situation was worsening.

In Northern Plains, Longevity Heaven had been trying to unify and gather the whole strength of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

In Western Desert, Fang Di Chang refined Divine Bean Palace and was bringing Fang clan to rise up as the leader.

In Southern Border, even though Wu Yong was close to Heavenly Court, Beacon Towers were being built everywhere, it was becoming a problem for Heavenly Court.

As for Eastern Sea...

“According to our newest information, Qi Sea Ancestor defeated Zhang Yin using a single move, Zhang Yin is a famous Eastern Sea rank eight lone immortal, but he could not fight back at all. Qi Sea Ancestor’s battle strength is very terrifying, after this battle, his reputation soared, even more Eastern Sea Gu Immortals attend his banquet now.” Fairy Zi Wei showed a worried look.

Duke Long nodded: “Even for me, achieving this would not be easy. It seems that Qi Sea Ancestor has gotten stronger, according to his words, his battle strength rose after comprehending Primordial Origin true inheritance.”

After defeating Zhang Yin, Fang Yuan declared frankly to the Eastern Sea immortals: His battle strength had risen once again, it was because he obtained Primordial Origin’s qi path true inheritance from Heavenly Court.

Duke Long continued to speak: “Since Qi Sea Ancestor said that, it shows that he is close to Heavenly Court, but still wants to remain as a neutral party. This person can be swayed towards us.”

Qi Sea Ancestor had stayed in seclusion for so long even though he had strength that rivaled Duke Long, it showed that he had no ambitions to begin with.

Even if he had ambitions now, he was definitely more attracted to Heavenly Court, which had the complete true inheritance of Primordial Origin.

As Qi Sea Ancestor stayed as a neutral party, Duke Long and Fairy Zi Wei became more assured of his stand.

It was not just Qi Sea Ancestor’s personality, but also his lifespan that affected their judgment.

Lifespan was the biggest element that restricted a Gu Immortal great expert.

Qi Sea Ancestor looked like someone who was going to die soon, after all, using lifespan Gu would allow one to regain their youthful appearance.

He was so old already, he likely used many lifespan extension methods. These methods all had flaws, they would make lifespan Gu ineffective.

Duke Long did not have much longer to live, but he believed that Qi Sea Ancestor was in a similar state.

Fairy Zi Wei suddenly said: “Since Qi Sea Ancestor said that, we can send Gu Immortals to openly attend his banquet. Even if we did not receive his

invitation, now that the entire world knows that Qi Sea Ancestor took our inheritance, even if we suggest a transaction, he cannot reject our visit.”

Duke Long agreed with this suggestion, even if it failed, they would successfully probe Qi Sea Ancestor.

Right now, the regions’ changes were not good for Heavenly Court, only Eastern Sea was relatively calmer. Heavenly Court wanted to make use of this, to ensure that at least Eastern Sea’s forces were on neutral terms with them.

Eastern Sea, above qi sea.

Ever since Fang Yuan defeated Zhang Yin, the number of people visiting this place had increased, the number of people attending his banquet multiplied rapidly.

The Gu Immortals who came would first go to pay respects to Qi Sea Ancestor, to take a look at this number one Eastern Sea Gu Immortal.

Qi Sea Ancestor and Duke Long’s battle was already known to all five regions. After defeating Zhang Yin, Qi Sea Ancestor became recognized as the number one Eastern Sea expert, nobody doubted him anymore.

The entire world was deceived by Fang Yuan.

Zhang Yin was one of the Four Dragon Generals, he cooperated with Fang Yuan and because of the immortal formation under qi sea, Qi Sea Ancestor’s attack showed an incredibly powerful aura.

Nobody knew that Zhang Yin was under control, even Duke Long did not know of Dream Token. In the previous life, he only found out the secret of the Four Dragon Generals after obtaining Dragon Palace by force.

Nobody guessed that Qi Sea Ancestor and Fang Yuan were the same person. After all, Fang Yuan only had rank seven cultivation level while Qi Sea Ancestor was a genuine rank eight. Fang Yuan tried to conceal the secret of the sovereign immortal aperture to the best of his ability, he gave up some

short term benefits and obtained a much greater reward for it at this moment.

Xie Bao Shu arrived.

He was handsome and had a warm aura, he looked like a graceful young master, he was a famous lone cultivator in Eastern Sea. He had a unique method of nurturing vicissitude trees, he was once a major seller of year Gu, but Fang Yuan ruined that business. In the previous life, he had worked with You Xian Zi to snatch the moonlight mushrooms of Fairy Yue Hua.

Zui Xian Weng came too.

He was a rarely seen food path Gu Immortal, he was also the owner of Eastern Sea's wine sea. He had a collection of countless wines, he held a wine reception every year. This time, he brought a thousand jars of top tier wines and gave them to Qi Sea Ancestor as a gift.

Seven Seas Snake Woman arrived.

This was a beautiful but dangerous woman, she was very ruthless in her actions. Even though she was a lone immortal, she owned seven sea areas, this showed her strength. At the same time, she was one of the six beauties of Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world, on par with Song Yi Shi.

Great Treasury Immortal arrived too.

This person cultivated information path, he was dressed in a gentlemanly attire, he had long sleeves that fluttered in the wind. In the previous life, he invaded Central Continent too, he stole Mi Lan Guang's rank seven immortal material electrolytic iron starflower.

The qi sea banquet caused a storm in Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world, all sorts of people showed up one after another.

Among them, there were more lone immortals than righteous path immortals.



Eastern Sea had more lone immortals than the other four regions to begin with, and they had the most abundant resources. At the same time, the righteous path had a lot of territory that needed guarding, lone immortals could move more freely than them.

“I, Central Continent Gu Immortal Jun Shen Guang, bring a gift to meet Qi Sea Ancestor, please forgive my intrusion without an invitation.” Heavenly Court’s rank eight Gu Immortal Jun Shen Guang arrived.

The banquet became silent, countless gazes looked towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled and laughed in a light tone: “An esteemed guest has arrived, what forgiveness do you speak of? The sea is wide and draws in all tributaries linked to it, my Eastern Sea is the same, how can we not have this bit of tolerance? Please take a seat.”

Fang Yuan waved his sleeve, a seat was formed again. Even though it was located at a good position, it was below the Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals’ seats.

Seeing this, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals’ expressions relaxed.

Eastern Sea was the most tolerant towards other regions’ Gu Immortals compared to the rest of the five regions, but they still had some sort of exclusion.

Fang Yuan had already expected Central Continent’s Gu Immortals to come here.

The truth was, he had been waiting for Heavenly Court’s envoy to come here.

Fang Yuan looked around, he saw that almost everyone was here, he started to speak: “Everyone, I have something to say.”

The place became silent again, everyone held their breaths, waiting for Fang Yuan’s speech.

Jun Shen Guang saw this and became internally shocked: Qi Sea Ancestor had only appeared for such a short time but his reputation in Eastern Sea had already reached this stage!

Nobody dared to ignore a single sentence from Qi Sea Ancestor, in fact not a single phrase, or a single word.

Fang Yuan did not say a lot of things but he expressed his own political views — peaceful coexistence and mutual understanding, uphold justice and resolve conflicts.

Finally, he said: “This banquet is not to simply gather everyone here, it is also a transaction event, an auction and also a battle stage. If anyone has conflict, you can engage in a duel to resolve it, I can be the judge here with all the Eastern Sea friends witnessing it. If anyone needs resources or has anything to sell, you can step up and state your requests. Every year from now on, at this time period, I will hold qi sea banquets. Of course, I will not charge any transaction fees.”

“Ancestor is wise.”

“Ancestor is impartial and magnanimous, we are in deep admiration.”

Eastern Sea’s immortals quickly praised.

Jun Shen Guang shook internally: Qi Sea Ancestor is using this move to increase his influence over Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world. Great strength would lead to admiration while great benefits would lead to influence and power.

Furthermore, he was going to hold qi sea banquets every year!

Jun Shen Guang could predict the qi sea banquets would get larger and larger, they would involve the entire Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world. When the five regions merge, Gu Immortals from the other regions would even come over, in time, Qi Sea Ancestor’s influence would not just affect Eastern Sea but the entire five regions!

# **Chapter 1885 - Banquet Transactions, Heart Blood Appears**

## **1885 Banquet Transactions, Heart Blood Appears**

Qi sea banquet.

Transactions were undergoing.

A Gu Immortal walked up the stage, he wore a black robe and had messy hair. He raised his head and showed his appearance, it was an Eastern Sea lone immortal, Wu Ma Yang.

He had an aquiline nose and his gaze was dark, he seemed to have an injury, he coughed while taking out a shell that was floating in the air.

The Eastern Sea immortals looked over, they recognized what it was and quickly showed disappointed expressions.

This was the shell of a small music clam, it was a rank seven immortal material.

Music clams were ordinary clams that contained sound path dao marks. When they grow to desolate beast level, their size would increase, they would become giant music clams. After becoming an ancient desolate beast, their size would shrink again, becoming small music clams.

The small music clam that Wu Ma Yang took out was dead and had no vitality, it was merely a rank seven sound path immortal material.

But Wu Ma Yang smiled coldly: “Everyone, calm down, why would I dare to embarrass myself at ancestor’s banquet? I am not selling this small music clam, but the music stored inside.”

Saying so, Wu Ma Yang cupped his fists at Fang Yuan: “Ancestor, please pardon my rude action.”

Qi Sea Ancestor nodded lightly.

In truth, Fang Yuan and Wu Ma Yang had met long ago. Back then in Eastern Sea, Fang Yuan sold bone spike Immortal Gu to Wu Ma Yang.

After getting Fang Yuan’s agreement, he used his method and opened a slit in the small music clam.

Instantly, everyone heard a crying sound emitting from within it.

This voice was very weak, it was like a sobbing sound that had a music rhythm to it, if someone tried to investigate it, they would be restrained by this voice, they would get weaker and unable to resist it. Mortals would definitely fall prey to it, even Gu Immortals would get lightly injured or die if it was a severe situation.

However, after Wu Ma Yang let it emit its sound for a while, he shut it tight, the small music clam became silent, many Gu Immortals sighed in pity before alerting themselves, they had been affected by it.

“This is rank seven immortal material ghostly wail.”

“Ancestor has great knowledge, I am willing to exchange this ghostly wail for any rank seven dark path immortal material of equal value. It would be best if you have any black hole wood or dark thread algae.” Wu Ma Yang announced.

The Gu Immortals below were silent for a while before someone said: “I have dark thread algae.”

Wu Ma Yang nodded in joy, he was about to answer when someone said: “I have black hole wood, I will exchange for your ghostly wail.”

After some negotiation, Wu Ma Yang left the stage in satisfaction.

In the recent years, due to the five regions’ Earth Trenches emerging, Eastern Sea gained an abundant source of cultivation resources even though they had the fewest Earth Trenches.

Wu Ma Yang’s ghostly wail was likely obtained from them.

Even though Eastern Sea Gu Immortals interacted often and held auctions commonly, they were mostly small events, how could they be as large as Fang Yuan’s banquet. The qi sea banquet involved the entire Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world after all!

Treasure yellow heaven’s transactions had gone up in numbers due to the Earth Trenches, but treasure yellow heaven charged a fee for every transaction done.

The transaction fee of treasure yellow heaven varied according to the intensity of the treasure light, therefore, the more valuable the transaction item, the higher the transaction fee one would have to pay.

Rank seven immortal materials were already quite valuable, Wu Ma Yang tried to save as much cost as he could.

After Wu Ma Yang walked down, another Gu Immortal went up, selling a lump of fire.

This fire was yellow inside and orange outside, it was filled with deep death energy. Once it was taken out, the surrounding air became dry like a desert, the temperature rose sharply.

“This is drought zombie flame.” The Gu Immortal who sold this flame smiled.

He came from Su clan, an Eastern Sea super force, he was called Su Lun, a righteous path member.

Fang Yuan arranged them in the order of one righteous path followed by one lone immortal, this arrangement clearly took the Eastern Sea lone immortals into consideration, it was welcomed by them. And most wonderfully, he did not allocate any spots for demonic path Gu Immortals, it showed a certain political attitude of Qi Sea Ancestor.

Eastern Sea's righteous path did not get upset by this arrangement, after all, Qi Sea Ancestor was a lone cultivator in Eastern Sea himself.

The drought zombie flame caused a slight commotion, it was a rank eight level flame, Fang Yuan had to wave his hand lightly as he forced the flame to gather into a tight lump.

The temperature of the qi sea banquet gradually returned to normal.

“I am sure many people know what flame this is already. But I am not just selling the flame today, I am also adding in a drought immortal zombie lifespan extension method. This method can allow a Gu Immortal who is near their lifespan limit to use the flame and become a drought immortal zombie. I am sure everyone has heard of the drought immortal zombie, its battle strength rivals rank eight Gu Immortals.”

But there was a lack of interest in this among the Gu Immortals.

Currently, everyone knew about Heavenly Court's plan to repair fate Gu. Once they succeed, immortal zombies would likely cease to exist. If fate is restored, the world would not allow dead people to exist, they would all need to remain dead.

Therefore, becoming a drought immortal zombie did not have good prospects.

After a while, a Gu Immortal asked: “Can a rank seven Gu Immortal convert into a drought immortal zombie as well?”

Su Lun nodded: “Of course, but the drought immortal zombie body would not be complete, it would only be a small drought immortal zombie, the battle strength will also be at rank seven.”

He did not dare to deceive anyone, in this situation, experts were everywhere, they would likely notice the truth. By then, he would have publicly offended Qi Sea Ancestor, a rank eight great expert, at his banquet, that was a problem that Su Lun and Su clan would not want to create.

When Eastern Sea's righteous path sent representatives to this banquet, did anyone not bring gifts along with them?

In contrast, only a small portion of the lone and demonic immortals did this.

After all, Eastern Sea's righteous path forces had a lot of territory and businesses, they needed a good relationship with Qi Sea Ancestor. Meanwhile, most of the lone and demonic immortals were alone, they did not have much restraints.

Su Lun did not manage to make any trades in the end.

But a few Gu Immortals expressed their interest, they were willing to negotiate, it might be sold if the cost was lowered enough.

"This drought zombie flame likely came from Eastern Sea's Zombie Alliance." Fang Yuan thought to himself, he had obtained the inventory list of Zombie Alliance from Shadow Sect's inheritance, among which, there were several drought zombie flames in Eastern Sea's Zombie Alliance headquarters.

Back then, Spectral Soul tried to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, he exposed Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance. Spectral Soul failed, Eastern Sea's Zombie Alliance was mobilized in the effort and reduced to nothing, it was wiped out by the combined effort of Eastern Sea's righteous path.

Looking at the location, Su clan was one of the closest forces to Eastern Sea's Zombie Alliance headquarters. Other than them, there was Qing Yue clan, Song clan, and Hua clan.

After the drought zombie flame, another Eastern Sea Gu Immortal walked up the stage.

He slowly walked up and took glances at Qi Sea Ancestor from time to time. He saw that Fang Yuan had no response, his eyes were shut and he was relaxed.

This Eastern Sea Gu Immortal calmed down slightly, he let out a breath of air as he said in a hoarse voice: “I came here to exchange Immortal Gu.”

Saying this, he spread open his hand and revealed an Immortal Gu.

Instantly, a bloody smell spread out rapidly, many of the immortals’ hearts pounded intensely.

This was the first Immortal Gu transaction since the banquet started!

Everyone focused their attention and looked at this ladybug-like Gu, it was small and delicate, with a bright red shell and an iron-black belly and head. Listening closely, one could seem to hear a thumping heartbeat from inside the ladybug. The sound of this heartbeat was very faint, but the more one listened, the louder and louder it got, echoing with the rhythm of the heartbeat of the Gu Immortal, thus affecting the heartbeat of the Gu Immortal as well.

The immortals were a little shocked, some of the weaker rank six Gu Immortals here grunted, some had pale faces, they were evidently affected.

“What Immortal Gu is this? Even Gu Immortals got injured, while mortals definitely cannot approach it.”

“It is clearly a blood path Immortal Gu.”

“This Drowning Uncle is too daring, he is publicly selling a blood path Immortal Gu at the qi sea banquet, is he not afraid that Qi Sea Ancestor and the Eastern Sea righteous path members would take action?”

“Drowning Uncle is a demonic path immortal, who in Eastern Sea does not know that? Ancestor did not state that demonic immortals could get on stage but he still walked up so fearlessly.”



The immortals conversed among themselves, the righteous path Gu Immortals had ugly expressions, Drowning Uncle had killed countless people, but now he was feeling trepidation too.

He cultivated water path but was specialized at dealing with water path Gu Immortals, he drowned countless mortals and even targeted many Gu Immortals of the righteous path, he was a heinous person with many sins committed.

Until now, he was still under the arrest warrant of five super forces in Eastern Sea.

During normal times, the righteous path Gu Immortals would have ganged up to attack him already, but now was the qi sea banquet, it was Qi Sea Ancestor's event, who would dare to act rashly here?

Regarding Drowning Uncle's matter, all the Gu Immortals turned to look at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was still calm and composed, as if he was resting, he said nothing.

After looking at Fang Yuan for a while, they gradually understood that Qi Sea Ancestor was likely not going to take action here.

Drowning Uncle became very excited, he had made the right gamble! He was greatly daring, if not, why would he go against Eastern Sea's righteous path forces? At the same time, he was meticulous and did not take risks blindly.

"Since ancestor allowed me to join the banquet, it meant that he would not do anything to me. Otherwise, he could have done so when I arrived. Such a person is high and mighty, why would he spend effort on a small fry like me?"

Thinking so, Drowning Uncle spoke: "This is rank seven heart blood Immortal Gu, I caught it inside an Earth Trench, will anyone exchange for it?"

After a momentary silence, many Gu Immortals quickly bid for it.

But no righteous path member took part.

Blood path was created by Blood Sea Ancestor, it had flourished for a while before the five regions' righteous path suppressed and sealed it. Blood Sea Ancestor was extremely capable, he actually set up his blood path inheritance in all five regions, causing blood path to continue existing until today, while the righteous path forces all tried to research on it secretly.

Transactions of Immortal Gu were only done through exchange for other Immortal Gu.

There was no bidding here, it only depended on what Immortal Gu Drowning Uncle wanted.

There were many Gu Immortals who wanted to exchange for it, many took out water path Immortal Gu. Water path was the most common path in Eastern Sea, the number of water path Immortal Gu was also highest in Eastern Sea.

This heart blood Immortal Gu had incredible strength just from seeing it, it would have a great effect if used in battle.

In normal situations, Gu Immortals could not cultivate many paths due to conflicting dao marks. But Eastern Sea had many Gu Immortals cultivating blood path, most of those primarily cultivated blood path, while several rank sevens and sixes cultivated it on the side.

Seeing this, Eastern Sea's righteous path Gu Immortals had even uglier expressions.

Eastern Sea had many secluded cultivators, but to think that only heart blood Immortal Gu would cause so many blood path Gu Immortals to show themselves.

But Fang Yuan was not surprised.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, blood path was extremely popular, after the five regions merged, the number of blood path Gu Immortals rose drastically, by the time of the five regions chaotic war, blood path became a mainstream path that could not be banned anymore.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan was one of these people.

“I can try to get this heart blood Immortal Gu, Song Zi Xing’s inheritance had a heart blood premonition killer move, it is most appropriate to use this heart blood Immortal Gu as the core.”

Fang Yuan developed this thought, Zhang Yin started to speak: “I want this heart blood Immortal Gu, I have several rank seven water path Immortal Gu, you can pick any one of them. Furthermore, I will owe you a favor.”

This was the first time a rank eight Gu Immortal had spoken in the auction, the surroundings went silent the moment he spoke.

# Chapter 1886 - Red Heart Leaves, New Board Owner

## 1886 Red Heart Leaves, New Board Owner

The moment Zhang Yin spoke, because of his rank eight dominance, all the competitors backed off. Not only could they not outbid a rank eight Gu Immortal, even if they did, they would have offended this rank eight lone immortal.

Sometimes, lone immortals were scarier than righteous path rank eights, they were unrestrained and free, they did not have so many concerns like the righteous path members.

As for why Zhang Yin had an interest in heart blood Immortal Gu, that was his business, the Gu Immortals could not ask him why.

As the Heavenly Court representative, Jun Shen Guang watched this with deep worry.

Qi Sea Ancestor hosted this banquet that publicly traded Immortal Gu and immortal materials, it satisfied the needs of many Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

After this banquet, Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals would have an abundance of suitable cultivation resources, their battle strength would rise sharply.

This was great news for Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world, but for Heavenly Court, it was not so good.

Especially after Qi Sea Ancestor declared earlier that this qi sea banquet would be held annually! That was very frequent, Jun Shen Guang could not

help but think: Is this Qi Sea Ancestor too free and bored? He wants to hold banquets every year, isn't it tiring? Different from treasure yellow heaven and other auctions, he is not collecting any fees, what is he after then?

“It seems that Qi Sea Ancestor is not without ambitions, he is trying to raise his reputation. Making use of the qi sea banquets to solidify his influence and reputation every year, in the future, whether he joins Heavenly Court or stays in Eastern Sea, he will benefit greatly.”

“I heard that Qi Sea Ancestor has many descendants, in the future, when these people roam Eastern Sea under Qi Sea Ancestor's name, they will be well received by every force they visit.”

As a Heavenly Court rank eight, Jun Shen Guang was astute, he gradually saw through some arrangements and plans.

At this moment, information came from Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei told Jun Shen Guang that he had to cooperate with other Gu Immortals and buy heart blood Immortal Gu without raising any suspicions.

Jun Shen Guang frowned.

He was not confused about why Heavenly Court wanted this blood path Immortal Gu, the truth was, Heavenly Court had been researching blood path all along, with great success.

Jun Shen Guang felt troubled as he transmitted secretly: “The situation has changed, earlier, Zhang Yin took action and bid for this heart blood Immortal Gu using a high price.”

Fairy Zi Wei who was in Heavenly Court hesitated for a moment, she arranged: “Then continue to observe them, I will ask others to do it.”

Jun Shen Guang was a Heavenly Court representative, if he fought with Zhang Yin over a blood path Immortal Gu, Heavenly Court's reputation would take a huge hit.

In Fairy Zi Wei's original plan, he was only meant to help out.

Heavenly Court placed great importance on this qi sea banquet, they sent people like Jun Shen Guang to come openly, but there were also secret members that were hidden among the rank six and seven immortals.

“Haha, this is a coincidence, I am interested in this heart blood Immortal Gu as well.” Yang Jun suddenly spoke.

Right when Zhang Yin thought that he was about to succeed, this Eastern Sea rank eight lone immortal also joined the competition.

This change of events stunned many immortals, even Fang Yuan became slightly puzzled as surprise flashed in his eyes.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Yang Jun participated in the battle over Dragon Palace.

He had an Immortal Gu House called Fragrant Treasure Horse Chariot, while chasing after Dragon Palace, he found Fang Yuan’s traces and ruined his chances of sneaking up on it.

Afterwards, Yang Jun suddenly helped out Duke Long and helped him to suppress the rank eight Immortal Gu House’s resistance, before capturing it.

After that, Yang Jun went into concealment and vanished without a trace.

During the battle of repairing fate Gu, Yang Jun did not appear to help Heavenly Court.

During the battle, Heavenly Court was in a difficult spot, there was no way they would have any forces left unused. But Yang Jun did not show up, this showed that he was not a Heavenly Court member, he likely had some sort of agreement with Heavenly Court and would only act once for them.

“Then, is he working for Heavenly Court now?” Fang Yuan had a thought that flashed by.

This was not easy to deduce.

Even with Fang Yuan's deep wisdom path attainment, due to the lack of clues and evidence, he could not be sure of it.

Regardless of the situation, Fang Yuan instructed Zhang Yin to act more forcefully and try to obtain this Immortal Gu.

Thus, Zhang Yin smiled: "Yang Jun, the truth is I really like this Immortal Gu. If you insist, maybe we can spar to decide this?"

Yang Jun frowned as he thought: "Zhang Yin wants this Immortal Gu even if he has to fight? Qi Sea Ancestor was able to defeat him in one move because of his overwhelming strength! But if I fight him, it will likely be a draw."

"Sigh, do I continue this and help Heavenly Court?"

Yang Jun fell into hesitation.

When he was at his lowest, he received Heavenly Court's help, he owed them one favor, promising he would do one thing for them.

This favor was just too heavy to bear, it became Yang Jun's worry eventually.

Yang Jun thought about it, he decided to repay Heavenly Court's favor and resolve this agreement.

"This is a good chance, if I do not act here, during the five regions chaotic war, Heavenly Court will ask me to deal with Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals and I won't be able to reject them."

"Thankfully, I know about Drowning Uncle's situation."

Thinking about this, Yang Jun smiled: "Zhang Yin, don't be so impatient. It is not important to spar, this heart blood Immortal Gu belongs to Drowning Uncle, I am sure that this water path Immortal Gu I am offering will satisfy him greatly."

Saying so, Yang Jun took out an Immortal Gu.

Drowning Uncle saw it and beame overjoyed, he shouted: “Let’s do it, I’ll exchange for this Immortal Gu.”

Zhang Yin was dazed.

What could he do now? Everyone was watching, he could not snatch it, otherwise, Qi Sea Ancestor would need to stop him.

Even though they were in cahoots, they needed to act under their respective roles now.

They had to keep up the act after all.

Zhang Yin could not take action, neither could Qi Sea Ancestor.

Right at this moment, Yang Jun stood up from his seat, he grabbed onto heart blood Immortal Gu and tossed the water path Immortal Gu to the other party.

The immortals showed varying expressions.

Yang Jun moved extremely quickly, he had evidently used an immortal killer move, wasn’t he too impatient?

Yang Jun let out a breath of air, he relaxed as he sat down, placing heart blood Immortal Gu into treasure yellow heaven.

Buying or selling Immortal Gu in treasure yellow heaven was very costly, but Heavenly Court did not mind it with their huge assets.

Fairy Zi Wei obtained heart blood Immortal Gu and quickly gave it to someone else.

This person cultivated within Demon Judgment Board all his time, after getting heart blood Immortal Gu, he shouted in joy: “Success has arrived!”

He got out of Demon Judgment Board, all the surroundings surged with blood light, fragrance spread as clouds resounded with immortal music, bloody petals flew in the sky like raining flowers.



He was tall and had a handsome face, he smiled lightly and had a headband on his forehead, there was a lump of blood light behind his head.

A formless flight of stairs seemed to have formed in the air as he walked down slowly.

Fang Zheng was cultivating in front of the Demon Judgment Board, upon seeing this, he knelt on the ground and said: "Fang Zheng greets master!"

"Get up, my disciple. I have gotten a crucial Immortal Gu, the blood path method that I conceptualized my entire life finally has its core and foundation. After staying in this Demon Judgment Board for hundreds of years, it is finally time for me to leave."

This rank eight Gu Immortal spoke warmly, he stretched his arm as a formless force helped Gu Yue Fang Zheng to stand up.

Fang Zheng cupped his fist again: "Congratulations, master."

Ever since the Eastern Sea journey, he got captured by Shen Cong Sheng and was brought back to Heavenly Court afterwards.

Qin Ding Ling observed his luck, she suggested to Fairy Zi Wei that he could be the next Demon Judgment Board Lord.

After Fairy Zi Wei discussed with Duke Long, they agreed to this.

Fang Zheng thus came to the Demon Judgment Board to cultivate, he became the disciple of the current Demon Judgment Board Lord.

Demon Judgment Board was a rank eight Immortal Gu House with a long history. When Blood Sea Ancestor caused chaos in the five regions, Heavenly Court sensed danger and a Heavenly Court predecessor followed the revelation of fate Gu, finding a wild blood relation Immortal Gu.

Blood relation Immortal Gu was rank eight, after Heavenly Court captured it, they added it to Demon Judgment Board. This caused every single blood path cultivator in the world to be detected by Demon Judgment Board as long as they were not rank nine.

Heavenly Court relied on the information from Demon Judgment Board to execute their plans and exterminate the budding blood path trend in Central Continent. Furthermore, they passed the news from Demon Judgment Board to the other four regions, allowing their righteous path forces to deal with blood path more effectively.

Blood path had not flourished, it was suppressed fiercely, Demon Judgment Board was the key contributor to this.

After Blood Sea Ancestor created blood path, Heavenly Court had been researching it, their gains were the greatest compared to any force in the world.

The current Demon Judgment Board Lord, Red Heart Traveler, was a sole blood path cultivator, he had been in closed cultivation in Demon Judgment Board for years, researching and gaining great results, he allowed Heavenly Court's blood path to be far ahead of the five regions.

Spiritual light flashed as Nine Spiritual Fairy suddenly appeared, she went to Red Heart Traveler: "Red Heart, I was ordered to come here and gather with you, we are going to Western Desert to find trouble with Fang clan."

Red Heart Traveler nodded slightly, instructing Fang Zheng before he left: "Demon Judgment Board cannot be without an owner at all times, my disciple, you will take over as Demon Judgment Board Lord after I leave. My inheritance is inside the board, not just that, the cultivation experiences of the past generations of Board Lords are also inside. From now on, you will cultivate inside Demon Judgment Board, it will benefit you greatly, I hope you can work hard and not slacken, don't waste this fortune."

"Yes master, I will remember your teachings, I will never forget it." Gu Yue Fang Zheng quickly replied.

"Mm." Red Heart Traveler nodded before turning around and leaving.

He and Gu Yue Fang Zheng had a very shallow relationship, if Fairy Zi Wei had not given orders, he would not have taken him in as a disciple.

Their relationship however, provided him a huge help.

“Luck is truly profound and mystical. Earlier, Senior Qin Ding Ling told me that if I accept Fang Zheng as my disciple, once we become master and disciple in name, I would be able to use his luck to aid in my own cultivation.”

“To think that I gained so much in just a short period of time, before leaving, I should go and visit Senior Qin Ding Ling first.” Red Heart Traveler said with deep emotions.

Nine Spiritual Fairy nodded.

They were in no rush for time.

After Qin Ding Ling returned to Heavenly Court, she stayed in a specialized Immortal Gu palace.

After the two met Qin Ding Ling, she inspected their luck, Nine Spiritual Fairy’s luck had nine spiritual lights, they were clear and clean, like leaves after withstanding a storm, they brought benefit to the world, giving off an aura of prosperity.

Red Heart Traveler’s luck was like a sun or blood pill, it was round and perfect without any flaws, it had just emerged from the clouds, grand and vast, it was truly an amazing sight. This showed that after years of closed cultivation, Red Heart Traveler had finally emerged to travel the world, he was going to spread his radiance throughout the five regions.

Qin Ding Ling smiled as she told them that this would be a smooth trip, as long as they followed the plan, nothing bad would happen.

After the two said goodbye to Qin Ding Ling, they flew in the sky, passing by Embroidered Tower, they saw a Gu Immortal stationed there in a daze, not moving at all.

Nine Spiritual Fairy looked down at Red Heart Traveler as she sighed: “This is Feng Jiu Ge, after the loss in the River of Time, he became this

despondent.”

Red Heart Traveler shook his head as his expression turned grim: “He is comprehending his Dao now, when I was in closed cultivation in the board, I often fell into this state, we cannot interrupt him.”

Nine Spiritual Fairy showed a look of surprise: “Oh? No wonder Fairy Zi Wei is letting him do as he pleases. I am embarrassed, I inherited the nine spiritual transformations inheritance, I have cultivated it wholeheartedly and did not modify it, so I was unaware of this.”

Red Heart Traveler consoled her: “Your nine spiritual transformations is the greatest transformation path inheritance in Heavenly Court, it has been modified by countless generations of predecessors, it is near the point of perfection that cannot be modified any further.”

Even though he cultivated blood path, he had an extremely gentle temperament, he was as soothing as the spring winds.

Nine Spiritual Fairy smiled: “Back then, when master gave me the true inheritance, he said my aptitude was insufficient. Compared to geniuses like you, I can only feel admiration and envy.”

The two immortals talked and laughed as they left Central Heaven Gate, entering white heaven and going towards Western Desert.

# **Chapter 1887 - Banquet Ends, Desire to Enter Dragon Whale**

## **1887 Banquet Ends, Desire to Enter Dragon Whale**

Eastern Sea. Swish swish swish!

Waves crashed onto the rocks by the island shore, bursting into white bubbles upon impact.

Wicked winds howled, the sky was dark.

This uninhabited island was not eye-catching in the huge Eastern Sea, but it actually hid four Gu Immortals.

The four Gu Immortals were injured, one was lying down, either dead or alive, the other three were sitting and trying to heal their injuries.

A moment later, someone coughed as he spat out mouthfuls of blood.

“Lord!” The other two immortals who were still conscious quickly stopped healing their injuries as they gathered towards him.

The person coughing blood was Miao Ming Shen.

This Gu Immortal cultivated space path, he had rank seven cultivation level, he was famous among Eastern Sea’s lone immortals, he had a huge network and influence.

Miao Ming Shen was neither tall nor short, neither fat nor thin. In terms of appearance, he looked ordinary, only his flat and wide nose left a heavy impression on others.

In terms of appearance, he was unassuming. But he was an ambitious person, being very good at building relationships, he had a lot of charisma. Three Eastern Sea lone immortals, Immortal Hua Die, Feng Jiang, and Gui Qi Ye all looked to Miao Ming Shen as their leader, the four were a group of Gu Immortals with common interests.

But now, Gui Qi Ye was unconscious, his body was covered in a poisonous purple color, he was in great danger.

Miao Ming Shen wiped the blood off his face as he spoke with a pale expression: “My injuries... cough cough.. are not an issue! Gui Qi Ye’s condition is more severe.”

“That’s right, Gui Qi Ye was hit by the ice poison starfish, we do not have the way to heal him.” Immortal Hua Die was very worried.

Feng Jiang’s expression was cold as ice: “The ice poison starfish might have a troublesome poison, but I’ve heard that Su Chen and Fairy Jiu Yue can heal it.”

Miao Ming Shen shook his head and sighed: “Fairy Jiu Yue has some relationship with Ren Xiu Ping while Su Chen is attending the qi sea banquet, we cannot go and expose our identities and secrets. We can only rely on ourselves to heal him. I intend to use the extreme time pole to exchange for underworld yellow water and cleanse the poison of the ice poison starfish.”

“Lord...” Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang were both moved.

Miao Ming Shen laughed: “Just one rank eight immortal material to save Gui Qi Ye, it is worth the price. Speaking of which, we need to thank that demon Fang Yuan, if he did not defeat Heavenly Court this time, they would not have purchased time path immortal materials from treasure yellow heaven so frantically.”

Immortal Hua Die nodded as she sighed: “Indeed, that demon Fang Yuan actually obtained a Red Lotus true inheritance, he is able to control the stone lotus island, Heavenly Court suffered a great defeat, their losses were too severe!”

Feng Jiang was a little worried: “This demon Fang Yuan is too crafty, Heavenly Court is without options against him. Now that Fang Yuan has a Red Lotus true inheritance, he is finally a huge influence. If he is not stopped, this Fang Yuan will become more terrifying, the entire world will be threatened by him.”

Immortal Hua Die smiled: “Feng, you are worrying too much, how can any of us deal with a powerful person like Fang Yuan, the world is so huge, will we ever meet him? Even if heaven collapses, giants will hold up the sky. Heavenly Court will not let him off, we just need to watch this quietly.”

This time, Fang Yuan used the stone lotus island to cause great harm to Heavenly Court, he naturally did not waste this chance, he put up the video of Heavenly Court losing in treasure yellow heaven, letting the entire world view it.

This way, Fang Yuan’s reputation and prestige rose again, while Heavenly Court’s fame was heavily damaged.

It was logical that Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang knew about this situation.

But what they did not know was, Fang Yuan had disguised as Chu Ying and got close to them, he saved their lives before.

Miao Ming Shen sighed deeply to himself.

He had deep ambitions, he was not willing to lead a normal life.

Otherwise, he would not create a wide network and many connections, he even got the loyalty of Feng Jiang, Immortal Hua Die, and Gui Qi Ye.

As an ambitious Gu Immortal, he had a complex feeling towards Fang Yuan's rise and immense strength.

Fang Yuan's rise was too fast, it had not been a hundred years, he already went from a mortal Gu Master to a rank seven Gu Immortal.

And how long did Miao Ming Shen take?

Hundreds of years!

In just this last period of time, Miao Ming Shen watched the rise of Fang Yuan, it was like a drama that played out before him.

Except he was not the main character.

He felt that both he and Fang Yuan were rank seven Gu Immortals, it was just that Fang Yuan had a rank eight Immortal Gu House and controlled the stone lotus island, which resulted in his victory over Heavenly Court.

But what about himself?

Miao Ming Shen looked at himself, he was truly pathetic!

He was heavily injured, Gui Qi Ye was on the verge of death while Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die were both injured. The cause of this was his enemy Ren Xiu Ping, who aggressively chased after them.

He was truly full of problems both internally and externally.

At this moment, Miao Ming Shen even questioned himself, was he wrong in trying to expand his network these years, was he wrong in getting the loyalty of these three immortals after so much hard work? If he was not wrong, why did he end up in this state?

He thought of Qi Sea Ancestor next.

Qi Sea Ancestor held his qi sea banquet and invited the Gu Immortals of Eastern Sea, it was such a huge event that Miao Ming Shen had heard of it



long ago, he wanted to attend it. But because of Ren Xiu Ping, he had to hide himself, he had lost this opportunity as a result.

Miao Ming Shen felt deep admiration and envy towards Qi Sea Ancestor.

“If I can follow Qi Sea Ancestor’s example and cultivate in seclusion, would I be able to get stronger, would I avoid suffering from the devious schemes of Ren Xiu Ping?”

Miao Ming Shen gritted his teeth, he quickly dispelled this thought that wavered his determination.

He let out a breath of air, he said to Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die: “Fang Yuan is having a good life, he is backed by several venerables and does not lack cultivation resources, he is also an otherworldly demon and has control of Spring Autumn Cicada.”

After pausing for a while, he added: “He is far beyond us, let’s save Old Gui first before we leave this place.”

Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die nodded in agreement.

Miao Ming Shen immediately connected to treasure yellow heaven and used the extreme time pole to exchange for underworld yellow water.

The transaction process was very smooth and no unexpected mishaps occurred.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court not only occupied the River of Time to restrict Fang Yuan from finding the stone lotus islands, they even worked with Southern Border’s righteous path to suppress Fang Yuan in treasure yellow heaven, stopping his businesses and aggressively buying time path immortal materials.

But in this life, Heavenly Court was in a much poorer state. Even though they still allied with Southern Border’s righteous path and suppressed Fang Yuan’s businesses in treasure yellow heaven, just their loss in the River of Time made them loss a huge amount of Immortal Gu, they needed to try to

refine these time path Immortal Gu rapidly, they needed to refine them before Fang Yuan tried doing so.

Thus, in this life, even though Heavenly Court did not lack time path immortal materials in their inventory, they intensified their actions of purchasing time path immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven.

Miao Ming Shen obtained the underworld yellow water much earlier than in the previous life.

Of course, he did not know the cause of it.

Next, Miao Ming Shen used the underworld yellow water to cleanse Gui Qi Ye's entire body.

He used just the right amount, after all, this water was also corrosive on an undefended Gu Immortal body.

Gui Qi Ye was completely cleansed of the poison, he slowly woke up and thanked Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen said some words of encouragement as Gui Qi Ye's eyes turned red from gratitude.

The four finally had the time to catch a breather, they started to think about their situation, how would they get out of this and deal with that accursed Ren Xiu Ping!

The four of them were just not enough.

Ren Xiu Ping was an enslavement path expert, he could fight a group on his own, this time, there were more than just him around, Ren Xiu Ping's group was far stronger and more numerous than Miao Ming Shen's group.

Gui Qi Ye pondered and said: "The reason why Ren Xiu Ping targeted us is because lord has the method to enter the blue dragon whale, it concerns Paradise Earth's true inheritance. Right now, we need to use this secret and invite allies to explore that Paradise Earth true inheritance before Ren Xiu Ping. If we are late and Ren Xiu Ping spreads news of this, not only will we

lose our initiative, we will also be the target of all the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals!”

Miao Ming Shen nodded in agreement.

Even though he did not like it, this was the only way now.

Regarding the secret of the blue dragon whale, it was better if fewer people knew of it. It was a pity that Ren Xiu Ping plotted against Miao Ming Shen, news would spread in a short time.

Following Gui Qi Ye’s method, not only would Miao Ming Shen gain a bunch of Gu Immortals to help him, gaining enough strength to fight Ren Xiu Ping and protect their own lives, they would even be able to explore the blue dragon whale, if they could gain anything inside, that would naturally be good.

In this situation, he had to give up some of his potential future profits and share the secret with more people.

Similar to the previous life, after Miao Ming Shen and the rest discussed this, they decided on the participating members, including Chu Ying.

When Fang Yuan received the invitation, he was still hosting the qi sea banquet.

During this period of time, more famous Eastern Sea Gu Immortals came to attend the banquet.

For example, Dragon Head Tortoise Immortal in adversity sea.

All sorts of famous people came, Fang Yuan gained a deeper understanding of Eastern Sea’s situation. Jun Shen Guang who was present also collected information here, the truth was, Southern Border, Northern Plains, and Western Desert also had people here trying to gain information, that went without saying!

Even though this was Fang Yuan’s first qi sea banquet, it had already caused a huge impact and influence, the Gu Immortals of the five regions were

very concerned.

Eastern Sea had too many spare resources after all, during this period, more Gu Immortals started to trade Immortal Gu.

Each transaction that succeeded meant that Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world would get slightly stronger, Jun Shen Guang and the rest felt deeper pressure.

If Fang Yuan wanted any of these Immortal Gu or immortal materials, he would get Zhang Yin to buy them for him.

He planned to stay here and remain motionless, he would just be a backdrop.

But this backdrop was something nobody could ignore or look down on.

“The time is about right, the qi sea banquet will end now.” Fang Yuan spoke.

The immortals were confused and felt perplexed, why was it ending so suddenly?

Fang Yuan smiled warmly: “Transactions will never stop, how long would it take? Everyone here has important things to do, it is not good that I keep everyone waiting here. I held this banquet so that all of you Eastern Sea friends can meet up and have a nice gathering. Now, this goal has been achieved.”

The truth was, he had things to do now, these people should scram and get out of his way.

Fang Yuan spoke politely, even if any Eastern Sea immortal was unhappy, they would not dare to defy the number one Eastern Sea immortal.

The immortals quickly stood up and said their goodbyes to Fang Yuan.

Song Qi Yuan and the rest left first, as leaders of their force, they were indeed busy with many things, they had a lot of territory to guard. Fang

Yuan's words were music in their ears.

# Chapter 1888 - Changes Midway

## 1888 Changes Midway

Several days later, on a nameless island in Eastern Sea. Eight Gu Immortals finally gathered.

Miao Ming Shen was the leader, other than him, Gui Qi Ye, Feng Jiang, and Immortal Hua Die were there. In addition, Zeng Luo Zi, Tu Tou Tuo, Tong Hua, and Fang Yuan were present.

“Even though I was reborn, it seems that the influence has not reached Miao Ming Shen.” Fang Yuan was disguised as Chu Ying, he observed without showing changes in his expression.

Similar to the previous life, Miao Ming Shen chose the same people without changes.

But Fang Yuan was very different now.

He was in a much better state than in the previous life.

In the previous life, at this time period, he could not annex Qi Sea grotto-heaven, he could only take the resources of Qi Sea grotto-heaven and the Five Xiang’s public grotto-heaven, consuming a portion of time. As for the rank nine killer move heaven form, it was still resisting Fang Yuan’s refinement and was not his yet.

And most regrettably, his plans in green ghost desert had failed, his soul path cultivation was obstructed and could not progress. At the same time,

his guts Gu productions fell drastically.

In this life, at this point, he had already annexed Qi Sea grotto-heaven, he had rank eight cultivation level and even became Qi Sea Ancestor, obtaining huge political power. Heaven form was refined long ago, but he did not find more grotto-heavens.

Green ghost desert developed rapidly, his soul path cultivation also progressed smoothly. The production of guts Gu was also many times of his highest records in history.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court dominated the River of Time, Fang Yuan had to fight desperately to escape.

But in this life, Fang Yuan dominated the River of Time, Heavenly Court suffered severe losses and their prestige was greatly affected. Despite this, Heavenly Court had no choice but to continue building Immortal Gu Houses, to send more reinforcements into the River of Time, they could not allow Fang Yuan to dominate the River of Time alone and find another Red Lotus true inheritance.

His position in the River of Time was easy to defend while hard to attack, Fang Yuan also had many arrangements in Western Desert, Eastern Sea, Profound Literature grotto-heaven, and Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, his progress was very smooth.

After rebirth, Fang Yuan worked hard and used the five regions and two heavens as his chessboard, he played many different pieces and set up arrangements everywhere, his gains were not just in the present but would continue increasing for future periods of time.

There was a similar situation as the previous life, Fang Yuan's businesses in treasure yellow heaven were suppressed and targeted by the joint efforts of Central Continent and the Southern Alliance.

Fang Yuan did not have any solution to this problem now.

Firstly, his influence on the Southern Alliance was falling gradually, he did not have much of a bargaining chip, only his second aperture Immortal Gu had an intense attraction to several Southern Border Gu Immortals.

Secondly, be it Heavenly Court or the Southern Alliance, they had deep foundations and assets, competing with them in treasure yellow heaven through price and quantity was not wise.

Fang Yuan's foundation was skewed towards Immortal Gu, Immortal Gu Houses, and secluded domains of heaven and earth. Most of his cultivation resources were used for his own strength. For example, guts Gu, if he sold them in treasure yellow heaven, this monopoly would be well received by the market, Southern Alliance would not affect his gains.

But Fang Yuan did not do that.

He chose to use most of the guts Gu on his own soul path cultivation.

He was still trying every way possible to raise his battle strength!

This decision made his business in treasure yellow heaven even worse, he fell into a disadvantage against them.

“In terms of immortal materials, I have even less compared to my previous life. I refined Immortal Gu multiple times and used too much of them. I also gained many subordinates this time, Lady White Rabbit, Sixth Hair, and Fairy Miao Yin died last time. But now, they are alive and well, I even took in the variant human alliance. Right now, the sovereign immortal aperture is also raising many snowmen, rockmen, hairy men, and others, I am trying to comprehend human path.”

Fang Yuan gained a lot more immortal materials than in his previous life, just the annexation of Lang Ya blessed land alone was an immense gain.

But his expenditure also increased as well. The refinement of luck path and wood path Immortal Gu, the nurturing of variant humans, the gathering of twelve different immemorial year beasts, his other clones needed resources,



he also faced several intense battles that required vast immortal essence, many Gu worms were lost during those fights...

All in all, be it internally or externally, Fang Yuan's situation was much better than the previous life.

His only weakness was the lack of immortal materials, he was running out of certain immortal materials already.

In this situation, Fang Yuan would not compete with Heavenly Court in treasure yellow heaven at all.

Heavenly Court was buying time path immortal materials, they wanted to obstruct Fang Yuan, their attitude was even stronger than the previous life, Fang Yuan chose to avoid them.

In this regard, he could not beat Heavenly Court alone, not to mention they had the Southern Alliance as well.

Fang Yuan's following plan was to obtain regret Gu and advance the bulk of his current Immortal Gu, this was the same as his previous life's plan.

He currently had a large number of rank six Immortal Gu, once they become rank seven, his battle strength would surge again in an all-rounded manner!

Cooking Luck Pot alone was worth anticipating.

"In the previous life, I lacked time and did not get Red Lotus' true inheritance, I had to act quickly in the blue dragon whale's immortal aperture and could not tackle it with peace of mind."

"This time, not only do I want regret Gu, I also want to try to get that Merit Obelisk, in fact, I want to get Paradise Earth's true inheritance and the blue dragon whale itself!"

Fang Yuan calculated his time well.

Very soon, Central Continent's Refinement Path Convention would start, they would try to repair fate Gu.

But that did not matter.

Fang Yuan put Zhan Bu Du in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, this clone lived up to his expectations, he progressed rapidly and smoothly. When Fang Yuan appeared, Zhan Bu Du would cooperate with him and annex Beast Calamity grotto-heaven without issues.

He would save a lot of time in that regard, it could all be used to tackle the blue dragon whale's tasks.

His early investment was growing like a snowball, soon, Fang Yuan would gain even more benefits.

Miao Ming Shen looked around and said solemnly: "Everyone, I have already explained the details of this expedition, I gave you all some time to consider. This is my first journey too, the risks are unknown, we might possibly die. If anyone wants to give up now, you can leave. I will definitely not stop anyone, I understand from the bottom of my heart."

Nobody backed out.

This involved Paradise Earth's true inheritance, even if their paths were different, the immortals still held great expectations towards it.

These days, they had been thinking about what could be inside this blue dragon whale.

They did not know that Fang Yuan, who was beside them, already had a reliable plan to work with.

Similar to the previous life, before the immortals set off, Zeng Luo Zi went ahead to make the alliance agreement.

Next, the immortals went into the sea and used a method to find out each other's location.

After that, they went into the undercurrent with Miao Ming Shen taking the lead, they moved around through twists and turns, Fang Yuan was mixed among them as they followed Miao Ming Shen.

He had already made arrangements at the area that the blue dragon whale appeared in the previous life, but he did not receive information about the arrival of the blue dragon whale.

If not for Miao Ming Shen, he indeed might not find the blue dragon whale.

There were eight immortals here, they continued to travel for days. They used several undercurrents to travel, if there were no undercurrents, they would travel under the sea as well, being extremely low profile. Even if they met desolate beasts or ancient desolate beasts, they avoided them. If they saw any resources, they would ignore them.

Along the way, the immortals were led by Miao Ming Shen as they conversed, the atmosphere was quite harmonious and lively.

Miao Ming Shen also became the central member of this group subtly, he managed the relationship between everyone meticulously, he was truly skilled at interpersonal communication.

The immortals traveled with days and nights without stopping.

Miao Ming Shen was afraid that Ren Xiu Ping would expose this matter, so he had to race against time.

Suddenly, he slowed down as he showed an excited expression: "We are getting close!"

The immortals were energized.

Fang Yuan frowned lightly, similar to the previous life, he had been using investigative methods on Miao Ming Shen all along, he could not tell what method Miao Ming Shen was using to search for the blue dragon whale.

And their current location was completely different from the previous life as well.

As the blue dragon whale got closer, the immortals started to notice something strange.

The seawater became more turbulent, desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts increased in numbers, Fang Yuan and the rest had to resist them as they advanced, slaughtering desolate beasts as they forcefully created a path filled with blood.

The immortals fought desperately while Fang Yuan showed a peculiar expression.

In the previous life, he had fallen for it, but this time, he was experienced, after considering this situation, he saw some of the peculiarities in this situation.

“It seems that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s test started in the sea. If I try to die now, will I get transported into the blue dragon whale’s immortal aperture?”

Fang Yuan felt that it was likely but he did not want to take the risk.

To play safe, he would follow his actions in the previous life, ‘dying’ after a certain amount of time.

“Who is it?!” Right at this moment, Zeng Luo Zi shouted as he sent a killer move behind him, towards his left.

The killer move did not have offensive power but several figures appeared immediately.

“As expected of Zeng Luo Zi, this is a wonderful investigative method.” The leading Gu Immortal smiled as he spoke, his aura surged as it destroyed Zeng Luo Zi’s investigative method while also sweeping towards Miao Ming Shen and the rest.

Fang Yuan saw him and felt slightly dazed: “Why is Shen Cong Sheng here as well?”

This was different from the previous life.

This person who only said one sentence and broke Zeng Luo Zi's investigative killer move was none other than Shen clan's first supreme elder, Shen Cong Sheng.

This was a righteous path rank eight Gu Immortal!

Miao Ming Shen and the rest only had rank seven cultivation level, they were completely outmatched.

Not only did Shen Cong Sheng come, he even had many Gu Immortals with him, there were Shen clan members and also lone cultivator experts like Ren Xiu Ping.

Fang Yuan had a shocked expression, he was obviously acting. His main body was here, not just Shen Cong Sheng, even if four of Eastern Sea's righteous path rank eights came here, Fang Yuan would not fear them.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were truly shocked.

The enemies were too powerful, there was no way of contesting them.

What should they do?

# Chapter 1889 - Entering the Aperture

## 1889 Entering the Aperture

“Why are they here?!” Immortal Hua Die gasped, she felt her body turning cold.

“If not for the dangerous situation, if I did not sense this mild peculiarity, I would not have found these people. Quickly leave!” Zeng Luo Zi urged as he said anxiously.

“There is a traitor among us! We need to split up!” Miao Ming Shen said with an ashen expression, he understood already. He looked around at Tu Tou Tuo, Tong Hua, Zeng Luo Zi, and paused when he looked at Fang Yuan.

Evidently, his biggest suspicion was Chu Ying because he did not know about this person’s background.

“Hahaha, I wanted to follow you all into the blue dragon whale, but since you found out, none of you will escape.” Shen Cong Sheng said as he moved his finger, sound waves spread out and shot towards Miao Ming Shen and the rest.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were surrounded by these sound waves as their speed fell drastically.

Ssssssssh—!

Shen Cong Sheng started whistling in the depths of the sea.

Immortal Hua Die gasped as she was tied up by countless sound waves, Shen Cong Sheng dragged her away immediately.

“Hua Die!” Feng Jiang watched and stared with a furious expression, he tried to help her but was too weak, Shen Cong Sheng captured him too.

Shen Cong Sheng had rank eight cultivation level, his sound path methods were quite profound. In the previous life, he captured rank eight Gu Immortal Old Man Bei Feng alive in Hidden Dragon Cave, it was much simpler now to capture weaklings like Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang.

“Leave!” Feng Jiang shouted loudly.

But soon, Shen Cong Sheng grabbed his neck and he fainted.

He snorted coldly: “Attack.”

The Shen clan Gu Immortals around him and Ren Xiu Ping found their targets and attacked.

They had followed behind closely, having already discussed among themselves who to fight. Not only was their attack coordinated, they helped each other out.

The only who attacked Fang Yuan was Shen clan Gu Immortal Shen Tan, he was an ordinary water path Gu Immortal.

He shot out a water ring that was the size of a vat, it flew towards Fang Yuan’s head.

Fang Yuan did not want to fight, he turned into a small seahorse that was palm sized, he moved like lightning speed.

Shen Tan missed his target, he was shocked and attacked with three more water rings, they appeared before Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan turned into a fish and swerved around with great agility, dodging all three rings.

Shen Tan's expression turned ugly, he called out to Ren Xiu Ping: "Lend me a hand."

Ren Xiu Ping was attacking Tong Hua with two vicious sharks. Hearing Shen Tan's words, he nodded: "Of course."

A vicious shark that was attacking Tong Hua quickly turned around and swam towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked around him, he found that if he got past this obstacle, he would be the frontmost person charging out.

He quickly stopped as he pretended to be obstructed by the vicious shark.

Because of this, Shen Tan laughed loudly as he moved his four water rings, blocking Fang Yuan: "Where can you run to now?"

He had no idea who he had obstructed, if he knew Chu Ying's true identity, he would be shivering in fear now.

Fang Yuan pretended to be trapped while patiently observing his allies.

Tu Tou Tuo was also obstructed, as an earth path cultivator, his speed was not fast, it was even slower in water.

Tong Hua was busy dealing with two of Ren Xiu Ping's vicious sharks.

Zeng Luo Zi was like a white ghost in the sea, he moved around swiftly and competed with Shen clan's Shen Qi in speed, they were well ahead.

Gui Qi Ye and Miao Ming Shen moved together, when Shen clan's two Gu Immortals got close, he shouted: "Lord, quickly go, I will stop them."

He stopped as he pushed with his palms.

With a loud sound, a huge area of black fog spread out.



Shen clan's two Gu Immortals were moving too rapidly, they entered the fog and vanished into thin air.

“Old Gui, take care!” Miao Ming Shen knew the severity of the situation, he had tears in his eyes as he flew up.

Shen Cong Sheng suppressed Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die completely as he snickered: “Where are you going?”

Saying this, countless sound waves chased after Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen's hair stood on end as alerts rang in his mind, his gaze flashed like lightning as he grunted, activating his space path killer move.

His figure vanished instantly, appearing a hundred steps away. At the next moment, he vanished again, he moved a hundred steps further from Fang Yuan and the rest.

As he flickered continuously, Miao Ming Shen escaped and charged out of the sea.

Shen Cong Sheng gasped lightly, feeling surprised.

He had used a genuine rank eight method, Miao Ming Shen was actually able to escape from it, it was very impressive.

Miao Ming Shen was the most important person, Shen Cong Sheng did not care about Immortal Hua Die or Feng Jiang, he did not have time to store them into his immortal aperture, he tossed them to others and flew out to chase Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen charged out of the sea as sweat poured out of his forehead.

“My escaping method could usually move a hundred li with one flicker, but before Shen Cong Sheng, I could only move a hundred steps away. Is this the power of a rank eight Gu Immortal?”

Suddenly, there was a sound behind him as Shen Cong Sheng broke out of the sea.

Miao Ming Shen's body shook, his speed fell as he had fallen into Shen Cong Sheng's killer move's range once again.

Seeing that he was about to be captured, Miao Ming Shen struggled intensely, he felt deep despair in his heart.

Right at this moment, there was a shrill cry resounding.

An immemorial thunder phoenix flew over and attacked Shen Cong Sheng.

The immemorial thunder phoenix attacked fiercely, intense winds blew as Shen Cong Sheng's expression changed, he did not dare to be careless, he let off Miao Ming Shen for the time being and faced the immemorial thunder phoenix instead.

With a loud sound, the immemorial thunder phoenix sent Shen Cong Sheng flying into the sea again as huge waves were created.

Miao Ming Shen used this chance to flicker and escape, his body was covered in cold sweat.

At this time, he finally had time to observe the surroundings.

Only to see that above the sea, intense tornadoes surged in the sky, lightning flashed continuously as thunder rumbled, dark clouds extended to the horizons.

The sea was in a frenzy, waves surged from the sea, they were thousands of feet tall.

Countless flying birds and eagles fought intensely amidst the thunder and lightning.

Blue charm lightning shadows flickered in the dark clouds, they were hunted down by immemorial desolate beast thunder phoenix.

The situation was too dangerous!

“Where in the world did I end up at?!” Miao Ming Shen took a deep breath in shock.

“Catch them!” Right at this time, Shen Tan’s anxious voice could be heard behind him.

Just earlier, Shen Tan received the two captives that Shen Cong Sheng tossed him, Fang Yuan used that chance to not only destroy the water rings but also helped the others out.

Tong Hua, Zeng Luo Zi, and Fang Yuan got out of the sea, flying into the sky.

“Don’t think of running!” Shen Qi, Shen Tan, and Ren Xiu Ping chased after them.

At the same time, lightning flashed in the sky and shot towards the immortals.

The immortals quickly attacked to block it.

Another group of eagles flew down and scattered the group of people, the scene was a chaotic mess.

“All of you, scram!” At the next moment, an intense sound wave burst out from the depths of the sea.

Sound waves shot out of Shen Cong Sheng as he flew out of the sea and towards the sky in an instant, he waved both hands as two translucent sound waves moved around the battlefield like two sharp blades.

Immortal killer move — Aerial Sound Blades!

Wherever the sound blades went, be they eagles or lightning, they were all cut into two, even the immemorial thunder phoenix was injured and moved back.

A sound blade went around Tong Hua and quickly slit through Zeng Luo Zi’s throat.

Zeng Luo Zi stared with wide eyes as his head fell off his body.

A sound blade went after Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sighed to himself, he made a turn and burst out with speed, he charged on the closest route to the immemorial thunder phoenix.

At the next moment, his body became charred by lightning, he died on the spot.

Shen Cong Sheng did not even look at Fang Yuan's corpse, he went after Miao Ming Shen immediately.

Within the blue Dragon Whale Paradise.

Starting island.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes as he woke up.

"I arrived here after all." He stood up and looked around him.

The sea was blue with white waves, there was a golden sandy beach, the temperature was warm and nice, this was a serene location.

"Hmm?" Fang Yuan saw Zeng Luo Zi here as well.

He was clearly killed by Shen Cong Sheng's sound path killer move, he was beheaded. But now, he lay near the beach, he breathed normally but was unconscious, his head was still attached to his body.

"As expected." Fang Yuan was not surprised: "The illusion started long ago, within it, whoever dies would not die for real."

Fang Yuan was killed by the immemorial thunder phoenix and arrived here afterwards. Zeng Luo Zi was killed by Shen Cong Sheng but arrived here as well.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created Reincarnation Battlefield in Central Continent, it had a similar trait. Central Continent's ten great

ancient sects occupied that place and sent Gu Immortals to fight inside it. No matter who died inside, they would not lose their life, they would only sustain some injuries or damage if they died too many times.

Thus, Fang Yuan did not do anything earlier. Even if he killed Shen Cong Sheng, he would not die, he would even get transported here earlier, while Fang Yuan would have exposed his identity for no reason.

Fang Yuan waved his hand as a qi blade flew towards Zeng Luo Zi.

Zeng Luo Zi did not have any defenses up, but right before the qi blade landed and killed him, it vanished.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, turning around and leaving.

When Shen Cong Sheng woke up, he felt that his vision was still blurry, but a joyful sound was heard beside him: “First supreme elder, you finally woke up!”

Next, his vision cleared up, he saw Shen Qi, Shen Tan, Ren Xiu Ping, Miao Ming Shen, Hua Die, Feng Jiang, Tong Hua, and the rest, they were in a nervous standoff.

“What happened? Didn’t I die!” Shen Cong Sheng was internally shocked, he felt that this was unreal.

As a rank eight Gu Immortal, he lasted the longest in the illusion, he was also the final person who arrived.

“First supreme elder, this is likely Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s method, it is similar to Central Continent’s Reincarnation Battlefield.” Shen Tan said.

Shen Cong Sheng managed to calm down as he nodded: “This is indeed the style of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.”

At the next moment, his eyes flashed like lightning as he looked at Miao Ming Shen and the rest, asking directly: “How long have you been awake for?”

“We had just woken up too.” Shen Qi answered.

Shen Cong Sheng nodded, he looked at Miao Ming Shen, Immortal Hua Die, Feng Jiang, and Zeng Luo Zi.

These people were either captured or killed by him, but now, they were alive and well. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable truly had unfathomable methods!

# Chapter 1890 - Where is Chu Ying?

## 1890 Where is Chu Ying?

“Where are we? Tell me everything that you know!” Shen Cong Sheng said as he attacked Miao Ming Shen again.

The result was that his killer move vanished upon activation, Shen Cong Sheng grunted as blood flowed out of his nose, he had sustained injuries from the backlash of the killer move.

“First supreme elder, hold on, this place seems to forbid fighting. If you have the intention to fight, any killer move or Gu worm activation will fail. In contrast, healing yourself will not be obstructed.” Shen Tan said.

“Why didn’t you say that earlier?” Shen Cong Sheng stared with furious eyes.

Shen Tan felt wrongly accused as he thought to himself: “Wasn’t it because you acted too quickly?”

He could not say that of course, Shen Tan lowered his head and apologized.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest let out sighs of relief.

They were also healing their injuries.

When they woke up, they saw the Shen clan Gu Immortals around and attacked without thinking, they had suffered intense backlash as a result.

Shen Tan and the rest were in similar situations.

But at that time, Shen Cong Sheng had not woken up, nobody knew if a rank eight Gu Immortal would be restricted as well.

“It seems that even rank eight Gu Immortals cannot defy the arrangements of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.” Miao Ming Shen let out a breath of air, after seeing that Shen Cong Sheng had failed, he calmed down completely.

They were temporarily safe.

Shen Cong Sheng heard this as bright light flashed in his eyes: “It seems that we are inside the immortal aperture world of the blue dragon whale.”

Miao Ming Shen did not acknowledge or deny his words.

Gui Qi Ye who stood beside him stared at Tong Hua furiously: “Tong Hua! You betrayed us!”

Tong Hua lowered her head and did not speak, looking ashamed.

She was standing beside Ren Xiu Ping now.

The traitor among Miao Ming Shen’s group was her.

Earlier, when Shen Cong Sheng used his killer move in the illusion, he avoided her, everyone saw that.

And now, her status was exposed.

Immortal Hua Die had a cold expression: “Fairy Tong Hua, to think my lord trusted you so deeply, when you had to fix your immortal aperture after tribulation, he helped you so much. Not only did he help you, he even invited you to explore the blue dragon whale, you actually betrayed our kindness with enmity! Why did you betray us? Where is your conscience?”

Tong Hua wanted to speak but she turned around and stopped looking at Miao Ming Shen and the rest.



Miao Ming Shen sighed heavily as he stopped Immortal Hua Die: “Fairy Tong Hua probably has her own difficulties, forget it, everyone has their own goals.”

Tong Hua’s gaze flickered intensely.

“Lord... you are too kindhearted. How can we let this kind of people off?” Immortal Hua Die stomped her feet.

Ren Xiu Ping smiled arrogantly, he was the one who made Tong Hua a traitor: “Miao Ming Shen, you need to understand this situation clearly, you need to know who is the stronger side! Tong Hua was wise to have chosen us, if you surrender and hand over all your information, we might spare you.”

Immortal Hua Die was still furious about it, this was their fortuitous encounter but these people wanted to snatch it away and threatened them, she rolled her eyes as she called out: “I’m so scared, why don’t you come attack me, my entire body is shivering from fear.”

Shen Cong Sheng’s expression turned cold.

Ren Xiu Ping squinted as he smiled even more coldly: “Girl, you have a sharp tongue, do you think Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s methods can protect you for a lifetime? After you leave this place, when we get back to Eastern Sea, can any of you resist Lord Shen Cong Sheng? Even inside here, do you think Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangements are perfect without a single loophole?”

Immortal Hua Die’s expression froze.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest had grim expressions, especially Zeng Luo Zi, he looked at Shen Cong Sheng with fear in his eyes. After all, he was killed earlier by a killer move.

“It is uncertain who will win. Let’s go!” Miao Ming Shen did not want to waste time on arguments, he turned around and left this beach.

“This person had the special method to find the blue dragon whale, he definitely knows more than us. Follow him!” Shen Cong Sheng quickly ordered.

They could not fight now, following Miao Ming Shen was the best alternative.

The two groups walked with some distance between them, they moved in silence.

Soon, they got out of the beach, arriving in a dense forest.

“This forest is a bit strange, the leaves of the trees have empty heart shaped spaces at the center.” Immortal Hua Die said in confusion.

“Hmm, these are just ordinary trees.” Feng Jiang checked and touched a tree trunk with his hands.

With a soft sound, the tree that he touched collapsed, it shattered into a pile of wood dust.

“What is going on?” The immortals sensed a commotion and quickly gathered.

“These are not ordinary trees, they are rank seven immortal plants, cloud ladder trees.” Shen Cong Sheng looked as he said grimly.

They arrived as well.

Seeing that the rank eight Gu Immortal was standing beside them, Miao Ming Shen and the rest felt their hearts tighten but they quickly relaxed.

Gui Qi Ye said arrogantly: “Old Shen, do you think we are ignorant? I know about cloud ladder trees, this tree has dense wood path and cloud path dao marks. Every hundred years, it grows by ten inches, which is one step of a ladder. How can these be cloud ladder trees? With such a height, they have to be a hundred steps at least, that means these cloud ladder trees have lived for ten thousand years? Hehehe.”

But Shen Cong Sheng was calm and composed: “These are cloud ladder trees. You only know a portion of the details. Cloud ladder trees are a rank seven immortal material, the leaves of ten thousand year old cloud ladder trees would form the rank eight immortal material, cloud ladder leaf heart. Once all of the cloud ladder leaf hearts are taken away, the cloud ladder tree would collapse into a pile of wood dust, becoming an ordinary material.”

Gui Qi Ye was stunned before he smiled coldly again, pointing forward: “Then you mean to say that this dense forest is filled with ten thousand year old cloud ladder trees? Hehe, this is too laughable.”

Shen Cong Sheng nodded: “Cloud ladder trees are quite rare, of course, this forest isn’t made up of such a precious tree. But at the very least, this particular plant was a cloud ladder tree!”

Shen Cong Sheng was very certain while Gui Qi Ye stuck to his views, he pointed at a tree nearby: “Then according to Lord Shen Cong Sheng, this tree, this tree, and that tree are also ten thousand year old cloud ladder trees. Haha, look, all of their leaves have an empty heart shaped space. There are so many cloud ladder trees, how many rank eight immortal material cloud ladder leaf hearts are there? Isn’t there too much of this rank eight immortal material? How different is it from a plain cabbage you grow in your farm?”

The immortals were looking at Shen Cong Sheng, his expression also changed slightly.

On this island, investigative methods were not very useful, but he had already inspected his surroundings gradually.

He walked quickly and struck several tree trunks, once he touched these cloud ladder trees, they turned into wood dust.

Shen Cong Sheng gasped as he said to his subordinates: “These were all cloud ladder trees, but the leaf hearts on them had all been taken away. These are valuable rank eight immortal materials, quickly look for any that are left behind!”

The Shen clan Gu Immortals believed in Shen Cong Sheng, while Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua believed him to some extent, because of his reputation, they had to obey him and spread out to search.

As cloud ladder trees got destroyed one after another, none of the immortals found any cloud ladder leaf hearts.

The entire forest was made of cloud ladder trees, there were no trees left here.

Even while Shen Cong Sheng walked out of this dense forest, he started to suspect his own finding: “Are these really cloud ladder trees? If they are, there are simply too many of them, right?”

The immortals left the forest, they saw the yellow sandy ground, as wind blew, dust clouds moved in the air.

It was a desolate land.

This was everyone’s first impression.

“The air seems to have the smell of clear wind grass stems.” Shen Cong Sheng sniffed as he crouched down, moving the soil and exposing the holes in it.

Shen Cong Sheng’s expression changed.

At this time, Zeng Luo Zi also sensed something strange, he called out: “This place must have an entire field of clear wind grass stems planted here in the past, I’ve smelt this aroma before, it is this. There are holes here, each is as large as a fist, the walls of the holes are all smooth and round, this is the effect of the roots of clear wind grass stems.”

Miao Ming Shen was stunned: “Clear wind grass stem is a rank seven immortal material, this means that this area filled with holes was once an entire field of clear wind grass stems?”

“Even though it is unthinkable, don’t forget that we are inside the blue dragon whale now. This is the location of a Paradise Earth true

inheritance!” Hua Die’s words were like a stone dropped into the hearts of the immortals.

Shen Cong Sheng frowned as he looked at Miao Ming Shen, asking: “Why is there someone missing from your side?”

Miao Ming Shen was stunned, he realized why he had felt something strange earlier, after hearing this reminder, he understood, indeed, someone was missing.

“Chu Ying is not around!” Feng Jiang said grimly.

“Where did he go?”

“Speaking of it, he died really early, he should have arrived here long ago.”

“Did he awaken earlier than us, did he take away all of the immortal materials here?”

The immortals were all astute figures, because they were at conflict earlier and the atmosphere was tense, they did not think so much when exploring the island.

Once this topic started, everyone became anxious.

Shen Cong Sheng stopped following Miao Ming Shen, he moved rapidly and advanced.

Miao Ming Shen hesitated, he decided to follow.

The immortals quickly arrived in front of a huge pit.

This hole was tens of li wide, it was hundreds of feet deep, there were some fragments left in the hole.

Tu Tou Tuo picked up these fragments as he looked, shouting instantly: “Oh heavens! This is the rank seven immortal material rooster iron. Which bastard took everything away, only leaving behind these fragments?”

Tu Tou Tuo stared with wide eyes, he shouted loudly.

“Rooster iron only exists in mines exposed to open air. When roosters sing, heaven turns white[1], with such a wide span of rooster iron here, when wind blows, there will be resonance, rank eight immortal material heavenly white snow iron will be produced!” Shen Cong Sheng said with a cold tone: “We need to find that Chu Ying as quickly as we can.”

All the immortals were anxious.

All these immortal materials were likely taken by Chu Ying.

They needed to find him!

They quickly spread out and called his name but they could not find even a trace of Fang Yuan. All they saw were holes and pits, dried rivers and a large field of land with their plants uprooted and taken away.

[1] A saying from Chairman Mao

# **Chapter 1891 - Who Else Could It Be But Me?**

## **1891 Who Else Could It Be But Me?**

The island they were sent to was not big, the immortals did not gain anything from their exploration, they quickly gathered at the center of the island.

Over there, they made a shocking discovery!

A huge obelisk that seemed to be made of gold was radiating with a mild crystalline light.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House — Merit Obelisk!

The surface of Merit Obelisk had words appearing on it, introducing the background of this island and also the details of the Paradise Earth true inheritance.

To obtain the Paradise Earth true inheritance, one had to accept the missions on the Merit Obelisk, they would gain merit points when they complete these tasks. The more merits they had, the more valuable things they could exchange for.

If one did not accept this, they could only wait on this island, they could not leave and go to other places in the grotto-heaven world.

Of course, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was merciful and kind, he would not let them leave empty-handed. The immortal materials on this island were specially prepared for them to split among each other.

Three hundred days later, everyone would be transported away.

The immortals were shocked.

“There are immortal materials on this island after all. Those cloud ladder leaf hearts, clear wind grass stems, rooster iron and others were not fake.”

“They were all taken by someone! Damn it, he took literally everything, he left nothing for us at all.”

“It must be that Chu Ying.”

“Where is Chu Ying? Why have we not seen him?”

“I found Chu Ying!” Immortal Hua Die suddenly shouted.

The immortals quickly gathered towards her, they saw that on another side of the Merit Obelisk, by looking at where Immortal Hua Die pointed, they saw words that appeared on the Merit Obelisk.

Merit Board Ranking — Chu Ying, eighty-two merit points.

Other than Chu Ying, there were nobody else.

“This person!” Ren Xiu Ping gritted his teeth in anger.

Right at this moment, Chu Ying’s merit points jumped again, from eighty-two to ninety-three.

Next, the Merit Obelisk flashed.

The immortals quickly took steps back.

The light faded as Fang Yuan appeared.



“Chu Ying!” Feng Jiang cried out.

“You finally showed up.” Tu Tou Tuo had bloodshot eyes, he thought about the empty pit that was filled with rooster iron before.

“Oh, you are awake.” Fang Yuan nodded at them, he said in a plain tone.

“Hey, what is wrong with your attitude!” Shen Tan shouted in displeasure.

Fang Yuan’s indifferent attitude made every immortal furious.

Shen Cong Sheng stepped forward with a cold expression and overbearing tone: “Tell me, did you take all of the immortal materials on this island?”

“Who else could it be but me?” Fang Yuan retorted, he was indifferent about Shen Cong Sheng’s overbearing tone. He quickly got to the other side of the Merit Obelisk and quickly browsed through the missions.

The immortals were furiously staring at him.

This person had taken all the benefits but still acted so arrogantly!

Ren Xiu Ping said grimly: “We have seen the text on this obelisk, all of these immortal materials are arranged by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable for us. Chu Ying, isn’t it too much to take everything yourself? You owe us an explanation!”

Fang Yuan did not even look at him, he pressed his palm at the obelisk and took another mission.

Swoosh.

White light flashed, he vanished again.

The immortals were shocked.

Shen Qi shouted in anger: “This guy!”

“Where did he come from? He is completely disregarding Lord Shen Cong Sheng and us.” Ren Xiu Ping spoke with a livid expression, his voice was cold as ice.

“Investigate him after we go out.” Shen Cong Sheng was a rank eight after all, as the leader of Shen clan, he quickly calmed down and started to mimic Fang Yuan, walking to the Merit Obelisk.

“Chu Ying is acting so fearlessly, he is merely relying on the fact that we cannot attack him in this paradise.” Shen Cong Sheng thought to himself: “Chu Ying is merely a rank seven secluded lone immortal, we can deal with him later. The important thing now is this Merit Obelisk.”

Fang Yuan’s actions earlier were a great example to the immortals here.

In the previous life, Miao Ming Shen and the rest came to the obelisk with suspicion, they first distributed the immortal materials on the island before going to accept the missions.

But now, Fang Yuan woke up in advance, he acted first and ransacked the entire island.

The only thing left to these immortals was this Merit Obelisk.

There were many missions on this Merit Obelisk.

Helping the merfolk in South Coast City to excavate the golden lotuses on silver lake.

Round fish island was drying up, it needed wells to be built.

Three stripes tribe lacked medicine, there was a plague spreading, they needed a lot of medicinal herbs.

Piper tribe was stuck in a fog, they were asked to lead them out.

Aurora Mountain’s spirit spring had an issue that needed to be dealt with immediately.

...

The Gu Immortals watched with a dazed expression.

Similar to the previous life, they encountered the same situation again.

These missions were only described briefly, they were not detailed, the Gu Immortals could not gain any useful information.

For example, this mission: Three stripes tribe lacked medicine, there was a plague spreading, they needed a lot of medicinal herbs.

What kind of force was three stripes tribe? Were there Gu Immortals? Were they an ordinary force or super force?

A plague was spreading, what kind of plague was it? There were many kinds of plagues that even rank eight Gu Immortals did not dare to handle.

They needed a lot of medicinal herbs, what kind of herbs did they want? Immortal materials? What method did they need to use?

Nobody knew.

The Merit Obelisk only had this one line.

The immortals were really unaware of the situation.

“Does that Chu Ying know anything?” Someone muttered.

The immortals were silent, their hatred, anger, and suspicion towards Fang Yuan intensified again.

Even though Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was known for kindness, this was an unknown environment, even the rank eight Gu Immortal Shen Cong Sheng was barred from fighting, the Gu Immortals had to be vigilant.

And looking at the rewards on the Merit Obelisk.

There was a large amount of immortal materials and Immortal Gu that could be exchanged for using merits!

Of course, there were some peculiar things here like titles or mortal Gu.

Shen Cong Sheng immediately saw one rank five mortal Gu, it was called good deeds Gu, this was the first time he had seen such a Gu worm.

To exchange for a good deeds Gu, one needed fifty merit points, it was the most expensive mortal Gu.

But the actual effect of the Gu worm was not written on the Merit Obelisk, Shen Cong Sheng knew nothing about it.

However, it had to be unique and special for Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable to put it up as a reward.

After the immortals discussed among themselves, they realized that they had to try this to find out. Shen Cong Sheng was the first to act, he quickly walked up to the obelisk to receive his mission.

In the previous life, the group of eight including Fang Yuan and Miao Ming Shen came to the Merit Obelisk, only ten missions had appeared to them. But now, because there were more people, it seemed that the number of missions had also increased correspondingly.

There were many missions, they were slowly taken.

Because they did not know anything, there was no fighting or snatching here.

Shen Cong Sheng's mission was: Round fish island was drying up, it needed wells to be built.

As light flickered, he appeared in a desert at the next moment.

Shen Cong Sheng's pupils shrunk.

He was a rank eight Gu Immortal with dense dao marks, he could not be transported using ordinary methods. But when he was transported here, it could not be blocked, a grand and mystical power brought him here instantly.

“As expected of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.” Shen Cong Sheng sighed internally, he looked around as his investigative method spread out over the surroundings.

Shen Cong Sheng quickly sensed something different: “Oh, my investigative method works properly here, it is not the same as the starting island.”

Tens of li away from here, there was a small village in the desert.

Shen Cong Sheng stood on the spot, moving his ears as he listened to the conversation of the people in the village.

A moment later, he confirmed that he was on round fish island. This island was huge and had many villages, but decades again, vegetation had started to become sparse, right now, a large area desert had already spread around the remaining few villages.

Mortals and Gu Masters lived in the village, their lives were getting tougher.

“This means to say, I need to build water wells near these villages?” After learning of the situation, Shen Cong Sheng let out a breath of air as he relaxed.

This mission was much easier than he had expected.

They were all mortal level issues, not at the level of Gu Immortals.

Even if it involved immortals, he was a rank eight sound path great expert, he could deal with most issues.

Shen Cong Sheng thought about Fang Yuan as he muttered to himself: “That Chu Ying only has rank seven cultivation level but he accumulated

ninety-three merit points so quickly. This shows that the missions must be very easy to complete.”

Even after knowing the situation, Shen Cong Sheng did not rush to take action.

He needed to test many things here.

For example, could he ignore this mission and fly out of this place?

Could he communicate with the outside world?

How many methods could he still use in this situation?

Shen Cong Sheng did not interact with the mortals, he used sound path methods and secretly dug wells near the villages.

The desertification here was very severe, Shen Cong Sheng had to dig for a long time before he found some underground water deep below.

Using these sources of water, he created deep wells around the place.

Thinking about it, he used his methods to reinforce the walls of the well. Finally, he made the mouths of the wells and covered them with a thatched roof on top.

“To think that one day, I would have to do such manual labor.” Shen Cong Sheng laughed.

He built a total of more than thirty wells, this mission was not difficult at all to this rank eight Gu Immortal.

In the process of completing it, Shen Cong Sheng tried many things, he probed the foundation of this paradise to a great extent.

For example, he could not leave this place, he was only able to move around this desert area.

His communication was also restricted, forget about treasure yellow heaven, he could not even send anything to Shen Qi or Shen Tan.

He was also unable to attack the ordinary villagers, all his offensive methods would fail and he would sustain backlash.

He could open his immortal aperture's entrance and take out stuff from within, yet he could not take anything from round fish island to put into his immortal aperture.

Shen Cong Sheng also gained a lot of information from these mortals, these people were able to leave round fish island and tour the seas. In the past, there were conflicts among the villages, people had died.

In conclusion, Dragon Whale Paradise gave the inhabitants a lot of freedom, while the Gu Immortals who received these missions were greatly restricted.

As for how they were restricted, Shen Cong Sheng was unable to detect the method, he simply could not deal with it or get around it. This made him feel even more admiration towards Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

# **Chapter 1892 - Analyzing Chu Ying Together**

## **1892 Analyzing Chu Ying Together**

After completing the mission, Shen Cong Sheng said “return” in his mind, he was transported to the starting island again.

The Merit Obelisk appeared beside him.

He checked the board and saw that on the merit list, his name was there: Shen Cong Sheng, nine merit points.

Shen Cong Sheng frowned.

One mission only gave him nine merit points?

This reward was too little, it was out of Shen Cong Sheng’s expectations.

“Looking at this, does it mean that Chu Ying had already taken about ten missions before me?” Thinking of this, Shen Cong Sheng frowned even deeper now.

He looked at those rewards while feeling a chill in his heart.

Those Immortal Gu and immortal materials that he wanted needed more than ten thousand merit points!



“There is another problem, Immortal Gu are unique, if others get them first, I will lose my chance.”

“Now that Chu Ying is so far ahead, we have to pick up the pace and catch up with him!”

Shen Cong Sheng was a rank eight but he felt a sense of urgency now, everyone else was feeling worse.

“First supreme elder.” Shen Tan walked over and respectfully greeted Shen Cong Sheng. Even though he had finished his mission earlier, he did not rush to the second one, he waited at the obelisk.

In fact, the group of immortals had all agreed before the first transportation to communicate with each other after completing their missions.

Shen Cong Sheng, Shen Tan, Shen Qi, Shen Xiao, Shen Nai He, Ren Xiu Ping, and Tong Hua were the first group, while Miao Ming Shen, Feng Jiang, Immortal Hua Die, Gui Qi Ye, Tu Tou Tuo, and Zeng Luo Zi were the second group.

The two sides were distinctly separated.

Evidently, Shen Cong Sheng’s group was far too strong. However, in a special environment like the paradise, it was inconvenient for them to make a move against Miao Ming Shen and the others, so they had to watch as these enemies banded together as a group.

“Heaven always leaves a way out! Everyone, this is a great opportunity now, as long as we grab onto it, we will have a chance of dealing with Shen Cong Sheng in the future. We need to work hard, we need to unite for a glimpse of hope. Otherwise, if we work alone, we will not survive.” Miao Ming Shen encouraged the Gu Immortals on his side.

Zeng Luo Zi, Tu Tou Tuo, and the rest nodded in agreement. They faced greater pressure than Shen Cong Sheng, because they felt more urgency to complete missions and raise their strength.

Even if they were safe inside the Dragon Whale Paradise, after three hundred days, they would be transported out and would need to face Shen Cong Sheng.

“Tell me, what have you all discovered?” Miao Ming Shen spoke.

All of them spoke about their findings one by one, without any concealment, there was even a lot of speculation that they made.

Everyone’s discoveries were similar to Shen Cong Sheng’s, Miao Ming Shen concluded in the end: “The restrictions placed on us by the paradise can actually be seen as a kind of protection for us, at least for the time being, Shen Cong Sheng is unable to lay his hands on us.”

“The amount of merit points we received after completing a mission was only nine at most, it did not exceed ten. It seems that the reward for each mission is between one and ten.”

“But I have a feeling that this Merit Obelisk will undergo more changes in the future.”

Zeng Luo Zi and Tu Tou Tuo looked at each other, Zeng Luo Zi hesitated but still asked: “Brother Miao, since you can sense the exact location of the blue dragon whale, and bring us to it, is this place completely new to you?”

Miao Ming Shen smiled bitterly: “Brother Zeng and Brother Tu, if I said that I have no idea why I am able to sense the location of the blue dragon whale, would you believe me? Several years ago, information about the blue dragon whale began to appear inexplicably in my mind, but at first it was very vague. These bits and pieces of information had only gotten clearer recently, I finally realized that it was the blue dragon whale calling to me.”

“If I really knew these arrangements and had any shortcuts, would I not use them? Would I continue to face Shen Cong Sheng’s threat? When we were outside, Shen Cong Sheng attacked us, if I knew it was an illusion, I would have tried to die long ago.”

“Friends, my words are all true, there is no deception at all!”

Zeng Luo Zi and Tu Tou Tuo saw Miao Ming Shen’s earnest expression and nodded: “We believe you.”

Gui Qi Ye suddenly said: “Speaking of which, I do recall one thing. Previously, when he was being chased in the sea, Chu Ying was being attacked by a sound blade, but his speed soared and he took the initiative to bump into an immemorial thunder phoenix, after which he got struck by its lightning and died.”

“Yes, I saw that too.” Feng Jiang also added.

“It’s strange to actively seek death, it seems that Chu Ying really knows something about this place.” Tu Tou Tuo’s eyes burst out with bright light.

Previously, Fang Yuan did not know that dying by the hands of Shen Cong Sheng would also be accepted. To be on the safe side, he still chose the method of death from his last life.

As a result, he exposed a flaw.

It was like Shen Cong Sheng, who avoided Tong Hua earlier with his sound blades.

Miao Ming Shen’s group discovered Chu Ying’s peculiarity, It was the same for Shen Cong Sheng’s group.

“Miao Ming Shen.” At this time, Shen Tan walked in front of the group and took the initiative to approach Miao Ming Shen and the others.

Behind Shen Tan were Shen Cong Sheng, Ren Xiuping and the rest.

“There is no need to be nervous.” Shen Tan smiled: “We are not here to find trouble with you all this time, but rather to seek cooperation.”

“Cooperation? You guys are really shameless.”

“Who was it who wanted to kill us earlier?”

Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die said with displeasure.

Miao Ming Shen, however, stopped them and looked at Shen Cong Sheng.

Shen Cong Sheng nodded slightly and said indifferently: “This was my decision. It is true that I was the one who made the move to attack you before, but let’s put ourselves in each other’s shoes and think about it, if you were me, would you let me off?”

“It’s not that I don’t want to kill you all, but with the situation as it is right now, then I can only cooperate with you.”

“I swear on the reputation of my Shen clan, I promise that even after we leave this Dragon Whale Paradise in the future, we will not do anything to you, but rather let you all leave. ”

“And all of you will need to tell me everything you know about the information you have regarding this place.”

“The reputation of Shen clan...” Miao Ming Shen pondered, the immortals around him all looked slightly moved by this proposal as well.

Shen Cong Sheng was the first supreme elder of Shen clan, the promise of a righteous path figure held a lot of weight, and now he was staking the reputation of the entire Shen clan, he could be trusted to a high degree.

Of course, the best way was for both sides to set an alliance agreement.

Zeng Luo Zi and Shen Nai He were both rank seven information path Gu Immortals, they were unable to use information path methods here because the paradise restricted them greatly.

“You all can think about it, this is your only chance. If you miss it, don’t regret it if you go out of the Dragon Whale Paradise in the future.” Shen Tan threatened with a smile.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest became increasingly silent.

The Merit Obelisk had made it clear that they would only stay here for three hundred days, and once the time limit was up, they would be sent out. At that time, they might have to face Shen Cong Sheng.

Shen Cong Sheng's guarantee was certainly not completely assuring and he could go back on his word.

But with their own lives at stake, Miao Ming Shen and the others would certainly not let go of any possibility of survival.

Miao Ming Shen suddenly smiled and nodded: "I accept your offer. I'll cooperate with you and tell you everything I know."

Shen Cong Sheng also smiled: "Good, a wise man submits to circumstances. I will let you live, go ahead and speak."

Miao Ming Shen's smile turned bitter: "There's actually nothing to say."

He repeated the things he had said to Tu Tou Tuo and Zeng Luo Zi earlier.

Shen Tan was furious: "You're saying that you actually don't know anything? Are you lying? Do you think our Shen clan is easy to fool?"

Shen Cong Sheng, however, had a look of deep consideration.

He felt that Miao Ming Shen's words were probably true, lies could be told, but actions often could not deceive others. On the way here, Miao Ming Shen's actions were all seen by Shen Cong Sheng. He did not seem like someone who knew the details of the Dragon Whale Paradise.

Gui Qi Ye interjected: "We analyzed it earlier, it seems that Chu Ying is very suspicious. He might indeed know some inside information!"

The immortals' eyes shined with bright light.

Ren Xiu Ping smiled coldly: "Aren't you stating the obvious? That person had actively sought death before, he came here and was the first to awaken, ransacking the starting island of all the immortal materials. And look at the Merit Obelisk, he's got nearly a hundred merit points, hmm."

.Ren Xiu Ping suddenly became silent.

At this moment, white light flashed as Fang Yuan appeared again.

His mission was completed, his merit points went past a hundred, reaching one hundred and two.

The immortals gathered in a group, looking at Fang Yuan who was at the obelisk. He had appeared right when they mentioned him.

Fang Yuan also looked at the immortals. Wow, the atmosphere here was great!

Fang Yuan was a little surprised, but he did not feel anything strange about this.

Gu Immortals were all exceptional talents, these Gu Immortals were very perceptive and knew about benefits and harm, they prioritized their own gains. As long as Shen Cong Sheng stopped being haughty, it was possible that they would cooperate as Miao Ming Shen and the rest would worry about the future.

Shen Tan smiled and took the initiative to come over, approaching Fang Yuan: “Brother Chu Ying.”

He took the initiative to greet, his attitude was much better compared to when he spoke to Miao Ming Shen.

In the current situation, Fang Yuan’s value was also clearly much higher than Miao Ming Shen.

But before he could send any invitations...

“Scram.” Fang Yuan glanced at Shen Tan before he turned around and walked away.

Shen Tan’s smile froze on his face, the corners of his lips twitched as anger rose in his heart, he was about to shout but his shoulder was patted by someone.

It was Shen Cong Sheng!

Shen Tan quickly held down his anger, he did not dare to shout rashly, he only stared at Fang Yuan with a furious expression.

“Little brother.” Shen Cong Sheng chuckled: “We can coope...”

“Scram.” Fang Yuan said one word with a calm tone, he interrupted Shen Cong Sheng without hesitation.

Everyone was shocked.

Shen Cong Sheng’s eyes widened a little, he was dumbfounded at this situation.

How long had it been since anyone scolded him like this?

He was the first supreme elder of Shen clan, an Eastern Sea rank eight great expert, who would dare to scold him in his face?

Even normally, when people like Song Qi Yuan had a conversation with him, they would still keep a composed attitude when they conversed with each other.

But Fang Yuan scolded him without restraint.

Plain and straightforward.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest looked at Fang Yuan with immensely shocked expressions.

“This is a rank eight Gu Immortal, the first supreme elder of Shen clan, don’t be so reckless!”

“If you don’t relent now, what will happen when you get transported out of here three hundred days later?”

At this moment, everyone did not know whether to admire Chu Ying’s courage or shame him for his stupidity.

After Fang Yuan finished scolding, he immediately disappeared, he had taken another mission and left again.

The remaining Gu Immortals stood as they stared at the Merit Obelisk blankly.

Shen Cong Sheng suddenly laughed lightly, breaking the silence: “This Chu Ying is very courageous. I am looking forward to seeing his courage after we leave this place.”

He had a smile on his face but his eyes were flashing with furious sparks, his killing intent had appeared!

“Miao Ming Shen, who in the world is this Chu Ying and what is his background?” Shen Tan turned around and shouted aggressively.

He had an overbearing attitude, Gui Qi Ye and the rest were unhappy as they stared furiously.

Miao Ming Shen sighed deeply and shrugged: “If I tell you that I’m not sure of his origin, would you believe me?”

“Hehe.” The corners of Shen Tan’s mouth twitched and he laughed dryly, the look on his face showed his current thoughts.

What sort of lie was this?

If he did not know about Chu Ying’s background, would he invite this person to explore Paradise Earth’s true inheritance?

“Chu Ying, oh Chu Ying, I am going to die because of you.” Miao Ming Shen smiled bitterly but he did not give up, he decided to throw this problem over to Ren Xiu Ping.

“The reason I trusted Chu Ying was because of Ren Xiu Ping. Brother Ren, explain it, is there a need to hide the matter anymore?”

Miao Ming Shen’s words made everyone’s gazes gather on Ren Xiu Ping.



Ren Xiu Ping shook as he felt an immense pressure, he had to explain everything that he knew.

The immortals learned about the reason behind Chu Ying's involvement now.

Miao Ming Shen continued to explain: "Actually, I have not interacted with Chu Ying much. I only invited him to an auction in the past. Back then, Tong Hua and Tu Tou Tuo were around as well."

Shen Cong Sheng turned his gaze towards these two.

Tu Tou Tuo and Tong Hua spoke one after another, explaining all that they knew.

Shen Cong Sheng heard their words as he frowned deeply.

There was a lot of information but it was all useless! All that was known was already known, while all that was not known was still unknown.

They had nowhere to start and no way to target him.

"This Chu Ying is not a simple person." Shen Cong Sheng had a feeling, but he was still confident: "He is just a rank seven transformation path Gu Immortal after all, he is not my match."

# **Chapter 1893 - Saving Xia Lin Again**

## **1893 Saving Xia Lin Again**

Light flickered and faded at once, Fang Yuan appeared on a small island in the sea.

“I am here again.” Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

He accepted the mission to collect Earth Trench black oil at the nearby sea of this island.

This was the first mission he accepted when exploring the Dragon Whale Paradise in his previous life, he was most familiar with it.

“Many changes have happened in the Dragon Whale Paradise compared to the previous life.”

“Not only did the blue dragon whale’s location change, there are more Gu Immortals here now, the missions have also increased in numbers.”

“This black oil mission only appeared after I completed ten or so missions.”

In the previous life, he had used this mission to save the mermaid girl Xia Lin, using her as his pawn to have her become the saintess of the Merman City, he slowly found his way to regret sea and found regret Gu.

Once regret Gu flew to him, the venerable method activated, sending Fang Yuan to the stone lotus island in the River of Time. Using that, Fang Yuan got around Heavenly Court's assault and inherited a Red Lotus true inheritance.

After rebirth, Fang Yuan designed a more optimal plan for himself.

During the battle in the River of Time earlier, Fang Yuan destroyed six Immortal Gu Houses from Heavenly Court, he destroyed the river suppression lotus sealing formation and killed many Gu Immortals, only Nine Spiritual Fairy and Feng Jiu Ge escaped.

As the price, that stone lotus island was destroyed too.

Without the stone lotus island, regret Gu's venerable method could not activate.

This time, Fang Yuan intended to take down this Dragon Whale Paradise, regret Gu was only part of the bigger plan.

The entire island was under the effect of Fang Yuan's investigative killer move, it had no secrets at all.

The island was quite ordinary, there were not many resources here, it had a fishing village and a low quality spirit spring, there were a few Gu Masters in the village but most of the people were mortals.

Fang Yuan did not enter the fishing village immediately, he went into the sea first.

In the sea, a group of weaving sea spiders were hunting.

Fang Yuan got around them and dived deeper.

When he got close to the Earth Trench, he found a group of seashell sharks swimming around.

Fang Yuan had great strength but he did not want to act abruptly, he only concealed his presence, arriving at the black oil.

Black oil was an immortal material, it was dangerous to Gu Masters. Once they came into contact with black oil, food path dao marks would be carved in their bodies.

This was a huge problem for Gu Masters.

On one hand, the conflicting dao marks would make the oil collecting Gu Masters experience a fall in strength. Oil collecting food path Gu Masters were just too rare.

On the other hand, Gu Masters had mortal bodies, as time passes, they cannot help but become affected by the black oil.

The black oil in the Earth Trench tangled and weaved together like huge pythons. They were almost still but if one observed closely, they would see that the oil was moving slowly in the sea.

Fang Yuan activated his method, everywhere he went, black oil moved like water and spread out over a wide area.

“I remember that this is the location.” Fang Yuan split some of the black oil apart but he did not find the blue scaled mermaid Xia Lin.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

It was possible that his rebirth created some changes, Xia Lin’s life might have changed, she might not have come here.

“It’s more likely that she’s nearby. The time now is quite early compared to the previous life after all.” Fang Yuan thought about it, he did not give up immediately, he used his methods to move away the nearby black oil.

There were many things in the black oil, there were sea beast corpses and different ores. Blue scaled mermaid Xia Lin was among them, she had fainted.

Her face was not the same as Xie Han Mo, but their disposition was very alike, a complex gaze flickered in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

He breathed out lightly as a bubble surrounded Xia Lin.

Xia Lin was saved, her eyes started to move, she barely opened her eyes before fainting again.

When she woke up, she realized that she was lying in a waterhole.

The sky was wide and clear, there was bright sunlight.

The broad leaves of a few large trees cast a dense shadow, like an umbrella, covering her entire body.

The breeze caressed her like a lover's gentle hand, making Xia Lin feel cozy.

"Didn't I get engulfed when collecting black oil?" Xia Lin's memories slowly surfaced: "That's right, I seem to have been rescued. I saw a vague white figure on the dark ocean floor."

Her body was still limp and weak, Xia Lin could barely raise her upper body, she looked around but saw no one.

"Who saved me?" She became very confused, looking down at the waterhole that she was half lying in.

There was a pool of clear water in the waterhole, it was crystal clear. Her blue scaled fish tail was shining with the reflection of the light in water.

"This must be the arrangement of my savior." Xia Lin thought, she could not help but feel warmth in her heart. This water was not seawater, it was the most appropriate water for a weakened merman.

"You are awake." Just at this moment, the tree leaves were moved aside as Fang Yuan walked in.

"Did you save me?" Xia Lin stared at Fang Yuan, who wore white clothing, she felt a hint of familiarity.

“You are very lucky, I happened to find you in that situation.” Fang Yuan smiled slightly.

Xia Lin was extremely grateful and was about to get up to express her gratitude, but was stopped by Fang Yuan’s outstretched arm.

“Your body is still too weak. Eat something.” Fang Yuan extended his hand and a trace of green wind flew around to the top of the tree and picked a fruit that resembled a coconut.

The green wind held the fruit and flew to Xia Lin’s face. The green wind was like a pair of scissors, moving around and opening the shell, revealing the delicate bright red flesh inside that was like a pomegranate.

Xia Lin took a small piece and put it in her mouth. The flesh was tender and juicy, it rolled down her dry throat and into her stomach. There was a warm feeling in her stomach, the fruit was very delicious.

Xia Lin’s eyes instantly glowed, she was so hungry that she took out a few more chunks and put them in her mouth, swallowing them whole.

“It is very delicious.” She could not help but exclaim, but then she saw that Fang Yuan kept staring at her with his gentle gaze.

Her face instantly flushed red as she stammered: “May I ask for your name, benefactor, I will definitely repay the favor of saving my life.”

Fang Yuan laughed: “This was a simple action, you do not need to do anything. In the future, stay away from the black oil, it is very dangerous there. You were lucky to have met me this time.”

Xia Lin’s expression turned dark.

She was in a huge debt because of her grandfather’s funeral and had to risk collecting black oil to pay off the debt. To think that not only did she fail to get black oil, she even nearly died from this.

“But even if I survive, I’ll be corroded by the black oil and will die soon. Sigh, how can I pay off my debts and repay this benefactor?” Xia Lin had a

kind nature, she felt troubled over this.

At this time, Fang Yuan's gentle voice resounded in her ears: "Oh, right, you had black oil corrosion earlier, but it is not a problem anymore. I've already healed the injuries on you without any lingering after-effects."

"Ah!" Xia Lin was astonished and stared at Fang Yuan with wide eyes, dumbfounded.

This Gu Master in front of her could actually heal the problem from black oil corrosion! This was truly remarkable.

Fang Yuan nodded at her: "Little girl, you are young, don't have such rash thoughts. You still have a long journey ahead of you. Go ahead and eat something, after you regain your strength, come with me. I came here to do something."

"Oh." Xia Lin was still in a daze.

Fang Yuan smiled and turned around to leave.

Xia Lin watched him pass through the forest and disappear for a long time before she reacted and began to continue eating the fruit in her hand.

The flesh of the fruit was delicious and juicy, the windy breeze brushed her face, she was lying in pure water, her heart was filled with warmth and tranquility.

"Don't tell me this is just a dream?" As she ate, her tears flowed silently down her face.

She was nothing more than an ordinary, poor mermaid girl. Reality was cold and harsh for her before this incident. The only warmth in her life came from her grandfather who took care of her.

Her grandfather who was her only kin had died, Xia Lin was all alone now, her heart was hollow, her only goal in life now was to complete her grandfather's water burial.

In the customs of merfolk, a water burial was the final journey, it would bring peace to the dead. But a water burial was expensive, Xia Lin paid a huge price for it.

As the girl ate, she sobbed soundlessly.

Fang Yuan stood outside the forest, looking at the sea, he knew the situation inside well. But he did not go in, he gave the girl ample time to adjust her mood.

In this life, he had a grand plan for Dragon Whale Paradise.

Xia Lin's series of missions were not the most important.

For Fang Yuan to obtain regret Gu, he only needed to enter regret crying sea. Back then, he had made use of Xia Lin's chain of missions to enter regret sea area. But other than this series, he had many other ways to get there.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan focused on getting regret Gu while Miao Ming Shen and the rest focused on doing missions, the more they did, the more they found out. The atmosphere then was much better than now. Miao Ming Shen and the rest interacted and left behind information path mortal Gu at the Merit Obelisk, sharing their gains with everyone without asking for compensation.

Their collective findings and gains all became Fang Yuan's current wealth.

Thus, Fang Yuan had a deep and comprehensive understanding towards the Merit Obelisk and blue dragon whale.

Xia Lin's missions were created by Fang Yuan himself, it required luck and used a lot of time. The truth was, after some time, when mid-sized missions appear, there would be a few useful ones to get into regret crying sea.

In the previous life, when these missions appeared, Fang Yuan already had Xia Lin as his pawn, because Miao Ming Shen and the rest were showing desire towards these missions, Fang Yuan did not compete with them.



“But now, since I took the mission and found Xia Lin, it means that I can use her again.”

“This pawn is very useful, as long as I replicate the success of my previous life, I can indirectly control Merman Sacred City.”

“Controlling this force will be quite helpful to my plans ahead.”

Fang Yuan thought to himself.

“Benefactor, I’ve kept you waiting.” A moment later, Xia Lin floated out of the forest. She recovered some of her strength and did not want to keep Fang Yuan waiting.

A white cloud supported her lower body, three feet away from the ground, helping her to move forward on land.

“Don’t call me benefactor, my name is Chu Ying, people call me Master Chu.” Fang Yuan smiled.

“Master Chu.” Xia Lin said.

“Mm, let’s go.” Fang Yuan brought Xia Lin as they moved to the fishing village.

# **Chapter 1894 - Going Down, Going Up**

## **1894 Going Down, Going Up**

Fang Yuan brought Xia Lin to the small fishing village and met the village head.

The moment they met, he soul searched directly in front of his face. The entire fishing village was in a trance for a while, and then recovered without suspicion.

Fang Yuan collated this information and compared it to his previous life, he found that nothing had changed in the small fishing village.

Like in his previous life, he was still using his identity as a traveling Gu Master to contact these mortals.

First, he challenged the village's Gu Masters and defeated them easily, then he taught them how to refine water shell Gu and gave them the recipe.

The villagers were all very grateful.

Fang Yuan then took them to the bottom of the sea to practice using these water shell Gu, he even taught them some healing methods to alleviate the corrosion of the black oil.

To completely heal from the corrosion of the black oil, one needed at least rank four Gu worms.

The Gu Masters in the small fishing village were simply not even close to rank four. The things Fang Yuan taught them were things that they could do.

During this process, Fang Yuan focused on teaching Xia Lin.

In the previous life, he had only given her water shell Gu, but now, he wanted to nurture her properly. He used wisdom path methods to directly hand methods over to her mind. At the same time, he corrected many of her mistakes.

Fang Yuan did not stay in the small fishing village for long, and when he left, the entire village fell to their knees.

Xia Lin wanted to follow Fang Yuan, but he stopped her and said with deep meaning: “This isn’t the end of our connection, we will meet again in the future.”

Xia Lin was helpless and could only watch tearfully as Fang Yuan disappeared with a flicker of light.

Fang Yuan returned to the Merit Obelisk once again.

His merit points had risen by ten.

The initial missions on the Merit Obelisk were small missions, the rewarded merit points ranged from one to ten.

This time, Fang Yuan collected black oil and taught the villagers in the small fishing village to sustain a livelihood, he had completed the task perfectly.

At this time, Shen Cong Sheng and the others had all been transported away to complete their respective missions, there was only one person at the Merit Obelisk now.

It was Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen was staring at the four sides of the Merit Obelisk which had moving words and characters, he was very patient.

He faintly felt that there was a mysterious connection between himself and the Merit Obelisk, the peculiar feeling was extremely hidden and also very weak.

But he had no idea how to grasp onto this opportunity.

A sharp light flashed across Fang Yuan's eyes as he saw this.

The secrets involving Dragon Whale Paradise were very deep and mysterious.

What method did Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable use to restrict Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan had no way to find out.

His method did not leave any traces, it was as if it were a naturally occurring phenomenon, like how there were males and females among people, and how the sky had a sun and a moon.

Gu Immortals could not make a move on each other or the inhabitants of this small world.

But there were differences and discrepancies in this rule.

For example, Fang Yuan had soul searched the mortals in his earlier mission, he even gave a lot of knowledge to Xia Lin through wisdom path imparting methods.

Was that not considered making a move on the inhabitants?

Of course it was.

But Fang Yuan had no ill intentions, he was trying to help them. Thus, he was not restricted at all in his actions.

But once he had any evil thoughts, these methods would not be usable, he would even face backlash from using these killer moves.

Or for example, the collection of black oil in this mission.

The excess black oil was all kept in the sovereign immortal aperture by Fang Yuan.

Normally speaking, other than the immortal materials on the starting island, Gu Immortals could not take the resources of the other areas for themselves.

But Fang Yuan had taken the black oil near the island to complete his mission, by reducing the number of food path dao marks there, it would allow other natural resources to grow.

This was a good thing for the island's environment on the whole, so it was not restricted.

Not only did Fang Yuan complete the mission, he also collected a portion of the black oil as profit. This mission to collect black oil was obviously much more profitable than the others.

There were many missions on the Merit Obelisk, but there were also differences in missions, whether they were superior or inferior.

In the previous life, Miao Ming Shen and the rest had a lot of findings, these were all Fang Yuan's exclusive information now.

Fang Yuan slowly approached the Merit Obelisk.

His footsteps interrupted Miao Ming Shen's thoughts as he turned around to look, his pupils shrunk as he thought: "It's Chu Ying!"

Fang Yuan smiled: "Brother Miao, your connection with the Merit Obelisk is too weak. This connection is mainly used to find this place, it will not be of much help to you from now on. I would advise you to actively complete your missions and accumulate more merits."

Fang Yuan's polite attitude surprised Miao Ming Shen.

He had seen with his own eyes when Fang Yuan said 'scram' at Shen Tan and Shen Cong Sheng.

He was quickly attracted to Fang Yuan's words as he felt some shock: "He actually knows about the connection between me and the Merit Obelisk! This is a secret I have never revealed to anyone else. How did he know? Unless he is like me and can also sense the location of the blue dragon whale? Or maybe he can't sense its location, but has other forms of connections instead?"

Miao Ming Shen looked at Fang Yuan, feeling that this person was getting increasingly unfathomable.

He was filled with doubts, he opened his mouth to ask questions, but wisely close to keep it shut.

Fang Yuan acted so arrogantly in front of Shen Cong Sheng, it was useless to try to force him.

"If he wants to tell me, he will definitely take the initiative to speak, if I try to ask him, I will not get anything I want." Miao Ming Shen sighed internally.

Fang Yuan passed by as his finger pointed at a certain line of text on the obelisk, he suddenly said: "You can take this mission, it is quite suitable for you. Complete missions and accumulate merit points, it is not simply about doing superficial good deeds, it is better to teach a man to fish than to fish for him."

Miao Ming Shen shook internally, he gulped as he said two words: "Thank you."

"You're welcome." Fang Yuan smiled.

Giving Miao Ming Shen some guidance was not just a casual action.

On one hand, it was to sow discord among these people for his own convenience, and on the other hand, he was also trying to make some arrangements to affect Eastern Sea.

The secret regarding Miao Ming Shen's ability was only announced in the previous life after a lot of futile attempts at finding out. Regarding the truth behind it, many immortals had reliable guesses.

Miao Ming Shen was quite popular in the lone immortal world of Eastern Sea, if he was forced by Shen Cong Sheng into a corner, it was likely that Qi Sea Ancestor or Wu Shuai could recruit and take him in.

Fang Yuan did not take a mission, instead, he went to the other side of the Merit Obelisk and exchanged for a title.

In an instant, his merit points that exceeded a hundred were reduced to single digits, plummeting from the first place to the last.

When Miao Ming Shen saw the change on the merit board, his eyes sparkled and his mind was filled with huge suspicions: "Chu Ying spent a hundred merit points, what exactly did he exchange for?"

Fang Yuan took his mission and vanished again.

Miao Ming Shen immediately came to the other side of the Merit Obelisk to check the list of things they could exchange for.

But how could he find out easily?

There were too many rewards that were priced at a hundred merit points, it was also possible to have a combination of rewards to expend a hundred points instantly.

Miao Ming Shen felt a sense of curiosity, he immediately realized that Fang Yuan's action had a deep meaning, it must be beneficial to him, otherwise he would not have given up his advantage like that.

"Did Chu Ying deliberately express goodwill earlier so that I would help him hide this information?" Another thought appeared in Miao Ming Shen's mind.

But soon he shook his head.

Fang Yuan's merit points were right there, it was something that could not be hidden, soon, the other Gu Immortals would discover it.

With a flash of white light, Fang Yuan was transported to the bottom of the sea.

The seawater was murky, sand was churning, and a giant salamander was causing chaos.

This giant salamander had a smooth body without a single scale, its head was wide and large, its body was stout and flat, its limbs were very thick and short, and its tentacles were like tiger claws. Its claws and teeth were sharp, its gills were glistening with firm tiger whiskers.

This was a desolate beast, tiger king salamander!

The tiger king salamander rampaged and created shocking waves that affected the peace of the land.

The mission that Fang Yuan took on was to suppress it.

Fang Yuan did not rush to take action, he scouted first.

Soon, his brow furrowed slightly and a peculiar expression appeared on his face.

He could not find out the reason for the tiger king salamander's rampage. There was nothing abnormal about its body or mind, but it was acting manically and unpredictably, wantonly destroying its surroundings.

Not only that, it even self-mutilated, it had clearly gone insane.

Attempting to attack the tiger king salamander, Fang Yuan discovered that this desolate beast's battle strength had soared to the level of an ancient desolate beast.

"This is the same situation as the one that Miao Ming Shen's group faced in the previous life." Fang Yuan sighed internally.



In his previous life, he had only completed the missions involving Xia Lin, there were few missions and he did not encounter this. After trying it in this life, he found that according to his knowledge and vision, he could not even see through this peculiarity.

The tiger king salamander was actually very beneficial to the environment.

It could swallow salt and sand to purify the seawater, making it crystal clear and saline, producing extraordinary natural resources.

A tiger king salamander is often the core of a pure and clean sea. This pure seawater could be drunk directly.

If it was possible, Fang Yuan did not want to kill this tiger king salamander. If he could pacify and calm it down, Fang Yuan would be able to reap a large amount of merit points.

But right now, it was obviously impossible.

Fang Yuan had no choice but to take action and kill it.

The corpse of the tiger king salamander acted as the extra profit for the mission and was kept in the immortal aperture.

Ren Xiu Ping returned to the starting island again.

And a group of people had gathered near the Merit Obelisk.

Seeing his arrival, a Gu Immortal of Shen Clan, Shen Xiao, said to him: "Congratulations, Brother Ren, you're now at the top of the merit board."

"Ah? How is that possible!" Ren Xiu Ping did not believe it at first, but after witnessing with his own eyes, he was surprised and delighted.

His name was really ranked first, even Shen Cong Sheng was ranked second.

Shen Cong Sheng had also returned and was standing in front of the obelisk, his expression was a little dark.

Ren Xuping carefully looked at Shen Cong Sheng, he was thrilled that he had 'defeated' the rank eight Gu Immortal, but at the same time, he was also a little worried.

Shen Cong Sheng cast his gaze towards Ren Xiu Ping.

Ren Xiuping quickly bowed his head and cupped his fists: "Lord."

Shen Cong Sheng nodded: "Ren Xiu Ping, in your opinion, what exactly did Chu Ying exchange that caused his own ranking to slip to last place?"

Ren Xiu Ping was dazed, only now did he realize that Fang Yuan was at the bottom of the ranking, he quickly calmed down and furrowed his brows: "Indeed, Chu Ying would rather give up the lead to spend his merit points, it is certain that the thing he exchanged for was very useful to him."

If it could be helpful to him, it would naturally be advantageous to the others as well.

But what exactly would it be?

The group of immortals had been discussing for a while now.

With a flash of white light, Fang Yuan appeared in front of everyone once again.

At the same time, his ranking on the merit board skyrocketed, once again rising to the top.

Chu Ying, ninety-eight merit points!

At once, the immortals became tongue-tied.

# Chapter 1895 - Mid-sized Missions

## 1895 Mid-sized Missions

Small sized missions gave one to ten merit points. Meanwhile, mid-sized missions gave eleven to a hundred merit points.

Fang Yuan exchanged for a ‘good person’ title, it allowed him to accept mid-sized missions.

Mid-sized missions were Gu Immortal level, the tiger king salamander that Fang Yuan dealt with this time was a rank six desolate beast but its battle strength had reached rank seven.

This mission’s difficulty was way beyond the limits of a mortal.

The higher the difficulty, the greater the reward.

“Thus, I earned over ninety merit points this time...” Fang Yuan realized: “The reason why I did not get a hundred is because I took away the tiger king salamander’s corpse. If I left it behind, the dao marks on the corpse would spread out and elevate the foundation of the surrounding environment.”

Fang Yuan had done this purposely.

He was curious about the reason why the tiger king salamander went on a rampage.

Thus, he brought this corpse with him, planning to research on it later.

In the previous life, Miao Ming Shen and the rest encountered this situation many times, they researched together but did not find the root cause. This time, Fang Yuan wanted to try it himself.

The group of immortals looked at Fang Yuan and the merit board, their expressions and emotions were similarly terrible.

They had worked so hard to complete their missions, each one gave ten merit points at most. Fang Yuan however, got over ninety merit points from one mission.

This comparison was truly infuriating!

Even though small sized missions were simple, they wasted a lot of time. Mid-sized missions was much more efficient in terms of merit points.

Looking as Fang Yuan approached the Merit Obelisk, some of the Gu Immortals felt jealous, some were curious, while others felt despair.

At this rate, Fang Yuan was taking huge steps forward while they were crawling like snails, how could they ever catch up to him? He would only leave them in the dust as time passed!

Hua Die looked at Miao Ming Shen, wanting to ask Fang Yuan about this, but he shook his head at her.

Shen Cong Sheng looked over at Shen Xiao.

Shen Xiao had no choice, he had to force a smile and walk towards Fang Yuan.

“Brother Chu.” He cupped his fists, speaking in an earnest tone and polite attitude: “Just name the price, as long as I can afford it, I will satisfy you.”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “You want to know how I obtained so many merit points?”

“Indeed.” Shen Xiao cupped his fists again: “I hope brother can teach us. Don’t worry, with my Shen clan’s foundation, we will not disappoint you.

Furthermore, you are not just getting my friendship, you will get the friendship of Shen clan!”

Earlier, Shen clan tried to force Fang Yuan but he was indifferent and acted extremely arrogantly. Shen Xiao changed his tactic and tried to exchange for it using benefits instead, it was a wise move.

Fang Yuan laughed: “Sure, use a true inheritance of your Shen clan to exchange for it.”

Shen Cong Sheng’s eyes shined when he heard this, he did not expect Fang Yuan to agree, he could not help but ask: “What true inheritance do you want?”

“It is up to you, if you don’t want to give an inheritance, Immortal Gu are fine too.” Fang Yuan said nonchalantly.

Shen Cong Sheng’s lips twitched, he wanted an Immortal Gu? Dream on!

He thought about it and tossed out an information path mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan received it and looked through the content, there was a transformation path Gu Immortal true inheritance, it was rather incomplete, the truly valuable parts were still with Shen Cong Sheng.

Fang Yuan clicked his tongue as he tossed the mortal Gu back to Shen Cong Sheng: “Another one.”

Shen Cong Sheng received the information path mortal Gu and erased the information inside, injecting a new wave of content. Of course, this was incomplete as well.

Fang Yuan received it and nodded, giving the information path mortal Gu back to Shen Cong Sheng: “Another one.”

Shen Cong Sheng received the information path mortal Gu and looked at Fang Yuan, saying grimly: “Chu Ying, you want to look at so many of them, how much content do you want to see?”

Fang Yuan's expression turned solemn: "Don't worry, I, Chu Ying, act according to my principles, I am not someone who goes back on my words. Those who treat others as fools are the real fools. How about this, give me a portion of constant wave sound and I will tell you the reason why I gained so many merit points."

"Fine, I'll believe you once." Shen Cong Sheng did not hesitate, taking out a conch from his immortal aperture and tossing it to Fang Yuan.

This conch was only the size of a palm, and was itself a desolate beast.

There was a wave sound stored in the conch, this wave sound was a sound path rank seven immortal material, a specialty product of Shen clan, it could produce sounds for years without ever stopping.

Fang Yuan inspected it and found nothing suspicious, he placed this immortal material into his sovereign immortal aperture.

He looked at Shen Cong Sheng and smiled, "Then I'll tell you this secret. Do you want me to tell you alone, or do you wish to make it public?"

This time, it was Shen Cong Sheng's turn to look solemn.

But he only hesitated for a moment and then smiled: "What is there to hide? Please speak directly."

As expected of an old expert who had been leading Shen clan for many years.

Once he said that, even the Gu Immortals on Miao Ming Shen's side developed some good feelings towards Shen Cong Sheng.

Miao Ming Shen coldly snorted in his mind: "No agreement can be made here, Shen Cong Sheng can't restrain Chu Ying at all. Chu Ying is trying to sow discord! Since he can tell Shen Cong Sheng alone, he can tell others in the future as well. Shen Cong Sheng knows this, so even if he is unwilling, he has no choice but to make it public."

“Good, Lord Shen Cong Sheng’s magnanimity is admirable.” Fang Yuan turned around and placed his palm on the surface of the obelisk.

Words related to missions started to vanish before emerging again.

But these new words were different from before.

Thousand soul fog appeared on White Light Mountain, the living creatures were in dire need of help to clear it up.

In seahorse sea area, coral seahorses fought each other, a number of seahorse kings were rioting and needed to be suppressed.

The formation on gathering-separation island had not been repaired for years, causing serious disruptions to the lives of the islanders, it needed to be fixed.

Fish round island lacked seawater, one had to make it rain for three days and nights there.

...

The Gu Immortals were stunned.

These missions were clearly different from the previous ones, such as the thousand soul fog, which was a soul path rank seven immortal material, it was quite famous. Another example was that every coral seahorse was a rank five wild beast, while seahorse kings were at least desolate beasts.

Shen Xiao watched with glimmering eyes as he sighed deeply: “These are missions worthy of Gu Immortals.”

Those small sized missions earlier were limited to the mortal level, they were simply weak in comparison to these missions.

Shen Xiao copied Fang Yuan and placed his hand on the obelisk but his expression turned to confusion: “Why can’t I accept these missions?”

“Of course not. I have used up a hundred merit points in order to accept these missions.” Fang Yuan smiled.

The immortals quickly focused their attention on his words.

But Fang Yuan kept his mouth shut.

Shen Xiao became anxious, he cupped his fists at Fang Yuan: “Please do teach us, Brother Chu.”

Fang Yuan looked at him with a slightly mocking expression with raised brows: “Why should I tell you?”

Shen Xiao’s expression froze: “We made a deal earlier.”

“I know. You guys asked how I acquired a large amount of merit points. I have completed the transaction and told you the reason, it was because I received these missions. As for how to receive these missions, that is a different question.” Fang Yuan said.

The group of immortals were dumbfounded.

Shen Cong Sheng’s expression turned dark while the Shen clan Gu Immortals looked at Fang Yuan with anger in their eyes.

Shen Xiao was stunned before he laughed again, only this time, it was clearly mixed with anger: “Brother Chu is really impressive at doing business. A single answer alone earned you a rank seven immortal material that is unique to my clan.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “Shen clan’s constant wave sound is unique in the world, I really profited from this transaction. But I did not lie to you, I did not give you false information either. I, Chu Ying, am not such a person.”

Fang Yuan showed a demeanor of having a conscience and bottom-line, it made all of the immortals here seethe with anger.

Shen Cong Sheng’s anger accumulated.



He was a grand righteous path rank eight, he was actually being toyed by this rank seven lone immortal Chu Ying who had no fame, how could he let this pass?

“After we leave Dragon Whale Paradise, I am going to deal with you properly!” Shen Cong Sheng swore in his heart, but he smiled and laughed heartily without showing any displeasure, he clapped: “Chu Ying, very impressive. You obtained the constant wave sound through your wittiness, that was your ability. Don’t worry, why would my Shen clan be so petty over a small matter? Come, let’s make another deal, tell me what you want in exchange for this information to get the mission?”

The group of immortals looked at Fang Yuan with eyes that could not help but reveal envy.

It was just so easy to earn immortal materials like this.

But from Shen Cong Sheng’s perspective, his clan was affluent, one or two rank seven immortal materials in exchange for precious information was not a bad deal.

But Fang Yuan shook his head: “I am not going to sell this information, you all can try it yourselves.”

Shen Cong Sheng glared: “Chu Ying, I hope that you will think about it clearly!”

Fang Yuan, however, ignored him and disappeared again with a flash of white light.

Shen Cong Sheng was livid, he was not given any face at all.

“Chu Ying, don’t let me catch you outside!” Shen Cong Sheng swore in his heart. This was the first time he had seen such a rank seven Gu Immortal, he completely disregarded him.

Fang Yuan needed to maintain his advantage on the merit board, this was useful to his plan of conquering the paradise.

“As for Shen Cong Sheng and the rest... hehe, I don't believe that you can stay united.” Fang Yuan smiled coldly in his heart, his plan to sow discord did not work earlier because it was a minor action, but this time, he dug a pit, he was not afraid that Shen Cong Sheng would not jump in.

In a way, Fang Yuan needed external help. It was necessary to split up this huge group.

He could complete the mid-sized missions independently by himself, but after the mid-sized missions, there were large sized missions too.

This kind of mission often required different Gu Immortals to cooperate with each other and work together to complete it.

Although Fang Yuan had quite a few Gu Immortal subordinates hidden in his immortal aperture, it was useless. In this Dragon Whale Paradise, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable's methods restricted this.

It seemed that only those Gu Immortals who had passed that test outside and were sent to the starting island while asleep were eligible to enter and leave this place, and also receiving and completing missions.

After Fang Yuan left, the atmosphere at the Merit Obelisk turned heavy.

Because Shen Cong Sheng had made a rather forceful request, he wanted the surrounding Gu Immortals to spend their respective merit points to exchange for those contentious rewards.

Shen Cong Sheng was betting that one of these rewards would be the one Fang Yuan exchanged for earlier!

Since Fang Yuan did not tell him, he was going to test it personally.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were unwilling to do that but they had no choice, they had to make considerations for the future and could not offend this rank eight sound path great expert.

# Chapter 1896 - Killed Instantly

## 1896 Killed Instantly

Shen Cong Sheng stared intently at the surface of the Merit Obelisk.

Although he did not show it, he was indeed feeling anxious at the moment.

As the first supreme elder of Shen clan, he was in a high position of power. As a rank eight great expert, he could be said to be standing at the peak of Gu cultivation. However, facing the Paradise Earth true inheritance, his foundation was simply too shallow and insignificant.

Fang Yuan was able to take on mid-sized missions, he had a huge advantage in getting the Paradise Earth true inheritance. Shen Cong Sheng was forced to do everything he could to catch up with Fang Yuan's footsteps.

Although he had come here with a different purpose, the Paradise Earth true inheritance was right in front of him, he would not give up without trying his best to get it.

Therefore, even though Shen Cong Sheng knew that Fang Yuan had the intention of sowing discord, he still forced the other Gu Immortals to exchange for the various rewards.

In order to try to ease the emotions of the other Gu Immortals, Shen Cong Sheng also took out various immortal materials from his own immortal material to compensate them.

However, it was clear that these immortal materials were far less valuable than the Paradise Earth true inheritance.

The immortals were forced to comply with Shen Cong Sheng's orders due to his authority, their inner resentment naturally grew deeper and deeper.

Shen Cong Sheng had lost the hearts of the people, and to make matters worse, these rewards exchanged by the group of immortals were not the one that allowed him to take on mid-sized missions.

"The rewards on this list are a bit too numerous, excluding those rewards exchanged before, there are still three most likely rewards left." Shen Cong Sheng felt a headache.

"Let's take a gamble." He knew that time could not be wasted, after a moment of deep deliberation, he used his merit points to choose and exchange for one of them.

At the next moment, Shen Cong Sheng's expression turned dark.

"This is not the one!" He gritted his teeth, feeling very dejected.

He had lost the gamble.

It was really bad luck.

As such, they had spent almost all of their accumulated merit points, but what they obtained, although helpful, were not very significant in this situation.

"Don't tell me it is this 'good person' title?" Shen Cong Sheng looked at the merit board, sighing deeply to himself.

It was useless to say anything now.

All he could do was to hurry up and accumulate more merit points, then continue to exchange for rewards.

“But before that, I still need to appease these Gu Immortals.” Shen Cong Sheng turned to look at the immortals.

They had similarly unhappy expressions.

Shen Cong Sheng was quite eloquent, after saying some words, he pulled out a batch of immortal materials and gave them to the immortals.

Although the immortals received these immortal materials, their expressions only changed slightly.

In this Dragon Whale Paradise, Shen Cong Sheng had rank eight battle strength but he could not do anything to them. This key was the most important foundation for Shen Cong Sheng’s declining influence.

Swish swish swish...

The tides were rising and falling, the fishy sea breeze blowing on his face, Fang Yuan stood in the clouds, overlooking the sea market below him from the sky.

The sea market was a place where people sold and exchanged for cultivation resources, usually having fixed locations. Not long ago, Fang Yuan disguised himself as Qi Sea Ancestor to hold the Eastern Sea banquet, in a way, it was a super-sized sea market, it almost involved all of the Gu Immortals in Eastern Sea.

The same type of sea markets existed in Dragon Whale Paradise, and there were quite a few of them.

This sea market that Fang Yuan observed was centered around a small island, with numerous fishing boat-like Gu Houses surrounding the island.

For more than half of each year, this island would be flooded by seawater, so this sea market was not open all year round.

Because of its advantageous location, the island sea market became an indispensable trading area. Even if it was not open for half the time each

year, as long as it opened, the surrounding Gu Masters and forces would flock to it.

Fang Yuan was very familiar with this sea island, he had come here in his previous life.

In his previous life, Xia Lin had been framed on this island by an unscrupulous merchant, the mission Fang Yuan had happened to take was to punish this merchant severely, he saved Xia Lin as a result.

In this life, Fang Yuan also took the mission and came here, but it was a mid-sized mission, completely different from the previous time in terms of characters involved.

The sea market was extremely lively.

There was a huge crowd of people moving around, having both humans and merfolk.

“Come, come, take a look, this is a superb crystal coral.”

“There are three Gu house River Boats left, quickly buy them before they are sold out!”

“Purchasing grand soil, I will buy as many as you can sell...”

Xia Lin appeared.

She moved on the deck, observing the goods at the stalls as she made her way towards the core island.

Unlike before, she was energetic and her eyes had life in them, after receiving Fang Yuan’s guidance and teaching after a life-and-death situation, she had improved drastically from the inside out.

Fang Yuan activated his investigative method, surveying the surrounding hundred li.

As soon as Xia Lin appeared, he found her.

Fang Yuan did not approach Xia Lin, but continued to scout the interior of the island, as well as the depths of the sea.

An immortal level formation gradually appeared in his perception.

Fang Yuan could not help but praise it in his mind as he looked at it.

The structure of this immortal formation was very profound, it was a formation that was mainly earth path and water path, its role was to sustain the island, managing the surrounding sea currents and improving the environment of the entire surrounding sea.

But now, this immortal formation was damaged, the earth path portion was eroded while the water path portion was not changed much.

There was originally a balance of earth path and water path. Now, with the weakening of earth path, water path became more overbearing. The island was able to remain open the entire year in the past, but because of the damage to the formation, it would be submerged in water for half of each year.

Fang Yuan wanted to repair the formation now.

Fang Yuan's abilities, however, were still somewhat lacking. His formation path attainment level was not bad, being at grandmaster. But to use the natural dao marks to create a formation, he would have to be a great grandmaster.

At the same time, his water path attainment level was at grandmaster, while his earth path attainment level was only master.

And the problem was that this formation needed fixing in the earth path aspect.

“This formation is not the work of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, but a certain formation path great grandmaster instead.” Fang Yuan analyzed.

If it were Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable himself, it would definitely gave the style and size of a formation like regret crying sea.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan and the others had discovered that they were not the first batch of Gu Immortals to come into the Dragon Whale Paradise.

There were also predecessors who had entered here before to receive missions and earn merit points.

Evidently, the formation Fang Yuan saw was the work of a certain predecessor.

“There’s no need to hurry, looking at the time, there should be some gain at Wu Shuai’s end soon.” While Fang Yuan continued his surveillance and transmitted the information he detected to the time path clone for deductions, he also stealthily descended and mixed in with the crowd, following after Xia Lin.

Xia Lin entered a gambling den.

The door had three words written on it, Golden Jade House, it was clearly a high grade gambling den among the mortals.

This gambling den had tens of huge rocks in the hall, behind the hall were many rooms with an assortment of rock dissecting Gu worms for the customers to enjoy using.

“I’m here to return the loan.” Xia Lin took out an information path mortal Gu.

Several months ago, her only family member, her grandfather, died.

Merfolk sea funerals were very expensive. In order to bury her grandfather, she had to borrow primeval stones.

To repay the debt, she had to take a risk and collect black oil, almost dying in the Earth Trench as a result. Fortunately, she met Fang Yuan and was saved miraculously, not only that, her strength even rose drastically thanks to his help.



Just like in her previous life, Xia Lin obtained gather oil Gu from Fang Yuan. Her efficiency in collecting oil increased, she quickly gathered a huge amount of primeval stones from selling oil.

The one who attended to her was a scarred merman, after taking this information path mortal Gu, he smiled deviously: “Lass, you must have seen wrongly, our agreement is not like this.”

Xia Lin was slightly stunned, “What do you mean?”

The surrounding Gu Masters knew about Golden Jade House’s usual tricks, they saw this and shook their heads: “Sigh, another Gu Master has fallen for it again.”

Xia Lin talked to the other party and finally reacted.

“You guys are shameless, you changed the agreement details, our contract was ten percent interest, but you raised it to sixty percent!” Xia Lin said with a furious expression.

The scarred merman’s face became solemn, he looked at Xia Lin with a vicious gaze: “Young lady, you cannot spread false news like that! Are you trying to ruin our reputation, this is detrimental to our business, who would come to our shop after this? Can you bear the cost of our losses?”

“Screw you! Even if I die, I will expose this shop’s evil deeds.”

The scarred merman changed his tone as he said eerily: “Die? You are too naive, sometimes, being alive is worse than dying.”

A sharp light shined in Xia Lin’s eyes: “You forced my hand!”

She shouted as she attacked.

Swoosh!

An explosion was heard as a torrent was shot out.

The scarred merman did not expect that in this situation, an innocent and naive lass would dare to attack him, a rank three, in his territory, the Golden Jade House.

The scarred merman was caught unprepared, he was washed away by the torrent, crashing into the wall as many decorations shattered.

The commotion was huge, the Gu Masters who were quietly choosing and dissecting rocks all came to watch.

A large number of eyes turned to look at Xia Lin and the scarred merman.

“What happened?”

“What happened?”

The scarred merman was lying in rubble, he looked at Xia Lin with extreme disbelief and anger.

He wanted to get up, but in the end, he only managed to raise his finger.

After that, he collapsed and stopped breathing.

“Dead... he died!”

“Oh heavens, who is this girl? She actually killed a merman in one move.”

“He was a rank three Gu Master!”

The crowd went into a commotion, the Gu Masters were deeply shocked.

Xia Lin was also quite surprised by this, she was only rank two now, but the Gu worms that Fang Yuan gave her were all incredibly useful, they could form very powerful killer moves.

After Xia Lin used these Gu worms to form a rank two killer move, she killed a rank three Gu Master in one hit.

The mermaid girl was stunned.

She was dazed on the spot.

Fang Yuan smiled as he transmitted to her.

“Master Chu!” The mermaid girl heard his voice as her eyes shined, she spoke with deep joy.

But Fang Yuan did not show up, he instructed the mermaid girl on how to find an excuse to take over the entire Golden Jade House in a dignified and justified manner.

# Chapter 1897 - Clone Enters Dream

## 1897 Clone Enters Dream

Jian Wen blessed land.

The palace was deep and had a magnificent number of structures. The shade of the trees was thick, the summer cicadas sang.

The long-closed doors of the palace were opened, all of the featherman girls along the way fell to their knees to greet the master of the palace, Xia Cha.

Xia Cha's expression was unsightly, she was filled with gloominess.

She had tried all sorts of methods in her closed cultivation, but none of them could allow her to advance from a rank five Gu Master to a rank six.

All methods had been exhausted, leaving only one path in front of her – to purchase the rank six level second aperture Immortal Gu from Fang Yuan.

As the first supreme elder of Xia clan, Xia Cha originally had rank eight cultivation, but in the ambush battle of the River of Time, she was captured by Fang Yuan. Although she was lucky to survive, her rank eight immortal aperture had already been taken away by Fang Yuan.

After releasing Xia Cha, Fang Yuan took the opportunity to sell his second aperture Gu and extort the Southern Border super forces in another way.

As a result, Xia Cha was given the opportunity to cultivate again, she grasped it like a drowning man who was surviving by hanging onto a wooden plank.

Xia Cha had now regained rank five cultivation, but she was stuck at the most crucial step.

Advancing to Gu Immortal!

Her countless attempts to ascend to immortal had failed.

“Ugh.” Xia Cha sighed, coming to terms with reality once and for all.

“Prepare fresh water for me to clean up, additionally, spread news that I have come out, ask second supreme elder and third supreme elder to come here.” Xia Cha instructed the featherman maids beside her.

However, after waiting for an hour, Xia Cha did not see the arrival of second supreme elder or third supreme elder, but rather they transmitted that they had important matters to handle, they were unable to come.

“These two old scoundrels!” Xia Cha cursed in her heart, a chilly feeling assaulted her heart.

Although she was also clear that sooner or later there would be such a day, when it actually came, she still felt a chill in her heart.

To think that she had once been the center of authority, she made all sorts of sacrifices for Xia clan, she was the decision maker of all political affairs, but now she was just a rank five cripple who had to endure other people’s disrespect.

In the past, Xia clan’s second supreme elder and third supreme elder had to look up to her as their leader. In fact, their rise to their current status was all because of Xia Cha’s help of nurturing.

“It looks like... these old scoundrels are trying to gain independence.” Xia Cha looked at the empty hall as she sighed in her heart.

There was not much anger in her, but more of a sense of helplessness and sadness.

Could she say that they were ungrateful? Not entirely. In fact, Xia Cha understood the choice that these Xia clan Gu Immortals made.

Because of her, Xia clan had already been extorted too harshly by Fang Yuan, their inventory was greatly depleted, even though they had painstakingly accumulated so many years of foundation, it was like them looking after Fang Yuan's assets now.

Even if Xia Cha could regain her cultivation, she would have to start all over again, the resources expended in the long run would certainly be a huge amount.

Should they give the resources to Xia Cha or keep it for themselves?

After the initial panic and uncertainty, Xia clan's Gu Immortals began to have an unsaid agreement with each other.

Xia Cha's first supreme elder title was now just a hollow status. Her rank five cultivation level could not allow her to intervene in Gu Immortal level situations.

Xia Cha pondered for a long while before she took out an information path mortal Gu and gave it to a featherman maid for her to bring to the second supreme elder.

But in the evening, the reply from second supreme elder infuriated Xia Cha once again.

"Even the title of the first supreme elder has no value anymore." Xia Cha gritted her teeth.

It turned out that she had proposed a deal with the second supreme elder in the information path mortal Gu, Xia Cha was willing to hand over her own first supreme elder title to the second supreme elder. He would be able to

rightfully sit on the throne of Xia clan's highest position of authority, while only having to pay an amount of cultivation resources.

But Xia clan's second supreme elder did not accept it, he politely rejected her offer.

Evidently, he had reached an agreement with the third supreme elder, they were going to make Xia Cha their figurehead and still let her continue to be the first supreme elder.

Xia clan's situation was not the same as Ba clan.

Ba clan's Ba Shi Ba encountered the same situation as Xia Cha, but he was already kicked off his position as the first supreme elder, the newly advanced rank eight Gu Immortal Ba De had taken the role instead.

Meanwhile, Xia clan's Xia Zhao and Xia Chen Yuan were only rank seven in cultivation level, they both cultivated earth path.

Years ago, when Xia Cha first came to power, she was not a rank eight Gu Immortal yet, in order to take control of Xia clan, she had nurtured Xia Chen Yuan and Xia Zhao, to use them to contest against Xia clan's existing factions.

Now that Xia Cha's cultivation level had fallen to rank five, while Xia Chen Yuan and Xia Zhao still had their authority, they started having different ideas.

But as far as the righteous path was concerned, they did not dare to make a move on Xia Cha, who had shown great kindness to the two of them. They would rather let Xia Cha have the position of first supreme elder than to lose their own reputation.

Xia Cha knew that her influence over Xia clan had slipped to a dangerous point, and it was slipping faster and faster!

She had to become an immortal as soon as possible, otherwise, she would be completely pushed out of the circle of Xia clan's higher-ups.

However, there was no way for her to break free from this predicament, as she did not have any capital to negotiate or transact.

Xia Cha's situation was not an exception, but the norm.

The attitudes among the Southern Border righteous path forces had started to change.

The most important person causing this change was naturally Wu clan's Wu Yong.

He had been relying on Heavenly Court and his own political skills to elevate his own reputation and influence in Southern Border's righteous path.

The downfall of Xia Cha and Ba Shi Ba, these experienced rank eights, gave him an incredibly rare opportunity.

Despite the appearance of Lu Wei Yin, the Virtue Paradise behind him included a large number of mushroommen and not just humans. This gave them a natural political shortcoming in Southern Border's righteous path, which Wu Yong grasped firmly and took full advantage of.

Lu Wei Yin did not pose an obstacle to Wu Yong, so his influence in the Southern Alliance was growing by the day.

There was already a faction within the Southern Alliance, its voice was becoming louder and louder, with Wu Yong being the main advocate. He advocated that the Southern Alliance should actively confront Fang Yuan and stop accepting his blackmail and extortion. Compromising with a demon like Fang Yuan would only fuel his arrogance.

The Southern Border righteous path forces had almost gotten back most of their hostages, they had also been hurt by Fang Yuan's blackmail and extortion. Thus, more and more Southern Border Gu Immortals responded to Wu Yong's call with an increasingly supportive attitude.



What Wu Yong exploited was precisely the hatred that the righteous path Gu Immortals felt towards Fang Yuan.

Under the moonlit night, Fang Yuan's Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body traveled alongside Chi Qu You.

A secret transaction involving dream realms had just ended.

"Lord Chi, we should part here." Fang Yuan's dream path clone smiled.

He was a temporary clone made from the dream realm, he had Gu Immortal cultivation and would self-detonate into a dream realm after reaching the time limit.

Chi Qu You cupped his fists and sighed: "Fang Yuan, it's not that I am making things difficult, it's just that the risk of this business has become bigger. Now that the situation is so tense, if we get exposed, my Chi clan's reputation will be completely ruined."

The Pure Dream clone snorted coldly in his mind, Chi Qu You proposed to increase the price, no longer satisfied by the previous price. The given reason was that Southern Border's righteous path was becoming more and more aggressive in dealing with Fang Yuan, Wu Yong gathering a huge force in Southern Border's righteous path.

This reason was of course bullshit, the real reason was that Chi Qu You used this excuse to raise the price because he wanted to get even more dream path research results.

Fang Yuan wanted more dream realms, but now that it was getting harder and harder to extort Southern Border's righteous path, the secret deal between Chi clan and Fang Yuan had become his main source again.

Chi clan controlled the dream realm formation, one of its kind in Southern Border, Fang Yuan could only steal a portion of the dream realms by working with Chi clan.

“I will explain this matter to my main body.” The dream path clone left this sentence and directly flew away.

Chi Qu You stayed where he was and watched Fang Yuan’s dream path clone disappear into the sky, his face turning cold as he left with a soft snort.

It was not like he did not think of attacking the dream path clone.

But he lacked dream path methods to deal with a dream path Gu Immortal. Furthermore, he was also worried that Fang Yuan’s main body was likely to be around here waiting in ambush.

Fang Yuan himself was far away in Eastern Sea, but for this transaction, Wu Shuai had already arrived nearby with his Dragon Palace.

If Chi Qu You were to make a move, he would certainly not gain anything.

The Pure Dream clone soon returned to Dragon Palace.

This was a temporary clone with immortal-level cultivation, but after reaching the time limit, it would fall apart and turn into a dream realm.

“We cannot continue with Chi clan’s business anymore, unless we allow him to raise the price.” The dream path clone said coldly, he opened his immortal aperture and let out a few dream realm bodies: “This batch of dream realms is likely the last batch we can get.”

It could not be helped.

Fang Yuan and Chi Qu You did not make any kind of binding agreement.

Chi Qu You purposely raised the price by using the excuse of Southern Border’s attitude.

“The main enemy is in front of us, after this hurdle, this trivial Chi clan is nothing to worry about.” Wu Shuai opened his mouth.

Right now, he could not make a move yet.

The more times he made a move, the more likely Heavenly Court would notice the true relationship between the Wu Shuai clone and Fang Yuan's main body.

The killer move dreamy light smoke had to be used on Heavenly Court, exposing it on Chi Qu You was truly a huge waste, it would be like killing a chicken with a bull's knife.

Rather than dealing with Chi clan, it would be more efficient to attack the formation directly.

In fact, with Fang Yuan's main body staying in Eastern Sea, it would be possible to deal with Chi clan with just the strength of Wu Shuai's forces.

But if he revealed these trump cards in advance, Heavenly Court would likely be so happy they might laugh in their dreams.

Small greed ruins big plans.

Moreover, by allowing Southern Border to preserve its strength, it could also cause more trouble for Heavenly Court in the future.

Directly destroying the enemy, although straightforward and easy, sometimes does not reap the greatest benefits. For example, Fang Yuan had released Xia Cha and Ba Shi Ba, they had already started feeling ostracized and neglected in their respective clans.

Fang Yuan would secretly sponsor them in the future.

Their current situation could be said to be caused by Fang Yuan. But besides Fang Yuan, they had nobody else to rely on.

Fang Yuan, on the other hand, needed these people to act as his eyes and ears, planting them in the righteous path forces of Southern Border, so that he would always maintain a certain amount of influence over Southern Border.

It was just that at the moment, Fang Yuan still lacked some means to restrict them.

Regarding this, the time path clone was already working night and day to make deductions.

Boom boom boom.

With a series of muffled sounds, the temporary Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies exploded one by one, turning into lumps of dream realms that fused with each other.

These were all earth path dream realms.

Wu Shuai sat on his dragon throne in the palace, his soul left his body and entered the dream.

# **Chapter 1898 - Accumulated Soil Mountain**

## **1898 Accumulated Soil Mountain**

Heaven and earth were gloomy, dark clouds loomed overhead, endless thunder roared and resonated.

Scarlet lightning flashed countless times in the dark rolling clouds of smoke, black clouds swirled like vortexes, lightning balls descended from the center of the swirling vortexes one by one.

These lightning balls were strangely shaped, resembling porcelain products, as large as a water tank, and glowing with red light.

Grand tribulation — Red Porcelain Lightning Ball Tribulation!

The lightning balls smashed down and erupted with crisp explosions.

On the ground, an Immortal Gu House silently suffered from the damage caused by the explosions of the lightning balls, large pieces of debris continued to fly into the air, before turning back into the corpses of countless Gu worms.

Inside the Immortal Gu House, Wu Shuai endured the sound of rumbling thunder in his ears and inspected himself first.

He found that he had turned into an earth path rank eight Gu Immortal, he had wide fingers and a large stature, his battle robe was already covered in

damage.

And not far from him, there was a female immortal standing on the ground, her face was pale and her aura was not only weak but also a little strange.

She was using a certain light path healing killer move, and thus was covered in a layer of holy white light. But on her face, exposed arms, legs and feet, dark path dao marks that resembled ink lines appeared.

These dark path dao marks were so dense that they reached the extent of a rank nine immortal material, creating dao mark light, Gu Immortals could see it with their naked eyes.

The female immortal had clear rank eight cultivation level.

A light path rank eight Gu Immortal who had such a quantity of dark path dao marks, it made Wu Shuai very surprised.

And more peculiarly, the female immortal's dark path dao marks were still transforming. Not only did they increase in quantity, their arrangements and positions were rapidly changing too.

The female immortal grunted, the killer move activation was successful, the halo around her stabilized while the dark path dao marks were also temporarily suppressed.

The female immortal was sweating profusely, she opened her weak eyes to look at Wu Shuai, smiling bitterly: "I can't be saved. This is my strongest healing method, but it can only temporarily suppress the injury. When the time limit of the killer move is up, the injury will explode with terrifying power."

"Oh Zheng Yang, my most beloved, I can no longer accompany you. You have to live well." The female immortal said, tears flowing down her cheeks.

"No, there must be some way, there must be! You must never give up hope, this Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress of mine is made up of all the

Immortal Gu I have, it can be considered to be number one in defensive power in all of history. We still have time, you have to keep working hard, I will always be there for you!” Wu Shuai shouted with tears in his eyes.

This was the natural development of the dream realm, he could not control it.

But after this conversation, Wu Shuai gained control of the body.

“Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress? Never heard of it...” Wu Shuai’s eyes shined with bright light, using the conversation earlier, he analyzed and searched for clues.

He inspected his own immortal aperture.

There was quite a bit of white litchi immortal essence in his immortal aperture, there were also a large amount of mortal Gu, but no Immortal Gu.

Like what Zheng Yang had said, he had used all of his Immortal Gu to construct this rank eight Immortal Gu House, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

“Which means to say, my biggest reliance is on this damaged Immortal Gu House?” Wu Shuai had a realization.

He started to try controlling this Immortal Gu House.

Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress had a complex structure, it used a hundred million Gu worms, among which there were more than twenty Immortal Gu.

Even Wu Shuai could not tell what the core Immortal Gu were at a glance! These Immortal Gu were cleverly positioned and had a mysterious relationship with each other, the design of the Gu House was as profound as a towering mountain range spreading across the entire countryside for ten thousand li, connecting heaven and earth, the mountain range had overlapping layers of intertwined mineral veins.

Wu Shuai was like a mortal Gu Master mining the mountain range, he had to excavate it layer by layer to uncover the minerals he wanted and figure out the connection between the ore veins.

“Just analyzing this Immortal Gu House itself is a huge difficulty! Furthermore, I need to rely on this Immortal Gu House to defend against the red porcelain lightning ball tribulation!”

Wu Shuai’s heart sank, he knew that this exploration was going to fail.

As expected, the following developments went as he had predicted.

Red porcelain lightning balls continued to explode as Wu Shuai tried to use his Immortal Gu House and slowly fix it.

But it was useless.

His understanding towards this Immortal Gu House was too low, even if he wanted to fix it, he had no idea where to start.

Eventually, the red porcelain lightning balls destroyed the Immortal Gu House, Wu Shuai and the female immortal became the sacrifices of the tribulation’s fury.

After leaving the dream realm, Wu Shuai started to heal himself.

This time, Fang Yuan’s main body was exploring Dragon Whale Paradise, before leaving, he had made ample preparations and arrangements. Not only did he pass the dream path Gu worms to Wu Shuai, he even gave a large number of guts Gu.

With guts Gu in his hands, Wu Shuai’s injuries were not a problem.

This dream realm exploration was different from the Dragon Palace dream realm, Wu Shuai could explore it multiple times until he succeeded.

Second failure, third failure, fourth, fifth...



After eight tries, Wu Shuai finally gained a clearer understanding of this Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

Even though he could not completely fix this Immortal Gu House, Wu Shuai was already able to repair it sufficiently to negate the red porcelain lightning balls' damage.

Black clouds swirled in the sky, the red porcelain lightning balls gradually thinned out until they completely stopped.

But within the black clouds, a second grand tribulation was starting to brew.

The female immortal sighed: "Sigh... it was my fault for not listening to you, I went to search for the location where Reckless Savage Demon Venerable died, in the end, I caused this curse to occur and lead to an unceasing wave of calamities and tribulations."

"This is my just desserts. Zheng Yang, leave, I do not want to implicate you!"

On the female immortal's body, the halo had noticeably dimmed. The dark path dao marks were tightly arranged, like pieces of black thread sewing up wounds, covering the female immortal's skin and face.

Compared to before, the female immortal's aura had weakened a lot, and at the same time, it became more peculiar, not only were the light and dark path dao marks intertwined, an adam's apple was also growing in her throat!

Wu Shuai had yet to analyze the situation of the female immortal when a drizzle started to occur in the sky.

Even though it was a small rain, it was bone-chilling, there was a cold feeling that could freeze the soul.

The heat and smoke caused from the lightning balls earlier vanished entirely without a trace.

Howl howl howl...

The ghostly cries became louder and louder, before it resounded throughout the entire area.

Grey threads fell from the black clouds in the sky, extending towards Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai's heart sank, he recognized this tribulation: "This is the grand tribulation — Ghost Spirit Ice Silkworm Tribulation! A grand tribulation occurring right after the previous one, it seems this will not end."

Wu Shuai had to resist these silky threads forcefully.

The red porcelain lightning balls were powerful and destructive, while these ghost spirit silk threads were soft and troublesome.

Wu Shuai had no offensive methods, the Immortal Gu House Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress that he was relying on was also unfamiliar to him, he could not find any offensive methods that could be used.

Thus, Wu Shuai watched as these threads extended towards him and slipped in through the cracks and holes of the Immortal Gu House.

Wu Shuai tried to defend against them but Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress was already completely infiltrated, it broke apart after resisting for some time.

The silky threads wrapped around the female immortal while also attacking Wu Shuai, turning the two of them into solid cocoons.

At the next moment, Wu Shuai was chased out of the dream realm.

This time, he suffered heavy injuries, he saw darkness in front of him, he gulped and felt that his throat was dry, he almost fainted.

"Failing at the ghost spirit silk thread tribulation stage has caused tens of times the damage as before!" Wu Shuai smiled bitterly, in this situation, he had to recuperate first before trying again.

This injury would only be mild if it happened on Fang Yuan, it would not be severe, he could definitely explore it again.

But Wu Shuai was not the same.

Wu Shuai's soul foundation was only at thirty million man soul, even though it rose later as he cultivated in Eastern Sea, he could not compare to the main body.

Wu Shuai was a dragonman who cultivated enslavement path, soul path cultivation was just a supplementary method. The stronger his soul foundation, the more soul path dao marks he would have, and the more it would restrict his enslavement path development.

But Fang Yuan's main body was the sovereign immortal body, it had non-conflicting dao marks, so he could cultivate soul path alongside all his other paths.

After resting sufficiently, he went in again.

Failing time and again, challenging it continuously even after failure, Wu Shuai was in a difficult position.

He did not have the time path clone's deduction abilities, even though he had Dragon Palace, dreamy light smoke was not useful for exploring dream realms.

The most reliable method, other than unravel dream, was the ability to recover rapidly using guts Gu.

As he slowly explored it, Wu Shuai finally had some breakthroughs and gains.

After learning the general information of Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, Wu Shuai gained the three killer moves of this Immortal Gu House.

The first was called accumulated soil mountain, the second was called peaceful burial, and the third was called heavy soil comeback.

The one that was an eyeopener to Wu Shuai was the first killer move, accumulated soil mountain.

This killer move was very special, it did not have offense, movement, healing or other aspects. It was an earth path killer move that had formation path effect, using this killer move, the Gu Immortal could stack earth path Gu worms to allow them to form an Immortal Gu House! This could be done even if the Gu Immortal using the killer move had zero attainment in formation path itself!

Because of this killer move, there was this Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

Gaining this killer move was also the same as gaining the foundation of the Immortal Gu House, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress!

It was no wonder Wu Shuai could not find any core Immortal Gu, this Immortal Gu House's core was not an Immortal Gu but the immortal killer move accumulated soil mountain!

“Thus, I only need to activate this killer move and add earth path Gu worms into this Immortal Gu House to rapidly fix it.”

After understanding this, Wu Shuai started to repair Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress while enduring the onslaught of the ghost spirit silk thread tribulation.

Boom!

The moment he repaired it, the female immortal self-detonated, the force of the explosion was greater than the grand tribulation, not only was Wu Shuai killed instantly, the entire Immortal Gu House was torn to shreds.

“I see, I still have to take care of this female immortal.” After understanding this point, Wu Shuai entered the dream realm once again.

Immortal killer move — Peaceful Burial!

Using this method, the female immortal was temporarily sealed, her injuries were suppressed, she was receiving treatment from the Immortal Gu House.

After Wu Shuai fixed this Immortal Gu House completely, the third grand tribulation appeared.

Purple stars fell from the sky, this was a tribulation that fused poison path and star path — Rotten Poison Purple Star Tribulation.

Purple stars continued to descend and land on the Immortal Gu House, causing holes to form due to corrosion.

Wu Shuai did his best to endure it but even as he failed many times, this grand tribulation never stopped.

“The third grand tribulation seems to be unceasing, this is not normal. Don’t tell me?” After many failures, Wu Shuai had a flash of inspiration.

He tried to unseal the female immortal, without peaceful burial’s suppression, the female immortal went into a state of nearing death again.

“Zheng Yang, if a next life exists, I want to meet you again. Goodbye, my love.”

While Wu Shuai defended against the grand tribulation with difficulty, she flew out of the Immortal Gu House through a hole that had formed on top.

Boom!

She self-detonated instantly, turning into a lump of pitch-black flames, burning intensely with a terrifying aura.

Heaven seemed to be enraged, at once, billions of purple stars shot down. The black flame was not large, but was incomparably tough when faced with the attack of the purple stars, although its size was shrinking, the extent of its loss was minuscule.

Seeing that this grand tribulation was ineffective, the black clouds in the sky transformed again, countless lightning bolts rained down like snakes,

the black flame was instantly assaulted by countless bolts.

The black flame seemed to be nourished from this, it quickly expanded and grew to a mountain-like size.

The black flame's appearance had changed already, it became a white-gold colored mist.

The grand tribulation in the sky continued to transform and attack the white-gold mist, the mist also transformed, turning into wind, ore, flower, grass, bird, or beast at times.

“What in the world is lurking in this female immortal's body, so many grand tribulations are unable to do anything to it!” Wu Shuai was internally shook.

He acutely sensed that this realistic dream realm contained a certain deep secret in history.

This secret might be the reason behind the deaths of venerables, it involved the most profound secret of heaven and earth.

The female immortal died, but Wu Shuai's dream realm continued.

He had to survive from the aftermath of this terrifying fight, he could only rely on Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

Eventually, after countless rounds of grand tribulations, that mysterious black flame was slowly extinguished bit by bit.

Even when just a tiny bit was left, the grand tribulation still targeted it and the battle lasted for over an hour.

“What in the world is this thing?” After the dream realm dissipated, Wu Shuai was still filled with deep shock.

He had put in so much effort, the rewards were similarly shocking.

At almost the same time as when the dream realm faded, the eyes of Fang Yuan's main body, which was in Dragon Whale Paradise, shined.

“Oh, I advanced to earth path grandmaster.”

# **Chapter 1899 - Large Sized Missions**

## **1899 Large Sized Missions**

Sea island, Golden Jade House.

“What is the purpose of inviting us here, little girl?”

“Quickly tell us, I’ve got things to do.”

“That’s right, this is the only time each year that the sea market opens. We are wasting our time and money by being delayed here!”

Many Gu Masters gathered in Golden Jade House, staring at the blue scaled mermaid girl, Xia Lin, and spoke.

They were already a bit impatient from waiting.

Xia Lin looked around with a slight smile: “Everyone here is a respectable figure, so I’ll make it short. From now on, this island is my territory and under my control. If you all want to come here and make transactions, I’d welcome you with open arms, but you need to pay taxes, and you can’t stay on the island for a long time.”

“As for the way to stay and live here for a long time? That is to join me and become my subordinate.”

There was a sudden silence in the house.



Immediately, the Gu Masters went into an uproar. Was this a joke?

The few rank three Gu Master leaders all looked unhappy.

“Little girl, you’re too bold.”

“Juniors these days, hehe, they really don’t know what fear is.”

“Do you really think you can act so arrogantly after killing a rank three Gu Master? Don’t forget, you are just a rank two Gu Master.”

Faced with many questions, Xia Lin felt apprehensive, but remembering that this was Master Chu’s order, she could only force a smile as she answered as instructed: “No need to doubt my words, now, you will know what I am relying on.”

“What is it?” Immediately, someone asked.

Xia Lin was still smiling, because even if she said so, she had no idea what it was.

But at that moment, the ground began to shake.

“What’s going on?” Someone screamed as the ground shook more and more.

“Is it an earthquake?!” The Gu Masters were in a state of shock and panic.

Fortunately, this Golden Jade House was a Gu House and had some defensive effects.

But the outside world was already in chaos, with screams and shouts everywhere.

“No, I need to rush back to guard my shop.”

“I’m leaving too!”

The Gu Masters tried to run out, but suddenly, a thick yellow light suddenly emerged from the ground.

The yellow light enveloped the entire island and blocked the entrance of the Gu House.

No matter what they tried, the Gu Masters could not break through the yellow light and were horrified: “What in the world is going on?”

“This is no ordinary earthquake.”

“Xia Lin! You must know something!!!”

Someone saw that Xia Lin was still smiling, he had a flash of inspiration and screamed loudly.

As a result, all the Gu Masters in the room focused their attention on Xia Lin.

Xia Lin was also shocked, but at this moment, Fang Yuan’s voice was transmitted, instructing her on how to deal with the situation: “Everyone, there is no need to panic, this change is only beneficial for everyone. I will not say more, just watch it quietly, this change will not last long.”

Xia Lin was keeping this a secret but the Gu Masters did not dare to look down on her.

This was clearly not a natural disaster but a man-made situation.

But who could do something of this magnitude?

Not mortals at least!

A word suddenly emerged in the minds of all the Gu Masters — Immortal!

This was indeed a method of an immortal.

Or more accurately, Fang Yuan was repairing the immortal formation at the bottom of the sea.

He took out portions of immortal materials from his immortal aperture and put them into the formation, before activating many killer moves to repair it.

Yellow light surged around the island, spreading around.

A brand new piece of land around the island condensed and appeared in the yellow light. Those ships that were originally around the edge of the island ran aground. The people on the boats were shouting and screaming, fixed in place by the yellow light, unable to move.

The yellow light gradually dissipated, the entire island had more than doubled in size.

At the edge of the new sea island, tides surged up, causing huge waves, countless fish and sea beasts revealed themselves.

Fang Yuan had started to fix the water path aspect after repairing the earth path side of the formation.

Finally, when he had completely mended the immortal formation, the huge waves on the surface of the sea gradually calmed down.

However, Fang Yuan did not stop yet.

He added a small subsidiary immortal formation on top of the foundation of this great formation.

After the small formation was built, he waved his hand again and gave the small formation to Xia Lin.

Thus, a white light descended from the sky and enveloped Xia Lin, before it merged entirely into Xia Lin's body.

Xia Lin did not have any attainment in formation path, but this small formation designed by Fang Yuan was very friendly, Xia Lin suddenly felt that she had many new abilities instinctively.

This instinct was as natural as breathing, or like moving legs and feet, it allowed her to move the island's land and the surrounding seawater using her thoughts.

Rumble...

Amidst muffled sounds, the entirety of Golden Jade House began to expand, growing larger and larger, quickly transforming from a small building to a beautifully ornate palace.

This was naturally also Fang Yuan's doing, he had expanded Golden Jade House and created a formation core here, which was secretly connected to the formation deep under the sea.

This series of astonishing changes made the entire crowd of Gu Masters gawk and stand dumbfounded.

Xia Lin was showing a smile but she was also immensely shocked internally.

Fang Yuan's words rang in her ears once again.

She read out the script: "Everyone, you witnessed it with your own eyes. I am fortunate to be accepted as a disciple of the great immortal. My immortal master has just laid out the immortal formation and ordered me to guard this place, I will be in charge of mortal affairs."

Saying so, Xia Lin willed as yellow light surged up, enveloping all of the Gu Masters present.

Xia Lin willed again as these Gu Masters gasped in shock, they were suppressed by this yellow light and could not move, they were all raised into the air, unable to retaliate.

Xia Lin smiled, the yellow light dissipated and these Gu Masters were released.

"This, this, this..."

“Immortal miracle, this is an immortal miracle. So there really are immortals in the world!”

“I reverently ask Lady Xia Lin, why did your immortal master set up an immortal formation here, I wonder what lord immortal has planned?”

Xia Lin just smiled, she had also just learned that Master Chu was actually an immortal! Her shock was no less than the others.

“Now, does everyone have anything you wish to say about my previous proposal?” Xia Lin looked around and asked in a warm voice once again.

The Gu Masters did not dare to question her again, they bowed their heads together, some even fell to their knees on the spot, saying that they wanted to follow Xia Lin, while some wanted to go under Fang Yuan as his disciple.

Xia Lin could only appease them one by one.

Fang Yuan’s divine sense went around Xia Lin, in the end, he only said a few words of advice to her before he left her to her own devices.

Although there were signs of immortals in Dragon Whale Paradise, be it his previous life or present life, Fang Yuan had never seen any native immortals.

Legends about immortals had been circulating within the mortal world, but they were only rumors.

This time, Fang Yuan displayed an immortal miracle and set up the immortal formation, leaving many things within the formation to Xia Lin. Soon, countless people arrived after hearing the news, some of them wanted to see the miracle, while others simply wanted to join Xia Lin as a subordinate.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan helped Xia Lin become the mermaid saintess. In this life, he had simply made an early move to support the growth of Xia Lin’s forces first.

In the following period of time, Xia Lin would maneuver between various forces and Gu Master experts, she would follow Fang Yuan's instructions to establish her own force.

Even if there were things she could not do right, there was still a will left behind by Fang Yuan within the formation to tutor her and help her to make up for any flaws.

His investment in Xia Lin was actually not even a drop in a bucket.

Repairing the underwater formation was the most costly thing that Fang Yuan did.

Fang Yuan's earth path attainment level rose, his weakness was eliminated as he rapidly found a useful method to fix this formation.

He had grandmaster formation path attainment level, he could not use natural dao marks, he had to use immortal materials. The immortal materials that he expended here were his greatest spending.

Not only was the difficulty of a mid-sized mission higher, the Gu Immortal also had to make investments sometimes.

Merit points were not so easy to earn.

Fang Yuan returned to the Merit Obelisk.

This mission gave him a hundred merit points, this was the limit of a mid-sized mission, his action of repairing the formation was perfect.

Thus, he became the undeniable number one person on the merit board, the gain of a hundred points made everyone else feel a strong sense of dejection.

This time, Fang Yuan did not leave in a hurry.

He started to research on the merit board.

His earth path attainment rose to grandmaster level, could he comprehend this Immortal Gu House?

If he could comprehend it and use some methods, would he be able to make loopholes in the Merit Obelisk and refine this entire Immortal Gu House?

Earlier, Fang Yuan could not do it and had to follow the rules.

But all along, he had not given up on the idea of getting this Merit Obelisk.

After looking at it for some time, deep disappointment flashed in Fang Yuan's eyes.

The Merit Obelisk contained the profundity of earth path, but also sound path, human path, and heaven path.

And looking at the foundation, earth path and sound path were just supplementary, the true cores were human path and heaven path.

“To have hopes of comprehending this completely, I will need to be a great grandmaster in all four paths.” Fang Yuan realized this and smiled bitterly to himself.

It was unrealistic to try to refine this Merit Obelisk now.

That was only natural.

Before Fang Yuan, who knows how many Gu Immortals had come here. Among these predecessors, there were definitely outstanding people, but they were unable to do anything to this rank eight Immortal Gu House.

Fang Yuan's foundation in this aspect was not deep, how could he possibly refine this rank eight Immortal Gu House easily?

There was no breakthrough in this area, so Fang Yuan had no choice but to continue to follow the rules, he continued to receive and complete missions.

When he reached nine hundred merit points, Shen Xiao finally screamed at the Merit Obelisk: “I finally found it, this is the one, this good person title!”

At this moment, Shen Xiao almost wanted to tear up from joy.

He quickly told Shen Cong Sheng about this discovery.

Soon, Shen clan's Gu Immortals started to show signs of rising merit points.

Followed by Ren Xiu Ping, Tong Hua and the rest.

There were four groups on the merit board now.

The first group was a single person, Fang Yuan, he was way ahead.

The second group was the Shen clan Gu Immortals led by Sheng Cong Sheng, they were trying to catch up.

The third group was Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua, as they were attached to Shen clan, they had been informed of this secret after some time.

And the last group was Miao Ming Shen and the others, they had not learned about this.

After completing another mission, Fang Yuan's merit points rose to over a thousand.

He looked at the merit board, laughing in his mind: "They finally found the good person title? These people are truly unlucky, maybe this is the result of my luck suppressing them."

He came to the board and started exchanging for a reward.

He spent a thousand merit points in exchange for the 'really good person' title.

With this title, he could finally accept large sized missions.



# Chapter 1900 - Super Good Person

## 1900 Super Good Person

Beehive island was a sea island that had a peculiar shape.

The entire island resembled a voluminous dark yellow beehive, with countless pits and holes on the surface of the hive, and a precise structure and countless tunnels inside.

A rank six Gu Immortal with broad shoulders and a thin waist, wearing jade green battle armor, was inside the beehive.

This man was one of the followers of Miao Ming Shen — Feng Jiang.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

The densely grouped red thread earthworms were shooting violently at Feng Jiang from all directions.

The red thread earthworms could shoot themselves out like the flicking of a zither, so fast that Feng Jiang could only see a red light.

The attack of the red thread earthworms was very sharp, and the swarms of red thread earthworms were able to make desolate beasts back away from them.

Feng Jiang fought as he retreated.

He was facing immense pressure, after a while, he was already covered in sweat.

Even though his battle strength surpassed desolate beasts and he had many killer moves, he received this mission to quell the red thread earthworm calamity near the beehive island, to allow its ecology to return to normal.

If Feng Jiang used his methods without holding back and unleashed his attacks, he could easily kill all of these red thread earthworms.

But in that case, beehive island would be heavily damaged, Feng Jiang would receive few merit points.

“Damn it.” Feng Jiang had no choice but to retreat and fly out of the hive, floating in the sky.

The red thread earthworms were still in hot pursuit, shooting themselves into the sky and pursuing Feng Jiang.

From countless holes, large amounts of red threads were shot out, Feng Jiang sighed and pulled away from the hive, these red thread earthworms could not hit their target.

The red thread earthworms did not die from a fall of this height, their bodies were soft but tough, after they loitered around for some time, they went back into the hive again.

They did not follow the existing holes within the hive, but dug their own way through the hive’s walls.

This was very damaging to beehive island.

“There are too many red thread earthworms, and I’m afraid there are still desolate beasts inside. After all, I’m taking on a mid-sized mission.”

“There is one more difficulty, the more the passage inside this hive extends inside, the narrower it becomes, it is very disadvantageous to me.”

Beehive island was already covered in holes due to the red thread earthworms, if Feng Jiang fought inside, he might cause the destruction of the entire island.

Feng Jiang was silent for a moment before making up his mind.

He opened his immortal aperture's entrance as he summoned a large group of wild bees. These bees were all elites that had rank five battle strength, their leader was even more powerful, it was a desolate beast bee.

The abdomen of this wild bee was of peculiar form, being gyroscopic instead of ellipsoidal, it was most broad at the waist, extending out to the tail while becoming increasingly thinner.

The surface of the gyroscopic belly had a black spiral pattern that was quite striking.

All the wild bees were covered with dense fluffy hair and had large, broad wings.

This was the yellow gyro bee.

Feng Jiang's immortal aperture raised a large number of bees, yellow gyro bee was one of them with a unique status.

Even though ordinary bees formed into groups, they consisted of members from the same species. Different ones could not live together.

But not only could yellow gyro bees live with other wild bees, they could reproduce and even help to increase the numbers of the other species of bees.

The yellow gyro bees were the core bee group of Feng Jiang's immortal aperture.

Feng Jiang was an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, he was rich in cultivation resources, keeping a variety of bees in his immortal aperture and having more than ten desolate beast wild bees. The yellow gyro bees had always

been his main focus, but there were only three of them that were desolate beast level.

This time, Feng Jiang mobilized a large group of yellow gyro bees, he was taking a huge risk in this situation.

Under the command of Feng Jiang, the yellow gyro bees buzzed as if they were a yellow cloud that quickly burrowed into the hive.

There were still swarms of bees in beehive island, but they were completely at a disadvantage compared to the red thread earthworms in terms of size.

With the help of the yellow gyro bees, the bee group was confused for a moment before retaliating against the red thread earthworms entrenched in the lower part of the beehive island with a fierce attack.

This was a fight for survival between their respective groups, it was a tragic battle.

Beehive island continued to shake as cracks appeared on its surface, rapidly expanding in size.

Feng Jiang was prepared to take action, he immediately used methods to repair the island.

He let his bee group fight while he took on a support role.

He was quite lucky, when the red thread earthworms lost enough numbers, the sole desolate beast red thread earthworm retreated instead of fighting, leading its members away from the beehive.

Feng Jiang looked as millions of red thread earthworms gathered in the sea like a huge red current, swimming away. He sighed as the weight in his heart was lifted.

He hesitated for a moment, should he chase after the red thread earthworms or ignore them now?

While he hesitated, the red thread earthworms swam into the sea.

Feng Jiang gave up the thought of chasing them.

If he fought in the sea, he would have to give it his all, but there were many different sea beasts hidden within this sea area.

“I should not cause more uncertainty, let’s repair this beehive island first.”

He spent a day and night repairing it.

Not only did he repair beehive island completely, he even reinforced many of its weaknesses. At the same time, he let out many bees in his immortal aperture and planted many special flowers to complete the ecology of this place.

After all this, beehive island became completely revitalized. Not only did it regain balance, it even had more potential for future development.

“This is a mid-sized resource point now.” Feng Jiang sighed.

If possible, he wanted to take this beehive island for himself. But this was a merit mission, he was restricted by Paradise Earth, Feng Jiang had to give up on that idea.

After returning to the Merit Obelisk, Feng Jiang looked at his merit points and found that he gained over eighty points from this mission.

Feng Jiang stared blankly before regretting it: “I did not get a hundred points, it seems that my actions were not perfect. Back then, I should have eliminated the red thread earthworms, letting them leave means that they are likely to attack beehive island again.”

“That might not be it. The mission wanted me to balance the ecology of beehive island, did I achieve that? I did not.”

“This so-called ecology’s core was beehive island but the surrounding sea areas are also a part of it. I only modified beehive island but did not target the surrounding sea areas, that was my mistake.”

Thinking so, Feng Jiang sighed.

A few days ago, after Fang Yuan returned to the Merit Obelisk, he saw the board and understood the situation, he explained the secret of the ‘good person’ title to Miao Ming Shen and his allies.

Thus, Feng Jiang exchanged for the ‘good person’ title and could receive mid-sized missions.

Now, he completed his first mid-sized mission but he was not happy at all.

Not only was it because he did not understand the mission’s requirements fully, he had also spent a lot for this mission.

In order to get the merit points, his yellow gyro bees could not be retrieved.

Of course, this exchange was not unfavorable.

Merit points were related to Paradise Earth’s true inheritance, Feng Jiang gave up his bee group but gained points that could be exchanged for Immortal Gu if he had ten thousand or more!

This trade was definitely worth it.

Because in the outside world, Feng Jiang did not have any way to get these Immortal Gu. No matter how many desolate beast bees he had, he could not exchange for an Immortal Gu using them.

“But mid-sized missions are quite tough, I am specialized in raising bees, this mission suited me well but I only got around eighty merit points.”

“What about other missions?”

Feng Jiang looked at the board.

Many missions were listed but he could not take them.

For example, the mission to repair an immortal formation, Feng Jiang did not have any methods to repair immortal formations.

Or the one that required the healing of an ancient desolate beast's injuries, Feng Jiang's healing methods were not good enough.

Feng Jiang suddenly understood why Fang Yuan kept this 'good person' title as a secret.

As long as he had a head start, Fang Yuan could choose missions that suited him, he could accumulate merit points rapidly.

But Feng Jiang thought about it and felt something strange: "No, even so, Chu Ying's merit points are rising too quickly. He is almost perfectly completing every mission. Is transformation path really this useful?"

At this moment, Feng Jiang was stunned.

Because white light flashed as Fang Yuan appeared beside him.

"Lord Chu Ying." Feng Jiang greeted.

Fang Yuan nodded at him, his gaze was directed at the obelisk.

His merit points went from the bottom position and surpassed everyone to reach the top three again.

"He gained five hundred merit points at once?!" Feng Jiang saw this as his heart shook.

"I spent a thousand merit points to get the 'really good person' title, it allowed me to receive even better missions." Fang Yuan smiled and explained.

Feng Jiang was stunned before bowing deeply: "Lord, thank you for the guidance!"

Fang Yuan nodded as he went to the other side of the obelisk, exchanging for his third title 'super good person'. His merit points instantly fell by five hundred, becoming the last position again.

Feng Jiang opened his mouth, he was curious about Fang Yuan's action but he was astute, he did not ask when he saw that Fang Yuan was not going to talk about it.

Feng Jiang was certain that Fang Yuan had exchanged for something extremely useful.

"Looking at the time, they should be back already." Fang Yuan walked towards Feng Jiang, he did not receive a mission immediately.

Feng Jiang nodded, he knew that Fang Yuan was referring to Miao Ming Shen and others, he replied: "They should be here soon."

Feng Jiang did not have outstanding strength among Miao Ming Shen's allies, yet he had already returned, the others were soon to arrive as well.

Fang Yuan did not mind the wait.

As expected, Miao Ming Shen and the rest returned quickly, they met with Fang Yuan.

Feng Jiang quickly told the secret of the 'really good person' title to Miao Ming Shen and others.

Miao Ming Shen had a thought: "This title of 'good person' can exchange for mid-sized missions, while 'really good person' can exchange for large sized missions. This is a series of titles, if one can find out about the 'good person' title, the 'really good person' title is no secret as well, they can easily connect the dots."

But even so, Miao Ming Shen felt very grateful to Fang Yuan.

Because Fang Yuan had told them about the 'good person' title. Meanwhile, Shen clan and Ren Xiu Ping kept it from them.

The ranking on the merit board was very important, many rewards could only be exchanged once, the first person to get them would be the sole beneficiary.



“Brother Miao, you do not need to fear Shen Cong Sheng. I have a way to get far away from Shen Cong Sheng when we teleport outside, the distance is enough for us to stay safe.” Fang Yuan lied but Miao Ming Shen and the rest felt deeply shocked.

Gui Qi Ye’s brows rose: “It is a reward on the Merit Obelisk?”

“Indeed.” Fang Yuan nodded, but he had no idea if that existed.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest could not help but believe him.

Why?

Because Chu Ying’s attitude towards Shen Cong Sheng was simply courting death! The fact that he remained so fearless meant that he had some sort of assurance.

Fang Yuan continued: “I can receive large sized missions but I cannot complete them alone. I need all of your help.”

Saying so, he received the large sized mission on the obelisk and shared the details with Miao Ming Shen and others.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest felt shocked, after receiving information of the mission, their expressions changed.

He could actually do that?!

The truth was, Miao Ming Shen had discovered this secret personally in the previous life.

The ‘super good person’ title allowed one to share missions.

For Gu Immortals, mid-sized missions were difficult to do alone, having other people’s help made it easier. Even though they would share the merit points, if their efficiency at solving missions increased, the benefits far outweighed the costs.

Miao Ming Shen could choose to accept it or not. Fang Yuan could share missions but he could not force them to take it.

Miao Ming Shen only thought about it for a while before accepting the mission.

He had just completed a mid-sized mission, he had the same feelings as Feng Jiang.

Fang Yuan had an easy time because he cultivated every path, Miao Ming Shen and the rest were ordinary Gu Immortals, they cultivated one path and most of the time, only certain missions suited them.

Since completing mid-sized missions was not easy, and they had to put in a lot of investment, Miao Ming Shen was more willing to work with Fang Yuan and attempt something new.

# **Chapter 1901 - Formation Calms Sea Area**

## **1901 Formation Calms Sea Area**

Five lumps of white light, flashing abruptly in the sky, brought Fang Yuan, Miao Ming Shen and the others from the Merit Obelisk to here.

All five of them were familiar with the mission and headed down to get a bird's-eye view, each of them activating their investigative killer moves.

Fang Yuan was the first to observe the area and take a closer look.

His investigative methods had always been his shortcoming, but that was only relative to his enemies. When compared to Miao Ming Shen and the others, even his weaker aspects were still far superior to them.

This was a vast sea area.

The sea was raging, creating thousands of fierce waves, they were so powerful that countless sea beasts could be seen within the reflections of these ripples.

In this sea, there were five small islands.

First was jade shaking island with countless jade pillars, chiming and tinkling due to powerful winds.

Second was white bone island, it was pale white and had the corpses of beasts scattered around.

Third was hidden space island, it seemed illusory as if it did not exist.

Fourth was sword wind island, there were three tornadoes on the island that would never stop moving.

And fifth was treasure moon island, it was crescent shaped and was shrouded by the night sky at all times, every inch of sand on this island shined with faint moonlight.

Three of these five islands had begun to drift slowly with the current. Among them, sword wind island had the fastest flow and confusing direction of movement.

For the remaining two islands, jade shaking island was in danger, the pillars underneath the island were broken, and in a little while, just like the three islands, it would start to drift away on the sea surface.

As for hidden space island, however, it was very stable and remained firmly entrenched in the distance. This was because this island was filled with phantom path dao marks.

The main cause of the islands' drifting was the impact currents that ran deep under the sea.

These currents had become so large that they endangered the sea itself. Suppressing the currents, restructuring the ecology of the sea, and restoring the former five-islands chain were the contents of this large-sized mission.

Fang Yuan started to make calculations and deductions in his mind.

There were indications that this sea area had originally formed an intrinsic ecology with the five-islands chain as its core. Impact currents did not exist before, but now they were like a shark in a calm pond, causing severe destruction to the habitat and ecology of this sea area.

While Fang Yuan made his deductions, Miao Ming Shen and the rest also explored this entire sea area with their investigative methods.

They frowned and had serious expressions.

“This is a large sized mission? The difficulty is several times higher than a mid-sized mission!” Hua Die’s heart sank steeply.

Feng Jiang had an ugly expression as he thought: “I tried my best earlier to improve the ecology of beehive island but it was still imperfect. This large sized mission is not about balancing the ecology, but restructuring it. Each island is in greater danger than beehive island itself. And the five islands are only part of the mission, there’s still a large sea area and the underwater impact currents to resolve.”

“This is very complex, to restructure the habitat of the sea area, we would need to change everything and meticulously alter the details. Without a wisdom path Gu Immortal, we will need to make many experiments and attempt the restructuring step by step. During this process, we would make many mistakes.” Gui Qi Ye sighed in his heart.

Miao Ming Shen was calculating the gains and losses: “The mid-sized mission I just completed expended a large amount of my rank seven immortal materials. To restructure the ecology of this place, the resources invested, the immortal essence consumed and the energy spent will be an extremely large sum!”

The more Miao Ming Shen and the rest observed, the faster their morale slipped away.

The difficulty of the large sized mission made them feel like giving up.

The truth was, they started to regret it, following Fang Yuan blindly to accept this mission was not a wise decision.

“Brother Chu, let’s plan together.” At this point, Miao Ming Shen could only smile bitterly and find Fang Yuan to discuss their actions.

He was not going to give up on it, just because they took the mission did not mean they could abandon it. In fact, in order to give up the mission, they needed to exchange for another title.

Bright light flashed in Fang Yuan's eyes, with both time path clone and Fang Yuan making deductions at the same time, he had already arrived at a perfect plan.

He cupped his fists at Miao Ming Shen: "Brother Miao, I have already planned something, follow my instructions and we will definitely complete the mission."

Miao Ming Shen was stunned, although he did not believe it in his heart, he nodded without rebuking: "Please give the instructions Brother Chu, we will do our best!"

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: "Brother Miao is too polite, it will be good for both of us if we work together to complete this mission. The better we complete a large sized mission, the greater the returns compared to a mid-sized mission!"

"I'm only afraid we can't complete it well." Miao Ming Shen sighed internally but did not say anything, he had already lost confidence in himself, he could only place his hopes on Fang Yuan now.

But Fang Yuan's words were comfortable for him to hear.

Fang Yuan was not high and mighty, but rather he had an attitude of equal cooperation. This was different from Shen Cong Sheng.

"Brother Miao, I want you to occupy jade shaking island to guard against the impact currents. Please ask Gui Qi Ye to station at sword wind island and make sure that it doesn't wander off. Ask Feng Jiang and Fairy Hua Die to guard treasure moon island and white bone island respectively. I'm going to deal with hidden space island first."

Fang Yuan made the arrangements, Miao Ming Shen's group was clueless to begin with, they followed Fang Yuan's instructions.

With the four immortals in action, the islands were quickly suppressed, no longer drifting with the current, their speed of movement fell to a level that could be controlled.

Watching Fang Yuan descend on hidden space island, the four immortals had doubts in their hearts.

“Hidden space island is a phantom path island, it is the most stable place in the entire sea area, it is also the easiest part of the mission.”

“Why is Chu Ying trying to deal with this island first? He should fix the other islands before trying to fix this hidden space island. After all, this island is almost non-existent, by dealing with it first, he will cause some obstruction when handling the other islands later.”

“In my opinion, he should deal with the impact currents first. It is the cause behind the collapse of the five-islands chain. To restructure the ecology here, one has to deal with the root cause at the start.”

Fang Yuan landed on hidden space island, quickly flying out afterwards, his speed was shocking to Miao Ming Shen and the rest.

Fang Yuan went to white bone island.

Under Hua Die’s observation, Fang Yuan took out immortal materials from his immortal aperture and threw them around at will.

“He is setting up a formation!” Hua Die was seeing Fang Yuan create a formation for the first time.

Fang Yuan was skillful and experienced, the process was very fluid, Hua Die watched with a sense of appreciation and amazement.

Soon, Fang Yuan finished setting up the formation.

Hua Die’s mouth opened with deep shock, she could not close it.

“Chu Ying actually used immortal materials to set up a formation! Doesn’t this mean he has grandmaster attainment in formation path?”

“So he is not a transformation path Gu Immortal but a formation path Gu Immortal.”

“No, not true, when he defeated Ge Wen and saved us, he clearly used transformation path methods.”

“Don’t tell me, he cultivates two paths?”

It was not that rare for Gu Immortals to cultivate two paths. But for Fang Yuan to be so proficient in both paths, with such high attainment, it was very rare.

White bone island’s arrangements were done, Fang Yuan activated this sub-formation and connected it to the main formation on hidden space island.

Due to the effect of the immortal formation, white bone island shook intensely, it anchored itself to the sea and showed no signs of movement anymore.

Hua Die finally understood Fang Yuan’s intentions: “So he was using hidden space island as the base to stabilize the other islands around it.”

“Amazing, hidden space island is the best foundation for this chain, because the impact currents are useless against it. But...”

Hua Die soon realized a flaw: “But the other islands are using hidden space island as the anchor, this is the power of a formation, these impact currents will still hit these islands over time, as the formation continues to get damaged, it would break eventually, these islands will still float away in the end.”

Fang Yuan did not show any inclination to dispel her doubts, soon after, he landed on the three remaining islands and set up his formation, stabilizing them all.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest looked at Fang Yuan with complex gazes.

Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment was too shocking to them.



Formation path grandmasters were very rare!

And earlier, Fang Yuan's transformation path attainment was also exemplary.

With such strength, the mysteriousness of Fang Yuan intensified in the immortals' hearts.

“However, stabilizing the five sea islands is just a good start.”

“The real problem are the impact currents around the sea islands.”

“Without water path methods, how can we deal with the sea currents?”

Miao Ming Shen and the rest talked among themselves. They could not transmit their voices in Dragon Whale Paradise, but they could still use information path mortal Gu like letter pigeon Gu.

The impact currents that rampaged in this sea area were too huge, Miao Ming Shen and the rest could only think of using immortal methods to attack the impact currents and destroy them bit by bit.

This method was crude and wasted a lot of time and immortal essence, the biggest flaw was that attacking these currents would cause tremendous damage to the surrounding sea area.

But other than that, Miao Ming Shen and the rest did not have any good ideas.

Boom!

Right at this time, Fang Yuan rose to the sky and activated the entire Gu formation.

Each of the five islands blossomed with rushing pillars of light of various colors, the power of the Gu formation soared upwards, breaking through its original limit.

“So this is the true power of the formation!” Miao Ming Shen and the rest had changes of expressions, they were dumbfounded.

These five islands’ dao marks were so dense that they could also be seen as a single gigantic immortal material. The immortal formation that Fang Yuan had set up naturally included them within the range that could be utilized.

“I am going to draw in the impact currents now. Everyone, continue to defend your islands, if any beasts attack or if any waves approach that would endanger the islands, I need you to stop them.” Fang Yuan called out as his voice resounded in the sea area.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest quickly responded, saying they would do their best.

The formation buzzed and the five pillars of light gradually dissipated, turning into white light that scattered in the sky.

The light went into the seawater, staining the water around the island with a beautiful illusion of white light.

In this illusory white light, the impact currents were like a blue whale that had been stirred up by fish and shrimps, slowly moving its body, then swimming faster and faster and crashing towards jade shaking island, which was the closest.

Miao Ming Shen, who was on jade shaking island, gritted his teeth, he felt tremendous pressure, tensing up and going on full alert.

If the immortal formation’s defense was not enough, such a sea current could completely crush jade shaking island if it hit directly!

Boom!

The impact currents touched the formation and created a startling explosion.

A huge wave, up to ten feet high, pounded at jade shaking island.

Miao Ming Shen immediately flew up with a cry, using his killer move to resist it.

The impact currents were slowly turned around by this and moved to the left of jade shaking island. But before they could move away, they were drawn back by white bone island's immortal formation.

The one guarding white bone island was Hua Die, and she almost groaned when she saw the sea current coming towards her.

In the discussions of Miao Ming Shen's group, the impact current was to be repelled and slowly weakened, the best outcome was to break it up and scatter it completely.

But Fang Yuan was actually attracting the impact currents actively to hit the sea islands.

This was something that Miao Ming Shen and the rest wanted to avoid at all costs.

"Chu Ying is too crazy!" Hua Die soon had no time to think as the impact currents crashed into white bone island, the entire formation resounded with a scary creaking sound, before a huge wave was created.

There were also many sea beasts caught in the waves, Hua Die put up her best effort to resist them.

Like this, the impact currents, under the constant manipulation of Fang Yuan, hit the five islands one after another.

With each impact, the power of the currents was reduced by one level, they then circled around the island and became drawn to the next point.

After the impact currents crashed into the last island, they had less than half the power and momentum as before.

At this time, Fang Yuan activated the immortal formation once again, actually making the impact currents turn around and crash into the second last island.

Thus, the Gu Immortals defending the sea islands felt great fear again.

After the impact currents struck five times and returned to jade shaking island, the power of the currents hitting the island was almost nonexistent, they had almost turned to being ordinary currents.

The five islands shook lightly as the immortal formation stabilized completely. The impact currents quickly calmed down and began to flow at an even rate consistently.

In contrast, the hearts of the four Gu Immortals stirred with huge waves of disbelief and shock!

They did not expect that Fang Yuan would resolve the impact currents using such a method.

The impact currents, while still present, had become a protective layer that surrounded the island. Around the five islands, the impact currents flowed rapidly, faster than ordinary seawater, protecting the five islands while at the same time, helping the immortal formation to stabilize the five islands' location.

If they had followed the plan of Miao Ming Shen and the others to destroy the impact currents, this sea area would surely be destroyed beyond recognition.

Fang Yuan's move, however, cleverly avoided this drawback and instead made full use of the impact currents, turning the original calamity into a blessing and greatly enhancing the natural foundation of this sea area.

This was truly an incredible achievement!

Miao Ming Shen and the others were all impressed.

It was really difficult to do this.

Not to mention the arrangement of the immortal formation, just the matter of manipulating impact currents alone, even water path Gu Immortals were not even capable of doing that. To perfectly weaken the impact currents to a

certain level, one needed to make precise calculations and deductions. When the impact currents return to jade shaking island, their power must be reduced to almost nothing. A bit more or a bit less would have greatly affected the overall situation and would not have gotten the incredible near-perfect balance it had now.

“The biggest problem has been resolved, the next step will be for you to repair the immortal formation, as well as restructuring the ecology of the island, as for the things beyond the impact currents, you can ignore them.” Fang Yuan smiled.

He was quite satisfied with this result.

If new impact currents formed, these existing currents would engulf them and protect the islands under the effect of the immortal formation.

Fang Yuan would leave his will and a large amount of immortal essence here, as long as they remained, the five-islands chain would be very safe.

# **Chapter 1902 - Bullying Rank Eigh**

## Chapter 1902 Bullying Rank Eigh

The impact currents were like hungry tigers at first, but after Fang Yuan's arrangements, they became the pet cats that defended the five-islands chain. After Fang Yuan completed this set up, the situation was already resolved.

What followed were some finishing touches.

These were not hard to do, but they were quite strenuous and required time and effort.

Fang Yuan was not going to bother himself with them.

Thus, Fang Yuan discussed with Miao Ming Shen, they left Feng Jiang and Fairy Hua Die here while the rest returned with him.

White light shined, Fang Yuan, Miao Ming Shen, and Gui Qi Ye returned to the starting island.

Ren Xiu Ping was currently looking at the missions on this merit point.

He was an enslavement path Gu Immortal, he had many desolate beasts and a few ancient desolate beasts in his hands. These beasts all had various abilities, his methods were quite wide-ranging.

However, even Ren Xiu Ping still felt the difficulty of mid-sized missions.

Fang Yuan and the others appeared beside him, causing his heart to jump as he secretly thought: "How could these three suddenly appear at the same time? Is it a coincidence?"

Fang Yuan nodded at Ren Xiu Ping and smiled slightly.

Ren Xiu Ping was stunned, this unexpected attitude of Fang Yuan made him not know how to respond for a moment.

Fang Yuan walked towards him as the obelisk's words transformed, showing all of its large sized missions.

Fang Yuan swept his gaze around it and quickly received one of the missions.

Next, he shared this with Miao Ming Shen and Gui Qi Ye.

With another flash of light, the three of them vanished on the spot.

Ren Xiu Ping watched the entire process, his expression turned grim: "Chu Ying received a different level of mission from me, it is one tier higher. It seems that his merit points fell earlier because he was exchanging for another title to receive higher tier missions. This is very likely to be the title — really good person!"

The title of 'good person' could exchange for mid-sized missions, while 'really good person' could exchange for large sized missions.

This was a simple relationship, the Gu Immortals could easily guess it just by seeing the names.

But the problem was, so what if they realized it?

"Mid-sized missions are already so hard, large sized missions must be even harder!" Ren Xiu Ping felt gloomy internally: "And why were Miao Ming Shen and Gui Qi Ye able to move together with Chu Ying? Did they receive the same mission?"

This discovery was quite alluring to Ren Xiu Ping.

Mid-sized missions were difficult but if they had help, the difficulty would be shifted.

"Even though the merit points would be divided if many people receive the same missions, as long as we control it well, our efficiency at completing



missions will increase, our overall gains will increase instead. Isn't Chu Ying doing the exact same thing now?"

Ren Xiu Ping was a savvy person, after thinking about it, he understood Fang Yuan's intentions.

Fang Yuan did not plan to hide it, in fact, he had purposely released the information.

Miao Ming Shen's group could be roped in as allies, why couldn't Ren Xiu Ping?

Their hatred earlier?

Hehe.

How could hatred compare to the benefits in front of them?

Ren Xiu Ping was not crazy, he was astute, thus, there was a chance of cooperation.

Ren Xiu Ping definitely had an alliance agreement with Shen clan.

But it did not matter.

The Merit Obelisk had such rewards that could eliminate the agreement restraints on a Gu Immortal.

Even without Fang Yuan's reminder, Ren Xiu Ping must have seen that himself already.

The second large sized mission was naturally harder than mid-sized missions, but it was no problem for Fang Yuan.

After spending some effort, Fang Yuan resolved the big issues and left Miao Ming Shen and Gui Qi Ye to settle the minor problems.

When he returned to the Merit Obelisk again, he waited a little while before Hua Die and Feng Jiang returned.

Their return meant that the first large sized mission was completed.

Fang Yuan gained five hundred merit points, while Miao Ming Shen and the rest each gained around eighty points.

Fang Yuan looked at the numbers on the merit board as he calculated, this large sized mission gave a total of nine hundred and seventy-three points.

Fang Yuan and Miao Ming Shen's group split up these points, Fang Yuan gained the bulk of them, getting five hundred points was about the same as completing a large sized mission alone.

Except that he spent way less time and effort on it.

Hua Die and Feng Jiang looked at each other, seeing the joy in each other's eyes.

In this mission, they helped Fang Yuan resist the waves and settle the minor problems at the end. They only spent some immortal essence, time, and effort, but they gained more than eighty merit points from it.

Feng Jiang thought about the beehive island mission he completed alone, he spent a group of bees, including his desolate beast yellow gyro bee, but only got eighty points in the end.

Comparing the two, helping Fang Yuan complete a large sized mission was much easier and reaped greater rewards.

“Go and join with Miao Ming Shen to complete the second mission. I'd advise that we should all exchange for a group title. With a group title, we will be able to communicate with each other.” Fang Yuan suggested.

A group title was not cheap, it required a hundred merit points.

But Feng Jiang and Hua Die did not hesitate, they listened to Fang Yuan and exchanged for this title.

Fang Yuan shared the second mission with them as Feng Jiang and Hua Die teleported to where Miao Ming Shen and Gui Qi Ye were.

Fang Yuan received the third large sized mission and went ahead to deal with it.

After Miao Ming Shen and the rest completed the second mission and returned to the starting island, the four immortals gained a sum of merit points listed on the merit board.

Miao Ming Shen and Gui Qi Ye also spent merit points to exchange for a group title, it allowed the four immortals to communicate with Fang Yuan constantly.

At this point, Fang Yuan already completed his arrangements in the new mission, he shared it with Miao Ming Shen and group.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest touched the obelisk and accepted the mission Fang Yuan shared with them.

They were transported to Fang Yuan, he gave them some instructions before returning to look at the next mission on the Merit Obelisk.

Fang Yuan had an advantage in cultivating every path, his value was fully displayed here.

Even for Shen Cong Sheng, many of the missions here were impossible to complete, but Fang Yuan, from his perspective, had methods to solve most missions. What he had to do was to choose those that would give him the most benefits and complete them first.

With the help of Miao Ming Shen and the others, Fang Yuan saved a lot of time and effort, while they were also gaining much more merit points now due to the help of Fang Yuan.

The cooperation between them was of mutual benefit, but it was a problem for Ren Xiu Ping and Shen Cong Sheng.

These people watched as Miao Ming Shen's group rose in position on the merit board, surpassing them and becoming part of the top rankers, it was truly infuriating but there was nothing they could do.

Looking at Fang Yuan's merit points, he had reached several thousand! He was truly ahead, far surpassing any other immortal.

Because of their huge difference, the immortals lost all desire to catch up to him.

"Immortal Gu need at least ten thousand merit points to exchange, Chu Ying is not far away already." Many people saw this and felt complex emotions, they were in admiration but also felt dejection.

"This is so strange, how can Chu Ying successfully complete so many different types of missions?"

"He must know many secrets about this place, it is a pity that we cannot fight inside here!"

"Miao Ming Shen and his group have truly dog shit luck, how could they gain the help of Chu Ying like this?"

The immortals were extremely jealous.

Shen Cong Sheng sighed, the number of times he had sighed in the last ten days was more than the sum of the previous few years.

The ranking on the merit board was very glaring, Shen Cong Sheng's position was even lower than Hua Die and Feng Jiang.

He was a great rank eight Gu Immortal, he actually was losing to two rank six Gu Immortals, how could he allow this? It was too embarrassing.

"If I can receive a large sized mission, my rank eight strength will be fully utilized, I will definitely gain a lot of merit points. But how can I let others receive the same mission as me?"

The 'really good person' title was obvious, but what was the title to share missions?

They needed to test this.

And these experiments would test Shen Cong Sheng's luck, their merit points would also be wasted.

This would aggravate their situation from the already terrible situation now.

“I can make my Shen clan Gu Immortals use their merit points, but what about Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua? If I do that, will I just push them towards Chu Ying's side?”

Shen Cong Sheng had some reservations.

He knew that his influence was continuously falling now.

After learning that Gu Immortal agreements could be removed using the rewards on the Merit Obelisk, Shen Cong Sheng became more cautious regarding his attitude towards Ren Xiu Ping and others.

Fang Yuan and Miao Ming Shen could cooperate to do missions together, he had a good lead.

Shen Cong Sheng wanted to copy him, he had to unite Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua, these two people cultivated paths that Shen clan lacked.

Shen Cong Sheng was already regretting it, he should not have forced Miao Ming Shen and the rest to spend their merit points to exchange for different rewards.

This action made the immortals go against him mentally, it was a wise action back then, but now it was a terrible idea.

This was not Shen Cong Sheng's fault, after all, he did not know anything about the Merit Obelisk earlier.

The decisions he made back then was very appropriate due to the circumstances.

There were many types of missions on the merit obelisk, mid-sized missions started to become difficult.

Thus, the more paths one cultivated, the more advantage they would have in completing missions.

Fang Yuan had already united Miao Ming Shen and the rest, Shen Cong Sheng started to learn from his mistake, he became more gentle in his approach towards Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua.

His rank eight reputation was still around, while Ren Xiu Ping's alliance agreement was not removed yet, and most importantly, Ren Xiu Ping had a grudge against Chu Ying and Miao Ming Shen.

All these reasons ensured that Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua were still on Shen clan's side.

When Fang Yuan returned to the Merit Obelisk, a new large sized mission appeared — the demonic immortal in regret crying sea has lost his senses, please cooperate with the formation and kill him!

“Regret crying sea appeared?” Fang Yuan was slightly stunned before accepting this mission.

At this point, four missions regarding the merman city had appeared, but the merman saintess selection competition had not started yet.

The influence of Fang Yuan's rebirth had greatly altered the missions on the Merit Obelisk.

With this mission, Fang Yuan would be able to retrieve regret Gu earlier.

This was a great thing!

Once he gets regret Gu, he would be able to advance his Immortal Gu to a higher rank, his progress would be faster than in his previous life.

# **Chapter 1903 - Response Gu**

## Chapter 1903 Response Gu

The sky was cloudy, there were vicious winds and choppy waves. This was regret crying sea area, Fang Yuan and Miao Ming Shen's group had already been here for some time.

"I regret it! I should not have killed so many people."

"I painfully regret it! I should not have chased after power, it would have been much better if I had stayed behind to look after my parents as a filial son!"

"I truly repent! I deceived everyone and concealed Immortal Gu, I let a friend, who trusted me the most, carry the blame so I could get benefits!"

Waves of crying sounds resounded in the immortals' ears like immortal killer moves that messed with their emotions.

This was the center of the regret crying sea area.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest stayed in the sky while watching Fang Yuan who was in deep contemplation, they waited patiently.

Even though they did not have much formation path foundation, they also found the grand formation at the bottom of the sea.

This was clearly the work of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, Miao Ming Shen and the rest looked at it and felt how minuscule they were.

Fang Yuan was like this in his previous life, he sighed that this formation was as vast as the sky, he would need at least dozens of years to comprehend all the profundities of this large formation.

But now, this time needed decreased drastically.



“I need about eight years to fully comprehend and gain complete understanding of this formation.” Fang Yuan thought.

The reason for such an improvement was none other than Fang Yuan’s earth path attainment level.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan did not have grandmaster attainment level in earth path, but this formation was a super immortal formation that was primarily earth path.

“There are no actions from regret Gu.” Fang Yuan stared at a certain area at the bottom of the sea.

Fang Yuan was not surprised by this situation.

In order to stay in Dragon Whale Paradise, Fang Yuan destroyed the stone lotus island in advance. Without the stone lotus island, the venerable method used on regret Gu could not find its location, how could it activate?

According to the memories that Fang Yuan obtained on the stone lotus island, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had entered the stone lotus island and borrowed regret Gu.

Even though the stone lotus island had Red Lotus’ will and his lingering methods, how could it resist a living venerable?

Red Lotus’ will gave in, allowing Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable to borrow regret Gu, he even wanted to snatch Red Lotus’ inheritor.

This inheritor was naturally Fang Yuan.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan chose the stone lotus island but this time, he took everything from the stone lotus island in advance, he came to the Dragon Whale Paradise because he wanted to inherit this Paradise Earth true inheritance.

“In the previous life, regret Gu flew out and transported me away. Right now, it is showing no signs of movement, it seems that I need to take action myself.” Fang Yuan gained some realization.

Venerable methods were grand and powerful, Fang Yuan was teleported by regret Gu to the stone lotus island without putting up resistance.

Seeing that regret Gu did not activate, Fang Yuan was quite happy about it.

After comprehending it for several hours, Fang Yuan recollected his scattered thoughts.

He thought about it for a moment before saying to Miao Ming Shen: “We need to use the formation to get rid of this demonic immortal. However, when Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable set up this formation, even though it has unparalleled power, it can only suppress and seal, it has no offensive power. My idea is, we will set up a supplementary formation outside and activate it to kill the demonic immortal trapped within the formation.”

Miao Ming Shen and the rest nodded upon hearing this idea, they agreed with it.

If they tried to break the formation and release the demonic immortal, it would be extremely dangerous.

It was obvious that this mysterious demonic immortal was someone of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s generation. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had died already but this demonic immortal was still alive.

In terms of lifespan, he had already lived for more than a hundred thousand years.

Who could live for so long?

Even Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, who had the longest lifespan among venerables, only lived for twenty five thousand years.

Having a longer lifespan than a venerable, just this point alone made the demonic immortal extremely terrifying.

“Everyone, no need to overestimate the demonic immortal.” Fang Yuan smiled: “This formation has a lifespan extension method in addition to its

sealing ability, this demonic immortal is in constant hibernation to extend his lifespan, this is the reason he is still alive.”

Miao Ming Shen and the rest showed a more relaxed expression after he said that.

“Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable is truly merciful, not only did he not kill the person, after suppressing this demonic immortal, he even extended his lifespan!”

“Does Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable have Heavenly Court’s lifespan extension method? According to Heavenly Court’s method, not only a hundred thousand years, they can hibernate for millions of years.”

“Sigh, how can we possibly try to understand the method of a venerable?”

Fang Yuan turned his gaze to Miao Ming Shen and said: “But for me to set up the supplementary formation, I need a Gu Immortal to suppress each formation core. When the supplementary formation is activated, the more Gu Immortals there are and the more formation cores there are, the greater the power of the supplementary formation will be. And in my plan, I need at least eight Gu Immortals to suppress the formation cores.”

The good feelings of Miao Ming Shen and the rest faded away.

Including Fang Yuan, there were only five Gu Immortals here. Fang Yuan’s words meant that they had to invite at least three more people.

That was an interesting situation.

Because with the addition of Zeng Luo Zi and Tu Tou Tuo, they still needed one person.

And other than Shen clan’s Gu Immortals, there were only Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua left.

This was not acceptable to Miao Ming Shen’s group. Shen clan had suppressed them, while Ren Xiu Ping was their enemy and Tong Hua was a traitor.

Who do they invite?

Gui Qi Ye, Hua Die, and Feng Jiang showed difficult expressions.

However, Miao Ming Shen smiled and responded sincerely: “Brother Chu, the most important thing right now is the Paradise Earth true inheritance, it is a rare opportunity, so we should seize it! This is such a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity! What hatred do we have that we can’t put aside for a while? If we want to settle the score, we can do it after we leave. In my opinion, Zeng Luo Zi and Tu Tou Tuo can be invited, Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua can also be invited, and it will be even better if Shen clan’s Gu Immortals can also come.”

After saying that, Miao Ming Shen added an additional sentence: “Of course, everything is up to you, Brother Chu.”

Gui Qi Ye and the other immortals’ expressions changed, they wanted to say something but after Miao Ming Shen’s statement, they could not say anything.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, Miao Ming Shen was truly Miao Ming Shen after all!

Fang Yuan said warmly: “Brother Miao is truly magnanimous, I am in deep admiration. Let’s do that, I will set up a few supplementary formations first, the four of you will guard a formation core each and activate the formations to infiltrate the underwater formation. After that, I will invite the other Gu Immortals in.”

Miao Ming Shen said again: “I am friends with Tu Tou Tuo and Zeng Luo Zi, I can write them a letter to make sure they know what decision to make.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “That would be good.”

Eventually, Fang Yuan obtained a few information path mortal Gu from Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen not only wrote letters to Zeng Luo Zi and Tu Tou Tuo, he even wrote to Ren Xiu Ping, Tong Hua, and Shen clan, inviting them on behalf of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan took a few glances at the content, there were no issues. Miao Ming Shen expressed his intention to work together in the letter, he said that their grudges could be put aside for a while, he also praised Fang Yuan's methods and urged them to cooperate with him.

Fang Yuan could not help but reassess Miao Ming Shen.

The truth was, Miao Ming Shen's letter was only the icing on the cake, this letter was not going to change anything.

Fang Yuan had a lot of confidence in successfully recruiting these people to begin with.

Even if Miao Ming Shen objected, Fang Yuan would still invite the other Gu Immortals. Miao Ming Shen knew that he was not someone crucial to Fang Yuan, he could be replaced, in order to gain more benefits in the future, he relented. If this is not a talented person, who is?

The process of recruiting Tu Tou Tuo and Zeng Luo Zi went very smoothly.

Fang Yuan only said a sentence and they quickly joined him, they even showed deep excitement.

After all, Fang Yuan was bringing Miao Ming Shen's group to rise in ranking on the merit board, everyone could see how they suppressed Shen Cong Sheng.

Fang Yuan invited Tong Hua next, she hesitated and said she needed to think about it.

After that, Fang Yuan invited Ren Xiu Ping, he agreed to it without even thinking, he was even faster than Tu Tou Tuo and Zeng Luo Zi.

Ren Xiu Ping also brought slightly surprising news to Fang Yuan, Shen clan's Gu Immortals wanted to join as well.

Shen Cong Sheng was the leader of the Shen clan Gu Immortals, without his consent, none of them would dare to defect over to Fang Yuan.

Thus Fang Yuan met with Shen Cong Sheng soon after.

“Chu Ying.” This time, Shen Cong Sheng had a warm attitude, he also treated the rank seven Chu Ying as a rank eight equal.

“The reason why I came here is because of Heavenly Court’s information. Not long ago, Duke Long and Qi Sea Ancestor had a battle, I’m sure you have heard of it. In this battle, I captured Gu Yue Fang Zheng, in order to get him back, Heavenly Court gave me some important information.”

“It turns out that this Dragon Whale Paradise has a rank eight response Immortal Gu, this Gu is extremely important to me and my Shen clan, I have been looking for it for many years.”

“Shen clan is willing to cooperate with you, Chu Ying. If you see this Gu on the Merit Obelisk’s reward list, I hope you can pass it. If you encounter this Gu in a mission, my Shen clan would like you to capture it for us. We will offer you a huge reward!”

Fang Yuan’s expression changed: “Response Gu? This Gu worm is among the top ten of the List of Mystical Gu, it can emit a voice and anyone who hears this voice and responds to it will become enslaved. A rank eight response Gu can enslave rank eight Gu Immortals, this is such a precious Gu that your clan is unable to obtain, if you want to work with me, what rewards are you offering me? After all, within this Dragon Whale Paradise, we cannot set an agreement.”

Shen Cong Sheng laughed loudly: “I have already prepared it. This cooperation will use the reputation of my Shen clan, you can record the entire process. Furthermore, I have something for you, this is a portion of our sincerity, please do accept it.”

Saying so, Shen Cong Sheng took out a set of immortal materials and handed them to Fang Yuan.

The immortal materials had a lot of value, even Fang Yuan felt a little excited upon receiving them.

Regret Gu was right in front of him, he needed quite a bit of resources to advance all of his Immortal Gu, this set of immortal materials from Shen Cong Sheng had fixed this problem, it was something Fang Yuan really needed.

Fang Yuan nodded as he accepted the immortal materials.

Shen Cong Sheng added: “I hear that your current mission has a super immortal formation set by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable himself. I would like to go there, response Gu might be in it, even if it is not there, my Shen clan Gu Immortals can lend a hand to help you with this mission.”

Fang Yuan pondered for a while before nodding: “It is my honor to receive the help of Lord Shen Cong Sheng.”

# **Chapter 1904 - Territory Gu**



## Chapter 1904 Territory Gu

Within the regret crying sea area, immortals were present. Miao Ming Shen and the other three each stayed in a supplementary formation, they activated their formations as the power continued to seep into the underwater formation.

Fang Yuan was setting up his immortal formation now.

His aura was radiating at rank seven level, his body was covered in a light green halo, his eyes were filled with blue light, resembling lightning in the sea.

Waving his hand, a large number of mortal Gu flew into the sky like a swarm of bees, circling around and forming the shape of a supplementary formation.

Next, Fang Yuan took out immortal materials and used his killer moves to fill up this supplementary formation.

The newly arrived Ren Xiu Ping and others looked at Fang Yuan with gleaming eyes, they were silent upon seeing his formation arrangement.

The Gu Immortals all had complex expressions, even Shen Cong Sheng was the same.

“Being able to use immortal materials to set up formations, he is a formation path grandmaster.”

“Chu Ying cultivates transformation path, to think that he has such attainment in formation path, this is very rare. How does he dual cultivate?”

“Perhaps he found a way to cultivate both transformation path and formation path without conflict, like how Heavenly Court’s Thunder Ghost True Monarch cultivated lightning path and soul path, or how Nine Spiritual Fairy cultivates transformation path and enslavement path.”

“It is not as simple as just a formation path grandmaster, Chu Ying’s proficiency in creating formations is very high, and most impressively, he does not lack formation path immortal killer moves, his efficiency at creating formations is truly amazing!”

The immortals watched with increasing shock as Fang Yuan displayed his incredible formation path attainment.

“With such methods, he can handle a lot of missions on the Merit Obelisk.”

“Most of the Merit Obelisk missions involve channeling of rivers and managing the ecology, this is very advantageous for Chu Ying.”

“No wonder he could complete so many formations!”

“Ordinary formation path Gu Immortals need Immortal Gu to create immortal formations. But Chu Ying is a formation path grandmaster, he only needs to use immortal materials. This is too terrifying.”

The Gu Immortals could not help but feel envy and jealousy, especially towards Miao Ming Shen and group who had joined Chu Ying much earlier and had a head start.

Ren Xiu Ping was already starting to consider if he should abandon Shen clan after this mission and defect to Fang Yuan instead.

Looking at the current situation, Fang Yuan was very magnanimous, earlier, even though Ren Xiu Ping was enemies with him, he had completely ignored it at the moment.

Ren Xiu Ping’s worry was that Fang Yuan already had Miao Ming Shen’s group, even Tu Tou Tuo and Zeng Luo Zi had a closer relationship to Fang Yuan than him.

“In Chu Ying’s perspective, he could simply cooperate with the people he liked. Why would he seek the cooperation of an enemy like me?”

Ren Xiu Ping had a thought: “Even though he had formation path grandmaster attainment level, being able to use immortal materials to set up formations, his greatest limitation is also immortal materials. If he lacks immortal materials, I can contribute them to him and deepen our cooperation and relationship.”

Ren Xiu Ping decided to give up some of his personal benefits, that was the only way he could entice Fang Yuan into cooperating with him.

“This formation has been created, Ren Xiu Ping, please go and defend it.” Fang Yuan spoke at this time.

He had already set up several formations, this was like the previous few ones, even though they were made in the sky, once they were completed, they would sink into the sea.

“Sure, sure.” Ren Xiu Ping smiled as he flew down, he entered the formation without checking it closely.

Ren Xiu Ping did not have formation path attainment, even if Fang Yuan created the formation before his very eyes, he could not understanding the profundity of this supplementary formation, but he believed that with Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangements, Fang Yuan could not harm him.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable restricted Gu Immortals from fighting each other, it allowed them to trust each other to a large extent.

Fang Yuan continued to set up formations.

One, two three...

One by one, Gu Immortals entered their formations, the supplementary formations were getting stronger.

Ren Xiu Ping’s expression was not good now.

Fang Yuan seemed to have an endless supply of immortal materials!

During this period of time, he saw domination copper, earthly limit astral qi, green jade wind, dark inkstone, heaven flying jade...

Fang Yuan's deep wealth silenced all of the immortals.

Ren Xiu Ping even gasped in shock several times.

With such wealth, how could he possibly compare?

And the thing that made Ren Xiu Ping the most dejected was Fang Yuan's attitude.

He spent all of these immortal materials to create formations, he did not even blink or hesitate, he was completely indifferent about the cost!

Even though Fang Yuan lacked immortal materials, that was for the sake of advancing his Immortal Gu. The immortal materials used to create these formations were merely just a tiny portion of Fang Yuan's treasury, even if he had to create another hundred supplementary formations, he could easily afford it.

Thus, Fang Yuan's actions were simply showing that he was incredibly affluent in the eyes of Ren Xiu Ping and the other Gu Immortals!

After expending some time and effort, all the supplementary formations were finally created.

Shen Cong Sheng and the rest went into their own formations that were scattered all around the underwater formation, if one watched from above, it would resemble the tail of a peacock.

Every single supplementary formation resembled the feathers that formed the eye of a peacock tail, they gathered strength that flowed all the way into the underwater formation.

The supplementary formations looked similar but they all had different effects.

This was because Fang Yuan modified every supplementary formation according to the respective Gu Immortal using it, for example, Miao Ming Shen's supplementary formation had space path immortal materials, it could raise his efficiency. Ren Xiu Ping's supplementary formation had several spaces in it that could accommodate desolate beasts, it would allow him to use his enslavement path expertise.

Other than that, the supplementary formations also had specific locations. Fang Yuan placed the weaker immortals like Hua Die and Feng Jiang at the periphery. Shen Cong Sheng who was the strongest was closest to the underwater formation.

Fang Yuan also created a supplementary formation for himself.

He entered it.

This supplementary formation was a refinement path Gu formation, its only use was to amplify the power of Fang Yuan's refinement path killer moves.

Within the supplementary formation, Fang Yuan activated his killer move — Refinement Formation Rain!

At once, rain started to drizzle above the sea.

Countless raindrops entered the underwater formation, the might of refinement path was displayed as Gu worms were refined by Fang Yuan one by one.

Shen Cong Sheng and the others did not find this rain powerful initially, but after a while, their eyes were opened wide.

Because during this short period of time, Fang Yuan had already refined the outer layer of the underwater formation.

“What killer move is this? It worked against this underwater formation!”

“It looks like a refinement path killer move?” Some were uncertain.

“Such a powerful refinement path killer move... does Chu Ying cultivate refinement path too?” Some found it unbelievable.

“This should be the effect of that supplementary formation!”

The Gu Immortals thought about it for a long time, they subconsciously decided to attribute it to the power of Fang Yuan’s supplementary formation.

If Chu Ying also had such terrifying attainment in refinement path, able to refine the formation of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, wouldn’t he be a triple cultivator?

How would Ren Xiu Ping, Miao Ming Shen, and all these other elites who cultivated one path feel!

Even if it was the power of the supplementary formation, these Gu Immortals were still immensely shocked.

Shen Cong Sheng’s pupils shrunk slightly, compared to the supplementary formation’s power, he was more shocked at Fang Yuan’s ambition.

He already understood it.

All of them controlling the supplementary formations were like crowbars while the underwater formation was like a tightly sealed wooden box.

The power of the supplementary formation invaded the underwater formation, it was like the crowbars trying to pry open the box.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan controlled the supplementary formation that was the core of this entire formation, it could flow in using the crack opened by the crowbars, to invade and turn these wooden boards into his own possession!

“Such formation path attainment, such ambition... he wants to take the entire formation for himself!”

“Chu Ying...” Shen Cong Sheng had a solemn expression, he secretly engraved this name into his heart.

This was not the first time Fang Yuan was using this refinement formation rain killer move.

This move used rank eight water refinement Immortal Gu as the core. Fang Yuan used many Gu worms to suppress the rank eight aura, disguising it as rank seven.

After rebirth, he annexed Lang Ya Sect and gained rank eight Immortal Gu Water Refinement, he created this move.

After returning to Southern Border, he used this killer move to refine Chi Qu You's formation and captured many Gu Immortals inside the formation.

This time, Fang Yuan used it with rank seven aura again, with the concealment of the supplementary formation, Shen Cong Sheng could not tell that it was truly rank eight.

The power of a rank eight killer move was truly extraordinary, the underwater formation was slowly refined by Fang Yuan bit by bit.

The more he refined it, the greater his control over the formation, with the help of his supplementary formations, he progressed with great speed without much problem.

However, after he refined thirty percent of the formation, refinement formation rain's effect fell drastically, his progress slowed down.

"Refinement formation rain is just a killer move, the actual effect depends on my understanding of this underwater formation." Fang Yuan expected this, he was not surprised, he was sufficiently patient.

He decided to spend some time here, to get regret Gu and the other Immortal Gu in the formation, his investments were worth it.

Originally, he was worried about the other Gu Immortals.

But now that Shen Cong Sheng had been invited here, Fang Yuan was not afraid that other Gu Immortals would use this time to surpass his contribution ranking.

The rate of formation refinement got slower and slower, eventually, Fang Yuan hit a brick.

This was an earth path rank seven Immortal Gu, its body was flat like a disk, yellowish brown, with a head and a tail, and four tentacles that look like hooks, growing evenly around the disk.

“This is territory Gu. Once a Gu Immortal plants it deep into the soil, it will emit a profound power that affects the surrounding soil and spreads out until it reaches its limit, everything that is within a thousand li of that territory will be controlled by the Gu Immortal.” Fang Yuan recognized this Gu.

Territory Gu was very commonly seen.

Especially in Southern Border.

Many villages, even if they were not proficient in earth path, would try to get a rank three or four territory Gu. The village would plant this Gu in the soil and let a Gu Master in a position of authority use it, to raise and maintain their control over this territory.

Territory Gu was a very useful Gu worm but it was very expensive, it was often used by forces. Individual Gu Masters did not need it.

Territory Immortal Gu was actually kept within Dragon Whale Paradise, this Gu was quite useful to Fang Yuan as well.

Fang Yuan could conveniently use this Gu worm to manage his immortal aperture. He could alter the landscape of the territory that he creates using territory Gu.

Even if it was not useful, Fang Yuan still had to refine this earth path Immortal Gu. It was the key obstacle now, it stopped Fang Yuan from progressing further.



# **Chapter 1905 - Demonic Immortal Breaks Free**

## Chapter 1905 Demonic Immortal Breaks Free

“It is a little troublesome, I need to make deductions. Everyone, take a rest for now.” Fang Yuan spoke. The obstacle of territory Gu not only blocked Fang Yuan but also the other Gu Immortals. No matter how they activated the supplementary formation, they could not penetrate the formation anymore.

The Gu Immortals started to rest, but not without talking among themselves.

“We finally met with an obstacle.”

“I thought that Chu Ying would be able to continue refining it endlessly.”

“Don’t joke, this is a formation that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created personally, how in the world can this Chu Ying possibly refine such a formation?”

“But if he cannot refine it, what will happen to our mission?”

“Indeed, even though Chu Ying is a formation path grandmaster, deduction is the expertise of wisdom path. What can he deduce?”

The Gu Immortals had complex emotions.

On one hand, they could finally let out a sigh of relief after seeing Fang Yuan face an obstacle.

On the other hand, the fact that Fang Yuan was stuck meant that they were also not able to progress and gain more benefits.

The Gu Immortals wanted Fang Yuan to break through this obstacle but they were also inherently unwilling to see him succeed.

“Alright, I deduced it, let’s continue.” Fang Yuan said.

“What?” The immortals were stumped, his speed was too terrifying.

Fang Yuan flew out of the supplementary formation and floated in the air: “To get through this obstacle, we need to modify the supplementary formations a little, everyone, don’t be anxious to take action.”

Next, he willed as immortal essence got rapidly expended, supplementary formations followed his will and thought, changing locations. Some supplementary formations moved back while others moved in front, getting closer to the underwater formation.

Eventually, Miao Ming Shen’s supplementary formation was closely placed beside Ren Xiu Ping’s formation, they were tightly connected together.

Fang Yuan said to them: “Next, the two of you will lead the supplementary formations while the others help out.”

Ren Xiu Ping and Miao Ming Shen nodded, they had complex expressions, not expecting that they of all people would actually cooperate.

After modifying the supplementary formations, Fang Yuan entered his supplementary formation again, he did not rush to activate refinement formation rain, instead he gave specific instructions to the immortals within these formations, using his own steps and methods to activate these supplementary formations in a particular manner.

The power of the supplementary formation changed, it was like a thin cluster of sand, falling through the cracks of the underwater formation and slowing down its operations bit by bit.

And this change was what Fang Yuan needed to make use of.

He quickly activated refinement formation rain and successfully refined territory Gu after a while!

After passing this obstacle, a new sense of ease was felt by the immortals as the supplementary formation’s power surged like a wave and rampaged in

the underwater formation. Only after it took over sixty percent of the formation did it stop at a new obstacle.

A huge wave of shock emerged in the hearts of Shen Cong Sheng and the rest.

“So powerful!”

“To think that this Chu Ying is so impressive.”

“More than half of this underwater formation belongs to him now.”

“The supplementary formations he designed are very profound, they can be adjusted according to situations. This is not a fixed formation, it is a transformative formation!”

Fang Yuan’s performance surpassed their highest expectations, they could not help but feel deeply astonished.

Three days and two nights later, Fang Yuan refined a few more earth path Immortal Gu and a vast number of mortal Gu. At this point, the sixty percent of the formation was finally under Fang Yuan’s control.

“But the remaining forty percent is the core of this underwater formation. With just the supplementary formations and myself, we cannot break through it in the short term.” Fang Yuan knew his own limits. He had already reached the current limit of his abilities after reaching this point.

After all, this earth path formation was created by Paradise Earth, his earth path attainment level was supreme grandmaster!

Fang Yuan tried to use the sixty percent that he refined to interfere with the remaining forty percent.

Fang Yuan tried to use the underwater formation against itself.

Guh.

A moment later, Fang Yuan suddenly coughed out blood as his soul shook, his face turned pale. Many supplementary formations including the one he was in broke apart, the Gu Immortals within fell into the water as they shouted in shock, each of them faced varying levels of backlash.

Fang Yuan's plan failed, even though he controlled sixty percent of the formation, he could not do anything to the remaining core forty percent!

“As expected of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, even after over half of it was refined, it still remained unmoved.” Fang Yuan's heart shook.

He sighed to himself as he called out: “Everyone, I am sorry, I did not see the profundity of the formation and caused you to get injured.”

The injured Gu Immortals shook their head, they quickly replied that they were fine.

In their opinion, it was outstanding that Chu Ying could reach this stage, he far exceeded their expectations.

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes as he thought: “It seems that we can only dismantle the formation now.”

After resting for a while, he started to dismantle the formation.

Because the external sixty percent was already refined by him, the dismantling was very successful.

But this was not a normal dismantling process, Fang Yuan only took apart sixty percent of the formation, thus during this process, Gu worms were destroyed when the formation was taken apart. But Fang Yuan paid attention to the Immortal Gu and protected them, he successfully obtained them. As for the mortal Gu, even if some of them were destroyed, it was not a big deal.

Miao Ming Shen, Ren Xiu Ping, and the rest watched with wide opened eyes!

When they controlled the supplementary formation earlier, they could not sense the exact situation within the formation, there was only a faint connection.

Now that Fang Yuan dismantled the formation, they could see all of the Gu worms that he was getting.

“So many Gu worms!”

“I see so many long-lost earth path mortal Gu, they were all created when Paradise Earth was still a Gu Master.”

“There are also Immortal Gu, oh heavens, there are eight Immortal Gu!”

“Most of these Immortal Gu are rank seven, there are few rank six Immortal Gu!”

“Chu Ying took them all!”

“Indeed, he did not even give us a single one...”

The Gu Immortals watched as Fang Yuan took his Immortal Gu, they were staring in a daze, some of them were even salivating intensely.

Most of these were earth path Immortal Gu, they were not suitable for use but Immortal Gu were unique, they could be traded for other Immortal Gu!

Tu Tou Tuo’s eyes were bloodshot, he was almost spewing fire from them!

He was an earth path Gu Immortal, watching as Fang Yuan kept the earth path Immortal Gu in his immortal aperture, he felt his mouth turning dry and his heart palpitating intensely.

While dismantling the formation, he gulped several times, he wanted to speak but could only swallow his saliva in the end.

He really wanted to snatch these Immortal Gu!

But his logic told him that it would be the most stupid move to do so.

Even a rank eight like Shen Cong Sheng could not do anything, how could he?

In the end, Tu Tou Tuo heaved a deep sigh, he swallowed all of his envy and jealousy into his stomach along with his saliva.

His mind moved quickly, thinking of how to get these Immortal Gu. He knew that he was not crucial to this plan, so the only way was to deepen his cooperation and relationship with Chu Ying by displaying his value, it would help in the future when he asks Chu Ying to exchange Gu.

The only good thing was that Chu Ying cultivated transformation path and formation path, he did not cultivate earth path. Thus, there was a high possibility that Chu Ying would sell these Immortal Gu in the future.

The pitiful Tu Tou Tuo did not know that Fang Yuan's earth path attainment level was at grandmaster, it was even higher than his!

After Fang Yuan dismantled the outer part of the formation, the immortals came to congratulate him.

“Congratulations, congratulations.”

“Chu Ying, you've earned a fortune this time. Even though you used so many immortal materials, you gained a large number of Immortal Gu! It is truly a huge profit.”

“To speak the truth, my saliva is about to drip to the ground.”

“Outstanding methods, all I feel is admiration towards you.”

“Chu Ying, I am Tu Tou Tuo, I am quite interested in these earth path Immortal Gu that you obtained. If you wish to sell or exchange them, please inform me, I am sure that you will be satisfied with my offer.”

Fang Yuan thanked them one by one with calm emotions.

He simply had too many Immortal Gu already!

It could scare them all to death if he said the exact number.

And this batch of Immortal Gu that he just obtained was not his biggest gain recently.

Earlier in the River of Time, Fang Yuan defeated Heavenly Court, even though he lost the stone lotus island, his gains were huge.

He dismantled six Immortal Gu House from Heavenly Court, even though many Immortal Gu died in the battle, there were many Immortal Gu left.

For example, the core Immortal Gu of the river suppression lotus sealing formation, Suppression and Bone Seal; the two time path core of Moment Stage, Instant and That Time; Immortal Gu Permanence in Eternal Yacht; the Early Autumn, Mid Autumn, and Late Autumn of Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform; and the Immortal Gu in Sun and Moon Temple, Sun Day and Moon Month.

These Immortal Gu were mostly rank seven, some were rank eight!

As for Shark Flow Lever, even though it was completely destroyed without a single one left, it had a special construction style, it used a combination of desolate beasts and Immortal Gu. While Fang Yuan took his loot and gains from the battlefield, he reverse-deduced most of the contents of Shark Flow Lever using the clues he found. This gave him a huge inspiration, currently, Fang Yuan's clone was already making deductions to try to incorporate Twelve Zodiac battle formation into his Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Right now, there was only forty percent of the underwater formation left in front of Fang Yuan and the others.

Using refinement formation rain would have little to no effect already.

The power of the supplementary formation could no longer do anything.

Even though Fang Yuan tried very hard, there was no progress. He understood that this underwater formation was like a hard tortoise shell, its defense was very tight.



“Should I wait for my clone Wu Shuai to raise my earth path attainment level or should I attack directly?” Fang Yuan thought about it, he decided to save time and attack now.

After all, he had so many people with him now, he had to make good use of them.

Immediately, he asked these Gu Immortals to attack while he and a few other Gu Immortals stayed to manipulate the supplementary formation.

Boom boom boom!

All sorts of killer moves were unleashed upon the underwater formation, causing huge ripples and waves.

The formation only had forty percent left, after being attacked by so many strong immortals, including a rank eight Gu Immortal like Shen Cong Sheng, its operations were hindered as all sorts of flaws appeared.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed, he quickly used the supplementary formation to invade the formation using these loopholes.

“I regret it!” Suddenly, from within, a loud crying voice resounded in the area.

“What was I doing? I should not have attacked the formation.”

“I regret it! Why did I listen to Chu Ying?”

“I should not have come to Dragon Whale Paradise, now I am completely trapped, I truly regret everything.”

...

The immortals quickly stopped their actions, their morale fell to rock bottom as regret Gu exerted its influence on them.

Only Fang Yuan remained unmoved, bright light shined in his eyes as he thought: “The demonic immortal within the formation is spreading the

power of regret Gu to weaken its influence on him. He wants to escape!”

Bam bam bam!

Loud sounds were emitted from within the underwater formation.

The formation had flaws to begin with, right now, these gaps spread as they formed into a huge crack.

Shen Cong Sheng shouted loudly as he temporarily suppressed the effect of regret Gu, his eyes were bloodshot as he attacked the formation’s crack fiercely.

Immortal killer move — Grand Collision!

Boom!

The power of this move cooperated with the demon within, the formation broke apart as the sealed demonic immortal flew out like a black arrow.

Shen Cong Sheng was overjoyed, he flew closer: “Ancestor Shen Shang, I am a descendant of Shen clan, I am your junior!”

# **Chapter 1906 - He Is Actually Fang Yuan!**

## **1906 He Is Actually Fang Yuan!**

The sudden change occurred in front of all the immortals.

Shen Cong Sheng got close to the mysterious demonic immortal, he showed an agitated expression.

“Finally, I’ve finally found you, Ancestor Shen Shang!” Shen Cong Sheng shouted in a slightly trembling voice.

His true motive in coming here was to save his ancestor, Shen Shang.

Shen Shang was the most outstanding Gu Immortal in Shen clan, he had outstanding talent that was publicly recognized. In fact, when he was still a rank six Gu Immortal, a wisdom path rank eight great expert had said that he was the ‘hundreds of years eastern immortal leader, with half of a venerable’s talent’, it meant that he would become the leader of Eastern Sea’s immortals in hundreds of years when he reaches rank eight, his talent was so high it could compare to half a venerable.

However, Shen Shang pursued strength and gradually fell into the demonic path, he started to commit heinous deeds.

His clan treasured his talent and even though they punished him, it was not a severe punishment, they protected him continuously.

Shen Shang did not change his ways, he became more daring and as a righteous path Gu Immortal on the surface, he acted like a demon.

Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world was kept in the dark, Shen clan managed to conceal the fact but they could not hide it from Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable took action, suppressing him, but did not expose his identity publicly.

Shen clan did not dare to publicize it, they only announced that Shen Shang had died from his tribulation.

After Shen Cong Sheng captured Gu Yue Fang Zheng, Heavenly Court contacted him and told him about Shen Shang's information, in exchange for Fang Zheng.

Therefore, Shen Cong Sheng learned that Shen Shang was still alive, and that he was imprisoned within Dragon Whale Paradise.

In order to enter Dragon Whale Paradise, Shen Cong Sheng mobilized the whole of Shen clan to investigate and search in secret.

Right at this time, Ren Xiu Ping targeted Miao Ming Shen and attacked them, exposing clues leading to the blue dragon whale.

After Shen clan learned of this, Shen Cong Sheng led them to force Ren Xiu Ping to submit, they learned that Miao Ming Shen had a way to find the exact location of the blue dragon whale.

Miao Ming Shen gathered eight immortals to search for the Paradise Earth true inheritance in the blue dragon whale, Ren Xiu Ping and Shen Cong Sheng learned about it and followed them.

After that, it led to a series of events.

After Shen Cong Sheng came to Dragon Whale Paradise, he tried all the ways possible to find Shen Shang's location, after a few missions, Shen clan Gu Immortal Shen Qi got the information of regret crying sea.

Shen Cong Sheng guessed that the demonic immortal in regret crying sea was likely Shen Shang!

However, he could not be happy for long because he heard of terrifying news.

Chu Ying actually accepted the mission to kill Shen Shang!

This shocked Shen Cong Sheng, he quickly contacted Fang Yuan, lying that he was looking for response Gu and offering a large amount of immortal materials to express his goodwill.

Thus, Fang Yuan brought Shen Cong Sheng into regret crying sea.

Shen Cong Sheng waited secretly and did not make a move, only at the last moment, he acted and saved Shen Shang with one attack.

This change made everyone dumbfounded other than the Shen clan Gu Immortals.

Immediately, Miao Ming Shen and the rest had dark expressions, their hearts sank to rock bottom.

Shen Cong Sheng was a rank eight Gu Immortal to begin with, they had another Shen Shang who was a rank eight Gu Immortal now as well. Back then, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had to suppress him personally, he definitely had outstanding battle strength that was not to be underestimated.

With Shen Shang, Shen clan's strength rose greatly. Not only in Dragon Whale Paradise, but even in Eastern Sea, there would be a shocking change.

Currently, in Eastern Sea's righteous path, Shen clan would be the only super force with two rank eight Gu Immortals!

Shen clan would become the strongest force in Eastern Sea.

This would have huge impact and bring immense benefits to Shen clan.

Back then, Heavenly Court exposed this secret to them, it was no wonder that Shen Cong Sheng immediately released Fang Zheng without caring about Qi Sea Ancestor, who was hinting that he wanted to get Fang Zheng.

“You are a descendant of my Shen clan?” Shen Shang floated in the air, looking at Shen Cong Sheng, his eyes shined with brilliance as he nodded: “Indeed, you are a member of Shen clan. What year is it now?”

Shen Shang had a hoarse voice, it was even more course than crows.

He wore a grey robe that was tattered, his face was pale and his hair was messy, his eyes were bloodshot and red. His peak rank eight aura radiated from his body with an intense force.

Shen Cong Sheng answered his question and told him that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had died long ago.

“So long has passed.” Shen Shang sighed deeply: “Lord Paradise Earth died after all, sigh...”

His attitude towards Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was a bit strange.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable suppressed him but he actually called Paradise Earth ‘Lord’.

After sighing, Shen Shang looked towards Fang Yuan and the other immortals.

He gazed around and understood the situation, he cupped his fists and smiled: “Good, it seems that my Shen clan has many talented people.”

Afterwards, he focused his gaze on Fang Yuan as he spoke in a gentle tone: “Friend, I was able to escape thanks to you. It was mostly due to your effort, do you wish to join Shen clan and become our external supreme elder?”

He actually wanted to recruit Fang Yuan.

Indeed, Fang Yuan had displayed sufficient value already.

Just his formation path grandmaster status was something Shen clan wanted. And looking at his attainment and age, it was possible that he could break through to formation path great grandmaster in his lifetime.

Shen Cong Sheng cupped his fists towards Fang Yuan, adding: “Chu Ying, I lied earlier but I did not have a choice. Saving our Ancestor Shen Shang is extremely important to Shen clan, I hope you can understand.”

Fang Yuan nodded with a plain expression, he even had a smile on his face: “Of course I understand, if it were me, I would do the same.”

“But Shen clan wants to recruit me? Hehehe...” Fang Yuan laughed as he shook his head.

Shen Cong Sheng said coldly: “Friend Chu Ying, why are you laughing?”

Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows: “On what foundation is your Shen clan trying to recruit me? You guys are simply unqualified.”

Shen Cong Sheng’s gaze turned cold as ice.

His Shen clan was an Eastern Sea super force, they owned seven large sea areas and thousands of middle and small sea areas, they even had two rank eights now. With such strength, they were not qualified to recruit a tiny lone immortal?”

“Hmph, Chu Ying, don’t be too arrogant.”

“My Shen clan is giving you a chance, this is the magnanimity of our Ancestor Shen Shang.”

“Don’t think too highly of yourself!”

Shen Xiao and Shen Qi quickly spoke, they flew out of the supplementary formations, gathering with Shen Cong Sheng and Shen Shang.

Shen Shang’s bloodshot eyes had deep killing intent, he looked at Fang Yuan and spoke with an icy voice: “Chu Ying? I need to remind you, you were all sent here by the Merit Obelisk, Paradise Earth’s method restricts

you from fighting each other. But I have been trapped here for countless years, I am not restricted by the Merit Obelisk, so all of you can be attacked by me.”

The expressions of Miao Ming Shen and the rest changed, their worst nightmare had come true!

What should they do now?

Right when they were helpless, they suddenly heard Fang Yuan laughing loudly as he pointed his finger at Shen Shang who was in the sky, provoking him to attack.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were dumbfounded.

Was this courage or stupidity?

They could not tell.

Shen Shang’s eyes shined with blood red light as he lowered his voice that was filled with anger: “You are courting death, then go die!”

Saying so, he opened his mouth as a blood colored sound wave in a ball shape shot towards Fang Yuan.

The sound wave was very fast, in almost an instant, it flew through the sky and landed on the supplementary formation.

Boom!

The supplementary formation collapsed instantly, it did not even last for a moment.

An intense explosion occurred, a huge sea wave surged into the sky, it was tens of feet tall.

Before the wave landed, the explosion had already caused damage to the surroundings, Miao Ming Shen and the rest had to fly into the sky, away from their supplementary formations.



All of the supplementary formations were destroyed, Miao Ming Shen and the rest had ashen expressions.

Shen Shang's attack was definitely at rank eight level, it was terrifying! From their perspective, there was little chance that Chu Ying survived that.

The truth was, they did not care about Chu Ying's situation right now, they were more worried about themselves.

Because Shen Shang had proven his words from earlier with action, he could really attack Miao Ming Shen and the others!

"Ancestor is so powerful!" Shen Cong Sheng squinted, he knew the inside details. Shen Shang did not cultivate sound path primarily, the sound path method he used earlier was not his true strength.

"Chu Ying is dead meat!"

"Good that he died, I disliked him from the start."

"Indeed, he only had rank seven cultivation level but acted so arrogantly because he knew things about the Dragon Whale Paradise, he truly had no regard for us."

"He dared to provoke a rank eight, he truly wanted to die... die...."

Shen Xiao said as he suddenly stammered.

After the huge waves crashed down, new enormous waves were formed.

Within the steam and mist, a shiny ship that was covered in silver-white light appeared in front of all of the immortals.

Chu Ying's arms were behind his back, he stood at the deck as he carried the same smile as before.

Shen Shang saw this as his pupils shrunk, he gasped with shock: "Rank eight Immortal Gu House?"

The other Gu Immortals were all stunned!

They were so familiar with this Immortal Gu House, no, in the current five regions, which Gu Immortal did not know about this Immortal Gu House?

“This is... Myriad Year Flying Warship!” Ren Xiu Ping cried out, he felt his scalp going numb.

“Chu Ying actually has Myriad Year Flying Warship, who in the world is he?” Shen Xiao was tongue-tied.

The immortals stared at Fang Yuan with fixed gazes, he gradually dispelled familiar face as he showed his true appearance.

After seeing his true appearance, all of the immortals' hearts shook, none of them could stay indifferent.

Hua Die screamed out loud: “It's Fang Yuan!”

She was too shocked, she had always felt that Fang Yuan was high and mighty, far away from people like them, to think that he was around her the entire time.

It was truly unbelievable!

“It's Fang Yuan!!” Shen clan's Gu Immortals gritted their teeth, some were breathing and gasping loudly.

“So that was it.” Miao Ming Shen gulped as he swallowed his saliva. Chu Ying was a fake identity of Fang Yuan, after all, how could such a powerful lone immortal appear in Eastern Sea suddenly?

It was Fang Yuan after all!

Who was Fang Yuan?

He had inherited many venerable inheritances, he was someone who could not be assessed with common sense.

No wonder Chu Ying had such attainment in transformation path and formation path. This was just a fragment of Fang Yuan's true strength.

Now everything made sense.

Shen Cong Sheng's expression was pale as he gritted his teeth, in just a short time, sweat had gathered on his forehead already.

So it was this great demon Fang Yuan!

No wonder he had such an attitude, even against two rank eights, he showed such disdain towards Shen clan.

It was normal!

Shen Cong Sheng suddenly felt that it was a logical situation, all of his anger towards Chu Ying's arrogance vanished completely without a trace!

Fang Yuan dared to provoke even Heavenly Court and kill their members, how could Shen clan even compare?

After his anger subsided, he felt intense fear afterwards.

He actually met with Fang Yuan, this was such a problematic person!

Shen Cong Sheng sighed in his heart, his luck was really bad, why did he meet Fang Yuan of all people?

At this moment, his rank eight strength could not give him confidence, he was panicking internally.

At this moment, Shen Cong Sheng heard Shen Shang's voice: "Who is Fang Yuan?"

Shen Cong Sheng looked at Shen Shang who had a confused expression.

He felt that this was very strange!

This Gu Immortal only had rank seven cultivation level, he had only changed his appearance.

Why were they all so afraid?

Shen Shang looked at Shen Cong Sheng with a gaze that had slight questioning, it seemed to be saying: You are a great rank eight, why are you afraid of a rank seven, what is there to fear!

Even though Fang Yuan showed his appearance, he did not reveal his rank eight aura, it was still concealed.

Shen Cong Sheng blinked as he shuddered internally.

Could he remain calm?

Could he look at Fang Yuan using common sense and cultivation level?

He was a ruthless demon who dared to trample on Heavenly Court, he destroyed six Immortal Gu Houses belonging to Heavenly Court earlier, he even slaughtered a bunch of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals!

He was ruthless and scheming, even Heavenly Court was without options against him.

Now that Shen clan offended him, forget about two rank eights, even if they had a group of rank eights, Shen Cong Sheng would not feel safe at all.

# Chapter 1907 - Human Path Quasi-supreme

## 1907 Human Path Quasi-supreme

At this point, Fang Yuan was no longer like before.

Heavenly Court was the reason for his overwhelming fame and dominance. Even though he only displayed rank seven cultivation level, it was enough to intimidate most rank eight Gu Immortals in the world.

“Ancestor.” Shen Cong Sheng sent an information path mortal Gu to Shen Shang, it contained everything they knew about Fang Yuan.

Shen Shang received the mortal Gu as his divine sense swept through it, he looked towards Fang Yuan with a new type of gaze.

“Fang Yuan? Even Heavenly Court cannot do anything against you, hahaha, interesting!” Shen Shang’s eyes burst out with blood red light, he laughed wildly: “To think that a person like you would appear in the world, this is wonderful, because now... I won’t feel lonely.”

Saying so, a strong aura burst out of his body, overwhelming the surroundings and dominating everyone’s hearts.

Not only did Shen Shang not feel threatened by Fang Yuan’s information, he even became extremely motivated to fight.

Looking at Shen Shang's action, Shen Cong Sheng felt a sense of confidence in his heart: "I'm likely not Fang Yuan's match, but with Ancestor Shen Shang here who is not an ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal, the outcome is still unknown!"

While he was thinking that, a silver light shot out and filled Shen Cong Sheng's vision.

"Damn it!" The alarms in Shen Cong Sheng's mind rang wildly, he quickly retreated.

At the next moment, Myriad Year Flying Warship flew over, drawing a beautiful arc of light in the air as it traveled.

If he reacted slower and stayed on the spot, Shen Cong Sheng would have been hit by Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Shen Cong Sheng did not dare to imagine the result of that collision.

This was the advantage of an Immortal Gu House.

Activating immortal killer moves took time, but using an Immortal Gu House to charge and rampage would instantly allow one to unleash an offensive method.

Myriad Year Flying Warship shot off again.

Fang Yuan mobilized Myriad Year Flying Warship and went after Shen Shang, ignoring Shen Cong Sheng completely.

Shen Shang did not dare to test Myriad Year Flying Warship with his bare body either, he was forced into being chased around by Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Shen Cong Sheng and the other Shen clan Gu Immortals wanted to help out but they were helpless when they found out that they could not attack Fang Yuan.

“Damn it!” Shen Cong Sheng gritted his teeth, in this situation, Shen clan’s superiority in numbers could not be used, they could only watch as Fang Yuan fought against Shen Shang.

As for Miao Ming Shen and the rest, they did not dare to participate in such a battle, they were retreating already, hiding at a corner of the battlefield.

“Shen Shang, as an ancestor of Shen clan, all you can do is run around?” Fang Yuan mocked from within Myriad Year Flying Warship.

But even inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, he was still restricted by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s method. Fang Yuan had many subordinates in the sovereign immortal aperture but he could not let them out.

He could only control Myriad Year Flying Warship alone.

If he could let out his subordinates, his numbers would far surpass Shen clan.

“Hmph, arrogant junior!” Shen Shang was angered by Fang Yuan’s words, he stopped in the air and used an immortal killer move.

Shen Shang’s flying attainment was very high, he was able to fly rapidly, capable of catching up to Myriad Year Flying Warship.

In the process of escaping, he had been preparing his killer move, he finally unleashed it now.

Immortal killer move — Night Song!

The melancholic song quickly spread across the battlefield, and the sadness contained in it was like a tidal wave, constantly filling the hearts of the people.

The song had a slow tempo, it focused on the person’s vocals, along with the sounds of drums and zithers, it was traditional yet sad.

Hua Die and Feng Jiang who were at the periphery were already crying.

Miao Ming Shen, Ren Xiu Ping, and the rest all had sad expressions, they could not help it.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, Myriad Year Flying Warship shined with radiance as it helped him to block the power of night song.

But Shen Shang had already achieved his goal.

He activated night song, not to directly deal with the Gu Immortals here, but to create a battlefield environment.

The song enveloped the sea and sky, a trace of twilight mist spread out from the sound waves, permeating the entire field, and after a few breaths, the entire regret crying sea turned pitch black.

The Gu Immortals were trapped in this dark area and could not see anything, all they could hear was the sorrowful night song, their morale and battle intent fell drastically. If this continued, they were going to be defenseless.

Even though Fang Yuan was barely affected, the surrounding darkness meant that he had lost sight of his target as well.

Fang Yuan immediately activated his investigative method, to try to find Shen Shang's location.

But Shen Shang sensed something as he laughed: "Fang Yuan, you fell for my trap."

Saying so, he activated a killer move — Sensory Injury.

Fang Yuan grunted immediately, he was directly hit by it.

He was shocked as he quickly realized: "This is a human path killer move! No wonder my Myriad Year Flying Warship could not guard against it."

Immortal Gu Houses had both offense and defense, they provided a huge assurance to the Gu Immortal and were very safe.



But this defense was not perfect.

When Fang Yuan designed Myriad Year Flying Warship, he considered most paths but human path was his weakness, he was not a human path grandmaster back then.

By the time he gained the attainment level, Myriad Year Flying Warship was already built, it could not be changed, he could only adjust it a little but there could not be major modifications.

And most importantly, Fang Yuan lacked defensive human path Immortal Gu.

“Shen Shang definitely has a high rank human path Immortal Gu!” After Fang Yuan was hit, he understood a bit of his enemy’s foundation.

In terms of information, Fang Yuan was the one at the losing end.

He did not know much about Shen Shang, but Shen Shang knew a lot about him.

Fang Yuan had trump cards of course, like his rank eight cultivation level, five restriction profound light qi, and others, but he intended to keep these methods as a secret, he did not want to expose them now.

Within this Dragon Whale Paradise, Fang Yuan could not attack Shen Cong Sheng, Miao Ming Shen, and Ren Xiu Ping. If they brought this information out of Dragon Whale Paradise, it was easy for others to find out.

Thus, Fang Yuan decided to use the methods that he had already exposed before to fight.

Immortal killer move — Daybreak Sword!

Myriad Year Flying Warship’s aura surged as a blinding white light shot out.

From the silver-white light bubbled the water of the River of Time, from which countless strands of silver light emerged.

The silver rays quickly condensed and took shape, transforming into many sharp sword-like blades that shot out violently.

The group of flying swords whistled past, pointing straight at Shen Shang.

Daybreak flying sword was a genuine rank eight killer move, its power was immense, but when Shen Shang saw the group of flying swords, he laughed loudly and did not dodge.

Silver-white flying swords landed on his body.

Shen Shang's body surged with a mysterious aura, he did not die but was covered in injuries.

But soon, all the injuries over his body disappeared and turned into dao marks.

“Incredible! The records in the clan are indeed correct, Ancestor Shen Shang was most proficient at healing.” Shen Cong Sheng saw this scene and exclaimed in his mind.

When Shen Shang was still young, he was a healing physician. When he was a Gu Master, he began to travel Eastern Sea, and because of his powerful and unique healing methods, he soon became famous and well-known. He was also praised for his charitable acts, often helping the poor and needy without charging the slightest consultation fee, he received a warm welcome wherever he went.

Precisely because of his fame and reputation established in his youth, when he fell into the demonic path later and committed all sorts of demonic acts, Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals did not manage to link these crimes to him.

Within Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan squinted his eyes and felt something amiss: “This healing method is another human path killer move!”

Under normal circumstances, the injuries of Gu Immortals would have dense dao marks that were difficult to heal.

But Shen Shang possessed human path methods, he could heal himself with extreme efficiency and yielded quick results.

The group of flying swords continued to shoot out, many of them piercing through his body.

However, these wounds were completely healed almost instantly.

Immortal killer move — Mutual Injuries!

Shen Shang saw that the time was ripe and quickly unleashed the killer move that he had already prepared.

In Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan grunted as hundreds of wounds instantly formed on his body, wounds burst open and blood splattered everywhere.

The wounds were filled with human path dao marks, which then spread rapidly from the wounds, scattering everywhere while being connected as one.

Alarm bells rang in Fang Yuan's heart!

These human path dao marks were like a hanging rope around his neck, once the numbers increased, it would endanger Fang Yuan's life.

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan activated his wisdom path killer move first!

In an instant, the thoughts in his mind blossomed like fireworks, all sorts of thoughts collided, converged and fused into each other.

“Shen Shang's methods are bizarre, he was able to bypass Myriad Year Flying Warship to directly injure me!”

“Such a terrifying killer move... His human path attainment level is definitely more than a level above mine, I’m afraid he’s a human path quasi-supreme grandmaster!”

“Any killer move needs to sense its target first, it can only take effect after it senses its target. How did he sense me?”

“I see. The previous night song killer move was just a trap to lure me into detecting him. He then followed this connection and found his way to me.”

Everything in this world was interconnected.

When a fist hits a sand dune, a pit would appear on the sand, while the fist would also be covered in sand and mud.

Previously, Eastern Sea wisdom path Gu Immortal Hua An deduced Fang Yuan, but instead, Fang Yuan followed this connection and deduced Hua An’s situation.

Not long ago, Heavenly Court Gu Immortals moved to blockade the stone lotus island with the river suppression lotus sealing formation, and it was with this layer of suppression and sealing that Fang Yuan was able to follow this connection and destroy the river suppression lotus sealing formation.

Now, Shen Shang did the same thing to sense Fang Yuan, it followed the same logic.

In just half a breath of time, Fang Yuan had already figured it out.

He immediately made his move, making Myriad Year Flying Warship retreat while scattering the daybreak flying swords, while he began to activate a healing killer move on himself.

His reaction was so swift that it left Shen Shang slightly stunned.

At the next moment, this demonic immortal, who was suppressed by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable himself, laughed with a hint of madness: “Fang Yuan! Do you think you’ll be safe if you don’t attack me? Hahaha, watch closely!”

As he said that, he activated a killer move again, his five fingers spread wide and his palm pressed against his chest.

Immortal killer move — Light Injuries!

Shen Shang grunted as he was hit by his own killer move, his expression turned pale.

Within Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan's body shook as he coughed out a huge mouthful of blood.

# Chapter 1908 - Black Fire

## 1908 Black Fire

Non-conflicting dao marks!

The sovereign immortal body's greatest advantage was also its greatest weakness, at this moment, it was fully exposed.

All along, Fang Yuan had been consciously avoiding this flaw, but Shen Shang's killer move was too peculiar, it could not be guarded against.

Who could have thought that night song killer move was just a trap?

Shen Shang was chased by Myriad Year Flying Warship, it was a normal thing to use this killer move to conceal his own traces.

If Fang Yuan did not use an investigative method, Shen Shang would hide within the darkness, he would not be able to do anything.

The human path dao marks on Fang Yuan's injuries grew rapidly!

The light injuries on Shen Shang's body also affected Fang Yuan due to the killer move mutual injuries.

And in Fang Yuan's case, because of non-conflicting dao marks, his light injuries became heavy injuries.

But thankfully, all sorts of healing killer moves had their full effect when used on Fang Yuan as well.

Thus, as he used a powerful healing method on himself, Fang Yuan instantly recovered.

Immortal killer move — Heavy Injuries!

Shen Shang snickered as he started to hurt himself, with greater intensity than before.

Fang Yuan's body shook intensely, his vision turned dark as his seven orifices started to bleed.

“No! In terms of healing methods, I cannot compare to Shen Shang, I need to find another way.” Fang Yuan understood as determination flashed in his eyes.

Immortal killer move — Heavy Injuries!

Immortal killer move — Heavy Injuries!

Immortal killer move — Heavy Injuries!

Shen Shang continued to injury himself as he turned crazy, he laughed loudly as blood spewed out of his mouth.

He heavily injured himself but rapidly healed as well, continuing the cycle.

This was such a strange fighting style, it made all the Gu Immortals dumbfounded.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest had nervous expressions, they were very worried.

Shen clan's Gu Immortals were very excited.

Even though they could not see Fang Yuan's condition, his flying swords had disintegrated while Myriad Year Flying Warship continued to back off.

“Ancestor Shen Shang actually forced back Fang Yuan! Impressive.” Shen Cong Sheng was very excited, he could also see the rise of Shen clan.

Miao Ming Shen's eyes shined with bright light as he thought to himself: "Not good, even though Fang Yuan has Myriad Year Flying Warship, Shen Shang's offensive methods bypass this Immortal Gu House, it counters Fang Yuan. He is just a rank seven after all while Shen Shang is a genuine rank eight Gu Immortal."

Gui Qi Ye and Tu Tou Tuo were very confused: "This Shen Shang was suppressed by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable back then, it is not normal that he could live for so long."

"And the strange thing is, he does not lack Immortal Gu! When Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable suppressed him, didn't he take away or destroy his Immortal Gu first?"

"Ugh!" Right at this moment, Shen Shang's wild laughter came to an abrupt stop.

Surprise and confusion appeared on his face.

His connection to Fang Yuan was weakening rapidly.

How did Fang Yuan do it?

How could he break and get around this method so quickly?!

Immortal killer move — Self Cleansing!

Self cleansing could eliminate harmful dao marks on the user's body, Fang Yuan used this killer move to quickly get rid of the human path dao marks on his body.

The blood red light in Shen Shang's eyes flickered, he started to mutilate himself even more intensely, causing the human path dao marks on Fang Yuan's body to grow rapidly.

As long as a single human path dao mark remained on Fang Yuan's body, he could use this connection to attack Fang Yuan while bypassing Myriad Year Flying Warship.



But right now, Fang Yuan had already stabilized the situation.

Myriad Year Flying Warship gradually flew closer as Fang Yuan's voice resounded from within: "It is my turn now, Shen Shang."

Twelve Zodiac ancient battle formation!

Bam.

With a loud sound, the huge grey stone giant appeared again.

The giant moved extremely quickly, its two hands grabbed towards Shen Shang as they spread open.

Shen Shang squinted and snorted coldly, he quickly retreated, attempting to pull some distance from the giant.

Under Fang Yuan's manipulation, the grey stone giant only attempted to capture Shen Shang, it did not attack fiercely.

The grey stone giant had very powerful offensive methods, even though this was not the River of Time, it still had peak rank eight strength.

But he was currently using capture as the objective instead of hurting Shen Shang, Shen Shang had no choice but to dodge.

The battle went into a deadlock.

Shen Shang dodged the Twelve Zodiac battle formation while using killer moves to mutilate himself.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan manipulated Myriad Year Flying Warship as he healed himself, using self cleansing to get rid of harmful human path dao marks.

Myriad Year Flying Warship and the grey stone giant worked together, chasing after Shen Shang and obstructing him.

Shen Shang was already having some trouble dodging Myriad Year Flying Warship, with the addition of the grey stone giant, he fell into a disadvantage.

Every time he was about to get caught, Shen Shang would emit a loud scream that caused sound waves to burst out, opening a path for him.

Both sides continued to fight, rampaging in the battlefield, it implicated Miao Ming Shen's group, as well as the Shen clan immortals.

Hua Die and Feng Jiang were first to give up, they were transported away from the battlefield.

Followed by Tong Hua, Tu Tou Tuo, Gui Qi Ye and the rest.

After that were Shen clan's immortals, Miao Ming Shen, and Ren Xiu Ping.

Eventually, only Shen Cong Sheng was left in the battlefield, not everyone was qualified to watch a battle between rank eights after all.

Shen Cong Sheng's expression became increasingly dark.

The battle was tilting in Fang Yuan's favor, Shen Shang was getting into a difficult spot while Fang Yuan was having an easier time now.

"This lad has deep wisdom path attainment, he has countless thoughts in his mind, he can multitask easily. In this aspect, I am at the losing end." Shen Shang gritted his teeth, at this point in the battle, he felt like he had fallen into a swamp, the more he struggled, the deeper he sank.

The battle had already left his control!

Suddenly, Fang Yuan walked out of the cabin, arriving at the bow of the ship.

He pointed at Shen Shang as a time path killer move was unleashed.

Shen Shang was caught off guard, he could not dodge, after getting hit by this move, his movement slowed, the rate of time on him had been halved.

The grey stone giant used this chance to grab Shen Shang, it squeezed.

Shen Shang laughed loudly, his hair was messy and his eyes were bloodshot, he had no fear: “Go ahead and kill me!”

Fang Yuan snorted, he ordered the grey stone giant, it gripped to form a cage of ten fingers, imprisoning Shen Shang and preventing him from moving.

After understanding Shen Shang’s offensive methods, Fang Yuan easily countered it. As long as he was captured and not killed, he could not do anything to harm Fang Yuan.

Shen Shang struggled, he screamed wildly but could not escape.

Shen Cong Sheng saw that the situation was bad, he wanted to help but was quickly faced with backlash, he could not get away from Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s restrictions.

“I finally succeeded.” Fang Yuan let out a breath of air.

Shen Shang lived up to his reputation, this person who was suppressed by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable personally really had some skills.

His methods were peculiar and strange, they were hard to guard against, Fang Yuan had fallen for them earlier.

Of course, Fang Yuan still controlled the situation without wasting many of his hidden trump cards.

In the worst case, Fang Yuan could return to the starting island, with this assurance, he could not lose to begin with.

“Ahhhh....” Shen Shang shouted loudly, his face was distorted.

Fang Yuan’s brows slowly started to furrow.

Shen Shang’s current situation was quite strange, he constantly laughed and struggled madly without using any immortal killer moves.

At the next moment, his bloodshot eyes turned pitch black, the black color spread until it filled his eyes.

With a light sound, a lump of black fire started to burn on his body.

Within the fire, Shen Shang's body shook like he was having a spasm, he drooled uncontrollably as he waved his limbs around, he growled like a wild beast that was out of control.

The black fire on Shen Shang's body was not eye-catching, but once it spread to the grey stone giant's hands, the giant screamed in pain as it got burned by the fire.

After both hands got into contact with the black fire, they started to melt, completely defenseless against this strange black fire.

Fang Yuan's gaze turned colder, the peculiarity and strength of this black fire was far beyond his imagination.

Seeing that the situation was bad, Fang Yuan quickly deactivated the ancient battle formation.

At the next moment, the grey stone giant vanished while twelve immemorial year beasts appeared in the sky.

Among them, two immemorial year beasts contacted the black fire and lost their reasoning, they rolled around in the sky, growling in pain as they struggled intensely.

Thankfully, the other ten immemorial year beasts acted like this was their biggest threat, after regaining freedom, they quickly fled from the black fire as far as they could.

Fang Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng frowned deeply with solemn expressions.

This black fire was too strange, the two of them could not tell what path this black fire belonged to!

At the same time, they felt an extreme feeling of threat, their skulls felt numb as they sensed this danger.

The black fire was like the enemy of all lifeforms!

The two immemorial year beasts were already covered in the fire, they growled as they fell to the ground.

Fang Yuan had a strong premonition, if these two immemorial year beasts fell into the seawater, the black fire would cause an even greater tragedy.

But he did not do anything, he went into Myriad Year Flying Warship and retreated.

Shen Shang who had lost the restriction of the grey stone giant floated in the air and laughed wildly like a lunatic.

Shen Cong Sheng called him several times but it went unheard. Seeing this strange situation, Shen Cong Sheng also wisely chose to retreat.

Right when those two immemorial year beasts were about to enter the water, a golden-white pillar of light shot out from the underwater formation, pushing these two immemorial year beasts up into the sky.

The underwater formation that had only forty percent left burst out with unprecedented power as it operated at full force!

The golden-white light expanded as it covered Shen Shang as well.

The black fire continued to burn Shen Shang and the two immemorial year beasts but the white-gold light pillar immobilized them on the spot.

Such a change caused Shen Cong Sheng to be stunned.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan made his move, daybreak flying swords flew out and pierced the white-gold light pillar, stabbing into Shen Shang.

“Stop it!” Watching that his ancestor was attacked by Fang Yuan, Shen Cong Sheng shouted anxiously.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly as he activated his flying swords with even greater intensity.

This odd black fire was very harmful, seeing that the underwater formation had taken action to stop it from even entering the sea, it was obvious.

Shen Cong Sheng could only watch helplessly.

Fang Yuan willed again as his flying swords split into two groups, the other group went to attack his immemorial year beasts.

Due to the attack of the daybreak flying swords, the black fire still burned but it had weakened by a very slight amount.

Daybreak sword was a rank eight killer move, yet it nearly had no effect!

Fang Yuan continued to attack, but the black fire suddenly changed, transforming into lumps of silver-white mist.

# **Chapter 1909 - Shen Cong Sheng's Immortal Materials**

## **1909 Shen Cong Sheng's Immortal Materials**

“This black fire can still transform?” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light, he shook his head immediately after, the silver-white mist still had a strange aura, it did not belong to any path .

The silver-white mist did not seem to be fundamentally different from the black fire, and while enveloped by it, Shen Shang was still going crazy, the two immemorial year beasts were also continuing to howl.

When Fang Yuan fired his daybreak flying swords again, he discovered that the power of the daybreak flying swords actually boosted the silver-white mist, causing the latter to increase in size.

Suspicious, Fang Yuan immediately changed his mind and went on a furious rampage with wind blades instead.

The silver-white mist was weakened again, but the rate of decline was still very small.

After the attack lasted for a while, the silver-white mist suddenly turned into three large whirlwinds, covering Shen Shang and the two immemorial year beasts.

Fang Yuan's wind blades shot into the whirlwind and began to boost the latter's power again.

Fang Yuan started to experiment and wisely began to swap his tactics.

Other Gu Immortals might have to stop but Fang Yuan cultivated all paths, he had an astonishing number of Immortal Gu at his disposal, he also had attainment level in many paths, he was even more skilled at transitioning to different paths.

Under Fang Yuan's attack, the strange black fire kept transforming and getting smaller and smaller.

The two immemorial year beasts were the first to die without their corpses left, Fang Yuan was soon left with only Shen Shang as his target.

"Wait, wait! Fang Yuan, I have a huge amount of wealth to gift to you." Shen Cong Sheng could no longer watch this continue, he called out loudly.

To his joy, Fang Yuan actually stopped.

Fang Yuan looked at Shen Cong Sheng and smiled: "Do you want me to let your clan's ancestor go? You should know that this is a demonic immortal, the very demonic immortal that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable suppressed personally in the past. You've seen his current state, crazy as a beast, delirious, and consistent with what is described on the Merit Obelisk. You still want to save him?"

Shen Cong Sheng looked deeply at the imprisoned Shen Shang in the pillar of light and made up his mind: "I believe this madness is only temporary. It would be too much of a coincidence if Ancestor Shen Shang happened to fall into permanent madness right when I was about to rescue him, right?"

"And what price can you pay for that?" Fang Yuan asked.

"How about you take a look at this?" Shen Cong Sheng pulled out an immortal material.

It was a bag.



The bag was not large and seemed to be the size of a grown man's fist. However, the surface of the bag was covered with a pattern that seemed like gems or blue swirls.

If one stared closely, one would notice that these sapphire-like swirls were constantly rotating.

But when one came back to one's senses, these lines were still lines, as if the scene had just been an illusion.

Fang Yuan, however, raised his eyebrows and lightly smiled: "So it's the treasure blue beaver's stomach pouch."

Treasure blue beaver was an immemorial desolate beast, often traveling between Eastern Sea and immemorial blue heaven. Now that immemorial blue heaven had shattered, the treasure blue beaver also went extinct. In history, the Gu Immortal who slaughtered the most treasure blue beavers was Old Immortal Kong Jue.

Old Immortal Kong Jue was one of the three supreme grandmasters of refinement path, comparable to Long Hair Ancestor. The treasure blue beaver that he went after and paid attention to was naturally extraordinary.

Not to mention, this stomach pouch alone was half an immortal aperture, it contained space path and water path dao marks, there was a whole small world inside of it, which could hide countless treasures. A Gu Immortal could obtain it and merge it into his or her immortal aperture, increasing the size of their grotto-heaven.

Because of this characteristic, the treasure blue beaver had been hunted down and killed extensively by Gu Immortals. It was no surprise that treasure blue beavers went extinct.

The stomach pouch of the treasure blue beaver could be said to be the most valuable thing in its body. And in today's world where treasure blue beavers were extinct, the value of this stomach pouch was even higher than normal!

In short, this was an extremely rare and highly valuable treasure.

Fang Yuan reached out his hand and directly took this stomach pouch from Shen Cong Sheng's hands.

The stomach pouch was light and the surface was very slippery.

Fang Yuan inspected it and found that nothing was tampered, so he put it into his immortal aperture in front of Shen Cong Sheng without any concern.

Next, he smiled: "Anything else?"

Shen Cong Sheng took a deep breath and pulled out a long black rod with much difficulty: "And this one too, catch it."

He gathered strength and threw the black rod at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stretched out his arm to catch it, the rod was very heavy, but he also had a lot of strength path dao marks on him, it was naturally easy.

Unlike Shen Cong Sheng who was a pure sound path Gu Immortal.

This black rod was taller than Fang Yuan, it had the thickness of a goose egg, the surface was also very rough, the weight was not light, as if it was a crude iron tool.

However, Fang Yuan could feel a dense aura of life from it.

This was an ancient desolate plant!

But it had no roots, no branches, nor leaves, there was only the trunk.

At the top of the trunk, there were countless star marks, some of them were five-edged, some two-edged, compactly arranged, all of them were emitting pale starlight.

"Falling star rod tree." Fang Yuan spoke.

Shen Cong Sheng nodded his head and exclaimed: "Fang Yuan, your extensive knowledge is to be admired."

The growth conditions of this tree were still a mystery as it had been extraordinarily rare and low in quantity since ancient times.

It had the unique trait of constantly attracting stars, falling into the trunk of the tree and turning into a single star mark. That was why it was called falling star.

According to rumors, one of the motives that Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had when he traveled the world alone was to collect this tree.

The value of the falling star rod tree did not just lie in itself.

By planting it in the immortal aperture, the Gu Immortal could use it to create an entire system of orbiting stars. It was a unique ecology that brought incremental gains every year, and the total amount of gains over time, day after day, year after year, was almost impossible to estimate.

Like the treasure blue beaver's stomach pouch, Fang Yuan placed the falling star rod tree into the immortal aperture once again, the natural demeanor that he had almost gave Shen Cong Sheng the illusion that this rare immemorial desolate plant belonged to Fang Yuan in the first place!

"What else?" Fang Yuan smiled: "These alone can't exchange for a rank eight great expert."

Shen Cong Sheng gritted his teeth and said: "I'm sure this immortal material will be able to satisfy you."

This time, he took out a lump of water.

The water was constrained in a ball, constantly creating waves. The waves were not just on the surface of the water, but even within the water, it was rising endlessly.

Although there were countless waves, they were uncluttered.

The water waves rose and fell in unison, advancing at one moment and retreating at the next, it could be called an orderly advance and retreat.

When Fang Yuan saw this, his eyes shined with bright light and he said: “Advancing and retreating tidal water.”

Indeed, this was one of the three great waters of the world, advancing and retreating tidal water.

It was a rank nine immortal material!

This point alone made it far more valuable than the treasure blue beaver stomach pouch and the falling star rod tree combined.

Not to mention that it had many wonderful uses.

“I have a total of twelve portions of the advancing and retreating tidal water here, I can give them all to you.” Shen Cong Sheng gave his offer.

Fang Yuan could not help but sigh lightly: “Shen clan is worthy of being a super force of Eastern Sea, you really have impressive assets.”

Shen Cong Sheng smiled: “We are flattered.”

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan said: “But that’s not enough.”

“It’s not enough?” Shen Cong Sheng’s pupils shrank as he showed an awkward expression.

Fang Yuan sneered and began to use his daybreak swords again, stabbing Shen Shang one sword at a time.

Shen Shang was still insane and kept on growling.

Shen Cong Sheng gnashed his teeth as he watched his ancestor being attacked: “My ancestor is insane now, he is not the same as an intact rank eight Gu Immortal. We both know that!”

“But as you said before, there should still be times when he doesn’t go crazy, shouldn’t there?” Fang Yuan was still sneering.

“Fang Yuan!” Shen Cong Sheng said in a low voice.

“What?” Fang Yuan raised his hand, a large number of daybreak flying swords shot towards Shen Shang.

Shen Cong Sheng almost gritted his teeth till they shattered: “Alright, what else do you want, Immortal Gu?”

“Of course I won’t be that greedy.” Fang Yuan shook his head and said with ease: “I want immortal materials, but not like the three that you gave me. They are all too highly ranked, I need a large number of rank six and seven immortal materials, the larger the variety and quantity, the better it will be.”

“Shen clan is one of the super forces of Eastern Sea, you own seven large sea areas and thousands of middle and small sea areas, you’ll even have two rank eight existences in the future. This little request should not be hard, right?”

“Of course... not.” Shen Cong Sheng’s expression was heavy: “But what will our Shen clan get? A crazy rank eight? He is a hidden threat himself. And it’s a hidden threat that can even force the merciful Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable to personally take action to eliminate!”

Shen Cong Sheng was definitely a qualified leader.

When it came to the clan’s interests, he was logical to the point of being almost emotionless.

Undeniably, Shen Shang’s insanity had caused his value to plummet immensely. And the terrifying hidden danger he was carrying further reduced this value to almost a negative number.

Shen clan wanted as many rank eights as they could. But they did not want a crazy rank eight without any reasoning!

A rank eight without sanity was just a burden, unable to differentiate enemy and friend, they were a laughing stock for others, and would even bring calamity to Shen clan because of their reckless killing.

Shen Cong Sheng saw the hidden threat within Shen Shang and kept the worry in his heart. He also did not have the slightest confidence that he would be able to solve this problem.

Therefore, when he took out these three valuable resources in exchange for Shen Shang, he showed great sincerity.

Fang Yuan laughed and pointed his finger at Shen Shang: “He is your ancestor, the person you went to great lengths to save.”

At this point, he paused: “Of course, this is by no means the only thing you will get. You’ll also gain... my friendship.”

“Oh?” Shen Cong Sheng showed a look of sudden interest: “How so?”

“In today’s world, with the earth veins frequently shifting and the five regions fusing as one, it’s bound to be a chaotic world. Although Shen clan is in Eastern Sea, it is by no means a paradise. Eastern Sea has the most resources and wealth that lure people’s greed, even when the five regional walls exist, there is a steady stream of Gu Immortals coming here, what do you think will happen in the future?”

Fang Yuan spoke casually: “In this situation, what is the use of the differentiating righteous path and demonic path? If Shen clan and I join forces, it will be a strong partnership. Of course, we can keep this partnership hidden as much as we want. Your esteemed clan is extremely affluent, while I am free to do anything I want without burden.”

“Central Continent is far more powerful than the other four regions, so if they attack Eastern Sea in the future, will Shen clan want to surrender or remain self-reliant? Even if you surrender, will all the super forces in Eastern Sea surrender? This is why, there is never a shortage of enemies, but allies like me are extremely rare to come across.”

“The fact that you and I have met here is truly a great opportunity. If we continue to fight, it will only lead to a lose-lose situation. But if we help each other, it will be a win-win situation. Currently, we are dealing with the Paradise Earth true inheritance and Shen Shang, in the future, we will

cooperate to deal with Central Continent and manipulate the entire state of the world!”

# **Chapter 1910 - Everyone's Immortal Materials**

## **1910 Everyone's Immortal Materials**

Fang Yuan's words made Shen Cong Sheng go silent.

The sea breeze ruffled his clothes as he hovered in the air, deep in thought.

Fang Yuan stopped attacking with his daybreak swords and allowed him to ponder quietly.

The future of the five regions chaotic war had already been foreseen by all the major forces. Shen clan was a super force in Eastern Sea, but in such a chaotic situation, it was also like a rocky boat in a stormy sea.

Shen Cong Sheng was not stupid, other leaders of their respective forces also had great foresight, they were considering what direction they should take in the future when chaos ensues.

This was a big change, and if one was not careful, the tide of the great era would drown all those who did not plan well ahead of the storm!

This certainly included super forces.

Throughout history, even in relatively peaceful times, countless super forces had disappeared. Not to mention the great era when a venerable would



appear, almost all of the existing order would be overturned, and in the midst of this, countless super forces would be destroyed and created, the situation of the five regions would become completely altered beyond recognition.

How should one attempt to live in such an era?

This was something that every Gu Immortal with foresight was wondering about.

Should they cooperate and join forces with Fang Yuan?

This was the question Shen Cong Sheng had to think about now.

In terms of qualifications, Fang Yuan was perfectly qualified to work with Shen clan, in fact, Shen Cong Sheng was still a little worried that Shen clan was the unqualified party. Because he himself was not a match for Fang Yuan.

But if he rescued Shen Shang and resolved the hidden threat in his body, along with Shen clan's Immortal Gu House... They would have the foundation to cooperate with Fang Yuan.

Shen Cong Sheng knew that Shen clan needed external allies like Fang Yuan.

It might be unlikely in times of peace, but in the future, when the five regions chaotic war starts, there would be a great chance that Shen clan would be in danger and at the point of extermination.

At this time... Fang Yuan would certainly be unreliable!

It would be a blessing if he did not gang up on Shen clan in the first place.

Shen Cong Sheng knew very well about Fang Yuan's demonic nature.

But what about the time when Shen clan needs to deal with an equivalent super force? For example, Xie clan, Cai clan, Hua clan, Tang clan, and even Song clan...

Shen clan was situated near the center of Eastern Sea, surrounded by many super forces, it was as if they were caught in a siege.

Without seeking a direction to break out and grow while they could, during the five regions chaotic war, they would end up as fodder for other powerful enemies.

Under such circumstances, if Shen clan could pay a large sum of resources in exchange for powerful help like Fang Yuan, why should they hesitate?

Fang Yuan possessed a rank eight Immortal Gu House, multiple venerable inheritances, and was able to repeatedly trample Heavenly Court underfoot. Such a powerful battle power was what Shen clan needed, it was something every super force desired.

If they did not cooperate with Fang Yuan now, what would they do if he worked with their enemies in the future?

In the current situation, Heavenly Court had to repair fate Gu, Fang Yuan wanted to deal with Heavenly Court, he needed a large amount of low ranked immortal materials, this was a great chance to cooperate with him!

Just like Fang Yuan said, this was a chance for both Shen clan and himself.

Both sides had their own needs.

Of course there were still many concerns, working with a demon like Fang Yuan was indeed very risky.

For example, if he goes back on his word in the future, he would still be free to do as he pleased, nobody including Heavenly Court could do anything about it, what could Shen clan possibly do with him?

Moreover, it is impossible to make an alliance agreement here, both sides lacked a basis for trust.

But in reality, even if there was an agreement, could they not break it themselves?

What if Fang Yuan goes back on his word in the future?

As long as they cooperated and achieved mutual benefits, why would Fang Yuan decide to turn on them?

Risk was definitely present, but how could anything in the world contain no risk?

Risk was secondary, profit was the main thing.

Shen Cong Sheng would not want anything that was high risk with low returns. But when the risk was great and the reward was also great, Shen Cong Sheng would never let it go!

The thing that Shen Cong Sheng appreciated the most was not Fang Yuan's battle strength, but his decision to share the mission with Miao Ming Shen, and even with himself.

From this, Shen Cong Sheng could tell that Fang Yuan was different from ordinary demonic path Gu Immortals! He was rational, he had the ability to think and act like the righteous path.

Pondering for a long time, Shen Cong Sheng nodded slowly with a solemn expression: "This is a chance, for both you and me. Hehehe, fine, why not take a gamble? In the future, if one remains stagnant, they will fall off. If Ancestor Shen Shang regains his senses, I will definitely try to persuade him to stop attacking you."

"These are all the low ranked immortal materials that I currently have, please accept them." Shen Cong Sheng displayed his sincerity once again.

Fang Yuan kept them all into his immortal aperture, he had stopped using daybreak sword, he slowly retreated: "Good! I'm going down to retrieve the underwater formation."

Retrieving the underwater formation was a lot of work for Fang Yuan, but in the end, he succeeded.

Fang Yuan stabbed and injured Shen Shang, although the white-gold pillar of light did not stop it, the daybreak swords still caused damage to the pillar, thus damaging the underwater formation.

The underwater formation was already only forty percent left, Shen Shang had broken out of it, which caused a huge opening, in Fang Yuan's eyes, it was full of cracks that he could target.

If he continued to fight, before Shen Shang dies, the underwater formation would probably collapse first.

Once it collapses, it was very likely to implicate the Immortal Gu inside. Fang Yuan could not control which Immortal Gu would be injured or destroyed, but if regret Gu gets destroyed, Fang Yuan's plans would be severely thwarted.

This was also one of the reasons why Fang Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng had joined forces.

The formation was taken away by Fang Yuan, the white-gold pillar that extended towards the sky dissipated, while Shen Shang regained his freedom.

"Ancestor." Shen Cong Sheng shouted while retreating.

Fang Yuan manipulated Myriad Year Flying Warship and cautiously retreated.

Shen Shang was still shrieking, fallen into a state of insanity, there was not the slightest sign of awakening.

"Shen Cong Sheng, do you need me to lend a hand?" Fang Yuan asked.

"No need." Shen Cong Sheng stared at Shen Cong Sheng, unable to figure out what state or condition he was in, there was nothing he could do: "We'd better wait until ancestor awakens on his own."

"Fine." Fang Yuan said as he controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship, moving further away.

Just at this moment, Shen Shang suddenly moved, his body was like an arrow, flying away.

“Ancestor!” Shen Cong Sheng cried out and chased after him.

Fang Yuan likewise maneuvered Myriad Year Flying Warship to chase after him.

But Shen Shang was extremely fast, Myriad Year Flying Warship was only a little bit faster.

Fang Yuan did not dare to use Myriad Year Flying Warship to directly stop Shen Shang. Because of this, Shen Shang managed to fly out of regret crying sea.

Shen Cong Sheng and Fang Yuan wanted to continue their pursuit, but they were stopped by an invisible barrier.

“Damn it!” Shen Cong Sheng’s face was livid, he almost cursed out loud.

This was the method of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, which he had already experienced before, it prevented the foreign Gu Immortals from running around, so every mission had a certain limitation on where they could go.

This constraint did not take effect on Shen Shang, but it obstructed Fang Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng.

The two of them could only watch as Shen Shang flew away in a blur, eventually turning into a small black dot in the sky.

“It looks like he won’t come back.” Fang Yuan sighed.

Shen Cong Sheng looked stiff and watched for a long time before finally regaining his usual demeanor. He turned to Fang Yuan and forced a smile: “In that case, let’s go back first.”

Fang Yuan consoled, “Brother Shen, there is no need to be overly concerned, although your ancestor escaped, he cannot leave Dragon Whale

Paradise. If he comes to his senses, he will definitely try to contact you by all means. If he is still insane, that would be even easier for us. The Merit Obelisk will not watch him endanger the environment and people, there will surely be more missions to come, just like this one, to kill your Ancestor Shen Shang.”

Fang Yuan’s words were reasonable, Shen Cong Sheng listened and nodded repeatedly, the look on his face eased a little.

Under the Merit Obelisk, the atmosphere was tense and heavy.

Two groups of people were distinctly separated.

One group consisted of Miao Ming Shen, Zeng Luo Zi, Tu Tou Tuo, and the rest.

The other group consisted of the Shen clan members, with Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua around.

“I wonder what’s going on in regret crying sea...”

“Yeah, that is Fang Yuan after all. This demon has defeated Heavenly Court time and again, he is really scary.”

“My clan has two rank eight Gu Immortals that can help out each other. Especially with Ancestor Shen Shang here, Fang Yuan isn’t anything to fear.”

“Don’t forget, the reason why Fang Yuan was able to defeat Heavenly Court was because they were in the River of Time.”

“But our first supreme elder is also restricted by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, so he can’t fight Fang Yuan anyway.”

“Sigh...”

The Shen clan Gu Immortals whispered, while Miao Ming Shen’s group remained silent.

They were eager to teleport back and see how the battle progressed, but they were afraid that as soon as they teleported over, they would be affected by the horrific aftermath of the battle, and they might get caught up in it and die a terrible death.

No one was willing to take a foolish risk, so they were all here anxiously waiting for the results of the battle.

Two white lights flashed as Fang Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng appeared together.

“They’re back!”

“Why don’t we see Ancestor Shen Shang?”

“Fang Yuan is still alive, damn it!”

The immortals’ thoughts were shaking as their expressions changed.

“Hehehe, Fang Yuan, thanks to this information of yours, it will save me a lot of time and effort.” Shen Cong Sheng exclaimed.

Fang Yuan smiled and waved his hand: “This is my sincerity. As I said, it will be a win-win situation if you and I cooperate.”

The group of immortals were shocked again and became dumbfounded.

What the heck was this!

You two were just fighting each other earlier! Why were you suddenly on good terms?

What actually happened?

Where was Ancestor Shen Shang?

The Gu Immortals could not help but feel startled and amazed.

Shen Cong Sheng laughed: “I have reached an agreement with Fang Yuan to cooperate for now. Take out all the immortal materials you have on you.”

“What?” The Shen clan Gu Immortals were dumbfounded.

Shen Cong Sheng nodded his head and emphasized: “This is the agreement we made, transfer all your rank six and seven immortal materials to him now.”

“First supreme elder, this...” The immortals looked at each other.

Shen Cong Sheng showed a solemn expression and said in a deep voice: “This is an order!”

The Shen clan Gu Immortals were speechless.

What has happened?!

Oh great first supreme elder, what in the world are you thinking?

They were simply wondering if the first supreme elder in front of them had been controlled by Fang Yuan!

The Shen clan Gu Immortals dawdled before finally taking out their respective immortal materials and handed them over to Fang Yuan on the spot.

Fang Yuan smiled and received them one by one.

He knew that the Shen clan Gu Immortals would definitely not hand over all the immortal materials, but it did not matter, the materials that Fang Yuan needed for his refinement had been mostly obtained already.

After Shen clan’s Gu Immortals had finished handing them over, Shen Cong Sheng looked at Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua.

“Us too?” Ren Xiu Ping could not believe it as his expression turned livid.



Shen Cong Sheng's gaze was cold as he nodded: "Shen clan will reward you for this."

Ren Xiu Ping almost cursed out loud.

Your Shen clan is cooperating with Fang Yuan, what does that have to do with me?!

I came to join your force but you treated me like this. This is just too...

Shen Cong Sheng saw Ren Xiu Ping's hesitation and smiled slightly: "Do you still not believe in me, even if you don't trust me, my Shen clan's credibility is not worth your trust?"

"Lord, please forgive me, of course I believe you. It was just that I could not react in time." Ren Xiu Ping laughed and endured the pain while transferring most of his immortal materials to Fang Yuan.

Tong Hua had an extremely ugly expression but she had no choice but to follow him.

# **Chapter 1911 - Negative Merit Points**

## **1911 Negative Merit Points**

Seeing that Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua were not spared as they handed their immortal materials to Fang Yuan, Miao Ming Shen and the rest became worried.

If Fang Yuan extorted them too, what would they do?

Reject him?

That was likely impossible.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest could not stay in Dragon Whale Paradise forever, they needed to return to Eastern Sea.

Even though it was unreasonable for Fang Yuan to take immortal materials from them, it was basically extortion, but for the sake of their future, Miao Ming Shen and the rest still had to lower their heads.

In this world, strength was the major deciding factor, followed by logic.

Just as Miao Ming Shen and the rest prepared themselves mentally, Fang Yuan ignored them as he looked towards the Merit Obelisk.

Shen Cong Sheng had also seemingly forgotten about Miao Ming Shen's group.

Only Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua looked towards Miao Ming Shen's group, the former had deep hatred while the latter had a complex emotion.

Fang Yuan looked at the Merit Obelisk.

Undeniably, he had completely failed in this mission to exterminate the demonic immortal Shen Shang.

This mission had vanished on the Merit Obelisk, not only that, Fang Yuan even found that a lot of merit points got deducted.

The others were not spared, they had all lost their merit points too.

“First supreme elder, your merit points!” Shen clan's Gu Immortal shouted.

Shen Cong Sheng had an ashen and solemn expression.

He had lost the most merit points, even surpassing Fang Yuan's losses.

Even though Fang Yuan fell from his first place position, he still had single digit merit points. Meanwhile, Shen Cong Sheng had negative merit points!

This situation surprised Fang Yuan as well. After all, this did not happen in his previous life.

“Brother Shen, it seems that the Merit Obelisk punished you the most because you attacked the underwater formation and released Shen Shang. Meanwhile, I did not work properly and even took away the underwater formation, that's why I lost merit points as well.” Fang Yuan analyzed.

Shen Cong Sheng's expression changed, he showed some anxiety: “I just received information from the Merit Obelisk, I need to get a positive amount of merit points in ten days. Otherwise, I will be kicked out of the Dragon Whale Paradise, I will not be allowed to enter again.”

Fang Yuan had a thought, with his wisdom path attainment, he quickly analyzed the hidden information behind this.

“It seems that Dragon Whale Paradise can be explored repeatedly. We can still return? But how do we find it?”

The biggest problem was finding Dragon Whale Paradise’s location in time.

Fang Yuan took a glance at Miao Ming Shen.

“Miao Ming Shen is able to sense the blue dragon whale and enter it, is this the qualification needed?”

Long ago, Fang Yuan had made some deductions.

Miao Ming Shen’s ability to sense the blue dragon whale was very mysterious, Fang Yuan could not tell what it was.

With Fang Yuan’s knowledge and attainment level in many paths, he could tell that even though Miao Ming Shen cultivated space path, the method he used was not.

This was very strange.

Precisely because it was too strange, Fang Yuan was wary and did not capture Miao Ming Shen to interrogate him about this method.

All sorts of clues pointed out that this method was not his own creation but originated from Dragon Whale Paradise itself, it came from the Merit Obelisk.

Shen Cong Sheng looked at his merit points, he frowned that the glaring number, he walked towards the Merit Obelisk: “Fang Yuan, I don’t have much time, I can’t talk anymore.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “Go ahead, Brother Shen. If you need help, leave an information path Gu worm at the obelisk and I will definitely help.”

Seeing the two being so friendly, the immortals behind them had weird expressions.

Shen Cong Sheng was a righteous path leader, while Fang Yuan was a publicly recognized demon in the five regions, was it okay for the two of them to have such a good relationship?

Shen Cong Sheng heard Fang Yuan's words and smiled at him.

He believed Fang Yuan's sincerity, but he believed that the price to get Fang Yuan's help would be extremely high.

Thus, if he could resolve the problem, he would rather do it himself.

Shen Cong Sheng quickly accepted a mid-sized mission and left.

In Shen Cong Sheng's case, this type of mission was the most efficient in earning merit points.

Fang Yuan was the second to walk to the Merit Obelisk.

He continued to choose a large sized mission.

"Hmm? A large sized mission to reclaim Immortal Gu..." At the next moment, he found a brand new mission on the Merit Obelisk.

This mission requested him to take back Immortal Gu, they were the ones that he took after dismantling the underwater formation.

Fang Yuan looked at the content of this mission closely.

This mission had a lot of details, it described the amount that each Immortal Gu was worth in points.

Fang Yuan counted the numbers, it was exactly what he had gained.

Next, he browsed through it, he found that this mission was basically created for him personally by the Merit Obelisk.

The truth was, earlier when Fang Yuan dismantled the formation, he had not checked through these Immortal Gu. Now with this mission, he could learn about their details without having to experiment personally.

From this, Fang Yuan learned that he gained three rank eight Immortal Gu, rank seven were in the highest quantity, and a good number of rank six Immortal Gu.

Each Immortal Gu had a huge resale value, even the lowest rank six Immortal Gu was worth ten thousand merit points.

The immortals behind him went into waves of gasps.

They also saw the mission on the Merit Obelisk.

At once, all of them had varying expressions, they were filled with envy and jealous that could not be concealed.

With this exchange rate, Fang Yuan only needed to contribute one rank six Immortal Gu to get at least ten thousand merit points. This was a huge amount, much more than what Fang Yuan had accumulated earlier!

It was absurd.

Earlier when manipulating the refinement path formation, they put in effort. After the battle started, they avoided the aftermath of their conflict and expended a lot of immortal essences while feeling great fear.

This mission to kill the demonic immortal failed, they did not gain anything.

But look at Fang Yuan!

He gained a huge number of Immortal Gu, if he exchanged them for merit points, the sum would be unthinkable.

Comparison created jealousy.

These immortals felt horrible, they were indignant and even angry but were not brave enough to act brazenly in front of the great demon Fang Yuan.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were still fine, but Shen clan's Gu Immortals, Ren Xiu Ping, and Tong Hua felt even worse!

After all, the other party had only lost immortal essence.

But they had even lost most of their immortal materials.

This situation was too bizarre!

Not only were there no gains, they even had to expend their own resources, this was truly a terrible feeling.

Fang Yuan did not want to give up a single Immortal Gu.

Immortal Gu were unique, such opportunities seldom knock twice.

If he needed merit points, he could simply earn them, why would he give up on his precious Immortal Gu for such petty gains.

Most of these Immortal Gu were earth path, for ordinary Gu Immortals, they would definitely sell those that were not their own path, Immortal Gu required resources to feed after all.

But Fang Yuan was different.

He cultivated all paths, earth path suited him well. Furthermore, he recently gained a lot in earth path attainment level, he wondered, should he use these Immortal Gu to form a third Immortal Gu House?

# Chapter 1912 - Refining Immortal Gu

## Chapter 1912 Refining Immortal Gu

Earlier, Fang Yuan already had a grand plan to build three Immortal Gu Houses.

Right now, he had already created Myriad Year Flying Warship and Cooking Luck Pot, the final Immortal Gu House was not created yet.

Even though he obtained Divine Bean Palace and Dragon Palace during this period of time, these Immortal Gu Houses were used by his clones, they were necessary for his plans in the future, he could not use them personally to fight enemies.

And most importantly, Divine Bean Palace and Dragon Palace were not suited for his needs.

In Fang Yuan's plan, he needed an Immortal Gu House that focused on defense.

Myriad Year Flying Warship specialized in speed, it made up for Fang Yuan's weakness in movement, it was also crucial for fighting inside the River of Time.

Cooking Luck Pot was designed before Qin Ding Ling appeared, Fang Yuan planned to use it to suppress Heavenly Court's weaker luck, to expand his own advantage.

The final third Immortal Gu House was meant for defense and healing. During the battle of fate Gu, there would definitely be intense fights and little time for recovery. Fang Yuan needed a powerful defensive Immortal



Gu House in the battlefield so that he could gain precious time to heal himself.

This Immortal Gu House had to be able to resist even venerable methods to an extent!

“Earth path is sturdy, it excels in defense to begin with. I will use these earth path Immortal Gu to create my third Immortal Gu House, that will be perfect.” Fang Yuan thought about it and made up his mind.

Fang Yuan had no idea now that clone Wu Shuai already obtained a method to create an earth path Immortal Gu House from his dream realm exploration.

This Immortal Gu House was called Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, it suited his requirements.

However, Fang Yuan and his clones had shared attainment but not linked memories, they needed to communicate to gain each other’s memories.

Eventually, Fang Yuan accepted a large sized mission to combine two sea areas.

“Who wants to come with me?” Fang Yuan did not rush, he turned around and asked.

The immortals looked at each other.

“Me.” Miao Ming Shen was the first to react and step forward.

Behind him, Gui Qi Ye and the rest also followed.

“What about you?” Fang Yuan looked at the Shen clan Gu Immortals.

The Shen clan Gu Immortals were dumbfounded.

They had just turned on Fang Yuan earlier, they could not adjust their mindsets so quickly in this period of time.

Shen clan's Gu Immortals were not like Miao Ming Shen's group, the latter had experienced the benefits of working with Fang Yuan. In their first cooperation with Fang Yuan, it ended up as a failure.

Shen Xiao shook his head: "Thank you for the offer lord, we would like to look around first."

Shen Xiao rejected Fang Yuan politely, the other Shen clan Gu Immortal did not object to his statement.

Fang Yuan did not mind it, he smiled towards the last two people, asking: "Ren Xiu Ping? Tong Hua? What about you?"

Ren Xiu Ping had a grim expression, he did not speak, only shaking his head.

Tong Hua was currently startled and did not dare to say or do anything.

Fang Yuan expected them to act like this from the start. After all, he had just taken their immortal materials.

This showed Shen Cong Sheng's political ability as well.

Shen Cong Sheng ordered Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua to give their immortal materials to Fang Yuan, it seemed to have ruined their relationship, but the truth was, it made them helpless to do anything but stay with Shen clan.

In fact, they would even want to stay with Shen clan after leaving Dragon Whale Paradise to replenish their loss of immortal materials.

At the same time, this was a way for Shen Cong Sheng to suppress Tong Hua and Ren Xiu Ping. It made them realize who was calling the shots. Within Dragon Whale Paradise, they had to obey Shen clan, even after they leave, they still had to listen to Shen clan! After joining my Shen clan's boat, they still wanted to leave? Hehe, life was not that easy.

Fang Yuan knew Shen Cong Sheng's scheme, but he did not say anything.

With or without Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua, it did not matter, Fang Yuan's core benefits were untouched.

The five regional walls were still around, but the super forces were already starting to gather members and accumulate strength. Fang clan took in Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine, Shen clan took in Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua, was there anything weird? Longevity Heaven was even more overbearing, it united the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world, using the Huang Jin super forces to take in all of Northern Plains' lone and demonic immortals.

As for Central Continent, they achieved it long ago. The ten great ancient sects of Central Continent were subsidiaries of Heavenly Court, while most Gu Immortals or super forces were attached to the ten great ancient sects, controlled and kept under their watch.

Eventually, Fang Yuan brought Miao Ming Shen's group to the mission's location.

Floating in the sky, they looked down.

The Immortals saw these two sea areas, one blue and one green, with the blue sea towering high and the green sea hanging low. A large amount of seawater fell from the blue sea and rolled down into the green sea.

The seawater in both seas could not mix together, at the place where they met, the blue and green seawater touched each other, emitting a sneering sound, as a huge amount of clouds rose endlessly.

At the area where the two seas intersected, fish and insects were absent, this was almost a desolate place.

It was obvious that there was a major ecological problem.

Fang Yuan sighed: "It's not simple to combine the two sea areas, it is necessary to take into account all the different aspects. We might as well explore and gather information individually. After that, we will assemble and discuss a plan."

Miao Ming Shen nodded: “That is reasonable.”

Fang Yuan looked at Miao Ming Shen and smiled at him.

Although his own identity was exposed, Miao Ming Shen still cooperated with him. He was able to swiftly change his attitude and continued to follow Fang Yuan’s orders, this showed that he was something with great mental fortitude.

The immortals scattered and flew around the place, doing their investigations.

Fang Yuan was the only one who remained at the same place, using investigative methods while dividing his attention to look into the sovereign immortal aperture.

His greatest gain this time was regret Gu.

In his last life, he had followed the design of Regret Pool to use regret Gu as the core and create a refinement path Gu formation.

This life, however, did not need to be so troublesome. Fang Yuan had annexed the entire Lang Ya blessed land and possessed the extremely useful Long Hair refinement path formation, all he had to do now was to add regret Gu into this formation.

The formation certainly needed to be adjusted, Fang Yuan had already deduced it in advance.

At the moment, he only had to watch as regret Gu was placed in the vacant core position.

“Lord, Fang Yuan is a current generation demon, aren’t we a little too close to him?” In the process of detection, Gui Qi Ye took the initiative to fly to the side of Miao Ming Shen, looking worried.

Miao Ming Shen patted Gui Qi Ye’s shoulder: “Old Gui, you want to ask me why I treated Fang Yuan in this manner, almost acting like his subordinate, right?”

Gui Qi Ye smiled in embarrassment: “Lord, you are very perceptive.”

Miao Ming Shen’s face was slightly solemn and he sighed: “I am left with no other choice. This is my first time entering Dragon Whale Paradise but there was a mishap. Shen clan discovered this place, do you think they will let this precious land go and allow us to come and explore it again in the future?”

“According to the nature of super forces, they will want to keep it all to themselves!” Gui Qi Ye said with certainty.

“Precisely.” Miao Ming Shen’s eyes shined brightly: “We will definitely be suppressed and forced to surrender by Shen clan once we go out. If we do not surrender, we will be annihilated. But now we have a choice besides submitting to Shen clan.”

“You refer to... Fang Yuan? I see, lord has great foresight, I am too foolish.” Gui Qi Ye suddenly realized.

As lone immortals who knew such a precious place like the Dragon Whale Paradise, Shen clan would definitely take action against them in the future. Ren Xiu Ping alone was a strong enemy, not to mention the super force Shen clan.

Miao Ming Shen chose to be close to Fang Yuan in order to use his prestige as a shield and try to preserve the freedom of being a lone immortal.

When Shen clan decides to take action against them, they would have to take Fang Yuan’s feelings into account.

In the worst case, he would give up his status as a lone immortal and become the subordinate of either Fang Yuan or Shen clan.

This meant that he still had some room for planning and was not at a dead end.

Unlike Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua who had joined Shen clan long ago. Without external pressure, the super force would naturally take advantage

of them. Could they refuse to hand over the immortal materials when Shen Cong Sheng asked them to do so? Did they dare to refuse?

By the time the group of immortals reached Fang Yuan, he had already finished arranging regret Gu.

Within the sovereign immortal aperture, the hairy man Gu Immortals were ready, they were high in morale as they prepared themselves to refine a large number of Gu.

Fang Yuan's time path clone was organizing and planning the immortal material inventory, before fine-tuning and improving the Immortal Gu recipes according to the immortal materials at hand.

Fang Yuan needed to do it himself in his previous life, but with the whole of Lang Ya Sect helping him in this life, there was almost no need for him to intervene.

Thus, he saved a great deal of time.

With the fate battle getting closer and closer, this time was extremely valuable and precious!

# **Chapter 1913 - Flame Cloud Pillar**

## Chapter 1913 Flame Cloud Pillar

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture. The Long Hair refinement path formation buzzed continuously, the fire within the formation raged towards the sky, heat waves were pushing everywhere. A rank six Immortal Gu was bathed in fire and light, suspended in midair, its surface gradually melting like wax.

“Hold steady!” Lang Ya land spirit controlled the formation as he shouted: “Open the inventory, let out the immortal material.”

The hairy man Gu Immortals controlling the other formation cores quickly opened the inventory doors.

Thus, lumps of dog shit flew out of it slowly.

These were all immortal materials.

Some flickered with starlight, seemingly embedded with blue diamonds, they were the faeces of star desolate hounds.

Some had sharp spikes and looked dangerous, they were the faeces of remnant heavenly dogs.

And there were pure and clean ones that resembled white jade, they were the excrement of the jade statue white hound.

Star desolate hound, remnant heavenly dog, and jade statue white hound were ancient desolate beasts.

The dog shit slowly flew into the fire, melting rapidly in the flames. Some turned into smoke, and some were reduced to liquid.



The formation activated as three hairy man Gu Immortals took action at once, cooperating to process these dog shit immortal materials.

First, smoke spread out to surround the rank six Immortal Gu, before liquid started to flow and gather.

Lang Ya land spirit took charge of the refinement, it was extremely stable during the late stage processes.

Right when they were about to succeed, when the final portion of immortal material fused into it, an accident occurred. The flame changed color as the incomplete rank seven Immortal Gu within broke apart rapidly.

Lang Ya land spirit was shocked, he quickly activated the formation.

The power of regret Gu activated as the color of the flame within the formation returned to normal, not only that, the incomplete rank seven Immortal Gu was also restored to its former state.

They only lost that last portion of immortal material.

The Lang Ya hairy men calmed their emotions and continued to refine Gu.

After less than an hour, the flames inside the formation gradually dissipated, and rank six Immortal Gu within was refined into rank seven.

Rank seven — Dog Shit Luck!

The hairy man Gu Immortals were very excited while Lang Ya land spirit was also filled with emotions.

Originally, they were proud of their refinement path ability. Now with the help of regret Gu, they were simply a dragon flying through the air, their advantage expanded out of control.

At the same time, in Dragon Whale Paradise.

Fang Yuan sat on the cloud with Feng Jiang and the rest, watching Miao Ming Shen fly around the place.

The ecology of the two sea areas had almost been adjusted completely. The final difficulty was that there was still a shattered space between the two seas.

Miao Ming Shen was trying to get rid of this space, by eliminating it, the two sea areas could finally fuse into one.

Miao Ming Shen was a space path Gu Immortal, he was specialized in dealing with these shattered spaces.

Fang Yuan and the rest were free to idle and watch.

“Oh? Immortal Gu Dog Shit Luck has been advanced successfully. Progress is smooth.” Fang Yuan sensed the commotion within the sovereign immortal aperture.

While his main body was doing the merit missions, three Immortal Gu had already advanced inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Their progress was really fast!

When ordinary Gu Immortals refine Immortal Gu, they would take years to do so, they would be very nervous and careful with each attempt, the risks were huge.

But Fang Yuan’s situation was different.

Lang Ya land spirit, the hairy man Gu Immortals, Long Hair refinement path formation, as well as the abundance of immortal materials, it allowed him to refine Gu with ease.

The three Immortal Gu that he had refined and advanced were from luck path, he had obtained them from dismantling Cooking Luck Pot.

Luck path was his focus now.

The dog shit luck Immortal Gu that he just advanced was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s former vital Gu, it had an incredibly powerful supplementary effect.

The only problem was that it was stuck at rank six and could not display its power. Now that it was rank seven, it could be used to some extent.

Fang Yuan had rank eight cultivation level now, his requirement for Immortal Gu also increased, he needed higher ranked Immortal Gu. Rank six was too low, while rank seven was barely good enough, rank eight suited him the most.

But if Fang Yuan wanted to refine a rank eight Immortal Gu, he would not be able to afford it. The investment needed was too high, and the risks were huge, he was likely to gain nothing.

After all, he could not ignore the outside world to cultivate, the external environment was very harsh, if he did not stop Heavenly Court from repairing fate Gu, his situation would deteriorate even further.

Currently, rank seven Immortal Gu were still barely usable to him.

Furthermore, these rank seven luck path Immortal Gu that he refined could be used to construct Cooking Luck Pot. At rank seven, Cooking Luck Pot would be able to affect rank eight.

“Hah!” Miao Ming Shen suddenly shouted, breaking Fang Yuan’s chain of thoughts.

Miao Ming Shen flashed with a blue halo, it spread out around him and soothed the shattered space, uniting it until the cracks were restored entirely.

“Lord has amazing methods!” Feng Jiang and the rest praised.

At this point, the large sized mission was completed.

“Outstanding methods, yours are superior to mine.” Fang Yuan did not stint on praise. He had space path Immortal Gu and space path methods too, he could even use other paths to mimic the effects of space path.

But compared to Miao Ming Shen, even if he could achieve the same effect, the cost would be higher.

After all, experts focused on their own fields, Miao Ming Shen was a space path cultivator, while Fang Yuan barely researched about space path, he made little progress in this path.

Miao Ming Shen quickly cupped his fists: “Lord is too kind, I am not worthy of such praise.”

Fang Yuan replied with some praise again as everyone went back to the Merit Obelisk.

In this mission, Fang Yuan gained the most benefits, followed by Miao Ming Shen.

Fang Yuan’s merit ranking rose to the top again.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were no longer surprised. They had seen Fang Yuan’s ranking jump up and down like a monkey. He was often in the first and last place.

Fang Yuan’s gaze focused.

At this point, the other Gu Immortals were started to accumulate merit points. If Fang Yuan’s ranking fell again, he would not be able to get to the first position so easily again.

They continued accepting and completing missions.

Fang Yuan’s merit points soared continuously.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest followed after him the entire time, Fang Yuan used the advantage of cultivating all paths to resolve problems, while Miao Ming Shen and the rest resolved the minor issues for him.

This cooperation ensured that Fang Yuan remained at the top of the ranking, his status was getting more unmovable.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest also benefited, they started to break away from Shen clan’s group, becoming the second group on the ranking list.

The first group was naturally Fang Yuan alone.

Shen Cong Sheng did not turn to Fang Yuan for help in the end, he got back on track by completing multiple mid-sized missions within the allotted time limit.

His luck was not bad, he received one or two sound path related missions. As for other missions, even though he cultivated sound path, he had many methods to mimic the effects of other paths.

Shen Cong Sheng was a rank eight after all, his cultivation level methods were beyond the rest.

By the time Shen Cong Sheng's ranking rose to the middle, Fang Yuan's Cooking Luck Pot was reassembled already.

Rank seven Cooking Luck Pot.

A top tier Immortal Gu House that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable personally created, it had the power to affect rank eight.

The first thing that Fang Yuan did was to inspect his own luck.

Boom!

As if he heard a roar that seemingly resounded in his ears, Fang Yuan looked up and saw a giant flame cloud pillar, burning brightly and rising up into the sky, as if it was trying to hold up heaven and earth.

His luck was like a giant pillar, flames that were bright-red like blood surged. On the surface of the giant pillar, the end of the many traces of the flame carried a touch of black color in it.

“My strength is rank eight, my battle strength rivals Duke Long, I also have countless Immortal Gu, Immortal Gu Houses, and killer moves, so my luck is grand and vast.”

“Blood-red flame means slaughter. The black color at the ends of the flame means a deadly situation. The deadly black qi has corrupted the surface of

the pillar, it is trying to get in, this means that my death threat is coming from an external source. It must be Heavenly Court.”

“Heavenly Court has yet to repair fate Gu, once they succeed, the black death qi will definitely expand by several times, it will eventually corrupt my entire luck pillar.”

Fang Yuan looked again, within the huge pillar, there were countless faint phantom images flickering continuously.

At times, he saw a red lotus, a white crane, a beast phantom, or a lump of soil...

Fang Yuan wanted to investigate deeper but he saw that his vision turned blur.

Immediately, his body shook and his throat felt wet, he almost spit out blood uncontrollably.

Fang Yuan rapidly healed himself and looked above him, he saw that Cooking Luck Pot was floating quietly, there was a vast amount of luck inside while a crack had formed on the surface of the pot, luck was leaking towards the outside.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly to himself internally.

His luck was too strong, even though this was rank seven Cooking Luck Pot, he could only barely see his luck.

After he looked at it for a long time, he would suffer backlash and Cooking Luck Pot would also be damaged.

The newly created Cooking Luck Pot needed to be fixed now. The crack was huge, the damage was severe, if left unattended, the crack would get larger and larger, he had to fix it immediately.

After checking his luck, Fang Yuan was both happy and worried.

He was happy that his luck was good, this was not strange, he had immense foundation, as well as methods in luck path.

The worry was that his hidden threat had started to appear, if he did not stop fate Gu from recovering, Fang Yuan's crisis would become more dangerous. And because the fire pillar was burning intensely, it also meant that he could not last too long.

These types of burning luck often meant that the Gu Immortal was unrivaled in a short period of time, but it could not last long. After the pillar stops burning, his luck would fall into a period of weakness.

But that was in the future.

Fang Yuan made some deductions, his luck would be maintained at this level at least until Central Continent's fate Gu battle, it could even be improved further.

Fang Yuan continued to receive missions, while the refinement path Gu Immortals within the sovereign immortal aperture also started to advance strength path Immortal Gu.

Missions to eliminate the black fire started to appear on the Merit Obelisk.

After Shen Shang escaped from regret crying sea, he was still in a state of madness, he unconsciously damaged the surroundings of the places he went to.

Fang Yuan was very interested in this odd black fire and immediately started to investigate it.

But he made no progress.

The black fire was very stubborn, even though it was a small lump, it could transform countless times when attacked, it could last for a long time.

As missions to clear the black fire appeared, Fang Yuan, Shen Cong Sheng, and the rest started to work together to complete them.

“Did you notice, this type of mission is getting rarer.” On this day, Shen Cong Sheng talked to Fang Yuan while dealing with the black fire.

“Perhaps your Ancestor Shen Shang is about to regain his senses. With the location of these missions, we should be able to deduce his whereabouts.” Fang Yuan analyzed.

“Indeed.” Shen Cong Sheng had an expectant expression.

Right at this time, a rank eight Gu Immortal flew towards them in the sky.

Who else could it be but Shen Shang?

“Ancestor, this is great, you finally regained your senses. I have already negotiated with Fang Yuan, we will work together.” Shen Cong Sheng was overjoyed, he quickly went over.

Shen Shang flew over and nodded towards Fang Yuan, he had a haggard expression, he frowned deeply as he said some shocking things: “The situation is quite troublesome, I have a huge problem. Before I resolve it, I need to be sealed again. Fang Yuan, you are proficient in formation path, I would like you to set up a formation to seal me if necessary.”



# **Chapter 1914 - Super Mission**

## Chapter 1914 Super Mission

In the eyes of super forces, there was no such thing as eternal friend or enemy in the world.

This is the way of survival of super forces.

If this was not followed, super forces would not last for a long time. Naturally, Shen clan was not such a force, as it had existed even before the era of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, and had grown and flourished during Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable's time, surviving to this day!

As an old generation member of Shen Shang, Shen Shang was not opposed to Shen clan and Fang Yuan joining forces, he even felt joyful about it.

This was because none of the Shen clan members here were a formation path Gu Immortal. If Shen Shang wanted to use a formation to seal himself, he would naturally have to use Fang Yuan's method.

Hearing Shen Shang's words, Shen Cong Sheng had a weird expression. He had gone to great lengths to save his ancestor, but he did not expect that his ancestor would now instead ask to be sealed by a formation again.

However, the reason for this was completely understood by Shen Cong Sheng, he was now silent as he looked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan's face turned a little grim: "Shen Shang, although your clan has joined forces with me, the Immortal Gu from the underwater formation already belongs to me. Now you are asking me to use these Immortal Gu and create an immortal formation to seal you... This is quite hard for me to accept."

Shen Cong Sheng quickly added: “We can negotiate this Fang Yuan. We can even trade Immortal Gu.”

At this point, seeing that Shen Shang had regained his senses, he did not want to give up.

Fang Yuan shook his head slowly, he had a serious expression: “Shen Cong Sheng, did you forget about the contents of our missions earlier? The mission states that we need to eliminate the demonic immortal within the formation, that is Shen Shang. What does that mean?”

Fang Yuan paused before continuing: “It means that the Merit Obelisk does not think that Shen Shang will recover, it has decided that his problem is too severe to treat. Even if I create the formation, it will not help him.”

Shen Cong Sheng’s expression changed, he wanted to speak but Shen Shang stopped him.

Shen Shang smiled towards Fang Yuan: “Fang Yuan, no need to have such concerns. I am not asking you to contribute your Immortal Gu, the Gu worms we will use for the formation are all mine. Look.”

Saying so, he took out an Immortal Gu from his immortal aperture.

The Immortal Gu was like a silkworm, pale yellow in color, curled up in a ball and not stretched, making it even more exquisite.

“Shen Cong Sheng may have already explained my situation to you.” Shen Shang said to Fang Yuan: “I’m most proficient in healing, and this is the human path Immortal Gu I created back then — Heal Injury. Using this as the core, I later developed a human path killer move called ‘saving dead healing injuries’, if the difficulty isn’t too high, I can even revive a dead person on the spot!”

Fang Yuan looked at the Gu worm in front of him, he felt a little amazed.

This was a pure human path Immortal Gu, the shocking thing was that this was a genuine rank eight Immortal Gu.

Rank eight human path Immortal Gu!

Seeing that the immortals were silent, Shen Shang smiled and said again: “Have you found that human path methods are the most effective in dealing with the black fire?”

Shen Cong Sheng shook his head: “Not yet, but we know that healing killer moves will take effect if we use them on the black fire. But whether we use offensive or healing killer moves on the black fire, there is no difference.”

Shen Shang nodded: “Watch.”

Saying so, a wave of aura burst out of his body.

Watching him prepare a killer move, the surrounding Gu Immortals quickly retreated with deep alertness.

After Shen Shang regained his senses, he had no intention of harming anyone, he slowly stretched out his hand, aiming at the black fire in the distance.

His palm suddenly burst out with a stream of bright yellow light.

The light stream surged and spiraled forward, it was not fast, but eventually shot into the black fire.

The black fire only endured the yellow light for a moment before quickly dissipating.

Shen Shang stopped his killer move and said to the group of immortals: “As you have just seen, this is my killer move, saving dead healing injuries.”

“It’s true that human path killer moves are quite effective against the black fire.” Seeing the truth, Fang Yuan immediately nodded his head, acknowledging Shen Shang’s statement.

“They are indeed.” Shen Cong Sheng rejoiced: “The previous underwater formation was an earth path immortal formation, it was difficult to resolve

the problem on ancestor. But if you use our ancestor's human path Immortal Gu, there will be greater hope."

Fang Yuan, however, did not agree just yet, he gazed at Shen Shang: "You are a human path quasi-supreme grandmaster?"

Astonishment flashed in Shen Shang's eyes as he nodded: "That is correct. I didn't expect that you are also proficient in human path."

Different professions were different worlds, this was the same for paths.

Since Fang Yuan could estimate Shen Shang's human path attainment level, it meant that he also had some level of attainment in it.

All of the immortals turned their gazes towards Fang Yuan while feeling surprised, they sighed to themselves: This great demon renowned in the world was truly unfathomable!

Fang Yuan asked: "Do you have the formation chart?"

Shen Shang showed a helpless smile: "I have a formation chart but it is incomplete, I seem to have created it myself, but I can't remember the entire thing."

"What do you mean?" Shen Cong Sheng tensed up.

Shen Shang sighed deeply: "I've lost my memory. Every time I fall into madness, a part of the memories I grasp will disappear. This is why I need to solve the problem in me as soon as possible, if it's too late, I'm afraid I won't even know who I am anymore."

Fang Yuan smiled and said: "Shen Shang, you're lucky to have met me."

Shen Shang nodded his head and agreed: "This is indeed my good luck. It is very difficult to set up human path formation that meets my requirements, there are many conditions to do so. Firstly, you need the human path Immortal Gu, secondly, you need to deduce and modify the formation chart, and finally, you need to set up the formation. Setting up the formation requires formation path attainment, deducing and modifying the formation

chart requires wisdom path attainment, and because it is a human path immortal formation, it also requires human path attainment.”

“Any other Gu Immortal who specializes in formation path, even with rank eight cultivation, would not be able to satisfy my requirements. But you, Fang Yuan, meet all three of these conditions. So now, I really have to rely on you. Please do help me out!”

“Fang Yuan, whatever reward you need, feel free to ask, my Shen clan will definitely do our best to satisfy you.” Shen Cong Sheng made a solemn commitment.

Fang Yuan nodded, as soon as Shen Shang said his request to set up the immortal formation, he realized that this was a good opportunity.

Not only would he be able to obtain a generous amount of immortal materials from Shen clan by just setting up the formation.

What he cared more about was Shen clan, Shen Cong Sheng, and Shen Shang.

By cooperating with Shen clan, he could influence the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world even more deeply and affect the situation of the entire world.

Although Fang Yuan’s human path attainment level was already grandmaster, he still had no clue on how to deal with those human path killer moves of Heavenly Court. It would be a completely different story if Shen Shang were to deal with them.

Heavenly Court was too powerful and had countless years of accumulation. Fang Yuan was not able to resist them alone, he needed the help of others to work together and fight against this giant.

Fang Yuan pondered for a moment and said his conditions.

To the surprise of Shen Shang and Shen Cong Sheng, the conditions Fang Yuan proposed were very relaxed and not harsh at all. Fang Yuan did not

have much demand for immortal materials, nor did he ask for Immortal Gu.

The only condition that had to be fulfilled was the requirement that Shen Cong Sheng and Shen Shang must take action and become the enemy of Heavenly Court to stop it from repairing fate Gu.

But in fact, there was no need for Fang Yuan to bring it up, it was already the consensus of all the super forces in the world that they had to prevent the successful restoration of fate Gu!

Many of the ambitious people in the world were even more worried about fate Gu than Fang Yuan! After all, none of them were otherworldly demons, once Heavenly Court succeeds in their plan, their status and position would be unshakable.

A few days later, a brand new formation was built at the bottom of the sea.

Shen Shang entered the formation, with the main formation core controlled by Shen Cong Sheng and assisted by Fang Yuan.

The formation was slowly activated as a stream of profound white light formed chains that tied Shen Shang like a mummy.

Shen Shang was silent, sitting in a cross-legged position, soon his entire body was enveloped in a layer of pale white light mist.

A moment later, the formation came to a halt.

Fang Yuan, Shen Cong Sheng and the others found nothing, they could not detect a single bit of black fire within Shen Shang's body at all.

Shen Shang sighed: "I have searched countless times before, the only time this black fire will appear is when I go mad again."

Fang Yuan's eyes shimmered uncertainly: "Are you sure that you can't remember all the things about the black fire?"

Shen Shang just shook his head.

Shen Cong Sheng sighed: “In that case, we will have to wait. This mission will be placed here for now, I will send a person specifically to stay behind to guard the formation.”

This arrangement was very reasonable.

The Gu Immortals were restricted in their range of movement in Dragon Whale Paradise and could not travel in and out of places as they wished. Using the Merit Obelisk’s teleportation ability, as well as the group title, they were able to communicate instantly, and if Shen Shang went mad, they would quickly gather together.

Those arranged within the formation were bound to be Shen clan’s members, sometimes it was even Shen Cong Sheng himself who went to stay guard.

With this burden, Shen clan was not Fang Yuan’s match at all in the competition for the merit board ranking.

Time continued to pass day by day, Fang Yuan’s merit points rose from thousands to tens of thousands, and then from tens of thousands to even higher.

In the process, he also exchanged for titles from time to time. It was just that the secrets behind many titles were not clear to him either. In the previous life, Miao Ming Shen’s group had not explored it to this extent yet, so Fang Yuan could only guess and make deductions.

Fortunately, even if his deductions were wrong, the exchanged titles were all of some use.

Having so many merit points, Fang Yuan did not exchange for any Immortal Gu.

He did not lack any Immortal Gu, what he lacked were some rare immortal materials.



There were instances where Fang Yuan spent his merit points to exchange for immortal materials from the Merit Obelisk that would help the hairy man Gu Immortals' refinement.

Fang Yuan had a large amount of immortal materials, but there were still some missing among the rarer ones. The Merit Obelisk made up for the last gap in resources.

By the time Fang Yuan made a new breakthrough, the first super mission appeared.

“Get rid of the black fire on the heavenly spine?” Fang Yuan was slightly startled: “Why is there still black fire that hasn't been eliminated?”

Some time before, missions regarding the black fire had appeared one after another. The immortals completed these missions to clean up Shen Shang's mess.

“Could it be that this isn't left behind by Shen Shang?” There was a sudden flash of realization in Fang Yuan's mind.

It was very simple to verify this conjecture, with the aid of the Merit Obelisk, Fang Yuan directly teleported to the mission location.

At the next moment, he was at the top of the clouds, the highest point in the sky.

There was no wind and the sun was warm.

“This is?” Fang Yuan's pupils shrank as he looked up to see countless lumps of black fire burning silently.

The scale of the black fire was extremely large, as if this was a field of dark clouds in a rainstorm!

The total amount of black fire that Fang Yuan and the immortals had previously gone to great lengths to annihilate was a minute fraction of the black fire in front of him now.

“The scale of this black fire is appalling, it cannot have come from Shen Shang. In that case, there was already a hidden black fire problem in Dragon Whale Paradise from the start!”

# **Chapter 1915 - Shen Shang's Inheritance**

## Chapter 1915 Shen Shang's Inheritance

The black fire was not burning in the air, it was attached to giant bones.

The giant bones were milky white and had a sacred aura.

The giant bones had a main trunk that extended from east to west, it could pierce through heaven and earth, it was like a dragon of the nine heavens that stretched beyond Fang Yuan's vision. On both sides of the bone, there were countless neatly arranged branching giant bones that extended outwards, as if they were giant ivory tusks.

The entire skeleton was like the spine and ribs of a giant, singlehandedly holding up the sky!

"Heavenly spine..." Fang Yuan murmured, the sight before him was imposing, he was underneath the giant bones, being as small as a mosquito.

These bones were like gnarled trees, and the black fire gathered like clouds, covering most of the bones.

After evaluating it, Fang Yuan figured out a few details: "This heavenly spine is actually a rank nine bone path immortal material!"

That alone was incredible.

The heavenly spine should not be a human bone, which Gu Immortal had such a massive body?

Since it was not a human bone, it was a beast bone.

But how could there be such a fierce beast that could reach the level of rank nine?

It was impossible!

Rank nine was the level of a venerable, historically, they only appeared in the human race. Throughout history, there were only ten of them, while the rest of the races had rank eight existences at most, there were also immemorial desolate beasts or immemorial desolate plants as well.

Was it possible that there were rank nine desolate beasts or plants in this world?

Only such an existence would leave behind such a grade of immortal material after death.

“Other than that, is it something that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created personally?” Fang Yuan was filled with questions.

This was very unlikely.

Because Fang Yuan had already seen through the function of the heavenly spine, its one and only use was to reinforce this Dragon Whale Paradise.

If Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable wanted to reinforce this paradise, he could have used earth path methods, or even sound path methods. These were his expertise, why would he bother to choose bone path?

“Also, why did Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable set it up like this, to specifically reinforce Dragon Whale Paradise? It’s as if Dragon Whale Paradise is very unsafe and could collapse at any moment.”

“But the truth is, the blue dragon whale is a legendary immemorial desolate beast, its strength is near the pinnacle of the world. There are simply very few existences that can threaten it. If something can threaten its life, would there be a point in reinforcing Dragon Whale Paradise?”

“The biggest question is, why is there such a huge black fire on the back of the heavenly spine?”

This was clearly not caused by Shen Shang.

If Shen Shang was able to leak black fire of this scale, how could he still come back alive and volunteer to seal himself?

“What kind of connection is there between the black fire here and the black fire on Shen Shang’s body?” Fang Yuan kept deducing, and in the process, he saw a branching rib completely melt away in the black fire.

The black fire was fiercely corroding and constantly destroying the heavenly spine!

What would happen if the heavenly spine is completely destroyed?

Fang Yuan did not know, but it was definitely not something good.

He tried his hand as he manipulated Myriad Year Flying Warship, activating daybreak flying sword to attack the black fire.

As he expected, the black fire was like a sea, his attack was like throwing stones into the sea, unable to create any difference.

Fang Yuan tried for a while, but he had no choice but to stop. Even a character like him felt overwhelmed at the moment.

This was the difficulty of a super mission.

After pondering for a bit, Fang Yuan left the place, returned to the starting island, he went over to the underwater formation.

Shen Shang was still conscious, Fang Yuan informed him of the situation at the heavenly spine.

“Do you have any impressions of this place?” Fang Yuan inquired.

Shen Shang shook his head in distress: “No recollection of that at all. But it definitely has a connection with my black fire. If I can figure out the mystery of the black fire, I might be able to gain insight on the plan of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable back then, as well as the deepest secrets of Dragon Whale Paradise!”

At this point, Shen Shang paused: “I want to see it for myself, is that okay?”

“Of course.” Fang Yuan responded immediately. Since he had told Shen Shang about this situation, he was not going to hide it.

To attempt to complete a super mission, relying on him alone seemed insufficient, he would have to gather the strength of all the Gu Immortals.

Soon, the group of immortals gathered together as one and arrived at the heavenly spine.

Seeing the sea of black fire clouds that filled the sky, the group of immortals had a change of expression as they marveled at it.

The group of immortals tried to exterminate the black fire, but the progress was extremely slight. It seemed that the larger the black fire was, the more difficult it was to eradicate it.

Among the immortals, only Shen Shang’s human path methods were sufficiently effective, the others were all outmatched by him.

After the plan to remove the black fire had lasted for several days, Hua Die was the first to give up.

It was not that she could not take it mentally, but the immortal essence expenditure was too high.

“This mission is too hard, I suggest we give up.” Miao Ming Shen secretly approached Fang Yuan and discussed with him in private.

Even without him having to say anything, Fang Yuan had already wanted to give up.

By now, the immortals had done their best but only managed to eliminate a small area of the black fire. And such a scale was not even one-thousandth of the entire black fire.

“If I were to truly utilize my rank eight battle strength, this would certainly be much more efficient, but the result would still be too poor. Instead, I

might as well complete large sized missions one after another, after a few times, I'll be able to accumulate a large amount of merit points."

"I'm afraid only a venerable will be able to handle a super mission like this with ease."

Fang Yuan decided to give up.

Shen Cong Sheng and Shen Shang expressed their understanding.

But they were unwilling to give up, they only let the other Shen clan Gu Immortals follow him.

Shen Shang said to Fang Yuan: "I still want to explore it further, I will move along the main spine and see if I can find any clue or answer."

Fang Yuan looked at him deeply, nodding and leaving directly.

Soon, only Shen Shang and Shen Cong Sheng were left here at the heavenly spine.

"Take a walk with me." Shen Shang sighed.

Shen Cong Sheng followed and took the initiative to ask: "Ancestor, you purposely diverted everyone away, did you recall something?"

Shen Shang shook his head: "I am planning to hand over my human path inheritance to you."

Shen Cong Sheng was startled, he had an ominous feeling from Shen Shang's tone as he quickly said: "Ancestor, you need not be in such a hurry. I believe that there will always be a way to resolve the problem in you."

Shen Shang smiled slightly: "I have not given up hope, but I have to make considerations for our clan. Leaving behind my human path inheritance for the benefit of our clan, it can be considered as me repaying the debt I once owed the clan!"

Shen Cong Sheng was silent.



Shen Shang continued: “At the underwater formation, I was not able to pass you my inheritance, after all, it was a formation set up by Fang Yuan himself. But here, it should be safe.”

“I won’t pass my human path Immortal Gu to you, because I still need to use them. What I’m passing on to you is my experience in cultivation, and the various killer moves and Immortal Gu recipes I’ve created.”

Shen Cong Sheng said solemnly: “I will definitely not fail to live up to ancestor’s good intentions.”

Shen Shang smiled bitterly: “My memory is fragmented, what I remember is limited. Let’s start from the very beginning, I used to major in sound path, but then in an accident, I refined heal injury Immortal Gu, from which I saw that hope of human path.”

“In order to convert to human path, I did many things in secret, all of which were against the rules of the righteous path. Our clan defended me and helped to cover up these incidents, but in the end, I couldn’t hide it from Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.”

“When Lord Paradise Earth found me, I was no match for him, I couldn’t even take a single blow from him. But Lord Paradise Earth didn’t kill me, nor did he imprison me, but instead, because I had spent many years saving lives and helping the injured, he gave me a chance to redeem myself. And he promised me that if I could seize this opportunity, I might even be able to achieve my goal and successfully convert to cultivating human path.”

“And so I came here, I cultivated bitterly in the underwater formation that Lord Paradise Earth had set up.”

“The memories of my non-stop cultivation are completely blurred, I only remember that in the process, I received the help of the undersea formation and repeatedly broke through, progressing steadily.”

“With heal injury Immortal Gu as the foundation, I developed and created saving dead healing injuries, light injuries, heavy injuries, fatal injuries, sensory injuries, seven laborious injuries, and other killer moves.”

“Finally, one day, I created the killer move countless injury marks. From this killer move, I deduced the Immortal Gu recipe of injury mark Immortal Gu.”

“I refined it and replaced my own vital Gu. With this Immortal Gu, any attacks that cause damage to me will be converted into the respective injury marks.”

“The more injury marks I have, the more I can increase the power of mutual injuries killer move. In the battle earlier, Fang Yuan was forced to retreat by me because I used the killer move mutual injuries to cause him to be covered in injury marks.”

“Remember that injury mark Immortal Gu is the core of my human path inheritance, while mutual injuries is my main offensive method.”

Shen Cong Sheng’s heart shook as he listened, the true inheritance of human path created by Shen Shang was so profound that it shook him physically and mentally!

“Ancestor, this true inheritance that you started has great future prospects, perhaps it might be able to create an entirely new sub-path branching from human path.” Shen Cong Sheng praised heartily.

“Hahaha.” Shen Shang laughed proudly as he patted Shen Cong Sheng’s shoulder: “I’m afraid that I won’t be able to. The inheritance is left to you, if you are interested in the future, you can switch to human path. If you have no intention of doing so, just choose a suitable successor.”

Southern Border.

Virtue Paradise.

A female immortal dressed in a purple silk robe, ornate and mysterious, came down the mountain step by step.

Her skin was white as snow and her black hair hung down to her waist, her eyes were like the deep pool, with a sense of sadness shrouding her face. It

was Heavenly Court's leader, the person who had Star Constellation Chessboard, the number one wisdom path great expert in the current world — Fairy Zi Wei!

At the moment, however, Fairy Zi Wei was covered in a thin layer of sweat and looked haggard, but her eyes were shining and her spirit was high.

At the foot of the mountain, Lu Wei Yin had been waiting for a long time: “Lady Zi Wei, it seems you’ve reached your goal in this journey.”

Fairy Zi Wei smiled: “This climb has benefited me a lot. I have already obtained benevolence Gu, thank you for your generosity.”

Lu Wei Yin also smiled: “Lady Zi Wei, it is not to help you, this is for the sake of the world, to maintain the peace of the five regions.”

“But alas, in the current world, demonic immortals are rising. Not to mention Fang Yuan, recently in Western Desert, a blood path rank eight great expert has actually appeared, purposely finding trouble with super forces and repeatedly attacking various resource points. They are acting extremely arrogantly, and the methods are extraordinarily terrifying. The chaos is coming, I only hope that this Virtue Paradise will become an actual paradise safe from the chaos of the world.”

Fairy Zi Wei sighed: “I understand what you mean. In the future, there will be generous rewards for you after the changes in the five regions. Farewell.”

“Goodbye.” Lu Wei Yin moved aside and gave way to her departure.

# Chapter 1916 - Ultimate Mission

## 1916 Ultimate Mission

Dragon Whale Paradise.

At the Merit Obelisk, Fang Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng stood as they looked at the merit board together.

The super mission regarding the black fire was still around, but tomorrow was the final day of the three hundred days they could stay here.

Fang Yuan's merit points stood at the top of the board, he had a huge amount. After he found out about the difficulty of the black fire mission, he chose only large and mid-sized missions to earn his merit points.

Miao Ming Shen and others worked alongside him and gained an abundant amount of points as well.

After realizing the difficulty of the super mission, Shen Cong Sheng and others wisely learned from Fang Yuan, now their merit points had also accumulated to a considerable amount.

“Three hundred days have passed by, it feels like we just arrived here yesterday.” Shen Cong Sheng smiled bitterly.

This was a genuine land of treasures, by completing various missions, the Gu Immortals would be able to directly obtain Immortal Gu, Immortal Gu recipes, and various killer moves. Even a rank eight Gu Immortal like Shen Cong Sheng was attracted to this place and did not want to leave.

But there was no way, once the time limit was up, they would be kicked out of Dragon Whale Paradise.

“It’s a pity that this time, we did not explore all the secrets of Dragon Whale Paradise.” Fang Yuan sighed with pity.

There were many more strange things about this Dragon Whale Paradise.

The black fire was one of them.

Where did this black fire come from? How could it transform to so many different forms? Why could its path not be discerned? And why were human path methods so effective against it?

Apart from the black fire, where did the heavenly spine left behind by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable originate? What was the true intent of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable?

What agreement did Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable and Shen Shang make back then? Shen Shang cultivated human path in the underwater formation, yet he was somehow tainted by the troublesome black fire.

Also, apart from Shen Shang alone, Fang Yuan did not see any other Gu Immortals. Were there no Gu Immortals in Dragon Whale Paradise in the first place? And where did the Immortal Gu in the Merit Obelisk come from? If they were all naturally produced, the number was simply too large.

After a moment of silence, Shen Cong Sheng said: “We’ll have to leave these secrets for the future when we can explore them again. It’s good that we have all exchanged for that title already, so once the blue dragon whale appears in the future, we will be able to sense it and explore it again.”

Fang Yuan nodded his head, this was indeed a good discovery.

Just as he had deduced before, the reason why Miao Ming Shen was able to discover the exact location of the blue dragon whale was because of a title.

But it was unknown who had taken this title and quietly transferred it to him.

Of all the titles provided by the Merit Obelisk, there were very few types of titles that could be transferred.

There was also another discovery about titles.

After getting a certain title, the Gu Immortal could teleport to any location within a hundred thousand li radius when they leave Dragon Whale Paradise.

This was something that Fang Yuan had lied to Miao Ming Shen's group before, but it existed in reality.

Right at this time, the words on the Merit Obelisk transformed suddenly.

Be they small sized missions, mid-sized missions, or large sized missions, even super missions were gone, only one ultimate mission was left.

Ultimate mission — Leave with the blue dragon whale and successfully return.

“This is?” Shen Cong Sheng gasped.

Fang Yuan frowned: “This means that above super missions, there are ultimate missions? This description is so vague, I'm afraid it is much harder than getting rid of the black fire!”

At this time, there was a new transformation on the Merit Obelisk.

Shen Cong Sheng stared with wide eyes as he read it: “The mission does not have a time limit, after receiving it, one can stay in the paradise indefinitely. After completing the ultimate mission, one will obtain the qualifications to become the Merit Obelisk Lord and retain their merit points.”

Fang Yuan's eyes shined with bright light, he thought to himself: “So Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable made his arrangements already to choose the Merit Obelisk Lord. According to his arrangements, I will be able to become the owner of this rank eight Immortal Gu House. It is a pity, a real pity.”

Fang Yuan felt some regret.

He had already uncovered a correct method to obtain the Merit Obelisk, but his strength was limited. He could not even complete the super mission, let alone the ultimate mission.

The ultimate mission was obviously extremely difficult, even a rank eight Gu Immortal would have little hope.

This was easy to deduce.

The Gu Immortals that had come to Dragon Whale Paradise were far more than just Fang Yuan's group. When the previous groups of people came here, some might have chosen to accept this ultimate mission, but the Merit Obelisk was still in an unowned state.

This meant that no one had ever succeeded!

There was another reason why Fang Yuan did not intend to accept the mission.

It was written on the Merit Obelisk that the time limit for this mission was indefinite.

If it took too long and he waited until he completed the mission before leaving, only to find that Heavenly Court had already completely repaired fate Gu, then what was the point of all this?

"Sigh..." Shen Cong Sheng let out a breath of air, he also regained his logic, recognizing the risks involved, he was no longer dreaming about it.

Fang Yuan stretched out his arm and pointed at the mission on the Merit Obelisk, analyzing it: "Brother Shen, this ultimate mission has given us some extra information. After choosing this mission, the Gu Immortal's personal merit points will be preserved. This means that those who haven't accepted it will have all of their remaining merit points cleared as soon as they leave Dragon Whale Paradise."

Shen Cong Sheng nodded repeatedly, his heart clenched: “I’m afraid that’s it. When we first came here, the merit ranking list was empty.”

As such, the Gu Immortals would have to spend as much of their accumulated merit points as possible.

But exactly how they would spend it would require some consideration on the part of the Gu Immortals themselves.

The next day.

Somewhere in Eastern Sea, three white lights flashed, the three Immortals Fang Yuan, Shen Cong Sheng, and Shen Shang appeared.

All the Gu Immortals gave up on the ultimate mission and chose to leave.

However, Miao Ming Shen’s group did not leave with Fang Yuan, they still had reservations towards him.

Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua, on the other hand, left along with the rest of Shen clan’s Gu Immortals. After this, these two Eastern Sea lone immortals were considered to be completely on board and tied to Shen clan’s ship.

Fang Yuan turned around and looked back, only to see the sky was empty, the sea was calm, there was nothing behind him.

He did not want to give up on this, so he, along with Shen Cong Sheng and Shen Shang, kept scouting the surroundings, but found nothing after all.

“The three of us deliberately chose the location of the blue dragon whale, but where is the blue dragon whale now?”

“We can stop looking for it, this is the method of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. Even though the scene in front of us is very realistic, it might just be an illusion for all we know.”

“Come to speak of it, we have not seen the true appearance of the blue dragon whale until now.”



The three immortals sighed.

There were really quite many secrets involving the blue dragon whale.

The blue dragon whale was a legendary immemorial beast that was enlightened by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, it gained an immortal aperture and could cultivate, it should have intelligence rivaling ordinary people. But the entire time the Gu Immortals explored the paradise, they had never seen the blue dragon whale initiate contact with them.

The traces of the blue dragon whale were also very mysterious. When did it appear, how did it disappear, and where did it go in the process? Nobody knew.

The three Gu Immortals here were unable to find out the truth even after they had personally explored Dragon Whale Paradise.

Fang Yuan sighed internally, his original plan was to obtain both the blue dragon whale and the Merit Obelisk.

But the truth was, he had simply been dreaming.

This was a meticulous arrangement set up by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, it had some sort of mysterious purpose. It was like the Crazy Demon Cave in Northern Plains, which was created by Limitless Demon Venerable himself and was also a huge arrangement, Fang Yuan could only stop at the eighth level and could not enter the most important core, the ninth level.

“Wait, Crazy Demon Cave... crazy demon?” Fang Yuan suddenly had a thought.

Limitless Demon Venerable created Crazy Demon Cave that had demonic sounds that would cause living beings to go insane. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable also had a black fire in the Dragon Whale Paradise that could cause insanity.

Was there some sort of relationship?

“Thinking about it, Dragon Whale Paradise had many insane living beings. For example, the tiger king salamander that I killed...” Fang Yuan pondered.

These living beings were beyond saving, Fang Yuan could not find out the reason, he could only kill them.

Other than the absence of black fire, they had nearly the same problem as Shen Shang.

From this point, it showed how powerful Shen Shang was!

This person, even with black fire on him, had only gone insane for some time, he relied on his immense human path foundation and dao marks to suppress it and regain his clarity.

Even Fang Yuan was not confident in achieving this.

He knew that even though he had many dao marks, they were not of human path.

“Currently speaking, Shen Shang is likely the number one person in the five regions when it comes to human path! Even that Old Man Zheng Yuan in Heavenly Court cannot compare to him.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan inevitably considered the fact that the fate battle was not far away. It was likely that Shen Shang could cause some trouble to Heavenly Court in battle.

The three immortals could not detect the blue dragon whale and decided to bid each other farewell.

They all had significant gains from their expedition to the Dragon Whale Paradise. But the one who gained the most was undoubtedly Fang Yuan.

While alone, Fang Yuan transformed back into the appearance of Qi Sea Ancestor and returned to qi sea under concealment.

The large formation in the depths of qi sea was still in operation, and in the formation, he met Wu Shuai, who was guarding the place.

Wu Shuai had gone to Southern Border in order to trade dream realms with Chi clan. Chi Qu You saw the opportunity and raised the price, Wu Shuai thought of the big picture and did not want to accept Chi Qu You's price, he planned to settle the score after everything was over.

But to think that Wu Yong found out about the loss of the dream realms. He became enraged, he went to Chi Qu You for a discussion.

Chi Qu You naturally denied all accusations, he refused to admit his involvement.

But after this warning, Chi Qu You had to stop and temporarily end the dream realm transactions.

Wu Shuai had no choice but to return to Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan met with Wu Shuai and learned about the current situation of the world.

It was quite bad.

In Southern Border, Wu Yong's influence was growing. Because of the mysterious disappearance of the dream realms, Chi Qu You faced much suspicion. Wu Yong used this chance to consolidate his influence over the entire Southern Alliance.

In Western Desert, however, the clone Fang Di Chang, who Fang Yuan was placing much hopes on, was currently facing a tough predicament.

After he allied with several super forces to repel Heavenly Court, a blood path great expert appeared in Western Desert, he caused chaos everywhere. He seemed to hate super forces, Fang clan became one of his victims.

Other than this, an immemorial desolate beast started to cause havoc in Fang clan's ice-fire desert.

This immemorial desolate beast was very crafty, Fang clan failed many attempts to capture or kill it.

As for Profound Literature grotto-heaven, Li Xiao Bai was having smooth progress.

In Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, Zhan Bu Du was facing a huge problem, his life was at risk.

## **1917 I Am Your Father**

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

The sky could not be seen for the last few months, the entire grotto-heaven was covered in black poisonous smoke.

The poisonous smoke covered the entire sky and rumbled continuously, occasionally turned into dragon shapes that rampaged and caused destruction to the world.

Within Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, there were anguished cries, the future was bleak.

Star Collection City was the largest city in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it was also now the largest gathering spot of all of humanity here.

The walls of Star Collection City towered high, there were many towers within the city.

Zhan Bu Du was standing on the highest tower, looking up at the rumbling poisonous smoke in the sky.

He looked exhausted and was bruised all over.

Behind him, a female Beast Warrior was healing his wounds.

“My main body has adjusted the speed of time flow in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven to become too fast, it caused frequent tribulations to descend. In this grotto-heaven, any calamity or tribulation will turn into a beast calamity. However, before the former beast calamity is annihilated, the new one will arrive. These beast calamities are spread all over the place, taking the attention of all the Gu Immortals in the grotto-heaven. After gradually accumulating, they all merged together and became the monsters they are today! Sigh... this time, my main body has made a mistake.”

Zhan Bu Du's brows were locked in worry.

The Combat Beast Warrior who was treating his wounds advised: “Little Du, you'd better rest. You just fought a fierce battle for three consecutive days and nights without sleep. If this continues, no matter how tough your body is, you won't be able to survive.”

Zhan Bu Du sighed deeply: “I am now the strongest Combat Beast Warrior here, I must fight to the best of my ability. If I am on the battlefield, fewer people will be sacrificed!”

“Little Du, you've done well enough. If you hadn't sensed something was wrong and informed everyone beforehand, we would not have had the major cities gather their civilians in advance. In that case, there would definitely be deaths and injuries. You are truly worthy of being our savior, you saved the lives of hundreds of thousands of people.” The Combat Beast Warrior said.

Even though she was a senior Combat Beast Warrior, she felt deep appreciation and admiration towards this junior Zhan Bu Du.

Zhan Bu Du had managed to gain the recognition of everyone in this grotto-heaven during this period. Not only was it because of his high battle strength, but more crucially, his love for civilians, his selfless sacrifice, and his repeated battles on the front lines.

Right now, Zhan Bu Du was a great hero, he was a role model and the idol of all the commoners.

But in reality, Zhan Bu Du was only trying his best to preserve his possessions. Whether it was him or Fang Yuan, they had already regarded Beast Calamity grotto-heaven as their own property.

Although Beast Calamity grotto-heaven had preserved most of its vitality because of Zhan Bu Du's timely warning, the things that had been lost were still enough for Zhan Bu Du to feel distress.

“Here we go again!” Zhan Bu Du looked tense suddenly.

The Beast Warriors around him also tensed up and looked up at the sky at once.

Only to see that in the sky, poisonous smoke fiercely swirled and roared like a dragon, a giant dragon made of poisonous smoke descended.

The dragon's body was so huge that it stretched for eight hundred feet, and the dragon head was like a small mountain, ruthlessly crashing into Star Collection City on the ground.

Once it hit, half of Star Collection City would be instantly destroyed, and after the poisonous smoke spread, more than a hundred thousand people would die.

Of course, Zhan Bu Du would not allow this to happen.

With an eagle's cry, an arrow-tailed eagle flew out of his immortal aperture.

Combat Beast Warrior transformation!

In an instant, he transformed into an eagle-headed person, fiercely flapped his wings as he flew high into the air.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Zhan Bu Du attacked madly, sending out countless wind blades that were extremely sharp and fierce like a storm.

Hundreds and thousands of giant wind blades hit the dragon head, the poisonous smoke dragon head lasted for a moment before collapsing.

“It’s Little Du.”

“He helped us again.”

“Worthy of Little Du.”

The Combat Beast Warriors reacted one after another, expressing praises.

The civilians located in various parts of Star Collection City, upon seeing this scene, shouted “World Savior Zhan Bu Du”, and soon, such voices quickly spread! All over the city, commotions were rising, filling the entire Star Collection City with frenzied cheers.

Zhan Bu Du did not relax but looked up into the sky vigilantly, shouting: “Attention everyone, another wave of attack is coming.”

Poisonous smoke surged and more than a dozen poisonous smoke dragons suddenly appeared, rushing towards Star Collection City.

The people’s cheering came to an abrupt halt.

The Combat Beast Warriors were instantly pale as paper.

In the past, the attack was at most three to five poisonous smoke dragons, but now the number had multiplied fivefold, and it was simply not something they could resist.

“Is this going to be the end of us?”

“Damn it!”

“I don’t want to die!”

Just at the critical moment, the Star Snail Hall suddenly surged with a blinding starlight, and then a giant suddenly appeared and established itself on the battlefield.

The people were overjoyed, Zhan Bu Du also pretended to be extremely surprised, but in his mind he already knew: “The old fellow is finally willing to take action.”

This was the current generation Combat Beast King, using the corpse of the Star Sea Snail to transform, he had the highest battle strength in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven and was also the final trump card.

When Fang Yuan had transformed into a bull-headed demon god, he had also fought with the Combat Beast King.

The giant was clad in heavy armor and kept punching, fist shadows shot out violently, like meteors rushing into the sky.

The meteors hit the poisonous smoke dragon heads with extraordinary effect. Several poisonous smoke dragon heads were destroyed on the spot, the momentum of the poisonous smoke dragon heads was ruthlessly stalled, which gave some crucial time for the other Combat Beast Warriors.

Next, the giant’s feet stomped on the ground and its hands supported the sky, a hemispherical curtain of starlight rose up, enveloping the city.

The poisonous smoke dragons were temporarily blocked out by the giant curtain of starlight, one by one the Combat Beast Warriors were enveloped in a layer of blue light, floating out and engaging the poisonous smoke dragons fiercely in battle.

The Combat Beast Warriors were merely flesh and blood, they were quickly at a disadvantage.

The poisonous smoke giant dragons kept on coming, no matter how many of them were blown up, there would be new poisonous smoke giant dragons produced.

“If this continues, I’m afraid that today will be the day Star Collection City gets destroyed.” Realizing this, the Combat Beast King made up his mind at last.



He called out loudly, his voice echoing through the battlefield: “The situation is urgent, Little Du, go and take the last inheritance. You are our final hope to save everyone today!”

“This old fellow is finally willing to give me the last part of his inheritance!” Zhan Bu Du sneered in his mind.

Currently, he had already obtained the Beast Calamity true inheritance in various important places, and only the last part was missing.

He had been in Star Collection City for many days, but the current generation Combat Beast King had not mentioned anything about it. Zhan Bu Du also had to temporarily pretend that he did not know the last part of the inheritance was in Star Collection City.

“Little Du, go, I’ll be guarding this place.”

“Quickly go, Little Du, it’s up to you.”

“We’ll buy you time, even if it is the last moment of our lives, we’ll do our duty!”

The Combat Beast Warriors urged.

Undeniably, the Gu Immortals in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven were really different from the outside world of the five regions, they had the spirit to sacrifice and contribute their lives.

Zhan Bu Du flew to the underground of the Star Snail Hall and arrived at the last altar.

The altar shined brightly, the qilin heavenly spirit appeared all of a sudden.

“Oh young man, you are qualified to inherit the entire Beast Calamity true inheritance. It’s time to tell you the truth about the world.” The voice of the qilin heavenly spirit was like that of a young child, crisp and cute.

After receiving the memories, Zhan Bu Du showed a look of shock and disbelief: “So our world is so small, the true way to use Gu worms is not by

transformation! This is too unexpected.”

“Heavenly spirit, what do I do now?”

The qilin heavenly spirit stood in front of Zhan Bu Du as it lowered its head: “Master, I don’t have any method now. Ever since the change in the tributary of the River of Time, the tribulations in the grotto-heaven had been appearing non stop. Among these tribulations, there is one myriad tribulation among them! I’m afraid I cannot escape this now, I will open the door now, master, you need to escape quickly.”

The moment Zhan Bu Du inherited the complete Beast Calamity true inheritance, the qilin heavenly spirit acknowledged him as master.

Zhan Bu Du sighed deeply and was about to open his mouth, but suddenly his expression changed drastically, revealing genuine surprise: “No need, my main body has already arrived!”

At the critical moment, Fang Yuan’s main body finally arrived.

Looking at the poisonous smoke everywhere, Fang Yuan also felt a headache.

Zhan Bu Du ordered the qilin heavenly spirit to open the grotto-heaven’s entrance, Fang Yuan came in here with no obstruction.

Because he was no longer an intruder, and because the qilin heavenly spirit acknowledged a master, myriad beings assimilation transformation was no longer taking effect on Fang Yuan’s main body, he was able to come in personally.

Thus, the Combat Beast Warriors in the battlefield saw an unimaginable scene.

A man was floating in mid-air, his aura as strong as the sea. The poisonous smoke dragons seemed to be stimulated by the mysterious visitor, most of them turned towards Fang Yuan to kill him.

“Who is he?”

“Get away!”

“Oh no, it’s too late.”

The Combat Beast Warriors roared in rage and despair as they watched Fang Yuan being heavily surrounded by the poisonous smoke dragons.

At the moment the poisonous smoke dragons descended on him, Fang Yuan made his move.

Rumble!

In an instant, qi currents surged as wind and waves soared. The sky and earth changed color, all the poisonous smoke receded.

Fang Yuan stood proudly in the sky, the poisonous smoke dragons around him dissipated, even the thick layer of poisonous smoke above his head was torn open to expose a huge hole. Bright light shined down through the round hole, causing Fang Yuan to be bathed in sunlight.

The Combat Beast Warriors opened their mouths one by one, extremely shocked.

As soon as Fang Yuan made his move, he displayed such intense might in battle. Furthermore, he did not use any transformations at all, he had used such great battle strength just by himself.

This scene caused the long-standing cultivation thought process of the Combat Beast Warriors to crumble.

For a moment, the crowd was at a loss.

At this time, Fang Yuan slowly spoke, his voice clearly entering the ears of everyone present: “Little Du, where are you? Father is here.”

The group of immortals were surprised again!

Zhan Bu Du flew out, looking surprised and teary-eyed: “Father, you’ve finally come out of seclusion. Please save the world.”

At the next moment, the entire Star Collection City went into an uproar.

It turned out that this mysterious man was actually Zhan Bu Du's father, no wonder he was so powerful!

This was a secluded expert.

They were saved, they were definitely saved!

Fang Yuan sighed and spoke in a tone of bitter loss: "I never expected such a disaster to occur this time when I stayed in closed cultivation. It's a pity that I was isolated from the outside world during my seclusion, if I had known earlier, I would never have let these poisonous smoke dragons wreak havoc for so long."

After saying that, Fang Yuan struck again and quickly dispersed the entire area of poisonous smoke.

However, there was too much poisonous smoke, spreading throughout the grotto-heaven, soon the poisonous smoke was replenished through the smoke at other areas.

"Father, the situation is now under control, let's go down and take a rest first." Zhan Bu Du said.

"Okay." Fang Yuan nodded.

Thus, the two of them slowly flew into Star Collection City amidst countless gazes of adoration, longing, awe, and curiosity

# Chapter 1917 - I Am Your Father

## 1917 I Am Your Father

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

The sky could not be seen for the last few months, the entire grotto-heaven was covered in black poisonous smoke.

The poisonous smoke covered the entire sky and rumbled continuously, occasionally turned into dragon shapes that rampaged and caused destruction to the world.

Within Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, there were anguished cries, the future was bleak.

Star Collection City was the largest city in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it was also now the largest gathering spot of all of humanity here.

The walls of Star Collection City towered high, there were many towers within the city.

Zhan Bu Du was standing on the highest tower, looking up at the rumbling poisonous smoke in the sky.

He looked exhausted and was bruised all over.

Behind him, a female Beast Warrior was healing his wounds.

“My main body has adjusted the speed of time flow in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven to become too fast, it caused frequent tribulations to descend.

In this grotto-heaven, any calamity or tribulation will turn into a beast calamity. However, before the former beast calamity is annihilated, the new one will arrive. These beast calamities are spread all over the place, taking the attention of all the Gu Immortals in the grotto-heaven. After gradually accumulating, they all merged together and became the monsters they are today! Sigh... this time, my main body has made a mistake.”

Zhan Bu Du’s brows were locked in worry.

The Combat Beast Warrior who was treating his wounds advised: “Little Du, you’d better rest. You just fought a fierce battle for three consecutive days and nights without sleep. If this continues, no matter how tough your body is, you won’t be able to survive.”

Zhan Bu Du sighed deeply: “I am now the strongest Combat Beast Warrior here, I must fight to the best of my ability. If I am on the battlefield, fewer people will be sacrificed!”

“Little Du, you’ve done well enough. If you hadn’t sensed something was wrong and informed everyone beforehand, we would not have had the major cities gather their civilians in advance. In that case, there would definitely be deaths and injuries. You are truly worthy of being our savior, you saved the lives of hundreds of thousands of people.” The Combat Beast Warrior said.

Even though she was a senior Combat Beast Warrior, she felt deep appreciation and admiration towards this junior Zhan Bu Du.

Zhan Bu Du had managed to gain the recognition of everyone in this grotto-heaven during this period. Not only was it because of his high battle strength, but more crucially, his love for civilians, his selfless sacrifice, and his repeated battles on the front lines.

Right now, Zhan Bu Du was a great hero, he was a role model and the idol of all the commoners.

But in reality, Zhan Bu Du was only trying his best to preserve his possessions. Whether it was him or Fang Yuan, they had already regarded

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven as their own property.

Although Beast Calamity grotto-heaven had preserved most of its vitality because of Zhan Bu Du's timely warning, the things that had been lost were still enough for Zhan Bu Du to feel distress.

"Here we go again!" Zhan Bu Du looked tense suddenly.

The Beast Warriors around him also tensed up and looked up at the sky at once.

Only to see that in the sky, poisonous smoke fiercely swirled and roared like a dragon, a giant dragon made of poisonous smoke descended.

The dragon's body was so huge that it stretched for eight hundred feet, and the dragon head was like a small mountain, ruthlessly crashing into Star Collection City on the ground.

Once it hit, half of Star Collection City would be instantly destroyed, and after the poisonous smoke spread, more than a hundred thousand people would die.

Of course, Zhan Bu Du would not allow this to happen.

With an eagle's cry, an arrow-tailed eagle flew out of his immortal aperture.

Combat Beast Warrior transformation!

In an instant, he transformed into an eagle-headed person, fiercely flapped his wings as he flew high into the air.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Zhan Bu Du attacked madly, sending out countless wind blades that were extremely sharp and fierce like a storm.

Hundreds and thousands of giant wind blades hit the dragon head, the poisonous smoke dragon head lasted for a moment before collapsing.

“It’s Little Du.”

“He helped us again.”

“Worthy of Little Du.”

The Combat Beast Warriors reacted one after another, expressing praises.

The civilians located in various parts of Star Collection City, upon seeing this scene, shouted “World Savior Zhan Bu Du”, and soon, such voices quickly spread! All over the city, commotions were rising, filling the entire Star Collection City with frenzied cheers.

Zhan Bu Du did not relax but looked up into the sky vigilantly, shouting: “Attention everyone, another wave of attack is coming.”

Poisonous smoke surged and more than a dozen poisonous smoke dragons suddenly appeared, rushing towards Star Collection City.

The people’s cheering came to an abrupt halt.

The Combat Beast Warriors were instantly pale as paper.

In the past, the attack was at most three to five poisonous smoke dragons, but now the number had multiplied fivefold, and it was simply not something they could resist.

“Is this going to be the end of us?”

“Damn it!”

“I don’t want to die!”

Just at the critical moment, the Star Snail Hall suddenly surged with a blinding starlight, and then a giant suddenly appeared and established itself on the battlefield.

The people were overjoyed, Zhan Bu Du also pretended to be extremely surprised, but in his mind he already knew: “The old fellow is finally



willing to take action.”

This was the current generation Combat Beast King, using the corpse of the Star Sea Snail to transform, he had the highest battle strength in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven and was also the final trump card.

When Fang Yuan had transformed into a bull-headed demon god, he had also fought with the Combat Beast King.

The giant was clad in heavy armor and kept punching, fist shadows shot out violently, like meteors rushing into the sky.

The meteors hit the poisonous smoke dragon heads with extraordinary effect. Several poisonous smoke dragon heads were destroyed on the spot, the momentum of the poisonous smoke dragon heads was ruthlessly stalled, which gave some crucial time for the other Combat Beast Warriors.

Next, the giant’s feet stomped on the ground and its hands supported the sky, a hemispherical curtain of starlight rose up, enveloping the city.

The poisonous smoke dragons were temporarily blocked out by the giant curtain of starlight, one by one the Combat Beast Warriors were enveloped in a layer of blue light, floating out and engaging the poisonous smoke dragons fiercely in battle.

The Combat Beast Warriors were merely flesh and blood, they were quickly at a disadvantage.

The poisonous smoke giant dragons kept on coming, no matter how many of them were blown up, there would be new poisonous smoke giant dragons produced.

“If this continues, I’m afraid that today will be the day Star Collection City gets destroyed.” Realizing this, the Combat Beast King made up his mind at last.

He called out loudly, his voice echoing through the battlefield: “The situation is urgent, Little Du, go and take the last inheritance. You are our

final hope to save everyone today!”

“This old fellow is finally willing to give me the last part of his inheritance!” Zhan Bu Du sneered in his mind.

Currently, he had already obtained the Beast Calamity true inheritance in various important places, and only the last part was missing.

He had been in Star Collection City for many days, but the current generation Combat Beast King had not mentioned anything about it. Zhan Bu Du also had to temporarily pretend that he did not know the last part of the inheritance was in Star Collection City.

“Little Du, go, I’ll be guarding this place.”

“Quickly go, Little Du, it’s up to you.”

“We’ll buy you time, even if it is the last moment of our lives, we’ll do our duty!”

The Combat Beast Warriors urged.

Undeniably, the Gu Immortals in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven were really different from the outside world of the five regions, they had the spirit to sacrifice and contribute their lives.

Zhan Bu Du flew to the underground of the Star Snail Hall and arrived at the last altar.

The altar shined brightly, the qilin heavenly spirit appeared all of a sudden.

“Oh young man, you are qualified to inherit the entire Beast Calamity true inheritance. It’s time to tell you the truth about the world.” The voice of the qilin heavenly spirit was like that of a young child, crisp and cute.

After receiving the memories, Zhan Bu Du showed a look of shock and disbelief: “So our world is so small, the true way to use Gu worms is not by transformation! This is too unexpected.”

“Heavenly spirit, what do I do now?”

The qilin heavenly spirit stood in front of Zhan Bu Du as it lowered its head: “Master, I don’t have any method now. Ever since the change in the tributary of the River of Time, the tribulations in the grotto-heaven had been appearing non stop. Among these tribulations, there is one myriad tribulation among them! I’m afraid I cannot escape this now, I will open the door now, master, you need to escape quickly.”

The moment Zhan Bu Du inherited the complete Beast Calamity true inheritance, the qilin heavenly spirit acknowledged him as master.

Zhan Bu Du sighed deeply and was about to open his mouth, but suddenly his expression changed drastically, revealing genuine surprise: “No need, my main body has already arrived!”

At the critical moment, Fang Yuan’s main body finally arrived.

Looking at the poisonous smoke everywhere, Fang Yuan also felt a headache.

Zhan Bu Du ordered the qilin heavenly spirit to open the grotto-heaven’s entrance, Fang Yuan came in here with no obstruction.

Because he was no longer an intruder, and because the qilin heavenly spirit acknowledged a master, myriad beings assimilation transformation was no longer taking effect on Fang Yuan’s main body, he was able to come in personally.

Thus, the Combat Beast Warriors in the battlefield saw an unimaginable scene.

A man was floating in mid-air, his aura as strong as the sea. The poisonous smoke dragons seemed to be stimulated by the mysterious visitor, most of them turned towards Fang Yuan to kill him.

“Who is he?”

“Get away!”

“Oh no, it’s too late.”

The Combat Beast Warriors roared in rage and despair as they watched Fang Yuan being heavily surrounded by the poisonous smoke dragons.

At the moment the poisonous smoke dragons descended on him, Fang Yuan made his move.

Rumble!

In an instant, qi currents surged as wind and waves soared. The sky and earth changed color, all the poisonous smoke receded.

Fang Yuan stood proudly in the sky, the poisonous smoke dragons around him dissipated, even the thick layer of poisonous smoke above his head was torn open to expose a huge hole. Bright light shined down through the round hole, causing Fang Yuan to be bathed in sunlight.

The Combat Beast Warriors opened their mouths one by one, extremely shocked.

As soon as Fang Yuan made his move, he displayed such intense might in battle. Furthermore, he did not use any transformations at all, he had used such great battle strength just by himself.

This scene caused the long-standing cultivation thought process of the Combat Beast Warriors to crumble.

For a moment, the crowd was at a loss.

At this time, Fang Yuan slowly spoke, his voice clearly entering the ears of everyone present: “Little Du, where are you? Father is here.”

The group of immortals were surprised again!

Zhan Bu Du flew out, looking surprised and teary-eyed: “Father, you’ve finally come out of seclusion. Please save the world.”

At the next moment, the entire Star Collection City went into an uproar.

It turned out that this mysterious man was actually Zhan Bu Du's father, no wonder he was so powerful!

This was a secluded expert.

They were saved, they were definitely saved!

Fang Yuan sighed and spoke in a tone of bitter loss: "I never expected such a disaster to occur this time when I stayed in closed cultivation. It's a pity that I was isolated from the outside world during my seclusion, if I had known earlier, I would never have let these poisonous smoke dragons wreak havoc for so long."

After saying that, Fang Yuan struck again and quickly dispersed the entire area of poisonous smoke.

However, there was too much poisonous smoke, spreading throughout the grotto-heaven, soon the poisonous smoke was replenished through the smoke at other areas.

"Father, the situation is now under control, let's go down and take a rest first." Zhan Bu Du said.

"Okay." Fang Yuan nodded.

Thus, the two of them slowly flew into Star Collection City amidst countless gazes of adoration, longing, awe, and curiosity.

# Chapter 1918 - Crucial Person

## 1918 Crucial Person

Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation Chessboard was half a foot off the ground, slowly rotating between Fairy Zi Wei and Feng Jin Huang, blossoming with brilliant starlight.

The specks of starlight were so dazzling that they resembled blue fireflies, lightly jumping, sometimes swirling around the two, sometimes burrowing into their brains and colliding.

The two sat opposite each other, both with their eyes closed and brows knitted tightly, pondering over some difficult question.

The starlight slowly disappeared, Star Constellation Chessboard flew into Fairy Zi Wei's hands.

Fairy Zi Wei slowly opened her eyes, but Feng Jin Huang did not, she fell softly to the ground as she had passed out on the spot.

“This child...” Fairy Zi Wei was not nervous, she merely sighed.

She knew Feng Jin Huang's condition like the back of her hand.

In the end, Feng Jin Huang was only a Gu Master, unlike Fairy Zi Wei who was a rank eight great expert. The original deduction speed arranged by Fairy Zi Wei was very suitable for Feng Jin Huang.

However, Feng Jin Huang insisted that she did not want to slow down the progress and waste Fairy Zi Wei's time because of her own reasons. After all, Fairy Zi Wei was a key figure in Heavenly Court.

When Feng Jin Huang slowly woke up, she found that she had already left the deduction hall and had returned to Central Great Hall.

"Well done, Huang Er!" Duke Long looked at Feng Jin Huang and was extremely pleased: "You have actually improved the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, eliminating the flaw of this physique entirely. You are indeed worthy of being the fated Great Dream Immortal Venerable."

Feng Jin Huang was a little embarrassed from the praise: "Master, to be honest, I was only able to do so by coincidence. Do you remember the killer move shatter dream I created previously? This modification was done based on its results. The entire process was thanks to Lady Zi Wei's deductions, I was only playing a minor supplementary role in modifying the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique."

Fairy Zi Wei smiled: "Little Huang Er, you're too modest. It is precisely because you provided the correct direction that we were able to make our deductions. If not for that, I'm afraid that even if I had made many calculations, I would have gained nothing."

Duke Long spoke with great solemnity: "Huang Er, this perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique is extremely significant to you, it is the key to your future achievements. You must grasp it well and remember that you must undergo immortal ascension using the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique in the future."

Feng Jin Huang had never seen such solemnity from Duke Long before, she nodded her head: "Yes master, I will definitely keep that in mind."

Duke Long nodded: "You can go, I still have important matters to discuss with Fairy Zi Wei."

"This disciple takes her leave." Feng Jin Huang immediately left obediently.

“This time, Huang Er was able to obtain the perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, you deserve credit for that!” Duke Long said to Fairy Zi Wei.

It was indeed so.

Not only did Fairy Zi Wei play a major role in the deduction, but the original Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique was also obtained because she looked through the memories of Spectral Soul.

Without this foundation, no matter how much inspiration or direction Feng Jin Huang had, she would not be able to make any progress.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled: “This is my duty. If you hadn’t captured Spectral Soul alive, I wouldn’t have been able to soul search him. Speaking of which, the one Huang Er has to thank is you, her master.”

Duke Long shook his head slightly: “This is shameful, as a master, I actually have very little to teach. I don’t know anything about dream path, but fortunately, Huang Er possesses an extraordinary talent in dream path. It is also an honor for me to be able to do something for the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable. How has the practice of the killer move benevolent equality gone recently?”

Fairy Zi Wei’s face turned solemn: “There is no problem with benevolence Gu, as for the killer move, I have successfully activated it several times.”

“Did you find anything strange?” Duke Long pursued.

Fairy Zi Wei denied: “Not at all.”

Duke Long intoned: “This means that benevolent equality is effective. But why haven’t we seen any results?”

“Yes.” Fairy Zi Wei’s eyebrows were knitted: “Using benevolent equality to deal with Spring Autumn Cicada is a plan we have had all along. Looking at Fang Yuan’s recent actions, all of them have been well planned and prepared, such as the battle in the River of Time, or the Dragon Palace fight,



he had a good head start. He must have been reborn already, but why does no one on our side have memories of the previous life?"

The effect of benevolent equality was just as the name implied. Once Fairy Zi Wei used the killer move, the people that she looked at during the process would experience equivalent changes to their conditions.

For example, after Fairy Zi Wei used benevolent equality, she saw Fang Yuan's rebirth. At the same time, she looked towards Duke Long.

Then if Fang Yuan self-detonated using the killer move spring autumn success, his memories would go back to his past self. Duke Long would receive the same treatment, his memories would also go back to his former self.

"We don't know exactly what happened in Fang Yuan's last life. Previously, it was speculated that we couldn't borrow benevolence Gu, causing benevolent equality to be unusable. But now it seems we indeed gained this method."

"So was this result the effect of Fang Yuan's rebirth, and we actually did not gain benevolent equality in our previous life, or was it because something happened to me in the previous life, causing me to not use benevolent equality on him?"

Fairy Zi Wei was in a predicament.

A while after being awakened and understanding the current situation, Duke Long proposed to use benevolent equality to deal with Spring Autumn Cicada.

Spring Autumn Cicada was refined by his disciple, Red Lotus Demon Venerable, Demon Venerable knew the ways to deal with this cicada.

The time of Fang Yuan's rebirth was easily calculable by Fairy Zi Wei, it was at the time when Heavenly Court attacked Lang Ya blessed land.

The Fang Yuan before this and the Fang Yuan after this time had a different style of action and a completely different success rate in his plans.

Before Heavenly Court attacked Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan failed to regain the upper extreme heavenly eagle and was trapped by Lu Wei Yin.

After that, Fang Yuan had countless adequate preparations to deal with Heavenly Court's attack. Heavenly Court's side was repeatedly restrained, their advantages could not be utilized while their disadvantages were infinitely magnified, yet Fang Yuan was just the opposite.

Duke Long pondered: "Actually, there is another possibility. In the previous life, you successfully used benevolent equality, but you saw no one else but Fang Yuan. Or perhaps this person is not a Gu Immortal who is loyal to Heavenly Court."

There was a slight flicker of light in the eyes of Fairy Zi Wei: "If that's the case, then who could this crucial person be?"

Longevity Heaven.

Bzzz bzzz bzzz....

Orange-yellow light flickered endlessly, enveloping the sky of Longevity Heaven.

Next, an aura started from an extremely weak state and grew rapidly, soon filling the world and shaking people's hearts.

Such a change had already attracted the attention of Five Elements Grandmaster, Bull Demon, and Flower Lady.

Five Elements Grandmaster was a lone cultivator of Northern Plains, but after getting trapped by Longevity Heaven, he felt despair after struggling and decided to join Longevity Heaven, he was not stationed in Longevity Heaven permanently.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady were a duo that took the role of North Desolation Immortal together.

“What happened?” Five Elements Grandmaster was very uncertain.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady looked at each other, seeing the joy on each other’s faces, the latter giggled: “West Desolation Immortal Bing Sai Chuan has awakened!”

“Bing Sai Chuan?” Five Elements Grandmaster’s brows rose, he felt that the name was familiar.

At this moment, there was a loud roar, ripples of light flickered in the sky, rainbows extended like rivers as they pierced through the horizons.

A figure walked down from the river, he had a tall body and soft facial features, but his eyes were extremely sharp and icy, emitting a cold gaze. From his right ear to the left corner of his lips, there was an ugly scar, it was flickering with white light, while emitting the coldness of a thousand year profound ice.

Five Elements Grandmaster was deeply shocked: “I remember now, this is the Bing Sai Chuan who was born in Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s generation, he was a rank eight legend, a time path great expert, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had tried three times before subduing him. He did not die, he is actually the West Desolation Immortal of Longevity Heaven?!”

Longevity Heaven was a bit different from Heavenly Court, it had Four Desolation Immortals and Eight Extremities, a total of twelve positions. Among which, the Four Desolation Immortals were only meant for rank eight Gu Immortals, while the Eight Extremities needed at least rank seven cultivation level, and they had to be elites among rank sevens.

“Greetings, Senior West Desolation.” Bull Demon and Flower Lady quickly went to greet him while Five Elements Grandmaster followed after with a reverent expression.

West Desolation Immortal Bing Sai Chuan’s seniority was simply too high.

Bing Sai Chuan went up to the three, he nodded after looking around: “I am awake but I do not have much lifespan, time is limited. Give me the

information of the current world, I need to know about it.”

Longevity Heaven had very comprehensive information.

They had detailed information of the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the reappearance of Dragon Palace in Eastern Sea, and Heavenly Court’s Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

“Fang Yuan... he actually extorted Southern Border’s righteous path using rank seven cultivation level, while causing huge problems for Heavenly Court time and again in the River of Time. He is truly a world-shaking person!”

“Qi Sea Ancestor... able to fight equally with Duke Long? This is very rare, Eastern Sea has a lot of hidden depths.”

“There’s also Fang Di Chang, he actually refined Divine Bean Palace. Haha, this world really has no lack of experts!”

After gaining intel, Bing Sai Chuan laughed loudly with a heroic aura.

After his laughter, Bing Sai Chuan’s eyes shined with bright light: “Since Fang Yuan is the person who destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he is the crucial person who Lord Giant Sun Immortal Venerable mentioned.”

Bull Demon, Flower Lady, and Five Elements Grandmaster were stunned.

Bing Sai Chuan’s words involved the deep secrets of history.

Did Giant Sun Immortal Venerable predict that Fang Yuan would destroy Eighty-Eight True Yang Building? If he could predict that, why would he let Fang Yuan succeed?

Bing Sai Chuan did not answer them, he gave his orders: “We cannot let fate Gu be repaired completely, we need to stop them during this Refinement Path Convention. We have to contact Fang Yuan now and make an alliance!”

“What?” The three immortals were shocked.

Bing Sai Chuan frowned: “Can any of you contact Fang Yuan?”

The three immortals shook their heads in a daze.

Bing Sai Chuan’s brows furrowed even tighter: “Then what are you waiting for? Do I have to search for the way to contact Fang Yuan myself?”

In the last life, Lang Ya Sect had joined Longevity Heaven, so they easily obtained a way to contact Fang Yuan from Lang Ya land spirit.

But now, Fang Yuan absorbed the entire four races variant human alliance including Lang Ya blessed land, Longevity Heaven was not involved.

Bing Sai Chuan wanted to contact Fang Yuan but he was stuck at the first step.

# **Chapter 1919 - Immortal Gu Responsive Luck**

## **1919 Immortal Gu Responsive Luck**

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Northern Plains.

“Are you all prepared?” Xue Er stood in the snow crystal formation as she observed the tens of frost qi lumps.

“We are prepared, supreme elder.” A female snowman rank five Gu Master knelt on the ground, speaking reverently.

“Then go, remember to attend to them enthusiastically. Of course, if you suffer any misgivings, do not take it wordlessly.” Xue Er thought about it and said.

“Yes.” The female snowman Gu Master left.

Xue Er sighed a little.

Ever since she had been placed here by Fang Yuan, she had been dedicated to the development of the snowman tribe. With the aid of Fang Yuan’s snow crystal formation, Xue Er worked hard and the size of the snowman tribe quadrupled under her command, turning into a huge variant human tribe.

“My husband has finally brought in the human race... If I had the time, I’d love to go see for myself. Unfortunately, I can’t get away here.” Xue Er looked at the frost qi, she felt downcast.

She manipulated the formation, carefully maintaining it. Ever since Fang Yuan annexed Qi Sea grotto-heaven, his qi path dao marks had risen greatly, causing a tremendous impact to the sovereign immortal aperture, the effects had yet to stop, still gradually transforming every aspect of the sovereign immortal aperture.

For example, the snowman tribe with Xue Er in charge had been experiencing a surge in frost qi, every few months, Xue Er had to come here personally to manipulate the formation and maintain it.

If the frost qi gathers to a certain extent, beyond the limit, this frost qi would turn into a frost tide.

A frost tide would be a calamity for the physically weak snowmen.

As for the surroundings, it would be heavily damaged too. In fact, when the frost tide spreads out, it would be a problem for the whole of Mini Northern Plains.

Because of the regional walls, the other four mini regions would not be affected by the frost tide.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan sent a letter to inform Xue Er that a city would be placed near the snowman tribe’s location. By then, he would need the snowman tribe to gather their people and send gifts while interacting with the newcomers.

Xue Er naturally followed his instructions, but all along, her variant human group had been suppressed by humans all along, asking her to interact with the humans now made her feel some lingering fear from her past.

If possible, Xue Er would like the whole of Mini Northern Plains to be ruled by snowmen.

But that was just an impossible dream.

Fang Yuan was a human after all, when his immortal aperture gets developed to an extent, he would bring in humans to live. That was the sign that an immortal aperture was prospering and growing.

The snowman tribe's group had just moved out when Mini Western Desert's inkman group arrived at its destination.

As the Inkman City Lord, Mo Tan Sang flew high in the sky, quietly awaiting.

"It's coming." Suddenly, his eyes shined with bright light.

In the sky, a dazzling rainbow light flashed brightly.

Around this colored profound light, the earth pushed out in all directions. The colored profound light grew larger and larger, gradually revealing the vague illusory phantom of a city.

This phantom became more and more real, eventually the brilliant light dissipated, adding thousands of miles of land to the original location.

A city was located at the center of the newly added land, it was the Sacred Eagle City of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

The inkman Gu Master group was already kneeling on the ground, praising and cheering at such a mystical sight, only when Mo Tan Sang gave the orders did they stand up.

The gates of Sacred Eagle City opened, the city folks inside had already been informed and quickly gathered into a welcoming party.

The two parties met at the city gates, as contact officially began.

The people of Sacred Eagle City curiously sized up the dark-skinned, white-haired inkmen, the inkmen gradually let go of their worries.



They had also been living under the heavy pressure of the human race for a long time, but they did not expect this new group of people to be so easygoing. The conversations stemmed from a place of equality, which made the inkmen happy from the bottom of their hearts.

“Is this Lord Mo Tang Sang?” The Eagle Warrior who was in charge of Sacred Eagle City flew towards Mo Tan Sang: “From now on, we will be in your care.”

“Likewise, likewise.” Mo Tan Sang smiled: “You don’t have to be too polite, we’re all allies here.”

Mini Blue Heaven.

The cloud soil gathered into a small hanging continent.

After the starlight flashed, a majestic city was suddenly added to this originally empty continent.

This city was scarred and devastated, It was Star Collection City, which had resisted the poisonous smoke grand tribulation earlier.

In the center of Star Collection City, there was already a brand new Star Snail Hall, which was a mortal Gu House that Fang Yuan had purposely built.

As for the Star Sea Snail that originally served as the hall, it had been put into the treasury by Fang Yuan. This was an immemorial desolate beast, and the shell of the snail was a rank eight immortal material. If it was handed over to the old Combat Beast King, he would not know how to process it, he would only let the dao marks on the immortal material dissipate naturally. That would be too wasteful.

“Is this your father’s world? It is so huge.” The old Combat Beast King quietly left Star Collection City as he flew around, sighing to himself deeply.

Accompanying him was none other than Zhan Bu Du: “This is Mini Blue Heaven. There are nine other places like this in my father’s immortal aperture world. I’m sure we’ll be able to live well here.”

The old Combat Beast King nodded and asked: “How do we contact the others?”

“Use this. It is an information path mortal Gu.” Zhan Bu Du took out a mortal Gu and handed it to the old Combat Beast King.

The Combat Beast King’s cultivation was at rank eight but his knowledge was very shallow, this simple information path mortal Gu made him marvel in awe: “I can’t believe that Gu worms can be this useful.”

“This is how they should be used. The Beast Calamity true inheritance that I received says this as well.” Zhan Bu Du smiled shyly: “Please don’t blame me, Grandpa Combat Beast King, my father wanted me to keep this as a secret.”

The old Combat Beast King nodded: “I understand. I wonder what your father wants me to do?”

“For the time being, we would like Grandpa Combat Beast King and the other warriors to learn the traditional Gu cultivation method. This place is not safe, we have strong enemies outside.” Zhan Bu Du said vaguely.

The old Combat Beast King was shook: “Your father is willing to impart the true cultivation way to us?”

“Of course he is. We are all allies.” Zhan Bu Du smiled.

Fang Yuan annexed Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Getting rid of the myriad tribulation in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven expended a lot of his immortal essence and effort, but it could not stop Fang Yuan.

He almost singlehandedly got rid of the grotto-heaven’s crisis, Fang Yuan’s reputation also rose to its peak.

Next, with the help of Zhan Bu Du, the owner of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, he successfully annexed Beast Calamity grotto-heaven and brought it into his sovereign immortal aperture.

Different from the previous life, Fang Yuan had already made all the preparations now, he deduced everything in advance.

After annexing the grotto-heaven, he split up the grotto-heaven and placed the different parts all over the sovereign immortal aperture.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven had several major gathering spots, some contained a portion of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven's true inheritance.

Fang Yuan placed Sacred Eagle City, Dark Valley, Spirit Spring Forest, Mountain Cliff City, Star Collection City in Mini Western Desert, Mini Southern Border, Mini Central Continent, Mini Northern Plains and Mini Blue Heaven respectively.

Of course, other than that, the many major resource points in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven were also handled properly by Fang Yuan.

Fully absorbing this grotto-heaven would take time.

The fusing of ecologies needed to reach a balance, time was needed for that, as well as the patience of the Gu Immortals managing the place.

Fang Yuan obtained myriad beings assimilation transformation again, the qilin heavenly spirit was also alive at the largest piece of territory.

Fang Yuan gained more than two hundred thousand transformation path dao marks from this!

In the previous life, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven gave him over a hundred thousand transformation path dao marks only. But in this life, because of Fang Yuan's arrangements, there was ample time to trigger the second myriad tribulation.

The original owner of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven only survived the first myriad tribulation before dying. By the time Fang Yuan discovered Beast

Calamity grotto-heaven, its second myriad tribulation was approaching.

After passing the second myriad tribulation, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven gained another hundred thousand dao marks.

Thus, in terms of transformation path dao marks, Fang Yuan gained about double of them this time.

The more dao marks he had, the better it was for him.

“Oh, Bing Sai Chuan has awakened, he wants to cooperate?” Fang Yuan received this information and smiled.

Even though Longevity Heaven could not contact Fang Yuan directly, they found a method to do so.

They knew that Southern Border’s righteous path had been extorted by him before, they definitely had ways to contact him. Thus, by finding one of Southern Border’s super forces, and paying a high price, they would gain this method.

Bing Sai Chuan immediately talked to Fang Yuan, saying that he wished to cooperate with him.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan was a little puzzled, but this time, he understood the reason.

“Bing Sai Chuan wants to work together and gather everyone’s strength to try to snatch fate Gu away.”

“However, I need them to attack Heavenly Court as well, they will test the water for me and lure away some firepower.”

Fang Yuan was wary about many things in Heavenly Court.

For example, Genesis Lotus’ painting path method, or the game of chess between two venerables in Imperfection Regret Pavilion.

Fang Yuan agreed to cooperate with Bing Sai Chuan.

This instead made Bing Sai Chuan have some doubts: “Why did Fang Yuan agree to this so readily? He is likely suspicious of us, he wants to see our future actions.”

Bing Sai Chuan frowned, he felt that he should find an opportunity to fight together with Fang Yuan and show his sincerity.

But after thinking about it, Bing Sai Chuan could not find any suitable targets.

In the previous life, he had no such worries. Be it the River of Time’s stone lotus island or Dragon Palace, he could ally with Fang Yuan to fight.

But in this life, Fang Yuan changed many things. He obtained Dragon Palace in advance, the River of Time battle ended in Heavenly Court’s defeat, they had not recovered even now, still being fearful to step into this forbidden ground that Fang Yuan personally created.

Heavenly Court.

Qin Ding Ling looked at Feng Jiu Ge, smiling: “Tell me, since you approached me personally, what is your request?”

Towards this exemplary junior who was also the Dao Guardian of the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable, Qin Ding Ling was quite appreciative.

Feng Jiu Ge hesitated for a while before speaking: “I would like to borrow a rank eight luck path Immortal Gu from senior — Responsive Luck.”

Qin Ding Ling was slightly surprised, before she realized: “Sure, I agree to your request.”

Saying so, she handed responsive luck Immortal Gu to Feng Jiu Ge on the spot.

Feng Jiu Ge was slightly stunned.

Qin Ding Ling said: “I know that you are creating a new killer move, this responsive luck Immortal Gu must be very helpful to you, otherwise, with

your nature, you will not ask to borrow my Gu worm.”

Feng Jiu Ge nodded, receiving responsive luck Immortal Gu: “That is correct.”

He had already created an eighty percent complete destiny song, he found that rank eight fate armor Immortal Gu could not shoulder the grand and vast destiny song, he needed another luck path Immortal Gu as the core.

With Feng Jiu Ge’s current understanding, responsive luck Immortal Gu was the most suitable for him.

Qin Ding Ling looked at this Immortal Gu and sighed: “The Immortal Gu recipe for responsive luck Immortal Gu was not actually created by me, I had secretly taken a look at the manuscript written by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. In the future, if you use this Gu to deal with the Northern Plains Gu Immortals, we will give them a taste of their own medicine. I will give this Immortal Gu to you.”

Feng Jiu Ge thanked Qin Ding Ling as he said: “This Gu is not enough, I will need to head to the River of Time, view the past and present, and observe the paths of all lives.”

Qin Ding Ling frowned: “According to what I know, even though Heavenly Court is working at full speed, we have only created one time path Immortal Gu House as of now. Going to the River of Time now is simply courting death. Let me take a look at your luck, to try to find a hidden chance for you.”

Feng Jiu Ge thanked her once again.

# Chapter 1920 - Convention Begins

## 1920 Convention Begins

The River of Time flowed endlessly.

Heavenly Court.

Discussion hall.

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals gathered, there were few Gu Immortals who did not come, this was the largest gathering that Heavenly Court had in the last thousand years.

Duke Long sat at the highest seat, he looked around: "We have explained our plan, go ahead and execute it. Whether we can restore the glory of Heavenly Court will depend on everyone's hard work."

"We will do our best!" All of the immortals resounded, they were very motivated.

The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention that would affect all five regions and the future of the world was about to begin!

Once news got out, the world was shaken.

Thanks to Fang Yuan's intentional spread of news, all the Gu Immortals knew of the importance of this Refinement Path Convention. But mortal Gu Masters had no idea, they thought that this Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was like the usual ones in the past.

Gu Masters started to move, heading towards Central Continent.

Each Central Continent Refinement Path Convention would attract the Gu Masters of the other four regions to participate, it involved all five regions and was a huge event.

But this time was slightly different from the beginning.

Western Desert.

A huge group of Gu Masters stood in front of the regional wall.

A youngster sighed loudly: “Father, if I were not seeing this personally, I simply could not believe there is such an amazing thing in the world.”

“This is the regional wall. Once we get past this, we will reach Central Continent.” The middle aged Gu Master beside the youngster said: “After entering the regional wall, our vision will be restricted, by then, you need to stay by my side and not get lost. Understood?”

“Yes father, I will.” The youngster nodded obediently.

“Mm.” Zhang Quan looked at his son Zhang Ping, feeling very proud.

His son had strong refinement path talent, for his future development, Zhang Quan brought him on a journey to participate in the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, to train his refinement path ability and also to gain some knowledge.

“What sound is that?” At the next moment, Zhang Quan looked up in confusion.

Next, his pupils shrunk as he showed great shock.

A huge meteor that was the size of a hill crashed down towards them.

The surrounding Gu Masters screamed in fear.



“Why is this happening? We’re doomed!” Instantly, Zhang Quan felt great regret. If he had decided to travel to Central Continent alone, his son would not die with him.

Boom!

The meteor crashed down on the ground, causing an earthshaking explosion.

Zhang Quan and the rest died without intact corpses.

In the sky, an inkman Gu Immortal looked around coldly before leaving.

Similar scenes were happening all over the five regions.

These Gu Immortals were all Fang Yuan’s subordinates, they had received his order to prevent people from joining the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

Next, Fang Yuan publicly announced in treasure yellow heaven: “If anyone joins the Refinement Path Convention, you will be making an enemy out of me, one day, I will find you and settle the score!”

The Gu Immortals of the five regions sighed in amazement: The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention had just started but Fang Yuan made his move already. As expected of the Little Demon Venerable, he was rampant and brutal.

Heavenly Court was enraged!

Because the assault of Fang Yuan’s subordinates would cause much fewer Gu Masters to join the convention, it would be disadvantageous in repairing fate Gu.

Different from the previous life, Fang Yuan ordered his subordinates to only move around Northern Plains, Southern Border, Western Desert, and Eastern Sea. This way, Central Continent and Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals could not head to the other four regions and save these people.

During this period of time, if Central Continent and Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals head to the other four regions, they would be angering and provoking the other four regions' super forces.

Heavenly Court could only accuse Fang Yuan of his heinous crimes and communicate with the righteous paths of the other regions to get them to take revenge on this terribly demonic act.

The righteous paths of the other four regions responded loudly but they took little action, even if they did anything, they were merely doing it superficially, creating a lot of noise but little effect.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan acted in Central Continent itself and was faced with much obstruction not long after.

In this life, Fang Yuan took action in advance, he immediately gained huge results in battle.

The waves of Gu Masters rushing to Central Continent immediately ceased.

Nobody wanted to die just because of one Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

Furthermore, the four regions' super forces had also stopped their own Gu Masters from joining the convention, it caused this current Refinement Path Convention to be very sparse in attendants.

Central Continent, Unification Sect.

As one of the sign up locations of the Refinement Path Convention, it was filled with people and commotion as well.

“The Refinement Path Convention is about to start! Strange, why do I not see people from the other four regions?” Luo Sheng sighed.

In the previous Refinement Path Convention, he had lost to a Northern Plains Gu Master by chance, this time, he was trying to find that Northern Plains Gu Master again for a rematch.

Luo Sheng was eager to prove himself.

“But Central Continent is too large, the five regions are too broad, geniuses are everywhere.”

He looked around and found that three people here were tough opponents for himself.

One was an old man that had been reputed for many years, he was also a refinement path master. Another was a young man, and the last one was a young girl. The former had performed well in the previous convention while the latter was a rising star that had emerged in the last ten years.

“This Refinement Path Convention is still going to be that intense!”

“I must make good use of this opportunity, I cannot fail anymore...”

“I will prove myself, I will let my wife and children be proud!”

Boom!

At the next moment, a huge ancient year beast descended from the sky, crushing the entire hall to ruin.

All of his grand ambitions vanished into thin air.

The young Gu Master with a great future, the genius young girl who was thought of highly, they all died pitifully on the spot, their bones and flesh were mashed together, even the corpses could not be seen clearly.

In the sky, Bai Ning Bing’s figure flashed rapidly.

She was in charge of moving around, every destination she reached, she released ancient year beasts. As for the result, Fang Yuan said that she did not need to be concerned with that.

Earlier, Fang Yuan sent variant human Gu Immortals to kill Gu Master participants in advance. Now, he ordered Shadow Sect’s immortals to infiltrate Central Continent and use ancient year beasts to destroy the sign-

up locations, to create bloodshed as countless elite Gu Masters face their end.

After learning of this situation, Heavenly Court immediately spread news of the truth.

“There really are immortals in this world...”

“The culprit behind everything is Fang Yuan!”

“Fang Yuan, you killed my father, I will definitely take revenge for this immense hatred!”

“Even rank fives are just ants if they do not become Gu Immortals.”

“Immortals are high and mighty, why must I sacrifice my life for a mere Refinement Path Convention? Forget it, forget it.”

“I must go! If I do not go, wouldn’t I fall into that Fang Yuan’s scheme?”

Some were fearful, some felt emotional, some backed out, while some became determined.

“They are trying to gather the rage of the people and accumulate human will.” In the previous life, Fang Yuan did not know what Heavenly Court was doing, but now, he was deeply aware.

Fang Yuan quickly ordered his subordinates to stop.

Heavenly Court and Central Continent’s Gu Immortals gathered rage and hatred, they were about to take action when they found that Fang Yuan’s subordinates all vanished without a trace.

“Isn’t Fang Yuan trying to destroy the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention? Why did he stop?” The four regions’ super forces who were watching the show felt very perplexed.

In a secret meeting in Southern Border, Wu Yong analyzed some of Fang Yuan’s thoughts: “Fang Yuan had an early advantage, if he continues,

Heavenly Court will deduce the locations of his attackers, he will lose many subordinates.”

“Then will Fang Yuan attack again?” Someone asked.

“Of course.” Wu Yong said without doubt: “But before that, we need to move out secretly too.”

In the previous life, Fang Yuan attacked personally and caused destruction, not long after, he was marked by the killer move people’s accusation, he had to hide while his subordinates like Bai Ning Bing took action.

This time, Fang Yuan lurked and concealed himself while ordering his subordinates to cause destruction and bloodshed.

Others were not like Fang Yuan who could defend against Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions using wisdom path methods. Thus, Fang Yuan ordered Bai Ning Bing and the rest to hide themselves after causing some level of destruction.

The Refinement Path Convention had just started.

The huge battle had not begun, these subordinates were still very useful to Fang Yuan.

# Chapter 1921 - Conflict Rises

## 1921 Conflict Rises

The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was wildly continuing, but Fang Yuan's group was nowhere to be found.

Fang Yuan gave the orders to retreat so quickly, the Gu Immortals of the five regions felt as if the slaughter earlier was not real.

“What is Fang Yuan doing?”

“The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention is still going on, why aren't you doing anything!”

“You are the Little Demon Venerable, don't bring shame to your reputation.”

The four regions' super forces were very anxious as they complained, they wanted Fang Yuan to attack and take the role of charging into battle for them.

But Fang Yuan, who had opposed Heavenly Court all along, went missing now, he was in hiding and could not be seen anywhere.

The four regions' forces were about to feel some resentment towards him, as days passed, they watched as the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention continued to advance, all sorts of refinement path elites were progressing in the competition.

The number of test locations in Central Continent also shrunk greatly. Each area was now guarded by multiple Central Continent Gu Immortals arranged by Heavenly Court.

In this situation, Fang Yuan ordered again, various immortals including Bai Ning Bing, Bing Yuan, and Beast Calamity grotto-heaven's Gu Immortals took action.

Central Continent, Xuanwu mountain range.

“Bai Ning Bing, you have committed too much evil, you will face retribution eventually!” A female immortal from Spirit Affinity House was guarding this place, she said that before escaping.

Bai Ning Bing snorted coldly: “She ran really quickly.”

Xuanwu mountain range was a giant resource point of Spirit Affinity House, it had a huge area and was a publicly known immortal material treasure trove.

“Problems will come with waiting, I should act quickly.” Bai Ning Bing started to loot the place.

Central Continent, Imprisonment Valley.

“It's here.” Steel Rush Warrior looked around.

Frost Butterfly Warrior came along with him: “Open!”

Once the killer move was used, a formation appeared in front of them.

Transformation!

The two rank seven Gu Immortals from Beast Calamity grotto-heaven did not hesitate to use their most proficient method. One turned into a giant with bull head and human body, while the other turned into a mini butterfly person that emanated frost energy.

As immortal killer moves were unleashed, the formation broke after resisting for a while.

“Southern thorns, the entire valley is made of immortal materials.” Steel Rush Warrior was overjoyed.

Frost Butterfly Warrior was even more direct, freezing the southern thorns and looting them rapidly.

Central Continent, red river beach.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals who arrived were furious.

They were late, they only saw ruins left.

The blazing red stones that accumulated on the beach were all taken.

A clean sweep!

Fang Yuan was waiting silently earlier, but once he made a move, it shocked the world.

His Gu Immortals were almost fully deployed, even the hairy man Gu Immortals were sent out.

These people were instructed by Fang Yuan, they did not attack the sign-up spots that were heavily guarded, they targeted the resource points with weaker defenses instead.

Each time they broke into a resource point, these people would plunder it dry. After the plunder, they would use killer moves to completely destroy the place beyond salvation.

At once, the whole of Central Continent was set ablaze, all sorts of large resource points were plundered and destroyed.

Every time Fang Yuan succeeded in taking down an area, he would publish the results of his success in treasure yellow heaven.



The five regions' Gu Immortals went into a clamor.

“How does Fang Yuan have so many subordinates!”

“So many Gu Immortals, he has greatly surpassed a normal super force.”

“How much strength is he hiding?!”

After feeling shocked, they felt envy and admiration.

Fang Yuan's subordinates had varying battle strength, but even the weakest Gu Immortal could succeed. For the Refinement Path Convention, Central Continent had lowered its defense of these resource points too much.

Many powerful Gu Immortals started to think: “Since these variant human Gu Immortals can plunder successfully, why can't I?”

And many weaker Gu Immortals started to think: “Most of the good stuff will be taken by those experts, but I can still get the leftovers, right?”

Thus, similar to the previous life, the four regions' Gu Immortals could not wait anymore, especially those demonic immortals and lone cultivators.

These people started to attack all the resource points around Central Continent.

The situation in Central Continent fell apart rapidly.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei had a dark expression.

No matter how great her self-control, seeing all the information sources regarding resource points getting plundered and looted dry, she felt deep anger within her.

“Fang Yuan...” She gritted her teeth, emitting an intense killing intent uncontrollably.

It was this culprit who stirred everyone's desires and made Central Continent the hunting ground of the other four regions, it was plundered casually and suffered huge losses.

Be they Fairy Zi Wei, Duke Long, or Qin Ding Ling, they were helpless.

Central Continent was too big, it was at the center surrounded by the other four regions as well.

They had too few Gu Immortals, they could not send people to all the resource points, their manpower was severely lacking.

This gave thieves and bandits a chance to strike.

"People's hearts have changed." Qin Ding Ling sighed.

Duke Long was indifferent: "Sacrifices are necessary for our grand ambition. We will focus on the Refinement Path Convention, these immortal materials can be given up. Once fate Gu is repaired, we will make them pay back a thousandfold."

Central Continent was currently being ravaged.

Fang Yuan's timing was too impeccable, he chose the perfect moment where Heavenly Court was increasing its defense of the Gu refinement locations, these elites could not be lost as it would severely affect Central Continent's potential. And for the moment, their loss would be detrimental to repairing fate Gu.

Fang Yuan's target was also perfect.

For example, places like Xuanwu mountain range were too huge, it naturally had low defense. As for Imprisonment Valley and red river beach, he had looted them in the previous life, he knew their layout and defensive measures.

Together with his meticulous planning, Fang Yuan's subordinates had a high success rate. The ease of his plunder and immense gains lured all of the other four regions' Gu Immortals.

The Gu Immortals of all four regions quickly moved out to target the various resource points.

Central Continent had not given up on all their resource points, many important resource points were guarded by experts.

At once, all sorts of battles erupted, Gu Immortals fought and the moment they found that one resource point was too hard to take down, they would wisely give up and move to the next location.

Central Continent had so many resource points anyway, why would they be fixated on one area?

Western Desert earth path Gu Immortal Shi Gan Dang destroyed the earth qi rock forest and obtained a large amount of round kun stones.

Forgotten Daoist successfully stole the spirit bank spring water, even though it was defended by Ancient Soul Sect's expert Yang Feng.

Xiao Hu Chi, Xiao Shi Rang, and Pi Shui Han worked together and succeeded in their plunder, but because of the problem of distribution, they fought against each other.

Central Continent was full of conflict and fighting, it was utter chaos.

Fairy Zi Wei stayed in Heavenly Court, she felt that days were passing like years.

Eventually, Old Man Zheng Yuan spoke: "We have gathered enough human will now, we can use the first human path killer move."

Fairy Zi Wei was overjoyed, quickly asking him to make a move.

Old Man Zheng Yuan nodded, he stood up shakily as a grand and vast aura surged out of his body!

Immortal killer move — People's United Hearts!

The accumulated human will was expended rapidly, almost none was left.

At the same time, Central Continent's Gu Immortals, Gu Masters and even mortals became enveloped in a halo of light.

The halo flashed for a moment, it was like an illusion.

But Central Continent's people soon found something special.

Their hearts were connected, they could sense each other's thoughts and emotions.

The fear of being attacked, the sadness and hatred of having friends and family die, the worry towards one's own life, and the aspirations towards one's future...

Never had Central Continent's people been so tightly connected before in history.

Unfettered Scholar, who was hiding in the Gu refinement location, was discovered, he managed to exact revenge and kill the Central Continent Gu Immortal who was guarding the place.

Southern Border secluded immortal Zheng Qing was exposed too, but he had no animosity towards Central Continent or Heavenly Court, he was asked to leave politely.

"This human path killer move, people's united hearts, is truly amazing." Shen Shang communicated with Fang Yuan using treasure yellow heaven. His current location was unknown, Fang Yuan only knew that he had left Eastern Sea and could possibly even be in Central Continent now.

"What did you comprehend? Can we restrict these human path killer moves?" Fang Yuan asked, he had already given all of the information regarding these human path killer moves in his memory to Shen Shang.

Shen Shang sighed: "To negate these killer moves, the easiest way is to destroy the human will. Without human will as the foundation, these human path killer moves cannot be used. But I deduced that these human wills are kept in Heavenly Court."

“Then what about other ways?” Fang Yuan asked.

Shen Shang sighed again: “Then we can only unravel the killer move directly, this is very difficult, I will need a lot of time. Don’t worry, since I promised you, I will do my best. I do not want to see a complete fate Gu either.”

Fang Yuan continued to wait patiently.

Wu Yong led the Southern Alliance immortals as they appeared on Hairy Foot Mountain.

“Follow me, let us destroy Infallible blessed land, let’s take all the success dao marks and make Heavenly Court taste failure!” Wu Yong announced.

“We will follow Lord Alliance Leader!!” The Southern Alliance immortals said together, they had high morale as they followed him.

Heavenly Court immediately received news about this.

Fairy Zi Wei’s face was grim as cold light shined in her eyes: “This Wu Yong.”

“Wu Yong has moved out. Longevity Heaven is also about to take action, it is time for me to make my move.” After receiving the news, Fang Yuan smiled as he appeared near Yi Tian Mountain.

# **Chapter 1922 - Southern Alliance Destroys Formation**

## **1922 Southern Alliance Destroys Formation**

Myriad Year Flying Warship floated in the sky, Fang Yuan looked at the formation in front of him with a smile.

He arrived at Yi Tian Mountain again, this time, he would definitely take all of the dream realms away.

This timing was truly impeccable.

Firstly, Wu Yong had led the Southern Alliance experts to infiltrate Central Continent, Southern Border was at its weakest now. Secondly, the huge battle had just started, this was likely the final period of free time for Fang Yuan.

“Different from the previous life, I had all the initiative this time, I defeated Heavenly Court repeatedly. The secret of my rebirth is known to all, Heavenly Court must have ways to counter it. Their arrangements will be different from the previous life, I should let the four regions’ Gu Immortals strike first while I observe their new methods.”

Fang Yuan had a firm grasp of the situation.

At this point, Fang Yuan's rebirth advantage was mostly depleted. His previous life's memories were not reliable against a colossal force like Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court would not be so stupid as to not make changes.

If Fang Yuan took the lead as the vanguard, he would be stuck in endless battles, unable to get away from fighting. He might even die in the process.

After all, Heavenly Court's foundation was unfathomable, Fang Yuan could not be sure that the venerable methods in his memories were all the methods left behind.

Immortal killer move — Refinement Formation Rain.

Rain started to fall from the sky, gradually infiltrating the formation.

There were naturally defending Gu Immortals in the formation.

The Gu Immortals were in panic.

The formation could not block him, the periphery had already been refined by Fang Yuan.

Even though this formation was set up by Chi Qu You, Fang Yuan had secretly undergone dream realm transactions with him, he gained a lot of information about this formation.

Fang Yuan's formation path and wisdom path attainment, along with refinement formation rain, completely countered this formation.

“This demon Fang Yuan did not attack Central Continent, he came back to Southern Border!”

“What do I do?”

“Seek help?”

“Our rank eight Gu Immortals have all gone to Central Continent under the lead of Lord Wu Yong!”

“We still need to inform them about this!”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals conversed for a while, nobody dared to go out to fight Fang Yuan, but they had no reinforcements either. They had to use the immortal formation and add changes to it.

The immortal formation continued to change, Fang Yuan’s speed of refining the formation became slower instantly.

But Fang Yuan became happy internally.

The more this formation changed, the more he could comprehend the profundity within it. With the help of the light of wisdom, he could easily understand all of these secrets.

Within Central Continent, the Southern Alliance’s immortals had already entered the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

Wu Yong and the rest received this news.

“What? The dream realm was attacked?”

“That scoundrel Fang Yuan!”

“Can he see the big picture at all? He is actually attacking us at this time?!”

The Southern Alliance’s immortals were furious.

Wu Yong was silent for a while before speaking: “Of course he can.”

“What does Lord Wu Yong mean?” Ba De had a livid expression. Fang Yuan’s actions were harming the benefits of all the Southern Border righteous path forces!

Everyone knew about the value of these dream realms, furthermore, they would get more important when the great era arrives.



Wu Yong smiled instead: “If Fang Yuan does not see the big picture, he would have attacked the dream realm long ago. He would not wait for us to go to Central Continent. Or maybe, he wants to make use of us as cannon fodder.”

“Then aren’t we sacrificing ourselves for him?” Someone asked in an indignant tone.

“No.” Wu Yong shook his head: “If fate Gu is repaired, its threat will be far greater than the otherworldly demon Fang Yuan. He has been reborn, it seems we took the initiative to attack like now in the previous life. But there is no choice, we need to attack. This is for the sake of the five regions.”

“Everyone, before we left, I already told you that our region would likely get attacked. Be they your family, friends, or our territory, all of the destruction and slaughter pale in comparison to the big picture! If Heavenly Court gains a complete fate Gu, we will all be helpless, there will be no future for anyone!”

Wu clan said this as his eyes shined like lightning, he looked around as he declared: “This is my order, let all of the defending Gu Immortals retreat from the formation, do not make unnecessary sacrifices. I know this is a risky move, but even if my Wu clan headquarters get destroyed, I will not retract my words!”

Wu Yong’s determination shook the hearts of all the immortals.

They were all united now, the Southern Alliance immortals were tightly connected, they fought their way into the depths of the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

After Southern Border received Wu Yong’s orders, the defending Gu Immortals sighed in relief, they brought as many Immortal Gu as they could with them as they started to teleport away.

A moment later, Fang Yuan refined the formation, not a single Southern Border Gu Immortal was in sight.

After he dismantled the formation, he received an information path Gu worm, it was a letter that Wu Yong had specially written to him.

Fang Yuan's divine sense swept through it, looking at the content.

The letter only had one sentence, it spoke of one viewpoint — The threat of Heavenly Court and Fate, Central Continent is strong, while the four regions are weak.

He did not say anything about asking Fang Yuan to stop.

“This Wu Yong...” Fang Yuan sighed to himself.

Earlier, he was a problem for Fang Yuan, using his political skills to restrict Fang Yuan's extortion and causing him great loss. But now, Wu Yong asked the Southern Border Gu Immortals to stop defending, he made them retreat and saved Fang Yuan a lot of effort.

If these Southern Border Gu Immortals continued to defend, it would waste a lot of time.

After Fang Yuan takes the dream realm, he would save a lot of time, that meant he could find trouble with the righteous path of Southern Border. Wu Yong's orders carried lots of risk, it was a bold move.

But Wu Yong was sure that Fang Yuan knew the big picture, he would not continue causing trouble in Southern Border.

It was like how Fang Yuan knew Wu Yong would not come back from Central Continent to defend these territories if he attacked.

And the truth was, Fang Yuan had no intention to find trouble with Southern Border's righteous path at this moment.

After some effort, Fang Yuan took away all of the dream realms here.

Yi Tian Mountain saw the light of day again, the huge Gu Immortal battles engraved here could be seen all around the mountain, there was no sign of life here, everything had changed.

Fang Yuan started to head to Central Continent.

As he traveled, he transformed these dream realms into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

In the following battle, these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies would be a huge force of his. In the previous life, Feng Jin Huang was able to resist the detonation of his Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, in this life, it was likely that she could do the same.

But Feng Jin Huang was just one single mortal Gu Master. Fang Yuan had the initiative, he had several battlefields to approach.

Heavenly Court, Central Great Hall.

Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei, and Qin Ding Ling watched over the situation.

Old Man Zheng Yuan was also invited here.

“The latest news, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals broke the first formation, they are going to the second formation. Fang Yuan appeared in Yi Tian Mountain and destroyed the formation, taking all the dream realms.” Fairy Zi Wei suddenly said.

Duke Long said grimly: “Fang Yuan will not continue causing chaos in Southern Border, he will definitely go fight in Central Continent. It seems that we need to deal with these dream realms.”

Fairy Zi Wei nodded: “We are very lucky that Feng Jin Huang created the perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, she can resist Fang Yuan’s dream path methods.”

Duke Long chuckled: “You think this is luck? No, this is the power of fate! Heavenly Court will not lose this battle, we cannot lose.”

At this moment, Fairy Zi Wei gasped as she showed a surprised expression: “Southern Border’s immortals have broken the second formation, they are going to the third one now.”

“So fast?” Even Qin Ding Ling was shocked.

Within nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, the immortals had high morale.

“Chi Qu You, good job.”

“As expected of the sole formation path great grandmaster in Southern Border!”

“With Lord Chi Qu You around, how can any formation stop us? Hahaha.”

Just earlier, when the immortals went into the second sub-formation, Chi Qu You spoke: “Stop.”

Next, he observed the area and led the immortals to quickly and delicately destroy the formation.

The immortals praised him but Chi Qu You shook his head: “The truth is, I did not see through this formation, I had received information from Fang Yuan.”

The expressions of the Southern Border immortals froze.

Chi Qu You continued: “Using my method, I can break this formation rapidly. But that is a forbidden method that will expend my lifespan. It seems that Fang Yuan had been reborn. In the previous life, he must have broken this formation too, he knows about it clearly.”

The immortals nodded, agreeing with him.

What they did not know was, Chi Qu You was the one who explained the profundity of this formation to Fang Yuan.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan rushed to Hairy Foot Mountain from Emperor City battlefield, in order to destroy the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, the immortals wanted to use the five regional limit formation. But without the complete formation chart, and having to create it within the enemy’s formation, it was too difficult.

Fang Yuan used his wisdom path and formation path attainment to cooperate with Chi Qu You and Black Extremity, working together to deduce the complete formation chart.

During this process, Chi Qu You gave Fang Yuan and Black Extremity an explanation on their experiences of breaking the earlier formations so that they could understand the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

Since Wu Yong asked the Southern Border immortals to retreat, displaying greater sincerity and determination, Fang Yuan was returning the favor by guiding them now.

After learning of this situation, Wu Yong had a slightly complex expression as he sighed: “It seems that Fang Yuan has already arrived in Central Continent.”

Fang Yuan understood Wu Yong, but Wu Yong also understood Fang Yuan.

The two of them had an indescribable understanding.

Even though they wanted each other to die during normal times!

The truth was, in the previous life, in order to break the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, Fang Yuan also asked the Southern Alliance for dream realms.

Wu Yong did not hesitate but agreed instantly.

Fang Yuan was transported back to Southern Border, the defensive formation was opened and he managed to take the dream realms away.

But later, when Fang Yuan converted them into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, Feng Jin Huang resisted them and he failed to destroy the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

Using Fang Yuan’s guidance, the Southern Alliance’s immortals broke through another two formations, their efficiency was out of this world.

Heavenly Court finally reacted in time, Fairy Zi Wei frowned and thought about the countermeasure when suddenly, rainbow light appeared above Heavenly Court.

Bright lights spread everywhere, rank eight Immortal Gu House Calamity Luck Altar shot out from within!

“Heavenly Court, we’re here.” Bing Sai Chuan called out with great morale.

“We have been waiting.” Qin Ding Ling slowly stood up.

# **Chapter 1923 - Stars During Daytime**

## **1923 Stars During Daytime**

Heavenly Court.

Colorful lights filled the sky, a huge rank eight Immortal Gu House flew out from within.

It had three floors of altars, grand and magnificent. There were multiple pillars holding each floor up, having white jade railings and shining aurora, it was eye-catching.

“Calamity Luck Altar!” Qin Ding Ling watched with shrunken pupils, her expression was complex.

She was looking at the Immortal Gu House that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable built personally, but the latter had passed away. Even if you were an Immortal Venerable, lifespan was limited.

“Heavenly Court.” On the other hand, Bing Sai Chuan in Calamity Luck Altar was trembling with excitement.

At long last, he had finally attacked this place, commencing the great plan that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had entrusted to him — to seize fate Gu and refine destiny Gu!

“We really got in.” The accompanying Five Elements Grandmaster was very shocked and surprised: “Is Heavenly Court’s defense really this weak?”

“Of course not.” Bull Demon explained in a deep voice: “This is the arrangement of our Ancestor Giant Sun. Back then, Golden Hoop Great Immortal invited our ancestor to come to the Heavenly Court for a visit, ostensibly proclaiming that he wanted to invite Ancestor Giant Sun into Heavenly Court. At that time, Ancestor Giant Sun secretly set up this arrangement, leaving it for the future.”

Five Elements Grandmaster could not help but inwardly be astounded at the words, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s strategy was planned so long ago but he actually managed to use it so far in the future!

“Go! We’ll use the route that Limitless Demon Venerable made when he previously attacked, we will attack Central Great Hall, ascend to Heaven Overseeing Tower, and seize fate Gu!” As soon as Bing Sai Chuan gave the order, the surrounding colored lights moved sharply.

Calamity Luck Altar was actually carried by the colored lights and moved to a distant place.

The qi wall left by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had already activated, it sealed Calamity Luck Altar within the qi wall.

On the other side, Qin Ding Ling had a pale face as she fell to the ground.

She had already done her best to make some minor modifications to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangements. The so-called trap against Northern Plains would naturally be most effective with the help of a venerable method.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable left behind the killer move qi wall in Heavenly Court, it was everywhere. When the three Demon Venerables attacked Heavenly Court, they created three paths that had no qi wall along them. But all other areas were filled by the qi wall.



Qin Ding Ling worked her hardest to relocate Calamity Luck Altar into the qi wall.

At once, Calamity Luck Altar became immobilized, it faced a huge pressure from all directions.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly helped Qin Ding Ling to stand up as she said in admiration: “Senior, it was all thanks to you!”

Qin Ding Ling sighed and said with a solemn tone: “To think that even after I worked my hardest after waking up, I merely managed to move his method to a slight extent. Sigh...”

Duke Long walked slowly with a calm expression: “Let’s go, it is time to welcome our guests.”

“Damn it! Heavenly Court knew that we were going to attack, they made use of that to set up an ambush!” Bing Sai Chuan’s expression changed, turning ashen.

The surprise attack that he had anticipated for so long had just started, but he already lost control of the situation.

He manipulated Calamity Luck Altar with all his strength but the killer move qi wall was too strong.

Even though this rank eight Immortal Gu House could barely move now with a snail-like speed, the most despairing thing was that the qi wall had a strong self-recovery ability. As Calamity Luck Altar moved, the qi wall behind it healed and mended together.

Just as Longevity Heaven’s people suffered a setback, Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals arrived in Hidden Dragon Cave.

“To think that Hidden Dragon Cave is here.” Song Qi Yuan sighed deeply to himself.

Granny Rong snickered: “This place is quite secluded indeed, but there is no such thing as absolutely hidden in this world.”

Yang Zi He added: “Back then, Di Zang Sheng wreaked havoc in Central Continent, Duke Long suppressed and sealed it here, it was a huge event. But because that was long ago in history, and because Heavenly Court wanted to exterminate the dragonman race, they were ruthless in eliminating the traces.”

“Hehehe. Speaking of which, Duke Long is very vicious, for the sake of Heavenly Court, he sacrificed all of his children and descendants.” Shen Cong Sheng criticized with a tone of disdain.

Eastern Sea’s eight Gu Immortals arrived here.

It was the same situation as the previous life.

To achieve this goal, Fang Yuan had put in a lot of effort secretly. On one hand, he used his status as Qi Sea Ancestor to hint to Song Qi Yuan and Hua Cai Yun, on another hand, he contacted Shen Cong Sheng using his own identity, and finally, the four rank eight lone cultivators in Eastern Sea were all Dragon Palace Dragon Generals, they obeyed Fang Yuan’s arrangements.

Fang Yuan was not sure about Hidden Dragon Cave’s location originally, but after getting Dragon Palace, he saw related records in it.

Back then, when Duke Long suppressed Di Zang Sheng, the dragonman race had put in effort too.

After getting this secret information, Fang Yuan spread it using the mouths of the Four Dragon Generals, influencing the decisions of all the different Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

These rank eight Gu Immortals from Eastern Sea were different from Southern Alliance and Longevity Heaven, they did not have any courageous spirit to take risks, in this life, they had no strong intention to gain Dragon Palace. Fang Yuan thus motivated them to release Di Zang Sheng from Hidden Dragon Cave and cause problems for Heavenly Court.

Once Di Zang Sheng gets released, the entire world would shake, blood would flow into rivers, living beings would die. There would be no need for these Eastern Sea Gu Immortals to fight.

Once Central Continent's attention was drawn and they sent Gu Immortals to deal with Di Zang Sheng, they would be weaker elsewhere, Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals would have a great opportunity.

There was another advantage, Di Zang Sheng would target and attack Central Continent's mortals.

The more people it killed, the more foundation Central Continent would lose.

Eastern Sea's righteous path rank eights would not attack mortals with their status, it would ruin their reputation. Having Di Zang Sheng do the dirty work was best.

At the fringe of Western Desert.

The thin regional wall was in front them.

"The five regions are indeed fusing. The regional walls that once restricted our movement are already so thin and weak." Fang Gong looked at the scene in front of him as he sighed.

Fang Yuan's clone, Fang Di Chang, had a high status in Fang clan, he managed to convince Fang clan's first supreme elder and many Western Desert super forces to take action together.

This was a much stronger group than in the previous life.

But gathering so many Gu Immortals used a lot of time, they only managed to assemble now.

"Oh no, that blood path demonic immortal is causing chaos in my clan." Right at this time, Sun clan reported bad news.

“There is a brand new immemorial desolate beast attacking my clan’s oasis.” Mo clan’s Gu Immortal also received bad news.

“Everyone! This is likely Heavenly Court’s scheme. They want to restrain us so that we cannot stop them from repairing fate Gu.” Fang Di Chang analyzed.

Even though he had no proof, in order to stabilize these Gu Immortals, lying was fine.

“No, I need to get back.”

“I objected earlier when you asked us to move out. Our base is too weak now, I was right after all.”

“In my opinion, we should play safe. Western Desert’s resources are all in the oases, if they are destroyed, our clans will lose our foundation without the support of resources.”

The Western Desert Gu Immortals discussed, they wanted to retreat.

“Damn it, Fang clan took too long to develop, we do not have enough influence and authority.” Fang Di Chang gritted his teeth, he watched as a portion of Sun clan and Mo clan left.

“The nature of these two clan’s Gu Immortals is not so tough normally, I’m afraid Heavenly Court is involved with these two clans!” Fang Di Chang reacted at this time.

With the departure of a portion of Sun clan and Mo clan, the other clans also wanted to leave, otherwise, their balance would be disrupted.

Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world had gone into chaos earlier because of the rise of Fang clan, their relationship was tense now and nobody trusted each other.

There was another fundamental problem, in history, Western Desert had never experienced any large scale cooperation between super forces.

Western Desert's Gu Immortal world did not have any domineering overlord in history, unlike Southern Border's Wu clan or Northern Plains' Longevity Heaven.

After some discussion, a portion of Western Desert's Gu Immortals returned to their base. The rest of them still exceeded the numbers in the previous life, they passed the regional walls and arrived in Central Continent.

Heavenly Court.

Reports of battles were sent over rapidly.

"Hidden Dragon Cave is attacked by Eastern Sea's rank eight Gu Immortals."

"Gu Immortal elites have appeared at Western Desert's fringe, they are heading towards Emperor City."

Fairy Zi Wei spoke.

At this time, Duke Long slowly retreated from the front of the battlefield.

Calamity Luck Altar was surrounded by the qi wall, there was a sizable area of movable space around it now, Heavenly Court's countless experts were attacking it from all directions.

If Calamity Luck Altar retaliated, these Gu Immortals would retreat into the qi wall and hide themselves, staying safe.

After several attempts, Bing Sai Chuan had to activate Calamity Luck Altar's defense as they pressed forward.

Because of Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals' obstruction, Calamity Luck Altar could barely move forward slowly and with great difficulty.

Duke Long had nothing much to do, the battlefield in Heavenly Court was already secured, Longevity Heaven was trapped and they would eventually fall.

Duke Long heard Fairy Zi Wei's reports as he said calmly: "Qi Sea Ancestor and Fang Yuan, have they not made a move?"

"Nothing at the moment." Fairy Zi Wei shook her head.

The two people Duke Long was most wary of were these two. Qi Sea Ancestor had unparalleled strength, he rivaled Duke Long and was someone that Duke Long had to focus and keep his attention on.

Meanwhile, even though Fang Yuan had rank seven cultivation level, he inherited Red Lotus Demon Venerable's true inheritance, he might have some powerful method, he needed to be guarded against.

"Qi Sea Ancestor's attitude is unclear, meanwhile, ever since Fang Yuan snatched Southern Border's dream realms, he vanished. He has a lot of dream realms on his hands now." Fairy Zi Wei said slowly, she was going to analyze this further.

"What plan do you have?" Duke Long interrupted her.

Fairy Zi Wei said: "I plan to activate the formation and resist our external foes to force out Fang Yuan. There is also Qi Sea Ancestor who might possibly fight us, we need to force them to take action!"

Duke Long pondered before nodding: "Alright, we need to take the initiative. If we can establish our dominance in this battle, the five regions chaotic war will be much easier to deal with."

Fairy Zi Wei quickly left and sat down at the central area of a formation.

She activated the formation and released Star Constellation Chessboard. The chessboard floated in the air and rotated on its own, innumerable starlight specks that resembled fireflies flew in the sky, entering the formation.

Central Continent's people soon noticed a strange phenomenon.

Many pointed at the sky and screamed: "Quickly look! There is starlight, there are actually stars in bright daylight."

“What is going on?” Fang Di Chang had just crossed the regional wall when he saw such a scene.

“Heavenly Court took action. This did not happen in my previous life.” Fang Yuan also arrived in Central Continent, he looked at the sky silently while frowning.

Heavenly Court had indeed prepared something new.

At this moment, in the sky of Central Continent, bright lights shined, stars appeared during daytime, radiating heaven and earth!

# **Chapter 1924 - Flesh Whip Immortal**

## **1924 Flesh Whip Immortal**

Central Continent, Hidden Dragon Cave.

“What is going on?” Eastern Sea’s eight Gu Immortals saw the change in the sky.

In broad daylight, Central Continent’s sky was covered in stars that shined brightly.

“This is likely Heavenly Court’s method, but we do not know what effect it has.” Qing Yue An frowned as he spoke.

“What is there to fear? We will deal with it when it comes, with our force, who can stop us? Unless Heavenly Court sends their main forces to face us.” Yang Zi He laughed loudly.

“Indeed.” Qing Yue An’s frown eased a little.

In this situation, Heavenly Court focused on repairing fate Gu, Hidden Dragon Cave was just a small area at the corner of the big picture, if Heavenly Court sent their main forces here to resist Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals, they would be disregarding the bigger problems, it would be a terrible decision!



“Enter the formation, destroy this formation and release Di Zang Sheng, he will cause chaos in the world, we will then gain our opportunity.” Yang Zi He encouraged them without acting suspicious.

“Hmm... let’s wait for a while. Since we are going to take action, why the need to rush now?” Song Qi Yuan had a composed mentality: “Since Heavenly Court has already used their method, we need to at least find out what it does, right?”

Song Qi Yuan’s words made the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals hesitant again.

Yang Zi He and the other Dragon Generals cursed in their hearts, these Eastern Sea righteous path rank eights were truly indecisive. They had already shown hostility to Heavenly Court but still did not want to destroy the formation immediately!

They were concerned about this ridiculous starry sky because they were too worried about their own safety. If they were Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals, they would have entered the formation already. No wonder Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world had the most wealth but still stayed suppressed and unable to resist Gu Immortals of other regions.

Fang Yuan did not want these Gu Immortals to wait outside.

The Four Dragon Generals were enslaved by Dragon Palace, they were undoubtedly loyal.

Among them, Granny Rong smiled as she said: “If this method has just materialized and needs three days to take effect, are we going to wait three days here?”

“This...” Song Qi Yuan and the rest were uncertain.

But at this moment, from the sky, grand starlight pillars shot down rapidly.

The light pillars were shining in a bluish light, it was a grand sight.

More than ten pillars of light shot down together, encircling all eight Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

Next, the pillars faded away as a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal appeared in the location of each pillar.

The Eastern Sea immortals' expressions changed.

In an instant, they were surrounded by Heavenly Court, the situation took a turn for the worse!

“You crawling worms dare to offend Heavenly Court!” Zhang Fei Xiong said in a cold and domineering tone.

“You will die today.” Wan Zi Hong licked her scarlet lips, oozing with killing intent.

“Those who offend Central Continent will be killed.” Qin Song had a solemn expression.

“Enough talk, I’m going to attack now, yayaya!” A female Heavenly Court immortal could not wait anymore, she charged forward.

Her body was plump to its limit, she was like a meat cannonball that shot towards the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals fearlessly.

Eastern Sea’s immortals were not united, they quickly split up.

The fat female immortal missed her target, she screamed in anger: “You cowards, why are you dodging, come, fight your mommy for three hundred rounds!”

“Flesh Whip Immortal is still so impatient.” A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal who knew about this female immortal sighed helplessly.

“Flesh Whip Immortal is gentle and kind normally, but once she enters battle, she acts like what the rumors say.” Many Heavenly Court Gu Immortals watched with surprise.

At once, the female immortal called Flesh Whip Immortal chased after Eastern Sea’s eight Gu Immortals while shouting vulgarities non-stop, she was extremely noisy.

“Vile woman, don’t be too arrogant.” Qing Yue An could not take it, he turned around to battle.

Flesh Whip Immortal was overjoyed: “Someone finally stopped running!”

Boom!

The two used their killer moves that collided, causing a thunderous explosion.

A huge shock wave burst out and caused the surrounding clouds to disperse and change form.

“Quickly go and reinforce Little Whip.” Qin Song ordered, among these Gu Immortals, he was the most senior, even Flesh Whip Immortal was his junior.

Central Continent’s immortals all charged forward at once.

Among them, there was Zhu Que Er who cultivated fire path and transformation path. There was Vortex Space Boy who cultivated space path and had terrifying killer moves. There was Ye Qiao Zi, Z, Wu Shuang, Yu Zhu Zi, and others, they were all famous Heavenly Court experts in history.

Not only did Heavenly Court’s side have more people, they even had excellent coordination, they created their battle tactic long ago, they erupted with great power.

Eastern Sea’s eight Gu Immortals were forced back time and again, they could not hold their own.

“This is a trap, let’s retreat!” Song Qi Yuan shouted with all his might.

His words immediately received the acceptance of the other three righteous path members, with the enemies being this strong now, they could not fight forcefully.

The Four Dragon Generals remained silent.

Without Fang Yuan's orders, they would not abruptly retreat.

Amidst the chaotic battle, Zhu Que Er suddenly pushed with her palm as a flame light was shot out.

The flame light resembled a beautiful blade light as it slashed towards Granny Rong.

Granny Rong and Zhao Shan He were currently fighting, seeing the approaching blade, she did not dodge it.

At the crucial moment, Zhang Yin suddenly moved, a shadow appeared and blocked the flame light.

"Oh? There's something weird going on with these two Gu Immortals." Zhu Que Er's expression changed, she felt something amiss.

Compared to the previous life, she had woken up much earlier, she made many preparations. She had already obtained information regarding Granny Rong and Zhang Yin.

These two were lone immortals but they actually trusted each other this much, it was really rare!

But soon, Zhu Que Er found out that it was not only Zhang Yin and Granny Rong, Yang Zi He and Shi Miao were also weird, these four rank eights trusted each other completely, they were willing to let themselves be defended by one another in dangerous situations!

Because of their coordination, they were able to resist the attacks of Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals without losing.

Fairy Zi Wei was currently looking at the situation from her formation core in Central Hall.

Starlight flashed in front of her, displaying the scene in Hidden Dragon Cave.

Even though she was in Heavenly Court, she obtained firsthand information of the battlefield.

“What’s wrong with these four Eastern Sea lone immortals? Their relationship should not be this close. Unless they set some sort of strict alliance agreement that allowed them to work together with complete trust?”

Fairy Zi Wei could not think more, it was not the time to deduce this now.

She considered it for a while before giving her orders.

After getting her orders, Old Man Bei Feng who was inside Hidden Dragon Cave became revitalized, he quickly activated the formation.

Intense lights appeared around the formation, its power spread out across the battlefield.

“Oh no!”

“Quickly leave!!”

“Once we enter the formation, they will take us out one by one.”

Eastern Sea’s immortals were flustered, they quickly shouted.

But how could Heavenly Court’s rank eight Gu Immortals allow them to leave? Immediately, killer moves were used to obstruct the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, they could not get out, they were swept into the formation along with the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Both parties entered Hidden Dragon Cave’s formation.

Old Man Bei Feng, who was controlling the formation, grunted as his face turned pale, blood flowed out of his nostrils.

Even though Hidden Dragon Cave’s formation was powerful, taking in so many rank eight Gu Immortals at once was beyond Old Man Bei Feng’s limits.

“Grandfather, are you okay?” Feng Chan Zi who was at the side asked with concern.

He was Old Man Bei Feng’s beloved grandson, if he did not make a mistake and was forced to guard Hidden Dragon Cave along with his grandfather, Old Man Bei Feng would have become a member of Heavenly Court already.

“But if I can make some contributions in this battle, Heavenly Court might recruit me!” Old Man Bei Feng’s eyes shined with bright light, he was filled with morale.

Eastern Sea’s rank eights were trapped in the formation, they were split up.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were also split up into different areas.

“This formation is mainly used to suppress and seal Di Zang Sheng, it does not have any power to cooperate with Gu Immortals in battle. Every Gu Immortal that enters the formation will be sent to a different area. Unless the formation is destroyed, there will not be two Gu Immortals in the same area.”

Fairy Zi Wei knew about Hidden Dragon Cave’s formation, she ordered Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals to retreat.

While Eastern Sea’s immortals were trapped inside.

“I will leave this place to you.” Qin Song said before leaving.

“Don’t worry, I will guard this place with my life. If anything happens, I will report it and seek reinforcements.” Old Man Bei Feng said with a polite and serious attitude.

“Very good.” Qin Song felt assured as he brought the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals to leave.

At this time, more than ten pillars of light shot down again, the blue starlight pillars enveloped all the Heavenly Court rank eights.

The pillars vanished, along with the rank eight Gu Immortals within.

Fang Di Chang and the rest traveled in their Immortal Gu House as they rushed towards Emperor City.

Even though the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was disrupted by Fang Yuan in advance in this life and had slower progress than the previous life, it was not even at the final round of the competition yet.

But evidently, Emperor City was the only place that could protect them while not interfering with the Gu refinement and the restoration of fate Gu. That place was already heavily guarded by Heavenly Court, Fang Di Chang thus asked the Western Desert immortals to head to Emperor City.

Western Desert's immortals had surging morale.

But at the next moment, starlight pillars appeared again, as more than ten Heavenly Court Gu Immortals appeared.

“Kill!” Flesh Whip Immortal charged forward again.

But this time, Western Desert's Gu Immortals were not flustered.

They were within their Immortal Gu Houses, they felt very safe.

Watching as Flesh Whip Immortal attacked, even though she was a rank eight Gu Immortal, she could not destroy an Immortal Gu House instantly.

“What method is Heavenly Court using? They could transport so many rank eights at the same time!” Fang Di Chang did not think anymore, he mobilized several Immortal Gu Houses to resist the enemies.

As a wisdom path Gu Immortal who controlled the strongest Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace, he was selected as the leader of the group, he had the highest authority.

Immortal Gu Houses charged without care, it was Heavenly Court's time to dodge them.

But two Gu Immortals did not retreat.

One was Zhang Fei Xiong, he turned into a giant with a bear head and human body, he resisted Immortal Gu Houses with his body.

The other was Flesh Whip Immortal, she was a transformation path Gu Immortal, she transformed into a walking meat tree as her roots moved like legs, running rapidly, while her branches turned into countless whips that attacked in a frenzy.

Crack crack crack!

She was also resisting Immortal Gu Houses, several rank seven Immortal Gu Houses were forced to turn around and escape.

Within Divine Bean Palace, Fang Di Chang's expression was dark.

“Heavenly Court made changes, but this change is simply too huge.”

“Zhang Fei Xiong, Wan Zi Hong, and Zhu Que Er woke up in advance, even experts like Flesh Whip Immortal appeared.”

“And most importantly, what killer move is this? It can transport more than ten rank eight Gu Immortals at once! This is simply unheard of!”

With this move, Heavenly Court had the initiative to mobilize their main forces to attack anywhere they wanted.

This was a very significant trump card in battle.

As long as this move was not destroyed, Heavenly Court could fight in several battlefields at the same time, they could deal with anything that came at them.



# Chapter 1925 - Heavenly Court's Initiative

## 1925 Heavenly Court's Initiative

Crack crack crack!

The tower-like walking meat tree was charging at the forefront, thousands of octopus tentacle-like branches waved and created a sound of fierce wind whistling, they had awe inspiring might, the Western Desert Gu Immortal's Immortal Gu Houses were forced to retreat.

Flesh Whip Immortal was able to resist Immortal Gu Houses singlehandedly, she was truly a rank eight expert slumbering in the Heavenly Court immortal graveyard, her strength was unquestionable!

Of course, this was also the advantage of transformation path.

"Let us!" At the crucial moment, Dong clan's Gu Immortals spoke up.

Similar to the previous life, Dong clan still mobilized the rank seven Immortal Gu House Red River Wheel.

This Immortal Gu House looked like a water wheel or a giant tire, rotating while blazing with red flames, it crashed towards the walking meat tree.

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals saw this and their gazes focused.

Immortal Gu Houses charged head on because it was the fastest method, it was usually not their strongest ability.

According to the different types of Immortal Gu used to construct them, Immortal Gu Houses had different immortal killer moves.

Right now, Red River Wheel had used its own killer move with overwhelming might to attack Flesh Whip Immortal.

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were nervous, similarly, Western Desert's Gu Immortals were also nervous.

Red River Wheel was only a rank seven Immortal Gu House, it could resist rank eight, if it crashed into Flesh Whip Immortal, they would be evenly matched, it would be damaged too.

However, this result was still slightly favorable to Western Desert.

Even if both of them were harmed, Red River Wheel would be able to recover by replacing the dead Gu. Flesh Whip Immortal, however, would be physically injured, and subsequent healing and recovery would be quite troubling.

“Come!” At the crucial moment, Flesh Whip Immortal, instead of retreating, yelled in excitement and charged straight up.

“This person...”

“Defend her!”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals reached a consensus in an instant.

Zhang Fei Xiong growled again, he turned into a giant with a bear head and human body, charging towards Red River Wheel.

“Red River Wheel is strongest at the front and back, but the sides are the weakest. Let's help out Dong clan!” Immortal Gu House Jade Toad Castle was like a green meteor that crashed into Zhang Fei Xiong.

Wan Zi Hong smiled delicately as countless petals drifted over the battlefield and landed on Red River Wheel, its momentum continued to decline.

Fang clan's Chicken Dog Coop came over to support, releasing chickens and dogs and other ancient desolate beasts to attack Wan Zi Hong.

Wan Zi Hong was still maintaining her killer moves and had no time to dodge, so Yu Zhu Zi and Ye Qiao Zi appeared around her. One of them sprinkled countless jade beads and made a tinkling sound, while the other emitted a mass of yellow light, sometimes slow, sometimes fast.

Chickens, dogs, and many other ancient desolate beasts were either smashed to death by the jade beads, or were temporarily trapped by the yellow light, hovering high in the air, unable to move.

“Damn it, this Wan Zi Hong is the demoness who scourged Western Desert in history and was recruited by Heavenly Court!” Dong clan's Gu Immortals were inside Red River Wheel, looking at Wan Zi Hong and gnashing their teeth.

Dong clan was a Western Desert righteous path force and hated Western Desert's demons the most, while this Wan Zi Hong was one of the most infamous demonesses in history.

Seeing the Dong clan's Red River Wheel's power was weakening, at this rate, it would be crushed by the walking meat tree. At the critical moment, a forest flower house-like Immortal Gu House was exerting its power behind the battlefield.

Wan Zi Hong gave a soft cry as she suddenly felt her killer move go out of control, countless petals rolled towards Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals instead.

Wan Zi Hong muffled a grunt as her killer move failed and the backlash caused her to suffer considerable damage.

Her eyes were like lightning as she stared at the culprit, it was Fang clan's rank seven Immortal Gu House — Fallen Flower Hall.

Boom!

At the next moment, the walking meat tree and Red River Wheel finally collided together.

Both sides immediately flew backwards.

The walking meat tree had hundreds of severed fleshy tentacles, while the surface of the Red River Wheel's wheel was battered beyond recognition, losing over three thousand Gu, Dong clan's Gu Immortals quickly started to repair it.

"This... is really satisfying!" Flesh Whip Immortal gritted her teeth and struggled to maintain the form of the walking meat tree, although her injuries were not light, her fighting spirit was instead more vigorous.

She was about to charge up again, but was stopped by Zhang Fei Xiong.

"Let me fight, you should go back and heal your injuries." Zhang Fei Xiong had been knocked away by the Immortal Gu House earlier, he returned and immediately took the place of Flesh Whip Immortal.

Flesh Whip Immortal, however, was stubborn and would not retreat in a deadly battle: "I won't! Let me charge, no one can stop me."

As soon as the words were said, a giant pillar of starlight shot down violently overhead, covering Flesh Whip Immortal.

Flesh Whip Immortal: "..."

In the next instant, she disappeared together with the giant pillar of starlight and returned to Heavenly Court.

In Heavenly Court's battlefield, Calamity Luck Altar was still struggling to move forward, trying to break free from the qi wall, but Duke Long was firmly blocking in front of it.

Duke Long's tall body was like cast steel, and even if it was just one man, Calamity Luck Altar could not deal with him.

Boom boom boom!

Every time Duke Long attacked, it was accompanied by a fierce explosion, and just by using transformation path killer moves, Calamity Luck Altar could not move forward.

After advancing ten steps, it would often be knocked back nine steps by Duke Long.

Flesh Whip Immortal swallowed a mouthful of saliva, gazing up at the heroic fighting stance of Duke Long, feeling envious in her heart, when would she have such powerful strength!

Light flickered around her, pale blue strands of flowing water wrapped around her, washing the dao marks away to heal her wounds.

This was a healing formation specially set up by Heavenly Court to greatly improve the efficiency of healing injuries.

“Heavenly Court's teleportation method can move groups as well as a single person to and fro! This is really troublesome.” Fang Yuan's clone, Fang Di Chang, frowned deeply.

Although he could not see the healing formation in Heavenly Court, he could deduce it easily with his brain.

The key was that with such a method, Heavenly Court could quickly retreat. It was almost an extravagant hope for Western Desert's side to kill or injure the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals. They had to kill with a single blow, denying Heavenly Court any chance to teleport and heal their members.

But how difficult was it to kill such experts among rank eight!

It was not just Fang Di Chang, the vast majority of the Gu Immortals recognized this, the morale of the Western Desert immortals began to plummet.

Fang Di Chang secretly gritted his teeth: “This is not good.”

Immediately, he activated Divine Bean Palace to move to the front line:  
“Everyone, let me do it!”

The Western Desert Immortals were energized greatly, they hurriedly made way for Divine Bean Palace, casting expectant glances at it.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals saw an Immortal Gu House lofty as a mountain, majestic and imposing, rumbling and rushing as it attacked, all their hearts jumped.

The same name flashed in the hearts of the immortals — Divine Bean Palace!

Immortal killer move — Myriad Life Spring Lightning!

Divine Bean Palace shook intensely, countless sparks that resembled dragons or snakes coiled around the palace. Lightning gathered into beads of jade green lightning balls as they exploded around the palace.

Rumble...

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals dodged wildly, not daring to face the attack. Even transformation path Zhang Fei Xiong had reverted to his human body, flying around in a very sad state.

Myriad life spring lightning, life and death was interlinked, destruction and creation were gathered into one move. After exploding, dao marks would be left in the battlefield, creating an environment that was advantageous to the user.

“How can we fight this?” This time, it was the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals’ turn to feel helpless.

“It is, after all, an Immortal Gu House created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable himself.”

“Sigh, how did it end up in the hands of Western Desert’s Gu Immortals!”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were resentful and without options, all of them were thinking of retreating.

One of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals was pale and chubby, he was Zhao Shan He, who was now looking at Yu Zhu Zi.

Yu Zhu Zi nodded at him as they suddenly gathered together.

At the same time, the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were surrounding the two of them, planning and defending around them.

Zhao Shan He was a food path Gu Immortal and Yu Zhu Zi was earth path, they both unleashed a move together — Sitting and Eating the Mountain Empty!

The killer move enveloped the entire battlefield, Western Desert's Immortal Gu Houses could not dodge it.

After it was used, starlight pillars flashed in the sky for an instant.

At the next moment, all of the Heavenly Court rank eights left the battlefield, the intense and chaotic battle was left with only Western Desert's Immortal Gu Houses.

Even though Western Desert's Gu Immortals forced back Heavenly Court, their expressions turned ugly.

Because they found out that many of the Gu worms in the Immortal Gu Houses were weakening, soon, their aura fell to rock bottom as Gu worms died one by one.

Not only that, the Gu Immortals in the houses were also getting hit, many of their immortal essence beads started to disintegrate and disappear.

“This was all caused by that move.”

“What kind of killer move was it, not only did the Immortal Gu Houses get affected, but even the Gu Immortals inside the houses were not spared?”

“This should be the profundity of food path. Because of that, it’s hard to defend against using our Immortal Gu Houses.”

The Western Desert Gu Immortals discussed and exchanged ideas, they soon guessed correctly.

Food path had been too limited in circulation, Western Desert’s righteous path did not have a lot of food path inheritances, their defense against it was too low, it was a weakness.

And most importantly, Zhao Shan He was a food path expert on Heavenly Court’s side.

“This will not do!”

“Heavenly Court fights and retreats when they want to, as long as they give Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi the chance to use this move each time, we will lose all our strength and resources over time.”

“Everyone! We must hurry up and rush to Emperor City as soon as possible to force Heavenly Court to fight us to the death. There, they won’t retreat so easily.”

Fang Di Chang analyzed the situation and advocated.

The Western Desert Gu Immortals agreed.

In a short period of time, they had no way to counter Heavenly Court’s teleportation killer move and could only use this method to restrain Heavenly Court.

Zhao Shan He and the others returned to Heavenly Court once again.

The injured ones all went to the healing formation to recover, while the rest were focusing on their recuperation while communicating with each other on how they should work better together.

After a fierce battle with Western Desert’s various Immortal Gu Houses, these Gu Immortals suffered no losses, and the most seriously injured



person, Flesh Whip Immortal, was almost healed completely, alive and well once again.

Unlike the previous life, these Gu Immortals, because of their early awakening, not only possessed a full range of Immortal Gu, but they also had a certain level of mutual cooperation.

“Immortal Gu Houses are just hard to fight. Divine Bean Palace is the most troublesome of them all.”

“What are you worried about? A few more rounds and Western Desert’s side will collapse. They won’t be able to reach Emperor City!”

“Have Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor not done anything? Quickly do something, we can’t wait anymore.”

Gu Immortals were all experts that had huge reputation at some point in time, they were overflowing with confidence and morale.

The truth was, Fang Yuan was the one who caused this situation.

Since rebirth, Fang Yuan had been gaining victories over Heavenly Court multiple times, Star Constellation’s will felt a huge threat from this and awakened many Gu Immortals in advance.

It was unlike the previous life when Longevity Heaven attacked, in which Heavenly Court had fallen into a crisis and had to awaken many Gu Immortals in a hurry, they were unable to display their true battle strength.

# **Chapter 1926 - Northern Plains“ Retaliation**

## **1926 Northern Plains“ Retaliation**

“Quickly stop them!” Fang Di Chang shouted.

Western Desert’s Immortal Gu Houses tried their best to stop Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi.

But in front of them, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were putting up a tight defense.

Roar!

Zhang Fei Xiong turned into a giant, obstructing an Immortal Gu House relentlessly.

Crack crack crack!

Flesh Whip Immortal turned into an immemorial walking meat tree, she waved her branches and whipped at the Immortal Gu Houses, they were knocked about and spinning around all over the place.

Bam bam bam...

All kinds of immortal killer moves erupted, as if they were large bursts of fireworks, incomparably splendid and powerful.

These were all rank eight killer moves of Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals, the Immortal Gu Houses of Western Desert suffered a serious obstruction, inevitably hesitating.

Taking advantage of this time, Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi finished their preparation and unleashed their immortal killer move, sitting and eating the mountain empty.

Western Desert's Gu Immortals were hit again, they then helplessly watched as a giant pillar of starlight shot down, teleporting away the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

At the next moment, they returned to Heavenly Court.

As the Gu Immortals healed their wounds, they exchanged conversations.

"It's really getting harder and harder to use the killer move, sitting and eating the mountain empty."

"After all, the other side has elites of an entire region, so they cannot be underestimated. As the saying goes, if a fool suffers sufficient losses, he will become wiser."

"But their strength has also been weakened quite badly, so they probably won't be able to hold out after two more times."

The Gu Immortals were full of morale, and the more they fought, the higher their spirits became.

Guh.

At this moment, Qin Song's face turned pale and he coughed out a small mouthful of blood.

His blood was yellowish brown, and there were countless small insects jumping around in the blood foam.

"Senior Qin, are you injured?" Zhou Xiong Xin, who was standing right next to Qin Song, asked with concern.

Zhou Xiong Xin was dressed in a white robe, he had a strong physique and a squarish face with thick eyebrows. In his last battle with Fang Yuan, he activated the fastest battlefield killer move in the world, rumor cage, and once caused Fang Yuan to fall into a dangerous battle. In the end, Fang Yuan was even more calculating and used the arrangements left by the organization Defy to plot and kill Zhou Xiong Xin.

But this time, Fang Yuan was reborn, Zhou Xiong Xin was thus alive and one of the many Gu Immortals that fought along with Heavenly Court.

Qin Song weakly shook his head: “This is an old injury, it is not from the fight earlier.”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals all gathered around to check on Qin Song’s state, even Fairy Zi Wei came here.

Qin Song was the key person now.

The reason why Heavenly Court was able to display such a powerful star cast killer move was not only with the help of the related formation and Star Constellation Chessboard, but also relying on Qin Song’s strength.

Qin Song was most skilled at teleportation.

In the previous life, he was the one who brought the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals on a long journey to quickly make their way to Di Zang Sheng. At that time, he did not have his complete set of Immortal Gu, he used killer moves without caring about his own condition, causing him to die prematurely.

This life, however, he had awakened earlier, the situation was much better. Not only were his Immortal Gu comprehensive, he also got to use an advanced lifespan extension method.

Qin Song’s seniority was very high, he had gone into hibernation long ago. During his hibernation, Heavenly Court had many new findings and improvement in their research on lifespan extension methods.

As time passed, there were bound to be improvements.

As a result, Qin Song's lifespan was extended to a certain extent, but the repeated battles made him repeatedly exert himself, and his health declined rapidly. His lifespan was greatly reduced.

"Based on your current physical state, I'm afraid you can only use four movement killer moves at most. Beyond that number, your flesh and soul will all collapse." Fairy Zi Wei calculated for a moment and spoke.

"Four times?" Qin Song smiled and coughed out another mouthful of yellow blood with a calm demeanor: "It is enough to defeat Western Desert, and there's still room to spare, so maybe we can deal a blow to Southern Border as well! Or maybe Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals. As for after my death, it will be up to all of you."

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were silent.

Only Flesh Whip Immortal grinned: "Don't worry, Old Man Qin, I'm here."

There was nothing they could do about Qin Song's state. The cause behind all of this was his old injury, an injury that he had brought with him from exploring Reckless Savage's grave, it could not be treated in the past, and now it was still fatal.

Fairy Zi Wei, however, did not order a further attack, she was pondering in her head.

Without Qin Song, Heavenly Court would not have the ability to teleport in groups. Relying on Star Constellation Chessboard alone would be too inefficient and it would seriously reduce her own ability to deduce and calculate.

Fairy Zi Wei had experience in using star cast, this killer move consumed too many thoughts. If she had to use this killer move, she would no longer have the extra energy to look over the big picture.

This was clearly not worth it for Heavenly Court.

It would be fine if it was just one battlefield, but Heavenly Court was fighting in at least three battlefields, they were facing not only the powerful elites of the four regions, there was still Fang Yuan, the demon who had yet to do anything.

As the leader and strategist of Heavenly Court in both the previous life and this life, Fairy Zi Wei had to oversee the whole situation.

“What a pity, there is no wisdom path Gu Immortal awakening in the immortal graveyard this time.”

“Fang Yuan has yet to make a move, and Qi Sea Ancestor has made no movements either. If we waste Qin Song early at this time, it will be bad if there is a sudden change in the battle in the future.”

Fairy Zi Wei pondered deeply, unwilling to expend a key force like Qin Song in advance.

She always considered one thing: Fang Yuan possessed a killer move using Fixed Immortal Travel, as well as the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel, he could quickly appear in any place in Central Continent.

If Heavenly Court preserved the remaining uses of their star cast method, when they deal with Fang Yuan in the future, it would be much easier.

“Right now, we have four battlefields, they are in Heavenly Court, Hairy Foot Mountain, Emperor City, and Hidden Dragon Cave.” Fairy Zi Wei looked around, analyzing as she spoke.

“Of these four battlefields, Heavenly Court’s battlefield is the most important. Once we are breached and fate Gu gets destroyed by Longevity Heaven, all hope is lost.”

“The second most important is Hairy Foot Mountain. If Infallible blessed land is destroyed and we don’t refine enough success dao marks, it will have a huge impact on our ability to repair Fate. However, this is not irrevocable. Even if the Infallible blessed land is destroyed and we don’t

have enough success dao marks, fate Gu would still be alive. In the future, with new developments in refinement path, we might be able to find other ways to repair fate Gu.”

“After that is Emperor City. The Western Desert immortals are moving with their forces aimed straight at Emperor City. But after our repeated strikes, their vigor has been lost. Emperor City itself is already heavily guarded and defended by human path methods left by venerables. Even if it is destroyed and the elites are all dead, it is not very important. In a hundred years, more elites will emerge.”

“Finally, there is Hidden Dragon Cave. Although there are many Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals, they are not looking to kill and only want to seek gains. The formation and Old Man Bei Feng alone won’t be able to defend against them, but delaying them for a while is more than enough. During this period of time, we only needed to support them once to stabilize the situation over there.”

A Gu Immortal asked: “So, what is your decision?”

Fairy Zi Wei cast her gaze towards Calamity Luck Altar in the qi wall: “Let’s take care of Longevity Heaven first! With Heavenly Court secure and fate Gu safe, even if the situation outside is completely lost, we will always be in an impregnable position.”

After a pause, she continued: “In addition to that, it will also allow Senior Qin Song to preserve his health, preventing Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor from suddenly making a move .”

“Great!”

“These are truly the words of a great strategist.”

“I’m also feeling uneasy about trapping Calamity Luck Altar in our headquarters. After all, they are the descendants of Giant Sun, so they might unleash a surprising attack anytime.”

“We will listen to you!”

After listening carefully, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals all approved of this plan.

As a result, the immortals stopped attacking at a long range, they entered the qi wall and fought Longevity Heaven fiercely.

The qi wall in Heavenly Court was left behind by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable. After so many years, except for the three paths that were opened by the three venerables, the rest of the qi wall was still strong and enduring.

And even worse was that the qi wall still retained its autonomous abilities.

Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were allowed to move freely in it, while Longevity Heaven's Gu Immortals were restricted by a strong force.

There was a hemispherical battlefield in the qi wall, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals bombarded Calamity Luck Altar with a barrage of attacks with their backs against the wall.

Once Calamity Luck Altar retaliates, these Gu Immortals would rapidly retreat, entering the qi wall and using it to block Calamity Luck Altar's attack.

Because of this, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were able to attack with their full strength, Calamity Luck Altar's surface was filled with cracks.

As an rank eight Immortal Gu House, Calamity Luck Altar itself was extremely sturdy, and it was created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable himself, so it had a clear advantage in charging. It was simply unreasonable.

But all along, it was always obstructed by a Gu Immortal.

This person was Duke Long!

His body was slowly growing minute by minute, his face was like iron, his body was robust, and the defense of violet-gold dragon scales all over his body was extremely amazing.



Transformation path killer moves were being unleashed as he desired. The moves were domineering and fierce, blocking Calamity Luck Altar firmly.

Be they Calamity Luck Altar or killer moves of Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals that he was in range of, he held firm, as if he was a pillar of heaven, all of the rank eight killer moves felt like just a light breeze.

In the previous life, Duke Long and the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals fought for Dragon Palace, and although he succeeded, he was seriously injured. By the time the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was held, Duke Long was still injured, so his performance in battle was not so shocking at the start.

In this life, because Fang Yuan had obtained Dragon Palace in advance, Duke Long was in a fully intact state and could attack Calamity Luck Altar to the point where it could not inch forward.

"Duke Long... is actually so strong!" Bing Sai Chuan was livid.

The accompanying Bull Demon, Flower Lady, and Five Elements Grandmaster were all desperately trying their best to repair Calamity Luck Altar.

"This won't work. Without breaking through the barrier in front of us, we won't be able to get close to Heaven Overseeing Tower." In Calamity Luck Altar, Mao Li Qiu lay down on the ground, yelling out in dissatisfaction.

Bing Sai Chuan struggled for a while internally before he sighed: "There is no other way, activate the killer move call of the ancient."

Calamity Luck Altar suddenly stood still and abruptly exploded with a round of golden light.

The light was so dazzling that it caused Duke Long to squint his eyes.

Swish swish swish...

The sound of river waves surging through the battlefield resounded.

The phantom image of a segment of the grand River of Time appeared above Calamity Luck Altar.

“This is?!” Duke Long’s heart was slightly shaken.

Then, following the astonished eyes of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals walked out of the phantom River of Time one by one.

“Come on, eat one of my explosive lightning bolts!” The tall-bodied Nu Er Bao Xiong laughed wildly.

“To think that I can use this move to come to the future and participate in a huge battle, I am truly fortunate.” Hei Fan had a slight smile.

“Wow! What a huge battle, oh heavens, I better hide somewhere.” Liu Liu Liu had a delicate white face, he had a crafty look as his body vanished on the spot.

# **Chapter 1927 - Asking Fang Yuan for Reinforcements**

## **1927 Asking Fang Yuan for Reinforcements**

“What happened?”

“These are all historically famous experts from Northern Plains, they’ve actually been summoned here!”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were all surprised.

Duke Long said in a deep voice: “Attention everyone, this is Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s time path killer move, call of the ancient. It can summon closely related Gu Immortals from the upstream of the River of Time to the present to fight for the user!”

“That’s interesting.” Flesh Whip Immortal licked her lips, her fighting spirit surging as she rushed up.

“Let me do it.” Zhang Fei Xiong transformed into a giant, together with Flesh Whip Immortal, they crashed into Calamity Luck Altar from the left and right.

But at this time, Calamity Luck Altar was already guarded.

Nu Er Bao Xiong roared wildly and used his immortal killer move, lightning balls flew everywhere, exploding fiercely.

For a moment, Flesh Whip Immortal and Zhang Fei Xiong were both blocked by the lightning balls, their attacks were thwarted.

Zhu Que Er squealed and used her movement killer move, drawing a bright and stunning red trail of light through the air and circling behind Calamity Luck Altar.

“Don’t even think about it.” A male immortal stepped out of the phantom River of Time to block Zhu Que Er.

He had a handsome face like jade, graceful and dashing, his gaze carried a faint smile, it was Dong Fang Yu.

Boom boom boom!

Zhu Que Er and Dong Fang Yu fought a fierce battle.

Immortal killer move — Sitting and Eating the Mountain Empty!

In the distance, Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi joined forces once again and successfully activated the killer move.

The killer move worked on Calamity Luck Altar with very little effect. Calamity Luck Altar was worthy of being created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, its defense against food path was quite strong.

Ye Qiao Zi’s killer moves followed one after another. Wooden stakes were created out of thin air, forming a circle to trap Calamity Luck Altar.

Ye Qiao Zi grunted in a low tone again, and countless bright green vines grew from the wooden stakes, wrapping around Calamity Luck Altar and spreading upwards in an attempt to stain the phantom River of Time.

“It’s useless. This phantom River of Time cannot be attacked, only by defeating Calamity Luck Altar which is sustaining it can we put an end to this move.” Duke Long was about to make a move.

But another Heavenly Court Gu Immortal suddenly teleported towards the phantom River of Time.

This Gu Immortal resembled a child with black hair, he had a small cowlick on the top of his head, his face was round and cute. It was none other than Vortex Space Boy.

His aura surged as a huge vortex appeared above it had, it had an immense suction force that destroyed anything that got drawn into it.

But the phantom River of Time remained unmoved, completely unaffected.

Another newly appeared Northern Plains Gu Immortal had just walked out, he could not react in time before the vortex sucked him in.

“Hahaha, at least I had some gains.” Vortex Space Boy laughed as he exerted even more force.

Nian Er tribe’s expert was trapped inside — Nian Er Nong Fu.

He looked like an old farmer, his pants were rolled up, his legs were covered in mud, his back was hunched, wrinkles covered his face.

Trapped at this moment, he sighed: “Oh my, I’m going to die in battle as soon as I get out. Seriously? Of all the Northern Plains Gu Immortals, I’m the least proficient at fighting.”

The small face of Vortex Space Boy puffed up as he did his best to grind and crush Nian Er Nong Fu.

Nian Er Nong Fu was guarded by a pale yellow halo of light, it was thin but very strong, firmly resisting the crazy force of the spinning vortex.

Another Gu Immortal came out from the illusory River of Time, seeing that Nian Er Nong Fu was trapped, he was about to rescue him.

However, Heavenly Court Gu Immortal Zhou Xiong Xin also arrived in time to stop the man.

Ye Lui Kou also came out, his skin was dark and his eyes were like a falcon, scanning the battlefield, he suddenly found the weakest Gu Immortal in Heavenly Court, Qin Song.

Qin Song's weakened state was hard to conceal.

Ye Lui Kou sneered and attacked Qin Song straight away.

"Your opponent is me." A beautiful female immortal intercepted Ye Lui Kou while he was on his way.

Ye Lui Kou gazed at the female immortal, feeling a certain threat to his life: "Who are you?"

The female immortal smiled fawningly, but her words were murderous: "Your killer — Wan Zi Hong!"

As the two fought, golden light flashed and petals flew.

Figures flew in the sky or fought on the ground.

Intense explosions continued to resound, sparks were flying, bright lights were flashing.

Northern Plains' Gu Immortal experts fought against Heavenly Court's members.

Rumble!

Zhang Fei Xiong's flesh was torn by Nu Er Bao Xiong's explosions.

Crack crack crack!

Flesh Whip Immortal smacked Yuan Ben so hard that the white bone armor Yuan Ben was wearing got smashed to pieces, he was forced to retreat.

Nian Er Nong Fu was still resisting, while Vortex Space Boy was gritting his teeth, refusing to give up.

Surrounding the two who were deadlocked in battle, several Gu Immortals were also engaged in a fight.

The Gu Immortals were all beginning to suffer injuries, the air was filled with the thick smell of blood.

“Even though I used the killer move, call of the ancient, I am actually being pressured!” Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth, his heart growing heavier.

The trump card he had pinned his hopes on did not turn the tables around, it only saved him from defeat and deadlocked the situation.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had awakened hastily from the immortal graveyard, and despite the emergency deployment of the Immortal Gu by Fairy Zi Wei, their battle strength was still crippled.

But this life was different, these Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had great battle strength and were in good condition, enough to fight with the strong Northern Plains and even suppress them. After all, there had been a lot of cooperation between the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, while Northern Plains’ historically powerful experts had just been summoned, they had heard of each other at most, in their own lives, how could they have worked together?

“This can’t continue. The longer call of the ancient lasts, the more experts it will continue to summon into battle.” Fairy Zi Wei frowned, feeling both worried and glad.

Thankfully, she had placed priority on dealing with Longevity Heaven, this killer move was really troublesome. If they had used star cast earlier, the loss of Qin Song and the scattering of Heavenly Court’s experts would likely allow Longevity Heaven to succeed and rush out of the qi wall.

After all, there were few Gu Immortals left in Heavenly Court, and Yuan Qiong Du and the others had to preside over the refinement path Gu formation, the only main force that could block Calamity Luck Altar was Duke Long.

Duke Long gazed at the phantom River of Time for a while, before slowly withdrawing his gaze.

He sighed in his heart, he could not unravel this killer move, it was like how he could not deal with the ‘support of the future’ killer move that Red Lotus Demon Venerable used back then.

“If it can’t be broken directly, then all we need to do is to demolish Calamity Luck Altar.” Thinking of this, Duke Long slowly clenched his fists and stepped into the battlefield.

Ye Qiao Zi suddenly coughed blood, the killer move backlash caused him to suffer heavy injuries.

He had been cooperating with Duke Long to investigate and restrain Calamity Luck Altar. But how could the rank eight Immortal Gu House be so easily restrained?

Ye Qiao Zi had to retreat into the qi wall, while Calamity Luck Altar stirred, trying to break through the qi wall.

Duke Long silently approached Calamity Luck Altar.

“Block him!” Bing Sai Chuan ordered coldly.

He was someone from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s generation, while most of the experts of Northern Plains were descendants of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, so they naturally listened to him.

Nu Er Bao Xiong was the first to strike, hundreds of lightning balls smashed towards Duke Long.

Boom boom boom!

With a series of deafening explosions, smoke and dust rose, Nu Er Bao Xiong laughed wildly: “Have you tasted my power yet? Hahaha... uh.”

A figure gradually walked out of the smoke and dust.



Duke Long's face was indifferent, his body as straight as a spear, his violet-gold dragon scales still gleaming, leaving only a trace of ash at most.

Nu Er Bao Xiong was furious, he stared with glaring eyes, his aura soaring wildly: "Take this move from me again!"

He held his hands above his head and countless thunderbolts gathered into a huge deep blue lightning ball.

The surface of the lightning ball was lingering with electricity, but inside it was dark and deep, Nu Er Bao Xiong threw it like a meteor shooting towards Duke Long.

Duke Long was finally willing to avert his gaze, but only gave a glance at the lightning ball.

He waved his hand.

Rumble!

The air currents soared, forming a big hand, and with a slap on the back of his hand, the lightning ball was sent flying far away with ease.

Nu Er Bao Xiong's powerful killer move was thus dealt with by Duke Long.

At the next moment, Yu Yang Zi, Liu Hui, and Liu Liu Liu attacked one after another, while Duke Long went straight to Calamity Luck Altar without looking at them.

Only by destroying Calamity Luck Altar would call of the ancient be stopped!

Boom!

Calamity Luck Altar was punched by Duke Long and sunk into the ground.

A fist crater appeared on the surface of the Immortal Gu House, a large number of Gu worms died in battle, even the Immortal Gu were damaged.

The killer moves of the Northern Plains experts seemed like a downpour of rain, drowning Duke Long.

But after the continuous bombardment, Duke Long was still standing, only a light layer of soot was added on his face.

“How is this possible?”

“How can this person be so strong!”

“He is Duke Long, the master of Red Lotus Demon Venerable!”

Someone identified Duke Long as the Gu Immortals of Northern Plains drew a sharp breath of cold air.

He was an old monster!

But at the next moment, the morale of the people of Northern Plains soared again. They had a brave nature, the stronger Duke Long was, the more excited they became.

“Kill! Kill! Kill!”

“Decapitate this old fellow!”

“Protect Calamity Luck Altar and break out of the qi wall.”

The Northern Plains Gu Immortals roared wildly, fighting to break out and setting off a flurry of attacks.

“These Northern Plains lunatics!”

“Hmph, brutish cavemen.”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had to retreat and back off for a while.

Faced with the relentless spirit of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals to fight to the death, Duke Long could not continue to ignore it this time.

He snorted lightly: “Annoying pests.”

As soon as his words fell, the aura around him changed.

Qi currents rushed and spread everywhere, while Duke Long’s body became firm like a mountain, his aura soared rapidly.

The killer move was prepared as Duke Long waved his hand.

Whoosh—!

Air was forcefully pushed aside, five grand qi waves flew forward overbearingly.

Everywhere they went, the killer moves of Northern Plains’ experts broke apart like paper, they could not stop the qi waves.

It was immortal killer move — Qi Current Scissors!

Duke Long extended his hand to the sky and pointed.

Immortal killer move — Qi Breath Mountain.

Rumble!

A huge translucent mountain created from qi currents descended and pressed down immediately.

The Northern Plains Gu Immortals wanted to escape, but several of them could not dodge, they were pushed down by the qi breath mountain as it crashed towards Calamity Luck Altar, turning into meat paste on the spot.

The entire mountain of qi currents pressed down on Calamity Luck Altar so hard that the ground was shaking violently.

Calamity Luck Altar was originally ready to attack, but now, it was immobilized.

Duke Long unleashed two moves in a row, the effect was immediate, he suppressed the entire battle.

Bing Sai Chuan's expression was livid, his heart sank to rock bottom. He now realized that they could not break through the qi wall with their own strength alone! Ignoring the other Gu Immortals, just Duke Long alone was a mountain they could not pass.

It was not that Bing Sai Chuan had no other trump cards.

In the previous life, he asked Limitless to turn around, restraining Duke Long for a long time, he was unable to move entirely.

But in this life, Calamity Luck Altar was too far away from Imperfection Regret Pavilion, this method could not be used. In the previous life, Calamity Luck Altar reached Central Great Hall before asking for Limitless' help.

"We can only ask Fang Yuan for help!" Bing Sai Chuan had a thought in his mind.

# **Chapter 1928 - Fang Yuan Takes Action**

## **1928 Fang Yuan Takes Action**

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had once told Bing Sai Chuan: If the plan to attack Heavenly Court fails, and Longevity Heaven loses all hope of getting fate Gu, they would need to ask the crucial person for reinforcement.

“Who is the crucial person?” Back then, Bing Sai Chuan asked this question.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable then answered him: “Whoever destroys Eighty-Eight True Yang Building is the crucial person. When the time comes, you will definitely know.”

Longevity Heaven’s plan was to refine destiny Gu, they needed to snatch fate Gu first.

But unlike the previous life, Bing Sai Chuan had suffered a serious setback this time. He had no choice but to ask for help from Fang Yuan.

By the time he received the letter from Bing Sai Chuan, Fang Yuan was already in Central Continent, hiding inside a formation of the organization Defy.

This large formation was set up by Shadow Sect and left for Defy to use as a base camp. However, after the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Shadow Sect

perished, Defy was uprooted by Fairy Zi Wei, resulting in this formation turning vacant.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan used this formation to successfully kill Zhou Xiong Xin. In this life, the situation had changed and Fang Yuan retreated early, not tangling with Zhou Xiong Xin too much in order to guard against the killer move people's accusation. As a result, Zhou Xiong Xin survived and became a fierce member of the main force of Heavenly Court, while this formation in Defy was preserved.

“To think that Longevity Heaven would encounter such trouble.” Fang Yuan's eyes flickered as he rapidly pondered.

He had been unaware of the situation in Heavenly Court now, this letter containing Bing Sai Chuan's request for help described their precarious predicament in detail.

Compared to the previous life, Fang Yuan soon found the key to Longevity Heaven's problem, they were relocated into the qi wall the moment they arrived.

“It should be because of Qin Ding Ling. With a luck path Gu Immortal like her, Heavenly Court could find out Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's arrangement in advance, they even managed to use this to ambush Longevity Heaven instead.” Fang Yuan understood.

“This is yet another change.”

“There is also call of the ancient... so it turns out that once Calamity Luck Altar activates it, it can teleport immediately. In the previous life, Bing Sai Chuan used this against Duke Long.”

Before getting this information, Fang Yuan had been wondering about Heavenly Court's method to use star cast on a large scale, trying to find a way to break it.

How greatly Fairy Zi Wei valued it and did everything possible to preserve the method was how greatly Fang Yuan wanted to destroy it!

By now, Fang Yuan had deduced that this formation was in Heavenly Court, with the core being Star Constellation Chessboard and the countless stars scattered in the sky. The power of the formation was projected onto these stars, using them as the springboard to create a large scale star cast effect.

Fang Yuan did not deduce that Qin Song was the key figure.

In his previous life, Qin Song made a very brief appearance and died after escorting the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals to Hidden Dragon Cave.

Later, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals did not inform Fang Yuan of this information.

Lacking this crucial clue, Fang Yuan's deduction had hit an impasse.

But now he had become somewhat aware of it.

“According to the information conveyed by Bing Sai Chuan, although Fairy Zi Wei did not participate in the siege, she also appeared outside the qi wall to observe the battle. That's a bit strange, this massive use of star cast should exert all her effort, yet she's still able to distract herself.”

“Someone is helping her!”

“Who is that? Is there another wisdom path great expert? Or did others cooperate to create a successful large scale use of star cast?”

Fang Yuan quickly threw away this train of thought.

Now was not the time to contemplate this question, he had to make a decision as soon as possible!

As a wisdom path Gu Immortal, Fang Yuan was now like a chess player who was playing against Fairy Zi Wei.

Both sides had their own chess pieces.

Fairy Zi Wei was clearly a number of pieces ahead, not only in her own wisdom path attainment, but also Heavenly Court's unity, and in the current

situation, she had a distinct advantage.

Fang Yuan had a seemingly huge force at his disposal, but in reality, they were fighting on their own, he could only exert influence and push his agenda on the people of the four regions subtly.

Although his subordinates were numerous and far surpassed the previous life, few were qualified to participate in a battle of such a level.

Fang Yuan fully considered the entire Central Continent battlefield once again.

In Infallible blessed land, the Southern Border Gu Immortals entered the battlefield and fought, breaking formations one after another, but this was not a concern for the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, there were endless sub-formations.

In the battlefield of Hidden Dragon Cave, the Eastern Sea immortals were trapped in a large formation and were struggling to break it. However, it was clear that Old Man Bei Feng could still hold on for a while longer.

As for Emperor City's battlefield, the Western Desert Gu Immortals were still on their way, their morale was low too.

In Heavenly Court's battlefield, Longevity Heaven was completely at a disadvantage, and since they were ambushed by Heavenly Court, they had completely lost the initiative.

"Of the four main battlefields, the most important is still Heavenly Court's battlefield. Fate Gu is in Heavenly Court, if we want to win this battle, we must destroy fate Gu." Fang Yuan thought, just like Fairy Zi Wei's analysis, both sides knew where the most important place was.

"That being the case, we cannot lose in Heavenly Court! Longevity Heaven's performance is so disappointing, I was hoping that they would cause problems for Heavenly Court and trigger Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's painting path methods first."



Fang Yuan knew that he had to support Bing Sai Chuan even though he had deceived Fang Yuan for his own interests in the previous life, and also in this current life. For the sake of the entire situation, Fang Yuan had to provide support.

Heavenly Court battlefield.

Immortal killer move — Chaotic Dragon Fist!

Steel fists shook Calamity Luck Altar, the force of the punch caused tremors as countless Gu worms perished instantly.

Within Calamity Luck Altar, Mao Li Qiu shouted: “Let me out! Let me hold him back.”

Bing Sai Chuan had a cold expression and shook his head: “No, you are no match for him. You’ll be courting death if you go. You’re not like the others, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals will target you.”

Duke Long ignored Northern Plains’ generations of experts, he let the other Heavenly Court members deal with them.

Heavenly Court knew clearly that they could only stop call of the ancient by destroying Calamity Luck Altar.

But once Mao Li Qiu entered battle, it would be different. It was a fierce general of Longevity Heaven, it had great strength and killing Mao Li Qiu would greatly weaken Longevity Heaven, he would definitely take action.

Immortal killer move — World Shaking Dragon Hammer!

Duke Long shouted, he raised his fists above his head and smashed down like a giant hammer.

The surface of Calamity Luck Altar shattered, a huge amount of Gu worms died, their carcasses flying everywhere. A large hole was smashed open on the surface of Calamity Luck Altar, it was only the size of a finger but the inside could be seen!

Duke Long roared: “Longevity Heaven, only defeat awaits you. This outcome was already predetermined from the moment you tried to attack Heavenly Court.”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals cheered, their morale climbing to its peak.

“The might of Duke Long is overwhelming!” Bing Sai Chuan sighed long and hard, feeling a sense of powerlessness.

“Why hasn’t Fang Yuan come to support us?” Five Elements Grandmaster called out, inevitably revealing a sense of trepidation.

“As far as I know, Fang Yuan is only rank seven, even if he repeatedly defeated Heavenly Court, he was only taking advantage of the River of Time. If he comes to support us, will he really be able to change the battle situation? Even if he brings out Myriad Year Flying Warship, the other side has Duke Long.” Bull Demon spoke, expressing doubt.

Indeed, as of now, it would be difficult to resist Duke Long with just two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses.

Duke Long’s battle strength was too astounding!

What was even more unbelievable to them was that with every passing moment, Duke Long grew stronger endlessly.

This was unreasonable!

Mao Li Qiu snorted: “That lad took Reverse Flow River in front of my very eyes, at least with that killer move alone, even if he’s only rank seven, he can resist Duke Long and take the pressure off us.”

“Fang Yuan will definitely support us.” Bing Sai Chuan smiled: “I don’t know much about him, but I believe in Lord Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!”

Just as this was said, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals actually began to retreat.

They had the qi wall to rely on, thus retreating quite smoothly.

Soon, only Duke Long was left on the scene.

In the meantime, Zi Wei Fairy dispatched urgently: “Quick, we must send support quickly. The nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation in Infallible blessed land is about to collapse! Hidden Dragon Cave’s formation is also facing destruction!”

Zhou Xiong Xin and the others were shocked as someone asked: “How could the situation change for the worse so quickly?”

Fairy Zi Wei said: “Fang Yuan is making a move.”

“Oh? Even so, the unceasing formation won’t collapse so swiftly!”

“He showed up in person?”

“Let’s take him out! We will kill this source of chaos for the sake of the world!”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were all excited.

Previously, Fang Yuan had repeatedly defeated Heavenly Court, causing many of the Gu Immortals to become angry. After Fang Yuan relied on his knowledge to extend his advantage in the River of Time, Heavenly Court lost the lead and failed miserably during the battle of the stone lotus island, suffering huge losses.

Now that the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was held, Fang Yuan had to attack. The battlefield was placed in Central Continent, the Gu Immortals were eager to see how much territorial advantage Fang Yuan could exploit this time!

But Fairy Zi Wei shook her head slightly: “Fang Yuan has not shown himself, I’m afraid the ones outside are only his subordinates.”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were stunned.

Mere subordinates could cause the two immortal formations to break apart?

Fairy Zi Wei explained: “In Hidden Dragon Cave, Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace appeared, they used a large number of dream realms to erode the formation.”

The truth dawned on the immortals, they had an understanding of Fang Yuan’s dream realm methods.

They had already expected this, dream path was an era ahead, it was only natural that the formation would be broken.

“But we have Feng Jin Huang guarding the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation. Although she’s only a rank five Gu Master, she can use the power of the immortal formation to unleash the dream path killer move shatter dream, and transform dream realms into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.” Zhou Xiong Xin expressed his confusion.

Fairy Zi Wei said in a complex tone: “That’s because he did not use dream path methods against the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, but rule path instead.”

“Rule path?!” Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals gasped in amazement once again.

“Rule path?” Within the Infallible blessed land battlefield, the Southern Alliance immortals looked at the formation in front of them with great surprise.

They had broken several formations in a row, but they had learned from Fang Yuan that this was the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, while they were feeling annoyed and troubled, this nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation broke apart on its own.

When they exited the formation, the Southern Alliance immortals saw a large formation suspended high in the sky, constantly emitting a five-colored smoke miasma.

The smoke miasma infiltrated the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, forcing Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals to dismantle the sub-formations on their own.

“These are reinforcements of Fang Yuan, this formation was created by Southern Border Gu Immortal Tao Zhu, it is called the five regional limit formation, it can emit a smoke miasma and create a formation similar to the environment of the five regions' regional walls.” Wu Yong received a letter from Fang Yuan at this time and explained with a rather complicated expression.

# **Chapter 1929 - Evil Dragon Escapes**

## **1929 Evil Dragon Escapes**

“To think that there would be such an amazing formation that can counter the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation!”

“To think that our Southern Border’s Gu Immortal, Tao Zhu, created it...”

“It seems that we had greatly underestimated this person.”

“Fang Yuan actually possesses this method, when did he get it?”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals conversed as they sighed in amazement.

Fang Yuan had extorted and blackmailed them, but now it was Fang Yuan who had stepped in to support them, which made the Southern Border Gu Immortals all feel quite complicated.

At this moment, the voice of Zhan Bu Du came from within the five regional limit formation: “Southern Border, please do not lower your guard yet. Heavenly Court will not sit around as they lose control of this battlefield, they will surely send reinforcements.”

“In that case, please also open the immortal formation and let us defend within it.” A Southern Border Gu Immortal replied.

Zhan Bu Du smiled lightly, not hiding his contempt in the slightest: “There is no need to say such naive words. Whether you all fight or retreat, it depends on your willingness. If you don’t want to fight, just scram.”

“You...” The Southern Border Gu Immortal who answered had a change of expression from anger.

At this moment, more than ten giant pillars of starlight shone down, the main force of the Heavenly Court really did come to help out!

“This is the formation! Tear it down!” Zhang Fei Xiong took the lead.

Zhan Bu Du was silent and began to activate the formation with his concentration, the five-colored smoke miasma not only defended itself but also spread incessantly to the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

Even though the latter formation was created by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, it had to dismantle the sub-formations at the moment, it was stalling for as much time as possible.

“Let’s take action and do our best to protect the five regional limit formation.” Wu Yong did not hesitate and immediately ordered.

“Lord, but this is Fang Yuan. Haven’t you been opposing...” Someone was unwilling.

Wu Yong gave this person a fierce stare and spoke in a stern tone, “Everything is for the big picture!”

His prestige was high, Wu clan was also the number one force in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, their leadership had become a tradition.

The Southern Alliance Gu Immortals immediately engaged in a fierce battle with the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

With their help, Zhan Bu Du was relieved internally, the pressure on his shoulders dissipated mostly, and the five-colored smoke miasma spread even more menacingly.

With the cry of a phoenix, flames dazzled and the figure of Prince Feng Xian appeared.

He had sharp eyes and a golden cloak on his back, he opened his mouth to breathe out a monstrous flame.

The flames burned in the five-colored smoke miasma, sweeping towards the immortals of Southern Border.

A rank eight Gu Immortal of Southern Border, Yi Hao Fang, immediately transformed into a sea beast and rode the water waves to stop the flames from spreading.

Jun Shen Guang transformed into a white light, moving through the battlefield, avoiding the four rank eights of Southern Border and attacking the remaining rank seven Gu Immortals.

Moving along with him were Zhou Xiong Xin, Zhu Que Er and others.

Unfixed Manor, Flying Sand Pavilion, and Bay Pavilion were all taken out as Southern Border's rank seven Gu Immortals quickly entered them.

“Ahhh!”

A scream was heard as Vortex Space Boy carried the head of a Southern Border Gu Immortal in his hand.

Taking advantage of this moment, the rest of the Southern Border rank seven immortals entered the Immortal Gu Houses.

“You guys are moving too slowly.” Vortex Space Boy looked at Zhou Xiong Xin and the others as he chuckled.

“Where are you going?!” Wu Yong snorted coldly and chased after him.

Vortex Space Boy retaliated with an immortal killer move, obviously prepared in advance.



Wu Yong raised his hand similarly, setting off a roaring tornado of wind blades, the two killer moves collided with a loud bang, air currents surged, the five-colored smoke miasma rumbled like a dragon.

Vortex Space Boy and Wu Yong grunted at the same time and their faces turned pale.

Immortal killer move — Sitting and Eating the Mountain Empty!

Taking advantage of this time, Zhao Shan He teamed up with Yu Zhu Zi once again to display this powerful killer move.

“Even if you have Immortal Gu Houses, so what?” Yu Zhu Zi snorted coldly.

All the Immortals in the Southern Border Immortal Gu Houses were hit by this move and their faces changed color, their Gu worms and immortal essence were all rapidly depleting out of thin air.

Wu Yong’s pupils shrunk, he advanced instead of retreating: “Defend me!”

Ba De and Chi Qu You immediately moved to his side.

The Immortal Gu Houses stayed at the periphery.

“Stop him!” Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were all experienced in battle, Wu Yong immediately drew all their firepower as he looked like he was about to launch a powerful killer move.

Chi Qu You and Ba De struggled to resist them but soon lost the ability to continue holding them off.

One of them was a formation path Gu Immortal while the other had just advanced to rank eight, how could they be a match for the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals?

In terms of strength alone, Heavenly Court was clearly superior to the immortals of Southern Border. Fortunately, Southern Border had Immortal Gu Houses as well as the five-colored smoke miasma created by Zhan Bu

Du, they were huge obstacles for both sides to fight with their full strength, the difference in strength between the two sides was somehow balanced.

However, even though the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals knew well that the stronger the attacks they used in this miasma, the deeper the backlash they would suffer, they were still brave enough to fight to the death, having a relentless stance as they approached the five regional limit formation without any fear of their lives.

After some time, the Southern Border immortals' battle formation started to show signs of crumbling.

Wan Zi Hong suddenly gave a delicate cry as flower petals flew, attacking the Southern Border Immortal Gu Houses in front of her and forcing them to move aside, forcefully creating a path to move on.

Zhang Fei Xiong followed, transforming into a bear-headed giant and slamming into the five regional limit formation.

Boom!

There was a loud bang and the formation trembled viciously.

Massive amounts of Gu worms perished, even Zhan Bu Du suffered backlash, spitting out a large mouthful of blood.

“Ah, that hurts!” The Formation Spirit was in the main formation, it howled miserably as its body suddenly became much more illusory, no longer as solid as before.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were no better.

They also suffered enormous backlash, but one by one, they gritted their teeth and tried their best to destroy the five regional limit formation.

“Oh no, the Southern Alliance won't be able to defend against such a fierce attack from Heavenly Court.” Zhan Bu Du secretly gritted his teeth.

The main power of the five regional limit formation lay in the five-colored smoke miasma, although its defense was also strong, it would never last long under the fierce attack of these Gu Immortals.

“But even if that’s the case, I’ll fight to the death and try to stall for as long as possible.” Zhan Bu Du was already prepared to die.

Everything was for the big picture, even if it meant sacrificing this clone, he would have no regret.

Sacrifices should be made when necessary, clones were also merely chess pieces. It was just easier to fully utilize them.

Even if the five regional limit formation was broken and destroyed, it was still valuable.

On one hand, it temporarily maintained the Heavenly Court battlefield and protected Longevity Heaven’s members. On the other hand, it gave a crucial amount of time for the battlefield in Hidden Dragon Cave.

Hidden Dragon Cave.

A large amount of dream realms were eroding the battlefield, Old Man Bei Feng was livid but unable to do anything about it.

“Call for help, call for help, grandfather!” Feng Chan Zi shouted in a hurry, his face was pale and covered in cold sweat.

Old Man Bei Feng did not speak.

He had already requested for support, but Heavenly Court’s reinforcements were delayed, that did not make sense.

After all, Heavenly Court had a way to use a large scale star cast method, it would only take an instant for support to come over. If they did not appear at this time, they must have been held back by something.

A bad feeling filled Old Man Bei Feng’s heart.

Roar!

Already sensing the weakening of its bindings, the suppressed Di Zang Sheng within the formation was also struggling at this time, adding onto the burden of the formation.

Immortal killer move — Mountain Suppression!

Immortal killer move — Broken Mirror Shard Light!

Qing Yue An and Song Qi Yuan were the first to break through the restraints, and because of their efforts, the power of the formation was greatly weakened once again. The other Gu Immortals were able to successfully break through one after another.

The eight Immortals converged, and although they were still inside the formation, they had noticed the change.

“How could there be so many dream realms!” Zhang Yin pretended not to know and looked surprised.

“Perhaps Fang Yuan is helping us.” Shen Cong Sheng deliberately said, he had actually gotten a message from Fang Yuan: “Who else can control the dream realms besides him?”

“Why is Fang Yuan here!?” Hua Cai Yun frowned.

“As the saying goes, great people see eye to eye, he may also try to target Di Zang Sheng.” Qing Yue An guessed as he healed his wounds.

“Then let Fang Yuan go release Di Zang Sheng, should we withdraw now?” Hua Cai Yun hesitated.

Right at this moment, there was a loud rumble as an Immortal Gu House broke the formation, charging towards the formation core.

This Immortal Gu House was a majestic palace, emitting an orange-golden glow, it was overbearingly magnificent, and the surface of the palace was filled with dragon-shaped carvings.

Hua Cai Yun, Qing Yue An and the others were stunned, although they were seeing it for the first time, they all guessed the name of this Immortal Gu House at the same time — Dragon Palace!

There was a loud rumble as Dragon Palace crashed through the core area.

Old Man Bei Feng howled and fell to the ground, he suffered a strong backlash, he was currently in a terrible state, having less than ten percent of his battle strength left.

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

Dreamy light smoke, with a gentle movement, moved Old Man Bei Feng into the palace and sealed him with ease.

Feng Chan Zi who was beside Old Man Bei Feng also got swept into this smoke.

Seeing a rank eight Gu Immortal being suppressed so easily, the Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals could not help but show changes of expressions. Only half of them were genuine, while the other half were disguising their emotions as they knew about the truth.

Wu Shuai controlled Dragon Palace, and after capturing Old Man Bei Feng, he plunged down into the depths of the Earth Trench, ignoring the eight Eastern Sea immortals.

Qing Yue An and the others looked very pale, realizing that they were being used as cannon fodder and bait by Fang Yuan.

A moment later, they heard another deafening dragon roar, the earth shook as heaven and earth changed color, a huge Evil Dragon slowly rose up.

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals panicked and retreated, looking up.

The Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng was so huge that it was like a mountain range, flying high in the sky, enveloping heaven and earth, it could shroud the brilliance of the sun and moon!

Thankfully, Di Zang Sheng did not find trouble with the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals and flew directly to the west.

“Central Continent is in for a world of trouble, haha.”

“Strange, where did Dragon Palace go?”

“What? You want to fight against Fang Yuan? Let’s leave now.”

“You all saw the move that Dragon Palace just used to capture Old Man Bei Feng, right? It’s a dream path killer move!”

The Eastern Sea immortals stopped their conversation, they did not dare to stay longer.

Fang Yuan’s demonic might had shocked rank eights, after all, Heavenly Court had been defeated by Fang Yuan several times. Now that he used the methods of Dragon Palace, he shocked these unsuspecting Gu Immortals even more.

“Di Zang Sheng has been released, it will definitely create chaos in Central Continent, creating a good opportunity for us.”

“No, don’t forget how the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals appeared before the war started. I don’t want a dozen or so Heavenly Court rank eights suddenly appearing around me when I’m on the move.”

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were also communicating while flying away, they frowned when this was brought up.

They had originally planned to release Di Zang Sheng to deplete Central Continent’s foundation and attract firepower to facilitate their actions. But Heavenly Court possessed the method to use a large scale star cast, nullifying the effectiveness of this plan.

# Chapter 1930 - Qi Ci Lang

## 1930 Qi Ci Lang

To continue with their previous plan, Eastern Sea's immortals would have to first unravel Heavenly Court's method, otherwise, it would be too dangerous.

Shen Cong Sheng looked at the sky, thinking of the information that Fang Yuan gave him, he spoke: "It is not impossible to unravel Heavenly Court's method. Heavenly Court purposely arranged a large number of stars in white heaven and used them to relocate Gu Immortals to anywhere in Central Continent."

The other Gu Immortals' eyes brightened at the news.

"Then we should destroy these stars."

"But if we attack white heaven, wouldn't we be provoking Heavenly Court, what if the main force of Heavenly Court besieges us again?"

Some Gu Immortals were hesitant.

Granny Rong spoke slowly and logically: "There is indeed such a risk."

Zhang Yin sneered: "What are you afraid of? If you can't beat them, can't you escape? Just pay some attention to prevent Heavenly Court from making use of a battlefield killer move, if we engage in a hit and run situation, can Heavenly Court waste their time chasing us?"

“Haha, Zhang Yin’s words are reasonable.” Yang Zi He’s eyebrows raised, he caressed his palm and smiled: “Currently, the situation in Central Continent is chaotic with battles everywhere, Di Zang Sheng has even been released. We have already provoked Heavenly Court at this point, what is there to hesitate?”

Shi Miao acted like he was contemplating: “It seems that Heavenly Court cannot cope with so many battlefields at the moment. If not, why wouldn’t they come over to fight us? Why would they let us free Di Zang Sheng?”

Song Qi Yuan nodded: “Heavenly Court is already overwhelmed, it seems that the Southern Border Gu Immortals have found the location of Infallible blessed land and are storming the battlefield, attacking Heavenly Court’s formation. The Western Desert immortals are heading to Emperor City. The Northern Plains Gu Immortals are still nowhere to be seen, but these barbarians are bound to join in the chaotic battle. And with Di Zang Sheng rampaging as well... In my opinion, I’m afraid Heavenly Court won’t be able to care about us yet.”

With that, the Eastern Sea eight immortals reached a unified opinion once again and acted in unison, heading for white heaven.

They were still unaware that Longevity Heaven had already engaged with Heavenly Court in a huge battle.

In their case, Emperor City did not have anything valuable to loot. Infallible blessed land was attractive but Southern Border and Heavenly Court were already fighting there, it was better to avoid it.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei stayed in Central Great Hall to oversee the situation, all sorts of new information reached her continuously.

Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals entered white heaven, their motive was very clear, they wanted to destroy the stars that Heavenly Court had arranged.

But it was not a problem.



When they set up the stars as an arrangement, Heavenly Court made considerations. Fairy Zi Wei decided to ignore them.

These stars were placed in a scattered manner, they were far from each other, if Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals wanted to destroy them, they would need to spend a lot of time.

In other words, Heavenly Court was using these star immortal materials to stall eight rank eight Gu Immortals, this was extremely worth it, Fairy Zi Wei was happy to see them take action.

After all, with Qin Song's condition, they could only use a large scale star cast method four more times. Before Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals destroy all the stars, these four uses would likely be expended.

What worried Fairy Zi Wei was Di Zang Sheng.

In truth, Di Zang Sheng escaping was not too worrying to Fairy Zi Wei.

But the problem was, after escaping, Di Zang Sheng acted very strangely, it did not create chaos and destruction wantonly, it flew away calmly and was not in a maniacal state.

This was different from historical records.

"Was it subdued by Dragon Palace?" Fairy Zi Wei could not help but think of this.

It was easy to deduce it.

Firstly, Heavenly Court had records that Dragon Palace was an enslavement path Immortal Gu House, everyone knew that. Secondly, Fang Yuan sent Dragon Palace to attack Hidden Dragon Cave, he must have had some intention. Dragon Palace displayed powerful dream path methods, with its battle strength, Fang Yuan would not use it in a non-crucial battlefield!

"If Fang Yuan's previous idea was to use Dragon Palace to subdue Di Zang Sheng, then him dispatching his subordinates to set up a large formation to restrain the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation and attract the main

force of our Heavenly Court to attack furiously is just bait. At the same time, the attack of the eight Eastern Sea immortals is also a smokescreen that he threw.” Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes flickered with cold light.

“Fang Yuan was actually able to influence the eight immortals of Eastern Sea? How did he do it? Among the eight immortals of Eastern Sea, it seems there are members of Fang Yuan’s group, or those who secretly work with him. I’m afraid that there are quite a few of these members, there are at least two of them.”

Fairy Zi Wei speculated: “But what if Fang Yuan coincidentally happened to be there? The eight immortals of Eastern Sea unexpectedly had the same goal as him, allowing him to benefit by chance. This is also quite possible. After all, Fang Yuan has Giant Sun’s true inheritance, his luck has constantly been good. Qin Ding Ling is on our side, but she is still healing. Altering Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangement had a much larger price than we expected.”

Even if he was an opponent, Fairy Zi Wei could not help but admire Fang Yuan.

She also had to admit, Fang Yuan had done a beautiful job in the Hidden Dragon Cave battlefield!

The bad feeling in her heart was still deepening, Fairy Zi Wei’s attention was mostly focusing on Di Zang Sheng.

“Most likely, it is being controlled by Fang Yuan. Then where exactly is it going to reinforce the enemy?”

“Emperor City is the nearest battlefield, the elite Gu Masters have just arrived, they have yet to officially begin the final round of the Refinement Path Convention. Destroying Emperor City will greatly delay the restoration of fate Gu.”

“It is also likely to go to the Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield. Wiping out the main force of Heavenly Court at once is also Fang Yuan’s style. Even if the main force of Heavenly Court is teleported back by me, he will still find

a way to destroy Infallible blessed land. Once he destroys the blessed land, then at least this time, our restoration of fate Gu will have to be suspended.”

“Of course, Heavenly Court’s battlefield is also a possibility. Since Longevity Heaven can come in unannounced, it is also possible that Fang Yuan can come. After all, he has obtained Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s true inheritance, so he might have access to such a backdoor secretly.”

For the first time since the start of the war, Fairy Zi Wei felt passive.

If the large scale star cast method could teleport Duke Long as well, it would be great. However, unfortunately, Duke Long’s might became an obstacle to the teleportation. To make a comparison, the Heavenly Court rank eights were like a dozen rabbits, while Duke Long was a full-grown elephant, the difference between the two was considerably big, the star cast method could not move Duke Long.

Immortal killer move — Decomposition!

Northern Plains Gu Immortal Yu Yang Zi used his signature method, this killer move was largely the reason why he was famous in history.

Decomposition hit Duke Long directly, his body paused for a moment, as he looked at Yu Yang Zi, he had a plain expression: “Oh, that’s decomposition. You are Yu Yang Zi?”

When Duke Long said that, he was hundreds of steps away from Yu Yang Zi.

After he said that, purple-gold dragon-shaped qi flickered as he was teleported right in front of Yu Yang Zi.

At this moment, Yu Yang Zi’s pupils shrank to pin size as his heart pounded wildly with alarms and warnings.

He tried to retreat but it was clearly just an extravagant hope — his neck was steadily choked by a large hand.

It was Duke Long's hand, covered in purple-gold dragon scales, with fingers as sharp as blades.

Yu Yang Zi had already activated his defensive killer move, but the killer move's light was like glass, it shattered under the force of the monstrous dragon claws.

Before dying, Yu Yang Zi roared and self-detonated, an intense explosion resounded, the terrifying shock wave spread out intensely, shaking all the surroundings.

The smoke and dust dissipated, the figure of Duke Long remained standing like a pillar of heaven.

“Immortals of Northern Plains, what else do you have other than a lack of fear for death?” Duke Long's tone was plain, but it spread throughout the battlefield.

The Northern Plains immortals gnashed their teeth, but could not refute it.

Although the main force of Heavenly Court had all withdrawn with only Duke Long left, even with only Duke Long alone, Calamity Luck Altar still could not make an inch of progress. They could only rely on call of the ancient to constantly summon powerful experts of Northern Plains in history to maintain the battle situation.

“And this!” Suddenly, Liu Liu Liu's figure appeared behind Duke Long's back.

Duke Long's body shook.

The grey light dagger in Liu Liu Liu's hand was thrust into his back, even the purple-gold dragon scales could not block this method.

This was Liu Liu Liu's signature killer move — Despicable Penetrating Blade!

In the previous life, Liu Liu Liu had killed many members of Heavenly Court with this move, and even severely injured Fairy Zi Wei. At that time,

if not for Wu Shuang blocking most of the power, Fairy Zi Wei would have died tragically in his hands.

“Good!” Seeing this scene, the Northern Plains immortals were suddenly energized.

Since the start of the war, no matter how furiously the Northern Plains immortals attacked, this was the first time that Duke Long was wounded like this.

However, Liu Liu Liu’s face changed abruptly, he could not hide his shock.

Although his killer move dagger had pierced into Duke Long’s body, it was like the blade got stuck in a block of iron, unable to move a single inch!

“A human path killer move? Not bad, it fits your temperament.” Duke Long slowly turned around and stretched out his hand, steadily grasping Liu Liu Liu’s head.

At this moment, Liu Liu Liu suddenly realized: “Duke Long purposely got hit by my move, he used his body as bait to trap me!”

It was not that he did not want to escape, but he could not.

Like the dagger in his hand, he could not move.

Slap.

With a cracking sound, Liu Liu Liu’s skull was like a watermelon easily crushed by Duke Long, his headless corpse immediately fell down, the grey dagger in his hand dissipated instantly.

“Who else?!” Duke Long raised his arms and shouted, his body was like iron, having grown to twice the size of a normal man, his long purple hair dancing wildly in a monstrous wave of sounds.

The Northern Plains immortals responded to him with countless killer moves.

Rumble...

There were dazzling light shadows, countless killer moves were stacked on top of each other, Duke Long rushed out brutally, displaying world shaking dragon hammer and ruthlessly slamming into Calamity Luck Altar.

With a loud bang, Calamity Luck Altar flew back dozens of steps, creating a long trench on the ground.

The front that was hit by Duke Long was completely caved in, forming a shockingly deep pit.

“There is no time to repair damage of such a level!” Bing Sai Chuan thudded, his heart sinking violently.

Bull Demon, Flower Lady, and Five Elements Grandmaster were trying to repair Calamity Luck Altar, they froze at this moment.

If Calamity Luck Altar broke, Longevity Heaven’s members would immediately lose this battle, they would die without a proper burial!

But at the moment when Duke Long was about to attack again, a black light flew out from the River of Time.

The black light followed the hole in the front of Calamity Luck Altar and shot into its interior, transforming into a young and handsome looking Gu Immortal with curly black hair hanging down his waist.

With a wave of his palm, the young Gu Immortal’s dark light surged, quickly repairing the damage of Calamity Luck Altar and saving Longevity Heaven from the brink of defeat!

Bing Sai Chuan’s body shook intensely: “Seventh Prince!”

Duke Long snorted coldly: “So it’s Giant Sun’s child.”

The young looking Gu Immortal was the seventh child of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he was known as Seventh Prince, he nodded: “Duke

Long, with me, Qi Ci Lang, here, it will be much harder for you to destroy Calamity Luck Altar now.”

# **Chapter 1931 - Shen Shang's Solution**

## **1931 Shen Shang's Solution**

“This is Central Continent's Emperor City?” Ye Fan followed the main group as they walked into Emperor City, he looked around and assessed the place.

He was a Southern Border Gu Master, but he had heard of Emperor City's famous name long ago.

This was the largest mortal city in Central Continent, or rather, the entire five regions world. Here, rank three Gu Masters were very commonly seen, but in Southern Border, rank three Gu Masters were normally authoritative elders in their clans.

This was the first time Ye Fan visited Emperor City.

Emperor City lived up to its name, it was well guarded and had a grand structure, Ye Fan was not disappointed.

“However, compared to an Immortal Gu House, Emperor City is far inferior.” Thinking of this, Ye Fan looked at the sky.

In the sky, there were several Immortal Gu Houses floating silently.

There was a pavilion, exquisite and small, there were countless bird cages hanging on it, birds chirped continuously. This was Heavenly Lotus Sect's



Canary Pavilion.

There was a garden that was exquisitely built, it was grand with white jade tiles and oozing with cold air, there were faint dragon roars heard occasionally, this was Ancient Soul Sect's Immortal Gu House, Frost Dragon Manor.

There was also a seven-story tower, curtains were fluttering in the building, it was Wind Cloud Manor's rank seven Immortal Gu House, Wind Sweeping Building.

There was also Combat Immortal Sect's Edge Link Camp which had grand flags fluttering with the wind.

Other than those, Illusion Garden, Yue Yang Palace, and Sun and Moon Temple were there.

Ye Fan's master was Lu Wei Yin, he learned a lot of information regarding Gu Immortals from him, he could discern most of the famous Immortal Gu Houses.

These Immortal Gu Houses were not as large as Emperor City, but they were much more dazzling, they were the center of attention that all of the city people were talking about.

At this time, a youngster beside him sighed: "It seems that the rumors are correct. The world is going to change, immortals are going to battle. A chaotic great era is coming, the difference between mortal and immortal will shrink! This is our plan too, isn't that right, Brother Ye?"

Ye Fan looked at the youngster as he nodded: "You are correct, Brother Hong."

Similar to the previous life, Ye Fan and Hong Yi met in the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention and became sworn brothers after they interacted.

Hong Yi smiled: “This Refinement Path Convention is unprecedented, let those Gu Immortals fight in the sky, it is not something we can interfere in.”

“Haha, that makes sense, let us have a true competition this time!” Ye Fan patted Hong Yi’s shoulders.

The two brothers were filled with fighting spirit.

Hong Yi said: “I have a feeling that the eventual winner of this Refinement Path Convention will be one of us.”

Shen Shang’s ears twitched, he heard the entire conversation between Hong Yi and Ye Fan without missing a word.

These two were mortals, but Shen Shang kept a trace of his concentration on them at all times.

“In the future five regions chaotic war, these two youngsters likely have an opportunity to become immortal.” Shen Shang was a human path quasi-supreme, he had a strong premonition when it came to humans.

Over at Heavenly Court, people’s united hearts and other human path killer moves were all used already, Unfettered Scholar and Zheng Qing had been expelled.

But Shen Shang still managed to disguise himself and enter the final competition ground, he was not suspected at all.

He was after all a rank eight Gu Immortal and also a human path quasi-supreme grandmaster!

Shen Shang observed his surroundings, he became gradually excited.

“My estimations earlier were not wrong, this Emperor City is one of the main human veins of Central Continent!”

Mountains had mountain veins, the earth had earth veins, and humans had human veins.

“Emperor City was created by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, after so many years of relocation and movement, it still remained as the largest gathering spot of humans, it stayed on the trail of Central Continent’s human vein all along.”

“This place produces human talents, it is because of Central Continent’s main human vein. Heavenly Court’s generations of Immortal Venerables have left their human path methods here, hmm... I can vaguely sense their existence.”

Fang Yuan used his rebirth as the reason to urge Shen Shang to take action and try to unravel the various venerable human path methods.

This was a challenging mission, it spurred on Shen Shang’s morale and ambition.

Fang Yuan and the rest could not sense any of the traces of these human path killer moves. But for Shen Shang, he could trace and locate them.

Thus, he disguised himself and entered Emperor City, he finally found a chance to destroy the venerable killer moves.

“Heavenly Court is collecting human will and storing it inside Heavenly Court for use.”

“That place is too tightly defended, if we cannot enter Heavenly Court, we will not be able to destroy the human will. If we cannot destroy the human will, we cannot drain them of this resource.”

“However... taking action here will also have superb effects.”

“Heavenly Court is collecting human will, Emperor City plays a crucial role in this process, it is the largest shipment area they have to transport the human will.”

“If I destroy this place, Heavenly Court’s efficiency in gathering human will would fall greatly.”

But Shen Shang did not plan to cause destruction.

He had a greater objective.

He wanted to follow the traces with Emperor City as the anchor to find the venerable human path killer moves and reverse-deduce the profundities of their human path methods, to try to steal their knowledge!

Shen Shang was confident and daring.

He was not satisfied with just the reputation of unraveling a venerable killer move, he wanted to master the venerable human path methods and gain much more strength in the process.

“If my human path methods improve, it might be possible to get rid of the problem of the black fire, I will not go berserk anymore.”

Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield.

Five colored smoke miasma rumbled, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals and Heavenly Court’s main forces had already fought for a long time.

Bay Pavilion, Flying Sand Pavilion, and Unfixed Manor were heavily damaged, they went to the second defensive line to get repaired.

At the front lines, there were four rank eights from Southern Border, as well as two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and Great Space Temple.

Heavenly Court’s main forces had no deaths, their morale was high.

Zhao Shan He prepared his killer move again, his aura was surging.

Zhan Bu Du quickly shouted: “Stop him! He is going to use that move again!”

Wu Yong and Yi Hao Fang gritted their teeth, they wanted to charge in but Ye Qiao Zi and Vortex Space Boy stopped them.

Zhou Xiong Xin and Flesh Whip Immortal joined hands to obstruct Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

Meanwhile, Zhu Que Er and Wan Zi Hong went from the right and left, bypassing the battlefield to attack the five regional limit formation directly.

Wu Yong and the rest were left with no choice, they had to return to being defensive.

They had too few people, it was hard enough to defend, they were not as agile and flexible as Heavenly Court's group.

Zhao Shan He successfully used his killer move, he opened his mouth, he sucked in all of the surrounding five colored smoke.

A large amount of smoke was sucked into his stomach, which expanded at an observable rate. At the same time, his face and muscles turned multicolored.

Zhao Shan He actually swallowed the five colored smoke, creating a temporary cleared out area.

Without the restraints of the five colored smoke, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were able to use their full power, they unleashed all sorts of killer moves with terrifying power.

Wu Yong and the rest resisted, but their defensive line was not tight, killer moves were directed to get through the cracks, after a rough filter by their defenses, the rest landed on the five regional limit formation.

The five regional limit formation shook intensely, a large number of Gu worms died, a weakened Formation Spirit quickly tried to repair it.

Zhan Bu Du's expression was ugly.

Relying on Zhao Shan He's food path method, Heavenly Court managed to make a breakthrough, each time they used this method, the five regional limit formation suffered immense damage.

Even though they were repairing it at full speed, it could not keep up with the waves of attacks that kept on coming.

As damage accumulated, the five regional limit formation started to get into a dangerous spot.

What to do?

Emperor City.

The final round of the competition was racing against the clock to start.

Shen Shang was secretly happy.

He started to refine Gu, using this as a cover, he secretly prepared his killer move.

“We finally arrived!” Fang Di Chang drove Divine Bean Palace as he charged at the front.

Behind him was Western Desert’s main troops.

“To battle!”

“Force them back!”

“Defend Emperor City to the death.”

Central Continent’s troops cheered and shouted, they faced off against Western Desert’s Immortal Gu Houses as battle erupted.

“Wonderful!” Shen Shang, who was paying attention to the outside world, cheered, with Central Continent’s forces being restrained, he had no worries left.

Right at this moment!

Bam.

He erupted with a strong Gu Immortal aura, he shouted as profound white light pierced through the hall, radiating in the entire Emperor City.

“The venerables have passed away, all of your human path methods should go as well!” Shen Shang’s eyes shined with piercing and blinding light.

Puff!

At the next moment, he spat out a mouthful of blood, his body cracked as his lungs burst, his intestines blew into tiny pieces that shot out of the wounds all over his body.

Failure!

“How can this be?!” Shen Shang could not believe this, he stared with wide eyes: “I had already...”

Not only did he fail to resolve the venerable methods, he even triggered them in advance.

This was human path killer move — Hope of the People!

White light flew around in the sky like a snowstorm, it gathered on the bodies of the Central Continent Gu Immortals, creating a pure white halo.

Human path killer move — Heroes Among People!

The white lights surrounding the Central Continent Gu Immortals started to shrink, while the Gu Immortals’ auras started to grow.

Howl!

Central Continent’s army roared, their morale soared as they charged towards Western Desert’s troops.

“Oh no!” Fang Di Chang’s expression changed.

# **Chapter 1932 - Heavenly Court's Grand Migh**

## **1932 Heavenly Court's Grand Migh**

The white light that spread across the sky was like drifting snow, filling the heaven and earth of Central Continent.

The first to benefit was Emperor City's battlefield.

"So strong, such strong power!" Central Continent's Gu Immortals had an incredible feeling, their bodies were surging with new strength. This strength was so grand and vast, it felt like an endless tide, sweeping through their bodies and minds constantly.

All their fatigue was gone.

Their minds were clear, their fighting spirit also rose sharply.

Be it rank six, seven, or even rank eight, they felt the same.

"This is the foundation of my Central Continent's Heavenly Court!"

"My strength has at least doubled, and with such an increase, what enemies will I be afraid of?"



“Charge, kill them, we will defeat all the invaders! Let them know the might of Heavenly Court, the might of Central Continent!!”

The morale on Central Continent’s side soared like a rainbow, setting off a ferocious frenzy of attacks.

Western Desert’s side was retreating steadily.

“Retreat!”

“Quickly retreat!”

“Such an amplification is truly terrifying, what kind of killer move is this?”

“Let’s avoid battle for now, such a powerful killer move cannot last long.”

The Gu Immortals on Western Desert’s side communicated in panic.

“It’s useless. This is the method of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the two human path killer moves are heroes among people and hope of the people respectively, they have no problem sustaining it throughout the entire battle.” Fang Di Chang said.

The Western Desert side kept retreating, but Divine Bean Palace under Fang Di Chang’s control always remained in place, as if it was their support pillar, with no intention of retreating.

Fang Di Chang had a cold look on his face.

He did not expect that Shen Shang’s unraveling would actually cause the killer moves to activate in advance.

In the previous life, these two human path methods were a rather important trump card that changed the battle situation.

In this life, Fang Yuan had painstakingly plotted to ally with Shen Shang in order to resolve these two methods. But despite all of his efforts, the results were still unsatisfactory. As far as the current results were concerned, Shen

Shang not only failed to restrain and get rid of the two killer moves, he even made the situation more troublesome.

Heroes among people targeted Gu Immortals themselves, causing their comprehensive battle strength to be amplified to at least double of the original!

The killer move had terrifying might, after gaining the amplification, the Gu Immortal's killer moves, including Immortal Gu Houses and immortal formations, would be powered up as well. In a certain aspect, it was even more useful than Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable's perfect pair killer move.

The waves of attacks were like stormy waves, bombarding Divine Bean Palace incessantly.

Divine Bean Palace was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, but it could not resist such impacts. The surface was cracked and damaged, a large number of Gu worms died quickly and miserably, facing destruction.

But the power of Divine Bean Palace was in recovery, it followed the cultivation style of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable.

Although a lot of the Gu worms perished, they would be replenished quickly. Injured Gu worms that did not die would even recover quickly!

Divine Bean Palace was like a golden reef, steadily supporting itself on the front lines, silently enduring the endless bombardment of Central Continent's forces.

“As expected of Divine Bean Palace!”

“Fang clan's Fang Di Chang is really a worthy leader.”

“Let's fight, since we've come this far, are we going to constantly run away?”

The morale of the Western Desert army was finally stabilized, their Gu Immortals no longer retreated and faced the Immortal Gu Houses of Central

Continent.

At once, battle started between Immortal Gu Houses.

Canary Pavilion opened several bird cages, groups of birds flew freely, when they flew out of the bird cages, they swiftly grew and formed a flock of birds, like an overwhelming patch of moving dark clouds.

Western Desert's Chicken Dog Coop was not falling behind, releasing a flock of desolate beast chickens and dogs to fight against it.

After a few moments of contact between the two sides, it became clear that the chicken and dog desolate beasts could not resist, many were killed.

"I'll help you!" Dong clan's Gu Immortals steered Red River Wheel to go and support them.

Red River Wheel was like a waterwheel, it rolled forward as a huge red light shot out of the wheel, it seemed to resemble a ribbon that tangled the bird group.

The molten flame birds were immediately suppressed, they were captured by the red light and were all subdued within Red River Wheel.

"Thanks for the molten flame birds!" Dong clan's Gu Immortals laughed loudly, the power of Red River Wheel rose by twenty percent because of this!

Although Western Desert's side gained a small profit, Chicken Dog Coop still had to cooperate with Red River Wheel to resist Canary Pavilion.

This was common sense.

In the battlefield, Western Desert's Immortal Gu Houses often had to team up against one enemy.

The Immortal Gu Houses on Central Continent's side all had great power. Yue Yang Palace shot out grand profound light, piercing the skies, Frost

Dragon Manor emitted dragon soul and frost energy, Wind Sweeping Building rampaged with tornadoes, sweeping the battlefield.

From the first contact, Western Desert's group was pressured and could barely resist.

"This cannot go on." Fang Di Chang observed the battlefield, he was a little worried.

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

Fang Di Chang knew about Central Continent's strength but he was even clearer regarding the strength of his forces. Western Desert's Gu Immortals would not fight to the death, this group that he brought was already the result of Fang Di Chang's maximum effort.

With such intense battles, once any deaths occurred on Western Desert's side, they would want to retreat.

Once someone retreats, others would follow.

In other words, this was not a real army, it was a gathering of dispersed forces, their morale could not be sustained.

Fang Di Chang led these people at such a crucial time, he had to be at the front lines, to ensure that they would remain in formation.

"I wanted to save this for the end... there is no choice." Fang Di Chang sighed, he sent out the divine bean soldiers that he had saved within Divine Bean Palace.

The quantity of yellow bean soldiers was the highest, they were the basic troops that were treated as cannon fodder.

Next were green bean soldiers that could shoot flying arrows, red bean soldiers could self-detonate, while black bean soldiers had the greatest defense.

As for blue and white bean soldiers, they had the lowest quantity, the former could reflect killer moves to an extent while the latter could heal bean soldiers.

Once the bean army was sent out, they stabilized the situation, causing a deadlock to occur. But the price to pay was that these soldiers were rapidly being expended.

Once the casualties hit a certain level, Western Desert's side would be pressured once again. By then, Fang Di Chang would be out of trump cards, he would need to wait for reinforcements.

Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield.

Immortal killer move — Rumors Become Tigers!

Zhou Xiong Xin used his information path killer move as tigers formed into groups, roaring and attacking Wu Yong.

Wu Yong waved his hands repeatedly, and used countless wind blades to stop the tigers from pouncing at him.

To the side, Zhu Que Er and Ye Qiao Zi joined forces to attack him.

Wu Yong sighed and wisely retreated.

If now was earlier, he might have been able to fight them head on, but now after the amplification from human path killer moves, Wu Yong could only retreat.

Speaking of which, he had repeatedly tried to use the killer move unlimited wind, but he was always obstructed by Heavenly Court, unable to gain the precious time he needed to unleash this killer move.

“Fortunately, our side has Immortal Gu Houses which can act as fortresses for us to rest and recover. Oh no!” Wu Yong had just returned to rest in Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building when his expression suddenly changed dramatically.

His departure had made Chi Qu Yu's position slightly more eye-catching.

Gu Immortals of other regions might not be able to make use of this, but Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were all experienced experts.

“Chi Qu You, quickly retreat!” Wu Yong transmitted.

Even without his warning, Chi Qu You already sensed something amiss, he quickly retreated.

“Where are you going?” Wan Zi Hong restrained Chi Qu You.

Wu Yong had to stop resting as he flew out.

Zhou Xiong Xin suddenly appeared above Chi Qu You, his five fingers spread out as he grasped.

Immortal battlefield killer move — Rumor Cage!

This was the fastest battlefield killer move in the world, the speed of setting it up was number one in the five regions.

Chi Qu You could not dodge in time, he was trapped in the battlefield.

Zhou Xiong Xin, Zhang Fei Xiong, and Zhu Que Er entered the battlefield, the other Gu Immortals stayed outside, blocking the reinforcement of Wu Yong, Yi Hao Fang, and Ba De.

“Chi Qu You is in danger!”

“Quick, we need to destroy this battlefield.”

Wu Yong and the rest were anxious.

However, the rumor cage battlefield had already shrunk to a dot, it vanished. To find it, a lot of effort would be needed, and there were Heavenly Court Gu Immortals around obstructing them.

Immortal killer move — Sitting and Eating the Mountain Empty!

While the Southern Border immortals were trying to save him, Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi worked together again, using their killer move to heavily damage the Southern Border Immortal Gu Houses.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals suffered a great loss while their attention was diverted away.

And within rumor cage, Chi Qu You was in danger, at the brink of life and death.

This was an information path battlefield, Zhou Xiong Xin was the main attacker, while Zhang Fei Xiong and Zhu Que Er had transformation path attainment, they turned into information path immemorial desolate beasts to help with the battle.

Suddenly, Wu Shuang also entered the battlefield.

Human path killer move — Peerless!

This killer move was once used on Duke Long, it was very helpful. This time, it was used on Zhou Xiong Xin who was already amplified by a human path killer move, with this additional boost, his killer moves became even stronger.

Chi Qu You stared with furious eyes but he could not resist them, he was devoured by the information path tigers.

Rumor cage battlefield dissipated, Zhou Xiong Xin and the rest returned to the outside battlefield. Wu Yong and the rest could only see the torn and dismembered remains of Chi Qu You.

A formation path great grandmaster and first supreme elder of Chi clan had died!

Southern Border's Gu Immortals were shaken, such a terrifying sacrifice had happened before their eyes.

“First supreme elder Chi Qu You!”

“He died in battle.”

“Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals killed him...”

The morale of Southern Border was rapidly declining.

“Oh no!” Wu Yong had an ugly expression, Chi Qu You’s reputation was very high, his death was worse than if they lost Yi Hao Fang or Ba De, it was a huge blow to the Southern Border Gu Immortals’ morale.

However, Wu Yong could not do anything.

Even though he had the killer move unlimited wind, Heavenly Court did not let him use it. His special move farewell friend wind could also not be used, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had all been sleeping in the immortal graveyard, he had no opportunity to become ‘friends’ with them.

“Our situation was tough to begin with, now that Chi Qu You is dead, it is even worse now!”

“What do I do?”

Wu Yong had already tried his best but the situation still left his control gradually.

“Persevere!” The light of determination flashed in his eyes.

“Heavenly Court must not be allowed to repair fate Gu, this is the consensus of all four regions. Western Desert has attacked Emperor City now, Eastern Sea and Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals will definitely also take action.”

“And Fang Yuan...”

“I’ll wait for reinforcements!”

“That’s the only way now.”



The Emperor City battlefield and Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield were completely suppressed and in a dangerous position, so was the battlefield in Heavenly Court.

Even though Duke Long was unaffected by the human path killer moves' amplification, he was still overwhelming, his strength alone suppressed all of Longevity Heaven's members.

And worse was that he had reinforcements.

“Qin Ding Ling!” Within Calamity Luck Altar, Qi Ci Lang looked at Qin Ding Ling while gritting his teeth.

Qin Ding Ling had recovered with the help of the human path killer moves, she joined the battlefield to assist Duke Long.

She had incredibly strong luck path attainment, she could target Calamity Luck Altar well, Qi Ci Lang and the rest were getting into a tight spot.

With a loud crash, Duke Long's fist defeated another Northern Plains' expert.

He looked at the phantom River of Time as he laughed loudly: “So what if you summon more people?”

“Longevity Heaven!”

“This time, none of you shall escape, you will all die!”

“No matter how many reinforcements you have, it will not change the situation.”

Qin Ding Ling raised her head high as she snickered: “Exactly, how can the grand Heavenly Court be defiled by the likes of you!”

# **Chapter 1933 - Arrival of Reinforcements!**

## **1933 Arrival of Reinforcements!**

“Get him!”

“Don’t let him get away!!!”

There was already chaos in the venue of the final competition of the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

Several rank eight Gu Immortals charged down.

Shen Shang’s face was pale, he suffered a serious injury instead of unraveling the venerable methods. However, looking at the Central Continent rank eights that pounced down, he still sneered: “Just the few of you want to catch me?”

Next, his body flickered as he vanished.

Central Continent’s rank eight Gu Immortals lost sight of their target, they used all sorts of investigative killer moves but could not find any traces.

“Where did he go?”

“Who is he, he is actually able to move freely in Emperor City!”

“This place is under the effect of people’s united hearts, he could actually sneak in.”

“The five regions are huge, hidden experts are everywhere.”

The rank eight Gu Immortals exchanged words and after discussing, they each dispersed to continue their search.

Even if they searched Emperor City completely, even if they demolished it, they still wanted to find Shen Shang.

Shen Shang was currently hiding in a corner of Emperor City, far away from the venue of the final competition.

He was panting, but the fighting spirit in his eyes was not extinguished, instead, like adding fuel to a fire, it was growing stronger and stronger!

“Worthy of venerables, their methods exceeded my expectations.” He exclaimed in his head and immediately sent another message to Fang Yuan.

“Fang Yuan, hold on! Give me some more time and I will definitely be able to unravel this move!” Shen Shang spoke with certainty.

Fang Yuan sneered: “How can I believe you?”

Shen Shang then explained: “I’ve already found out that the various human path killer moves of Heavenly Court’s venerables are based on a massive amount of human will. Without this foundation, no matter how powerful the human path killer moves are, they are useless without enough fuel.”

Fang Yuan retorted: “But the human will is stored in Heavenly Court, it is too far from our reach.”

Shen Shang smiled lightly: “Precisely so, I deduced another method, instead of eliminating the human will, we should help to develop it instead.”

Fang Yuan gained some interest: “Tell me.”

Shen Shang then said: “Heavenly Court collected the human will of Central Continent, so their people’s united hearts killer move can distinguish between friend and enemy. But if I add the human will of the other four regions, how can they possibly still have united hearts? The Heavenly Court and Central Continent Gu Immortals are also amplified by the killer move heroes among people because of Central Continent’s human will. If it contains the human will of the five regions, then heroes among people’s effect would also work on the rest of us.”

Fang Yuan asked again: “Then how do you do this, how will we channel the human will of the other four regions into it?”

Shen Shang replied calmly: “On one hand, I have already made arrangements in Emperor City. On the other hand, the five regional walls are close to disappearing, not only will the five regions be unified by the earth veins, but the human veins will also be linked. In a way, we have to thank Heavenly Court for their propaganda. Now that the five regions all know that the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention is being held, the will of all five regions is concentrated here, except that Heavenly Court only collected the central part of it.”

Fang Yuan was silent for a moment and suddenly said: “Then do it, I can’t maintain all of the battlefield, I can only try my best to stall for you. You have to fight for every second!”

“Of course.” Shen Shang said without any hesitation.

Emperor City battlefield.

“Kill!” Combat Immortal Sect’s Gu Immortals shouted in unison.

Under their maneuvering, the Immortal Gu House Edge Link Camp suddenly surged in speed and rushed towards Western Desert Fang clan’s Inquiry Dock.

Inquiry Dock retreated sharply.

Edge Link Camp suddenly shined with a dazzling light, the light condensed into a giant horn that rushed into the sky.

It was Edge Link Camp's killer move — Giant Horn Rush.

Normally speaking, Inquiry Dock would not be afraid of this method, but after the amplification of human path killer move heroes among people, giant horn rush's power doubled!

Inquiry Dock was only an information path Immortal Gu House, it could not resist this fierce attack alone.

Fallen Flower Hall quickly tried to help it and moved closer to Inquiry Dock, but Wind Sweeping Building restrained it.

“We cannot lose Inquiry Dock, our Fang clan's three Immortal Gu Houses can use the battlefield killer move peach blossom maze!” Fang Di Chang quickly gave orders to save it.

Peach blossom maze was able to trap rank eight Gu Immortals, and back then it was even able to trap Divine Bean Palace.

This killer move was famous and all the Western Desert Gu Immortals knew about it. It was just that since the battle started, Central Continent's side had taken the initiative and did not allow Western Desert to set it up, so there was no time to activate peach blossom maze.

Several Western Desert Immortal Gu Houses supported Inquiry Dock at the same time, but at the next moment, Central Continent's lineup changed and formed a large encirclement, separating Inquiry Dock from the reinforcements.

“Damn it!” Fang Di Chang's expression sank, he had to move Divine Bean Palace to help it.

Divine Bean Palace was the support pillar of Western Desert's troops, it should not be moved lightly. Once it was moved, it would cause Western

Desert's entire arrangement to change, which would result in a gap to form and allow Central Continent's side to seize the opportunity.

But at this moment, there was nothing that Fang Di Chang could do.

At the sight of Divine Bean Palace moving, the Central Continent Gu Immortals were excited.

“Fang Di Chang fell for it!”

“He is a wisdom path Gu Immortal but the situation is forcing his hand after all.”

“Attack, Western Desert's battle arrangement has gone chaotic, if we grab onto this opportunity, we will claim victory!”

Rumble...

Central Continent's Immortal Gu Houses erupted with a frenzy of attacks, it was like a tsunami that crashed towards Western Desert's forces.

“Oh no.” This scene was so devastating that even Fang Di Chang's expression changed.

Western Desert's defeat was right before his eyes!

Boom!

With a loud explosion, a grand Immortal Gu House entered the battlefield.

It was larger than Divine Bean Palace, with giant red-gold bricks and black-gold tiles around its walls, countless statues were embedded on the surface of the palace, each one of them was lifelike and full of brilliance.

“This is?!”

“Rank eight Immortal Gu House — Myriad Statue Palace!”

Central Continent's attacks froze for a moment.

At the next moment, from within Myriad Statue Palace came the voice of Thousand Transformations Ancestor: “Central Continent’s Heavenly Court is simply going overboard! This time, I, Thousand Transformations Ancestor, will make you pay with your blood!!!”

At the crucial moment, Thousand Transformations came to the rescue and finally salvaged the battle at Emperor City.

Fang Di Chang let out a long breath and muttered softly: “There’s still some hope left in this fight.”

Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield.

Rumble!

With a loud bang, a corner of the five regional limit formation broke again, it was like a pavilion that was see-through on all sides, the inside was visible to all.

The Formation Spirit was so weak that it was nearly transparent, Zhan Bu Du was heavily injured, he only manipulated the formation while kneeling, his seven orifices were bleeding, blood had gathered into a pool below him.

“Once we destroy this formation, there will be no obstacles left.”

“Hmph, if you want to find trouble with Heavenly Court, you’re all not qualified enough!”

“Mere rats, all of you will become prisoners of our Heavenly Court.”

As always, the main forces of Heavenly Court fought fiercely and furiously, their attacks were unceasing and increasingly coordinated, while Southern Border lost the rank eight pillar Chi Qu You, they could barely sustain the fight, they could not protect the five regional limit formation.

“It seems that my life ends here. But I am not going to let you guys have it easy either!” Zhan Bu Du gritted his teeth and decided to use one final move to self-detonate the entire formation.

Roar—!

Just before Zhan Bu Du was about to self-detonate, the loud roar of a dragon could suddenly be heard.

The sound of the dragon resounded throughout heaven and earth, shaking the entire battlefield.

Next, the five-colored smoke swirled violently and was brutally pushed apart by a huge object!

At this moment, Heavenly Court and the Southern Border immortals stared at the newcomer in shock.

It was a giant dragon, unimaginably huge, the dragon head alone was like a chain of hills, and the dragon's body stretched endlessly!

A Gu Immortal's body could not even compare to a piece of the dragon's scales.

“Evil Dragon!”

“It is Di Zang Sheng!”

“Why is it here?”

Di Zang Sheng's dragon eyes swept over the five regional limit formation and the Southern Border immortals, quickly fixing on the main Heavenly Court forces.

Heavenly Court's immortals suddenly felt an extremely strong sense of danger that threatened their lives!

Roar—!

Di Zang Sheng roared again and rushed towards the Heavenly Court immortals.



“It’s our reinforcements!” The morale of the Southern Border immortals was boosted.

Wu Yong’s eyes narrowed, “Doesn’t Di Zang Sheng hate all humans? How can it be manipulated and be an enemy of Heavenly Court? Who’s controlling it? Who can manipulate it?”

For some reason, the image of Fang Yuan surfaced in Wu Yong’s heart.

“We’re finally saved.” Zhan Bu Du sprawled on the ground in exhaustion. With the help of Di Zang Sheng, he was saved from the brink of self-detonating.

Heavenly Court battlefield.

Calamity Luck Altar was at its wits’ end.

Duke Long’s constant bombardment caused a huge accumulation of damage, Calamity Luck Altar was in tatters, Bing Sai Chuan who was controlling it suffered heavy injuries, Qi Ci Lang had already fainted long ago.

What caused this was just not Duke Long’s divine might, but also the help of Qin Ding Ling and Fairy Zi Wei.

Qin Ding Ling was able to use luck path to effectively disintegrate the defenses of Calamity Luck Altar. Fairy Zi Wei collected information from the battle and made deductions on the spot, telling Duke Long the best spots to attack.

With these three Gu Immortals working together, Longevity Heaven was in a precarious position. The destruction of Calamity Luck Altar was close at hand.

Once it completely breaks apart, Longevity Heaven will suffer a devastating blow, and the result of the battle in Heavenly Court will be decided!

Far away from Central Great Hall, at the peak of Star Zone Mountain, the two chess players’ figures playing against each other emerged at some point

in the Imperfection Regret Pavilion.

No matter from any angle, one could only see a side of the faces of these two figures at most.

The woman had peerless beauty, while the man looked as cold as ice.

It was a contest between two venerables!

“It seems that our side has won this game by a little again.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled slightly.

Limitless Demon Venerable nodded: “Heavenly Court awakened so many Gu Immortals in advance this time, aren’t you afraid of getting completely assimilated by heaven’s will?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable grasped a chess piece: “I still have some time. It seems that the person you are waiting for will not appear. Even if he arrives, it is too late.”

Limitless Demon Venerable was silent but suddenly, his eyes shined with mysterious light, he seemed to have sensed something as he stood up and turned around to look at the Heavenly Court battlefield far away.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was stunned, she followed Limitless Demon Venerable’s direction and saw that white profound light started to appear in the battlefield, with a shrill sound, a tunnel was opened.

Myriad Year Flying Warship flew in through the tunnel, a Gu Immortal was standing on it.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had a deep gaze as she analyzed, this Gu Immortal was dressed in a white robe, his sleeves were fluttering and his black hair was hanging down to his waist like a waterfall. His face was extremely handsome, almost delicate like a beauty, and what attracted people’s attention most were his eyes, which were pitch-black as if they were connected to the ninth layer of the deepest abyss, devouring all light that approached it.

Fairy Zi Wei's body shook as she said uncontrollably: "Fang Yuan!"

"So this is Fang Yuan." Qin Ding Ling coldly smiled.

"Regardless of who comes here, you cannot do anything!" Duke Long did not raise his head, he still stared at Calamity Luck Altar as he tried to deal the fatal blow.

"Is that so?" On Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan smiled lightly as he observed the battlefield.

He raised his hand slowly, his fingers outstretched as he aimed at the battlefield.

At the next moment, the killer move that he prepared for a long time burst out, grand qi surged as heaven and earth shook intensely.

Rumble!

The colossal qi wall that enveloped Heavenly Court lasted for a few breaths of time before shattering into countless qi currents, they were all drawn by a formless force into Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture.

At once, the entire place went silent!

Fairy Zi Wei and Qin Ding Ling stared in a daze as they shouted in disbelief:

"Rank eight?!"

"Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable's qi wall was actually..."

Duke Long slowly raised his head, he ignored Calamity Luck Altar as his gaze became fixed on Fang Yuan, his expression was completely different from before.

Next, they heard Fang Yuan's plain voice reverberate in their ears: "This unlimited qi sea killer move was modified by me, how is the power? Please do give me your honest opinion."

“Hahaha.” Loud laughter was heard from within Imperfection Regret Pavilion.

Limitless Demon Venerable raised his head as he laughed in joy and satisfaction.

“Look.” He pointed at Fang Yuan, turning around to face Star Constellation Immortal Venerable: “The person I am waiting for is here!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed deeply, she had a complex expression: “Indeed, he... has arrived.”

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan appeared in the battlefield personally, charging into Heavenly Court!

# **Chapter 1934 - Fang Yuan Fights Duke Long**

## **1934 Fang Yuan Fights Duke Long**

Heavenly Court battlefield.

“This is the crucial person — Fang Yuan?” Bing Sai Chuan muttered, looking at Fang Yuan who was high in the sky.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady stared with their mouths wide open: “Didn’t they say Fang Yuan was rank seven? When did he reach rank eight?”

“This lad!” Mao Li Qiu gritted its teeth, feeling deep emotions inside.

The last time it met Fang Yuan was in Reverse Flow River, Fang Yuan had used the river to escape. Other than that, he was weaker than Mao Li Qiu.

But in their next encounter, he was able to destroy the primordial qi wall!

Without the primordial qi wall, Calamity Luck Altar was like a fish in water, it regained freedom.

The restraint holding them back was gone, they could see ways to attack and advance now.

“Oh no!” Fairy Zi Wei’s face turned pale, she could not think of a countermeasure immediately.

“Attack—!” At the next moment, Bing Sai Chuan’s voice resounded from Calamity Luck Altar.

The Northern Plains immortals summoned using call of the ancient all became energized, their eyes shined with bright light as they split up and attacked the surroundings.

These Northern Plains brutes had been suppressed for too long!

Only Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei, and Qin Ding Ling were here, the three of them could not deal with so many Gu Immortals at once.

At the crucial moment, there was a tiger roar as a Shabi emerged. There was the cry of a crane as a green jade crane flew out.

These were two legendary immemorial beasts of Heavenly Court, one was Shabi Ninety-five, the other was Ruan Dan.

The two legendary immemorial beasts joined the battle, desperately blocking the Northern Plains immortals.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly returned to Central Great Hall, she needed to protect Old Man Zheng Yuan who was there.

Meanwhile, Qin Ding Ling charged towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stood on Myriad Year Flying Warship as he observed the battlefield, seeing the scattered Northern Plains immortals, he nodded in satisfaction.

In order to destroy the qi wall, he had prepared this move for a long time.

Unlimited qi sea was the move that made Qi Xiang famous throughout the world back then. It was grand and vast, complex and everchanging, it could attack and defend, it was a comprehensive method.

It had potential for growth on its own, capable of growing stronger by gathering all the different qi in the world. After Qi Xiang created this move,

he collected all sorts of qi and stored them inside the immortal aperture, including life qi, death qi, sword qi, blade qi, dusk qi, dawn qi...

The more types of qi gathered on large scales, the stronger unlimited qi sea was.

Not only would this move expend immortal essence, it also used up the stored qi. Even if they were not used, as time passed, these qi would naturally dissipate slowly.

Back then, Qi Sea grotto-heaven's heavenly spirit used this move to survive many calamities and tribulations that the grotto-heaven faced, among which were myriad tribulations! When Fang Yuan was attacked by this move, unlimited qi sea was already weakened to its limit, even the heavenly spirit had to hibernate due to injuries.

Thus, the actual power of unlimited qi sea was not truly at the level when Fang Yuan saw it.

Since rebirth, Fang Yuan had been thinking of the method to destroy primordial qi wall.

After getting unlimited qi sea, he acutely sensed that this move was a counter to the qi wall.

However, the primordial qi wall was a venerable method, even if Fang Yuan had unlimited qi sea and great grandmaster qi path attainment level, he would need more than a decade to unravel the qi wall method while fully focused on making deductions.

The solution to this problem was Duke Long.

In order to recruit Qi Sea Ancestor, Duke Long used Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable's qi path killer moves as bait. Even though Fang Yuan only obtained half of it, because of his insistence, the content included the primordial qi wall as well.

With it, Fang Yuan used the light of wisdom from wisdom Gu to barely deduce and modify unlimited qi sea before the great battle.

As for how Fang Yuan invaded Heavenly Court, he used heaven form. He added the time path killer move shrink time into heaven form, allowing him to rapidly invade the target area. After all, he had deep attainment in theft path and time path. As the Fang Di Chang clone was also comprehending the theft path Immortal Gu House, he gained a lot of inspiration and insight.

The qi wall was too crucial of an element!

With this qi wall, Heavenly Court's enemies only had three routes to choose from, those were the paths carved out by past Demon Venerables.

But once the qi wall vanishes, they could roam freely in Heavenly Court, with their current defense, they could not guard against everyone.

The situation of the battle in Heavenly Court immediately was overturned.

Once Fang Yuan took action, he gave Longevity Heaven and himself the initiative, they now had control over the battle.

“Fang Yuan, let me, Qin Ding Ling, see your skills.” Qin Ding Ling turned into a golden ray of light as she flew in the sky, towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan took a glance at her, this was their first encounter.

She was taller than normal people, her shoulders were broad, she stood straight and had a heroic aura. She had an outstanding air, especially her long legs, she was like innate royalty that ruled above the common man. Her nose bridge was tall and a little sharp, her lips were thin and her eyes were narrow and long, her gaze was emitting a cold light now. She was not a traditional beauty, she had an authoritative aura that was bred naturally within her, people would lower their heads and not dare to look at her directly, it was as if they could only look at her feet in order to not offend her.



“No wonder Giant Sun Immortal Venerable chose you as his concubine back then.” Fang Yuan replied plainly, Qin Ding Ling’s attacks became even fiercer instantly.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, he manipulated Myriad Year Flying Warship to move quickly, evading Qin Ding Ling.

Qin Ding Ling’s heart jumped, she cried out in dismay internally.

She had great strength, having converted from metal path to luck path, her battle strength was second to Duke Long and nobody else in Heavenly Court, she had no clear weaknesses. However, her speed was inferior to Myriad Year Flying Warship.

At this moment, rapids surged below Myriad Year Flying Warship, pushing this rank eight Immortal Gu House to move through the battlefield, heading directly to the immortal battlefield.

Fang Yuan was passive earlier, but once he attacked, he aimed at Heavenly Court’s weakness! The greatest weakness!

At this moment, even Duke Long could not let him pass.

The immortal graveyard was the most important place in Heavenly Court.

Even Duke Long did not know how many Gu Immortals were slumbering inside.

This was Heavenly Court’s greatest wealth, it was their immense accumulation over millions of years since creation.

In the previous life, even though Longevity Heaven reached Heaven Overseeing Tower, they could not threaten the immortal graveyard. But now that the qi wall was broken, there were countless paths to take, they could approach the immortal graveyard.

Duke Long gave up on Calamity Luck Altar, he flew rapidly and blocked the path of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Behind Myriad Year Flying Warship, Qin Ding Ling was chasing relentlessly.

At once, Fang Yuan was encircled by Duke Long and Qin Ding Ling.

“Don’t worry, I’ll help you!”

“Protect this person, he is the crucial person that Ancestor Giant Sun mentioned!”

“That’s right, even if we die, we need to protect him.”

The surrounding Northern Plains immortals gathered towards Fang Yuan.

Bing Sai Chuan did not hesitate, he immediately mobilized Calamity Luck Altar to reinforce Fang Yuan. Right now, they had the common enemy Heavenly Court, they needed to work together.

Since Fang Yuan came to help them, Bing Sai Chuan had to return the favor, they had to resist Heavenly Court’s two strongest experts.

Bing Sai Chuan had no better option now.

If he let Duke Long kill Fang Yuan now, not only would they lose this source of battle strength, the rank eight Immortal Gu House Myriad Year Flying Warship would also become unmanned.

Facing this unprecedented attack, Fang Yuan had a calm expression. However, when he was about to use his method against the enemies, he suddenly felt a sense of fire qi emerging in his heart, causing him to burn with fury.

Next, a sense of sorrow qi pervaded his body, causing his defenses to fall rapidly.

Next, a lump of old qi entered his body and mind, causing his lifespan to decrease continuously.

There was also poison qi that spread around him, causing a lethal threat.

Unlucky qi crowded above his head, causing his luck to fall.

Silly qi filled his mind, the results of the collision of thoughts in his mind were all stupid ideas...

Frost qi entered his body, causing his movements to slow down...

All sorts of qi tangled around him, Fang Yuan's battle strength fell to rock bottom, in just a few breaths of time, he fell to the level of a rank seven Gu Immortal, after some more time, he was even weaker than an ordinary rank six Gu Immortal.

Duke Long saw Fang Yuan's aura weakening rapidly as he was surrounded by all sorts of qi, he felt overjoyed: "This is Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable's method! Fang Yuan destroyed the qi wall, causing this move to attack him."

He had cultivated Primordial Origin's true inheritance after all, he could tell what had happened.

But at the next moment, Duke Long saw a mild light shoot out behind him, it resembled a chess piece, rapidly entering Fang Yuan's body.

Instantly, all of the qi around his body vanished, as if the former scene was an illusion.

Duke Long's body and mind shook, he turned around at lightning speed, seeing that Limitless Demon Venerable's silhouette had stood up from his seat for the first time in Imperfection Regret Pavilion, looking over at this battlefield from afar, Duke Long's pupils shrunk slightly.

At the crucial moment, Limitless Demon Venerable made a move, cleansing all of the qi currents around Fang Yuan's body.

The Northern Plains immortals saw this and their hearts eased.

Bing Sai Chuan was a little puzzled: "So Fang Yuan had a method to make Limitless Demon Venerable turn around. How did he do it? I did not see him make any actions earlier."

Immortal killer move — Dragon Roaring Wave.

Duke Long opened his mouth and roared loudly.

The sound waves of the dragon roar spread out rapidly, all over the place.

Immortal killer move — Body Flicker.

At the next moment, Duke Long teleported along with the dragon sound waves, directly appearing in front of Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan was still standing on the bow, the two were less than an arm's length away.

One was the master of Red Lotus, the dragonman ancestor, Duke Long. The other was the inheritor of Red Lotus, the new dragonman ancestor, Fang Yuan!

“Oh no!”

“Fang Yuan is overconfident.”

“Quickly return to the Immortal Gu House!”

The Northern Plains immortals felt like they were falling into despair, they screamed. Duke Long's divine might was engraved in their minds, nobody could face him head on. Even Calamity Luck Altar, the legendary Immortal Gu House that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable personally created, could not resist Duke Long's offensive methods. Longevity Heaven's members were suppressed by Duke Long's power, they had to hide inside Calamity Luck Altar, not daring to fight outside.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Claw Strike!

Duke Long snorted coldly, his right hand turned into a dragon claw as he slashed at Fang Yuan's skull.

Slap.

At the next moment, there was a soft sound as Fang Yuan raised his furry left arm, blocking Duke Long's dragon claw.

“He... he blocked it?!”

Be it Northern Plains' immortals, Qin Ding Ling, or Fairy Zi Wei, they were all stunned.

Nobody had ever been able to resist Duke Long in a frontal assault, but he had managed to block it with such ease.

Fang Yuan's appearance was completely changed, he turned into a bandit monkey.

Bandit monkeys were of strength path, their fur was golden and black tiger stripes covered their body. Fur grew out from their waist naturally to cover the crotch and the butt area, just like a kilt made of skin.

Bandit monkeys respected strength and arm wrestling was their main social activity. Young monkeys could arm wrestle immediately after being born. Arm wrestling was not only a game for bandit monkeys, it was also a commonly used method to resolve disputes.

There were Gu Immortals who recognized the bandit monkey, feeling surprised: “Since when did bandit monkeys become so strong?”

Ordinary immemorial bandit monkeys could not resist Duke Long's attack, if they acted like Fang Yuan, their left arm would have been cut off on the spot.

Fang Yuan's transformation was not so simple of course.

Before this, he had already used the killer move myriad beings assimilation transformation.

This was the ultimate method of Beast Calamity Immortal, it contained the highest profundity of transformation path, able to turn dao marks of all other paths into transformation path dao marks.

How many dao marks did Fang Yuan have now?

Qi path had over a million, refinement path had three hundred thousand, transformation path had two hundred thousand, and that was not all, they were just the three highest paths.

Just these alone, after using myriad beings assimilation transformation, gave him one million and five hundred thousand transformation path dao marks.

After Fang Yuan transformed into the bandit monkey, all of these transformation path dao marks turned into strength path dao marks.

One million and five hundred thousand strength path dao marks!

With just the dao mark amplification alone, Fang Yuan could resist Duke Long's killer move.

Duke Long's dragon claw strike landed on Fang Yuan's left arm, it felt like he was punching a mountain.

A sense of danger appeared in Duke Long's mind, but Fang Yuan's right fist had already been launched.

Boom!

With a loud sound, Duke Long felt like he was a paper boat riding a ferocious wave, he felt like a mountain had slammed into him. An unimaginable force caused him to fly away at a speed that could not be observed with the naked eye.

Duke Long flew like a comet, crashing into the ground at lightning speed, with a loud crash, the surroundings shook, a huge dust cloud spread out.

Everyone was silent!

This time, fear and disbelief appeared on the faces of the Northern Plains and Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Everyone's attention was on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stood at the bow of his ship while transformed into the bandit monkey, he looked down plainly at the pit he created.

It was the pit created by Duke Long who had been sent flying, it was thirty feet deep!

# **Chapter 1935 - Star Constellation Versus Limitless**

## **1935 Star Constellation Versus Limitless**

Ever since the start of the battle, this was the first time anyone had seen Duke Long be sent flying far away from an attack.

Not only did Fang Yuan defend against Duke Long's attack, he even retaliated and sent him flying!

This was far out of anyone's expectations.

“He actually became so strong! What sort of growth speed is this!!” Mao Li Qiu opened its mouth, it stood up subconsciously, no longer lying on the ground.

“The crucial person that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is waiting for... indeed, he lives up to Ancestor's expectations!” Bing Sai Chuan sighed with a complex expression.

Unknowingly, Qin Ding Ling's speed had fallen as she chased after Fang Yuan.

What a joke!

Fang Yuan sent Duke Long flying, what did that mean?



Even though Qin Ding Ling was strong, she knew her limits, she knew the difference between Duke Long and her. Back then, in order to perceive Duke Long's luck, she paid a huge price and had to rest for many days to recover. Right now, the result of this collision eliminated any thought she had of observing Fang Yuan's luck.

Qin Ding Ling was in quite an awkward predicament now.

She wanted to fight and kill Fang Yuan earlier, but now, after seeing this, oh heavens! What a fierce person!

Qin Ding Ling directly stopped moving, she did not dare to approach Fang Yuan anymore.

The transformation path cultivation level that Fang Yuan displayed earlier showed that close combat was not his weakness, it was his strength instead.

Qin Ding Ling changed her mind instantly, she decided to assist Duke Long instead, she did not want to fight Fang Yuan directly anymore.

“This is a monster!”

“To think that in the future after I died, such a demonic immortal would appear, this is so interesting.”

“Let's go, he does not need our help.”

Northern Plains' immortals quickly turned around, they left, spreading out to the surroundings.

Fairy Zi Wei frowned tightly, she had a heavy heart. Northern Plains' immortals were moving around all over the place, all of them had their own chosen routes to advance, if they destroyed everything along their path, how could Heavenly Court stop them all?

Even if a large number of Gu Immortals woke up in the immortal graveyard now, they would need time to gather their Immortal Gu, it was too late now.

“I can only defend the most important areas now!” Fairy Zi Wei gritted her teeth, she made a painful decision, deciding to abandon the deadweight.

Dust clouds dissipated, within the huge pit, Duke Long stood up slowly.

“You really surprise me time and time again, Fang Yuan.” Duke Long raised his head to look at Fang Yuan, he had a calm expression but his tone was eerie.

He was hit by Fang Yuan’s fist directly, his chest only caved in slightly. While he spoke, his wound healed completely as his chest returned to normal.

He was the dragonman ancestor after all, his recovery speed was shockingly fast.

Fang Yuan looked at Duke Long as well, upon seeing this, his expression did not change.

Everything was within his expectations.

Duke Long was not heavily injured, the attack earlier had a huge commotion but the effect on the enemy was small. He had only caught Duke Long off guard.

After all, Fang Yuan did not use any immortal killer moves then. He only raised his fist and attacked with the amplification of strength path dao marks.

With the support of over a million strength path dao marks, Fang Yuan’s bandit monkey form had immense strength, Duke Long could not compare to it. But he had many immortal killer moves defending him, he was tough as steel, even if he was sent flying, he was still intact.

Below Myriad Year Flying Warship, the water of the River of Time surged as this time path Immortal Gu House moved suddenly, it was like a huge flying sword, tearing through space and creating a dazzling rainbow behind it, it pierced towards the immortal graveyard.

Duke Long snorted coldly, a frenzied light flashed in his eyes as his deep killing intent surged without concealment, it was as if a fierce tide was raging.

He was now in a passive spot, with Fang Yuan's attack, he had no choice but to defend, this was a terrible feeling.

Once the primordial qi wall was broken, Fang Yuan's side gained the initiative, their target was the immortal graveyard.

Duke Long was sent flying by Fang Yuan's fist earlier, his air of intimidation took a beating, he decided to focus on the enemy ahead now. The truth was in front of him, trying to engage in close combat with Fang Yuan in order to kill him was an impossible dream.

Immortal killer move — Qi Breath Mountain!

Rumble!

A grand qi current gathered and formed into a translucent mountain.

The mountain was hundreds of li large as it slammed down.

Fang Yuan was at the bottom of the mountain now, raising his head to look at it, the mountain pressed down like the entire world, he could not evade it.

Fang Yuan did not intend to evade it either.

He stopped his bandit monkey transformation as he turned into a majestic astral wind flying heavenly boar!

Astral wind flying heavenly boar lived in the sky, they were qi path beasts that could fly freely. They were agile like flying fish, they had agility incomparable with their boar bodies, they could charge into the heavenly wind qi wall with ease. With a leap, they could enter the heavenly wind qi wall and swim inside like fish in water.

Fang Yuan's four legs stepped on Myriad Year Flying Warship, he did not raise his head, he only growled slightly.

Immortal killer move — Rampaging Qi Roar!

This was a qi path killer move but it originated from Lang Ya Sect's treasury.

In the past, when Lang Ya land spirit controlled Heavenly Giant Solor, he used this move against the sharp tusk boar, killing this ancient desolate beast with one move on the spot.

Now that Fang Yuan used it, with his one million and five hundred thousand qi path dao marks, the power had risen by one thousand five hundred times!

Boom!!

The qi breath mountain exploded from Fang Yuan's roar, countless currents spread out and formed tornadoes that swept the battlefield.

His killer move was broken, Duke Long suffered a backlash.

But this Dao Guardian of Red Lotus Demon Venerable still had great morale after suffering a setback, he used another move.

Immortal killer move — Qi Current Scissors!

He raised both fists, spreading out his ten fingers.

Countless pale qi currents moved out from his palms, they slashed towards Fang Yuan like thin threads.

In a few breaths of time, tens of thousands of pale white thread qi currents moved like a torrent or swarm of moths, approaching from all over the place.

Every qi current was like a blade, even if an immemorial desolate beast faced this move, they would be covered in cuts and injuries, until all of their flesh was removed and only a skeleton was left.

Against this move, Fang Yuan's astral wind flying heavenly boar form was not useful, he changed his form again.

This time, he turned into a crane.

It was a qi path immortal beast as well, single qi crane.

The flying crane was as large as a horse, it was beautiful and had a long proud neck, its wings were huge like two capes, spreading out on the bow of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Fang Yuan spread his wings and waved them, at once, thousands of feathers gave off shining light.

At the next moment, immortal killer move divine flick[1] was ready to strike, Fang Yuan unleashed it.

Cling cling cling...

Countless shrill sounds could be heard as qi currents shot out of his feathers, crashing into Duke Long's qi current scissors.

As the two offensive methods collided, most of them were dispersed by each other, only a small amount got past and hit Duke Long and Myriad Year Flying Warship respectively.

No matter which side, against such trivial lingering attacks, they did not even blink.

Immortal killer move — Moving Qi Ring!

Fang Yuan used another move as his beak opened, he blew as white qi came out.

The white qi spread out rapidly, entangling with the back of Myriad Year Flying Warship, causing its speed to rise sharply, shooting forward.

Duke Long's expression changed, he realized the problem and quickly chased.

According to conventional wisdom, moving qi ring was a qi path killer move, it would not be useful when it supported a time path Immortal Gu

House. But Fang Yuan had modified this move himself, it was rank eight. With the support of a vast number of qi path dao marks, its power rose by a thousand times, it pushed Myriad Year Flying Warship forward while defying common logic!

Fang Yuan quickly got past the several Northern Plains immortals in front, he reached the immortal graveyard before anyone else.

Looking at the immortal graveyard, it was wide and large, there were countless gravestones on the lush grassland, each of these gravestones were different, some were golden, some were short, some did not even have gravestones but were half exposed coffins instead that were buried under the soil.

The sacred atmosphere of dignity and solemnity, filled with history, enveloped the immortal graveyard.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, he turned into the bandit monkey again, ready to attack the immortal graveyard again.

At this moment, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's silhouette sighed in Imperfection Regret Pavilion, grabbing three chess pieces and tossing them out.

The pieces did not attack Fang Yuan, they fused into the formation here.

Fairy Zi Wei was inside the formation core now, she controlled Star Constellation Chessboard to observe the situation.

After these pieces fell into Star Constellation Chessboard, Fairy Zi Wei felt the power of this formation rise as it broke its limit, reaching an unimaginable level!

Fairy Zi Wei was overjoyed, she quickly activated the formation and aimed it at Fang Yuan.

A huge starlight pillar shined down as Fang Yuan and Myriad Year Flying Warship vanished within the starlight.

At the next moment, another starlight pillar appeared behind Duke Long as Fang Yuan and Myriad Year Flying Warship appeared.

With the help of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's silhouette, Heavenly Court's formation gained the ability to teleport people of Fang Yuan and Duke Long's level.

"This is Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's method?" Fang Yuan noticed the situation and let out a breath of air, this did not happen in the previous life.

"I have so many dao marks but the starlight pillar can still teleport me forcefully. Impressive! However, I'm afraid this distance is its limit?" Cold light shined in Fang Yuan's eyes.

Next, he saw that several Northern Plains immortals were also forcefully teleported away from the immortal graveyard.

But these people vanished from Heavenly Court directly, they were likely sent outside.

Fang Yuan looked at other places.

A few Northern Plains immortals had already succeeded, they either destroyed resource points or Immortal Gu Houses.

He immediately realized something else: "It seems that the formation's power is limited even after receiving the help of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. It can only allow Heavenly Court to defend some important areas."

Even so, it was enough for now.

Heavenly Court finally stabilized the situation, their losses were not severe.

Within Imperfection Regret Pavilion, Limitless Demon Venerable's silhouette turned around and looked at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable: "You are quite generous, using three pieces like that."

“But now, you have the disadvantage in this game.” Saying so, Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette smiled, he returned to his seat and sat down calmly.

“Back then, I threatened to destroy Heavenly Court and forced you to accept this game. A million years passed, our powers weave and influence this chessboard, we have been stuck at a deadlock. Now, I only used one piece but you used three, if I attack now, you will be in trouble.” Limitless Demon Venerable smiled as he placed his finger at one spot on the chessboard, a brand new chess piece appeared on the board when he retracted his finger.

This chess piece contained the power of Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette, the spot it occupied was where one of the three pieces that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used earlier was situated.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette smiled indifferently: “Back then, your main body wanted to gain the heaven path foundation of Heavenly Court, so you set up this game. This chess game secretly connects to the Dao field that you created in your later years, Crazy Demon Cave, the more you win, the more heaven path foundation you gain, and the more helpful it will be for the derivation over in Crazy Demon Cave.”

“That’s right, you’re absolutely right.” Limitless Demon Venerable admitted to his greed, this was an open scheme, there was nothing to hide.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette smiled again: “There was no helping it in that situation, so what if you gained some heaven path foundation? Times are different now, your main body’s lifespan ran out long ago, you are already dead.”

Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette was slightly stunned before his eyes shined with bright light, he realized: “Heavenly Court made arrangements in my Crazy Demon Cave as well.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette praised truthfully: “Crazy Demon Cave is uniquely blessed, the venerables that came after you were unwilling to destroy it, a few of them even left behind their Dao



fields. Over there, the few of us will definitely have a huge contest, but that is something for the future.”

[1] Originally Qi Zai’s mortal killer move from chapter 1040.

# **Chapter 1936 - Heavenly Court's Three Elites Against Fang Yuan**

## **1936 Heavenly Court's Three Elites Against Fang Yuan**

“It seems that to destroy Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard, I will need to destroy this transportation formation first!” Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed like lightning, he started at the formation far away.

The Myriad Year Flying Warship below his feet moved according to his will, the ship shot out like a large flying sword towards the formation.

Fairy Zi Wei was guarding the formation in the Central Hall.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s assault, she took a deep cold breath, she felt immense pressure towering over her!

“Fang Yuan, with me here, you will not move freely!” Duke Long roared as he stepped forward to block Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Seeing this, Fairy Zi Wei let out a sigh of relief: “Thankfully, we have Lord Duke Long guarding us!”

Boom!

Fang Yuan and Duke Long clashed, Duke Long was sent flying while Fang Yuan and Myriad Year Flying Warship only flew back by a thousand steps.

The aftermath of the combat stirred up thousands of storm clouds and set off monstrous air currents, the aftermath of which was so vast that it resembled a hurricane. The rank eight Gu Immortals were swept and blown away by the aftershocks. Even Calamity Luck Altar halted, Bing Sai Chuan and the others inside were unable to stand on their feet firmly, their bodies were shaking violently.

Subconsciously, everyone started to avoid Fang Yuan and Duke Long.

“Fang Yuan was blocked.”

“As expected, only a monster can block a monster!”

“Let the two of them fight.”

Only Qin Ding Ling gritted her teeth and forced herself to fly over, intending to reinforce Duke Long as his support.

Fang Yuan and Duke Long clashed again, tornadoes formed, lightning flashed and thunder roared.

Because of heavenly dragon’s last stand, Duke Long was getting stronger by the minute! Meanwhile, Fang Yuan had a large number of dao marks and Myriad Year Flying Warship, he had the upper hand for now.

Duke Long continued to move back as the two of them fought closer and closer to the teleportation formation.

Immortal killer move — Self-Moving Dragon Qi Wall!

Left without a choice, Duke Long roared as he spread his arms, a huge invisible qi wall appeared before Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan pushed Myriad Year Flying Warship to charge forward, after moving for a few dozen steps, he was stopped by the qi wall, unable to move further.

Duke Long started to cultivate Primordial Origin’s true inheritance long ago, he naturally knew about the killer move qi wall. This move was

modified by him, Fang Yuan could vaguely see countless qi currents inside the wall. These currents were all dragon-shaped, the dragon heads spun around while chasing the tail, creating countless whirlpools.

These dragon-shaped qi currents were very profound, they could reduce the force of external impacts and greatly increase the qi wall's durability.

Duke Long's self-moving dragon qi wall could not be as firm as the primordial qi wall but it was very durable, it successfully obstructed Fang Yuan.

Even though Fang Yuan used unlimited qi sea to destroy the primordial qi wall, he had modified it according to his understanding of the qi wall in the first place.

Currently, Fang Yuan knew little about this dragon qi wall, it was impossible to replicate his former success now.

Fang Yuan's eyes shined with brilliance, since he could not unravel this move, he had to use force instead.

He turned into a bandit monkey again, stretching his arms as he pushed forward.

Immortal killer move — Strength Path Giant Hand!

Rumble!

The surrounding thousand feet of air was pushed aside, two translucent hands that were the size of mountains crashed towards Duke Long's qi wall with immeasurable might.

Within the qi wall, Duke Long raised his head and spread out his arms, sustaining his qi wall killer move.

The two strength path giant hands moved for several hundred steps before becoming slower, unable to advance further.

Fang Yuan and Duke Long had solemn expressions as they exerted strength, falling into a deadlock.

“Good chance!” Seeing this, Qin Ding Ling realized that her chance to attack had arrived.

In the earlier battle, she could not find a chance to attack, she could only prepare her killer moves.

Once the chance arrived, she immediately threw out a small golden dagger.

The dagger was only the size of a thumb, it flew into the air and grew larger as it moved, by the time it reached the top of Fang Yuan’s head, it was already the size of a horse carriage.

Swish swish swish.

The golden blade swung down, attempting to slice off Fang Yuan’s luck advantage.

But Cooking Luck Pot suddenly appeared above Fang Yuan, it flew up and resisted the attack of the golden blade.

Clang clang clang...

The golden blade landed on Cooking Luck Pot, golden sparks appeared due to the collision.

In a few breaths of time, the golden blade slashed for several hundred times before fading away on its own.

Cooking Luck Pot completely defended against this killer move, even though cracks appeared on the surface, it was intact overall.

The golden blade was a rank eight luck path killer move, while Cooking Luck Pot had been elevated to a rank seven Immortal Gu House, it could resist rank eight attacks.

“Cooking Luck Pot?” Qin Ding Ling exclaimed in shock, recognizing it immediately.

She was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s concubine after all, she knew about the existence of Cooking Luck Pot.

“Your Cooking Luck Pot is only rank seven, even if it can block me ten times, can it stop me twenty times? Thirty times?” Qin Ding Ling snorted coldly in her mind, attacking Fang Yuan furiously.

Cooking Luck Pot was only rank seven, even though it could resist rank eight, Qin Ding Ling was not an ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal, she was specialized in luck path. Cooking Luck Pot could block her now but the duration would not be long.

Fang Yuan noticed this too, he immediately withdrew his strength path giant hands and stopped this immortal killer move.

Duke Long was still sustaining the qi wall, he could not attack, Fang Yuan was able to retreat with ease.

“Qin Ding Ling, you did well.” Duke Long praised secretly.

In the deadlock earlier, Duke Long was in a disadvantage, over half of his dragon spirals in the qi wall had dissipated.

Thankfully, Qin Ding Ling interfered and forced Fang Yuan to retreat.

Thoughts clashed like lightning in Fang Yuan’s mind as he analyzed the situation.

He had abundant methods, but as long as the transportation formation existed, he could not use most of his methods casually.

Once he activates these methods and Fairy Zi Wei tries to teleport him forcefully, it might greatly disrupt Fang Yuan, causing his activation to fail.

Once his killer move fails, he would suffer varying extents of backlash.

If Fang Yuan suffered a backlash now, the consequences would be unthinkable!

Because of his dao mark amplification, the power was at least one thousand five hundred times! The backlash would be equally amplified.

And more terrifyingly, the sovereign immortal body had non-conflicting dao marks, Fang Yuan had to endure the complete backlash. That way, as long as Fang Yuan faced one backlash, he would likely die.

Only moves like strength path giant hand with low activation time could be used as they only needed few thoughts to maintain. Even if the killer move was destroyed, only the strength path giant hands would break apart, the Gu Immortal's own backlash would be very marginal.

“In that case, let me try another move.” Fang Yuan began to prepare his killer move.

He cultivated all paths, he had abundant methods, in this regard, even Duke Long and Thunder Ghost True Monarch, these dual cultivators, could not match up.

In a few breaths of time, Fang Yuan's killer move was prepared.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Self!

Swoosh swoosh swoosh swoosh swoosh swoosh...

Countless Fang Yuan spread out into the sky from Myriad Year Flying Warship, a ten thousand person army was formed instantly.

The original myriad self killer move was turned into an Immortal Gu recipe by Fang Yuan, in which he refined Immortal Gu Myriad Self.

But the myriad self killer move that Fang Yuan used now was not the original version, it was a human path killer move that used myriad self Immortal Gu as the core!

At the next moment, all of the Fang Yuan clones charged towards the qi wall.

Their strength was lower than the main body of course, but because his main body had too many dao marks, all of these myriad self clones all had at least desolate beast level battle strength.

After using this killer move, Fang Yuan gained a desolate beast army that numbered to ten thousand. All of these clones were controlled by Fang Yuan with ease, as if they were extensions of his limbs.

A portion of the myriad self army charged towards the qi wall, some charged at Qin Ding Ling, while the bulk of them got past the qi wall and attacked the transportation formation behind instead.

Even though Duke Long's qi wall was strong, it could not compare to the primordial qi wall. Duke Long's heart jumped, he tried to cancel this move but Fang Yuan's main body came charging with Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Duke Long grunted as he dispelled that thought, continuing to maintain the qi wall.

In a battle between experts, activating killer moves was not easy, but dispelling them was similarly difficult.

On the other end, Qin Ding Ling was surrounded by Fang Yuan's clones as they fought. Qin Ding Ling was very powerful, these clones were no threat to her, but they were enough to distract her, she had to waste time and effort to deal with them.

Fairy Zi Wei took in a deep breath of shock.

She instantly realized, this was a huge test to her. If she failed the test, the transportation formation would be destroyed, it would cause a series of problems, the entire battle situation would crumble, the plan to repair fate Gu would fail!



“There is no time to mobilize Heavenly Court’s forces. I can only rely on myself!” Fairy Zi Wei had a determined expression as she did her best, instilling all of her attention into the formation.

She was wholeheartedly concentrating!

Star Constellation Chessboard buzzed incessantly, its chess pieces were shining in starlight on the surface of Star Constellation Chessboard, with three of them being the brightest.

These were the three pieces that Star Constellation’s silhouette had tossed over earlier!

Fairy Zi Wei’s mind had countless thoughts that resembled the starry sky, they shined brightly.

The formation activated, shooting out waves of starlight specks. Countless specks landed on Fang Yuan’s clones, very few missed their target, even though Fang Yuan’s clones were doing their best to dodge.

As long as they were hit by the starlight specks, they would be teleported outside of Heavenly Court, vanishing instantly.

These clones did not have the killer move heaven form, they could not rejoin the battle.

“Good!” Duke Long and Qin Ding Ling let out sighs of relief.

Fairy Zi Wei did not disappoint them, at the crucial moment, she gave a display of a wisdom path great expert!

Fang Yuan frowned lightly: “This will not do. Fate Gu is slowly being repaired, Heavenly Court has the overall momentum in this battle. Fairy Zi Wei cannot last long but she is planning to stall for time. Over here, I am obstructed by Duke Long and Qin Ding Ling...”

Fang Yuan looked at Longevity Heaven’s side again.

These people were obstructed by the transportation formation too, Calamity Luck Altar was charging towards Heaven Overseeing Tower but a starlight pillar was moving them back each time.

“If I ask them to reinforce me, they would receive the same treatment too. Furthermore, if they come here, I will not be able to use my methods freely, I should let them attack the surroundings to pressure and drain Fairy Zi Wei’s energy.”

Duke Long’s qi wall could move, it could not block the myriad self clones but it could block Myriad Year Flying Warship wholeheartedly.

As Fang Yuan fought against Duke Long, he contacted Eastern Sea’s immortals.

Heavenly Court’s transportation formation had one great weakness, it needed stars as the springboard. Even within Heavenly Court, that was the case, the starlight pillars shot down from white heaven’s countless stars.

Fang Yuan could not destroy the transportation formation now, but it was the same if the stars in white heaven were destroyed.

Luckily, a group of Eastern Sea rank eights were there!

# **Chapter 1937 - Rod Transformation!**

## **1937 Rod Transformation!**

Eastern Sea's eight Gu Immortals had already arrived in white heaven, they destroyed many stars.

Their ambition was not as large as Southern Border, Northern Plains, and Western Desert, they only wanted to plunder some Central Continent resources and expend its foundation.

Because they were worried that Heavenly Court would send reinforcements to stop them, they targeted the stars in white heaven instead.

Their strategy had coincidentally become the most crucial point in the entire battle right now!

Among them were Zhang Yin, Granny Rong, and the other dragon generals, Wu Shuai did not recall them, they were left in this group, to try to destroy the stars.

Wu Shuai made a wise decision.

If only Shen Cong Sheng, Qing Yue An, Hua Cai Yun, and Song Qi Yuan were left, they might not have enough guts to destroy the stars.

Eastern Sea's eight immortals were quite efficient in destroying the stars.

The eight of them arrived in front of a giant sized star.

The star was so huge that these eight immortals felt very minute.

Heavenly Court scattered countless stars in white heaven, they were mutually connected, creating a web that had its own arrangements.

Each area had a giant star as the formation core, around the giant star were many large sized stars.

And around the large sized stars were countless mid and small sized stars, flying around casually, they did not have fixed locations.

Song Qi Yuan first flew onto the giant star as he shut his eyes, quietly sensing the connection between the stars.

More than ten breaths later, he shut his eyes, activating a light path killer move as he pointed far away.

Each time he pointed, a sharp profound light would shoot out of his finger at lightning speed, vanishing into the horizon.

Far away, mid and small sized stars exploded into smithereens.

This light path killer move was very special, it could trace the source of any light and attack it. It could even target gazes.

In the previous life, Song Qi Yuan used this move to destroy a star that Fang Yuan refined, causing his star eyes Immortal Gu to fail.

In this life, Song Qi Yuan used this move against Heavenly Court, the effect was immediate as well.

After Song Qi Yuan destroyed all of the stars he could sense, he stopped and nodded at Qing Yue An.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Mountain Ranges!

Qing Yue An gave a cry as the phantom image of countless mountains appeared, the entire mountain range crashed into the giant star.

The giant star was huge but it was just an immortal material, under the attack of the rank eight killer move, it shattered and was destroyed, breaking into countless star fragments.

Almost at the same time the giant star was destroyed, Fairy Zi Wei, who was within Heavenly Court's transportation formation, sensed it.

Her expression changed.

The destruction of one giant star was not an issue. Heavenly Court scattered many stars in white heaven, the loss of one was insignificant.

But in this situation, it had a different implication.

Currently, Northern Plains' immortals and Fang Yuan's clones were attacking all the important areas of Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei had to activate the formation to transport them away.

The formation was constantly activated, it was like a person running while keeping a dangerous balance. If the person steps on a rock, no matter how small it is, they would lose their balance and fall, getting injured. The faster they are running, the heavier their injuries when they fall.

The transportation formation was being used so intensely now, if any errors happen when the destroyed star is needed for the process, the transportation formation would be severely damaged by its own backlash, it might get destroyed.

Fairy Zi Wei had thought that these Eastern Sea immortals held the lowest threat to them, but to think that in this situation and time, the eight Eastern Sea immortals were her most fatal threat!

She had to be careful now, any suspicious stars could not be used now.

Fang Yuan acutely sensed the changes in the formation, he attacked wildly while activating myriad self, and also transmitting information to Shen

Cong Sheng.

Shen Cong Sheng received Fang Yuan's message and understood Heavenly Court's situation, he became very excited.

He urged the seven immortals: "Now is our best chance, Fang Yuan has already made his move, Heavenly Court cannot divert its attention. The more stars we destroy, the more problems Heavenly Court will face. Heavenly Court's main forces are restrained in Hairy Foot Mountain, while Heavenly Court itself is being attacked by Longevity Heaven and Fang Yuan. If we do well here, we might have a chance of destroying Heavenly Court!"

Shen Cong Sheng's words raised the morale of the other seven immortals, their efficiency went up at once.

Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield.

The sharp sound of phoenix chirping pierced the eardrums and ran through the battlefield.

The source of the sound was Prince Feng Xian's killer move — Phoenix Chirping Divine Flame!

The flames burned with raging intensity, coiling around Di Zang Sheng's body as it was set ablaze.

At the other side, Bai Cang Shui also used her killer move, countless water waves rushed towards Di Zang Sheng's body without stopping even for a moment.

Di Zang Sheng was attacked by more than just these two people, it was just too large, Heavenly Court's immortals had their own area to target and attack.

Di Zang Sheng roared continuously, it was attacked by flames and water, lightning and poison, but it still rushed towards the nine-nine consecutive

unceasing formation, the attacks of the Heavenly Court immortals did not distract it successfully.

Its performance did not fit historical records, back then, Di Zang Sheng caused chaos and attacked everything in its sight, it was easily drawn away, it had never shown such a clear objective.

“Oh no! This legendary immemorial beast has likely been enslaved.” Zhou Xiong Xin shouted.

Heavenly Court’s main forces did not have wisdom path Gu Immortals, but Zhou Xiong Xin cultivated information path, he was most skilled at collecting information and clues.

He even had information path killer moves that could mimic wisdom path effects.

After fighting for some time, Zhou Xiong Xin immediately deduced the truth behind Di Zang Sheng.

Di Zang Sheng was attacked by the Heavenly Court immortals, it was covered in injuries. In terms of defense, it was inferior to Duke Long, it also had no wild Immortal Gu, it was fighting with its own innate abilities.

Every time it waved its claws, it could create a gale. The Heavenly Court immortals avoided them, none of them wanting to try the feeling of being caught by Di Zang Sheng.

Each of its roars could set off shocking waves of sound, violently impacting everyone’s eardrums and hearts.

Its size was too large, even if it suffered countless blows, it was not a big deal to its entire body.

It endured the furious attacks of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, it persevered towards the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation as it began to cause destruction.

Heavenly Court's immortals felt a sense of helplessness, against Di Zang Sheng, even if they used their full strength, they were like rats trying to topple an elephant.

“What do I do?”

“At this rate, the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation cannot sustain itself.”

“Attacking the enemy will save it, we have to face offense with offense!”

Heavenly Court's immortals had rich experience, they quickly found a countermeasure.

Vortex Space Boy and Jun Shen Guang moved ahead while Zhu Que Er and Zhu Que Er became the middle group, they all moved towards the five regional limit formation.

At this moment, Di Zang Sheng opened its mouth, an Immortal Gu House flew out.

This Immortal Gu House was shining in orange-gold light, it was grand and overbearing, this was the rank eight Immortal Gu House — Dragon Palace.

A wave of smoke flew out of Dragon Palace like an illusory dream.

“Dream path killer move?!” Heavenly Court's immortals recognized it, they were shocked and fearful, quickly dodging.

Wherever dreamy light smoke went, Heavenly Court's immortals dodged and gave way.

The light smoke covered the five regional limit formation and quickly retrieved it.

Heavenly Court's immortals tried to use methods to attack dreamy light smoke but dream path killer moves were unstoppable in this era, all of their hard work ended up in vain.



The five regional limit formation was brought into Dragon Palace, Zhan Bu Du stored it away, after landing inside Dragon Palace, he met with Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai used Dragon Palace's methods to immediately heal him.

Heavenly Court was a strong foe, even though they were in a disadvantage, they could still retaliate. Heavenly Court's main forces used the best tactic, forcing Zhan Bu Du to store the five regional limit formation.

This formation had already been attacked countless times, it was at its limits already.

Not only did Zhan Bu Du need healing, this five regional limit formation also needed to be repaired.

Without the formation, even though there was still five colored smoke in the battlefield, it lost its source and quickly dwindled.

Wu Shuai drove Dragon Palace directly into the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation with Di Zang Sheng, without tangling with Heavenly Court's members.

“Hold on! We need to hold on!” The Gu Immortals controlling the formation shouted, the atmosphere was tense and solemn.

In order to protect Hairy Foot Mountain and Infallible blessed land, they had to keep the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation up.

However, be it the five colored smoke or Di Zang Sheng, they were fatally dangerous to the formation.

After entering the formation, Di Zang Sheng's strength rose greatly.

It was restricted in the five colored smoke earlier, after all, it was a Central Continent legendary immemorial beast, it was not from the nine heavens.

Immortal killer move — Unlimited Wind!

While Heavenly Court's main forces retreated, Wu Yong found a chance and permanently expended wind path dao marks to unleash the unceasing tornado.

The tornado rampaged, suppressing the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation from the outside, adding an additional problem to Heavenly Court.

Emperor City battlefield.

Myriad Statue Palace and Divine Bean Palace helped each other, firmly holding Western Desert's ground.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor charged into the battle alone, using all sorts of powerful transformation path killer moves to force back Yue Yang Palace and Frost Dragon Manor.

Like Zhang Fei Xiong and Flesh Whip Immortal, Thousand Transformations Ancestor also had the ability to fight Immortal Gu Houses with his body!

But the overall situation was, Central Continent still had the upper hand.

They were all affected by heroes among people, this human path killer move was indeed a venerable method, it could not be assessed with common sense.

Within Emperor City, the competition was also at a crucial stage.

Hong Yi stared at the fire with his full concentration. No matter how the immortals fought outside, they could not disturb him.

Ye Fan was the same, he wholeheartedly wanted to compete with Hong Yi. But different from Hong Yi, he was using a light path refinement method, aurora lights constantly moved vividly, reflecting off his face.

In the competition ground, one by one, Gu Masters failed, success dao marks were sent to Infallible blessed land by batches.

Next, the success dao marks in Infallible blessed land were extracted by Heavenly Court and sent to Yuan Qiong Du.

Yuan Qiong Du controlled the refinement path Gu formation, he continued to repair fate Gu, he was making quick progress.

Within this refinement path Gu formation, there were Cong Yan and Che Wei defending the place with their full strength.

As Northern Plains' Gu Immortals got near the formation, starlight would land on them, they would be teleported out without resistance.

“As expected of Lady Zi Wei.”

“She is so dependable.”

Che Wei and Cong Yan sighed.

“Persevere, persevere!” Fairy Zi Wei was covered in sweat now, her face was pale and her head was emitting steam from overheating.

She encouraged herself continuously: “The situation is still within my grasp, persistence will lead to victory!”

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan, who was on Myriad Year Flying Warship, laughed loudly.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Beings Assimilation Transformation.

Immortal killer move — Falling Star Rod Transformation!

He suddenly turned into a huge rod, black and thick.

Next, he used a star path killer move — Leading Countless Stars!

“Oh no!” Fairy Zi Wei's expression changed, she felt like she was sitting on a wild horse carriage that could not stop.

The horse pulling it was rampaging, even if she held the reins, she could not stop this horse carriage anymore.

Boom!

At the next moment, the entire transportation formation self-detonated, starlight specks faded away, no longer shining down.

Fairy Zi Wei suffered an immense backlash, she was at the point of near death, falling unconscious.

# **Chapter 1938 - Heavenly Court's Crisis**

## **1938 Heavenly Court's Crisis**

The transportation formation's self-detonation shook all the surroundings as Heavenly Court's battlefield froze for a moment.

Next, Northern Plains' immortals erupted with cheers and caused a huge commotion.

"Zi Wei!" Qin Ding Ling turned pale with shock as she turned into a flash of light, saving Fairy Zi Wei from the rubble of the transportation formation.

Fairy Zi Wei had fainted, she was in poor shape, Qin Ding Ling needed to save her immediately.

Qin Ding Ling had no hesitation, she immediately retreated, no longer assisting Duke Long in battle. She knew her limits, she was not very useful for Duke Long, while Fairy Zi Wei was the strategist of Heavenly Court, she was vital and could not be lost.

Fang Yuan wanted to use this chance to kill Fairy Zi Wei of course, but Duke Long blocked his advancement each time.

Undeniably, Duke Long's modified qi wall was very strong, it got past the immobile weakness of the primordial qi wall, it was agile and durable. After

Duke Long used this move, even Fang Yuan's Myriad Year Flying Warship could not break through it.

Within the qi wall, Duke Long had a grim expression, he treated Fang Yuan as the greatest enemy of his life, the disdain and contempt he showed earlier were completely gone.

Only until Fang Yuan destroyed the transportation formation did Duke Long realize: Fang Yuan's myriad self killer move earlier was just a distraction, it was intended to stall for time.

Fang Yuan's true method was waiting all along in the dark, once used, it caused a huge impact!

"Why does Fang Yuan have the method to break the formation so coincidentally?"

Duke Long knew that Fang Yuan was able to break the qi wall earlier because of his rebirth. But this transportation formation was definitely out of Fang Yuan's expectations, he was troubled by it earlier after all, if he had seen it in a previous life, he would have been prepared against it.

"This means that Fang Yuan deduced the method to break the killer move during battle? How can that be possible?" Duke Long was perplexed.

Heavenly Court made such an arrangement, they naturally guarded against Fang Yuan, they knew about his wisdom path attainment.

With Fang Yuan's foundation, he would need a lot of time to unravel this transportation formation.

Speaking of which, this was quite a coincidence.

When Fang Yuan explored the Dragon Whale Paradise, he had obtained the falling star rod tree from Shen Cong Sheng.

The growth conditions of this immemorial desolate plant were still a mystery as it had been extraordinarily rare and low in quantity since ancient times.

It had the unique trait of constantly attracting stars, falling into the trunk of the tree and turning into a single star mark. That was why it was called falling star.

According to rumors, one of the motives that Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had when he traveled the world alone was to collect this tree.

The value of the falling star rod tree did not just lie in itself.

By planting it in the immortal aperture, the Gu Immortal could use it to create an entire system of orbiting stars. It was a unique ecology that brought incremental gains every year, and the total amount of gains over time, day after day, year after year, was almost impossible to estimate.

Without this tree, even if Fang Yuan knew about the falling star rod tree, he could not transform into it. But after obtaining it, he observed and studied it, gaining the falling star rod tree transformation.

Other than the rod tree transformation, Fang Yuan also had Dong Fang Chang Fan's myriad star fireflies, and Ye Lui Qun Xing's leading countless stars killer move. These were all loot he gained in the past.

Leading countless stars was exceptional. It used the star fragments primarily and expended little immortal essence. Using the attractive force of star fragments, it could generate starlight magnetic force to continue manipulating stars. The more stars there were, the stronger this move would be.

Back then during the Northern Plains battle, Ye Lui Qun Xing used this move and was virtually unstoppable.

The killer move leading countless stars was targeted against stars and made use of them. On top of that foundation, Fang Yuan also had star path and formation path grandmaster attainment level, as well as the light of wisdom. By modifying the killer move in battle, he was able to achieve amazing results.

Duke Long was very shocked that he could destroy the transportation formation.

In Duke Long's eyes, Fang Yuan started to become unfathomable.

On Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan dispelled falling star rod tree transformation and returned to his human form.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Self!

Bam bam bam...

A vast number of Fang Yuan's clones appeared again, filling the sky, they were like fireflies that spread out to the surroundings.

Heavenly Court felt a little troubled, in this battle, they were suffering from a lack of manpower.

Even though Star Constellation's will awakened many Heavenly Court rank eights earlier, because the transportation formation was destroyed, they were all stuck in Hairy Foot Mountain now.

"Troops far away cannot salvage the situation!" Duke Long sighed, he had no choice but to use a method.

Qi path immortal killer move — Qi Engulfing Mountains and Rivers!

At that instant, an unparalleled force descended from the sky, pressing down on the entire place.

The world became still, nothing was left unaffected.

Fang Yuan's clones were all destroyed, Calamity Luck Altar was forced to the ground, resisting stubbornly with creaking sounds. The Heavenly Court Immortal Gu Houses within the range of this killer move were even more badly affected, they were directly destroyed as the place turned into ruins.

Fang Yuan and Myriad Year Flying Warship were not spared either, they were enveloped by qi engulfing mountains and rivers, the warship's speed



fell as it rapidly descended from the sky while bearing the weight of mountains and rivers.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, instead of shock, he felt joy.

Duke Long's qi engulfing mountains and rivers was quite familiar to him, in the previous life, when fighting for Dragon Palace, he had used it to claim victory.

But now, Duke Long had to use this move to destroy Fang Yuan's myriad self. He was truly in a passive spot, he had to give up Heavenly Court's own Immortal Gu Houses.

Immortal killer move — Immemorial Year Monkey Transformation!

Fang Yuan transformed again, all of his dao marks turned into one million and five hundred thousand time path dao marks.

Myriad Year Flying Warship itself was a time path Immortal Gu House, it was activated by Fang Yuan with full force now, its power rose drastically, it was re-energized and shot out like a flying sword, as if qi engulfing mountains and rivers did not exist!

Duke Long stared at Fang Yuan furiously, he could not catch up now, he watched as Fang Yuan charged towards the immortal graveyard.

Fang Yuan did not intend to target Heaven Overseeing Tower. Firstly, Heaven Overseeing Tower was defended by a formation now, time was needed to get in, secondly, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's painting path method was still around, Fang Yuan was wary against it.

The immortal graveyard was an important place of Heavenly Court, it was likely to have a venerable method, but Fang Yuan had to take the risk.

The immortal graveyard was a huge variable, destroying it now would greatly benefit Fang Yuan and the rest!

Within Imperfection Regret Pavilion.

Seeing that Fang Yuan approached the immortal graveyard, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's silhouette's expression changed as she grabbed a chess piece, preparing to toss it.

But at this moment, Limitless Demon Venerable's silhouette smiled lightly as he placed a piece on the chessboard.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's silhouette stopped her action, if she tossed this chess piece, Limitless Demon Venerable would gain an absolute advantage, she would not be able to turn this game around anymore!

"Limitless, you really think highly of Fang Yuan." Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's silhouette sighed, she placed the chess piece back onto the board.

Next, her gaze turned sharp as blades, she said coldly: "But it is not so easy to stop me."

Before she finished her words, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made several moves at once, placing pieces on the chessboard continuously.

Limitless Demon Venerable quickly followed after her, not giving her any advantage.

Both sides exchanged moves, they placed over a hundred pieces in a few breaths of time, the entire chessboard was filled with pieces but the strange thing was, this chessboard seemed to have no size limit, no matter how many they placed, the chessboard could hold them!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's silhouette was restrained by Limitless Demon Venerable, Fang Yuan managed to reach the immortal graveyard by moving straight ahead without obstacles.

"Fang Yuan! If you do anything to it, I will make sure you die without a proper corpse!!" Duke Long was still chasing him from behind.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, using strength path giant hand.

Slam, his giant hand was huge but extremely fast, it slammed down rapidly.

But the process of the giant hand's movement became very slow, space seemed the same but it was actually tens of thousands of li long now.

At the crucial moment, someone interfered, but it was not a venerable method.

“Who is it?!” Fang Yuan shouted, his eyes shined like lightning as he looked towards his left.

In Fang Yuan's vision, a female immortal slowly revealed her appearance.

She had a peculiar appearance, her entire body was made of wood, she wore a green dress made from vines, even though she had a human face, one could see the trunk rings on her tree bark skin, her eyes were clear as a tranquil lake.

Fang Yuan's pupils shrunk, from her aura, this female immortal was close to Di Zang Sheng's level!

“Human immortal, stop. Don't try to destroy Heavenly Court, otherwise, I, Cang Xuan Zi, will have to stop you.” The female immortal spoke, her voice was gentle but contained immense determination.

“Cang Xuan Zi?” Fang Yuan realized after a moment.

Heavenly Court had three legendary immemorial beasts, they were Shabi Ninety-five, Ruan Dan, and Cang Xuan Zi.

Cang Xuan Zi was a vast heaven vine, it was a unique existence in Heavenly Court, it did not need to follow orders, but only had to provide a batch of vast heaven fruits every thousand years.

In the previous life, when Longevity Heaven attacked Heavenly Court, Cang Xuan Zi watched the battle without doing anything. But to think that she would take action in this life when Fang Yuan invaded!

“It seems that Cang Xuan Zi and Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had some sort of special agreement, nobody else knows about it!” Fang Yuan

snorted coldly, he mobilized Myriad Year Flying Warship to charge towards the immortal graveyard.

Cang Xuan Zi sighed, she turned into a green light and blocked Myriad Year Flying Warship.

With a loud sound, Myriad Year Flying Warship crashed into Cang Xuan Zi's body, its momentum was halted while Cang Xuan Zi was sent flying away.

She spat out a mouthful of green blood, but she continued to attack Myriad Year Flying Warship.

“Fang Yuan, your life is mine!” At this moment, Duke Long arrived, he opened his mouth and bore his fangs, turning into blades that slashed at Fang Yuan.

Instantly, Fang Yuan became trapped from the front and back.

He was not flustered, he first pointed at Duke Long to use spring scissors, before pointing at Cang Xuan Zi as the Myriad Year Flying Warship below him shot out countless flying swords, they were all daybreak flying swords!

Spring scissors flew out and snipped the dragon fangs, before approaching Duke Long with an unstoppable force.

Duke Long had to retreat.

Daybreak flying swords shot out like a waterfall towards Cang Xuan Zi, after enduring it for a few moments, Cang Xuan Zi could not hold on anymore and retreated.

Fang Yuan yelled, Myriad Year Flying Warship soared into the sky again, before rapidly descending towards the immortal graveyard.

But distance was extended once again, an unobservable profundity was occurring around the surrounding space!

Fang Yuan turned around and stared at Cang Xuan Zi, saying a sentence fiercely: “You are courting death.”

Cang Xuan Zi was covered in sweat, she had tried her best to use the space path killer move, but she could only stall Fang Yuan temporarily.

Thankfully, Duke Long was around, he attacked Fang Yuan once more but was forced to retreat yet again.

Fang Yuan’s strength suppressed both Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi.

The two sides fought for over a hundred rounds, the more they fought, the stronger Fang Yuan’s aura and the more injuries gathered on the bodies of Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi.

Rumble!

With a loud sound, Fang Yuan’s Luo Po seal landed on Cang Xuan Zi as she screamed, his giant hand slammed Duke Long to the ground.

“Duke Long, you are already old! With this aged body of yours, how long can you last?” Fang Yuan smiled coldly.

“Until I die.” Duke Long was filled with determination and battle intent, one of his dragon horns was broken, his dragon scales were cracked, he was covered in blood.

But he would rather fight to the death!

Within the refinement path formation, Northern Plains’ past generation experts surrounded Cong Yan and Che Wei.

“Kill, kill them both!”

“They are already at their limit.”

“How can merely two people stop us? Hmph, they are overestimating themselves!”

Northern Plains' immortals were ready to attack, killing intent surged and filled the entire space.

Che Wei and Cong Yan were covered in blood, as long as they stood at the same spot for a few seconds, a pool of blood would gather below them.

“It seems that we are going to die here.”

“Hehehe, then we will die. Even if we die, we will use our lives to get as much time as we can for Yuan Qiong Du.”

The two looked at each other, they smiled with the determination to die.

“Come, this is our final battle!” As the weaker side, they shouted even louder than the Northern Plains immortals.

The Northern Plains immortals' expressions changed.

“These are two respectable opponents.”

“I will use my strongest killer move to send you off, this is my respect towards you both!”

Boom boom boom!

Intense battle erupted once again.

Emperor City.

Countless gazes were heatedly locked onto the final competition grounds.

Most of the Gu Masters had failed, they all left the stage.

There were only two people left, one was Ye Fan, the other was Hong Yi. The final victor would be either one of these two!

“The competition is ending, our mission to defend is about to succeed!”

“Persevere, everyone!!”

Central Continent's troops cheered in advance.

"What do we do?" Thousand Transformations Ancestor could not take them down, he started to feel anxious.

Fang Di Chang was silent but he snorted coldly in his heart: "You are all too naive, so what if we are blocked? Hahaha, it has finally arrived!"

At this precise moment, the ground cracked open, the earth shook as a huge Earth Trench appeared, the terrifying crack expanded towards Emperor City!

"What is happening?"

"An Earth Trench! Damn it, Emperor City is in the path of the Earth Trench."

"Quick, save the people!!"

Central Continent's troops were flustered, they wanted to salvage the situation. But Fang Di Chang was prepared from the start, he manipulated Divine Bean Palace and charged out to block the Central Continent troops.

Central Continent's Gu Immortals had no choice but to block Divine Bean Palace in a panic, they did not have the strength to save the mortals in Emperor City.

"We are doomed!"

"Who can save us?"

"No, we cannot give up hope!"

Emperor City was in complete chaos.

River of Time.

The river water moved in waves, Feng Jiu Ge stood in a time path Immortal Gu House as he pondered with his eyes closed, he was quietly

comprehending.

Suddenly, his eyes opened, his expression was of utter shock.

A stone lotus island slowly appeared in Feng Jiu Ge's vision.

“This is...” At this instance, Feng Jiu Ge thought of the words Qin Ding Ling said before he left —

“I observed your luck for you, it shows that your fortuitous encounter is in the River of Time. Go, your fortune is there, it will lead you to great accomplishments! You originally wanted to go to the River of Time and increase your comprehension to complete destiny song, this is a wise decision, it cannot go wrong.”

“Don't tell me, this is my fortuitous encounter?” Feng Jiu Ge restrained the shock in his mind as he entered the stone lotus island.



# Chapter 1939 - Blood-Kin Heart Revenge

## 1939 Blood-Kin Heart Revenge

Heavenly Court battlefield.

“You finally woke up!” Qin Ding Ling looked at Fairy Zi Wei who was slowly opening her eyes, she let out a breath of air.

“I...” Fairy Zi Wei was a little dazed but she soon regained her senses:  
“How is the battle situation now?”

“The situation is not good!” Qin Ding Ling said grimly, she spread her palms as a golden silhouette appeared.

Within the silhouette, one could see the scene of Fang Yuan suppressing Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi.

Immortal killer move — Purple-Gold Dragon-Shaped Qi!

After using this killer move, be it offense, defense, healing, or movement, all of Duke Long’s actions would have accompanying purple-gold dragon-shaped qi.

This was his main method in qi path, it was very comprehensive.

In the previous life, Five Elements Grandmaster died from this move by Duke Long.

But even in this state, Duke Long was repelled by Fang Yuan continuously.

Duke Long was still very strong, but Fang Yuan relied on Myriad Year Flying Warship, displaying unprecedented time path battle strength!

Spring scissors and summer fan had incredible power, even Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi could not block these attacks.

Fairy Zi Wei took a few glances and exclaimed: “Fang Yuan’s battle strength is so terrifying! He seems to have a transformation path method to turn all of his dao marks into the same path. Not only did he advance to rank eight, his dao marks are at an absurd number. How did he do it?”

“Rather than thinking about this, you should think about how we can resolve this crisis now!” Qin Ding Ling urged.

Fairy Zi Wei was silent for a while before analyzing as she pointed at the silhouette: “Lord Duke Long’s strength is not inferior to Fang Yuan, it is just that he is too passive now as a result of protecting the immortal graveyard. This gives Fang Yuan the initiative, Lord Duke Long has to endure every offensive killer move he uses to make sure the immortal graveyard is intact.”

Fang Yuan could casually dodge Duke Long’s attacks but Duke Long had to block Fang Yuan’s attacks. This was too great of an advantage.

If one analyzed this, they would see that Duke Long and Fang Yuan were quite similar in power level. But Fang Yuan’s tactic was too wise, Duke Long would not be overly concerned if he attacked Heaven Overseeing Tower with high defense, but the immortal graveyard was different.

The primordial qi wall was destroyed by Fang Yuan, that was truly a huge move, it was crucial. It caused Duke Long to be taxed with defending against Fang Yuan’s attacks now.

Star Constellation’s will could have awakened more Gu Immortals from the immortal graveyard, but Limitless Demon Venerable was stopping her at the moment.

How could they resolve this issue?

Fairy Zi Wei started to think about this deeply but she felt a strong headache, the intense pain made her body shake as she almost fainted again.

“Be careful, your injuries are still quite severe!” Qin Ding Ling called out in concern.

Fairy Zi Wei nodded, frowning and enduring the headache, she spoke with difficulty: “The immortal graveyard is the biggest foundation and accumulation of Heavenly Court, we cannot lose it! We need to get rid of the problem which is Fang Yuan now, go and reinforce Senior Duke Long, get Gu Yue Fang Zheng to fight as well. He has been cultivating in the Demon Judgment Board recently, he progressed quite a bit. If you enter the Demon Judgment Board and coordinate with him, there will be good results.”

“What about you?” Qin Ding Ling looked at Fairy Zi Wei with worry.

Fairy Zi Wei spat out a mouthful of blood: “I need to heal my injuries. Thankfully, there is a healing hall that can help me greatly. Don’t worry, this Immortal Gu House is at the periphery of the battlefield, it will not attract attention.”

“Okay, be careful!” Qin Ding Ling hesitated for a moment before gritting her teeth and flying away.

Fairy Zi Wei felt her vision turning dark, after taking several huge breaths for a while, she stabilized her injuries and decided to move towards the healing hall.

Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

Whoosh! Intense winds blew, sweeping everything in their path, rampaging through heaven and earth.

Duke Long grunted as he flew back by three hundred steps, countless purple-gold scale fragments were scattered along the way.

The storm also engulfed Cang Xuan Zi, the female immortal cried out in pain as her vines snapped, she used her defensive killer moves with much difficulty to resist the attack.

Her space path defensive killer move was quite amazing. Any move that landed on her would have to travel through a huge distance to reach her.

But no matter how long the distance was, the time path tornado still went into the immortal graveyard. Even though it only suffered a minor loss, still far from total destruction, Heavenly Court's immortals still felt deeply pained when they saw that.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, looking at Cang Xuan Zi coldly.

He was not happy with the current situation.

Cang Xuan Zi... he did not expect her to participate, Fang Yuan knew nothing about her. Especially when she cultivated space path, Fang Yuan's attainment level in this path was too low.

Without enough space path attainment level, even though Fang Yuan had wisdom path attainment level, he could not deduce anything useful.

"The bigger threat between them is Duke Long." Standing on Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan looked at Duke Long again.

Not long ago, when Fang Yuan used summer fan, Duke Long flew back by five hundred steps, but now, it was only three hundred steps.

Summer fan was an old killer move, even though Fang Yuan modified it, it had already been used before. At this point, Duke Long was getting used to dealing with it.

Of course, the bigger reason was that Duke Long was continuously getting stronger!

"Heavenly dragon's last stand..." Fang Yuan muttered, he could feel what the Northern Plains immortals felt in the previous life when they fought Duke Long.

Duke Long was strong to begin with, and more terrifyingly, he was continuously getting stronger.

Fang Yuan knew that even though he had the upper hand now, it was because of his wise tactic of targeting the enemy's weakness! Duke Long was forced to defend it.

In terms of real battle, if he fought Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi, they would be evenly matched.

Fang Yuan had Myriad Year Flying Warship, he coordinated well with it. This was the first time Duke Long was fighting with Cang Xuan Zi, and even though Cang Xuan Zi had deep foundation on par with Di Zang Sheng, she was unfamiliar with fighting techniques, it showed that under normal times she faced combat rarely.

Thus, Fang Yuan could also sense that she was getting more proficient in her methods as the fight went on.

After all, a battle of life and death was the greatest form of training.

“Time is pressing, if I cannot succeed soon, I will need to give up on this target.” Fang Yuan took a look at Heaven Overseeing Tower, once Genesis Lotus' method was activated, he would attack that place.

Before that, he should destroy the immortal graveyard first. After all, nobody knew which monster would emerge from it next! After all, including Duke Long, Heavenly Court should have a total of four Dao Guardians.

Fang Yuan's eyes shined with bright light, countless thoughts moved in his mind at rapid speed, countless battle tactics were being created.

At this point in time, he still had many trump card killer moves left. There was time cutting edge, unlimited qi sea, five finger fist heart sword, lead soul into dream, and other killer moves.

If he faced other enemies, these methods would decide the battle and kill them. But Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi were not simple characters, against them, if his move failed, they would be prepared against the attack, Fang Yuan would not be able to use them effectively anymore.

Kill Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi? It was not impossible for Fang Yuan!

But at the same time, Duke Long still had the killer move triple qi retraction, it was very threatening. If Fang Yuan got hit by it, the consequences would be severe. Fang Yuan was similarly wary of it.

Furthermore, other than triple qi retraction, did Duke Long have other methods of similar strength?

Fang Yuan was not sure.

At the same time, Cang Xuan Zi was quite an unknown factor, she had lived much longer than Duke Long and also had a complex relationship with Genesis Lotus, who knew what methods she could bring out, it would not be surprising.

Fang Yuan continued to attack, he aimed attacks at the immortal graveyard while looking for an opportunity.

Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi were experienced monsters, their battle experience was incredibly vast.

Fang Yuan tried for a long time but he could not create any opportunities.

Amidst the intense battle, a cloud of blood suddenly appeared.

The cloud of blood approached Fang Yuan, it had a peculiar aura.

Fang Yuan stepped softly as Myriad Year Flying Warship shook, a group of daybreak flying swords flew out and attacked the cloud.

The blood cloud was pierced by Fang Yuan, it was easily torn to shreds and vanished, but Fang Yuan's expression changed.

At the next moment, Cooking Luck Pot appeared above him, blood markings appeared and stuck themselves onto Cooking Luck Pot, attempting to corrode Fang Yuan's luck.

"Blood path killer move?" Fang Yuan's heart shook, his attacks slowed down as he split his attention to mobilize Cooking Luck Pot.

But no matter how he tried to cook his luck, he could not get rid of the blood markings. To get rid of them, Fang Yuan would need to concentrate fully, it would expend a lot of his time.

Fang Yuan cast his gaze far away as an Immortal Gu House approached him.

This was a red tombstone with countless words moving on it, it was the rank eight Immortal Gu House — Demon Judgment Board!

"Fang Zheng... is that you?" Although lacking a clear reason, Fang Yuan guessed the identity of the person inside the Demon Judgment Board.

Within Demon Judgment Board, there was Gu Yue Fang Zheng and also Qin Ding Ling.

"Fang Yuan was hit!" Fang Zheng was surprised and joyful: "Thank you for amplifying the power of my killer move."

At this moment, behind Fang Zheng, Qin Ding Ling was placing both palms on his back as she helped him with her full strength.

Seeing that this move had effect, Qin Ding Ling was surprised too, she looked at Gu Yue Fang Zheng in a new light.

Fang Zheng only had rank seven cultivation level but like what Fairy Zi Wei predicted, the killer moves he created were very effective on Fang Yuan.

"Worthy of Fang Yuan's nemesis, the pawn left behind specially by heaven's will." Qin Ding Ling sighed to herself.

Heaven's will attempted to destroy Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's plan, using Fang Yuan as the pawn. But Fang Yuan as an otherworldly demon was the greatest variable himself, thus heaven's will arranged for Fang Zheng as well, to become the counter to Fang Yuan.

Thus, after Fang Zheng became the Demon Judgment Board Lord, he used the experience of the previous generations of Board Lords to create his own killer move, blood-kin heart revenge.

This blood path mimicked luck path, it also contained the profundity of human path. Qin Ding Ling's amplification was only icing on the cake.

Blood-kin heart revenge activated again!

The blood cloud approached while Fang Yuan dodged it.

But the blood cloud followed him closely, it did not stop chasing after him.

"I've already used sovereign immortal fetus Gu, this body has no bloodline relationship with him, why is the blood cloud still approaching me?" At once, Fang Yuan's gaze flickered with uncertainty.



# Chapter 1940 - Limitless, Please Turn Around

## 1940 Limitless, Please Turn Around

Fang Yuan's current main body was made from sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu was a consumable Gu worm, it could turn any life form into a pure bred human. Because the body was not created by normal birth, it had the trait of being half an otherworldly demon.

The sovereign immortal body had no blood relationship with Gu Yue Fang Zheng, he was only related to Fang Yuan's rank six time path clone.

But his clone was currently hidden in the sovereign immortal aperture, isolated from the world. Could Fang Zheng's method pierce through that boundary and sense the clone in his immortal aperture?

"Most likely, this move does not use our bloodline relationship but the mental connection with the user." Fang Yuan's pupils shrunk, he felt that this deduction was more logical.

He had very little understanding of Fang Zheng's killer move as he had just seen it.

Fang Yuan tried for a while and could not get away from the blood cloud. If he destroyed the cloud, blood markings would appear and attack his luck.

If others used this killer move, there would not be this effect.

But Fang Zheng was closely connected to Fang Yuan, not just in terms of bloodline. He was an arrangement of heaven's will, both of their lucks were connected in some way. For example, after Fang Yuan obtained Cooking Luck Pot, Fang Zheng's luck turned into a pot lid, it showed that he was a counter to Fang Yuan.

The connection of blood-kin heart revenge was much more complex than Fang Yuan thought.

The first aspect was bloodline connection, the second was the mental connection, and the third was their luck's connection.

Using the resonance of their luck, the blood markings were able to corrode Fang Yuan's luck.

This was a huge problem for Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan changed his target now, trying to destroy Demon Judgment Board and kill Fang Zheng directly. But whenever he made this choice, Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi would interfere, they would thwart his plan each time at the perfect timing.

Even if Fang Yuan's attacks landed, it would only cause Demon Judgment Board to shake and crack. Afterwards, the Gu Immortals inside would repair it fully.

Demon Judgment Board was different from most of Heavenly Court's Immortal Gu Houses, it was comprehensive in defense, movement, recovery, and others, it had no clear weaknesses.

"If I had the all living beings luck inheritance, no, as long as I had heart blood Immortal Gu... even if I cannot unravel this move, it will alleviate my situation." Fang Yuan had a sensation back then, it was a pity that he could not obtain heart blood Immortal Gu during the qi sea banquet, that was truly a huge pity, to think that it would take effect here.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan lost the five regional limit formation, it was a huge pity. In this life, it was heart blood Immortal Gu.

Even though Fang Yuan had Spring Autumn Cicada and had the advantage of rebirth, when he changed things, the influence would spread out, his enemies and the entire world would generate new changes that would target him once again.

It was like someone shouting at a valley, no matter how he adjusted his voice or tone, the echo would also come back to find him.

At the qi sea banquet, Fang Yuan already felt something. But it was a pity that all sorts of undercurrents and circumstances forced Fang Yuan to let go of this opportunity.

From this aspect, one could see Spring Autumn Cicada's weakness.

The rebirth provided by Spring Autumn Cicada was merely a second chance. Afterwards, especially later into the future, the situation would still depend on the user's own actions.

If one kept relying on the advantage of rebirth, they might gain a lot during the initial stage, but they would be like overconfident swimmers in the sea, eventually drowning themselves.

Thus, even after being reborn for countless times, Red Lotus Demon Venerable only managed to damage fate Gu.

This way, with Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi as the main force, with Fang Zheng and Qin Ding Ling as the supplementary force using Demon Judgment Board, they attacked Fang Yuan together, finally resisting this demon's great might.

"Fang Yuan is trapped!" Within Calamity Luck Altar, Bull Demon spoke, he had kept a lot of attention on Fang Yuan.

Of course, he was not the only one, all of the other Gu Immortals did too, after all, Fang Yuan's victory or defeat would influence this entire battle.

Flower Lady hesitated: “Should we help him?”

The two look at Bing Sai Chuan. They knew that he was still concealing a trump card, they could ask Limitless to turn around.

In the previous life, Bing Sai Chuan used this trump card to temporarily trap Duke Long.

Furthermore, in this situation, as long as Duke Long was trapped, Fang Yuan would not have any restraints, he could break the stalemate.

But Bing Sai Chuan shook his head, his gaze was heated: “Let them fight, this is our best chance, let us take fate Gu and return to Longevity Heaven, we will refine rank nine destiny Gu!”

His original goal was this, with rank nine destiny Gu, Longevity Heaven would replace Heavenly Court’s position, they would rule the five regions.

Earlier, Bing Sai Chuan was trapped in a predicament, he had to give up on this thought and ask Fang Yuan for help. Now that Fang Yuan has taken action and changed the situation, Bing Sai Chuan’s situation turned for the better.

Be grateful to Fang Yuan and help him?

Bing Sai Chuan laughed coldly in his heart. Their grand ambitions were about to be fulfilled, after years of waiting and expectation’, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s goal of domination was close! How could he give up?!

As long as there was hope, he had to try, he could not give up!

At this moment, even though the refinement path formation was not destroyed, a path was already opened.

“Go! For Longevity Heaven, for Northern Plains, for Lord Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, go and retrieve Fate!” Bing Sai Chuan screamed in a loud voice.

The phantom images in the River of Time stirred, the historical experts of Northern Plains roared and echoed Bing Sai Chuan's words.

Mao Li Qiu had entered battle long ago, using the killer move perfect pair to fight Shabi Ninety-five and Ruan Dan.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady also flew out of Calamity Luck Altar, engaging in their attack. Many Northern Plains Gu Immortals were with them, they had a much larger force than in the previous life.

"No!" Yuan Qiong Du's eyes were red, he shouted for reinforcements but nobody came to help.

Yuan Qiong Du was inside the refinement path formation, he could not leave. At this moment, he was in grave danger himself.

Rank nine Fate was about to be repaired but if it was snatched away, their efforts would have been in vain.

Seeing this situation, Duke Long became anxious, he called out: "Fang Yuan, to think that they are also making use of you."

Fang Yuan casted his gaze at Heaven Overseeing Tower, with just this action, Bing Sai Chuan held his breath.

If Fang Yuan turned around now and attacked Longevity Heaven, what would they do?

Bing Sai Chuan had made this decision after shouldering huge pressure.

The truth was, Fang Yuan had been paying attention to Heaven Overseeing Tower's situation. When he saw that Northern Plains' Gu Immortals were going to Heaven Overseeing Tower, he became happy: Somebody was finally going to step on the land mine for him.

"Duke Long, you should be more concerned with yourself. I will kill you first before dealing with Longevity Heaven!" Fang Yuan shouted.

Duke Long was silent, his attacks went beyond his original limit yet again, becoming even stronger.

“Fate Gu!” Bull Demon and Flower Lady shouted, they charged up to the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower, seeing fate Gu.

But at the next moment, Genesis Lotus’ method activated.

“Ahhh!”

“What is this?!”

“Painting path, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s method!”

Like what Fang Yuan had expected, these Northern Plains Gu Immortals were all stuck inside the bamboo forest painting now.

This change was so unexpected that all the other immortals were stunned. Within Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan was dumbstruck.

Yuan Qiong Du, Cong Yan, and Che Wei gained some time to recover, they quickly rested.

Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth, phantoms moved in the River of Time but no Gu Immortals appeared, Mao Li Qiu was the closest to it but it was fighting against two legendary immemorial beasts, it could not leave.

In this situation, only Bing Sai Chuan could go himself.

At this moment, Qi Ci Lang woke up slowly.

“What are you hesitating for? Use Calamity Luck Altar to crash into Heaven Overseeing Tower!” Qi Ci Lang said.

When he was unconsciously, he still collected information about the outside world, once he woke up, he received the information.

Fate Gu was inside Heaven Overseeing Tower, it was the core component.

Fate Gu could only be destroyed by otherworldly demons, if Heaven Overseeing Tower was destroyed, the other core Immortal Gu might be destroyed but fate Gu would be intact.

But Heaven Overseeing Tower was a genuine rank nine Immortal Gu House, it had great defense. If Heaven Overseeing Tower attacked it, they would lose precious time. This was why Bing Sai Chuan sent Gu Immortals to invade Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Bing Sai Chuan could not decide.

He looked at the phantom River of Time again, some time had passed but no Gu Immortals came out. There were still many experts in Northern Plains' history, like those forming Seven Extreme Desolation, they did not show up despite Bing Sai Chuan's expectations.

Bing Sai Chuan's expression was uncertain, even though he did not know the previous life's situation, he sensed something amiss!

He was a time path great expert after all.

Being appointed by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable as the West Desolation Immortal, having slumbered for three hundred thousand years due to Giant Sun's request, he was the crucial leader that was designated to achieve Longevity Heaven's grand ambitions!

"This call of the ancient killer move is quite fishy, I cannot rely on it solely. Red Lotus Demon Venerable was once a righteous path member after all, nobody knows what his true objectives are."

Thinking of this, Bing Sai Chuan said to Qi Ci Lang: "Seventh Prince, please take action."

Qi Ci Lang spat out: "Are you a luck path cultivator? I am! I am more suited than you to control Calamity Luck Altar. How much of this Immortal Gu House's power can you use? The urgent matter at hand is to... Bing Sai Chuan, fuck your ancestor!"

Qi Ci Lang had just said his words when suddenly, Bing Sai Chuan teleported him out, he could not help but curse.

Calamity Luck Altar's control was in Bing Sai Chuan's hands. Qi Ci Lang was able to control it earlier because Bing Sai Chuan gave him a portion of the authority.

"Seventh Prince, please attack quickly." Bing Sai Chuan spoke politely but Calamity Luck Altar was ready to attack.

Qi Ci Lang suspected that if he refused to act, Calamity Luck Altar would attack him first.

"Bing Sai Chuan, very good!" Qi Ci Lang gritted his teeth in deep anger.

Bing Sai Chuan was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's old general, his status and seniority gave him the assurance to deal with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's own son like this.

"Just you wait. If not for father's ambitions..." Qi Ci Lang was furious and helpless, he charged into Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Yuan Qiong Du and the rest were helpless to stop him.

Since when could enemies enter and leave Heaven Overseeing Tower at will?

Yuan Qiong Du and the other two felt sadness in their hearts, they could only bank on Genesis Lotus' arrangements activating again.

Qi Ci Lang carefully stepped onto the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower, he was immediately attacked by a jade light.

He received a shock, looking at Genesis Lotus' painting on the walls, he tried his best to maintain his position but he could not resist it.

Right as he was about to be dragged into the painting, Bing Sai Chuan shouted: "Limitless, please turn around!"



In Imperfection Regret Pavilion, similar to the previous life, Limitless Demon Venerable did not turn around, he only tossed out one chess piece.

The chess piece flew into Heaven Overseeing Tower and floated above Qi Ci Lang's head.

Qi Ci Lang's body immediately regained freedom as the jade light got blocked by this small chess piece, only a faint amount of jade light remained around him.

Qi Ci Lang was overjoyed, as long as he got rid of the jade light, he would be able to move freely and snatch fate Gu!

# Chapter 1941 - Contented Lifestyle

## 1941 Contented Lifestyle

Emperor City battlefield.

Rumble, dust clouds spread.

The earth cracked open, a large trench spread out and extended forward, swallowing everything in its path, approaching Emperor City.

Emperor City's destruction was about to occur!

At this moment, there were still several Central Continent Gu Immortals guarding Emperor City, but to save the lives of everyone in such a short time, none of the Gu Immortals could do it.

Earth Trenches were formed naturally, nobody could predict where the next Earth Trench would appear. But only Fang Yuan knew.

Because this Earth Trench appeared in his previous life and destroyed Emperor City.

Both Central Continent's and Western Desert's forces were caught off guard, the Earth Trench was truly a huge shock to them!

But Western Desert was shocked and happy while Central Continent was shocked and fearful.

Right when Emperor City was about to be destroyed, an Immortal Gu House emerged and turned into jade light as it flew into the sky rapidly.

It was Divine Bean Palace!

“Stop him!” Central Continent’s Gu Immortals subconsciously shouted.

“What is Fang Di Chang doing?” Thousand Transformations Ancestor and the rest were quite surprised, Divine Bean Palace’s action was not what they had planned.

Fang Di Chang was shocked at the moment, not only could he not connect to the outside world, his entire body was immobilized.

Divine Bean Palace shook intensely, a formless force was restraining him completely.

On the painting that surrounded the walls, a lump of will emerged.

The will quickly gathered into human form, he had the appearance of a young man with a gentlemanly air, wearing green clothes and a white headband, his long hair extended to his shoulders.

Seeing this will, Fang Di Chang’s expression turned ashen, he shouted: “Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable!”

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable... the venerable with the most abundant immortal essence in history, the third generation Immortal King of Heavenly Court, the creator of Heavenly Lotus Sect, he was the one who cleansed the demonic trend, he restored order to the world.

Indeed, this was Genesis Lotus’ will!

“Damn it, he was hiding in the painting so I could not discover him?” Fang Di Chang understood at once, he had no understanding of painting path after all.

“But why did I lose control of Divine Bean Palace the moment Genesis Lotus’ will appeared, I am restrained here without any freedom left?”

Instantly, Fang Di Chang thought of Qing Chou.

His heart turned cold, he had once thought he completely refined Divine Bean Palace but the cruel truth was exposed here, Divine Bean Palace still continued secrets, its owner was still Genesis Lotus' will all along.

This method was a secret to both the real Fang Di Chang and Fang Yuan's clone, they were unaware of it.

How could a venerable's Immortal Gu House be taken so easily?

Boom, Divine Bean Palace landed on the ground, right in the center of Emperor City as if it was overseeing the situation.

An endless amount of green light spread out from Divine Bean Palace, the light was as warm as water, it was not glaring at all, radiating half the sky.

The whole of Emperor City was covered in green light. Within the light, paintings in all the corners of Emperor City started to surface and show themselves.

These were all paintings of the lives of people, they portrayed the scene of Emperor City at certain points in time.

There were marketplaces, crowded with people, vendors vied for attention while selling a wide variety of goods.

There were the silhouettes of courtyards of several houses, and on the tall trees in the courtyard, a few birds' nests had young chicks waiting to fly. Under the trees, there was a group of children playing and chasing each other, full of hope for the future.

There was a group going towards the bride's house, they traveled from the north with the groom riding on a large horse, behind him was a mortal Gu House carriage[1]. This kind of mortal Gu House was usually only used during marriage ceremonies in Central Continent, and the surface of the carriage was decorated with colorful blooming flowers. Behind the carriage was a group of servants carrying the bride's generous dowry.

There was a teahouse, the street in front of the entrance was crowded with pedestrians, and the upper level of the teahouse was filled with guests who were eating breakfast while looking through the windows, watching the street. The banners of the teahouse, used to attract customers, fluttered along with the slight morning breeze.

There was also a painting depicting dusk. At the corner of the street near the city gate, there was a stall where a blind old Gu Master, who perhaps owned a wisdom path Gu worm, was acting as a fortune teller, predicting the future prospects of a female customer.

...

Be it dusk or dawn, the city gates or the vibrant markets, the contented lifestyles of the people in Emperor City could be clearly seen in these respective paintings.

Undeniably, this was a painting path method filled with the profundities of human path.

Immortal killer move — Contented Lifestyle!

“Emperor City actually has such a hidden method from Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable?”

“Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had once lived in Emperor City as a mortal for some time... Don’t tell me that these rumors were actually true?”

“Painting path is truly profound!”

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were joyful.

Western Desert’s side felt that the situation was turning bad.

Divine Bean Palace was connected with Emperor City and formed a gigantic Immortal Gu House. The central area was Divine Bean Palace, while the periphery was the former Emperor City.

As the Earth Trench approached, the monstrous mouth opened, attempting to engulf Emperor City.

But Emperor City had transformed already, it floated in the sky without moving at all.

The countless people in the city cheered loudly.

They jumped in joy as they cheered and shouted, they had escaped a certain death situation!

A group of people were sobbing with joy, they knelt down on the ground and started to kowtow to the paintings.

Suddenly, many new paintings appeared all over the place, the content of the paintings were the scenes of these kowtowing people.

This killer move, contented lifestyle, was able to draw power from mortals to strengthen itself.

As the power of the paintings accumulated unceasingly, it was transmitted into Divine Bean Palace.

Genesis Lotus' will controlled this power, he had a firm grasp of Divine Bean Palace, he looked towards Fang Di Chang with a seemingly smiling face: "Fang Yuan, I have to thank you for bringing Divine Bean Palace here, you prevented a catastrophe for the mortals."

This was Genesis Lotus's arrangement when he was alive! In the previous life, Divine Bean Palace was not brought here by Fang clan, thus Emperor City was destroyed. In this life, using Fang Yuan's clone as the tool, Divine Bean Palace appeared to save the mortals.

As his feeling of danger increased, Fang Di Chang struggled intensely.

But a profound power restrained him and directly sent him into the painting of Divine Bean Palace.

Fang Di Chang's vision changed, when he took a second look, he was already inside the painting.

The scene was quite familiar to him, he saw a grey-white land with deep pits in it, he had planted the immortal beans here back then.

Right now, most of the beans were used up in the fight, there were only some sprouts left here, slowly growing.

Fang Di Chang found that he could move again but it was useless, no matter how he tried, he could not escape from this painting.

"I am sealed within the painting!" Fang Di Chang thought about Flower Lady in his previous life, she had been suppressed in the painting that was in Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Fang Di Chang tried to connect to his main body but he found that he could not communicate with the outside world. He could not even sense treasure yellow heaven, all of his communicative methods were ineffective.

"Calm down, calm down, I still have my final hope!" Fang Di Chang pondered for a moment before activating the killer move karma divine tree.

Thankfully, this move had been modified already, once he activated it, Genesis Lotus' will, which was outside the painting, had a change of expression.

This method was truly the only way to resist, even Genesis Lotus' will could not stop him.

At this time, in Emperor City, the final competition of the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was undergoing.

This great competition was finally at its last moment, the victor was about to be decided.

"I succeeded."

"Success!"

Hong Yi and Ye Fan spoke at the same time, they refined the Gu refinement at the same time.

To decide the victor, a time path Gu Master would need to inspect the specific timing of their completion.

But at this moment, jade light shined, the two were enveloped by it, dragged by it and flying far away.

This jade light was extremely fast, it brought Hong Yi and Ye Fan into Divine Bean Palace almost instantly.

Genesis Lotus' will in Divine Bean Palace gritted his teeth, seeing this, the two people brought by the jade light were extremely close to Fang Yuan, they were either his pawns or his capable subordinates!

Genesis Lotus' will quickly activated Divine Bean Palace, the light that carried Ye Fan and Hong Yi took a twist as it landed in a painting of Emperor City, both of them were sealed as well.

“What is going on?”

“Who won?”

Hong Yi and Ye Fan looked at each other with a dumbfounded expression, they were currently inside a painting created by the killer move contented lifestyle, all they saw was a peaceful and serene environment in front of them.

This made them feel extremely confused.

“Where in the world are we?”

“Aren't there Gu Immortals fighting outside Emperor City? Why can't we hear anything?”

“Am I dreaming?”



Hong Yi gave himself a hard pinch, he gritted his teeth as he felt a sharp pain!

[1] We call it a Chinese Sedan, otherwise known as Litter(Vehicle), google for image.

# Chapter 1942 - Destiny Song

## 1942 Destiny Song

Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield.

Only a small portion of the five colored smoke remained, Di Zang Sheng roared as it used its mighty strength to tear the formation. Its mountain range-sized body was still charging forward.

“Stop it!”

“Another sub-formation has been broken!”

“How many sub-formations do we still have?”

“Only one is left!”

“Quickly construct the sub-formations!”

“We can’t, its destructive force is too great, we won’t make it in time!”

The nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation was in chaos. Many Central Continent Gu Immortals were stationed here but got restricted by the five colored smoke, be it controlling the formation or constructing sub-formations, they had to face backlashes. The more powerful the person and the more strength they used, the stronger the backlash would be.

Di Zang Sheng was extremely powerful, it could break the sub-formations so quickly with just its physical strength!

And it was constantly becoming stronger.

The five regions' regional walls grew increasingly fragile, the earth veins of the five regions were gradually merging into one, the Earth Trench that spread to Emperor City was huge evidence. Earth Trenches had already spread to the central region of Central Continent, this meant that the merging of earth veins had reached the highest point.

Be it the other four regions or Central Continent, the rapid spread of new Earth Trenches led to countless tragedies and deaths, human emotions were surging.

Di Zang Sheng was different from other legendary immemorial beasts, it was born from the power of earth veins fused with the negative emotions of humans.

Right now, Central Continent's earth vein expanded to become the five regions' earth vein, Di Zang Sheng's strength rose to five times of before. Negative emotions were also increasing wildly in the humans of all regions, Di Zang Sheng's strength was further soaring because of this!

Duke Long was growing stronger continuously because of heavenly dragon's last stand.

And Di Zang Sheng's strength was growing at an even more horrifying speed than Duke Long's. As such, even though Heavenly Court's main force was here, using all their abilities and staking their lives, they were unable to stop Di Zang Sheng's charge.

Heavenly Court's main force was furious.

"We can't let it move forward."

"We must stop it even if we die!"

"Damned Evil Dragon."

"Get out of my way, let me stop it!" Zhang Fei Xiong suddenly roared, becoming a giant with a bear head and human body. He attacked with no

fear of death.

Bam.

A muffled sound echoed, he was directly crushed into meat paste, dying on the spot.

This rank eight transformation path great expert could only obstruct Di Zang Sheng for a brief moment.

“Zhang Fei Xiong...” The eyes of Heavenly Court’s immortals were filled with tears.

At the crucial moment, the Heavenly Court members showed no hesitation towards sacrificing themselves!

“Let me.” At the next moment, Flesh Whip Immortal went forward. She transformed into an immemorial walking meat tree, which was her strongest form.

Bam.

Another muffled sound echoed, Flesh Whip Immortal was smashed to pieces, her blood splashing everywhere.

“Flesh Whip Immortal!” The group of immortals cried out.

When she was needed, she charged ahead without any regard for herself. A grand rank eight, a genius of her generation, could only stall it for a breath of time.

Even the Southern Border immortals were visibly moved.

What was urging them to do so?

Seemingly... Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had all been like this since ancient times.

Their spirit had never waned, it had instead been fostered and enhanced.

Heavenly Court had never lacked brave members!

Primordial Origin might have passed away, but his spirit did not!

“Unfortunately, your efforts are futile.” At Wu Shuai’s will, countless clones flew out of Dragon Palace.

They were Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies!

These dream path clones turned into a huge vanguard army and flew in front of Di Zang Sheng, attacking the final sub-formation.

“Watch this!” Under the immortals’ expectant gaze, Feng Jin Huang stood up, her youthful face was filled with seriousness and solemnness.

She borrowed the immortal formation’s strength to activate immortal killer move shatter dream.

Bam bam bam...

Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies exploded directly, becoming lumps of dream realms on the spot that rotated and moved slowly.

Immortal killer move — Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation!

Feng Jin Huang activated another method.

These restored dream realms transformed back to human form again, but this time, they belonged to Feng Jin Huang.

With Feng Jin Huang here, dream path was no longer Heavenly Court’s weakness.

“What about this then!” Before Heavenly Court’s force could relax, a large formation was sent out from Dragon Palace at this crucial moment.

Five regional limit formation!

Five colored smoke spouted once again and rapidly spread to cover the whole area.

Heavenly Court's main force had bloodshot eyes as Zhu Que Er shouted hoarsely: "Destroy it!"

Vortex Space Boy and Jun Shen Guang had already moved towards the formation.

"Too late." Zhan Bu Du exclaimed with joy from inside the formation.

He did not let down everyone's expectations, at this crucial moment, he finished repairing the whole formation and joined the battle again!

Five colored smoke expanded and covered the sub-formation.

Puff puff puff.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals were still setting up the formation, they were caught unprepared and coughed blood repeatedly, most fainted on the spot while some even died from the backlash!

By now, they were all exhausted and the five regional limit formation became their death warrant.

As for the Gu Immortals controlling the main formation, they were forced to ease their strength while resisting the injuries from the backlash.

Roar—!

Di Zang Sheng took the chance to attack, it directly smashed into the final sub-formation. The nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation was finally broken at this moment!

The formation collapsed, the obstruction disappeared, Hairy Foot Mountain that had been hidden by the formation got exposed.

This mountain was small and inconspicuous, it was as ordinary as could be but it held Infallible blessed land.

The Gu Immortals who had been controlling the main formation were lying on Hairy Foot Mountain.

The formation's destruction inflicted serious injuries on these Gu Immortals again, almost none of them were in a clear-headed state.

Most of the Gu Immortals had already lost their lives, while a small portion were in a dazed state. Feng Jin Huang, who had been protected tightly, also had a pale face, she fell down to the ground in exhaustion and did not have any strength to escape.

At this moment, she could only look on as Di Zang Sheng came charging, she could do nothing but wait for death.

A strong sense of death suffocated Feng Jin Huang.

“Am I going to die?” At this moment, this young female Gu Master felt a sense of loss.

“Protect Feng Jin Huang!”

“Save her.”

“No need to care about Infallible blessed land, the final batch of success dao marks have already been sent to Heavenly Court.”

Heavenly Court's main force staked all their energy to rescue Feng Jin Huang.

“Wishful thinking!” The Southern Border Gu Immortals laughed wildly as they used their strength to hold back these Heavenly Court Gu Immortals as much as possible.

Wu Yong's unlimited wind blew while making heavy sounds. This giant tornado stalled a large number of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Jun Shen Guang and Vortex Space Boy charged to the front again. One cultivated light path, another space path, their activation speed of killer moves was fastest.

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

Dragon Palace withstood all sorts of explosions and forcibly attacked Jun Shen Guang and Vortex Space Boy.

Jun Shen Guang and Vortex Space Boy finally could not dodge, they were carried away by dreamy light smoke the moment they were struck.

After capturing these two, Dragon Palace had reached its limits and could not capture any more people unless these two were killed.

“Destroy Hairy Foot Mountain and Infallible blessed land!” Wu Yong shouted as he took the lead to charge in front. He was not on Heavenly Court’s side and naturally was unaware that Heavenly Court had already completed the task. Even if he were to destroy Infallible blessed land now, it did not have any influence on the big picture.

“Don’t even think about it!” A lump of fire obstructed Wu Yong, from which Prince Feng Xian flew out.

“By you alone?!” Wu Yong’s eyes shined with sharp killing intent, he suddenly disappeared and when he appeared, he was already behind Prince Feng Xian.

Immortal killer move — Farewell Friend Wind!

“We became friends at first sight, yet you have to go now. This is farewell, my good friend, let me send you off.” Wu Yong smiled lightly.

Hearing these words, even Prince Feng Xian, a person who infiltrated and went undercover in Northern Plains for many years, turned pale with fright.

Next, Prince Feng Xian lost control over his body and slowly floated towards the front.

While floating, his hair, clothes, and limbs started to disintegrate.

“Damn it! Farewell friend wind is actually in Wu Yong’s hand!” Prince Feng Xian shouted inwardly but was unable to articulate his words.



He could not move at all, none of his methods could be used.

With the final obstruction gone, Wu Yong charged down towards Hairy Foot Mountain like an eagle hunting its prey.

The remaining Heavenly Court members wanted to reinforce but were held back by others.

Wu Yong revealed awe-inspiring might, before he had even truly descended, the wind pressure from him was already as heavy as a mountain, Feng Jin Huang could not even budge from this pressure and slowly closed her eyes in despair.

But the pain that she anticipated did not manifest.

Feng Jin Huang slowly opened her eyes in doubt and saw a figure blocking Wu Yong in front of her like an impenetrable fortress.

The moment she saw this extremely familiar figure, she cried out in joy: “Father!”

The rank eight Gu Immortal who appeared at the crucial moment was none other than Feng Jiu Ge.

He wore a red and white robe, standing straight like a spear or sword.

Hearing Feng Jin Huang’s cry, Feng Jiu Ge turned sideways and looked at Feng Jin Huang. His eyes under his sharp brows revealed warmth and concern as well as confidence.

Feng Jiu Ge did not say anything and only nodded at Feng Jin Huang before facing Wu Yong.

But just that nod made Feng Jin Huang feel immense security and let her relax completely. This groundless comfort was completely baffling and had no basis, but Feng Jin Huang believed in it, this was her father Feng Jiu Ge.

Wu Yong’s eyes emitted dangerous light.

“Feng Jiu Ge,” Wu Yong mumbled this name as he exposed his killing intent: “You stopped me from chasing Fang Yuan before, I will settle the score with you properly now.”

He then prepared his killer move, trying to use farewell friend wind again.

Feng Jiu Ge did not dodge or evade, he remained floating in the air as he slowly sang with a smile on his face.

His voice was illusory and deep, it was filled with conflict and was very unique.

Wu Yong was unconsciously influenced by the song, his attack paused.

Initially, the song was like a small stream of water in the mountains, flowing slowly. Gradually, the stream turned into flowing lava that expanded the river’s width, in the range of mountains, like a wandering dragon.

“Damn it, what song is this?” Wu Yong’s expression changed intensely, he began to struggle with difficulty, he had been the first to be struck by the move because he was the nearest.

The song made Wu Yong feel unwell, it made him feel like he had returned to when he was young, he was always shrouded under his mother Wu Du Xiu’s shadow and had received her strict teaching and restrictions. During that time, he could only receive her lessons obediently.

At the next moment, Wu Yong’s eyes opened even wider.

The farewell friend wind killer move he had used earlier on Prince Feng Xian had actually stopped.

“What song is this? It can actually break farewell friend wind?” Wu Yong was shaken.

Prince Feng Xian felt a different sensation.

He felt like he had returned to the past when he had disguised his identity and finally cultivated to rank eight in Northern Plains. He had a grotto-heaven and finally had a feeling of joy, no longer having to endure the overbearing attitude of Northern Plains' super force Gong tribe.

Under the effect of destiny song, the Southern Border immortals were weakened and dispirited, on the contrary, Heavenly Court's side felt free and elated, their condition picked up and their injuries recovered.

Destiny song's ability was extremely comprehensive, what was even more amazing was that it could distinguish between allies and enemies. This was something that the previous life's destiny song could never compare to.

Even Wu Shuai and the rest were constrained by the song, only Di Zang Sheng roared and forcibly endured the song, still continuing to charge forward!

Feng Jiu Ge concentrated on Di Zang Sheng. Di Zang Sheng's body was so huge that it almost covered the sky and earth, just its dragon head was as big as a mountain. Feng Jiu Ge, in comparison, was as minuscule as an ant.

But at the next moment, the effects of the song concentrated and focused on Di Zang Sheng.

Di Zang Sheng felt like it had returned to the time when it was suppressed in Hidden Dragon Cave; it was in a dark cage, unable to regain freedom even though it had a thousand desires and endless strength.

Helplessness.

Di Zang Sheng started to slow down.

It wanted to roar and cry out, but it ended up letting out whimpers.

The immortals were shocked.

This scene was too shocking.

Feng Jiu Ge defeated Di Zang Sheng in one move!

This was the strongest legendary immemorial desolate beast of this age!! In the previous life, it could fight Duke Long who was at his final moments of life, if he had not captured Dragon Palace, it would have been impossible for him to handle Di Zang Sheng so easily.

“This is my personal creation, destiny song. It has just been completed, please feel free to critique it.” Feng Jiu Ge continued to sing while transmitting his voice.

“Destiny song!!” The immortals, be they enemies or allies, engraved the name of this killer move deep in their hearts.

The moment this move appeared, it became famous.

From today onwards, everyone in the world would know of it!

Destiny was constantly moving, it had ups and downs. Who would not have low points in their life? Even Fang Yuan, even the venerables had times when they were at their lowest points. Destiny song could bring out the lows and highs of the destiny of all living beings.

At times, even heaven and earth will help you, at times, even heroes cannot emerge unscathed!

Feng Jiu Ge’s ninth song, sound path rank eight immortal killer move — Destiny Song!

“This is troublesome.” Wu Shuai’s expression was extremely heavy.

“He actually created the complete destiny song. As expected of Feng Jiu Ge.” Zhan Bu Du sighed heavily.

This battle situation was transmitted to Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei was naturally overjoyed.

Feng Jiu Ge had been in a state of comprehension, he took the initiative and requested to explore the River of Time. Qin Ding Ling inspected his luck and saw his fortuitous encounter, so she fully supported it. Fairy Zi Wei had

thus secretly arranged a time path Immortal Gu House to send Feng Jiu Ge to the River of Time quietly.

Fairy Zi Wei believed Qin Ding Ling's words and she also saw Feng Jiu Ge's potential, but she had never imagined Feng Jiu Ge would actually give her such a huge surprise!

Rank eight immortal killer move destiny song, just this move alone raised Feng Jiu Ge's strength to the peak, he became one of the strongest people in the world.

Heavenly Court wanted to restore rank nine fate Gu and seize fortune rivalling heaven Gu to try to refine rank ten destiny Gu. Longevity Heaven also had the same plan, but their target was set lower, they wanted to use the damaged fate Gu to refine rank nine destiny Gu.

But both sides had not expected that ahead of them, a Gu Immortal actually created the initial draft of the Immortal Gu recipe of destiny Gu!

Immortal killer moves could be condensed into Immortal Gu recipes.

The best example was Fang Yuan's myriad self Immortal Gu, the refined myriad self Immortal Gu recipe had been derived from the killer move myriad self.

It was no exaggeration to say that this move alone allowed Feng Jiu Ge's name to be written down in history.

Worthy of a Dao Guardian!

Such overwhelming talent, even Fairy Zi Wei felt stunned and dazzled, she admitted her inferiority.

"Father, you are amazing!" Feng Jin Huang stared at Feng Jiu Ge's back with her eyes wide open, feelings of idolization and love almost overflowed.

The girl's heart was filled with pride and joy at this moment.

“Yes, my father has never disappointed me.”

At this moment, Feng Jin Huang was filled with bliss as she cheered inwardly: “Father, you are most amazing, your broad shoulders will forever be my most reliable support!”

# **Chapter 1943 - Fang Yuan's Strongest Offense!**

## **1943 Fang Yuan's Strongest Offense!**

Heavenly Court's battlefield.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Roaring Wave.

Immortal killer move — Body Flicker.

Duke Long's figure suddenly appeared on the right of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Too close!

Almost at the same time, the daybreak swords that were floating around Myriad Year Flying Warship swarmed in and submerged Duke Long.

Countless dragon shaped tattoos floated around Duke Long's body, blocking the powerful sword attacks.

This was Duke Long's main defensive killer move — Nine Dragons Protection.

Nine was just a general number implying countless tattoos. This was a rare passive defensive method and usually stayed hidden on Duke Long's skin,

but when there was an attack, it activated automatically and did not need Duke Long's wills or thoughts to be maintained.

Duke Long forcibly withstood the daybreak swords' attacks with this move, then clenched his hands into fists.

Immortal killer move — World Shaking Dragon Hammer!

Boom!

The dragon hammer's strike directly sent Myriad Year Flying Warship flying.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was sent flying, but it stopped suddenly. The surrounding space crumbled like countless pieces of glass. These glass pieces were extremely sharp and as long as they touched Myriad Year Flying Warship, they would leave behind deep marks, killing many Gu worms. Fang Yuan, who was standing on the deck, also got a cut on his cheek.

This was Cang Xuan Zi's ability, she used space path killer moves to set up countless traps everywhere in the battlefield, they had extremely high power!

But this scene only flashed in Fang Yuan's mind, it had not happened yet.

This was time path killer move — Three Breaths Future Vision!

Three breaths future vision was an investigative killer move that came from Hei Fan's true inheritance, it allowed the Gu Immortal to see three breaths into the future related to them.

Due to Fang Yuan's dao mark amplification, its power had increased by fifteen hundred times and thus could show its effect even when battling an expert at the level of Duke Long. However, this move was essentially only rank seven, so it did not show effect every time, it succeeded sometimes but failed at other times as well.

At the next moment.



Immortal killer move — Dragon Roaring Wave.

Immortal killer move — Body Flicker.

Duke Long's figure suddenly appeared on the right of Myriad Year Flying Warship, just like the scene displayed by three breaths future vision.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly and controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship to move far away, brushing past the countless space path traps.

“What a pity!” Cang Xuan Zi sighed deeply in her heart, just a little and Fang Yuan would have triggered the space path traps.

She was floating in the air without any obvious movement, but she was secretly and quietly forming and laying space path traps.

After fighting Fang Yuan for a long time, the battle experiences that had remained deep within her memories were coming to life and her methods became more experienced.

After Cang Xuan Zi and Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable made a secret agreement three hundred thousand years ago, she had moved to Heavenly Court and lived a peaceful life, never having to fight again. But before this, Cang Xuan Zi's name and the legendary immemorial beast's position were personally established by her!

Fang Yuan controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship and dodged while observing Cang Xuan Zi.

Although Cang Xuan Zi's battle strength was recovering, her combat style was obvious. She retained the habits of fighting as an immemorial desolate plant; her battle style leaned towards staying at one spot and attacking with long ranged attacks, using space path methods to create distance from her enemies before laying space path traps.

Her nature could be seen from her combat style, she liked to fish patiently, this also meant she was not aggressive and would not take risks.

Although many of Cang Xuan Zi's methods were still mysterious, Fang Yuan had already begun to understand the details of Cang Xuan Zi. On the contrary, Duke Long was still unfathomable and not easy to comprehend.

Fang Yuan fought Duke Long in the previous life and he also knew Duke Long's methods for the most part, but Duke Long's combat style was ever-changing, he defended at times while becoming aggressive at other times. He suddenly attacked and evaded at times, making others unable to see a clear pattern.

This combat attainment was not just due to Duke Long's battle experience but also his innate talent!

As far as Fang Yuan was concerned, defeating Cang Xuan Zi might be difficult but he had a high chance. But he was still unable to see even the slightest chance of defeating Duke Long till now.

"Unless I can break Duke Long's defensive killer move!" Fang Yuan analyzed inwardly.

Duke Long's main defensive killer move was nine dragons protection. Fang Yuan was collecting information during the battle and breaking it down.

But his gains were minimal.

It was extremely difficult to break a strong enemy's killer move during a battle.

Compared to nine dragons protection, Fang Yuan wanted to break heavenly dragon's last stand much more. But this killer move left no trace, Fang Yuan did not even have a way to gather its information.

Based on his original expectation, Steal Life was the best method to deal with Duke Long, but it showed no effect even after hitting...

"Wait, I seem to have neglected something?" Suddenly, a light of inspiration flashed past Fang Yuan's mind.

But when he wanted to explore this inspiration, it was interrupted by an attack.

Fang Yuan did not even have to look to know that this was an attack from Demon Judgment Board.

This rank eight Immortal Gu House was truly an annoyance!

It did not have any weakness, its speed was so fast that it did not lose to Myriad Year Flying Warship and had extremely powerful defense. If it was one versus one, Demon Judgment Board could never be Fang Yuan's match, but it would definitely consume some time.

Theft path methods were the best way to deal with this Immortal Gu House, but it was not easy to use them in front of Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi.

Fang Yuan had currently transformed into the immemorial year monkey which coordinated well with Myriad Year Flying Warship. If he transformed his dao marks to theft path, his battle strength would fall greatly, giving Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi an opportunity instead.

What made Fang Yuan even more wary was that even if he were to transform into a theft path immemorial desolate beast and used great thief ghost hand, his attack might not hit Demon Judgment Board. Even if it hit, it might not be able to steal Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan's luck path superiority was already dealt for most part by Qin Ding Ling, Demon Judgment Board moreover had Gu Yue Fang Zheng who restrained Fang Yuan in terms of luck.

So, theft path methods were not the correct methods to change the situation.

“Fang Yuan...” At this time, Fang Zheng who was in charge of Demon Judgment Board had a complicated mood.

Could Fang Yuan be considered his own brother?

No.

Fang Yuan's physical body had changed, his soul was also of an otherworldly demon.

Then, was he a stranger?

No.

The memories of childhood could not be erased, they had once been in each other's company.

Anger?

There was.

Fang Yuan toyed around with him and disregarded his life, he definitely had a sinister scheme for putting him in Lang Ya blessed land.

Hatred?

Definitely.

Fang Yuan killed his own clan and had been the shadow and nightmare of Fang Zheng's childhood.

What else beyond these?

Having experienced many things, Fang Zheng had slowly begun to understand Fang Yuan and even felt some admiration for Fang Yuan.

People often had to compromise in this world. Fang Zheng had started realizing his shallowness and gained an understanding of himself. The so-called A-grade aptitude was just a kind of narcissism, Fang Zheng had already become mature.

Besides understanding and admiration, Fang Zheng even felt a trace of gratitude towards Fang Yuan.

He was grateful to Fang Yuan for creating obstacles for him, for giving him suffering and hardships. These were all wealth that helped Fang Zheng

grow to what he was now. If it were not for the hardships during the continental war in Lang Ya blessed land, how could Fang Zheng have merged the various cultivation experiences of the past Demon Judgment Board Lords and created the killer move blood-kin heart revenge?

Fang Zheng had once dreamed of a day where he could fight Fang Yuan and take revenge with his own hands.

But now that the moment really came, Fang Zheng felt a lot different from what he had imagined; he neither felt the pleasure of taking revenge nor felt satisfaction.

His thoughts were complicated, very complicated.

“Duke Long, Cang Xuan Zi, Fang Zheng, and Qin Ding Ling, besides them, there is also Fairy Zi Wei.” Fang Yuan’s expression turned increasingly serious as he received attacks from all sides.

As Duke Long continued to grow stronger and the coordination of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals became more tight, Fang Yuan’s thoughts were almost fully used to maintain this battle.

His ability to analyze the whole situation was continuously falling.

Be it activating killer moves or controlling Myriad Year Flying Warship, both expended a lot of energy. Fang Yuan also needed to be aware of the overall situation, to keep an eye on all the battlefields, and secretly influence the Gu Immortals of other regions.

In fact, Duke Long’s group was also in the same state. The battle was becoming more intense, powerful and complicated killer moves involving many Gu worms were activated more frequently, which demanded more attention and control.

“If Fairy Zi Wei recovers, I will be at a disadvantage whether she joins the battle or takes charge of the overall situation.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with coldness.

“Hahaha!” Duke Long suddenly laughed as he got the latest report of the battle in Hairy Foot Mountain, “Fang Yuan, no matter how many times you are reborn, it is useless. Use all your abilities, otherwise it will be too late.”

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim as he also learned of the recent battle situation.

In the Emperor City battlefield, his clone Fang Di Chang was lost and Divine Bean Palace had defected to the enemy’s side. In the Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield, Feng Jiu Ge appeared and used the extremely powerful destiny song, which even made Di Zang Sheng fall into a disadvantage!

Heavenly Court’s foundation was truly too deep.

Fang Yuan was not only fighting against Duke Long’s group, he was also contending against Heavenly Court’s millions of years of accumulation!

The situation in the outside world was not dependable, as such, all the pressure was on Fang Yuan’s shoulders.

Fang Yuan’s gaze suddenly turned sharp like lightning: “Indeed, I cannot hold back anymore.”

He was not able to find Duke Long’s weakness, but with the situation forcing him, even if there was no weakness, Fang Yuan had to use his full strength.

Myriad Year Flying Warship rose to the air, rapidly creating distance as Fang Yuan began preparing a killer move.

Duke Long did not give chase, he remained standing in the air, looking above with concentration. His expression looked like he was facing a great enemy, he no longer looked down on Fang Yuan.

Cang Xuan Zi took a deep breath and was extremely vigilant.

Qin Ding Ling, Fang Zheng, as well as Fairy Zi Wei who was recuperating at the edge of the battlefield fixed their gazes on Fang Yuan.

Even Bing Sai Chuan, who was crazily attacking the refinement path formation and bombarding Heaven Overseeing Tower, split a portion of his attention towards Fang Yuan's every move.

Everyone was aware the victory or defeat in the following battle could very likely determine the outcome of the whole situation.

Immortal killer move — Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

Fang Yuan first summoned twelve immemorial year beasts, this method had already been revealed before.

But different from before, the Twelve Zodiac battle formation did not condense into a giant monster but transformed into a golden helm.

The helm was like a carriage wheel, it had six spokes and twelve handles; each handle had a carving of a year beast.

The Twelve Zodiac battle helm flew towards Myriad Year Flying Warship and merged into it rapidly. The dazzling silver Myriad Year Flying Warship suddenly had a large golden image that looked like flying sand, transforming at every moment. The golden image transformed into a coiling dragon at one time, a giant tiger at other time, a crowing rooster, or a ramming ox...

The twelve immemorial year beasts combined perfectly with Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Fang Yuan's previous concept was fully displayed to the world at this moment.

"He actually merged an ancient battle formation into an Immortal Gu House perfectly!" Qin Ding Ling's eyes opened wide.

Fang Zheng looked on, dumbfounded.

"Such amazing talent!" Even Duke Long could not help but praise.

He had never seen this sight, Fang Yuan was the first to achieve this in history!

Although it was said that ancient battle formations and Immortal Gu Houses were immortal killer moves in essence, no one had succeeded in combining these two killer moves prior to Fang Yuan!

“Careful, it is attacking!” Cang Xuan Zi shouted with a trace of panic. Myriad Year Flying Warship was letting out a frightening aura that even shook her.

Immortal killer move — Daybreak Torrent!

Myriad Year Flying Warship swooped down, leaving behind a trail of sonic booms.

It was already an outstanding rank eight Immortal Gu House, the Twelve Zodiac battle formation that merged with it even possessed a mighty strength that could match Duke Long’s. After they merged, their strength combined to a horrifying level!

Duke Long roared as he unleashed a qi wall.

Myriad Year Flying Warship’s momentum was slightly slowed before it broke through Duke Long’s qi wall.

Duke Long frowned as he activated qi wall again.

Myriad Year Flying Warship broke the qi wall again.

Duke Long erected the qi wall again while Myriad Year Flying Warship broke it again. After five times, Myriad Year Flying Warship’s momentum finally fell sharply.

Fang Yuan sneered, immortal killer move — Myriad Year Hunting!

At the next moment, the River of Time phantom under Myriad Year Flying Warship enlarged suddenly, countless year beasts surged out like a huge tide!



The sky-covering year beast army began attacking the immortal graveyard like a giant tsunami that engulfed everything.

The large army had countless year beasts, with large numbers of ancient year beasts, and even immemorial year beasts were not in a small quantity.

What was even more terrifying was that this year beast army moved to Fang Yuan's will!

"Terrifying! Just this move alone can let Fang Yuan attack any super force in the world by himself!"

"Does he want to summon all the year beasts in the River of Time?"

"This is almost like a copy of call of the ancient! It is just that while Red Lotus's method summons past Gu Immortal experts, Fang Yuan is summoning the year beasts in the River of Time!"

"But didn't myriad year hunting only attract year beasts and had no ability to control them?"

"This is probably the qualitative change caused by the merging of Twelve Zodiac battle formation!"

Heavenly Court's side was shaken.

Fang Yuan's trump cards were truly peerless, he just used one and it showed towering might. Duke Long, Cang Xuan Zi and the rest immediately felt troubled.

The scale of this year beast army was too large, moreover, Fang Yuan was still summoning them with no end in sight.

The year beast army scattered and spread everywhere like a blossoming flower, attacking every corner of Heavenly Court; Heavenly Court's side, which lacked manpower, was unable to defend properly.

Cang Xuan Zi clenched her teeth as she continuously activated space path killer moves to kill as many year beasts as possible in an attempt to ease the

current pressure.

“Be careful!!” Duke Long suddenly shouted.

“Huh?” Cang Xuan Zi seemingly saw the image of a small knife, her pupils shrunk to the size of pins as she reacted but it was too late, she was already struck!

“How is this possible... so fast? I clearly arranged...”

Cang Xuan Zi gazed at Fang Yuan in incredulity. Her body stiffened, a bloody hole appeared on her forehead, piercing through the back of her head. The injury was filled with dense time path dao marks that even a legendary immemorial beast’s self-recovery could not regenerate.

Immortal killer move — Time Cutting Edge!

This was the supreme method of Central Continent’s Bo clan, once this knife was shot out, it would not miss, anyone hit by it would die. It had once shaken the whole Central Continent with terror.

The killer move’s contents were extremely complex and its steps were ever-changing. Among Fang Yuan’s methods, it was no doubt the number one in terms of complexity.

The more absurd thing was its activation conditions, its activation time could not cross three breaths. For this, Fang Yuan had to use the supplementary killer move shrink time every time he activated this move.

Its side-effect was also terrifying, every time it was used, a portion of the memories related to it would disappear. It was like an eraser, erasing the enemy while consuming itself.

After Cang Xuan Zi was struck, Fang Yuan’s mind immediately turned blank, most of the memories of time cutting edge turned vague.

“At this rate, after I attack Duke Long with it, I will completely lose this move.” Fang Yuan’s mind was as calm as the snowy plains.

He glanced at Duke Long.

Without realizing, Duke Long retreated several steps.

Boom!

A loud sound resounded as Cang Xuan Zi fell to the ground. Her body returned to its original form in mid-air, turning into a giant green vine.

This green vine once held the sky and was like an extremely eye-catching heavenly pillar, but now it collapsed in the immortal graveyard without moving and had no life force.

The damage to the immortal graveyard from this crash was much more than the sum of all previous damage, but Duke Long did not care about this. His gaze was fixed on Fang Yuan.

He needed to concentrate fully to have a chance at blocking the time cutting edge that was amplified by at least fifteen hundred times!

In Demon Judgment Board, Fang Zheng's mouth was opened wide and his head was soaked with sweat as he looked at the vast heaven vine that had collapsed on the ground.

Qin Ding Ling who was behind him was rigid like a statue.

"If this move had struck Demon Judgment Board, could we block it?" The same doubt flashed in the two's minds but neither had the confidence to say they could defend against it!

This move was too horrifying, one move and it was unknown whether Cang Xuan Zi was still alive, her aura could not be detected.

"Don't be terrified, he used myriad year hunting's aura to conceal this move. If he used this move alone, its aura would be too grand and would not be hidden." At the crucial moment, Fairy Zi Wei's words spread throughout the battlefield.

“As expected of a wisdom path great expert.” Fang Yuan snorted coldly as the flaw was exposed.

Duke Long’s expression eased a little.

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan left Myriad Year Flying Warship and charged forward alone.

“He is going all out!” Duke Long’s heart shook.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Beings Assimilation Transformation.

Immortal killer move——Immemorial Sword Dragon!

Roar—!

Fang Yuan immediately transformed into a giant dragon.

Immemorial sword dragon!

The dragon was over three hundred meters in length, its two horns were long and sharp, its eyes were silver-white, its scales were pure-white and emitted dense sword intent.

All of Fang Yuan’s dao marks were transformed into sword path dao marks.

And everyone knew that sword path’s superiority lied in offense!

At this moment, Fang Yuan finally showed his strongest attacking form.

# **Chapter 1944 - Swords Destroy Immortal Graveyard**

## **1944 Swords Destroy Immortal Graveyard**

Roar—!

The tyrannical immemorial dragon roared as it swung its tail and moved, its speed was so fast that it left behind a white afterimage at its original spot.

Bam.

Demon Judgment Board was hit head-on and fell like a meteor.

Duke Long immediately rushed forward to reinforce it.

Fang Yuan sneered and rose to the air suddenly, leaving behind an afterimage.

In the air, he suddenly changed from an extremely active state to extremely still and his aura erupted.

Sword path killer move — Triple Layered Sword Wave!

The offensive killer move that was amplified by at least fifteen hundred times had power that was completely different from the past.

Giant waves surged and filled the battlefield. Every drop of the silver-white waves had sword path's strength and was extremely sharp.

The sword waves did not target Demon Judgment Board or Duke Long but attacked the immortal graveyard.

From the start, Fang Yuan's main target was the immortal graveyard.

Duke Long clenched his teeth as he used self-moving dragon qi wall.

The qi wall could only hold back the sword waves for eight breaths of time before crumbling to pieces.

Duke Long let out a muffled groan as blood flowed out of his nose.

He wanted to continue using the qi wall killer move but the towering sword waves had already reached the immortal graveyard.

Heavenly Court could defend with ease earlier because of Cang Xuan Zi's space path methods that could shorten and lengthen distance. This gave Duke Long enough time to repeatedly activate qi wall to put up defense.

But now that Cang Xuan Zi's vitality was gone and was lying dead on the ground, there was no more protection of space path methods, Duke Long had no time to activate the qi wall killer move again.

Duke Long was not a rank nine but a rank eight like Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan's dao marks far surpassed his and he could only count on heavenly dragon's last stand. But regretfully, till now, although Duke Long was becoming stronger constantly, there was still some gap between him and Fang Yuan. Especially when Fang Yuan revealed his trump cards and showed his strongest attacking form.

"No—!" Duke Long let out a sad and furious roar as he looked at the sword waves engulf and sweep through the immortal graveyard.

The Gu Immortals sleeping in the immortal graveyard could not resist at all, they were sliced into pieces by the sword waves.

Even the enormous vast heaven vine was being cut down repeatedly by the extremely sharp sword waves. Cang Xuan Zi did not wake up during the whole process, it seemed she was truly dead!

Demon Judgment Board rose to the air but Fang Zheng was dazed: “He really did it, he destroyed the immortal graveyard!”

“The immortal graveyard!!!” Compared to Fang Zheng, Fairy Zi Wei and Qin Ding Ling had a greater reaction. They were veteran rank eights and genuine members of Heavenly Court.

The immortal graveyard was not just an important area of Heavenly Court, it was even more a spiritual sacred land to them, it was defiled by Fang Yuan now. Countless predecessors sleeping inside were killed like chickens without being able to resist!

“Fang Yuan, I want you to die!” Qin Ding Ling cried out in sorrow.

“We have failed you all, seniors...” With a loud thud, Old Man Zheng Yuan fell as he knelt on the ground in Central Great Hall, crying silently.

Fairy Zi Wei felt her entire body turning numb, the immortal graveyard was heavily damaged, and as the leader and planner of Heavenly Court, she could not shirk this responsibility!

“It’s me, I am too incompetent...” Tears of sorrow trickled down Fairy Zi Wei’s face.

In Imperfection Regret Pavilion, the images began to fluctuate intensely.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette wanted to make a move but was firmly held up by Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette, she could only stare at Fang Yuan slaughtering Heavenly Court’s members and destroying the immortal graveyard.

Shock and anger filled Star Constellation’s silhouette’s face, her gaze was icy cold as she looked at her opponent: “Good, very good!”

Limitless' silhouette smiled: "This is pretty good. Back when I invaded Heavenly Court, I also wanted to destroy the immortal graveyard. But bearing in mind that the scale of variant humans at that time was still enormous, and thinking for the humans, I did not make a move."

"Hmph, so what if you destroyed the immortal graveyard or even the whole of Heavenly Court. As long as you don't destroy fate Gu, with heaven's will continuing to favor humans, Central Continent can still establish a second Heavenly Court, or third or fourth immortal graveyard!" Star Constellation's silhouette retorted.

"You are right." Limitless Demon Venerable's silhouette heaved a sigh: "Fate Gu is the fundamental cause of your Heavenly Court, as long as it remains, your Heavenly Court will stand erect no matter how many losses you suffer. Instead, the more you suffer defeat, the tougher you will become, old will be eliminated and new blood will be brought in, you will be closer to the tides of the new era."

Eras changed constantly and Gu Immortal cultivation also developed without stopping.

The prosperity and decline of qi path and strength path was proof of this.

Limitless Demon Venerable had not touched the immortal graveyard back then because of this consideration. It was better to spare the qi path and strength path Gu Immortals who were left behind by the eras than let Heavenly Court bounce back by absorbing large amounts of rule path, wisdom path, and other paths' Gu Immortals who would emerge in response to this.

"I am really curious, how long can you last over there now that the immortal graveyard is destroyed?" Limitless' silhouette said with a smile.

Star Constellation's silhouette could no longer be indifferent: "You are disregarding the big picture and bringing demise to the rule of humanity! You are unworthy of being a human venerable."



Limitless' silhouette smiled coldly: "My main body was bound by this responsibility back then, but now... hasn't humanity already achieved this goal? Humans should now pursue an even greater goal. You should know what I mean."

Star Constellation's silhouette narrowed her eyes, falling into a rare silence.

"Fang Yuan, I will tear out your tendons and burn you to ashes!!" Duke Long roared, his anger and hatred had accumulated to an extreme level and he charged towards Fang Yuan without regarding anything.

Fang Yuan dodged and did not fight with Duke Long, he continued to activate triple layered sword wave.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The immortal graveyard was completely covered by sword waves, the sword waves even dug into the ground, not letting go of any hibernating immortal.

Heavenly Court's millions of years of accumulation was destroyed overnight!

"Ahhhhh!" Duke Long's hair was a mess, his face was distorted, and his eyes were bloodshot.

Every attack to the immortal graveyard was like a strike to his heart; he was bleeding internally and overwhelmed with grief.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Offspring.

At this critical juncture, Duke Long roared with fury; his purple dragon scales flew out and mixed with his blood, transforming into dragonman Gu Immortals.

They were of all shapes and sizes, with all kinds of appearances. There were rank six, rank seven, and even rank eight dragonmen.

Duke Long was not an enslavement path Gu Immortal but he had a similar killer move.

“This is a transformation path killer move that contains human path profundity!” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk as he ridiculed: “Duke Long, oh Duke Long, you massacred the dragonman race back then, so the reason was to refine them into a killer move. Hahaha, how is your action any different from a demonic immortal? You disregarded morals and ethics, you trampled on your own blood and kin. Not only did you kill all your children and grandchildren, you even refined them into puppets to fight for you!!”

Duke Long did not refute Fang Yuan’s accusation, deep sadness showed in his eyes as he charged towards Fang Yuan again.

At the same time, the large number of dragonman Gu Immortals spread like a blooming flower, blocking the sword waves as well as countless year beasts.

At the level of Duke Long, there were indeed no apparent weaknesses.

A huge chaotic battle unfolded in Heavenly Court.

Demon Judgment Board was paving paths of blood through the year beast army. But the atmosphere inside Demon Judgment Board was stifling, Qin Ding Ling and Fang Zheng were both silent.

Duke Long’s dragon offspring killer move was indeed using the members of the dragonman race, Fang Yuan’s accusation was not false. It was no wonder Duke Long rarely used this move, he was forced to use it now because of Fang Yuan.

Many dragonman Gu Immortals surrounded the immemorial sword dragon.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, he had already activated triple layered sword wave, he now activated another immortal killer move, golden thread sword.

Immediately, the sword dragon’s body turned hazy and its every scale emitted soft yellow light.

Each scale suddenly shot out a golden thread.

The number of scales on the immemorial sword dragon was the number of golden threads shot out, they were incomparably fast.

The golden threads pierced every obstacle in their way, the encircling dragonman Gu Immortals resembled honeycombs as the countless golden threads passed them.

Bam bam bam...

Suffering such a heavy injury, these dragonman Gu Immortals were unable to maintain their shape as they detonated softly, returning to scales and blood droplets.

Fang Yuan cleared all the enemies in his surroundings, the sword waves which he had activated just before were still spreading as he rode the waves down.

The immortal graveyard was already wiped out, the greatest variable was destroyed, and now, Fang Yuan charged towards Duke Long.

Cang Xuan Zi had no vitality, her vine body was also in a miserable state. Demon Judgment Board was unable to fight Fang Yuan by itself, if Duke Long fell, who could stop Fang Yuan?

Immortal killer move — Five Finger Fist Heart Sword!

Dragon claws clenched tightly, Fang Yuan's aura suddenly fell to almost a negligible level.

However, warning signs were ringing in Duke Long's mind. He shot forward, his purple-gold dragon-shaped qi flickered constantly and his figure appeared and disappeared, moving in all directions as he tried to evade crazily.

First sword!

Fang Yuan's dragon pupils let out a strange light as a sword light shot out of his claws.

Fast! Fast! Fast!

The sword light's speed was beyond belief.

Duke Long had just seen the light shoot out of Fang Yuan's claws when he found the sword light was already in front of him.

In an almost impossible situation, he forcibly turned his body to one side.

The sword light brushed past him.

Blood splattered, a large cut spread from his left shoulder to his left chest. The cut was clean; bones, scales and even a part of the left lung were gone completely.

Five finger fist heart sword was truly horrifying!

If this had struck Duke Long's head, it would have been severed immediately.

Since the start of the battle, this was the first time Duke Long felt a fatal threat. It had been a long time since he felt such a feeling.

Duke Long gave a loud roar and shot towards Fang Yuan like lightning.

Fang Yuan applauded inwardly.

Every sword in five finger fist heart sword required time to prepare. Duke Long saw through this weakness and took the chance to attack.

Fang Yuan's dragon body moved as he retreated, trying to pull some distance from Duke Long.

Sword path's offensive advantage was obvious, if it were an ordinary opponent, Fang Yuan could directly smash through them. But Duke Long was an extremely powerful expert, he could not be careless.

# Chapter 1945 - Combat System

## 1945 Combat System

Fang Yuan's immemorial sword dragon form similarly possessed an advantage in speed. Duke Long tried his best in chasing but found that he could not shorten the distance easily.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Gate!

A dragon gate appeared, there were two red pillars by the side with a dragon coiling around each of them, their upper body left the pillars and gathered in the middle, forming the top of the gate. The dragon mouths were open with a radiant dragon pearl in each of them, forming a scene of two dragons and two pearls.

Two dragon gates appeared simultaneously, one appeared in front of Duke Long while the other appeared behind Fang Yuan.

Duke Long disappeared into the dragon gate in front of him and appeared from the dragon gate behind Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan's mind rang with warning signals as he dodged immediately, but Duke Long used qi engulfing mountains and rivers to delay his speed.

Immortal killer move — Chaotic Dragon Fist!

At the next moment, Duke Long's fists smashed upon immemorial sword dragon's head and kept on punching it, forcefully knocking Fang Yuan down to the immortal graveyard.

Bam.

The immemorial sword dragon crashed fiercely on the ground, dust, soil and stones flew everywhere.

Although the immemorial sword dragon struggled to raise its head, its claws were still intact and it continued to shoot the second sword light.

Five finger fist heart sword, second sword!

Duke Long was already on maximum alert. The moment Fang Yuan moved, he immediately dodged and appeared on Fang Yuan's dragon back.

The second sword struck air, brushing past the dragon body and piercing the sky, forming a vacuum along the way.

Five finger fist heart sword's sword lights were extremely fast but they could not curve. Duke Long might not be able to ward off the sword light but he could dodge. It was somewhat difficult to dodge the sword light, but he could observe Fang Yuan's movement and judge when he was going to use the sword light, and thereby, dodge in advance.

Undoubtedly, five finger fist heart sword was an extremely powerful killer move and it had a huge advantage compared to time cutting edge — it would not be forgotten.

But because of Duke Long's proper battle tactic, five finger fist heart sword became useless, Fang Yuan's immemorial sword dragon had to face Duke Long in close combat.

In just a dozen or so breaths of time, Fang Yuan had already received many heavy strikes from Duke Long's dragon fists.

There had never been a strongest Immortal Gu or killer move, only Gu Immortal!

Five finger fist heart sword's most ideal environment was when the first sword was released. Fang Yuan was quite far from Duke Long and could use it for long-range attack while he was in an invulnerable position. Even

if Duke Long's reaction was extremely keen, he would be hard-pressed to defend against them and every sword could push him to a near-death state.

But when Duke Long closed in the distance and forced close combat, Fang Yuan's dragon body instead became the obstacle for the sword lights and even became a cover for Duke Long.

Looking over the battle, Duke Long could be said to have restrained Fang Yuan's five finger fist heart sword by using dragon gate. Without some distance, there was no space to effectively use five finger fist heart sword.

So, after the second sword, Fang Yuan immediately stopped using five finger fist heart sword and turned to golden thread sword.

Duke Long saw Fang Yuan's dragon scales beginning to flicker with yellow light, he immediately chose to retreat far away with dragon gate.

Countless golden threads covered every inch around Fang Yuan, but Duke Long had already retreated.

But there was no issue, Fang Yuan once again pulled apart some distance between him and Duke Long, he could continue using five finger fist heart sword.

Duke Long's situation turned dangerous, he had no choice but to get near Fang Yuan again and attempt close combat.

When he approached Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan would need to cancel five finger fist heart sword and change to other methods to fight Duke Long.

"This demon has modified five finger fist heart sword to this degree! He can casually cancel the killer move with no backlash. Or should I say that he has modified every sword strike into an individual move." Duke Long's thoughts moved rapidly.

Five finger fist heart sword was Bo Qing's trump card, how could Heavenly Court not know of it?

Duke Long knew a lot of information and it would have been easily countered if Fang Yuan had not modified it.

Duke Long's dao marks were lower than Fang Yuan's so he could not use defensive killer moves to ward off Fang Yuan's various sword path methods, his best option was to dodge.

Fortunately, he had much more battle experience than Fang Yuan.

More importantly, as long as he did not die, he would continue to grow stronger along with his shrinking lifespan!

“Although I modified five finger fist heart sword and am able to cancel it freely, the amount of thoughts required have increased sharply, which makes me unable to use other offensive methods at the same time... the other problem is that Duke Long is getting stronger!” Fang Yuan was feeling anxious.

Previously, he could suppress Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi, mostly because of his battle tactic — Fang Yuan attacked the immortal graveyard, Heavenly Court had no choice but to defend with all their strength and take a beating passively.

Now, the immortal graveyard was destroyed by Fang Yuan. There might be some hibernating Gu Immortals still alive in there somewhere, but Duke Long no longer was burdened.

Duke Long could now advance or retreat, he immediately showed his true strength and aura in battle.

Fang Yuan battled Duke Long, both were in a stalemate.

Duke Long was happy to see this, but Fang Yuan was not.

So, he turned his head and spat out a waterfall.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Thought Sword Waterfall.



The sword waterfall crashed down with a huge momentum, every drop of water was a sword thought.

Immortal killer move — Swordsman!

Sword thoughts surged and collided, forming human shaped warriors. They had the appearance of Fang Yuan and were wielding long swords. Countless swordsmen charged forward.

Fang Yuan created this move after becoming a human path grandmaster, it contained the profundities of sword path and human path.

The moment Duke Long saw this killer move, he retreated.

Fang Yuan took the chance to get free and charged towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Outside Heaven Overseeing Tower, Calamity Luck Altar was destroying the refinement path formation with ease. And inside the tower, Qi Ci Lang was struggling against the remaining jade light on his body.

Duke Long paled with fright when he saw Fang Yuan's movement.

Demon Judgment Board went forward to block the path but was sent flying by one strike from Fang Yuan.

Right at this crucial moment, the sound of singing suddenly appeared in the battlefield and coiled around the immemorial sword dragon's body.

Fang Yuan suddenly felt his condition slipping rapidly, like he had returned to the low point of his life where his actions were controlled by others, his talents and ambitions unable to be expressed, his freedom was lost and his future was dark.

The immemorial sword dragon's speed fell sharply.

Duke Long quickly caught up and blocked Fang Yuan: "Great job, Feng Jiu Ge! Fairy Zi Wei!"

At the crucial moment, Feng Jiu Ge's destiny song successfully obstructed Fang Yuan.

And the one who had guided him in time was Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei had opened Central Heaven Gate.

This Immortal Gu House was the gateway to Heavenly Court, it had the ability to transport people but it was far inferior to the enormous teleportation Gu formation and was only for convenience.

Destiny song continued, Fang Yuan's battle strength kept falling while Duke Long strength's kept increasing.

Boom boom boom!

The immemorial sword dragon was beaten back repeatedly by Duke Long and had no way to approach Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Since the battle started, this was the first time Fang Yuan fell into such a disadvantage. With no other choice, he stopped all sword path killer moves and began preparing reverse flow protection seal.

Duke Long saw him retreating and his aura fluctuating, he immediately knew Fang Yuan was preparing some other killer move but why would he give him the chance?

Duke Long roared, the purple-gold dragon-shaped qi around him chased and attacked Fang Yuan like a storm.

Fang Yuan's immemorial sword dragon body was lacerated with scales and blood flying everywhere. What was even more terrifying was Duke Long's that chaotic dragon fist could disturb thoughts, causing Fang Yuan's killer moves to fail when activating.

At this difficult time, Fang Yuan opened his immortal aperture slightly and released the accumulated Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies flew towards Duke Long and self-detonated.

Duke Long was extremely wary and dodged immediately, stopping his offenses. Fang Yuan got some time and successfully activated reverse flow protection seal.

Duke Long could not help but sigh when he saw this move. The timing just now was perfect but he did not grab it, he had exchanged many moves with Fang Yuan and saw through Fang Yuan's fighting style.

When Fang Yuan transformed into an immemorial beast or plant using the transformation path killer move, he could also transform all his dao marks into the same path. On such a basis, any killer move he used would have amplified strength. Even rank seven killer moves would be able to threaten rank eights.

Fang Yuan had many methods, it was very difficult to imagine that he had accumulated and cultivated them to such a degree in less than one hundred years. Even if he had venerable inheritances, it was still a shocking achievement.

Duke Long was certain: As long as Fang Yuan had enough time, he could reach an unprecedented height. Fortunately, fate Gu's recovery was the crucial point and Fang Yuan had no choice but to invade Heavenly Court in advance.

Fang Yuan might be able to rely on some profound and terrifying methods to win against most of the enemies in the world. But facing an existence like Duke Long, a few methods were far from enough, he also needed a combat system that was sufficiently powerful and stable, with ample trump cards.

Just like Duke Long, his transformation path and qi path methods formed two sets of combat systems.

Nine dragons protection formed powerful defense, clear dragon vision was used for scouting, dragon claw strike, chaotic dragon fist, spiraling dragon

fangs, and world shaking dragon hammer were in charge of offense; these four methods covered close, mid-range, and long range combat. World shaking dragon hammer was even more powerful and had the strength to turn around a situation. Dragon roaring wave and body flicker were standard movement methods and there was also dragon gate for long distance movement. Dragon offspring made up for the lack of capability to fight a group. In this combat system, the strongest method was heavenly dragon's last stand.

As for his qi path system: there was qi wall and self-moving dragon qi wall as defensive methods; qi breath mountain, hidden dragon qi explosion, qi engulfing mountains and rivers, great qi hand explosion, and qi current scissors were offensive killer moves. Compared to his transformation path system, these offensive methods had much more obvious long range power. Purple-gold dragon-shaped qi was a jack of all trades, this killer move was so excellent that it provided help to Duke Long in all aspects. Naturally, its most important use was still for movement. Reverse worm dragon was a killer move that was specially prepared to target battlefield killer moves. The trump card of this qi path combat system was triple qi retraction.

Duke Long's two combat systems included all aspects like offense, defense, movement, and so on, they also did not have weaknesses or gaps in the various aspects. What was remarkable was these two battles styles could complement each other. For instance, transformation path's offensive methods were stronger in close and mid-range combat, while weak in long-range combat. Meanwhile, qi path's offensive methods were the exact opposite.

Comparatively, there was no need for many trump cards. One for each system, two methods were enough.

In a real battle, the most useful were still those standard killer moves. For example, Duke Long had triple qi retraction, but he had not used it once in the fight with Fang Yuan. The battle was extremely fierce and Fang Yuan was not stupid enough to give Duke Long the opportunity to use it.

Another example was Fang Yuan's five finger fist heart sword, this was a trump card method. But even though Fang Yuan used it, the effect was not

decisive for the battle. Duke Long was still able to maintain the stalemate and it was essentially because his combat systems were even more comprehensive than Fang Yuan's.

# **Chapter 1946 - Zi Wei's Eerie Change**

## **1946 Zi Wei's Eerie Change**

How many combat systems did Fang Yuan have?

From what Duke Long saw, Fang Yuan only had two mature combat systems.

One was time path, and the other was sword path.

The time path system was the most comprehensive; three breaths future vision, year beast summoning, Myriad Year Flying Warship, spring scissors, winter coat, autumn perception, summer fan, as well as spring ploughing, summer hoeing, autumn harvest, winter storage, and so on covered the two main domains of battle and immortal aperture management. There were two trump cards; time cutting edge that was combined with shrink time, and the other was spring autumn success, the core of which was Spring Autumn Cicada!

Sword path had immemorial sword dragon transformation, triple layered sword wave, golden thread sword, dark assassination, myriad thought sword waterfall, swordsman, and other methods. Its trump card was five finger fist heart sword. This combat system took offense to the extreme, being even more powerful than time path style in this aspect, especially five finger fist heart sword which was modified by Fang Yuan. But there was nothing to commend about it in other fields, Duke Long's combat systems

were much superior in terms of movement, healing and other aspects. This formed shortcomings. In front of an enemy with extremely rich battle experience like Duke Long, these shortcomings turned into weaknesses which held back the offensive prowess of the sword path system.

Besides these two systems, Fang Yuan had many qi path methods as well, but as far as Duke Long was concerned, it was incomplete. Unlimited qi sea was clearly a trump card with a power that could break the primordial qi wall, but it had not been used after the first time, and it looked like the possibility of it being used again was low.

In the soul path aspect, Duke Long knew Fang Yuan had plenty of methods and the trump card killer move was no doubt Luo Po seal. But Heavenly Court and Duke Long had already made sufficient preparations for this. Fang Yuan not using any soul path methods from the start was a wise move.

Besides these, reverse flow protection seal was of rule path, myriad self was human path, strength path giant hand belonged to strength path, familiar face was transformation path, lead soul into dream, Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation, and switch soul in dream were dream path killer moves. These methods were terrifying, but they were all independent moves resembling large pearls, while a mature combat system was a pearl necklace formed from methods that complemented each other. This necklace formed from small pearls was more valuable than the large pearls.

Against most Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan could rely on the large pearls to change the situation and determine victory. But in front of Duke Long, the weaknesses of Fang Yuan's combat systems became conspicuous.

“Fang Yuan, what you lack is time and I believe you have already felt it, it is such a pity, a mature combat system needs at least a few hundred years of accumulation!” Duke Long looked at Fang Yuan, his gaze sharp as blade: “Even if you used the inheritances left by predecessors to hasten your growth, it is still not perfect enough.”

He activated spiraling dragon fangs to attack Fang Yuan from a distance but they were blocked by reverse flow protection seal.

Duke Long was not discouraged, reverse flow protection seal was quite powerful but it lacked a mature style to support it and make up for its weakness. Reverse flow protection seal's greatest weakness was that it expended Reverse Flow River, despite Fang Yuan conserving it as much as possible after his rebirth, how could it endure such intense expenditure?

Reverse flow protection seal was an immortal killer move that used Reverse Flow River as the core, its defensive strength was terrifying and could reflect almost all external attacks. This move was created by Fang Yuan, from which one could see his astonishing talents. Unfortunately, Fang Yuan lacked a stable combat system for this trump card. For instance, supplementary defensive killer moves to defend and reduce external attacks, or a killer move to increase the power of reverse flow protection seal, or methods to restore Reverse Flow River itself.

Suppose reverse flow protection seal was a fish with exquisite flavor. Although it would be a delicacy even if it was eaten raw, if it was seasoned with salt, it could be turned into salted fish that could be stored for a long time. If it was accompanied with other ingredients like sugar, ginger, spring onion, or garlic, it could turn into all kinds of delicious meals, providing much more flavors.

Compared to Heavenly Court and Duke Long, Fang Yuan's accumulation was still insufficient.

He could not avoid falling into a predicament.

Duke Long attacked again and again while enduring reverse flow protection seal's backlash, forcefully expending Reverse Flow River. His healing methods were also extraordinary.

Feng Jiu Ge's destiny song was shrouding over Fang Yuan all the time. Destiny song interchanged between strong and weak, triggering counterattacks from reverse flow protection seal. The profundities of the song actually weakened Fang Yuan even with reverse flow protection seal activated, but the weakening was much smaller.



What was even worse was that destiny song weakened Fang Yuan while amplifying Duke Long's strength. Duke Long's battle strength soared, growing increasingly stronger, he had the complete upper hand and his attacks were like tidal waves, showing extreme power!

Fang Yuan canceled immemorial sword dragon transformation and returned to his human form. The sword dragon's body was enormous, using reverse flow protection seal on it expended Reverse Flow River much faster, it was much more steady with a human body.

Fang Yuan counterattacked continuously using Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

But soon, these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were also targeted, they detonated and turned into dream realms. The dream realms then transformed back into new Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies which fought for Heavenly Court.

It was Feng Jin Huang!

Fairy Zi Wei had not only recalled Feng Jiu Ge through Central Heaven Gate, she had also recalled Feng Jin Huang. With her here, Fang Yuan's dream path methods would be highly restrained.

Sure enough, Fang Yuan's dream path methods were all targeted and dealt with.

"Feng Jin Huang!" Fang Yuan frowned inwardly: 'In the previous life, she used the immortal Gu formation to activate immortal level dream path killer move and spoiled my plan. And now, she is using immortal formation or an Immortal Gu House to target me once again?'

Fang Yuan really wanted to find her precise location and deal with her, but he did not have the freedom to do so at this moment.

He was not even able to approach Heaven Overseeing Tower, becoming further and further away from it.

The reason was that his opponents were Duke Long and Feng Jiu Ge!

The current and previous Dao Guardians had joined hands!

As for Fang Zheng and Qin Ding Ling in Demon Judgment Board, they were no longer able to interfere and began to deal with the year beasts and swordsmen that were all over Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court's main force also started returning to Heavenly Court from Hairy Foot Mountain through Central Heaven Gate and joined in the clearing up work.

Year beasts and swordsmen were not their opponents and were defeated again and again.

Calamity Luck Altar was the focus of the joint attacks of Heavenly Court's main force, some even entered Heaven Overseeing Tower; Qi Ci Lang could not move properly, his situation turning perilous.

“Not good! Heavenly Court's main force has returned, doesn't this mean Infallible blessed land has lost its purpose? Heavenly Court possesses enough success dao marks and can restore Fate completely.” Fang Yuan's face was grim, bad news was coming one after the other, and the situation was turning extremely disadvantageous and dangerous.

“Fairy Zi Wei, use benevolent equality quickly, his reverse flow protection seal will shatter soon!” Duke Long transmitted his voice.

“Yes!” At this moment, Fairy Zi Wei had already stabilized her injuries and could battle again. She activated an Immortal Gu House and flew to the sky, her sight contained Duke Long, Fang Yuan, as well as Feng Jiu Ge and the rest.

Immortal killer move — Benevolent Equality.

“Benevolent equality activated successfully, Fang Yuan won't be able to escape this time!” Fairy Zi Wei transmitted her voice.

“Good job, Zi Wei.” Duke Long laughed heartily and his attacks became more violent.

Fang Yuan was forced to retreat again and again.

“It is useless now, Fang Yuan, no matter how you persist, you will still be defeated.” Fairy Zi Wei smiled.

But at the next moment, she heard a female voice: “Is that so?”

“Who said that?” Fairy Zi Wei was shocked, this voice was familiar and yet strange, what made her shocked was she had never detected any Gu Immortal existences near her.

“What are you looking for? I am you.” Fairy Zi Wei was horrified to discover that she was actually replying to herself.

What is going on?

My body is actually out of control!

Soul, there is an issue with my soul!

Suddenly, the eerie light in her pupils grew and spread rapidly. The white part of her eyes were completely covered and turned pitch-black.

Fairy Zi Wei struggled and resisted with all her strength, but it was all in vain. In her last moment of clarity, she suddenly realized: She was controlled by Spectral Soul, every time she soul searched Spectral Soul, her soul had actually been tampered with slowly. Spectral Soul’s methods were too advanced, she had not been able to detect it at all. She had already been corroded and infiltrated by Spectral Soul’s power, the various decisions she made before Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention also had Spectral Soul’s influence in them.

It was just that Spectral Soul’s interference was small at the start. But later on, this secret influence kept on growing. And now, he could even cause Fairy Zi Wei to be under an illusion.

Just earlier, Fairy Zi Wei had not used benevolent equality but she thought she had already successfully activated it and even informed Duke Long!

“Maybe in the previous life too, I was taken over like this by Spectral Soul. Although I have benevolent equality, I did not truly use it.” This was the last clear thought of Fairy Zi Wei.

At the next moment, she slowly raised her head and looked at the battlefield quietly with a black light in her eyes. Her lips curled up to form an extremely sinister smile.

She maintained the opening of Central Heaven Gate while approaching Soul Suppression Hall quietly.

She had the clearest picture of the locations here.

She quickly cleared all kinds of shackles and restored Spectral Soul’s freedom.

“Zi Wei pays respects to master!” She knelt down and prostrated before Spectral Soul with not even a trace of pride of a Heavenly Court member.

Spectral Soul was extremely weak, he turned into a translucent soul sphere which slowly floated towards Fairy Zi Wei: “Let’s go watch the show first.”

Fairy Zi Wei held the soul sphere in both hands and walked out of Soul Suppression Hall.

At this moment, Wu Yong, Wu Shuai, and others also appeared in Heavenly Court’s battlefield.

“What’s going on? Fairy Zi Wei!” Duke Long roared, Central Heaven Gate was still being activated and actually brought these enemies as well.

Duke Long was unable to contact Fairy Zi Wei, his heart sank and he wanted to directly destroy Central Heaven Gate. But at this moment, Fang Yuan charged towards Heaven Overseeing Tower again.

Duke Long was seething with anger, but he was forced to intercept Fang Yuan and give up on his previous plan.

Gu Immortals entered one by one through Central Heaven Gate.

“Follow Lord Wu Yong!”

“So Heavenly Court actually looks like this.”

“Kill! Kill! Kill!”

“Heaven Overseeing Tower is there, follow me!”

The final decisive battle unfolded in Heavenly Court.

# **Chapter 1947 - Paradise Earth Takes Action**

## **1947 Paradise Earth Takes Action**

“Come, come, take a look, this is high grade silk!”

“Candied fruits, candied fruits, buy three sticks and get one free.”

“Sir, what do you need?” Inside a store that sold Gu worms, a clerk welcomed Hong Yi passionately.

Hong Yi first fixed his gaze on this clerk before carefully scanning the layout and decoration of the store. He frowned on the inside: “Everything here is so lifelike, what is going on?”

“I heard you have scholar Gu for sale?” Hong Yi asked.

“Oh, yes. But lord, this scholar Gu is a rank five Gu worm.” The clerk was somewhat hesitant.

Hong Yi smiled lightly and released his rank five Gu Master aura, immediately causing a huge disturbance in the store.

The clerk’s face was filled with shock, the store manager was also drawn in by the aura. He cupped his hands and greeted Hong Yi respectfully, personally taking out a scholar Gu for him to observe.

“It is indeed scholar Gu.” Hong Yi examined it carefully for a while, the doubts in his heart growing deeper, “May I test it?”

“Go ahead, sir.” The store manager immediately gave scholar Gu to Hong Yi.

Hong Yi poured his primeval essence into scholar Gu. This scholar Gu immediately flew out from Hong Yi’s finger and landed on the ground, turning into a young handsome scholar.

The young scholar bowed respectfully towards Hong Yi with cupped fists: “Student greets teacher.”

Hong Yi nodded in excitement. Scholar Gu was extremely rare, it was a human path Gu worm, and Hong Yi had only heard of it in rumors.

Hong Yi took out a wisdom path mortal Gu and an information path mortal Gu from his aperture, throwing them to the scholar: “Use them.”

The scholar received these two Gu worms and used them without any need for gaining familiarity, and he used them rather proficiently at that. In particular, some small habits during the activation were the same as Hong Yi’s.

“What do you think, sir?” The store manager asked with a smile.

Hong Yi nodded repeatedly: “Great, I want this Gu.”

The store manager was exulted: “Great, it will be six hundred thousand primeval stones.”

Hong Yi’s brows furrowed.

This price was not expensive, in fact, it was too cheap. The price for a rank five mortal Gu ranged from one hundred thousand to one million primeval stones, but this scholar Gu was a rare top quality rank five Gu, its price was definitely above one million. Moreover, there was no market for it, so it was difficult to get even with sufficient funds.

But it was being sold for only six hundred thousand primeval stones here!

Hong Yi had many fortuitous encounters and was wealthy, he immediately paid the sum and received this scholar Gu.

Coming outside the store, Hong Yi's heart was fluctuating with waves: "This place is like Emperor City, but weren't there immortal battles going on around Emperor City? But this place is peaceful. What is going on?"

"Also, there doesn't seem to be any difference between here and reality, but looking carefully, there are a large number of human path Gu worms here. Scholar Gu is only one of them. Moreover, there are so many human path Gu worms here that it can even be called overflowing, but it is commonplace to these people. And the common fire path, water path, and other paths' Gu worms are instead rare here. It seems like human path is the main cultivation path here."

"Really strange! I wonder what Brother Ye found on his end? I better go join him quickly."

After Ye Fan and Hong Yi were sent to the painting by Genesis Lotus's will, they split up to explore the area after discussing with each other.

Hong Yi's discovery was also discovered by Ye Fan.

But at this moment, in the corner of a street, Ye Fan saw an unexpected person.

"Master!" Ye Fan was astonished.

He had also bought a rank five human path Gu worm from a store, it was called hero Gu. He had just come to a corner to activate it, and the situation became different from when he activated it in the store.

Hero Gu actually transformed into his master's appearance!

"No need to be shocked, my disciple. This is our chance encounter." Lu Wei Yin smiled.



Ye Fan immediately understood the meaning behind the words and was joyous: “Master, you know the oddity of this place? What place is this? Why did we suddenly end up in this place?”

Lu Wei Yin smiled lightly: “I need to explain from the beginning. Three hundred thousand years ago, in the Medieval Antiquity Era, Central Continent gave birth to an Immortal Venerable named Genesis Lotus. He created the killer move karma divine tree, and when he roamed Western Desert, he refused a child’s request to resurrect his parents, as a result, he saw a certain scene in the future where Emperor City was destroyed by an earth trench and all lives were extinguished.”

“Therefore, he placed Divine Bean Palace in Western Desert. When he returned to Central Continent later, he used the painting path killer move contented lifestyle on Emperor City, forming a painting world. You two have your luck connected to Fang Yuan tightly, Genesis Lotus’s will was wary and thus it locked you in here.”

Ye Fan was dumbstruck, the wealth of information made him unable to react for a while.

He was extremely shaken: “This matter is actually related to Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable? Also master, when did I connect luck with Fang Yuan?”

“That was done by Fang Yuan secretly, he wanted to accomplish something with the help of your luck. The upper extreme heavenly eagle was also his immemorial desolate beast.” Lu Wei Yin replied calmly.

“Fang Yuan took the initiative to connect luck with me to get help from my luck?” Ye Fan was even more shocked.

Ye Fan had acknowledged Lu Wei Yin as his master and was thus half a step into the Gu Immortal world, and knew much more secrets than Hong Yi. He was extremely clear on what kind of big shot Fang Yuan was! Fang Yuan was an unparalleled demon, a powerful character that even Heavenly Court was without options against. He was actually connected to him, this was simply like a fairytale!

Lu Wei Yin shook his head: “Disciple, don’t look down on yourself. You are a person favored by the Heavenly Dao, you possess an innately strong luck. Although you are insignificant at the start, you will definitely make huge accomplishments in the future. In the entire five regions, there are not even ten people with luck like yours. It is not strange for Fang Yuan to want to get help from your luck.”

“However, the Heavenly Dao balances everything, he once used your luck and obtained great benefits, now, you are also using him to obtain an enormous immortal fortune. The upper extreme heavenly eagle was only one of them, in front of you now is Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance!”

“Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance?!” Ye Fan exclaimed in shock once again, he suddenly understood and his gaze towards Lu Wei Yin changed: “Master, you know all this like the back of your hand. Does this mean this was all your plan?”

“Haha, my disciple, you overestimate me. This was all Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangement, I am only his inheritor.”

When Ye Fan heard the great name of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, he realized he had also become a follower of Paradise Earth, but he did not feel exulted as he was already numb from the shock.

Lu Wei Yin waved at Ye Fan: “We don’t have much time, we will talk as we move.”

Ye Fan quickly followed, the two followed the crowd in the street and walked towards the front.

Lu Wei Yin explained in detail: “This Genesis Lotus true inheritance has extremely high value, it is divided into three parts. The first part is this contented lifestyle killer move, the second part is the luck of being the child of humanity, and the third part is the rank eight Immortal Gu House formed from Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City — Divine Emperor Palace!”

Lu Wei Yin continued after a slight pause: “We will first take the second part and make you the child of humanity.”

Ye Fan questioned: “Master, what is the child of humanity? What should I do?”

Lu Wei Yin replied: “Central Continent is different from the other four regions, it uses the sect system and human path is most prosperous here with the deepest foundation. Emperor City is the greatest congregation of Central Continent’s human vein. Why do countless geniuses emerge here? It is because of the human vein. As long as you absorb the strength within the human vein, your luck will get a huge boost and you will gain the favor of human path, becoming the child of humanity. And to achieve this, we need Hong Yi’s help.”

“Hong Yi? He is my sworn brother, how is this connected to him?” Ye Fan continued to be shocked.

Lu Wei Yin replied: “Fang Yuan connected luck with him as well, but his luck is different from yours, you are the favored child of the Heavenly Dao while he is one of the children of humanity of Central Continent, he is favored by human path. With his help, you can smoothly make use of Shen Shang’s actions and quietly obtain the recognition of the human vein. With the status of a child of humanity, we can then borrow Fang Yuan’s strength to attempt to get the first part of the true inheritance, or even the third part as well.”

Divine Bean Palace, painting world.

“Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan...” A voice was heard intermittently in Fang Di Chang’s ears.

Fang Di Chang had already stopped using karma divine tree and was using wisdom path killer moves to think of how to get rid of this predicament when he heard this voice.

“It is Shen Shang’s voice! He learned of my identity from the main body?” Fang Di Chang hesitated, he had some guesses in his mind but he did not respond immediately.

Sure enough, Shen Shang's voice continued to transmit: "Fang Di Chang, I already learned of your true identity from your main body. Who could have thought Fang Yuan had such an arrangement, he actually placed his clone inside a Western Desert super force. I am going to help you escape."

"Hmm? How are you going to help me?" Fang Di Chang was puzzled.

Shen Shang laughed: "You should know that I have been trying to decipher the venerable human path methods and I have already found the key to them."

"I know." Fang Di Chang nodded.

Shen Shang continued: "Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City have merged into one, I have all along been hiding myself and haven't let Genesis Lotus' will discover me, so I am still deciphering human path killer moves."

Fang Di Chang asked: "And what about them?"

Shen Shang explained patiently: "This is a perfect opportunity! I have been constantly transferring the four regions' human will inside here. Originally, I had been unable to involve myself with Emperor City and disrupt the venerable methods from inside so I had to infiltrate it quietly. But now, Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City have merged. You previously refined Divine Bean Palace, it is just that your authority is lower than Genesis Lotus' will. Use your karma divine tree killer move to shake the whole Immortal Gu House and coordinate with me to spread out the venerable methods so that everyone's power is amplified."

"You want me to cooperate with you to break the venerable human path methods?" Fang Di Chang got to the point.

Shen Shang laughed: "We are helping each other!"

"Alright, I'll work with you." Fang Di Chang did not hesitate, agreeing directly.

# Chapter 1948 - Restoration Halted

## 1948 Restoration Halted

Heavenly Court's battlefield.

Immortal killer move — Finger Wind Dragon!

Wu Yong activated his killer move but was met with the joint attack of three Heavenly Court members.

“Die, Wu Yong!” Prince Feng Xian used inexhaustible flames that charged ahead while he stood behind, covered in flames. His offensive attack also had defensive properties, it was a stable choice of attack.

Zhou Xiong Xin attacked from behind, the killer move rumors become tigers roared, like a group of tigers that pounced towards Wu Yong.

And Ye Qiao Zi activated long range killer moves, vines grew out of thin air and spread towards Wu Yong, trying to bind him.

Wu Yong sighed internally, he had to retreat repeatedly. He moved back into Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

With the help of the Immortal Gu House, he resisted the fierce attacks of the three immortals.

But as such, his plan to approach Heaven Overseeing Tower was stopped.

“The amplification of the human path killer moves to Heavenly Court is too big....wait a moment, this is?!” Just as Wu Yong was getting a headache, specks of white lights appeared on Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and even entered his body.

Human path killer move — Hope of the People!

Human path killer move — Heroes Among People!

“Ahhhh.” Inside the Immortal Gu House, other Southern Border Gu Immortals beside Wu Yong were roaring with vitality.

“This strength, this strength....” Old Treeman Ba De, who was fighting outside, looked at his own hands with shock.

Transformation path great expert Yi Hao Fang was similarly puzzled: “Why are Heavenly Court’s human path killer moves helping us?”

This heavy doubt was pressing down on the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals’ minds like a mountain.

“Shen Shang, you really didn’t let down my expectations, great job.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily, he had also received the amplification and his condition was improving rapidly.

Duke Long’s face was ashen!

He was a dragonman, a variant human, he could not receive the amplification of heroes among people unlike Fang Yuan. When Fang Yuan returned to his human form, even if it was created with sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it was still a pure human!

Boom!

Duke Long was sent flying by Fang Yuan.

“What in the world is going on?” Qin Ding Ling transmitted her voice to Old Man Zheng Yuan, asking him anxiously.

Old Man Zheng Yuan was not dead yet and had already moved out of Central Great Hall. He was all along responsible for activating the human path methods left behind by Central Continent's venerables.

The old man transmitted his panicked reply to Duke Long, Qin Ding Ling and the rest: "There is a problem in Emperor City. Someone is causing trouble, he poured in the human will of other four regions into Central Continent. Hope of the people and heroes among people distinguish allies based on human will. There was only Central Continent's human will previously, but now the human wills of all five regions are gathered, so everyone will receive amplification."

Duke Long warded off Fang Yuan's attacks while asking: "How can we resolve this issue?"

Old Man Zheng Yuan replied with a heavy voice: "I am giving it my all but I don't have any confidence in succeeding!"

Duke Long's heart sank further: "Who could have tampered with our venerable human path methods to this degree?"

He had never imagined the venerable human path killer moves to have such changes. The enemy did not break these two killer moves directly but instead expanded the effectiveness of the killer moves to everyone, this was no different from breaking them.

"Is it Shen Shang?" The soul sphere in Fairy Zi Wei's hands shook lightly as if it was laughing to itself.

Back then, the information Fairy Zi Wei had given to Duke Long contained details of Shen Shang's location. This action was made under Spectral Soul's influence.

Duke Long, however, had full trust in Fairy Zi Wei. Moreover, at that time, Fang Zheng had been detained by Shen Cong Sheng and had to be exchanged for urgently, thus there was the series of later events. In the end, Shen Shang left Dragon Whale Paradise, infiltrated Emperor City and achieved this accomplishment.

“Perhaps I should say, this is worthy of Paradise Earth.” The soul sphere shook once again.

Fairy Zi Wei was holding the soul sphere and continuously using wisdom path methods to imitate soul path and heal the soul sphere.

The soul sphere was becoming increasingly solid under her healing.

On the other side, Central Heaven Gate was still open, bringing in Gu Immortals from the outside world into Heavenly Court.

“Hahaha, bring all those people in, let them kill, let them die! The more they kill the better it is, the more deaths there are the better this is, hahaha.” The soul sphere laughed madly.

The first batch who came were the Southern Border immortals in Hairy Foot Mountain, as well as Wu Shuai, Zhan Bu Du, and others.

Right now, the second batch of Gu Immortals was teleported over. They were Northern Plains’ reinforcements who allied with Southern Border’s group in the previous life.

The leader was an old man with a walking stick, Yao Huang.

As well as Heavenly Lord Bai Zu who was walking forward proudly.

Behind the two great rank eight Gu Immortals were Domination Immortal Chu Du who was famous throughout the five regions, Black Extremity Sun Ming Lu who schemed against Old Ancestor Xue Hu, as well as other Gu Immortal experts.

“Rank seven Gu Immortals will enter Immortal Gu Houses.” Yao Huang swept his gaze around the battlefield and gave the command.

Even Chu Du had to listen obediently.

He was shaken by the fierce battle in front, this battle was not something rank sevens could interfere in.



Northern Plains had few Immortal Gu Houses, but they brought over three this time!

“Follow me, we will reinforce Calamity Luck Altar.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu took the lead to charge forward.

Yao Huang and the three Immortal Gu Houses followed closely behind.

Bing Sai Chuan cheered loudly inside Calamity Luck Altar, his attacks towards the refinement path formation were obstructed by the golden pearls left by Golden Pearl Immortal King. And now, he was being besieged from all directions by Heavenly Court’s main force.

Bing Sai Chuan was attacking the refinement path formation while repairing Calamity Luck Altar, he needed help and this batch of reinforcements came at a perfect timing.

“Kill!” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu shouted. His figure shook and split into countless clones that fought against the soldiers formed from the golden pearls.

Yao Huang did not want to appear weak, he waved his cane, a strong medicinal fragrance pervaded the battlefield immediately.

The three Immortal Gu Houses also arrived and defended Calamity Luck Altar.

Heavenly Court’s main force was immediately divided.

“Don’t even dream of leaving.” Wu Yong used killer moves one after another, wishful wind whip, soft vajra wind chief, yin wind rope and many others were used alternatively to tie down the enemies.

Ba De, Yi Hao Fang and others also mimicked this.

“Damn it!” Most of Heavenly Court’s main force could only curse inwardly as they were pinned down.

If it were before, the Southern Border immortals would never have been able to pose such troubles, but with heroes among people's support now, Wu Yong and others were amplified. Overall, they were still weaker than Heavenly Court's members, after all, the latter were elites in rank eight, but it was still enough for them to become a threat.

“Charge!” Dragon Palace crashed through the battlefield, Wu Shuai and Zhan Bu Du were controlling it from inside.

Feng Jiu Ge had to avoid the collision, destiny song slowed down.

Fang Yuan immediately felt the suppression on him receding sharply, and adding on the amplification from heroes among people, he sent Duke Long flying once again.

Dragon tattoos wriggled around Duke Long, dragon fangs flew around and obstructed the incoming attacks.

Suddenly, a huge figure appeared.

“This is?!” Duke Long's pupils shrank rapidly as he saw the giant figure.

Evil Dragon — Di Zang Sheng had taken the stage!

“Duke Long!!!” Di Zang Sheng spoke human voice, its roar gave rise to endless shock waves. It slammed down its claws on Duke Long like he was a ball.

Di Zang Sheng's claws were cut by the dragon fangs and dripped with blood, while Duke Long collided into the ground, creating a hundred feet deep crater.

Di Zang Sheng's enormous body pressed down.

Rumble!

The entirety of Heavenly Court shook violently, smoke and dust flew, covering the whole battlefield.

Di Zang Sheng flew up slowly, the ground that its stomach pressed on had already formed a shallow trench that spanned from the east to west of Heavenly Court. All the buildings, mountains and rivers in its path were turned into waste.

“He is above!” Zhan Bu Du suddenly pointed.

Duke Long was floating in the air, looking down at Di Zang Sheng. The dragon gate behind him disappeared slowly.

At the crucial moment, he had escaped the dangerous situation by using dragon gate.

“This Evil Dragon!” Duke Long clenched his teeth, his sunken chest bulged up rapidly and soon recovered to its previous state. Clearly, Di Zang Sheng’s attack had not been without effect.

On the other side, Myriad Year Flying Warship flew back and took in Fang Yuan again.

Fang Yuan looked at Duke Long and sneered, he directly ignored him and charged towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Duke Long’s eyelids twitched at this sight.

The force at Heaven Overseeing Tower’s side was barely resisting Calamity Luck Altar and was on the verge of collapse. If Fang Yuan and Myriad Year Flying Warship joined, the situation would directly collapse.

“Fang Yuan, don’t even think about it! Everyone gather and protect Heaven Overseeing Tower!” Duke Long sent his command, he himself was the first to move as he used dragon gate and blocked the path of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

“Get lost!” Dragon Palace came to reinforce, its owner Wu Shuai was resolute and direct, he released the suppressed Jun Shen Guang and Vortex Space Boy, and thus could activate the killer move dreamy light smoke again.

Dreamy light smoke engulfed Duke Long.

Duke Long's heart pounded crazily, he had no choice but to dodge, leaving behind a path through which Fang Yuan moved forward.

"Damn it, this is a dream path killer move, my methods are useless." In a corner far away, Feng Jin Huang was hiding in an inconspicuous Immortal Gu House, stomping her feet in anxiety.

Right at this time, destiny song reverberated through the battlefield once again.

Heavenly Court's condition rose rapidly and Duke Long also received great benefits, while Fang Yuan and the group's offenses immediately weakened.

"Unbelievable, we entered Heavenly Court!" Eight Eastern Sea immortals joined the battlefield through Central Heaven Gate.

"Heavenly Court's side is being besieged!" The eight immortals' eyes brightened, especially when they saw Fang Yuan, Di Zang Sheng, Myriad Year Flying Warship, and Dragon Palace forcing back Duke Long and Feng Jiu Ge.

"Good, we will join and deal the final blow to them!!" The eight immortals' morale soared as they joined the chaotic battle.

"How did they come here?" Fang Yuan was slightly surprised.

Zhang Yin, Granny Rong and the other dragon generals joining the battle was a given, but Qing Yue An and the rest were very conservative, why would they take risk in joining the battle?

"Hehehe, this is the side effect of heroes among people. When they received the amplification, they also received the influence of the four regions' human will and hate Heavenly Court even more now." Shen Shang's voice transmitted over: "A pity that Western Desert's side is still in a stalemate against Central Continent's Immortal Gu Houses and cannot participate in this battle."

“Shen Shang, well done.” Fang Yuan did not hesitate to praise.

Shen Shang laughed heartily: “Naturally. But then again, you being able to control Central Heaven Gate was truly beyond my expectation. This move was truly spectacular. Ah, I can also feel Central Heaven Gate’s transportation power, we will join in a while and flip Heavenly Court upside-down, hahaha!”

Fang Yuan only smiled: “Then come fast!”

Central Heaven Gate’s change was beyond Fang Yuan’s expectations, but why would he cut himself short at this time? Even if someone was scheming from the dark, Fang Yuan would only follow the tides and prioritize in defeating Heavenly Court as well as destroying fate Gu.

“Damn it, why at this time...” Just as Shen Shang was about to accept the transportation, black fire appeared on his body. His internal threat had erupted again.

“I used all my strength to decipher the venerable killer moves and my injuries were left unattended...” This was Shen Shang’s last clear thought before he sank into madness and chaos.

The moment Shen Shang turned mad, Old Man Zheng Yuan sensed it.

The old man’s spirit was roused: “The enemy’s strength has disappeared! Regardless of the reason, I can use this chance to take control again and there is even a chance to turn around the situation. Hmm? Who is it?!”

Old Man Zheng Yuan suddenly shouted, Fairy Zi Wei appeared in front of him with empty hands and a smile on her face.

“Zi Wei? No, you are not normal!” The old man’s eyes shone sharply as he quickly retreated.

But at the next moment, a solid pitch-black soul sphere appeared behind him and entered his body.

“No!” Old Man Zheng Yuan seemed to have suffered a heavy attack as he collapsed on the ground, his eyes rolled and saliva foamed from his mouth while his body quivered continuously.

The twitching lasted for a while before Old Man Zheng Yuan became still all of a sudden, his eyes were the same as Fairy Zi Wei, turning completely black.

He stood up silently and wiped off the saliva, he lowered his hands and greeted the floating soul sphere respectfully: “This old servant pays respects to master!”

Spectral Soul let out a light grunt of agreement, he did not have any Immortal Gu currently but he was not without methods. The soul beast modification killer move he developed in the past had already become a type of innate ability of his soul. This innate ability could let him modify any soul and make the target offer their complete loyalty.

“Now, we should subdue Feng Jin Huang, I know her location as well and can also cut off that Immortal Gu House’s teleportation ability.” Fairy Zi Wei said of her own initiative.

“No hurry.” Spectral Soul, however, rejected her suggestion: “Feng Jin Huang is not only favored by the Heavenly Dao, she also receives the adoration of humanity itself, her luck is strong enough to be second only to Red Lotus Demon Venerable. Don’t think she is alone right now, the moment we make an attempt on her, we will be met with obstructions. Forget others, just Feng Jiu Ge alone is a huge problem. This person is strong enough to match Duke Long right now! We will observe the changes in the battlefield, let these people kill each other as their luck dissipates, then we will see if there is a chance to make a move on Feng Jin Huang.”

Spectral Soul and the two servants walked out of the Immortal Gu House and observed the battlefield from far away.

Right now, Heavenly Court’s side was gathered around Heaven Overseeing Tower and defended with all their strength. Their situation had become extremely perilous.

The other immortals' attacks were unusually fierce, they were under the amplification from heroes among people, but also the weakening from destiny song. With Fang Yuan and Di Zang Sheng at the lead, every minute action made Heavenly Court's side nervous.

Duke Long and Feng Jiu Ge were like main pillars, one person blocked Fang Yuan while the other suppressed Di Zang Sheng, but both were disadvantaged since they had to defend Heaven Overseeing Tower as well.

Demon Judgment Board was struggling to defend against Myriad Year Flying Warship and Dragon Palace's joint attacks.

Golden pearl soldiers were completely destroyed, Heavenly Court's main force was on a constant retreat and the defensive line continued to pull back.

"Heavenly Court's defeat is imminent." Fairy Zi Wei commented, the eerie light in her eyes flickered.

Only Yuan Qiong Du was standing on the top floor of Heaven Overseeing Tower. Cong Yan and Che Wei were lying on the floor, on the verge of death, there was no one to heal them and Heavenly Court also did not have the ability to spare manpower.

Originally, Qi Ci Lang was resisting the jade green light, but when Heavenly Court's main force arrived, they easily handled him. Qi Ci Lang was still bound and could not resist at all, he was directly beheaded and died with grievance.

The refinement path Gu formation was already destroyed, Yuan Qiong Du could only continue restoring fate Gu by himself.

"Almost there, almost there!" Yuan Qiong Du mumbled, a fire was burning in his palm.

Boom!

Heaven Overseeing Tower suffered a heavy attack and shook violently. Yuan Qiong Du's refinement was disturbed, he coughed out a large mouthful of blood and fell to the ground, unconscious.

Fate Gu's restoration was forcefully halted!



# **Chapter 1949 - Beheaded By One Slice!**

## **1949 Beheaded By One Slice!**

Immortal killer move — Five Rotational Destruction!

Five Elements Grandmaster shouted in fury, he faced the sky with his palms and pushed, a five colored ring appeared.

The ring flew to the sky and let out a powerful attraction force, absorbing all kinds of killer moves and even desolate beasts.

Heavenly Court's defensive line fell into chaos.

“Charge!” Southern Border's Gu Immortals grasped this chance and activated rank eight Immortal Gu House Great Space Temple to charge in through the gap.

Heavenly Court's Yu Zhu Zi gritted his teeth as he pointed at Great Space Temple and shouted: “Go!”

Most of the jade pearls floating around him flew out and struck Great Space Temple before detonating.

Bam bam bam...

The detonation of jade pearls resounded like thunder, jade fragments scattered everywhere and attached themselves onto Great Space Temple,

actually slowing this rank eight Immortal Gu House by several times.

With this chance, Heavenly Court's members quickly reinforced and used all their strength to force Great Space Temple out.

But, although Great Space Temple was forced out, Wu Yong made his move on the other side.

Immortal killer move — Finger Wind Dragon!

Immortal killer move — Chaotic Shooting Blades!

Wu Yong flicked his fingers repeatedly, throwing out several dark jade worms.

The small worms grew larger as they flew in the sky, expanding to ten feet, fifty feet, a hundred and fifty feet!

In just a few breaths of time, they turned into vicious wind dragons that was two hundred and twenty feet long, baring their fangs as they attacked Heavenly Court's defensive line.

Wu Yong's eyes flashed with a green light, the wind dragons roared and turned into countless jade wind blades, shooting everywhere.

The wind blades were sharp, cutting everything in their path, Heavenly Court's main force could only grit their teeth and face the killer moves forcibly.

Using this chance when they were too occupied, Wu Yong turned around and infiltrated the defense line.

“Don't even think about it!” A delicate voice sounded, flower petals flew in the sky; Wan Zi Hong blocked Wu Yong.

She had been paying heavy attention towards Wu Yong without daring to be careless. The moment Wu Yong made the move, she went to fill the gap.

Wu Yong sighed and could only drop the plan.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals inside Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building were shouting towards the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal Hua Cai Yun: “Go in quickly!”

Previously, Wan Zi Hong had been fighting with Hua Cai Yun and Qing Yue An. Right now, Wan Zi Hong went to fill the defensive gap which left behind a hole, letting Hua Cai Yun and Qing Yue An infiltrate the defensive line.

Hua Cai Yun and Qing Yue An glanced at each other and sensed the other had no intention to charge in, so they both chose to battle in the same place without having any intention to invade.

The human wills influenced the Eastern Sea immortals’ resoluteness, but the influence was limited. Right now, Hua Cai Yun and Qing Yue An were already feeling regret, how could they have joined the decisive battle in Heavenly Court because of a moment of hotheadedness?

Wasn’t it quite good and satisfying to plunder immortal materials in Central Continent?

Why did they have to fight to the death here!

They were not fools, the first ones to invade the defensive line would definitely be met with fierce counterattacks from Heavenly Court’s forces, they might even die if they were just a little bit careless.

Because she had seen through this, Wan Zi Hong boldly went to fill the defensive gap and block Wu Yong.

“The nature of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals is like this.” Wan Zi Hong’s eyes shone sharply, she had a deep understanding regarding Eastern Sea.

But at the next moment, Shi Miao suddenly charged into Heavenly Court’s defensive line.

He was also an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, Heavenly Court’s main force were barely able to maintain the defensive line and when they were forced,

they would let the defensive gap appear in front of the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals. But Heavenly Court's main force would have never imagined that Shi Miao was already controlled by Dragon Palace and had become a dragon general, unafraid of death in battles.

Heavenly Court's main force was dazed and allowed Shi Miao to smoothly charge into the defensive line and near Heaven Overseeing Tower. Just as he was about to charge inside, a figure suddenly appeared in front of Shi Miao.

"In your dream!" Duke Long's voice resounded in Shi Miao's ears.

Shi Miao had already put up his defenses, his skin was like a layer of rocks, extremely firm. But his tough skin was immediately pierced by Duke Long's right hand and his neck was grabbed firmly.

Shi Miao immediately felt suffocation, an intense force spread from Duke Long's right hand and cracked the rock skin on his neck.

"What kind of strength is this!" Shi Miao was horrified, he struggled with all his might but it was fruitless.

Just as his neck was about to snap, a sword light arrived.

Duke Long dodged immediately, but this was predicted, the sword light struck his waist, then passed through behind like a ray of light.

Duke Long's body was almost cut apart by this sword light, an enormous wound appeared on his stomach from where blood flowed out without stopping.

The sword light continued with its momentum and struck Heaven Overseeing Tower. Fortunately, defensive measures were already activated around Heaven Overseeing Tower, it was not unprepared like when Bo Qing's sword light cut it, a white barrier flickered around the tower before finally stopping the sword light.

“Fang Yuan!” Duke Long turned his head towards where the attack came from, at that direction was Fang Yuan who had once again transformed into an immemorial sword dragon.

The sword dragon’s claws were clenched into a fist, the attack just now was five finger fist heart sword!

This killer move had terrifying might, Duke Long absolutely could not sit idly and watch Fang Yuan use it casually. He immediately gave up on Shi Miao and used dragon gate to approach Fang Yuan.

But at this time, Shi Miao suddenly revealed a strange smile, his whole body melted and rapidly covered Duke Long’s body.

This change caught Duke Long off guard, and Fang Yuan was able to activate five finger fist heart sword again!

Second sword, third sword, fourth sword!

Every sword light struck Duke Long and passed through his body, the remaining force struck Heaven Overseeing Tower till it shook.

“Lord Duke Long!!!” This unexpected situation caused Heavenly Court’s immortals to pale in fright.

Even Duke Long had never expected Shi Miao to willingly give up his life to pin him down! Fang Yuan’s five finger fist heart sword struck him but Shi Miao was also struck.

There were three terrifyingly large sword wounds on Duke Long’s body, he was dripping with blood but he still had a breath of life left in him.

Shi Miao, however, could not be anymore dead. His form was a severed corpse, he died with a smile on his face.

“Duke Long, your life shall end here.” Fang Yuan said softly before pointing the fifth sword of five finger fist heart sword!

The sword light seemed to pierce through time and space, no one could block its speed.

Heavenly Court's immortals watched the sword light strike Duke Long with a horrified gaze.

At the moment of death, Duke Long's eyes lost their light as he fell into a whirlpool of memories.

Childhood...

Duke Long was lying on the bed and crying: "Father, mother, don't die, don't leave me behind!"

"Child." Duke Long's father rubbed his head and showed a carefree smile even when death was impending: "Don't cry and don't grieve. We suffered these fatal wounds to stop Di Zang Sheng's rampage, this is our responsibility as members of Heavenly Court, and it is also something we are willing to do."

"Death is the final destination of life, the crucial thing is whether we died a worthy death."

"You will understand this when you grow up, my child." Duke Long's mother spoke: "You will understand what our sacrifices signify. Although this leads to separation, it is also our honor and duty to protect humanity. The stronger one is, the greater their responsibilities. Protecting our people is the noble task that has been inherited by us and countless seniors. When you grow up, you will also continue to walk our path. We will be looking forward to your growth in the other world. You need to work hard and persevere."

Adolescence...

Young Duke Long was breathing heavily, he was knocked down by a puppet and was lying down on the ground.

A Gu Master laughed loudly from the side and clapped: “Little Long, your performance is already great. Get up, rest for a while.”

“No, I can still continue to fight!” Young Duke Long used all his strength and stood up unsteadily: “I will double my efforts, work hard in cultivation and keep on growing stronger. This puppet in front of me is nothing. There will be a day when I will become an expert like my parents, I will become a Gu Immortal of Heavenly Court and follow their path!”

“Hahaha, such aspirations, I am really looking forward to your future.” The Gu Master praised sincerely.

Adulthood...

“This is how it feels to be a Gu Immortal?” Duke Long passed the ascension tribulation and became a rank six Gu Immortal.

“Amazing, kid. You have become an immortal at such a young age. Thinking back to when I was your age, I was still competing with my rival in love, hahaha.” A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal laughed.

“Thank you for guarding me during this period.” The adult Duke Long bowed towards the Gu Immortal and said with great sincerity.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortal waved his hand: “You should have realized it by now, your identity is special. You are the Dao Guardian of the future Immortal Venerable, so your cultivation path will always be smooth, even if there are setbacks, it will only signify that you are going to reap even greater harvests later.”

“Heavenly Court needs you, the future Immortal Venerable needs you, humanity needs you. Kid, becoming an immortal is not your end point, it is just your starting point. You can’t get complacent, you can’t stop moving forward. We all need you.”

“Yes, I will persevere till I die. I will contribute every bit of my strength and every drop of my blood and sweat for Heavenly Court, for humanity, and for the future!” Duke Long swore.

Middle age...

“Rank eight cultivation, unimaginable... you actually accomplished this at your age!” Duke Tong said with a moved voice.

“Perhaps we should say, worthy of a Dao Guardian? Hahaha, with you, Heavenly Court can be even more prosperous.” Duke Mei laughed brightly.

“I am flattered, seniors.” The middle-aged Duke Long spoke modestly.

Duke Mei and Duke Tong glanced at each other, the former said: “So, have you considered our suggestion? Become one of us, lead Heavenly Court and guide the future Immortal Venerable seed.”

Duke Long nodded with no hesitation: “Yes, I have already prepared myself!”

“Hahaha, then from today onwards, you are Duke Long.”

“One of the three dukes of Heavenly Court, and also the most important one. Heavenly Court’s heavy responsibility will mainly rest on your shoulders.”

Duke Long nodded his head slowly and said with a solemn expression: “This is the path I have been pursuing. This is the expectation that my parents and the countless seniors I have met in life hold, it is the result that Heavenly Court and humanity needs! This responsibility... I, Duke Long, will undertake it with no hesitation!”

Old age...

“Come back, Hong Ting, you can still turn around!” Duke Long called.

“Master, I failed to live up to your teachings and expectations, I am sorry, but I must revive them!” Red Lotus did not turn around, disappearing into the night.

Duke Long closed his eyes in pain, his body on the verge of collapsing. The disciple he had taught with all his heart for so many years chose to walk on



such a path.

“I guided an Immortal Venerable to become a Demon Venerable, I have sinned!” Duke Long knelt before Duke Tong and Duke Mei.

“Get up, get up quickly.” Duke Tong and Duke Mei held Duke Long’s arms and consoled him.

“You need to have faith, Duke Long, we still have hope.”

“It is not your fault, Duke Long, we have all seen the efforts you have put in. It is Hong Ting who has disappointed us, not you.”

“No.” Duke Long shook off the two’s hands and said with an extremely solemn expression: “He is my disciple, if he is walking on the wrong path now, it is my mistake! It is my sin! I must pay for this, I will stake all my strength to make up for this mistake!! For Heavenly Court and for humanity, even if I have to give up everything, I will pull Red Lotus back to the righteous path!!!”

And finally, in his twilight years...

Duke Long was sitting cross-legged in the hall, his head lowered and his hair was disheveled.

Two trails of tears quietly trickled down his face.

In front of him on the cold floor were the corpses of people he was familiar with, these were dragonman corpses.

The pain in his heart submerged everything and roared like a tsunami, threatening to drown Duke Long.

He was originally blessed with the joys of familial bonds, but who could have thought he would have to suffer such an impact in his twilight years. What was even more sad was that the killer of his children and grandchildren was he himself!

This was the tragedy that he singlehandedly created.

“It is my fault, back then I should not have...” Duke Long’s voice was choked with emotions. He slowly raised his head, his gaze seemed to be under extreme weight as he slowly looked at each corpse. Joyful conversations and laughter along with blissful scenes of him with his grandchildren surfaced in his mind.

“It is not your fault, my children! Everything is my fault!” Duke Long’s back bent down, he used his powerless fist to pound his chest, light thumping sounds echoed in the hall.

“I was negligent in my care towards you, I did not guide you well, you ended up walking on the wrong path. I was wrong, I am not a good master, I am also not a good ancestor. But for the prosperity of humanity, for Heavenly Court, I had to sacrifice you.”

“Believe me, I never wanted this outcome. But I have no choice, I might be a dragonman but my heart has always stood with humanity. I cannot let you disrupt the rule of humanity, that is the result gained after countless generations sacrificed themselves. And most importantly, your roots also lie in humanity!”

“If you want to blame someone, then blame me, I cannot beg for your forgiveness neither do I dare to do that. Let me bear all the sins, let me pay for them!”

“My children... I cannot bring myself to separate with you. You will merge with me, we will never be apart! As your ancestor, I have failed you and did not give you a beautiful life and stable environment to live in. But this is all I can do.”

“I, Duke Long, am just a dying old man.”

Present...

The fifth sword flew towards Duke Long so fast that it was already in front of Duke Long!

Whoosh.

There was a soft sound, time seemed to have been slowed down by countless times.

Duke Long's head lightly separated from his neck.

Blood flowed out slowly and spurted out just as slowly.

He was beheaded by Fang Yuan with one slice!

# **Chapter 1950 - The True Triple Qi Retraction**

## **1950 The True Triple Qi Retraction**

“Lord Duke Long!!!” The Heavenly Court immortals’ horrified cries resounded, but to Duke Long, these voices became increasingly weaker, at the start, they were like roaring waves, but almost at the next moment, they became light echoes from the horizon.

Is this the feeling of death?

I, Duke Long, am finally going to die?

Die here?

Thoughts were still flashing past Duke Long’s mind.

Die here?

He asked himself again.

Tired, I am really tired!

He had walked till now while bearing heavy duty and expectations, he withstood the burden of endless sins.

There were times when he really wanted to die!

When he first stepped into the immortal graveyard and hibernated, he had let his imagination run wild: If I died like this, it feels like it might be a pretty good thing.

But could he?

Could he?

He asked himself.

No....

He could not!

He, Duke Long, lived all his life while carrying a heavy burden: He shouldered the expectations of his parents, master, and companions, he shouldered the responsibility of Heavenly Court and humanity, he took on the blame for his disciple's betrayal and the calamity he caused, he took on the sin of exterminating his offspring by his own hands.

He got injured, he got old.

His back slowly bent down, his gaze slowly dimmed.

He slumbered in the immortal graveyard, but when the time came, he crawled up and continued to bear his responsibility and mission!

“That’s right, I cannot die, I cannot!”

“I still need to deal with the enemies, I still haven’t cleared my sins, I still haven’t corrected my mistakes!”

“The immortal graveyard is already destroyed, if I fall now, Feng Jiu Ge will not be able to salvage the situation alone. Heavenly Court will be destroyed by the enemies.”

“How can I fall now?”

“I cannot fall!”

“My companions need me, Heavenly Court needs me, humanity needs me!”

“They need me, Duke Long!!”

“So....”

“No matter how tired I am, even if I am extremely exhausted, even if I hibernate in the graveyard, even if I die, even if I have been beheaded!”

“I, Duke Long... cannot afford to fall!”

“I need to stand up, I need to...”

“Continue fighting!!”

Instantly, as if the entire universe was responding to his unyielding will!

A miracle happened!

Duke Long’s dimmed pupils suddenly burst out with shocking light that rushed towards the sky. The blood that spurted out of his neck returned rapidly, the countless qi in the surrounding condensed and brought his head back to his neck.

An extremely profound aura carried a true inheritance and entered his body, the wounds on his body started healing rapidly, he completely healed within a few breaths.

“It is Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s method! And this qi path true inheritance... so triple qi retraction can actually be used in this manner!” Duke Long immediately comprehended, great joy surfacing on his face.

“Lord Duke Long, he has revived!” The miracle happened right in front of them, Heavenly Court’s morale bounced back.

Fang Yuan’s expression was still tranquil: “It is Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s method. There was a backup after all!”

“This is Heavenly Court’s foundation?” Wu Yong mumbled, his expression was dark, he felt powerlessness.

Duke Long raised his head and floated in the air, he spread out his arms and legs as he said: “I, Duke Long, will not fall right now. Oh Fang Yuan, let me show you the genuine... Triple Qi Retraction!”

“Triple qi retraction?!” This move’s reputation was too huge, the moment Duke Long said this, the three regions’ immortals slowed down their offenses in fright and uncertainty.

Fang Yuan’s expression was also solemn, he had personally witnessed the terrifying might of triple qi retraction.

Back then, Duke Long had used this move to determine his victory, directly defeating Purple Mountain True Monarch.

“Triple qi retraction has a total of three styles: First style, human qi retraction; second style, earth qi retraction; and third style, heaven qi retraction. Human qi retraction greatly reduces a Gu Immortal’s human qi and their condition will fall sharply. Earth qi retraction will extract earth qi and cause heavy damage to the immortal aperture. Heaven qi retraction will extract heaven qi and combined with the damage from the previous two styles, the immortal aperture will shatter directly. If one is hit by the first style, the second style and third style cannot be blocked. So, the key is in the first style!”

All kinds of information flashed through Fang Yuan’s mind.

He moved his dragon body and retreated cautiously. Although he had transformed into an immemorial sword dragon and seemed to have gotten rid of his human status, he was not certain if human qi retraction could extract his human qi or not.

Since this move was created by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, even if there was no transformation path back then, Duke Long would have definitely made relevant modifications to fill this gap.

Whoosh!

At the next moment, vast qi surged from all directions and winds moved like waves, gathering around Duke Long's body.

Endless amounts of human qi, earth qi, and heaven qi gathered in Duke Long's body, turning into countless qi path dao marks while also drastically raising his power in every aspect!

Fang Yuan's eyes narrowed: "What is this? Triple qi retraction's three styles are being activated at the same time, plundering a vast amount of qi to empower Duke Long. Is this a condition triggered by Primordial Origin's method?"

Triple qi retraction's effect had already deviated from its usual ability.

Power, power, an unprecedented power!

The feeling of power filled Duke Long's body and mind. He stepped lightly, boom!

The air below him directly exploded as his body flew like a purple meteor and appeared in front of Fang Yuan in an instance.

Fast, extremely fast!

But Fang Yuan had no fear since reverse flow protection seal was still activated.

Boom!

Duke Long's fist struck his head.

Fang Yuan was knocked down like a cannonball, he smashed into the ground, creating a deep pit.

Reverse flow protection seal immediately appeared shallow and illusory from this attack.



Fang Yuan shook his giant dragon head, shaking off the dizziness, when Duke Long appeared in front of his eyes again. Both sides were within one hundred steps.

Duke Long charged over, his whole body emitted blazing qi that raised his mighty disposition to the extreme.

Fang Yuan's eyes were cold as he snorted inwardly.

Whoosh—!

Myriad Year Flying Warship had already been lying in ambush, and when Duke Long charged forward at this moment, it immediately pierced through the air, like a giant blade that cut towards Duke Long with a heavy shadow of death.

Struck!

Myriad Year Flying Warship was like a giant broadsword that cut Duke Long.

Boom!

Dust and soil flew before they were dispelled by the violent qi around Duke Long.

Duke Long was struck by Myriad Year Flying Warship, he was half-crouching on the ground, one hand holding the ground while the other hand released a powerful strength as it grabbed the front bottom part of Myriad Year Flying Warship — he actually held off the whole of Myriad Year Flying Warship's weight with a single hand!

Crack, crack...

A series of sharp sounds could be heard, the muscles on Duke Long's hands bulged as he slowly pushed back Myriad Year Flying Warship inch by inch.

Fang Yuan's pupils shrank slightly, the Myriad Year Flying Warship of this moment was not the same as before, it was merged with Twelve Zodiac

battle formation and was enough to rank among the top five Immortal Gu Houses in the world!

Duke Long actually resisted its full-powered collision with one hand.

The strength amplification Duke Long received from triple qi retraction had far surpassed Fang Yuan's estimation.

Hah!

Duke Long breathed out as he exerted strength and stood up, he brought his other hand together and actually threw Myriad Year Flying Warship far away.

Fang Yuan observed the whole process with indifference, his dragon pupils reflecting Duke Long's clear face. Fang Yuan swung his dragon tail and retreated quickly, leaving the Heaven Overseeing Tower battlefield.

Duke Long's speed already surpassed Fang Yuan's but he could only watch as Fang Yuan left. Because at this moment, Dragon Palace and three Immortal Gu Houses were attacking Feng Jiu Ge. Feng Jiu Ge had to split his attention to resist them, so destiny song unavoidably weakened. Di Zang Sheng was free and charged towards Heaven Overseeing Tower once again!

“Evil Dragon! Stop!” Almost in an instant, Duke Long appeared on Di Zang Sheng's head.

Immortal killer move — Qi Breath Mountain!

An enormous translucent qi mountain took shape in a blink of an eye and pressed down fiercely.

Boom, heaven and earth shook, Di Zang Sheng's head was pressed down to the ground by qi breath mountain.

Triple qi retraction increased the might of Duke Long's qi path methods to a horrifying level.

However, after using this move, the qi around Duke Long fell sharply by thirty percent.

“A chance!” Seeing this, Five Elements Grandmaster, Wu Yong, and Zhang Yin attacked at almost the same time. Three long range killer moves attacked Duke Long.

Duke Long did not dodged and also did not use self-moving dragon qi wall, he actually let the killer moves engulf his body.

Smoke and fire rose, thunder rumbled.

The dazzling scene dissipated, Duke Long was still standing in the sky, standing tall and upright.

“Did you want to scratch my itch with these three small tricks?” Duke Long ridiculed loudly. The faces of Wu Yong, Five Elements Grandmaster, and Zhang Yin reddened with anger and shock.

“Triple qi retraction!” Duke Long shouted once again.

In an instant, vast qi surged and appeared from all corners of Heavenly Court before gathering inside Duke Long’s body within a few seconds.

Rumble!

Duke Long’s aura expanded once again, not only did he return to his earlier state, he even gained an extra layer. From the original ten feet, it broke through to twenty feet. The aura covered his whole body and the translucent fire burned high.

Duke Long’s purple hair waved wildly and his scales shone brightly.

Because of heavenly dragon’s last stand as well, Duke Long’s body right now had already far surpassed the size of an ordinary human, his body expanded several times and gave an extremely oppressive feeling.

Di Zang Sheng roared, unreconciled as it lifted its giant dragon head out from the pit.

Duke Long suddenly appeared to the side of Di Zang Sheng's head and gave a straight punch. The huge force twisted Di Zang Sheng's head and even its enormous body rolled away, destroying countless buildings of Heavenly Court in its way.

But Duke Long no longer cared about these, everything had to prioritize Heaven Overseeing Tower.

In the previous life, Di Zang Sheng's battle strength could match Duke Long's, but in this life, it was directly suppressed!

If it was said that Feng Jiu Ge used the profundity of destiny song to defeat Di Zang Sheng, then Duke Long suppressed Di Zang Sheng by relying on his own strength.

"I understand now. Although I destroyed the immortal graveyard, Heavenly Court still exists. When a Gu Immortal joins Heavenly Court, they will contribute their immortal aperture; countless grotto-heaven worlds merged together to form the current Heavenly Court. Every immortal aperture is a balance of three qi and contains heaven qi, earth qi, and human qi. Currently, Duke Long is using triple qi retraction not against us but on Heavenly Court." Fang Yuan's thoughts moved lightning fast as he deduced the general details.

Heavenly Court's three qi were naturally exploited by Duke Long and it could even be said to be an infinite supply. With such a powerful supplement, Duke Long's battle strength exploded and suppressed Di Zang Sheng with just his body.

But out of Heavenly Court, the killer move triple qi retraction would lose such might. No such vigorous triple qi were around in the outside world and they could not be used by Duke Long freely.

That meant, Duke Long's strength had limitations, he must stay inside Heavenly Court.

However, even though Fang Yuan saw through this weakness, it was useless.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was also inside Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan had to strive to destroy fate Gu, so he could not bypass Heavenly Court or the current Duke Long!

# Chapter 1951 - Deadlock

## 1951 Deadlock

“No matter how strong Duke Long is, he is only one person. Charge! We will attack together, Heavenly Court’s defensive line is so wide, let’s see how he will defend it.” Wu Yong shouted, his sharp gaze containing a trace of restlessness. Duke Long’s astonishing performance had already triggered subtle changes in people’s hearts, he could not let him act so unbridled!

Wu Yong controlled Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and took the lead, this move immediately made the Immortal Gu Houses around him start attacking once again.

Duke Long snorted, he suddenly disappeared and appeared to block Wu Yong’s path. His expression was grim and was about to attack Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building when Dragon Palace also attacked him.

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

Duke Long stared with wide eyes as he had no choice but to dodge.

One skill to dominate the world!

Facing the dream path killer move, no matter how strong he was, Duke Long did not dare to test it.

His evasion immediately made Wu Shuai, Wu Yong and others let out a sigh of relief.

Duke Long's mighty image that gave a feeling of being invincible was broken by this action.

The three regions' immortals' falling spirits became concentrated again.

"Fortunately, he dodged it." Thin beads of sweat covered Wu Shuai's head.

Dreamy light smoke might be a dream path killer move but it had a limited strength. Facing such a powerful Duke Long, it was like using a small fish net to capture a giant shark.

Duke Long could not resist dream path killer moves, the giant shark could definitely be trapped, but what about after that? The shark would struggle to break free and could tear the small fish net.

Back to the present, even if Wu Shuai captured Duke Long, it was far beyond Dragon Palace's ability to force such a powerful expert inside the palace, let alone suppress him.

The final conclusion might very well be Dragon Palace crumbling apart while Duke Long would be temporarily trapped inside a dream realm. But there was Feng Jin Huang who could deal with dream realms and quickly rescue Duke Long.

So, Wu Shuai's move was only a bluff. Duke Long took the bait because he was not aware of this dream path killer move's details.

This was also why Gu Immortals kept their killer moves hidden and would not display them easily. And when they showed their killer moves several times, they would actively modify them.

Duke Long retreated, the three regions' immortals led a massive attack once again under Wu Yong's lead, using this opportunity to gather and attack.

"Hmph, besides Lord Duke Long, Heavenly Court also has us!"

"You will definitely pay for underestimating us."

"With us around, don't even think of succeeding."

At the crucial moment, Zhu Que Er, Bai Cang Shui, Zhao Shan He and others of Heavenly Court's main force stepped forward, welcoming the violent attacks without fearing death.

"A bunch of old geezers. How much time do you even have left?" Hua Cai Yun sneered, countless thunder clouds shot out from beside her.

Boom boom boom!

The thunder clouds detonated ahead of time, they were all accurately intercepted by Yu Zhu Zi.

"How much time? We never cared! As long as we have a breath of life in us, we will crawl out from our graves!" Yu Zhu Zi shouted and pushed forward the back of his hand, a large patch of jade powder flew forward like fog.

"Retreat!" Facing the unknown killer move, Hua Cai Yun did not dare to test it and immediately retreated to be on the safe side.

"We will never lose this battle! Do you know why?" Zhou Xiong Xin wore a white robe and had thick eyebrows and a square face. He used information path methods, shooting out countless white arrows.

"Because since three million years ago, we have always been the pioneers of the eras, the backbone of humanity, the heroes of Central Continent. We will never forget the disgrace of becoming slaves to variant humans, we will never forget that peace is something we have fought for using our lives, and we will never forget that the happiness of the people needs to be guarded by each generation."

"As for you, you are petty people who don't care about endangering humanity for your selfish interests. Short-sighted fools who cannot even see the future! Come, no matter what methods you have, no matter how many times you attack, you will only receive defeat!"

Zhou Xiong Xin shouted loudly, his endless arrows became stronger with his words; using attack as defense, the arrows forced back Five Elements



Grandmaster, Yi Hao Fang, and other rank eights. They could only prioritize defense, the offense they had just started as well as their morale shrank rapidly.”

“Look, this is our Heavenly Court’s perseverance!” Zhu Que Er and Prince Feng Xian combined their skills, flames surged and formed a completely new defensive line, firmly blocking the charge of several rank seven Immortal Gu Houses.

“Hmph, a bunch of babbling geezers. The immortal graveyard is already destroyed now, after killing you, let me see who else will stand up in Heavenly Court?” A famous expert in Northern Plains’ history, Liu Hui had just finished speaking when he felt his vision darken.

Duke Long suddenly appeared right before him!

Boom!

Immortal killer move — Dragon Claw Strike!

Liu Hui’s whole body let out a bright green light, his defensive killer move was activated with full power. But it only lasted for a second before it shattered, his whole body was slashed into pieces.

Liu Hui died immediately from Duke Long’s one attack.

Five Elements Grandmaster and others quickly retreated in fright, entering their respective side’s Immortal Gu Houses.

Duke Long swept his gaze around the battlefield and shouted: “You colluded with the otherworldly demon and attempted to overthrow Heavenly Court, you are all traitors to humanity. You don’t understand, even if we battle to the death, our three qi will still remain. This is the grand qi of humanity, it will last forever with mountains and the land itself. Triple qi retraction!”

Boom!!

A huge explosion sounded, the whole sky turned dark. Three qi flocked and gathered into Duke Long's body from all areas of Heavenly Court.

Duke Long's translucent blazing qi expanded wildly, giving a heart-shaking feeling to everyone.

Immortal killer move — Great Qi Hand Explosion!

Duke Long stretched his left arm and spread his five fingers, his palm pointed towards a rank seven Immortal Gu House.

At the next moment, he clenched his left hand.

Bam.

Great qi exploded, the rank seven Immortal Gu House split into pieces, exploding into countless fragments. Immortal Gu were all destroyed, the Gu Immortals inside also met with calamity, none survived and only bones, blood, and meat pulp were left behind.

The three regions' Gu Immortals were horrified and stupefied.

Heavenly Court's side cheered loudly.

“This is Heavenly Court's power!” Inside Demon Judgment Board, Qin Ding Ling's eyes shined brightly. Fang Zheng, however, was silent as he was shaken mentally.

The shock was not only to Duke Long's strength, there was also a kind of turbulence going on in his mind.

At this moment, Fang Zheng began to understand the spirit of Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals!

“Yes.” Fang Zheng thought inwardly: “If there were no Heavenly Court in history, could there be the current human race? Generations of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals cleared away obstacles with their blood, making countless sacrifices to bring about the rule of humanity. Comparatively, Fang Yuan and these people disregard the big picture, destroying fate Gu is

giving the variant humans a chance to rise up. They are indeed traitors to humanity.”

Swish!

Right at this time, a sword light pierced through the battlefield, bringing forth a soft sound and a bloody figure.

Zhu Que Er slowly fell to the ground like a sparrow whose wings were cut, her body was directly slashed into two halves.

Immortal killer move — Five Finger Fist Heart Sword!

It was Fang Yuan! He was sinisterly roaming at the edge of the battlefield in his immemorial sword dragon form.

“Fang Yuan!” Heavenly Court’s immortals were furious.

Fang Yuan sneered: “I am here for my own interests! I don’t give a damn about what you are, you can be noble or insignificant for all I care. Today, I will destroy fate Gu, I will kill whoever dares to stop me, if an immortal blocks me, I will slay the immortal, if a demon comes, I will slaughter the demon in my way! Heavenly Court? Since you obstruct my path, you will meet with the same outcome!”

“Hmph, demon! You need to be executed!”

“Kill him!”

“Murderer, I will crush you to pieces!!”

Heavenly Court’s immortals cursed.

Roar—!

Di Zang Sheng recovered and collided into the defensive line again.

Dragon Palace cooperated and used dreamy light smoke.

Wherever the dream path killer move went, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals evaded. Feng Jiu Ge gave a light sigh, activating a killer move and turning it into a song warrior.

The song warrior threw itself into the dreamy light smoke. Dreamy light smoke thus had no more offensive ability and returned like a python that had eaten its fill.

Feng Jiu Ge could not directly break the dream path killer move, but he was able to block it by using this method.

Destiny song resounded once again, Di Zang Sheng roared discontentedly but was without options, and was once again suppressed by Feng Jiu Ge.

Far away, Spectral Soul and his servants had already arrived in front of a treasury.

Looking back at the battlefield, Fairy Zi Wei sighed: "I did not think triple qi retraction still had this use. Duke Long's battle strength has risen to an astonishing level. Adding on Feng Jiu Ge's assistance, Heavenly Court's defensive line looks to be on the verge of collapse but is actually able to keep on lasting."

According to overall strength, Heavenly Court was naturally stronger.

But they had to defend Heaven Overseeing Tower and were thus extremely passive, even Duke Long was shackled by this.

Duke Long could easily kill rank eight Gu Immortals or rank seven Immortal Gu Houses, and Fang Yuan could similarly kill Heavenly Court members easily by using five finger fist heart sword. Duke Long had to leave the defensive line and choose to fight Fang Yuan far away.

If these two were allowed to attack the other side's Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan would not feel even a little heartache, but Heavenly Court needed enough manpower to defend the place. Duke Long would never let Fang Yuan continue his slaughter.

On the contrary, if Fang Yuan endured Duke Long's attacks, wholeheartedly attacking Heavenly Court's main force was also an option. But if he chose to do this, he would have to bear Duke Long's heavy attacks. Fang Yuan was not willing to do this, after all, he and the other three regions' Gu Immortals allied only because of the situation. Sacrificing himself for them was too stupid and too risky.

Thus, Fang Yuan and Duke Long pinned down each other.

Feng Jiu Ge instead became the core of the battle, he took charge of Heaven Overseeing Tower's defense while blocking Dragon Palace and Di Zang Sheng. His battle strength surpassed both enemies and allies' expectations time and again.

Old Man Zheng Yuan narrowed his eyes: "Now, we just have to see who can break the stalemate. The crucial point is fate Gu. Heavenly Court has already harvested the success dao marks, but the refinement path Gu formation is destroyed, can Yuan Qiong Du alone be able to restore fate Gu in time? Master, if we interfere now, can't we seize fate Gu?"

Spectral Soul laughed: "What will we gain by snatching it? Don't think that they are fighting with all they have got, they are still holding back. There is more to this situation than meets the eye! The past venerables have gotten involved in this battle. We will talk after plundering this treasury and getting back the Door of Life and Death."

"Yes, master!"

# Chapter 1952 - Responsibility and Sacrifice

## 1952 Responsibility and Sacrifice

On the side of a sect's mountain, the landscape was green, clear water flowed by it and birds' chirping could be heard.

"Little Du, what are you lying on the ground for?" A gentle and soft voice could be heard.

"Senior sister." The young Yuan Qiong Du opened his eyes and saw a girl bending over to look at him with her bright and smiling eyes.

The girl's gaze moved to Little Du's hand and let out a gasp: "Wha, Little Du, you refined a rank three Gu again. You are really amazing."

"But I am not happy, you know I don't like cultivating refinement path." Yuan Qiong Du stood up while mumbling.

"Don't be so dispirited, your talent is envied by so many people." The girl patted his shoulder and consoled.

But Yuan Qiong Du was still dispirited and his head slumped forward.

"Haha, how about this, I will share a secret with you. Few days ago, I found clues to a Gu Master inheritance in my father's study room, it is hidden at some corner of the mountain. What do you think, do you want to search for it?" Senior sister's beautiful gaze turned towards Yuan Qiong Du.

As expected, teenage Yuan Qiong Du could not endure boredom, his eyes brightened when he heard what was said: “There is such a fun thing? Wonderful, our sect’s mountain has inheritances left behind by predecessors after all. Gu Immortal inheritances are extremely rare but Gu Master inheritances are plentiful. Tell me the clues quickly, senior sister.”

“Okay. The clue is a line of a poem, I have been pondering about it these few days, I will read it to you.” Senior sister did not conceal it, and this was only a Gu Master inheritance. Her father was also Yuan Qiong Du’s master, a Gu Immortal existence.

Yuan Qiong Du clapped his hands after hearing it just once: “I understand. The clue is solved like this, match the first and last characters, then match second and the second last characters; it gives us a location.”

Senior sister pondered for a bit and jumped with joy: “So it is there! Little Du, you are really smart, you guessed it immediately.”

“Let’s go find it quickly.” Yuan Qiong Du moved ahead.

“Wait for me.” Senior sister quickly followed.

“Don’t worry, senior sister, I will give this inheritance to you, I won’t snatch it from you, haha.” Yuan Qiong Du’s figure disappeared into the depths of the mountain forest.

Finally, the two found the inheritance inside a mountain cave.

“This is a fire path inheritance.” Yuan Qiong Du and his senior sister inspected the inheritance carefully: “Will flame? A fire that uses will as the fuel. This method is quite original and stunning. How did the Gu Master who created it think of this? Interesting. Eh, this name, how could it be master?”

Yuan Qiong Du was extremely surprised.

Senior sister also felt surprised, saying uncertainly: “They might just have the same name?”

Yuan Qiong Du, however, pondered and his eyes shone: “Maybe not! Senior sister, I remember you saying that you found this clue in master’s study room.”

“Yes, I was tidying up father’s bamboo scrolls, you know my father’s hobby is to collect these antiques. And by chance, a bamboo stick slipped from an aged scroll, and on it was the inheritance clue.” Senior sister recalled her memory.

“This inheritance was set up by me when I was young.” Right at this time, Yuan Qiong Du’s master slowly walked into the cave and appeared before Yuan Qiong Du.

Walking alongside him was Yuan Qiong Du’s sect uncle, who was short in stature, had a round face, and looked amiable.

Yuan Qiong Du and his senior sister quickly bowed and greeted at the same time: “We pay respects to master (father) and sect uncle.”

Yuan Qiong Du curled up his lips: “Master, are you making fun of your disciples?”

“Of course not.” His master shook his head, looking at the inheritance in Yuan Qiong Du’s hand with a trace of reminiscence.

“Hahaha, you clever brat.” The fat sect uncle pointed at Yuan Qiong Du: “Your master and I just returned from Spirit Resonance Peak, we were just chatting along the way when we discovered your traces. I can guarantee that this inheritance was indeed left by your master during his youth. He wholeheartedly liked fire path back then and used five years to painstakingly gather primeval stones and purchase a rank three fire path Gu.”

“But master clearly cultivates water path.” Yuan Qiong Du’s eyes were wide open, having not expected his master also liked fire path, like him, when he was young.



“There was no other choice.” The fat sect uncle sighed: “Our sect’s water path inheritance required an inheritor. How could an individual’s preference compare to the sect’s situation? Every Gu Immortal inheritance needs to be inherited from generation to generation. Every inheritor will improve the inheritance on the foundation of their predecessor, making the inheritance keep up with the times and not be eliminated. This is our responsibility. When your master gave up fire path, he personally arranged this inheritance. I was there at that time and saw him crying his eyes out.”

“Cough cough.” Yuan Qiong Du’s master interrupted: “Since you two discovered this inheritance, then it shall belong to you. Let’s go.”

The two seniors left, leaving behind Yuan Qiong Du and his senior sister in the cave.

“Junior brother, I cultivate wood path, I don’t need this, so I will give it to you.” Senior sister also said goodbye to Yuan Qiong Du.

Yuan Qiong Du gazed at the inheritance in his hand, slight waves undulated in his heart as he mumbled: “Master...”

He opened his eyes again.

Yuan Qiong Du saw that he was still inside Heaven Overseeing Tower.

“Damn it! I suffered a backlash during the refinement and fainted!” Yuan Qiong Du’s heart pounded madly as he recalled the scene.

The biggest taboo in Gu refinement was to be disturbed. It did not matter how heavy his injuries were, the main thing was whether fate Gu was alright or not. This was related to the plan that Heavenly Court had been executing for millions of years!

Yuan Qiong Du was almost already without hope.

As the only Gu Immortal to refine Gu, he had actually fainted. Could fate Gu, that was the target of the refinement, be unharmed?

Fate Gu would not be destroyed because of this, but it was very likely that most of the previous restoration results would disappear, it might even return to the original damaged state.

Right now, Yuan Qiong Du could only hope fate Gu's situation was slightly better, his and Heavenly Court's countless years of efforts must not go to waste.

But when Yuan Qiong Du raised his head to look at fate Gu, he was stunned.

“What?!”

A lump of fire had taken his place in the Gu refinement, fate Gu was quietly lying in the fire and was just half a step away from complete recovery.

After the shock, warmth surged in Yuan Qiong Du's heart.

This was his will flame!

A fire which used will as fuel, he had obtained it from his master's inheritance when he was young. Later on, he cultivated refinement path but did not forget fire path as well, he continued to improve the will flame and developed it to immortal level.

“Will flame has already become my most familiar and most skilled Gu refinement method. I probably activated will flame unconsciously when I fainted!” Yuan Qiong Du guessed.

This was not the first time this happened. In fact, throughout his life, in his countless Gu refinement experiences, there were many times when will flame took his place in emergencies. Every time he was unable to hold on, he would activate will flame to temporarily replace him and stabilize the situation.

After countless times, using will flame at the crucial times had already become his subconscious habit.

Yuan Qiong Du let out a breath of air.

He looked at the burning will flame quietly while thinking: “Rather than calling it a habit, more accurately, this is a type of responsibility.”

He thought of his master and smiled: “Responsibility... Master, looks like I haven’t disappointed you.”

Yuan Qiong Du knew his condition, his injuries were too heavy and he was not able to continue the Gu refinement. But hope was in front of him, he used his last bit of life and willpower to reinforce this lump of will flame.

“Burn, burn more.” Yuan Qiong Du mumbled, he used his own life to light the will flame!

The will flame burned quietly, the fire brightened and became extremely stable.

Inside the fire, fate Gu finally moved past the final step, it achieved complete recovery!

While Yuan Qiong Du was already lifeless.

Like his master, like his senior sister, and like the countless Heavenly Court’s seniors, they had given their blood and sweat for the cause of Heavenly Court, using their own lives to build the foundation of Heavenly Court!

He was a true hero even in death!

Heavenly Court’s foundation, the large Central Continent was paved with blood and sacrifices.

The will flame dissipated.

“Hehehe.” Cong Yan’s weak laughter resounded in the quiet top floor of Heaven Overseeing Tower: “Yuan Qiong Du has already accomplished his task, it is our turn now.”

“But with our state, even transmitting our voices is troublesome, let alone activating Heaven Overseeing Tower.” Che Wei said, his tone was quiet and

deep.

Cong Yan replied back almost as if he was not worried: “There is still a way. The immortal essence remaining in my aperture is enough for me to activate my trump card, isn’t it so coincidental?”

Che Wei and Cong Yan were close friends, Che Wei immediately realized Cong Yan’s meaning: “Don’t do this, if you absorb my injuries, you will die immediately.”

“What is there to fear about death? Right now, our companions are fighting outside, the defensive line is on the verge of collapsing, they probably don’t have the chance to send anyone else. Brother Che Wei, we have known each other for many years, your abilities are stronger than mine. But your journey has not been completed yet, you will soon create your own path, I really look forward to it... but it is such a pity that I won’t be able to witness it.”

As Cong Yan spoke lightly, a light blue radiance spread from his body and covered Che Wei.

The two Gu Immortals had wounds everywhere, even their bones and flesh were smashed in. But following the blue light’s effect, Che Wei’s body began to recover while Cong Yan’s became more severe.

“My friend...” Che Wei closed his eyes before opening them, two trails of tears flowed down quietly.

Cong Yan was dead, Che Wei’s injuries were still severe but he used all his strength to barely crawl towards fate Gu.

“Activate, activate... I beg of you.” Che Wei’s vision turned dark, he poured in all his immortal essence and could only pray quietly at this point.

# Chapter 1953 - Fang Yuan Falls

## 1953 Fang Yuan Falls

A long time seemed to have passed, but it was only an instant.

The grand Heaven Overseeing Tower began to slowly let out a pure-white light, the light gradually grew brighter and began to rise.

Several breaths later, the light shot to the sky and illuminated the whole battlefield like an emperor had descended!

The chaotic and violent battlefield paused immediately.

Almost all Gu Immortals raised their heads and looked towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

The three regions' Gu Immortals were pale and ashen, while tears and snot flowed down the faces of Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals.

“Rank nine fate Gu has been restored!”

“Yuan Qiong Du did not fail us! He did it! This is too amazing.”

“Heaven Overseeing Tower has returned to its peak state, we have won!”

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals cheered, their morale rose to the peak at once.

“Retreat, retreat!” Be it Wu Yong, Yao Huang, or Shen Cong Sheng and others, they all shouted to retreat with no intent to battle.

Bing Sai Chuan was still controlling Calamity Luck Altar, he transmitted his voice to Fang Yuan with an unresigned expression: “Do something quickly!”

Fang Yuan’s immemorial sword dragon transformation, however, began to retreat rapidly.

Duke Long gave up on Fang Yuan and used dragon gate to rapidly travel to Heaven Overseeing Tower.

“Fate Gu, fate Gu...” When he saw the completely intact fate Gu, he could not restrain his intense emotions anymore, tears flowed down as if he was released from a heavy burden.

The one who had injured fate Gu back then was his disciple Red Lotus, to make up for this mistake, Duke Long resolved himself and took on the heavy responsibility of restoring fate Gu.

“Hong Ting, master has atoned for your mistake. I did not let down Heavenly Court, I did not let down humanity!” Duke Long took deep breaths before he regained his cool. He looked outside the tower with a sharp gaze.

“Now, it is time for you all to die!” Duke Long shouted and activated Heaven Overseeing Tower’s strongest offensive method.

Immortal killer move — Fate Vanquish!

Light, light that filled heaven and earth, it was omnipresent, illuminating the universe and people’s hearts.

In just an instance, all the rank seven Immortal Gu Houses in the battlefield crumbled, the Gu Immortals inside fortunately survived.

Even Calamity Luck Altar and Dragon Palace were in miserable states. Bing Sai Chuan, Wu Shuai, Zhan Bu Du and others immediately used all

their efforts in repairing the Immortal Gu Houses.

The surviving historical rank eight experts of Northern Plains dissipated after the light shone on them.

Countless year beasts and swordsmen of Fang Yuan that caused disaster to Heavenly Court were mostly destroyed, blood flowed like a river.

Mao Li Qiu's perfect pair killer move was forcefully broken, Di Zang Sheng was suppressed to the ground and was actually unable to get up immediately!

Only Fang Yuan's immemorial sword dragon form was completely safe.

He was a complete otherworldly demon who could not be targeted by the killer move fate vanquish and had a natural immunity towards it!

"Only you remain now, Fang Yuan!" Duke Long stared at the immemorial sword dragon with an intense killing intent and hatred.

It was this otherworldly demon that destroyed the immortal graveyard, destroying the largest portion of the millions of years of foundation of Heavenly Court!

This sin could not be forgiven, he must suffer a cruel death!

Boom—!

Duke Long flew out of Heaven Overseeing Tower and pierced through the sky towards Fang Yuan.

"Block him, stop Fang Yuan!" Duke Long roared, his voice resonated throughout the whole Heavenly Court.

Destiny song started in time as Fang Yuan's retreating speed fell sharply.

Immortal killer move — Qi Current Scissors!

Duke Long neared and opened his palm; countless sharp qi currents formed extremely sharp qi blades that shrouded Fang Yuan like a storm.

Fang Yuan canceled reverse flow protection seal and charged through the qi blades' encirclement, leaving behind a bloody trail in the sky.

Myriad Year Flying Warship quickly flew over and reunited with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stepped on the deck and transformed into the immemorial year monkey, he then turned around and waved his arm. Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

Wild winds surged, scattering all of the qi current scissors.

Fang Yuan stomped on the deck, Myriad Year Flying Warship gave off a buzzing sound and let out dazzling radiance as it activated a time path killer move — Myriad Year Hunting.

Splash splash splash.

The River of Time phantom under Myriad Year Flying Warship continued to bubble, countless year beasts were summoned once again and participated in the battle, spreading out everywhere.

At this time, Feng Jiu Ge moved ahead of Duke Long.

Immortal killer move — Submission Song!

Immortal killer move — Song Warrior!

Submission song's power condensed into human form as it ran amok through the army of countless year beasts. Wherever it went, the year beasts, regardless of strong or weak, betrayed Fang Yuan and submitted to Feng Jiu Ge.

“Great job!” Even Duke Long felt surprised and joyous at this sight.



Previously, Feng Jiu Ge had been using destiny song mainly to maintain the battlefield and was unable to use other methods. Now that there was a chance, he immediately showed his abundant methods.

Duke Long once again neared Myriad Year Flying Warship and used killer moves like world shaking dragon hammer alternately, destroying daybreak swords. Cracks spread in Myriad Year Flying Warship and large numbers of Gu worms died instantly.

Fang Yuan was forced to retreat again and again, he had to use all his strength to repair Myriad Year Flying Warship while also blocking Duke Long and Feng Jiu Ge's joint attacks.

"It is our turn to counterattack!" Prince Feng Xian led the wave of counterattack.

A sharp phoenix cry resounded, his whole body transformed into a phoenix. He spread his wings and flew, fire burned everywhere he went and turned into a sea of fire.

Bai Cang Shui attacked almost at the same time from the other end of the defensive line, pale towering waves shot out.

Jun Shen Guang was like a meteor as he moved across the battlefield.

Zhou Xiong Xin was accompanied by fierce information path tigers. Vortex Space Boy and Ye Qiao Zi attacked together. Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi once again used sitting and eating the mountain empty against the enemy Immortal Gu Houses.

Previously, because of Duke Long's might, the three regions' Gu Immortals were all withdrawn inside the Immortal Gu Houses.

Facing Heavenly Court's wave of counterattacks, Calamity Luck Altar, Dragon Palace, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, and other Immortal Gu Houses were unable to resist and retreated while fighting.

Heavenly Court's side continued to push with Heaven Overseeing Tower and Demon Judgment Board as the cores, continuously reducing the movement area of the three regions' Gu Immortals.

Qin Ding Ling also flew out of Demon Judgment Board and used all kinds of luck path methods to amplify her side's offenses to the maximum degree. After all, the enemy Gu Immortals were hiding inside Immortal Gu Houses, they could not attack casually and had to use the Immortal Gu Houses' methods.

The three regions' Gu Immortals were forced to retreat again and again, their conditions were already bad because of fate vanquish. Most of the Gu Immortals had to concentrate on repairing the Immortal Gu Houses, they could only endure the beating passively.

With no alternatives, Mao Li Qiu, Wu Yong, and some others took the risk to fly out of the Immortal Gu Houses and fought Heavenly Court's side to strive for precious time for the repair of the Immortal Gu Houses.

"Hold on! If we can't hold on now, leaving Heavenly Court will only be wishful thinking."

"Be careful of Heaven Overseeing Tower, especially fate vanquish!"

"How is Fang Yuan's situation? Only he can resist fate vanquish."

Like in the previous life, the immortals entrusted their hopes to Fang Yuan once again.

Despite many of the Gu Immortals hating Fang Yuan, the current situation forced them to rely on him.

But what disappointed the immortals was that Fang Yuan's situation was also similarly bad.

He was being pincer-attacked by Feng Jiu Ge and Duke Long, he was barely resisting the attacks with the help of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

The killer move fate vanquish with fate Gu as the core had no effect on Fang Yuan. But Feng Jiu Ge's destiny song that was only rank eight was of an even higher plane, it not only included fate but also contained luck.

Luck was naturally effective against Fang Yuan. Before this, Fang Yuan had used luck path methods many times to help in his cultivation.

Destiny song was effective against Fang Yuan, greatly weakening him, almost offsetting the amplification from heroes among people.

On the contrary, Duke Long could not enjoy heroes among people but he was empowered by heavenly dragon's last stand, triple qi retraction, and destiny song, increasing his battle strength to an unimaginably shocking level.

With Duke Long attacking and Feng Jiu Ge supporting him, Fang Yuan was unable to take them head-on and had to retreat again and again.

"Heavenly Court cannot be defeated!" Duke Long's punches and kicks exploded the air as they landed on Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was like a small raft in a storm, it was sent flying and crashed on the ground.

"Fang Yuan, here's another move for you." Duke Long charged down like a meteor, wanting to collide directly.

Fang Yuan looked at the sky and snorted, golden lights shone around Myriad Year Flying Warship as the Twelve Zodiac battle formation separated and transformed into a grey stone giant.

The giant stood on Heavenly Court's ground and waved its hands, attacking Duke Long head-on.

Boom!

An explosion rang, Duke Long collided with the giant. Killer moves clashed, creating a powerful explosion.

The terrifying heat wave inflated like a giant balloon before bursting on the spot.

Tornadoes and shock waves engulfed everything, Fang Yuan and the almost crumbling Myriad Year Flying Warship retreated smoothly using this propulsion force.

Whoosh.

Wind roared as Duke Long's monstrously tall figure suddenly appeared behind Fang Yuan.

Immortal killer move — World Shaking Dragon Hammer!

Fang Yuan's pupils shrunk rapidly, he did not have the time to even turn around as he activated reverse flow protection seal.

Rumble!

Reverse flow protection seal finally reached its limits and broke apart.

Fang Yuan suffered Duke Long's attack, although he had transformed into the immemorial year monkey, his back was almost pierced.

The enormous force sent Fang Yuan flying. After he fell to the ground, his body was dragged along the ground, leaving behind a long trail of blood and only stopping after crashing through three Immortal Gu Houses.

Duke Long gave a muffled groan, his body was shaking. Reverse flow protection seal reflected external attacks, the strength he struck Fang Yuan was also reflected to him in full, he had to suffer an even more serious impact than Fang Yuan. After all, Fang Yuan had reverse flow protection seal to weaken the strength of the attack as well as the powerful body of the immemorial year monkey.

Duke Long panted heavily, he was not able to move immediately and concentrated on healing his wounds quickly.

At the edge of the battlefield, the immortal treasury was already looted clean by Spectral Soul and his servants, but they had yet to find the Door of Life and Death.

“Strange, the Door of Life and Death was clearly placed here.” Fairy Zi Wei frowned.

“Looks like Duke Long has hidden many things from you.” Spectral Soul said coldly. The Door of Life and Death was a secluded domain of heaven and earth and contained countless souls. Its importance to Spectral Soul was huge, but unfortunately, they could not find it.

“Master, Fang Yuan is not able to hold on, do we give him a hand to maintain the stalemate and get more time for ourselves?” Old Man Zheng Yuan asked.

Spectral Soul gazed at the battlefield and when he saw Fang Yuan’s position, he suddenly smiled: “There is no hurry, there is still a venerable who has not made a move yet.”

Fang Yuan was collapsed in his own pool of blood in front of Embroidered Tower.

Three blood skins of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable were sewn in the air. Blown by the violent winds of the battlefield, these three blood skins actually loosened and waved around like banners.

In an instant, Fang Yuan sniffed a dense, fishy stench of blood!

# Chapter 1954 - Pursue — Freedom!

## 1954 Pursue — Freedom!

Fang Yuan's whole body was bathed in blood and filled with injuries. He snorted coldly and stood up, looking at Embroidered Tower in front of him.

Embroidered Tower was originally a mortal object that was left by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable to his disciple Star Constellation as her dowry. But according to the customs back then, its symbolic meaning was much greater. Later, when Star Constellation became Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, she turned Embroidered Tower into an Immortal Gu House that had extremely mystical powers.

Over a million years ago, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable invaded Heavenly Court. He stormed through Heavenly Court, passing Immortal Emperor Court, Hidden Space Pavilion, Sumeru Lake, Eternal Sand Cave, Million Heavenly King Gallery, Embroidered Tower, Central Great Hall, and finally stopping at Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable suffered some loss when he reached Embroidered Tower, Embroidered Tower used its trump card method — Dao Embroidery. Seven embroidery needles flew out elegantly. Reckless Savage Demon Venerable was forced to discard three pieces of his skin before he was able to go past it.

These three bloody skins were sewn into the air by countless dao mark threads.

After that, Embroidered Tower's damage could not be repaired. And later, it was used to attack Spectral Soul in Yi Tian Mountain, the new damage added to the previous ones. This damage ruined Embroidered Tower and it could not be of any use right now.

Not only Fang Yuan, even Duke Long and other Gu Immortals saw the movement of the three bloody skins in the air above Embroidered Tower!

They looked like three bloody banners, fluttering savagely in the wind.

The left banner had a bird drawn on it, the bird had six legs but no wings.

The middle bloody banner had a drawing of a beast which was getting increasingly clearer. It opened its mouth but had no teeth.

The right bloody skin had a fish, it grew increasingly vivid and lifelike but it was clear that it had no gills.

Blood skins made wild sounds like an ancient gale that crossed a million years and roared in people's ears. Or like a grand army that went to battle, clashes and collisions of steel and horses resounded!

The blood banners' fluttering continued to amplify in commotion, they were like volcanoes that had been suppressed for countless years or like wild beasts that had accumulated their energy and was about to strike their prey!

Roar—!

The wild beasts roared.

They violently broke the dao mark threads that bound them, and turned into three blood red lights that landed around Fang Yuan.

Three beastly bizarre and resounding roars sounded and the blood red light dissipated, revealing three enormous beasts.

A glowing monstrous yellow bird that was like a small mountain, its six legs were thick and rough, its beak was hard and long, but it had no wings.

An azure-blue leopard with a big belly was sprawled on the ground, it kept on yawning and one could see it did not have even a single tooth.

And a fish with dark green scales was floating in the air, its head was raised high and its mouth was closed tightly. There was no trace of gills next to its eyes. The huge fish was motionless like a jade statue.

The immortals were shaken, even Duke Long's expression turned solemn as he halted his attacks.

“There is an abnormality in the three bloody skins left by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable!”

“These three monsters have such shocking auras.”

“Did Fang Yuan trigger a venerable's method?”

“Wait a second, these three monsters, why do they resemble those three recorded in *The Legends of Ren Zu*?”

*The Legends of Ren Zu*, chapter four states —

Ren Zu wandered alone on the vast land, his hair was disheveled and he seemed to have lost his mind: at times, he wailed, at times, he sat down in a daze, and at times, he laughed like a fool.

Fate Gu's manipulation had separated him from his children, he also lost wealth Gu, Ren Zu was forced into a state of madness.

“Who am I? Where am I? What am I doing?” Ren Zu was at a loss and went crazy again.

One morning, a group of birds ran past Ren Zu.

These birds did not have wings, their six legs moved alternately as they ran on the ground, raising clouds of dust in their path.

Ren Zu jumped with joy when he saw these birds.



“So I am a bird!” He also spread his legs and ran wildly, joining the bird group.

The birds growled strangely towards Ren Zu: “You are a human, you use two legs to walk, you are not a bird. Leave, don’t disturb us, we are pursuing freedom Gu, we want to retrieve our freedom.”

Ren Zu asked: “Why are you all searching for freedom Gu?”

The birds said with a heavy tone: “We once possessed freedom Gu, but we did not realize that. Only after losing it, we found that we no longer had wings and could not fly anymore. When we regain freedom, we will be able to spread our wings and soar to the sky again.”

Ren Zu realized: “I understand, humans also need freedom. If humans don’t have freedom, they will be like birds who have lost their wings.”

“Right! I remember now!” Ren Zu clapped and laughed madly: “I also need to search for freedom to get rid of fate’s shackles. After that, I can go wherever I want to go, and be with whomever I want to be forever.”

The birds casted a strange look at Ren Zu: “Oh human, how can you have such preposterous thoughts?”

“Look at us, how can birds not have wings? So, chasing after freedom is part of our duty.”

“But you humans are destined to be alone, all gatherings will end up in separation. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies.”

Ren Zu scratched his head, puzzled: “Is that how it works?”

The birds left behind their last words: “Oh human, let us give you some sincere advice. If you obtain freedom in the future, you must cherish it, don’t be like us and let go. Don’t let freedom Gu fly away, otherwise you will regret it.”

After Ren Zu parted ways with the birds, he slowly forgot his identity and goals once again.

One afternoon, a leap of blue leopards passed by him.

The insane Ren Zu saw the group of leopards and shouted in joy: “So I am a leopard.”

Ren Zu rushed into the group.

But the leopards pushed him away and shouted: “You are a human, not a leopard. You use two legs to walk, while we have four legs. Leave, don’t disturb us. We are pursuing freedom Gu, we want to retrieve our freedom.”

Ren Zu asked: “Why are you searching for freedom Gu?”

The blue leopards looked depressed: “Sigh, we once possessed freedom Gu, but we did not realize it. Only after losing it, we found that we no longer had teeth and could not bite and tear apart our prey. When we regain freedom, we will be able to eat happily again.”

Ren Zu realized: “I understand, humans also need freedom. If humans don’t have freedom, they will be like beasts with no teeth.”

“Right!” Ren Zu clapped and laughed madly: “I need to search for freedom to get rid of fate’s shackles. I will possess countless delicacies and wines, endless wealth, and all kinds of comfortable and beautiful clothes.”

The blue leopards were stunned before laughing loudly as they mocked Ren Zu: “Oh human, how can you have such preposterous thoughts?”

“Look at us, how can beasts not have fangs or claws? So, chasing after freedom is part of our duty.”

“But you humans were born with empty hands and will pass away with nothing. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies.”

Ren Zu scratched his head, unsatisfied: “Is that how it works?”

The leopards left behind their final words: “Oh human, let us give you some sincere advice. If you obtain freedom in the future, you must cherish it, don’t be like us and let go. Don’t let freedom Gu fly away, otherwise you will regret it.”

After Ren Zu parted ways with the leopards, he slowly forgot his identity and goals once again.

One evening, a school of fish swam past him.

Ren Zu saw the fish and shouted in joy: “So I am a fish.”

Ren Zu joined the fish group and tried to swim like them.

There was a commotion in the fish group as they pushed Ren Zu away and shouted: “You are a human, not a fish. You use two legs to walk, while we have no legs. Leave, don’t disturb us. We are pursuing freedom Gu, we want to retrieve our freedom.”

Ren Zu asked: “Why are you searching for freedom Gu?”

The fish sighed: “We once possessed freedom Gu, but we did not realize that. Only after losing it, we found that we no longer had gills and could not breathe in the water again. When we regain freedom, we will be able to swim in the water again.”

Ren Zu realized: “I understand, humans also need freedom. If humans don’t have freedom, they will be like fish with no gills and cannot breathe.”

“Right!” Ren Zu clapped and laughed madly: “I need to search for freedom to get rid of fate’s shackles. I will breathe freely and live on forever, I want eternal life!”

The fish sneered: “Oh human, how can you have such preposterous thoughts?”

“Look at us, a fish must have gills, so chasing after freedom is part of our duty.”

“But you humans are destined to have no relation with eternal life, you will die of old age and illnesses. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies.”

Ren Zu frowned, feeling irritated: “Is that how it works?”

The fishes left behind their final words: “Oh human, let us give you some sincere advice. If you obtain freedom in the future, you must cherish it, don’t be like us and let go. Don’t let freedom Gu fly away, otherwise you will regret it.”

After Ren Zu parted ways with the fishes, he slowly forgot the advice of the birds, leopards, and the fish.

“I am a human, I need to pursue freedom!”

“I need to get rid of the shackles of fate, I want to live forever with my loved ones, I want to enjoy life with enough wealth, I want to live on forever.”

Many beings that walked past Ren Zu heard him, they shook their heads and stayed away from him.

“Let’s quickly leave, he is Ren Zu and he is talking nonsense again.”

“He has already gone mad completely.”

“How could he dare to have such thoughts?”

One day, freedom Gu flew towards Ren Zu on its own accord.

Ren Zu was joyous as he grabbed it.

“Oh freedom, I finally obtained freedom.” Ren Zu was extremely happy but also felt puzzled as he asked freedom Gu: “This is really strange, the wingless birds are pursuing you, the toothless beasts are pursuing you, the gill-less fish are pursuing you, but you flew to me, what is going on here?”

Freedom Gu replied: “I didn’t fly to you, human, you once used attitude Gu to bully me, used love to bind me, and used wealth to bribe me. I loathe and hate you! I flew over because I was attracted by the cognition Gu on you.”

Cognition Gu floated out of Ren Zu’s body and explained with a smile: “Ren Zu, because you have gone mad, you are thinking deliriously all the time. A human that desires companionship forever, a human who has an extravagant hope of living a life with no worries, a human who pursues eternal life; what else can this be other than a lunatic?”

Freedom Gu sighed: “Freedom of cognition is the greatest freedom. These delirious thoughts can strengthen me. Ren Zu, although you captured me, I will never work for you. Release me now!”

Ren Zu shook his head and grasped even tighter: “Freedom Gu, I will not let you go.”

Freedom Gu sneered: “Then prepare yourself, don’t collapse from the pressure.”

The moment it finished speaking, responsibility Gu flew over, pressing on Ren Zu’s shoulder.

“Heavy, so heavy!” Ren Zu almost bent over from the pressure.

Cognition Gu sighed: “Freedom and responsibility coexist, oh Ren Zu, you want to obtain freedom so you need to shoulder the responsibility. At least, you need to be responsible for yourself.”

Ren Zu clenched his teeth and persevered, sweat flowed down his body like a river, soon, he knelt down on the ground.

He saw spider webs again.

Fate Gu’s spider silk wrapped around his whole body. Ren Zu was barely shouldering the heavy responsibility and had no strength to break free from the spider silk’s bindings.

Fate Gu's spider silk constricted tightly, forming blood wounds everywhere on Ren Zu's body.

Ren Zu shouted: "What is going on?"

Cognition Gu explained: "Oh human, the more freedom you experience, the more you will feel the restriction around you."

Freedom Gu laughed: "Just let me go, the longer you hold on to me, the more spider silk will bind you, the binding will become tighter and will even constrict you to death!"

Ren Zu shook his head: "No, I won't let go, oh freedom Gu, I must have you!"

Countless spider silk pierced into Ren Zu's flesh, Ren Zu howled in pain and rolled on the ground but did not let go.

"Hahaha!" Ren Zu began laughing foolishly again: "I can sense a Gu far away. Just this feeling alone makes me happy and satisfied."

Cognition Gu admitted frankly: "That is natural. Whoever obtains freedom Gu will also be able to sense the location of happiness Gu."

Ren Zu continued to persevere, he cried in pain at times and laughed happily at other times. The spider silk constricted tightly, tearing into his bones and leaving deep marks on them, but Ren Zu still did not loosen his hands.

In the end, he fainted from the pain.

After a long time, he slowly woke up.

Fate Gu's spider silk was no longer constricting him, responsibility Gu also did not exert heavy pressure, while cognition Gu had disappeared.

"Wait, what about freedom Gu?" Ren Zu did not sense freedom Gu's existence, and in his moment of panic, he opened his hands.

The moment a gap appeared, freedom Gu flew away and left Ren Zu behind.

Humans often did not understand freedom when they possessed it, only after losing it, they would come to a sudden realization.

Ren Zu was stunned when he saw freedom Gu flying away, he remembered the advice of the birds, leopards, and fish, he felt extremely regretful.

He tore out his hair painfully and rolled on the ground.

“I am better off dead.” Ren Zu was overwhelmed with grief: “I would rather lose love, I would rather lose my life, I don’t want to lose freedom!”

# **Chapter 1955 - Crucial Person at the Crucial Time**

## **1955 Crucial Person at the Crucial Time**

In Heavenly Court's battlefield, be they enemies or allies, everyone's gazes were gathered at one place!

Fang Yuan looked around him, he was surrounded by the three giant monsters. But the three giant monsters did not do anything to him, they were instead guarding him and looking at the surroundings with hostility, their affiliation could be seen with one glance.

"Reckless Savage Demon Venerable..." Fang Yuan's expression was one of shock.

"Even if Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's method is helping you, you will still be defeated!!" Duke Long shouted, his voice resounding throughout the surroundings. He swooped down from the air like a red meteor, his determination did not waver even in front of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's method — He was going to exterminate all demons, he would quell all opposition in the world!

Immortal killer move — Qi Breath Mountain.

Duke Long's palms aimed at Fang Yuan from afar and pushed.



Rumble!

With a loud sound, a giant qi mountain pressed down towards Fang Yuan and the three monsters.

Through triple qi retraction, Duke Long had a massive amount of qi path dao marks. Right now, all his qi path killer moves like qi breath mountain had their power amplified by countless times.

This qi mountain was much larger than before, its composition was also extremely solid. Be it in quality or quantity, both had a breakthrough!

Seeing this scene, whether it was Wu Yong, Bing Sai Chuan or others, they all revealed solemn expressions.

Just this qi breath mountain was difficult to resist, the best method was to dodge. But after qi breath mountain, there was a monstrous expert like Duke Long who could block all escape routes!

Fang Yuan clenched his teeth and was about to move.

But right at this moment, one of the three monsters transformed from the blood skins, the giant blue leopard, suddenly opened its mouth and took a deep breath.

Boom.

The whole qi breath mountain shrank rapidly and was absorbed by some formless force into the blue leopard's belly!

The immortals were given a great shock, food path cultivator Zhao Shan He's pupils shrank as he saw signs of food path from the blue leopard's body.

Even Duke Long was stunned.

This powerful qi breath mountain was actually broken this directly.

After the blue leopard swallowed the qi breath mountain, its shriveled belly bulged by ten percent. Its eyes glistened as it stared at Duke Long with a chilling gaze like it was looking at a luxurious dinner!

Duke Long was utterly fearless, the three monsters might be unfathomable, but he still charged towards Fang Yuan. His speed even increased, bursting the air and producing sonic booms.

Fang Yuan was fully prepared for combat when one of the three monsters, the green fish, moved.

It only waved its tail slightly when it appeared before Duke Long all of a sudden. Its speed was so fast that it looked like instant teleportation, but it did not feel abrupt at all, everything happened smoothly and fluidly!

Duke Long's field of vision had been wide a second ago, but now, his whole sight was filled with the enormous body of the fish monster.

The fish monster slammed its head fiercely.

Boom!

The monster's head directly sent Duke Long flying with speed that was faster than earlier when he arrived.

He possessed transformation path and qi path dao marks, he was unprecedentedly strong. After using triple qi retraction several times, he did not even need nine dragons protection to guard against ordinary rank eight attacks! But when he knocked into the fish monster's head, he felt like he had used his bare fist to strike a boulder!

In an instant, all the bones in Duke Long's body shattered, his internal organs almost burst from the force, there were massive amounts of internal and external bleeding.

"Triple qi retraction!" Duke Long shouted, his sharply declining qi surged immediately.

Duke Long immediately activated qi path healing methods, and with shocking speed, his injuries recovered in a few breaths of time.

But because he chose to heal himself, he let himself crash through all the way, directly crashing into the boundary of Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court was a shared grotto-heaven, its limits were the aperture walls. Duke Long crashed into the aperture walls, the enormous force that still remained in his body poured into the aperture walls in the sky.

The immortals heard a loud collision, then they saw several cracks suddenly appearing in the sky behind Duke Long before quickly spreading like a spider web.

The immortals could not help but draw in sharp breaths.

The strength of the fish monster's attack was simply unimaginable! Even Duke Long seemed to be unable to resist it.

And the fish monster was only an arrangement left behind by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, it had already existed for over a million years but it still had such might.

If so, how much strength did Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, who left this method, have?

Simply unimaginable!

The immortals recalled the evaluation about Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, he was publicly recognized as the venerable with the highest physical strength.

And now they saw this sight, it was truly so!

“This is Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's method!”

“We have not lost yet, we can still fight.”

“Lord Duke Long has returned, his injuries have recovered and his aura has become even stronger!”

“What are you afraid of? We have the fully repaired fate Gu, the heavenly fate sides with us!”

The three regions’ Gu Immortals felt shocked and exulted at the unexpected reinforcements of three powerful beings, and their morale soared. Heavenly Court’s immortals similarly had a high morale, they had complete confidence in fate Gu and Duke Long.

Duke Long once again swooped in and fought with the three monsters. But he learned his lesson this time and prioritized using qi path’s long range attacks, avoiding close combat.

These three giant monsters’ strength was truly horrifying, even Duke Long did not want to be sent flying so miserably again.

His battle tactic was wise, the three giant monsters had terrifying strength but they had almost no methods.

After exchanging a dozen or so moves, Duke Long got a clearer understanding of them.

The six legged yellow bird’s speed was extremely fast and could shoot out yellow lightning from its mouth, but it was unable to fly. Its beak was extremely hard and sharp, even able to pierce through Immortal Gu Houses.

The green fish monster could float around with speed that was akin to teleportation of space path, it appeared extremely seamlessly and caught enemies off-guard. It could recover from any attacks almost instantaneously. Its strongest aspect was this — a horrifying regeneration rate that was much stronger than Duke Long using his qi path healing methods. But it had a weakness, its attack was fierce but the tempo was slow, the frequency of attacks was also quite low. After attacking once, it would be still for a while before it could attack again.

As for the toothless blue leopard, it could fly by stepping on air. Its strongest method was to devour all attacks. Not only this, it could even devour the heroes among people killer move from Gu Immortals' bodies. This sight made Zhao Shan He feel dazzled. His food path methods were far from being able to devour amplifications, this contained food path profundities that he did not possess. If he could comprehend this, his enlightenment of food path would definitely progress one step further!

At the same time, the toothless blue leopard's greatest weakness was also this almost innate devouring ability. Every time it devoured, its belly would bulge. After Duke Long and others intentionally fed it various attacks, the toothless blue leopard's belly had become round and full, it started having trouble moving.

However, even though Heavenly Court's side had probed the three monsters' details, they still could not defend against them and were gradually falling into a disadvantage.

The three monsters had flaws, their strengths and weaknesses were extremely conspicuous. But no one dared to block their brutish rampage.

Adding in Fang Yuan, Wu Yong, Bing Sai Chuan, Shen Cong Sheng, Song Qi Yuan, and the rest supporting from the side, as well as restraining and getting rid of Heavenly Court's various methods, Heavenly Court's side was in a passive situation.

The three monsters' target was Heaven Overseeing Tower, they seemed to have an enormous hatred towards fate Gu.

Heaven Overseeing Tower did not dare to confront the three monsters' power, it could only retreat constantly. To defend Heaven Overseeing Tower, Duke Long shouldered huge pressure and was heavily injured time and time again, retreating to heal his injuries before joining the battle again. His purple hair was swaying wildly, his eyes were bloodshot, his whole body was bathed in blood that dyed his scales completely! His fighting spirit kept on rising, it had not fallen once.

Both sides fought around the three monsters and Heaven Overseeing Tower. The attacks went back and forth, it was highly intense. The battle kept on moving, wherever it went, the aftermath of the terrifying killer moves destroyed everything, creating countless ruins. The great Heavenly Court that was managed meticulously by Gu Immortals was heavily damaged from this battle.

Just as the three regions' Gu Immortals were firmly holding onto the upper hand, Heaven Overseeing Tower suddenly stopped.

At the next moment, immortal killer move fate vanquish burst out again.

“Careful!” Wu Yong shouted. The three regions' Gu Immortals were already on guard and reacted quickly.

After the white light dissipated, explosions resounded in Heavenly Court battlefield once again as the battle resumed.

But this time, Heavenly Court held the momentum. The three regions' Gu Immortals could only defend while repairing the Immortal Gu Houses' and their own injuries.

The three regions' Gu Immortals gradually found their footing. Compared to the first fate vanquish attack, their situation was much better. The reason was that they had three giant monsters to rely on.

The giant monsters rampaged around the battlefield, under their attacks, Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were gradually dragged into a stalemate before being suppressed by the three regions' Gu Immortals again.

At this time, Heaven Overseeing Tower activated fate vanquish again.

After this happened over and over again, the whole of Heavenly Court was filled with ruins.

The three monsters' aura had clearly fallen, the Gu Immortals' offense was also not as fierce as before. They were at a point where they had to consider the issue of immortal essence expenditure.

“Damn it, the situation is becoming increasingly bad.” Wu Yong’s face was solemn, the three monsters were weakening from the repeated devastation of fate vanquish

“Back then, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable failed in his invasion of Heavenly Court, these three giant monsters are only arrangements left by him, they naturally won’t be able to resist the power of fate vanquish!” Bing Sai Chuan’s heart was turning cold.

If the three regions’ Gu Immortals failed to obtain a breakthrough when the three monsters were still active, they would definitely suffer a miserable and disastrous defeat after that.

This was something extremely obvious!

But Heavenly Court’s side used the wisest battle tactic. They moved continuously while avoiding the enemy’s attacks, making the enemy expend more energy. Especially, when fate vanquish activated, the advantage the three regions’ Gu Immortals obtained with difficulty turned into nothing, everything went back to square one.

And because they had Demon Judgment Board and Heaven Overseeing Tower, there was always a base camp around the front lines. The moment the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals faced danger, they could hide inside, thus there were no casualties. Naturally, this was also because the offense had weakened as both sides were beginning to conserve immortal essence.

“Master, the situation does not look good. Even Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s method cannot change the outcome. The current Heavenly Court has an intact fate Gu after all.” Far away, Fairy Zi Wei was analyzing coolly.

Spectral Soul had already recovered his human form but his body was translucent. He held his hands behind his back as he observed the battlefield before glancing at the far away Imperfection Regret Pavilion.

Inside Imperfection Regret Pavilion, the two venerables’ silhouettes were still playing chess.

The chessboard was already filled with chess pieces, but the mysterious thing was whenever the venerable silhouette put down a piece, there would always be another free spot.

However, compared to before, the frequency of the two venerables placing the chess pieces had reduced by a lot.

Star Constellation's silhouette held a chess piece and looked at the chessboard before glancing towards Spectral Soul's direction.

"Are you okay with this? Spectral Soul stole a portion of the results of our game." Star Constellation's silhouette said.

Limitless' silhouette laughed: "Since he could get free and even steal our results, this is his own capability. These gains will help him, I am looking forward to the day when he can reach the realm that we were unable to reach."

Star Constellation's silhouette was silent for a while before sighing: "You are truly a pure Dao pursuer."

"Unfortunately, heaven and earth is a cage that stopped me from pursuing my Dao." Limitless' silhouette said: "Which is why I want to pursue freedom."

Star Constellation's silhouette immediately refuted: "Your freedom, however, will break this cage. And we both know what kind of scenery exists outside this cage!"

Limitless' silhouette shook his head: "Our positions are different, saying anything else is of no benefit."

His silhouette was becoming increasingly illusory right now, only his eyes were still bright and letting out sharp lights. Limitless' silhouette held a chess piece and looked at the chessboard for a long while, but he did not place the piece.

This match had already reached the most crucial point.



On the chessboard, Limitless' silhouette's situation was very bad, he was greatly disadvantaged. His pieces were surrounded from every direction by Star Constellation's silhouette's chess pieces, she had an obvious superiority.

Even though it was because of Heavenly Court's accumulations, it was enough for Limitless' silhouette to see the strength of his opponent, Star Constellation.

Star Constellation's will was resisting heaven's will on one hand, while also making arrangements throughout the five regions, she thought of countless aspects, her plans spanned across the past and present, throughout the universe. Forget about the arrangements that made three venerables' invasions fail, just look at the current situation, Spectral Soul had regained freedom but did not obtain the Door of Life and Death.

This was probably Star Constellation's ploy, even Fairy Zi Wei was in the dark, which was not likely to happen with just Duke Long's scheming ability.

Indeed, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was worthy of being the only wisdom path venerable in history!

However, Limitless' silhouette had not lost yet. His main chess pieces were all gathered together, the opponent could hardly defeat them. A forceful attack would definitely result in heavy losses, and it would also give the initiative to Limitless' silhouette instead.

But for Limitless' silhouette to counterattack and break through by himself, he was still lacking some strength. The whole encirclement was a dense congregation of the plans of Star Constellation's silhouette, if Limitless' silhouette attacked rashly, he would fall into a trap.

Thus, Limitless' silhouette could only choose to defend while waiting for reinforcement.

This game between two venerables that had started in the Olden Antiquity Era and continued for a million years, it had finally welcomed the most

crucial moment!

Indeed, Limitless' silhouette still had reinforcements.

He had waited for a million years for this aid, both sides were aware of it.

“Now, we have to see the quality of our pieces.” Star Constellation's silhouette swept her gaze through the battlefield, when it stopped at Fang Yuan's body, her gaze revealed complicated expressions.

Limitless' silhouette was similarly looking in the same direction, mumbling: “Oh Fang Yuan, you have been like this since the start. You... how long are you planning to conceal your abilities?”

# **Chapter 1956 - A Man Must Be Cool!**

## **1956 A Man Must Be Cool!**

Fang Yuan had all along been fighting on the front lines.

On one hand, he had been fighting with Duke Long and the rest, on the other hand, he kept on maintaining a cold and indifferent expression while pondering about the overall situation.

But ever since Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's method activated, he had an extra voice resounding in his ears.

“Have a good look, junior! The three monsters in front of you were transformed from my three immortal moves. These three immortal moves were created from the insights I gained after reading ‘Pursuing Freedom’ in *The Legends of Ren Zuo*, they were all created to pursue freedom.”

“First move — Thunder Rush Yellow Bird Transformation, it uses attitude Gu as the core. Have you ever envied birds and wanted to fly freely in the sky? However, we humans are restricted since birth, we don't have wings, why even talk about flying? But an even crueller situation is like the wingless birds, they already experienced the wonderful feeling of flying but they lost their wings. No matter who you are, where you are, you will face all sorts of limitations. If we are unable to change, unable to break away

from all these, we will be like wingless birds, pursuing freedom but unable to catch it, what should we do then?"

"This is the core concept of this move, remember it, junior. Even if we face the strictest restrictions and are unable to pursue freedom, we still have a kind of freedom, we can freely choose what kind of attitude we use to face the cruel reality. Remember, your attitude is very important!"

"Second move — Devouring Blue Leopard Transformation, it uses mutation Gu as the core. Freedom is not a bad thing, but it is also not a good thing either. It can make you better and can also make you worse, just like the effect of mutation Gu. The fierce beast lacks teeth, but does that mean it can't live on? If it does not have the freedom to bite, what's the harm in devouring the food? Maybe it can even train your digestive system to become stronger."

"Third move — Internal Breathing Green Fish Transformation, it uses adaptation Gu as the core. Compared to it, how ugly does the world seem? We are assaulted by cruel facts, we are tormented by pain and hopelessness. When we are walking our respective paths, we will be covered in bruises sometimes, even being exposed with nowhere to escape. Humans change, the world is also going through countless changes, if we cannot keep up with the changes of time, we will be left behind by the whole world. Therefore, adaptation is key. If you don't have gills, use your mouth to breathe; if you don't even have a mouth, then create a self-circulating internal respiratory system. Even if that means you have to walk slowly, even if you become nothing like a human in the end."

The voice was powerful and forceful as it explained the origins and details of the three monsters. These monsters were transformed from three transformation path killer moves left behind by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable.

After Fang Yuan triggered Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's method, this voice had peculiarly accompanied Fang Yuan, but no one else could detect it.

“Is this Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s voice?” Just as Fang Yuan was guessing, the voice changed.

From the stable and serious voice to a lively and flippant tone.

“Hey, you have already spoken so much, it’s my turn, it’s my turn!”

“Haha, kid, no matter who you are, you are definitely an otherworldly demon. Because only an otherworldly demon has hope of destroying fate Gu. So, when I left behind this true inheritance back then, I made it so that only an otherworldly demon can inherit it.”

“But besides this, you still need to possess at least one of three Gu worms – attitude Gu, mutation Gu, and adaptation Gu. These three Gu worms correspond to three killer moves that can trigger my killer moves. When you arrive in the sky above Embroidered Tower, you can summon the giant monsters transformed by the killer moves and they shall be your strongest helping hand.”

“Use them however you please, kill or loot if you like, or help people if you wish to. Of course, the best use would be to destroy fate Gu because seeing it really annoys me. Hahaha!”

“Of course, if you can trigger all three moves, then you can merge them into one move! This is a super, super, super powerful killer move that I created with great effort!”

“Once you grasp this move, you can use your human form to possess all the advantages of the three moves, moreover, there is no weakness in any aspect. That means, you will be like the wingless bird, moving as fast as lightning and shooting out lightning. You will also be like the gill-less fish, possessing extremely powerful regeneration ability. You will be like the toothless beast as well, devouring everything and storing them into your stomach.”

“Are you stupefied? Isn’t it super amazing? Hahaha, come, bow before me!”

The flippant male voice spoke until here, when it seemed like it was kicked out and was replaced by the previous solemn male voice.

“The final combination move is called incomplete freedom transformation, it has three cores – Attitude, Mutation, and Adaptation. It has numerous steps and is highly complicated. Although you can use the three monsters to merge them into one, which is much easier than you using them independently, I still ask you to not attempt it lightly. Because this move’s effect works on your body, if it fails, you will be heavily injured at best, or even die in severe cases. Bear this in mind, bear this in mind!”

The heavy and solemn voice spoke earnestly, but soon, the previous flippant voice replaced it.

“Please, what you said is not important at all! Kid, let me tell you the important point! Once you activate this move successfully, you will have the strength to suppress all immemorial desolate plants and immemorial desolate beasts, the three monsters’ methods will become your innate abilities. You will become a human shaped beast that can battle through heaven and earth, rampaging around all over the world unhindered! You will immediately possess quasi venerable battle strength!”

“Of course, if you meet an old venerable like me, you will still kneel in the end.”

“But these are not the most important points. There is one most crucial point, you must remember it.”

Fang Yuan could not help but concentrate as he heard this.

He then heard that flippant and lively voice continue: “The most important part of the most important thing is once you activate this move, the three monsters will combine into a bloody cape and will hang on your back. This cape is truly... super cool! Junior, you must try it, it is really too stunning, you absolutely won’t regret it!”

Fang Yuan was speechless.

Following the voice, all kinds of information flowed in his mind, allowing him to understand all the contents of the three killer moves clearly.

Different from what the voice described, these three killer moves and the combination move were not complex at all and their steps were also not numerous.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable lived in the Olden Antiquity Era after all, Gu cultivation styles were not overwhelming and were crude back then, unlike the present age's delicate complexity.

It was not difficult to master these killer moves, especially for Fang Yuan who possessed deep wisdom path attainment.

“So, I should combine it like this...” Fang Yuan's thoughts finished as he suddenly retreated and activated a killer move.

In an instant, the three monsters that were fighting at the front lines turned into three light rays – yellow, blue, green – and entered Fang Yuan's body.

Such a strange change caught both sides unprepared.

The three lights covered Fang Yuan, emitting a majestic aura that spread in all directions and repelled all beings and objects.

The three lights merged quickly and turned blood red.

The blood red light suddenly condensed into one and covered Fang Yuan's back, turning into a large blood red cape.

The cape fluttered with the wind like a war banner; the fluttering sounds echoed in every person's ears.

“What change occurred again?”

“It seems like Fang Yuan inherited Reckless Savage true inheritance?!”

Both allies and enemies were shocked once again.

Looking at this familiar cape, inside Imperfection Regret Pavilion, Star Constellation's silhouette recalled past memories.

A million years ago, a man charged into Heavenly Court.

He walked step by step, the ordinary steps, however, shook the land and sky of Heavenly Court.

He was clothed in beast skin, his body was extremely robust with muscles bursting out. Tattoos covered all the skin on his body, portraying countless beasts and plants of all shapes and sizes, some were vicious beasts, some were smart and exquisite life forms.

The aura he released was as lofty as mountains and as vast as oceans. The Heavenly Court immortals only took one look at him and felt a suffocating pressure.

He was wearing a cape. This beast skin cape was extremely wide and was sewn using human skins. It suited a large physique like Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's, if this were an ordinary person, a large portion of the cape would be dragging on the ground.

Every time Reckless Savage Demon Venerable killed a rank eight enemy, he would peel their skin and sew onto the beast skin cape. This was the custom of the beastman race, but Reckless Savage had learned and imitated it in his youth, before he became a venerable.

An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth!

Halfway through Heavenly Court, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable stopped in front of Embroidered Tower.

In the air, Star Constellation's will manifested: "Reckless Savage, you cannot destroy fate Gu. Your strength originates from your fate. It is like how you cannot lift yourself up without relying on other methods."

"Of course I know this." Reckless Savage Demon Venerable laughed.

"Then what did you come for?"



“To fight!” Reckless Savage Demon Venerable raised his head and said it as a matter of fact with a flippant voice.

Star Constellation’s will: “...”

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable continued to laugh: “After becoming venerable and being invincible in the world, I felt an intense loneliness! No one could fight with me, I have killed almost all those variant human rank eights, the old and weak ones that are still alive have all hidden themselves. I also don’t have the interest to find them. Looking at the five regions, only Heavenly Court is somewhat interesting. To protect fate Gu, you guys must have left behind many methods. Even Limitless was stopped by you back then. Come, use all your methods, let us have a match.”

Star Constellation’s will was silent for a long while before entering Embroidered Tower: “This Immortal Gu House in front of you is one of the methods my main body left behind.”

“Roar!” Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s eyes brightened: “If so, I am attacking!”

The battle ended quickly.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable clenched his fists and licked his lips, mumbling unsatisfied: “What is this, after just two or three moves, your Embroidered Tower is almost on the verge of collapse. But the start was pretty good. Relax, I won’t destroy your tower, we are all humans after all.”

“Also, I will leave behind these three bloody skins. This is my inheritance!”

“No matter who, even if it is someone from your Heavenly Court, if they can inherit my inheritance, then it shall belong to them.”

“Treat it as a memento of my visit to Heavenly Court. Don’t dismantle it, hehehe.”

“I am really looking forward to it. I wonder which junior will obtain my inheritance, will they be shaken by my grand strength, or be bowled over by

my incredible thinking?”

“Haha, it naturally is best for this junior to destroy fate Gu. If they can’t do this, I will truly be displeased!”

Star Constellation’s will was silent for a long while before speaking: “So your intention is to destroy fate Gu.”

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable shrugged his shoulders: “That goes without saying. I have left my bloody skins here, if you have the skill, then destroy them! But I will leave you some kind advice, these three bloody skins are already connected with Heavenly Court’s dao marks. If you attack them recklessly, it will be the most direct attack towards Heavenly Court. Unless there is someone who has transformation path attainment rivaling mine, no one will be able to safely dismantle it.”

Star Constellation’s will spoke: “There is a better way for you to destroy fate Gu, be an Immortal Venerable, become the Lord of Heavenly Court and be in contact with fate Gu all the time. I think with your wisdom, you will definitely think of a way to destroy fate Gu.”

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable directly shook his head without even thinking: “I don’t want to!”

Star Constellation’s will frowned: “Why?”

“Because the title of Demon Venerable sounds much cooler than Immortal Venerable!”

Star Constellation’s will: “...”

It was strange, when Reckless Savage Demon Venerable said this reason, it actually gave off a feeling of being a natural fact.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable turned around and looked at himself before waving his arms: “Take a good look!”

“Look at my thighs, they are so sturdy. Look at my arms, they are so muscular and well-defined.”

“This is beauty, this is coolness!”

“And this cape, it is so bloody, it is also created from human skins, how domineering is it!”

Star Constellation’s will was unable to think properly for a moment, it could only respond after a good while: “So, you created this cape not for payback and revenge against variant humans?”

“Of course, there is the secondary reason, but the important thing is still its coolness!”

Star Constellation’s will: “...”

“Oh oh, right. These three bloody skins can combine into one move and its form is a bloody cape. It is quite similar to the one I use now. If there is a junior who wears it in the future, they will definitely be extremely cool beyond belief!”

“Men!” Reckless Savage Demon Venerable raised his arms and bent his elbows, showing his bulging muscles and praising himself: “Must be this cool.”

# Chapter 1957 - Final Showdown

## 1957 Final Showdown

Because of the change in Fang Yuan's body, the fight in the battlefield had paused temporarily.

Duke Long was the first to react.

Immortal killer move — Spiraling Dragon Fang!

Fang Yuan's condition was unknown, the three monsters actually transformed into a blood-soaked cape that hung on his back. Duke Long did not dare to be overconfident, he still had apprehension from the attacks of the three monsters, so he used a long range attack, spiraling dragon fangs, to probe.

Dragon fangs, sharp as blades, danced in the air. Fang Yuan did not dodge, he wanted to test his current defensive strength.

Chink chink chink!

Dragon fangs slashed his body, producing a series of sparks. After wearing the bloody cape, Fang Yuan's defensive strength had increased to an outrageous level.

Duke Long's pupils shrank at this sight.

Fang Yuan's current defensive strength was already much higher than his, there were at least white marks left behind on Duke Long's dragon scales if

he let the dragon fangs strike him. But there was no damage to Fang Yuan, not even a trace of marks or wounds could be seen.

“The defensive strength is so astonishing, other aspects should also be similar.” Looking at how Fang Yuan dealt with the dragon fang killer move, the immortals had such thoughts.

Heavenly Court’s side was very wary, while the three regions’ Gu Immortals looked at Fang Yuan with eager anticipation.

These Gu Immortals did not know that Fang Yuan’s ears were ringing with criticism at this moment: “Kid, you are the junior who inherited my true inheritance? Damn it, you look really ugly! Look at yourself, your face is like a woman’s, your arms and legs are so thin. How can your skin be so white and smooth? Where is your toughness as a man? Heavens! My inheritance is wasted in your hands.”

Fang Yuan: “...”

During the process of combining the three monsters into incomplete freedom transformation, Fang Yuan needed to transfer his own will. However, after the bloody cape formed, Fang Yuan’s will transformed into Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s image, turning into Reckless Savage’s will!

This method was truly inconceivable! This showed that Reckless Savage might be a transformation path Gu Immortal but he also had an astonishing attainment in wisdom path.

However, Fang Yuan soon discovered that the source of the will transformation were the three monsters. As far as he was concerned, the so-called ‘Reckless Savage’s will’ possessed no harm to him but had many benefits instead.

Reckless Savage’s will could attend to the bloody cape and help maintain the killer move, he could even quicken Fang Yuan’s understanding of the true meaning behind incomplete freedom transformation!

“Kid, make a move quickly. After so many years, there is not much left of the strength left behind by my main body. Quick, quick, charge, destroy fate Gu!” Reckless Savage’s will laughed loudly as he clamored in impatience.

“You talk too much, can you shut up?” Fang Yuan replied indifferently.

“Eh!” Reckless Savage’s will was stunned, he placed his hands on his cheeks and shouted in disbelief: “I was scorned upon! I, the great Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, was actually scorned by a junior! And by such an ugly guy at that!!”

Reckless Savage’s will kept on mumbling. Who could have expected the domineering Reckless Savage Demon Venerable to be such a chatterbox?!

Even without his reminder, Fang Yuan could sense that although incomplete freedom transformation was terrifyingly powerful, it consumed the foundation of the three monsters very quickly.

This move had a time limit.

“Since that is the case...” Fang Yuan squinted, looking at Heaven Overseeing Tower wickedly.

At that instant, every Heavenly Court Gu Immortal controlling Heaven Overseeing Tower felt a chill in their hearts!

“Be careful of Fang Yuan!”

“He is attacking!!”

“Steady, steady!”

Heavenly Court’s side was tense, their nerves stretched to the limits.

Boom!

At the next moment, Fang Yuan attacked. His figure crossed the sky like a bloody ray, he was directly charging towards the area with the most enemies — Heaven Overseeing Tower!

Fang Yuan's speed was so astonishing that even Duke Long, who was already fully prepared, felt a great shock.

"Fang Yuan, stop!" Duke Long reacted and chased with all his strength.

"Hehehe, it is finally getting interesting." On the edge of the battlefield, Spectral Soul laughed loudly and commanded: "Old Man Zheng Yuan, start, activate everybody's vision. I want everyone in the world to see this interesting sight."

"Yes, master." Old Man Zheng Yuan was a key that held the authority to activate Heavenly Court's venerable human path methods.

And this move, everybody's vision, was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. Its unique power had been shown in Fang Yuan's previous life.

It used people's united hearts as the foundation and could let Central Continent's mortals, Gu Masters, and Gu Immortals share their vision. As such, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals could observe all the enemy activities in Central Continent and could even stimulate the hatred of Central Continent's people, gathering even more human will.

The more human will they accumulated, the more power the other human path killer moves like heroes among people would possess. In such a feedback loop, their strength would keep on growing stronger, this was the style that Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's killer moves had.

Immortal killer move — Everybody's Vision!

In an instant, Central Continent was in an uproar, the five regions were in an uproar.

"What in the world is going on?"

"My eyes, my eyes have a problem!"

Mortals were shocked.

“It is the scene in Heavenly Court, what kind of method is this, it can allow everyone to witness the current situation!”

“Which side has the upper hand?”

Almost all the Gu Immortals of the five regions knew the inside story.

In the previous life, Central Continent’s people enjoyed the effects of everybody’s vision, but in this life, because of Shen Shang’s interference, human wills of the five regions were gathered together.

Because of this, everybody’s vision allowed everyone in the five regions to observe the battle in Heavenly Court.

The first scene the five regions’ mortals saw was Fang Yuan fighting his way to Heaven Overseeing Tower!

“Who is that person?” Even ordinary mortals felt intense suffocation when they saw Fang Yuan’s overbearing aura.

“Fang Yuan, you won’t succeed!” At the crucial moment, Gu Yue Fang Zheng and Qin Ding Ling controlled Demon Judgment Board to defend in front of Heaven Overseeing Tower.

“That is the rank eight Immortal Gu House — Demon Judgment Board!” The Gu Immortals who saw this scene, no matter which region they belonged to, cried out in shock.

“Fang Yuan is not stopping, he is charging right into Demon Judgment Board!”

“Has he gone crazy?”

“This is a rank eight Immortal Gu House.”

However, at the next moment, the mouths of the five regions’ Gu Immortals opened wide in shock.

Fang Yuan directly collided into Demon Judgment Board.



The enormous collision force sent Demon Judgment Board flying, even though Gu Yue Fang Zheng and Qin Ding Ling were already controlling the Immortal Gu House with all their strength.

“Get lost!” Fang Yuan shouted as he punched with great force.

A huge dent appeared on Demon Judgment Board, countless fragments scattered and turned into Gu worm corpses.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng coughed out a large mouthful of blood and fell on the ground with a horrified expression on his face. Fang Yuan’s punch had almost pierced Demon Judgment Board!

After Demon Judgment Board was knocked down, Fang Yuan stomped it fiercely, an enormous and irresistible force pressed down on Demon Judgment Board like a mountain and it rapidly fell to the ground.

Fang Yuan jumped, his speed increasing as he continued charging towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

But the next moment, Duke Long had already caught up to Fang Yuan.

“Fang Yuan!” He shouted wildly, his voice shaking the skies.

Fang Yuan turned around, his bloody cape swung and he started punching, creating a storm of fist shadows!

Duke Long had come prepared with a killer move, his palm pressed, it was qi breath mountain.

His left hand then formed into a claw shape as he activated immortal killer move dragon claw strike, while his right hand clenched into fist and activated chaotic dragon fist. At the same time, he spat his fangs, they turned into countless spiraling dragon fangs which moved around his body. The dragon images of nine dragons protection on his body floated out on their own initiative.

Bam Bam Bam Bam...

Fang Yuan and Duke Long fought fiercely, exchanging blows with each fist hitting raw flesh.

On one side was an inheritor of various venerables, an otherworldly demon, on the other side was a Dao Guardian, master of an Immortal Venerable. Their fight had broken the record of intensity in this battle so far!

Just the aftermath of their moves resulted in wild winds that pushed away all the people and objects. The terrifying collisions could directly destroy Immortal Gu Houses. Even rank eight Immortal Gu Houses like Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and Calamity Luck Altar stopped fighting. Those rank eight Immortal Gu Houses even retreated far away.

“Are these two monsters?”

“What kind of terrifying fight is this!”

The five regions’ Gu Immortals saw this scene through everybody’s vision, they gulped as their hearts pounded wildly.

In the absence of a venerable, Fang Yuan and Duke Long’s fight could be considered to be at the peak level of the current world!

Mortals gradually began to realize something.

“This is incredible! We are looking at immortals!”

“This world really has immortals!”

“Fights of immortals really are too terrifying. Look quickly, even the heavens seem to have been broken by them.”

Mortals exclaimed in shock, the scene had far surpassed the limits of their imagination.

The storm of attacks did not stop, both sides were in a deadlock.

Duke Long could not receive amplification from heroes among people, but he had heavenly dragon’s last stand and destiny song’s help, as well as

triple qi retraction. This method was an arrangement left by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, Duke Long was only a key to activating it.

At the edge of the battlefield, Spectral Soul smiled as he looked at Fang Yuan and Duke Long's battle: "Since it has already reached this stage, then let me push it further. Zheng Yuan, release all the human wills."

Old Man Zheng Yuan was dazed, weren't the human wills already released completely, were there any remaining? If there were, wouldn't Old Man Zheng Yuan have used them before?

However, Spectral Soul pointed towards a direction, Old Man Zheng Yuan astonishingly discovered there truly was a portion of human will stored in a corner of Heavenly Court.

Spectral Soul's understanding of Heavenly Court was actually clearer than Old Man Zheng Yuan himself!

'How many secrets of Heavenly Court does he grasp? Also, why would the past venerables retain a portion of the human will so secretly?' Old Man Zheng Yuan was filled with questions.

"You don't need to guess, just release them. What happens next will give you your answer." Spectral Soul chuckled.

Old Man Zheng Yuan had already submitted to Spectral Soul completely, he immediately nodded and activated his methods with no hesitation.

The human wills were released completely!

At the next moment, the power of heroes among people soared.

# Chapter 1958 - Complete Human Will

## 1958 Complete Human Will

The moment the human wills were released, both sides' Gu Immortals seemed to hear whispers of countless people.

“You must grow up healthily, my children.”

“Lovers being able to be married is truly a great thing.”

“May peace last for generations and generations. I'd rather be a dog living in peace than a person living in chaotic times!”

“Kill these lawless people, place judgment upon these atrocious evil-doers!”

“The righteous path will definitely be victorious.”

“I believe that fairness and justice might come late sometimes, but they will never be absent.”

“You must win, Heavenly Court. I can't do anything, but I can pray for you.”

The morale of Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals soared, but soon, doubts surfaced on their faces.

Their enemies similarly received amplifications, moreover, it seemed like the three regions' Gu Immortals received a slightly stronger amplification than them?

“Kill those righteous path hypocrites!”

“Destroy Heavenly Court, it sits in an ivory tower, who knows how many generations of Central Continent's people it has exploited!!”

“Although I respect Heavenly Court's spirit, I will never be able to achieve it. I am a Central Continent Gu Immortal, I admit my selfishness, I am only an ordinary Gu cultivator. However, Central Continent's resources are plundered and occupied by the ten great ancient sects and Heavenly Court. Join Heavenly Court? That is too difficult. They even want me to offer my immortal aperture! How can I be willing to do that?”

“Bring down Heavenly Court, the more losses Heavenly Court suffers, the less the pressure on our four regions when the five regions merge.”

“Heavenly Court has occupied the throne of the number one force for far too long. If it is overthrown, hehe, this will be interesting!”

...

Both sides fought once again, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were astonished to discover that heroes among people's effect on the enemies was indeed stronger than themselves.

Why?

Heroes among people is clearly our Heavenly Court's method!

Why was heroes among people helping the enemies more?!

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were bewildered as they began to fall into a disadvantage.

Wu Yong led his alliance once again, he was the first to charge out of Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and began to valiantly pave a

way through battle. At this moment, he fully displayed the prestige and courage of Southern Border's Wu clan!

His face was solemn and his eyes flickered with cold lights. The determination to destroy fate Gu had always been so intense and overwhelming!

In the past...

He stood in front of his mother Wu Du Xiu's coffin, mourning in silence.

While he felt pain, he found there was a feeling of release and delight in the depths of his heart.

"Does this mean I am not filial?" Wu Yong questioned himself and slowly understood his true feelings: "No, it is not so. I am full of filial piety and respect towards my mother. But she was truly too strong, I could only choose to curl up and hide under her shadow. Now that she is gone, I finally have space to stretch myself."

Returning to the present.

Wu Yong's determination was firm and his gaze was cold, he revealed the heated emotions inside his heart!

"Therefore, be destroyed, fate Gu!"

"I will mourn for you just like I mourned for my mother."

"Only with you gone can I, Wu Yong, have the freedom to chase after my ambition!"

On the other side, Calamity Luck Altar suppressed Demon Judgment Board.

Bing Sai Chuan had never felt such power!

Blood flowed wildly inside his body.

“You still don’t realize it, Qin Ding Ling! Despite the fact that you were the person sleeping beside Lord Giant Sun.”

“Fate is fixed while luck is a variable. Why do you think Lord Giant Sun created luck path, why could he create luck path?”

“From a certain perspective, this is the wish of countless beings for luck path to appear! When your life is fixed, when every encounter you have is already determined, is there still any meaning in living? What difference is this from puppets or mindless zombies?”

“This is not my speculation, Lord Giant Sun said this to me personally!”

“And I inherited his will, after three hundred thousand years, I am still staking my life to fight, I am an old man who is willing to fight for such an aspiration!!”

Immortal killer move — Grand Collision!

Shen Cong Sheng actually took the initiative to attack Feng Jiu Ge.

Under Shen Cong Sheng’s attacks, Feng Jiu Ge had to retreat constantly, but he kept on maintaining destiny song, prioritizing on supporting his allies.

Shen Cong Sheng roared: “Feng Jiu Ge! We are both sound path Gu Immortals, even if you can’t see it, can’t you hear it?”

“Listen!”

“These are the innermost voices of almost all the world’s people!”

“They don’t want to be shackled any more, they thirst for freedom, even if this freedom is beyond impractical! Sometimes, people are like lunatics, they have foolish thoughts.”

“I will be honest with you.” Shen Cong Sheng actually cried tears of deep emotions: “I have never felt such feelings. It is as if there are countless people standing behind me, cheering and encouraging me. Perhaps this is

how Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals felt when they fought for humanity back then."

"It was really the right decision for me to come to this battlefield!"

Bam Bam Bam Bam...

Close combat continued, moves after moves were exchanged as Fang Yuan and Duke Long fought head-on.

After the stalemate lasted for a while, Duke Long began to fall into a disadvantaged position.

Despite Duke Long gritting his teeth and wanting to endure, it was to no avail. Right now, he started to feel a sense of weakness and helplessness despite his overwhelming determination!

Among all the people present, heroes among people's amplification on Fang Yuan was actually the strongest.

"Why? Why!? You are clearly a demon who brings disaster to the world, you are an atrocious demon who commits countless sins! Why would you receive the greatest help from the human wills?" Duke Long roared in shock and fury.

"Do you still not understand it? Duke Long! The current era is no longer the same, the hearts of the people have already changed!"

"In the Olden Antiquity Era, humanity sought for survival space. Thus, the three Demon Venerables held back when they invaded Heavenly Court."

"And now, it has already been over a million years since the Olden Antiquity Era has ended! Your Heavenly Court is unable to represent the will of all the humans in the world by now!"

Fang Yuan's words were very vicious, they seemed to be sharper than dragon fangs as they pierced into Duke Long's inner heart.



Fang Yuan used more than just his fists, every joint of his body turned into weapons as he attacked Duke Long.

Qi breath mountain was destroyed by him, spiraling dragon fangs were broken, Duke Long's dragon claw strike and chaotic dragon fist were suppressed again and again by Fang Yuan!

Bam Bam Bam Bam!

Fang Yuan's every attack produced sonic booms.

The blood cape let out a dark red radiance that covered Fang Yuan's whole body, empowering his strength in all aspects to a terrifying degree.

Duke Long's fingers were snapped by Fang Yuan, his fist fractured as he struck Fang Yuan's fist directly! The nine dragon tattoos were howling in misery! They were already destroyed to a huge degree by Fang Yuan!

...

Countless years ago, there was a couple.

The male was called Tu Ji, the female was Ruo Li.

Tu Ji was a rockman and Ruo Li was a human immortal.

"I cultivate rule path, I have to believe in the rules of this world. All things have their own ordained path of which is fate. I believe I was able to meet you because I followed my fate, falling in love with you is the kindness of fate towards me." Tu Ji replied.

Ruo Li said: "What if I told you fate decreed that I would die at Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's hands?"

"What?!" Tu Ji was shocked: "Ruo Li, how many times have you checked this prophecy?"

Ruo Li gave a bitter smile: "Only once is enough, but I checked it many times indeed, every result was the same. Do you know why a wisdom path

Gu Immortal's prophecy is so accurate? That is because fate is always fixed. I will die at Reckless Savage's hands, that is my fate."

Tu Ji was silent for a long while before he said with an almost decisive tone: "Then I... do not believe in fate!"

On what basis must she die at Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's hands?

On what basis must my lover not live a happy life?

If this is fate's arrangement, then — I won't accept it!

...

Duke Long was beaten back again and again by Fang Yuan. First, blood flowed out of his mouth, then all of his seven orifices started bleeding, this was because Fang Yuan's punches had landed on his body and caused internal bleeding of his organs.

"Great! This feels really refreshing!" Reckless Savage's will shouted from inside the cape, waving his hands in excitement: "Kid, although you look ugly, your style resembles me! I have to say, my opinion of you has changed. But I wonder why I feel that there is something lacking?"

Reckless Savage's will thought for a while before clapping: "I know! You should roar in excitement, shout happily, this is the excitement of a man during battles!"

However, Fang Yuan's face was cold as ice, his eyes were dark as the abyss with no trace of needless emotions.

As far as he was concerned, he was using this style of fighting to maximize the advantage of incomplete freedom transformation, there was nothing else to it.

With the powerful strength of the three monsters, Duke Long was already in a huge disadvantage when fighting him in close combat. But Fang Yuan maintained the attitude of attacking Heaven Overseeing Tower, which forced Duke Long to fight him in close combat.

Duke Long's situation became increasingly grim, he was clearly defending more and attacking less.

He howled, he roared, but he was still forced back over and over again by Fang Yuan.

...

In Southern Border, there was a Gu Immortal called Tao Zhu.

"He is Tao Zhu?"

"Is he stupid? In order to research the pointless secret of the five regions, he gave up on that marriage!"

"He is a lunatic. I've often seen him heading to the regional walls for his research, he often ends up injured and in a sorry state."

He sacrificed almost everything to research the five regions' regional walls, he endured countless people's ridicule and even had to resist the secret oppression of many people.

The most fatal blow to him was the biggest joke that fate played on him!

Not long in the future, the five regions' regional walls would disappear completely.

Even if Tao Zhu's research made progress, it seemed to lose its meaning.

"But so what?"

"If this is fate, and I, Tao Zhu, am unable to resist or change it, so what?"

"I will still continue researching! Even if I fail in the end and obtain nothing, even if my life becomes a complete failure!"

"I will never resign myself to fate! Even if I understand there is a wall called fate in front of me, I will charge into it!"

“Even if I die from the collision, I will die with a smile and my head held high.”

On what basis must I accept my fate?

Who gives a crap!

That is what I want to do!

This is how I want to live!

# **Chapter 1959 - People's Hearts Have Changed**

## **1959 People's Hearts Have Changed**

“Quick, reinforce Duke Long!” Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals moved, they did not dare to continue watching.

Duke Long and Feng Jiu Ge were two pillars of Heavenly Court, once Duke Long was defeated, the whole situation would again turn precarious.

Boom!

Fang Yuan suddenly kicked Duke Long’s hand.

Duke Long’s defense was wide open, Fang Yuan used the chance to approach closer and grabbed Duke Long’s purple hair with his left hand.

Then, he raised his right fist and punched. Punches after punches landed on Duke Long’s face and chest like cannonball strikes.

Duke Long was unable to free himself, he could only shout in desperation: “Triple qi retraction!”

Qi surged once again and gathered in Duke Long’s body, Duke Long’s condition strengthened by three times.

Bam bam bam! Fang Yuan continued to rain punches on Duke Long.

He kept on punching!

...

Over a million years ago, when Genesis Lotus became a venerable, he wandered the world disguised as a mortal.

One day, he arrived at a poor oasis village in Western Desert.

There, he helped the villagers solve some issues using a Gu Master identity, he was welcomed warmly by the young and old in the village.

A child was the most excited, even revering Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable to the point of prostrating himself.

Because he saw new hope in his life.

“Lord Gu Master, Lord Gu Master. I beg you, I beg you!” The child knelt on the ground and grabbed the hem of Genesis Lotus’s cloth as he looked up towards Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, his pure eyes were filled with tears and pleading.

“Speak, child, don’t kneel. I will definitely help you if I can.” Genesis Lotus lifted the child warmly.

The child revealed a joyous expression: “It would be really great if you can help! Please resurrect my mother, she is my most important person and also the person who loves me the most in this world. My father abandoned us long ago. I could grow up all because she worked hard to raise me.”

“But my mother died a few days ago, she died from exhaustion and illness. Even on her deathbed, she used her trembling hands to put the last half remaining biscuit in my hands, she saved it for me!”

“I cannot be without my mother!”

“I cannot be without my mother!”

“I beg you, Lord Gu Master. You could dig such a deep well and precisely find a water source. You can definitely resurrect my mother, right?!”

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable was silent.

The child was innocent, he did not know resurrecting the dead was far more difficult than digging a well. But Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable was the current venerable, the things that were impossible for others were possible for him.

But he could not!

He was an Immortal Venerable, he was Heavenly Court’s Immortal Venerable.

Thereupon, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable rubbed the child’s head and sighed: “This is not possible. No matter who it is, they will experience life and death. Your mother’s death is just her reaching her final destination, isn’t it a kind of release? Cheer up and live on bravely and happily , I believe your mother will definitely want you to live like that.”

“No! I don’t want to!” The child shook his head rapidly: “I want my mother to revive!”

Genesis Lotus shook his head and sighed again: “I cannot resurrect your mother.”

“Why? You can clearly do it!” The child opened his eyes, looking at Genesis Lotus with fury.

Genesis Lotus shook his head, not speaking anymore.

The child pointed at Genesis Lotus and shouted: “I hate you, I hate you, Gu Master! You can clearly resurrect my mother, but you don’t want to do it! You are too cold-blooded, you are really cruel. Is it because she is not your mother? If it were your mother, would you refuse so indifferently?”

Genesis Lotus sank into silence, he put himself in the child’s place and thought, then came to a conclusion as he said with extreme sincerity: “Yes, I

will still do this. Everyone needs to accept death, no matter who they are. Because I know, this is all fate's arrangements."

"To hell with your fate!" The child roared: "Do I care about your damned fate, I need my mother, I want my mother back!"

The child was quickly stopped by the nearby villagers, the villagers repeatedly apologized to Genesis Lotus.

Genesis Lotus waved his head, expressing he did not mind it.

He looked at the villagers stopping the madly struggling child when he suddenly went into a daze and his body shuddered!

At this moment, he suddenly understood.

The reason why he felt a vague unease when he traveled around the world.

Human hearts have changed, their greed is insatiable!

When humans became the rulers of the world, their desire was no longer about resisting the rule and suppression of variant humans, they had become increasingly insane and delusional.

Genesis Lotus looked at the child in front of him dazedly as he came to a realization: Weren't the humans of the present age like the child in front of him? He was struggling wildly under the shackles of fate for an impractical wish. But was it truly impractical? Was resurrecting a dead person impossible?

Genesis Lotus was aware that this was possible. But... he could not do it.

This was not allowed.

However, does not being allowed mean that there won't be anyone doing it?

Genesis Lotus suddenly felt loss and hesitation, a deep helplessness shrouded him. Even though he was a rank nine venerable, the number one person in his era!



He could stop the people from doing this with all his strength, but what about after his death?

Even if he used all his strength and energy in this life, and no one attempted to revive the dead, could he, Genesis Lotus, stop the people from having such thoughts?

The most terrifying thing were these types of thoughts!

How could he stop everyone's wishful thinking?

He could not stop the desires that emerged in people's hearts!

...

Duke Long was beaten to a pulp by Fang Yuan!

At the start, he counterattacked with all his strength, but Fang Yuan endured Duke Long's counterattacks head-on with an unchanging expression.

Duke Long's appearance was completely different now, his chest had caved in, his scales were scattered everywhere, and his aura had fallen sharply.

"Triple qi retraction!" Duke Long roared again, his aura rose and his injuries recovered immediately.

Bam bam bam! Fang Yuan still rained punches on Duke Long.

Duke Long had just recovered his features when his face was messed up by Fang Yuan once again. Soon, his bones fractured and blood flowed out from everywhere.

Duke Long did not retreat, he defended with all his strength while shouting: "Triple qi retraction!"

His condition recovered once again.

Reckless Savage's will cheered from the cape: "Beat him, beat him! Beat him hard, squeeze him dry! I want to see how much accumulation Heavenly

Court has to be able to let him expend it like this! Hahaha.”

But Fang Yuan was calm all along, calculating the remaining strength of the three monsters’ combination.

His strength was weakening constantly.

Back when the three monsters had first appeared, the green fish was able to destroy all the bones in Duke Long’s body with just one headbutt. But after many fierce battles and being struck by fate vanquish several times, the three monsters did not have much strength remaining.

Fang Yuan activated incomplete freedom transformation and combined the strength of the three monsters, but all aspects of strength like defense, movement, and healing were being expended intensely.

Comparing accumulation, it truly could not match Heavenly Court!

Endless fist shadows converged, Fang Yuan suddenly raised his fist and struck with all his strength!

Boom!!

A loud sound was heard as Fang Yuan’s right fist lodged into Duke Long’s face. The horrifying strength burst forth, Duke Long instantly lost consciousness and crossed the sky in a blink of an eye like a meteor before crashing heavily on the ground.

He continued to fall deeper, his strong body pierced into Heavenly Court’s ground and created an unprecedentedly deep crater!

Duke Long was lying in the depths of the crater without moving. But triple qi retraction was activated once again, another round of endless qi converged into him.

Fang Yuan snorted and loosened his hand, a large handful of purple hair scattered with the wind, they were ripped out when he punched Duke Long.

Fang Yuan analyzed calmly.

Triple qi retraction was not activated by Duke Long, it was essentially a method left by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable. Even if Duke Long lost his consciousness for the moment, triple qi retraction still continued to support Duke Long.

Incomplete freedom transformation did not have much strength remaining. If this killer move was stopped midway, he could not use Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's strength to activate it again. Next time he used it, Fang Yuan would have to rely on his own strength.

Duke Long had stopped temporarily, Fang Yuan immediately turned around and charged towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Heaven Overseeing Tower had been continuing to move, but because of the interference from the three regions' Gu Immortals, it was not able to go too far away from Fang Yuan.

“Stop him, stop him!”

“Stop Fang Yuan!!”

“No matter the cost, we must stop him!”

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals charged towards Fang Yuan like moths flying towards fire.

Ye Qiao Zi blocked the path.

Fang Yuan's punch pierced through his wooden armor and killed him.

Zhao Shan He pounced at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan kicked, directly bursting his body!

Vortex Space Boy screamed as he appeared behind Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan grabbed the tiny head with his fingers, he then clenched his fingers into a fist, forcibly turning Vortex Space Boy's head into a mush of blood and brain matter.

“Hahaha, this is the way!”

“Kill them, rip them to shreds!”

“Then, charge through the entire way!!”

Inside the bloody cape, Reckless Savage’s will laughed loudly while waving his hands as he cheered on Fang Yuan.

“Fang Yuan, don’t even think about it!” Duke Long flew once again, trying to stop Fang Yuan.

A palace suddenly appeared above him.

Dragon Palace!

...

The former Lord of Dragon Palace — Wu Shuai’s life seemed to be filled with tragedies.

Dragonman extermination was like an executioner’s blade that was always hanging above his and the dragonman race’s head.

Dream revelations came time and time again, in order to settle the matter of dragonman extermination, he had to use rank eight Dragon Palace while doing experiments on the dragonman body.

But to do that, Wu Shuai alone was not enough, he gathered all of the dragonman Gu Immortals and told them the truth, he begged them for help.

In the huge Dragon Palace, there was an unprecedented meeting, almost all of the dragonman Gu Immortals had gathered together.

“To do experiments, we need a vast number of dragonmen, almost all these people will die, even if they survive, they will wish they were dead. Thus, I cannot make this decision alone, if anyone objects, speak up now.”

“I object!” Immediately, someone stood out.

Everyone turned to look, it was Wu Shuai's cousin, the beloved seventh young master that Duke Long doted on the most.

Seventh young master pointed at Wu Shuai who was on his throne as he scolded: "You scoundrel, you are insane!!!"

"In order to gain Heavenly Court's trust, you killed your most loyal sworn brother!"

"To conceal the secret of dragonmen reign supreme, you caused the death of your own father!"

"To refine dream token Immortal Gu, you actually used your most beloved wife as the Gu material!"

"Now, to deal with dragonman extermination, you even want to sacrifice all of your innocent dragonmen and do experiments on them?"

"Why is your heart so wicked, why are you so cold-hearted?!"

"You think that this so-called evidence will make us believe you? Hehe, you are too laughable, do you think we are all fools?!"

"Hehehe, no, you are not laughable, you are pitiful and sad!"

"You wanted to give your wife happiness, and in the end? You sacrifice her to refine a Gu. Hehehe."

"You wanted to make your father proud, and in the end? You killed him! You killed him with your own two hands!!!"

"You promised Huang Wei a bright future, you gave him hope. But in the end you killed him. And now, what future is there?"

"Hehehe, hahaha!" Seventh young master laughed maniacally, his tears were almost falling out: "You tried so hard to lead the dragonman race to rise up, and in the end? In the end, the dragonman race is about to be wiped out, we are going to be extinct!"

“It was you, it was you! If you were not ambitious and took over South Flower Island, relocating our people, developing rapidly and causing conflict with the humans, why would all this happen? If the dragonman race lived quietly and peacefully, ancestor would not have the intention of wiping us out!”

“Wu Shuai, oh Wu Shuai, you are the strongest person in the dragonman race besides our ancestor, but what you gave us was not glory or hope, it was neither equality nor dignity. It was... destruction!”

“You are a real tragedy! Your whole life is a tragedy!!”

The entire hall was silent.

Wu Shuai sat on his dragon throne, expressionless.

At this time, a dragonman Gu Immortal slowly walked out from the crowd and stood in front of Wu Shuai, he then turned to face the crowd. This dragonman Gu Immortal said in a deep voice: “I support Lord Wu Shuai.”

Seventh young master was astonished: “Third... third uncle, you?”

A second dragonman Gu Immortal walked out of the crowd and stood in front of Wu Shuai and faced the dragonman Gu Immortals. This dragonman Gu Immortal said in a loud voice: “I agree greatly with Lord Wu Shuai’s plan!”

Seventh young master was shocked: “Fifth uncle?!”

Then, the third, fourth, fifth person... all the dragonman Gu Immortals stood in front of Wu Shuai.

In the blink of an eye, seventh young master was left all alone.

He shouted in disbelief: “Have you all gone insane?!”

“If this is insanity, then we are all lunatics!”

“Hehehe, to become a lunatic like Ren Zu, I have no objections.”

“Little Seventh, do you still not understand? How big of a tragedy is it for our lives and deaths to be in the hands of others! Even if this person is our ancestor, our progenitor, he cannot do this!!”

Wu Shuai slowly stood up from his dragon throne, his face was covered in tears.

“Everyone... I, Wu Shuai, hereby swear!” Wu Shuai’s voice was extremely hoarse: “I will stand with the dragonman race regardless of survival or extermination, I will contribute my heart, my blood, and all the spirit and determination that I have!”

“Even if I were to fail in the end, I will fight to the final moment of my life.”

“Even if I die in the end, my spirit and determination will be inherited by others.”

“Even if my spirit and determination are no longer in existence... even if only my name is left, I will continue to fight, I will never stop resisting!!”

# Chapter 1960 - Destroying Fate!

## 1960 Destroying Fate!

Boom!

Under the amplification of heroes among people, Dragon Palace was barely able to ward off Duke Long.

“Get lost.” At the next moment, Duke Long sent Dragon Palace flying with dragon claw strike.

Duke Long’s field of vision became broad again, but he was not happy at all because Fang Yuan had already gotten close to Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Not only him, Wu Yong, Bing Sai Chuan, Shen Cong Sheng, and others had also moved in like a fierce tide. This wave of offense was terrifying.

Duke Long was already unable to block them in time and looked at this sight with overwhelming anger.

Right now, at this moment, even if Heaven Overseeing Tower turned phantom, it could not avoid this danger. Because Fang Yuan possessed dream path methods!

Feng Jin Huang could restrain his methods, but she was only a mortal Gu Master. Her strength was insufficient to go against the current Fang Yuan.

“Use fate vanquish quickly!” Duke Long shouted.



The Gu Immortals inside Heaven Overseeing Tower shuddered and did not care about enemies or allies, they activated fate vanquish again with desperation and anxiety.

The sky turned white!

Light was everywhere.

White light.

It filled the entire world, all the space in this world was filled with white light.

This was Heaven Overseeing Tower's strongest method, it used rank nine fate Gu as the core to activate a supreme killer move!

Be they Heavenly Court or the three regions' Gu Immortals, both sides were extremely familiar with this killer move.

White light filled the whole battlefield ruthlessly, not differentiating enemies or allies!

In an instant, regardless of which Immortal Gu House it was, they were all heavily injured or damaged!

"Damn it, damn it!" Wu Yong gritted his teeth as blood flowed out of the corners of his lips. He felt his ambition melting like snow in the white light: "This again, it is this move again! Whenever there is some breakthrough, fate vanquish will turn around the situation for Heavenly Court!"

"Huh?" Wu Yong's gaze suddenly focused before revealing a complex expression.

There was still a blood red trace remaining in the empty battlefield!

What was that?

It was a cape, fluttering like a war banner!

“Oh oh oh oh oh!” Inside the cape, Reckless Savage’s will clenched his fists and beat his chest like an ape in heat.

He was extremely excited, shouting wildly: “This is it! This is it! Within heaven and earth, who else is there but me? At the crucial moment, you still need to rely on me! Cool, I am damn cool!!”

If it were just the three monsters, they naturally would not be able to resist the power of fate vanquish easily.

However, when they combined into one move and became connected to Fang Yuan as the core, using Fang Yuan’s complete otherworldly demon identity, fate vanquish was no longer able to harm them.

In the endless light, Fang Yuan’s white robe, black hair, and bloody cape were fluttering wildly with the wind.

He charged!

He pushed forward!

He did not stop at all!

“We still have... hope.” From within the retreating Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan opened his eyes wide and stared at that bright red image moving in the white space.

Shen Cong Sheng coughed out blood repeatedly as he fell from the sky. He was also looking at Fang Yuan, using all his strength to fix his gaze on him!

He shouted inwardly: “Fang Yuan, you damned demon! Everything depends on you now!!”

Fang Yuan shot forward like a sharp arrow, he was like a star of calamity that rose to the sky from the ground, bringing chaos to the world and defying heaven itself!

“Charge, charge! The grandeur of men can be seen when they charge ahead, oh yeah!” Reckless Savage’s will continued to shout as his voice rang in

Fang Yuan's ears.

Be they Duke Long, Feng Jiu Ge, Heavenly Court's immortals, or the three regions' immortals, they forced their eyes open and fixed their gazes on Fang Yuan.

Heaven and earth was a scene of pure white, and in this whiteness, the path seemed to be exceptionally long and endless.

As if it spanned across history, from the past until now!

...

Over three million years ago, when variant humans were in prosperity, there was an inconspicuous human slave.

He was called Wei Yu Shu.

He heard of Heavenly Court's location, he was not willing to be a slave anymore, he escaped and was chased after.

His master berated him coldly.

"Wei Yu Shu, when I bought you back then, you were only a child who did not even know about cultivation!"

"I taught you step by step and raised you into a Gu Immortal. Was it my protection and indulgence that allowed you to have such guts?"

"Tell me, why did you betray me?"

"Have I, Princess Ye Tong, mistreated you?! You lived in luxury and peace, you only needed to serve me and I have never treated you cruelly."

Wei Yu Shu smiled sadly: "But, even if I lived a much better life, I was still only your slave!"

The female inkman immortal was furious: "What is bad about becoming my slave? Many inkmen want to live your life but don't get such a chance!"

Wei Yu Shu was dazed for a moment before he spoke slowly: “I did not think it was bad before, but when I heard there was a Heavenly Court in this world where humans live... I realized why I was always in low spirits and felt unhappiness. It was because I lacked one thing.”

“Hehehe, I have read u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e, I am truly too stupid. I am even more stupid than those wingless birds, toothless beasts, gill-less fish! At least, they know they lost their freedom and are staking their lives to chase after freedom. But what about me? I did not even know I lost my freedom!”

“So, you want to escape, you want to reach Heavenly Court?” The female inkman immortal sneered: “You are too naive, you actually believe in the temptation of these devils?!”

Wei Yu Shu closed his eyes, his voice was hoarse: “It is not that I believe it, but I want to believe it.”

“Heavenly Court was never the important point!”

“Without Heavenly Court, there can be Earthly Court, or even Human Court!”

“There will always be a place where a group of humans gather and pursue freedom!!”

...

A million years ago.

Duke Long snorted coldly: “Tell me, Hong Ting, who can do as they please in this world? Your thoughts are too childish, you think becoming an Immortal Venerable and leading the righteous path would not need sacrifices? What is there in this world that has no price to pay for? How shallow do you think the words ‘righteous path’ are? Wrong! Maintaining Heavenly Court’s righteous path requires you to pay a price, it requires sacrifices. If you don’t even have this sacrificial mentality, then I will tell you, you don’t have the qualifications to enter Heavenly Court!”

Duke Long's brows raised, his face cold as ice: "Who do you want to revive?"

"Every person who sacrificed themselves for me. My parents, Liu Shu Xian, and many others."

"Even if there are crueler tragedies, I will accept them! Master, disciple always had a question. Why? Why must we accept fate's arrangements? If there was no fate, would the world truly fall into chaos? Is it not possible that the world will become a better place?" Hong Ting asked in an anxious tone.

...

The current era.

Duke Long looked at Feng Jin Huang and said solemnly: "Huang Er, you need to understand that you are the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable who will surpass all the past venerables! You will create dream path and be invincible in the whole world. Your glory will shine and spread for ages, becoming the eternal symbol and support of humanity. Don't fear, don't hesitate, take each success to press forward indomitably until you reach the supreme peak of this world!"

Feng Jin Huang's eyes got brighter and brighter as she listened. She smiled with unparalleled beauty.

Duke Long also smiled.

Feng Jin Huang said: "If all this is predestined by fate, then... I do not believe in fate!"

...

Boom!

Fang Yuan directly broke through the roof of Heaven Overseeing Tower and entered inside.

A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal inside stood up to stop him.

Fang Yuan directly pierced his hands into his chest and pulled fiercely, ripping the Heavenly Court Gu Immortal into two halves!

Blood splashed on Fang Yuan's face; his skin was white like snow, cold like ice.

Blood splashed on Fang Yuan's black hair; the hair was like the night sky, letting out profound eerie light.

Blood splashed on Fang Yuan's blood cape; the cape was touching the ground like it was paving a bloody path for the tyrant's domination.

Fang Yuan took large strides and reached the center of the top floor. Fate Gu was right in front of him, it had always been there, as if it were constantly receiving offerings, offerings that it had been receiving for millions of years!

Fang Yuan grabbed fate Gu!

At this instance, even Reckless Savage's will inside the cape was quiet, closing his mouth as he stared at Fang Yuan blankly.

Because he realized: This was the moment of truth for the whole of humanity, no, for the whole world.

At this time, Fang Yuan held fate Gu in his hands, his gaze was flickering with complex emotions.

He had finally caught fate Gu, this was a scene which he had imagined countless times.

His goal was achieved at this moment, but he did not think of himself and instead thought of u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e.

Ren Zu said: He wanted freedom and to get rid of fate's shackles. After that, he could go wherever he wanted to go, and be with whoever he wanted to with forever.

The birds berated him: You humans are destined to be alone, all gatherings will end up in separation. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies.

Ren Zu said: I want freedom and to get rid of fate's shackles. I will possess countless delicacies and wines, endless wealth, and all kinds of comfortable and beautiful clothes.

The beasts ridiculed him: But you humans were born with empty hands and will pass away with nothing. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies.

Ren Zu said: I want freedom and to get rid of fate's shackles. I will breathe freely and live on forever, I want eternal life!

The fishes rebutted: But you humans are destined to have no relation with eternal life, you will die of old age and illnesses. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies.

Ren Zu was puzzled.

Ren Zu was disgruntled.

Ren Zu was irritated.

Ren Zu became insane!

How can you have such thoughts?

Why can't I have the same thoughts?

Why can't a human be together forever with their loved ones?

Why can't a human live life without worries and have endless wealth?

Why can't a human have eternal life?

Because fate does not allow it?

Because it does not allow, therefore I cannot do it?! I cannot even think about it?!

On what basis?

On what damned basis?

On what basis am I not allowed to think about it?!

On what basis is eternal life forbidden?!

If such thoughts turn me insane.

Then let me become a lunatic!

If such pursuit makes me demonic.

Then let me become a demon!!

Fang Yuan looked at fate Gu and sneered coldly.

He clenched his fist lightly.

Crack.

A soft sound echoed.

Fate Gu was directly crushed into pieces.

Rank nine fate Gu —

Destroyed!



# **Chapter 1961 - So What If It Was Destroyed?**

## **1961 So What If It Was Destroyed?**

The moment fate Gu was destroyed, the whole battlefield returned to its previous state.

The white light formed by fate vanquish killer move disappeared completely.

Crack crack.

A series of crisp sounds echoed as countless cracks spread throughout Heaven Overseeing Tower. At the next moment, the whole of Heaven Overseeing Tower crumbled into pieces!

The grand Heavenly Court fell into deathly silence.

There was no trace of wind in the battlefield, but the immortals felt a hurricane blowing in their hearts!

Heaven Overseeing Tower turned into countless fragments that fell down along with Gu Immortal corpses. Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's painting path method turned into a ray of light that crossed the sky and flew far away.

Fang Yuan ignored it and quietly floated in the air, looking at Duke Long, Feng Jiu Ge, and the rest.

He had no expression and did not say anything, he only opened his palm slowly. Under everybody's vision killer move, everyone in the five regions saw — the fragments of the destroyed fate Gu!

“Fate Gu has been... destroyed?”

“We won?!”

The three regions' Gu Immortals looked at each other, seeing the astonishment and daze on each other's faces.

“Unbelievable, we really did it!”

“This battle will definitely be remembered by later generations.”

After coming to their senses, the three regions' Gu Immortals cheered wildly!

On the contrary, Heavenly Court's remaining Gu Immortals had ashen expressions and were dazed like puppets.

Fate Gu was Heavenly Court's banner, their spiritual pillar.

It was more than a rank nine Gu worm, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had relied on this Gu to create the rule of humanity, it gave humans the hope of freedom and courage to revolt.

After over three million years of inheritance and development, the significance of fate Gu was much greater to Heavenly Court. It was Heavenly Court's foundation, a symbol, and also an eternally fluttering banner.

But now, this banner was taken down and torn by Fang Yuan!

Heavenly Court's immortals felt that the pillar in their mind was taken away, their world had collapsed!

Even without the three regions' Gu Immortals attacking or any external stimulation, they were dazed and did not know what they should do.

Even Feng Jiu Ge was silent, his destiny song that had kept on resounding throughout the battlefield stopped at this moment.

Far away, Feng Jin Huang was hiding in a secret underground Immortal Gu House, she was weeping silently: “Fate Gu... has been destroyed! How did this happen? Everyone clearly put in so much effort, not even hesitating to sacrifice themselves!”

Qin Ding Ling’s gaze was blank, she was like a lifeless statue.

The greatly damaged Demon Judgment Board rose to the sky, Fang Zheng who was inside looked at Fang Yuan with a highly complicated expression: “Fang Yuan, you actually accomplished it. In Heavenly Court, in front of the venerable methods, you destroyed fate Gu! So the gap between you and I is simply this big.”

This gap made Fang Zheng feel despair, but a strange thing was Fang Zheng did not feel bitterness at this moment, instead he felt a trace of relief.

It was time to give up.

A person like Fang Yuan was different from everyone from the start. Thinking of rivaling him was wishful thinking from the start, a delirious thought even.

“Damn it, damn it...”

“We failed, fate Gu has been destroyed.”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals cried. They had used all their strength, given their everything, some crawled out of their graves to fight, some held on till the end, but they still failed.

“We have really failed our comrades who sacrificed themselves!”

“I am too ashamed to face my seniors!”

Shame surfaced on the Heavenly Court immortals’ faces, many even had the impulse to kill themselves.

“Don’t panic!” At this moment, Duke Long suddenly spoke, his voice spreading throughout the battlefield, shaking every Gu Immortal’s mind.

Duke Long flew to the sky, his expression was solemn as he knew this was the crucial moment.

Fate Gu had been destroyed, Duke Long could not afford to be upset or blame himself. He was the leader of Heavenly Court, he needed to try his hardest to deal with this issue!

What made him anxious was that even the deeply experienced Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were shaken like this. What would the people all over the world think about this sight?

If Fang Yuan scheming and defeating Heavenly Court time and again earlier was like a heavy slap to Heavenly Court’s face, then Fang Yuan destroying fate Gu was like shaking Heavenly Court’s foundation completely, destroying the status and reputation Heavenly Court had accumulated for over three million years!

Duke Long had to restore their morale and fighting spirit.

“Fang Yuan, you really think you destroyed fate Gu?” Duke Long suddenly laughed with no trace of listlessness, one could not sense any form of wavering in his tone.

Fang Yuan did not reply and only slightly raised his hand as he looked at Duke Long.

Immediately, the three regions’ Gu Immortals ridiculed: “Duke Long, have you gone blind? You can’t see the fragments of fate Gu?”

Some of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals looked with bright gazes, a spark of hope rising in their hearts: “Is the fate Gu that Fang Yuan destroyed a replica?”

But Duke Long shook his head, still laughing: “Hehehe, the destroyed fate Gu is the real one. But Fang Yuan, even though fate Gu is destroyed, has it

really been destroyed forever, can we not refine it once again?”

“Huh?” The immortals were stupefied.

Immortal Gu were unique, this was an irrefutable truth of the world. If I had an Immortal Gu, others could not possess the same one.

But when this Immortal Gu was destroyed, others would have the chance to possess it.

Fate Gu was destroyed by Fang Yuan now, this was an ironclad truth. But this was not a genuine ending because Heavenly Court could refine it again!

“Does Heavenly Court have fate Gu’s recipe?” Shen Cong Sheng’s expression was grim as he asked.

“Heavenly Court has held fate Gu for over three million years, we had countless refinement path great experts and three Immortal Venerables in this period. Take a guess if our Heavenly Court has fate Gu’s recipe or not?” Duke Long smiled, his entire body letting out confidence and calmness.

“Damn it!” The three regions’ Gu Immortals were exasperated.

Duke Long laughed: “However, even if Heavenly Court did not have fate Gu’s Immortal Gu recipe, so what? Everyone, let me ask you, was the fate Gu in the Immemorial Antiquity Era refined by Ren Zu?”

“Of course not.” Qin Ding Ling replied, she understood Duke Long’s intention and her eyes shone with life again: “Fate Gu was born from heaven and earth itself.”

Duke Long nodded: “That’s right, Immortal Gu are born from nature which is why there are many wild Immortal Gu. Even if we cannot refine it, heaven and earth will refine fate Gu. The new fate Gu might be rank six or even rank nine directly. Who can say for sure?”

This time, the three regions’ Gu Immortals looked at each other.

After Duke Long mentioned this point, they suddenly realized that destroying fate Gu might not be a big deal!

If fate Gu was destroyed, so be it, it could be refined again.

“Even if it is refined, we can destroy it again!” A Gu Immortal shouted angrily, but even he himself did not have much confidence.

To destroy fate Gu this time, they had paid a huge price! Could such success really be replicated? Forget about anything else, just the point that only an otherworldly demon could destroy fate Gu blocked the path of many heroes and conquerors. Didn’t even three Demon Venerables fail?

“Damn it, how could we have failed to notice this?” A Gu Immortal was vexed, but thinking about it, he could blame himself for not considering everything properly.

After all, invading Heavenly Court and destroying fate Gu was already an enormous goal and could even be said to be wishful thinking. To realize this goal, the Gu Immortals had already exhausted their minds and energy. This was an impossible mission akin to a mortal ascending to heaven, even if they used all their strength and had inexhaustible will, it was still difficult to achieve.

Under such circumstances, who could afford to think of the matter after ascending to heaven?

In fact, when Central Continent held the Refinement Path Convention and four regions’ Gu Immortals invaded, who could say for sure that they could destroy fate Gu?

No one!

Even Fang Yuan, even venerables did not have such confidence.

Everyone was giving it a try.

After the attempt succeeded, the Gu Immortals were exulted. But what happens after realizing this goal?

Duke Long's words were also the truth. The three regions' Gu Immortals suddenly discovered that the price they paid, the battles and the effort they invested were all in vain, was it just an empty victory?

The three regions' Gu Immortals were silent, their expressions gradually turning unsightly.

Wu Yong was sharp and sensed the change in people's hearts and the fallen morale, he immediately refuted coldly: "Lord Duke Long, you have a sharp tongue. However, Heavenly Court's failure is still a failure, you took great pain to defend and even hide fate Gu in Heavenly Court, yet we were still able to destroy it. In the future, even if you obtain fate Gu again, so what?"

"Hehehe, in fact, you need to be careful. Otherwise, when heaven and earth gives birth to the new fate Gu, you won't be able to refine it yourselves. At that time, fate Gu will become a wild Immortal Gu, anyone will be able to possess it, it might not necessarily be obtained by your Heavenly Court anymore."

The three regions' immortals' eyes brightened and their morale soared.

Duke Long was smiling calmly: "Wu Yong, you are not wrong about it at all. Let's say fate Gu becomes a wild Immortal Gu and is obtained by one of you, so what? Can you all... use it? Do you know how to use it?"

Even Wu Yong could not reply to this question.

Duke Long smiled proudly: "Fate Gu can never be used by Gu Immortals! Before the Remote Antiquity Era, it was held by variant humans but they could not use it. Over three million years, my Heavenly Court had several Immortal Venerables, but no one could directly use this Gu. Countless geniuses racked their minds and then conceptualized Heaven Overseeing Tower, it took three million years for us to research a killer move that could make use of fate Gu, and that is fate vanquish!"

"Do you understand the killer move fate vanquish? Do you know how to construct Heaven Overseeing Tower?"

The three regions' Gu Immortals fell into silence.

Duke Long continued: "Only heaven's will can use fate Gu. Back then, for the sake of humanity, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not hesitate to sacrifice herself and merged with heaven's will, disturbing and influencing heaven's will. Which is why, humanity that rose three million years ago is still flourishing now, we remained as the rulers of the world."

"And my Heavenly Court built the immortal graveyard to support Star Constellation's will. Heavenly Court members all chose to hibernate in the immortal graveyard to provide constant help for Star Constellation's will. Only then are we able to influence fate Gu and thus influence the position of humanity in the whole world!"

"Among you, who can achieve this?"

Duke Long swept his gaze throughout the battlefield, the three regions' Gu Immortals were silent while Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals stood proudly, someone even added arrogantly: "No one! In the vast five regions, only Heavenly Court can accomplish this!"

"No, you are wrong, Duke Long." Bing Sai Chuan's retort came from inside Calamity Luck Altar: "Even if we are unable to use fate Gu, we can use it as a Gu refinement material to refine destiny Gu! Fate Gu cannot be controlled by others, but destiny Gu can. This is the plan of our Lord Giant Sun Immortal Venerable."

Duke Long looked towards Calamity Luck Altar and gave a disdainful smile: "Even if you refine destiny Gu, does it mean fate Gu won't exist?"

Bing Sai Chuan was unable to reply.

If fate Gu was used as a Gu material, when Longevity Heaven refined destiny Gu, fate Gu would be used up. In the future, there could still be a new fate Gu.

Duke Long sighed: "No matter what you do, fate Gu will still exist. Even if it destroyed now, it will appear again in the future. As long as it appears,



will your efforts today have any meaning?”

The three regions’ Gu Immortals were silent.

“Of course there is meaning!” Duke Long answered himself with solemnness and hatred: “The meaning of this is to give a chance for variant humans to rise up, for them to create an unimaginably bad influence on humanity.”

“You cannot use fate Gu and how long will it take for you to refine destiny Gu? You don’t even have an incomplete Gu recipe of fate Gu! Once fate Gu reappears, it will be controlled by heaven’s will. Humanity will decline and variant humans will rise.”

“And the one who led to this is all of you!” Duke Long berated and suddenly pointed towards Fang Yuan: “Especially you! You are the greatest evil! You destroyed the immortal graveyard, Star Constellation’s will won’t be able to interfere with heaven’s will like before. If humanity is exterminated in the future, you will be the main culprit behind everything!!”

“Fang Yuan, oh Fang Yuan, you think you obtained victory by destroying fate Gu?”

“Hehehe, at best, this is only a giant joke.”

“My Heavenly Court thinks for humanity in all aspects, we offered our blood and sweat for the benefits of humanity, even sacrificing ourselves. And you people, for your own selfish interests, destroyed the great position that my Heavenly Court had maintained meticulously for millions of years.”

“My Heavenly Court can refine fate Gu again in the future, we can refine it secretly! We won’t let the five regions know of fate Gu’s refinement, will you find out about it?”

“Can you all stop us in time?”

“Even if you stop us the second or the third time. What about after that? Who can guarantee you can stop us from refining it again and again?”

“We will only refine rank six fate Gu, it is far easier than restoring it to rank nine!”

“Also, every time we fight because of fate Gu, humanity will suffer heavy losses and greatly expend its foundation. This will give variant humans the opportunity to rise up against us!”

Duke Long lamented with deep emotions as he said this.

“Who is this old man? I did not know that Heavenly Court did so many things in consideration for our entire human race!”

“Why did they invade Heavenly Court, what were these Gu Immortals thinking?”

“These people are all demons, they disregarded the big picture for their own interests! They are accursed sinners!”

The five regions’ mortals resonated with Duke Long.

Most of the mortals had extremely little understanding of the Gu Immortal world.

And the Gu Immortals scattered in the five regions were also silent when they heard Duke Long.

Heavenly Court was powerful, Heavenly Court was domineering, Heavenly Court occupied almost all the cultivation resources of Central Continent, Heavenly Court’s ambition stretched extremely far and actively interfered in major events of the other four regions.

But no one was able to deny Heavenly Court’s contribution in protecting humanity.

This was a fact!

“Ahhh, this is somewhat troublesome. Although it felt extremely satisfying to destroy fate Gu, there is some emptiness after the adrenaline rush, this is

a bit of a problem.” Inside the blood cape, Reckless Savage’s will mumbled while holding his head.

“Hehe, Duke Long, are you done?” Fang Yuan’s expression was indifferent, after destroying fate Gu, this was the first time he spoke and broke the silence.

Duke Long looked at Fang Yuan, his brows furrowed as he started feeling uneasy.

Fang Yuan was too calm! According to Fang Yuan’s intelligence, how could he not see the crucial point? Duke Long tried to think from another perspective, if he were Fang Yuan, he would definitely use all his strength to attack and not give the enemies the chance to speak.

Because once Duke Long spoke, he would create this current situation.

Indeed.

Duke Long’s words restored Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals’ morale and also suppressed the enemies’ spirit, he also raised Heavenly Court’s prestige and it was simply turning the situation around!

Duke Long was worthy of being the leader of Heavenly Court, he not only possessed terrifying strength worthy of the main pillar, at the crucial time, he could even lead and boost morale, changing people’s hearts.

How could Fang Yuan not see this?

But he did not stop Duke Long, Duke Long could even vaguely see a trace of anticipation in his eyes.

So what was Fang Yuan anticipating?

At the next moment, Fang Yuan chuckled: “Oh Duke Long, who told you that destroying fate Gu meant the end of this battle? You seem to have forgotten someone.”

Duke Long’s pupils shrank as he realized something.

He followed Fang Yuan's gaze and saw a river.

That was a phantom silhouette of the River of Time!

Calamity Luck Altar carried Red Lotus Demon Venerable's method — Call of the Ancient. From the start of the battle, this killer move's power had condensed into a phantom River of Time in Heavenly Court.

Northern Plains' past Gu Immortal experts walked out from this phantom river and created an extremely huge threat to Heavenly Court.

But as the battle continued, the phantom River of Time seemed to have gradually grown powerless as fewer and fewer of Northern Plains' experts were summoned.

At the late stage of the battle, this phantom River of Time seemed to be motionless and showed no traces of new figures emerging.

However, when Fang Yuan destroyed fate Gu, this phantom River of Time seemed like a beast that had broken free of its shackles, it started surging wildly and turbulently.

Swish swish swish...

The river water surged, raising astonishing waves.

A figure walked out slowly and naturally from the giant waves.

All the immortals present heard his voice:

“In my youth I shined in the light of spring, horses trampled on flowers as fragrance of wine spread.

Love and hatred came with the waves, summer cicadas sang as I woke up in the middle of the night.

Planting red lotuses in the River of Time, going back in time with my tears run dry.

Through the vicissitudes of life I return to this stage, the myriad beings anticipate a life unbound by fate!”

He had the appearance of a young man, his gaze seemed to have experienced countless vicissitudes, he wore a red robe, his face was pure as jade, his eyes were bright like stars, and his skin was white as snow.

He walked out from the phantom River of Time and stepped into Heavenly Court’s battlefield.

Everyone watched, there was complete silence all around.

His gaze moved around before fixing on Duke Long’s body.

Duke Long shook, his expression was extremely complicated as he opened his mouth, his lips moved but no words came out.

The young man smiled: “Master, have you been well?”

# **Chapter 1962 - I Have Destiny Immortal Gu's Recipe!**

## **1962 I Have Destiny Immortal Gu's Recipe!**

“Wow, this person came out of the river!”

“Why is there a river in the sky?”

“The young man who walked out is really handsome!”

“I still think that the fairy in the red cape looks nicer.”

Because of the killer move everybody's vision, the mortals of the five regions saw this scene, they discussed enthusiastically and rowdily.

Mortals and Gu Masters might not understand the severity of the situation, but most of the Gu Immortals knew who this mysterious young man was.

At once, Gu Immortals of the five regions were shaken, it was as if a world destroying tornado was rampaging in their hearts.

“This Gu Immortal, it can't be?”

“Is he Red Lotus Demon Venerable?!”

Among the generations of venerables, Red Lotus Demon Venerable was the most mysterious one. Back then, Heavenly Court used everything to nurture him but their efforts were in vain. Not only did Red Lotus not become an Immortal Venerable, he even became a Demon Venerable, betraying the righteous path and damaging fate Gu. There was also the problem of the dragonman race mixed within this, Heavenly Court had to disregard costs and make information path great experts use their most profound methods to eliminate the influence of this event.

Moreover, Red Lotus Demon Venerable had constantly been reborn, he changed his style of action and wanted to preserve Heavenly Court's reputation for the sake of his master, he started to act secretly in the dark.

Thus, most Gu Immortals did not know the true appearance of Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

But they all heard the mysterious young looking Gu Immortal call Duke Long his master. He had also walked out of the phantom River of Time...

Everyone knew that Duke Long was the master of Red Lotus.

"But why did this happen? Didn't Red Lotus Demon Venerable die?"

"He might be a new disciple of Duke Long."

The Gu Immortals of the five regions were uncertain, but Heavenly Court's battlefield was full of experienced experts, there were many super forces behind them that had secretive information regarding Red Lotus Demon Venerable, they knew quite a lot of things.

Thus, be they Heavenly Court or the three regions' Gu Immortals, they looked at the young Gu Immortal while dazed like rocks, they were numb from shock.

They recognized the young Gu Immortal's identity.

It was really Red Lotus Demon Venerable!

The three regions' Gu Immortals were shaken, Red Lotus Demon Venerable was the disciple of Duke Long, seeing his attitude towards Duke Long, it still carried concern and respect.

Heavenly Court did not dare to act rashly. After all, Red Lotus Demon Venerable had invaded Heavenly Court in the past, damaging fate Gu. After that, in order to repair fate Gu, Heavenly Court spent over a million years, countless resources and manpower. They managed to repair it in the end, but it was a pity that Red Lotus' inheritor, Fang Yuan, destroyed it! It was truly infuriating!

And most importantly, there was Red Lotus Demon Venerable's cultivation level!

He was a venerable with rank nine battle strength, once he appeared, who could face him in combat?

Even the powerful Duke Long, even the colossal Di Zang Sheng, even Fang Yuan who wore the blood battle cape, were no match for the rank nine Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

Nobody held any doubt regarding this.

The young looking Red Lotus guessed everyone's thoughts, he walked on thin air as he got to the center of the battlefield, he smiled: "Everyone, no need to worry, I have already died. Now that fate Gu is destroyed while call of the ancient has barely any power left, I am merely Red Lotus' will."

Red Lotus' will was vivid and solid like it was the real person.

But upon close inspection, one would realize that there were differences between it and an actual Gu Immortal.

The immortals managed to discern this as they let out sighs of relief.

Red Lotus did not lie, this was his will, not his main body.

His reputation was too great, he appeared in a shocking manner, everyone could not help but think of it as the worst case situation. After Red Lotus



informed them, they realized the truth.

The bad feeling in Duke Long's heart was getting heavier.

Duke Long snorted coldly, shouting: "Red Lotus, even though you have died, you are still not willing to give up that heretical thought? You won this time, thanks to you, fate Gu has been destroyed by your chosen pawn."

Red Lotus shook his head: "Master, this is not a win, precisely so, I had to show up."

"What are you trying to do?" Duke Long frowned, the bad feeling in his heart intensified.

Red Lotus replied with action, his body flickered as he appeared before Fang Yuan instantly.

Fang Yuan looked at Red Lotus' will with a calm expression, his gaze was dark like the night sky.

He had very deep ties with this venerable. The Spring Autumn Cicada that he had used to turn situations around many times was the time path Immortal Gu created by this person.

"You did very well. I am sure you've guessed what I am going to do now?" Red Lotus' will smiled at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan replied: "Somewhat."

"Even though fate Gu is destroyed, the truth is that to use it as a Gu material to refine destiny Gu, we will need an otherworldly demon like you. Thanks to someone's help, you finally became a complete otherworldly demon." Red Lotus' will said this as he looked far away, towards the periphery of the battlefield where Spectral Soul and his servants were hiding.

Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan were perspiring profusely. Even though this was just Red Lotus' will, he was simply too terrifying, finding out their hiding spot with one glance.

At the hiding spot, Spectral Soul had already returned to human form, he looked at Red Lotus' will with a complex expression.

This was not the first time he had met Red Lotus' will, his memories surfaced from the depths of his mind.

Back then, he became a soul path venerable, he entered the River of Time to explore its secrets. Even though Spectral Soul Demon Venerable cultivated soul path, with his foundation, he could freely enter and exit the River of Time.

As the mysterious fog appeared, a stone lotus island appeared in front of him of its own initiative.

He stepped onto the stone lotus island as Red Lotus' will smiled and invited him: "I have been waiting, Spectral Soul. Let us make a deal?"

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable agreed to the transaction. Therefore, he learned of fate Gu, and also the truth behind the historical invasion of Heavenly Court by the three Demon Venerables. He gave up on the plan to attack Heavenly Court, he went to design and create sovereign immortal fetus Gu instead.

Red Lotus' will looked at Spectral Soul, using his gaze as an indication — it is time to carry out our transaction.

Spectral Soul chuckled as he ordered Old Man Zheng Yuan: "Gather all of the human will, send it all to Fang Yuan."

Old Man Zheng Yuan immediately moved.

At once, the vast amount of human will from Heavenly Court surged. These wills were of all varieties and colors, they were filled with ugly desires or beautiful dreams, one could indulge in them and lose their way, they were beautiful and ugly at the same time. People wanted them but also hated them.

Red Lotus' will looked at the vast amount of will that resembled a rainbow sea.

He turned around and smiled at Fang Yuan, before entering the ocean of human will personally.

The human wills engulfed him instantly, next, fire started burning out of nowhere, resembling blazing red lotuses that burned the sea of wills.

Duke Long saw this and became enraged, this was not something a mere will could achieve: "Red Lotus, back then when you attacked Heavenly Court, you actually left this arrangement behind!"

Before he finished speaking, Duke Long flew up, wanting to destroy the human wills.

"Don't even think about it!" Wu Shuai was prepared for this, he manipulated Dragon Palace to stop him.

Both sides fought, Dragon Palace was soon forced to retreat.

"What are you all waiting for?" Duke Long shouted at all the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals jolted, they started to approach Fang Yuan and the vast sea of wills.

The three regions' Gu Immortals were not going to watch, a huge battle erupted again!

"No matter what Red Lotus is doing, it must be disadvantageous to Heavenly Court, this is something we want to see." Wu Yong's eyes shined with bright light, he shot out countless wind blades around him.

Di Zang Sheng roared angrily, it coiled his body around Fang Yuan and the human wills, resisting killer moves using its body as a shield, growling in pain but refusing to retreat.

Bing Sai Chuan rode in Calamity Luck Altar as he resisted Demon Judgment Board. He had a complex gaze, it looked like Red Lotus Demon Venerable was going to refine destiny Gu as well. This went against Longevity Heaven's goal but he could not stop it or retreat now, he had to fight first.

The flames burned the human wills, emitting a dense, sharp fragrance.

After Red Lotus' will fused into the human wills, the vast sea of wills cooperated with Fang Yuan, entering the flames.

Lumps of flames spread out, quickly expanding into a sea of fire.

The surrounding temperature rose, if rank six Gu Immortals were not putting up a defense, they would instantly melt due to the flames.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, the bloody cape protected him, he stood in the sea of fire but he did not make a move.

A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal could not help but laugh: "Fang Yuan is not making a move, he looks like he does not have destiny Immortal Gu's recipe!"

Fang Yuan looked at the person who was speaking from within the flames, he smiled coldly as he tone carried a hint of pity: "I do not have it, but here in this battlefield, somebody does."

"Who?!" The fighting immortals all had this question in their heads.

"Find them and kill them!" The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals subconsciously had such thoughts.

"Find them and protect them!" The three regions' Gu Immortals instantly made their decision.

Fang Yuan silently shifted his gaze towards Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge also looked at him.

The two looked at each other through the sea of fire, they stared at each other as if the surrounding fights in the battlefield were far away from them.

Feng Jiu Ge breathed in deeply, he slowly shut his eyes.

Next, he opened his mouth and started to sing, the tune of destiny song spread throughout the battlefield.

“Feng Jiu Ge has attacked again!”

“Let’s kill Fang Yuan, let’s exterminate the human will!”

“Exterminate the human will first, Fang Yuan is secondary.”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were energized, but at the next moment, they screamed in shock.

They were not powered up by destiny song, instead, the three regions’ Gu Immortals gained a boost in strength.

“Feng Jiu Ge, what are you doing?!” Duke Long was furious and shocked, he turned around and looked at Feng Jiu Ge like a furious blood dragon.

“Father!” Feng Jin Huang’s voice was filled with utter shock, it could be heard clearly as well.

“Feng Jiu Ge, why are you doing this? You betrayed Heavenly Court! How dare you, how can you do this!!” Qin Ding Ling screamed in a shrill voice, she was extremely furious. In order to nurture Feng Jiu Ge, she had even given him her responsive luck Immortal Gu.

But Feng Jiu Ge actually ‘repaid’ her like this!

Feng Jiu Ge had a calm expression, he did not stop singing.

At this very moment, he betrayed Heavenly Court unhesitantly, joining Fang Yuan and the three regions’ allied forces!

# **Chapter 1963 - Feng Jiu Ge's Red Lotus True Inheritance**

## **1963 Feng Jiu Ge's Red Lotus True Inheritance**

The tune of destiny song filled the battlefield, but at this moment, Feng Jiu Ge's opponent was Heavenly Court.

Regardless of the shock and perplexity of both sides, Feng Jiu Ge was immersed in his own singing, at the same time, memories surfaced in his mind.

During the second invasion of Lang Ya blessed land...

Fang Yuan set up a formation in the blessed land, Feng Jiu Ge and Chen Yi were isolated.

Feng Jiu Ge faced Fang Yuan alone.

"My Gu worms are vanishing mysteriously! How can this be? This should be a theft path method. Is it Fang Yuan's method or this formation's?" Feng Jiu Ge was shocked.

Because Fang Yuan had theft path methods, Feng Jiu Ge was at a disadvantage.

As time passed, his Gu worms got stolen one by one, among them were several sound path Immortal Gu.

Feng Jiu Ge's battle strength fell greatly, he had to choose to use fixed immortal travel Immortal Gu to escape for now.

Suppress space Immortal Gu!

But Fang Yuan suddenly used his prepared method, Feng Jiu Ge failed to escape.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

Next, Fang Yuan even stole the Fixed Immortal Travel that he was after.

Feng Jiu Ge's heart turned icy cold, he knew that he was in a desperate situation!

But at this moment, he received Fang Yuan's secret transmission: "Oh Feng Jiu Ge, I will not kill you, I will not steal fate armor Immortal Gu either. You and I are not on the same side, but you and Heavenly Court are not aligned in beliefs either. Face your true inner self, what do you truly want? Let me ask you, have you started comprehending destiny song already?"

Feng Jiu Ge initially thought that this was a trap by Fang Yuan to affect his fighting spirit and determination, but soon he became very perplexed.

Fang Yuan actually slowed down his attacks, he stopped forcing him.

This made Feng Jiu Ge think involuntarily —

"What does Fang Yuan mean by this?"

"He knows I have fate armor Immortal Gu? He reacted so perfectly when we attacked Lang Ya blessed land this time, he made ample preparations, does this mean he used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth?"

"If he really is reborn, what happened in the previous life? From his words, why does it seem like I will diverge from Heavenly Court?"

At this time, Fang Yuan transmitted again: “Oh Feng Jiu Ge, I know you are full of questions and suspicions. Don’t worry, as time passes, you will understand what I mean. Next, I will open the formation and give Chen Yi the false impression that he broke it. I am sure he will teleport you away, hehehe, we will meet again, Feng Jiu Ge.”

“Fang Yuan, explain yourself clearly!” Feng Jiu Ge transmitted.

But at the next moment, an explosion occurred as the formation space that was isolated became connected.

Chen Yi saw Feng Jiu Ge in danger and quickly shouted loudly: “Hang on, I’m coming!”

“Be careful, the enemy has a way to steal Gu worms.” Feng Jiu Ge hesitated briefly before immediately giving Chen Yi critical information.

During the fight, Fang Yuan attacked ferociously, he critically injured Feng Jiu Ge, fate armor Immortal Gu was activated.

In order to save Feng Jiu Ge, Chen Yi used karma relocation.

Feng Jiu Ge was shocked: “Fang Yuan was right, Chen Yi really had a way to send me out!”

“Feng Jiu Ge, you managed to escape this time, but next time will be different.” Fang Yuan had a plain expression.

This sentence had a different meaning when it was heard by Feng Jiu Ge.

...

In the battle of Lang Ya blessed land, Heavenly Court lost.

After the battle, Feng Jiu Ge considered Fang Yuan’s words.

“He could have killed me but he did not take my life. Why?”



“Fang Yuan is a demon with a ruthless and vicious personality, he only cares about benefits! He let me go, there is only one reason, I will be a big help to him in the future.”

“But I am a Central Continent member, a prospective member of Heavenly Court, the Dao Guardian of my daughter Feng Jin Huang! Don’t tell me... there will be conflict between me and Heavenly Court?”

“If Fang Yuan is reborn from the future, does that mean that in his previous life, I opposed Heavenly Court, I was his natural ally?”

As he held such concerns, Feng Jiu Ge did not inform Fairy Zi Wei of this situation.

The thing that moved him the most was the destiny song that Fang Yuan mentioned.

“Destiny song...” Feng Jiu Ge had a vague sensation and inspiration, but his inspiration was too faint and far away, he could not grab onto it.

But he knew that this was a direction.

He continued to explore it, soon gaining some fragmented comprehension.

Until one day, when he was stationed at Embroidered Tower, he looked at the three bloody skins left behind by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable.

All of the comprehension that he had during this period underwent a qualitative transformation.

Feng Jiu Ge’s soul was deeply stirred, he could not help but smile: “It seems that my next song will be — Destiny Song!”

...

In the battle of the River of Time.

Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge met again.

“How is the creation of destiny song going?” They fought intensely on the surface but Fang Yuan was secretly transmitting to him.

Feng Jiu Ge: “Fang Yuan, what is it that you know?”

“Hehehe. Come to the River of Time more often, you should have realized that being here greatly helps your comprehension and creation of destiny song. But the most helpful thing is still the Red Lotus true inheritance on the stone lotus island.” Fang Yuan said.

“What do you mean?” Feng Jiu Ge asked.

“According to my estimations, that should be a true inheritance that Red Lotus Demon Venerable specially left behind for you, it will help you greatly.” Fang Yuan said.

Feng Jiu Ge hesitated for a moment before answering: “I will not owe you this favor without repaying it. Let me tell you this, in Heavenly Court’s Embroidered Tower, there are three true inheritances left behind by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable. Each one requires a key, they are attitude Gu, mutation Gu, and adaptation Gu.”

“Oh?!” A sharp light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

He did not think that Feng Jiu Ge was lying, the items were inside Heavenly Court, there was no need to lie. Back then, to repay the favor of saving him in the winds of assimilation, Feng Jiu Ge blocked Wu Yong’s assault. Now, it also fitted Feng Jiu Ge’s nature to expose this secret true inheritance to him.

In this battle, Fang Yuan still let him go, causing Feng Jiu Ge to survive again.

...

Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention started, multiple battlefields were created as Gu Immortals fought intensely.

At such a crucial timing, Feng Jiu Ge was instead inside the River of Time.

“That... really is a stone lotus island?” Feng Jiu Ge was shook internally, the stone lotus island within the mist appeared in front of him, as Fang Yuan had predicted.

He saw Red Lotus’ will on the island.

Red Lotus’ will smiled: “You are finally here, Feng Jiu Ge. This is the true inheritance that I left specially for you.”

Feng Jiu Ge frowned: “No matter how much you give me, it will not change my stance.”

Red Lotus’ will shook his head: “I had never thought of bribing you, your choice is your own decision. I just feel that this true inheritance should be left to you. Of course, you can refuse to take it. Even if you destroy it, I am not going to stop you.”

Feng Jiu Ge believed in himself, after considering it, he decided to accept the true inheritance, he immersed himself in a certain segment of the memories of Red Lotus’ life.

Red Lotus was undergoing tribulation, trying to get to rank nine venerable realm.

The terrifying might of the calamities and tribulations made Feng Jiu Ge extremely shocked and fearful!

After the tribulation was over, only half of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who helped Red Lotus were alive. The most painful thing to Red Lotus was that his wife Liu Shu Xian had died.

This was his most beloved woman.

“Don’t leave me, Shu Xian!” Red Lotus hugged Liu Shu Xian as tears poured down his face.

Liu Shu Xian smiled: “It’s no use, I have been struck by the tribulation. Having a trace of my soul left to take a final look at you is already an enormous fortune. How could I possibly ask for more?”

“I am useless, I am useless! I underwent tribulation but implicated you!”  
Hong Ting’s head was lowered with tears rolling down his eyes.

“No, Hong Ting. That tribulation could only have been blocked by my special physique. Even if you all sacrificed your lives, you would only have failed. I was born with one of the ten extreme physiques and encountered you, it was all fate’s arrangement. In your fatal moment, I suddenly understood the greatest meaning of my life, it was to protect you, to block the tribulation for you and help you ascend to the position of an Immortal Venerable! Now... I have accomplished it.”

“No, No! Xian Er, I would rather not be an Immortal Venerable, I only want you to live, I only want you to live!” Hong Ting roared helplessly, his body was shaking and his tears were falling.

“Everything and everyone in this world has its own respective fate, it is fixed. Hong Ting, you cannot have such thoughts, you need to live on properly, your fate is to become an Immortal Venerable, lead Heavenly Court and spread the glory of the righteous path throughout the five regions... Do you know? I had always been wanting to see that scene, standing by your side and accompanying you as you bring fortune to the world with invincible might. Unfortunately, I won’t be able to see it...”

Liu Shu Xian’s life force gradually fell, until she died.

Hong Ting’s head was lowered and his back was bent deeply like an old man, a heavy shadow shrouded his face.

At this moment, he seemed to have lost all signs of life.

Incomparable grief, it was as if his heart had died!

Regret Gu formed in Red Lotus’ immortal aperture, he decided to change everything. For the sake of this, he turned on Duke Long and Heavenly Court.

He went on the opposite path!

Red Lotus used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth tens or hundreds of times.

The tribulation faded, this time, even though Liu Shu Xian was heavily injured, she still had one breath left.

“Xian Er, you are still alive, you are still alive, this is great!” Red Lotus was overjoyed.

Guh.

Liu Shu Xian suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood, her last breath was used up.

“Xian Er!!” Red Lotus was shocked, he looked at Liu Shu Xian’s corpse in a daze as his eyes turned red.

“I can still do it, I can see hope. As long as I continue working hard, I will definitely become strong enough to save Xian Er’s life!” A fierce light flashed in Red Lotus’ eyes, he muttered to himself as if he had gone into a demonic trance.

Rebirth after rebirth, he continued to be reborn.

Using the advantage of rebirth, he got stronger and stronger, he became more capable of handling different situations. He had abundant experience, he made use of every portion of resources and elevated his strength to his greatest limit.

However, like an endless loop, each time, he had to face the tribulation of becoming a venerable.

The scale and might of the tribulation was adjusted according to the changes that happened to Red Lotus! This made sure that the result of the tribulation had never changed.

Those Gu Immortals that should have died still died, including Liu Shu Xian.

Red Lotus continued to try without giving up. Ten times, a hundred times, a thousand times, ten thousand times!

He analyzed, he calculated, he maximized the value of every single resource he had, he asked for all the help he needed from Heavenly Court to the best of their ability.

...

“Xian Er!” Red Lotus hugged Liu Shu Xian.

Liu Shu Xian gave him a final glance: “It is great that you are safe.” After saying that, she died.

...

“Xian Er!” Red Lotus hugged Liu Shu Xian again.

Liu Shu Xian did not have the strength to talk, she exerted her strength and wanted to raise her hand to touch Red Lotus’ face but she did not succeed. Midway, her arms fell to the ground.

...

“Xian Er!” Red Lotus shouted furiously, he watched as Liu Shu Xian was reduced to ashes within the lightning tribulation.

...

“Shu Xian.” Red Lotus looked at Liu Shu Xian who was badly poisoned, his footsteps slowed down.

Liu Shu Xian’s entire body was black-purple, poisonous blood flowed out of her seven orifices, she smiled pitifully: “Hong Ting, don’t be sad because of me. All the sacrifices are worth it, you must become a venerable, you will lead Heavenly Court and the whole of humanity.”

These were her final words.

Red Lotus stopped walking, he stared at the pool of poisonous water formed from Liu Shu Xian's corpse, he held his fist as he gritted his teeth: "She died again! I need to continue working harder!!"

...

"Shu Xian!" After the tribulation, Red Lotus flew towards Liu Shu Xian again.

Liu Shu Xian shook her head, she was pale: "I am going to die, I can no longer accompany you, my most beloved."

"It will depend on the situation to see if you die. Let me check!" Red Lotus had not given up.

"I know my own condition, listen to me, at the final moment of my life, I want to tell you..." Liu Shu Xian's aura got weaker as she spoke weakly with pauses in the middle.

Red Lotus did not listen to her, he was focused on inspecting her body condition.

The result was that there was no way to save her, by the time he reacted, Liu Shu Xian who was in his arms had already died.

"There must be some way, I can definitely improve further!" Red Lotus reminded himself.

...

Attempts after attempts, failure after failure.

It was as if Hong Ting was trapped, no matter what method he used, even if he avoided the tribulation, Liu Shu Xian still died.

Feng Jiu Ge watched Red Lotus fail time and time again, he repeated attempts after attempts, an intense feeling of sadness and grief accumulated in his heart.

He watched as Red Lotus screamed, he watched as Red Lotus got agitated, he watched as Red Lotus gritted his teeth, he watched as Red Lotus left in hatred, as he went through another cycle of rebirth.

Each time, Red Lotus carried hope, but he gained disappointment instead.

The tribulation to become venerable was unavoidable, he could not give up on it, but he could not control it either.

Liu Shu Xian was a wall that could not be avoided. Each time Red Lotus was reborn, he would need to accept this cruel fact. Each time he tried, he would see his beloved woman die in the end. Each time he got injured, the pain in his heart would be the same as physical pain on his body, but Red Lotus still continued to rebirth, it was as if he were holding a knife to his heart, stabbing at it continuously.

Even though Feng Jiu Ge held deep admiration and sympathy for Red Lotus, he alerted himself to control his emotions, this might be a venerable method after all.

As an observer, Feng Jiu Ge kept a cool perspective, he gradually realized: In the initial stages, Red Lotus would still scream at heaven in great agony whenever she died.

But towards the later stages, Red Lotus stubbornly analyzed the situation with a rational mind, his expression was dark.

At the final stage, Red Lotus' efficiency got higher and higher, whenever he saw that Liu Shu Xian could not be saved, he would instantly rebirth without any hesitation.

Finally, there was one attempt.

Liu Shu Xian fell on the ground, the bones in her entire body were broken, she laid in a pool of blood with her final breath left.

Red Lotus descended rapidly, quickly approaching her.



“Hong Ting... I am going to die, you must...” Liu Shu Xian smiled, watching as Red Lotus rapidly approached her.

Red Lotus had a cold expression, he looked at her impassively: “There is no saving you. I failed again but it is alright, I will never give up, I am going to try once more.”

Liu Shu Xian was shocked: “Hong Ting, what are you saying?”

Red Lotus turned around and left as Liu Shu Xian who was behind him called out with her dying breath: “Hong Ting...”

Red Lotus moved quickly initially but when he heard Liu Shu Xian’s desperate cry, his footsteps slowed down as he came to a halt.

He looked down at his two hands.

In the deathly silence, Red Lotus stared with wide eyes, his body started to shake.

Suddenly, he felt like he could see himself, at this moment, he felt utter shock, there was a sense of immense fear in him.

# Chapter 1964 - Red Lotus“ Death

## 1964 Red Lotus“ Death

“Why? Why did I become such a scary person?”

In the past, Hong Ting would feel grief at Liu Shu Xian’s death, he would feel regret and hatred. He would hug Liu Shu Xian’s corpse as he knelt on the ground, crying his heart out.

But now?

Facing Liu Shu Xian’s death, seeing the final moment of Liu Shu Xian’s life, towards the lover who only wanted to spend her final breath talking to her most beloved, Red Lotus turned around and left!

Was this Liu Shu Xian not the real Liu Shu Xian?

Of course she was real!

Red Lotus was clear about this.

She was still her, that same Liu Shu Xian, regardless of how many times Red Lotus was reborn, her determination and actions had never changed. She was willing to sacrifice herself to protect her lover, she used her life to block his venerable tribulation!

But...

Liu Shu Xian was still Liu Shu Xian, but Hong Ting was no longer the same Hong Ting.

“Since when did it start? Since when did I turn into this?” Red Lotus asked his inner self.

This question was not hard at all, he soon found the answer.

His countless rebirths, his countless attempts, the countless times Liu Shu Xian died, and the countless times he received disappointment!

His heart was hurt time and again, he bled each time, before the scab formed, Hong Ting tore open his wounds once more.

He was hurt too many times, he felt pain too many times, he regretted too many times.

Too many times indeed, eventually, he got used to it, he became... gradually numb.

Thus, he started to calculate with precision.

Thus, he started to analyze rationally.

He used every resource he had to strengthen himself and equip himself. He tried different methods in search of the strongest and most likely solution to preserve Liu Shu Xian's life when he underwent his tribulation.

When he started to think rationally, when he started to feel rational about Liu Shu Xian's death, even though he forced himself to be rational at the start, he changed.

Next, slowly, step by step, he turned into someone that he did not recognize.

This person made him feel extremely shocked and fearful.

Followed by a deep sense of helplessness!

This scene left an extremely deep impression in Feng Jiu Ge —

Red Lotus stood on the spot, lowering his arms, he was young but his back was hunched, like an old man about to die.

Silently, two trails of tears flowed down his cheeks.

Silently weeping.

Behind Red Lotus, there was Liu Shu Xian who called him with her dying breath, hoping that he would turn around, so that she could see her most beloved person at the final moment of her life.

But Red Lotus did not turn around to look at her.

Red Lotus no longer loved her.

After all, if he really loved this person in his heart and she was about to die, would he coldly turn around to leave?

Of course he would not!

Even though his goal was to use rebirth to save Liu Shu Xian, that was only a deeply rooted objective that he had.

The reason behind it was no longer love.

It was truly laughable.

He wanted to save the most beloved person in his life, but along the way, Red Lotus lost his love.

No matter how many times Liu Shu Xian died, she did not betray him, she sacrificed herself for him.

But Red Lotus himself had changed.

He betrayed his past self, he betrayed Liu Shu Xian.

He wanted to rebirth and change the past, but to think that it was rebirth that changed him.

From now what, what should he do?

Since he no longer loved Liu Shu Xian, why should he continue to rebirth and try to save her?

Of course, he had other regrets, he loved his parents deeply.

But did Red Lotus dare to attempt this?

He could almost tell the results already. After witnessing the death of his parents time and again, he would get used to it, he would get numb, he would accept this result that was decreed by fate.

Red Lotus did not dare!

Then, should he accept this result? After rebirth, should he pretend to be unaware of everything, to follow the path set by Fate and become a venerable, before becoming the Heavenly Court Immortal Venerable that everyone including his master wanted to see?

Red Lotus did not want that!

He still had love in his heart, towards his parents and master. Because there was love, there was also regret.

He also had hatred in his heart, he hated Fate, because he no longer loved Liu Shu Xian, he also hated himself. He had all sorts of complex emotions in his heart, Red Lotus was unsure about them himself.

Red Lotus asked himself truthfully, he inspected his inner self.

He still wanted to destroy fate Gu.

But the intention was already different.

He started to research and found more of the hidden profundities within The Legends of Ren Zuu. When he comprehended the crucial factor, love Gu, he successfully used it to save Liu Shu Xian's life!

Of course, the price was that Red Lotus succeeded in the tribulation but did not become venerable.

As an observer, Feng Jiu Ge understood clearly: This was definitely a major breakthrough!

The venerable tribulation could not be controlled by man.

No matter how Red Lotus stalled it, he had to undergo tribulation eventually.

But using love Immortal Gu, he finally changed a fixed result! Instead of dying, Liu Shu Xian managed to survive.

Of course, there was a backlash of Red Lotus not becoming venerable, that was also a result.

Both results changed!

“Shu Xian, Shu Xian, you are still alive! You finally survived!” Red Lotus who succeeded was very excited, he hugged Liu Shu Xian.

Liu Shu Xian was in low spirits: “What is going on? Hong Ting, you did not become venerable?!”

Red Lotus laughed loudly: “That is because I used love Gu. Do you know how many times I was reborn while trying to save you? You should have died during the tribulation, but because of my countless attempts, I researched the human path methods contained within u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e...”

Red Lotus was incredibly excited, he talked about his difficult journey, his experiences and hard work, the trials and ordeals that he went through each time in his experimentation.

“But I finally succeeded, I finally succeeded!” Red Lotus raised his arms and cheered: “Even though this is a minor change, this is the proper direction. One day, I will succeed completely!”

Slap.

A crisp sound was heard as Liu Shu Xian gave Red Lotus a slap.

Red Lotus instantly froze, his cheering came to a stop as he stared at Liu Shu Xian.

Liu Shu Xian's eyes had tears: "Hong Ting, are you still yourself? You actually had such heretical thoughts? You actually wanted to change the past! You defied fate, no wonder you failed to become venerable after the tribulation! You did all these just so I could survive?"

"All those people who helped you in the tribulation, what about the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who were sacrificed? You said that you are doing all this for me, but have you ever considered my feelings?!"

"I, Liu Shu Xian, was born with one of the ten extreme physiques and encountered you, it was all fate's arrangement. In your fatal moment, I understood the greatest meaning of my life, it was to protect you, to block the tribulation for you and help you ascend to the position of an Immortal Venerable!"

"But you actually did this! For me, you abandoned the most precious chance to become venerable!"

"If you cannot become venerable, what will happen to Heavenly Court? What will happen to the world? What about humanity?"

"You forgot your master's teachings, you let down the expectations of your deceased parents! I am truly hurt, my heart really hurts!"

"I would rather sacrifice myself!"

"Your love towards me is just a small love. Greater love is for humanity, for the myriad living beings in this world!"

"Hong Ting, I am truly disappointed in you."

Liu Shu Xian cried profusely.

Red Lotus stared at Liu Shu Xian in a daze, after a long while, he let out a breath of air.

“So that was it.” Red Lotus had a calm expression, his gaze became eerie and dark.

Liu Shu Xian grabbed his arms: “Quickly think of a method, you must have some way, right? Let everything return to its original path as decreed by Fate, even if I have to be sacrificed. How can our love compare to the greater love of heaven and earth, how can it compare to the grand ambitions of Heavenly Court?”

“Guh!” Liu Shu Xian’s body suddenly shook, she lowered her head as she looked at her chest.

Red Lotus’s hand directly stabbed into her heart, it was a fatal blow!

Liu Shu Xian looked at her lover in disbelief.

“Maybe killing you will return everything to its original path.” Red Lotus looked at Liu Shu Xian in the eye as he said plainly.

Liu Shu Xian showed a blissful smile as he said: “Hong Ting, I was not wrong about you. Please... please become a venerable.”

At the next moment, she died again.

Similar to the countless times Red Lotus had experienced, Liu Shu Xian died again.

But compared to the countless times Red Lotus had experienced, there was a difference.

Liu Shu Xian was truly dead!

In Red Lotus’s heart, she was completely dead!

From then on, she never lived again.



Red Lotus looked at her corpse with calm emotions, there was not even any ripple in his heart.

The woman he had once loved deeply, he was willing to give up anything for her, he was reborn time and time again, working hard to save this woman who he had never given up on.

But now, he killed her.

He personally killed her!

Red Lotus felt no regret in his heart, he even gained some insight.

The cause of this tragedy was in Heavenly Court, it was fate Gu.

At this moment, his determination to destroy fate Gu could not be any firmer!

Feng Jiu Ge felt the scene in front of him change.

Heavenly Court.

The battle was over, the entire area was in ruins.

On the damaged top floor of Heaven Overseeing Tower, Duke Long and Red Lotus faced each other.

Duke Long had evidently undergone a tough battle, he was covered in blood and injuries.

He looked at Red Lotus as he sighed deeply: “Oh Hong Ting, one mistake leads to countless mistakes, to think that you have already reached this point. You want to destroy fate Gu? Go ahead.”

Saying this, Duke Long took the initiative to give way!

Red Lotus was slightly shocked, he walked towards fate Gu. Most Gu worms had fragile bodies, but no matter how much force he used, fate Gu was like the strongest object in the world, he could not destroy it.

“Regardless of what method you use, you cannot destroy fate Gu. Hong Ting, you are not the only one, be they Limitless Demon Venerable or Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, they came here in the past, but their methods were all useless against fate Gu.”

“In this world, only a complete otherworldly demon can destroy fate Gu! But otherworldly demons are not complete when they come into our world. Thus, nobody in this world can destroy fate Gu.”

Duke Long said this as he showed intense fatigue: “Hong Ting, come back! It is not too late to turn over a new leaf! Even though you have sinned greatly and made many mistakes, Heavenly Court and I are willing to give you a chance to redeem yourself, we can start over again!”

Even at this point, Duke Long was still urging Red Lotus, he was unwilling to give up.

Red Lotus was silent for a long time, he turned around to face Duke Long, smiling: “Oh master, since the two Demon Venerables could not destroy fate Gu, why did you not place fate Gu in front of me from the start, to let me try doing so and give up?”

Duke Long was silent.

Red Lotus continued as he smiled: “That means you are afraid too, right? You are afraid that I might have a brand new method that is able to destroy fate Gu.”

Duke Long smiled bitterly: “Of course. Times are changing, Gu cultivation paths are emerging endlessly. Many theories in the past are no longer appropriate now, even I am unsure if there is really a way to destroy fate Gu. But at this time, I can no longer stop you, I can only take a risk and try. But you’ve seen the result yourself, too?”

Red Lotus pondered: “Fate Gu arranged the lives of everyone and everything in this world, you and I, even a rock or a ripple in a lake is part of this. But master, have you ever thought about it?”

“A human is not a rock nor a ripple, we have cognition. If a person is not happy with the life arranged by fate, what should this person do?”

Duke Long looked at Red Lotus: “You’ve read The Legends of Ren Zu too, when Ren Zu met fate Gu, he tried to escape from its restraints and pursue freedom Gu. What happened to him? He did not manage to grasp freedom, he lost himself and became insane, he sank into madness!”

“This is the outcome, this is the warning! A person has to accept their fate and live their life, they have to shoulder the responsibilities given to them by fate, they need to do what they are tasked to do!!”

Red Lotus laughed loudly: “I understand, thank you master for the teaching.”

Duke Long saw that his expression was strange, he felt something amiss.

At the next moment, extreme fear and shock appeared on Duke Long’s face.

He found that as Red Lotus exerted strength in his fingers, the fate Gu in his hand was actually shaking lightly, cracks appeared all over its body.

“Red Lotus!!” Duke Long was furious, he attacked.

He went all out!

Red Lotus did not dodge at all, he was hit by Duke Long.

This was a fatal injury!

“You?!” Duke Long was shocked, he suddenly realized that Red Lotus had purposely angered him so that he would deal a fatal blow.

At the final moment of his life, Red Lotus still smiled as he faced Duke Long: “Master, I’ve always admired and cared for you, even after countless rebirths, my admiration towards you have never decreased.”

“But now, I need you to understand something. Look at me.”

“Fate has given such preferential treatment to me, arranging such high status and accomplishments. But I was not happy, I wanted to rebel. Then let me ask you, in this world, there are countless others who lead worse lives than me, what do they think of Fate?”

“People are not rocks or ripples, we have cognition. The truth is, cognitive madness is the most scary thing, it is the most powerful!”

Saying so, Red Lotus handed fate Gu to Duke Long.

“This is all I can do.”

“Love Gu is able to damage Fate. Hehehe, master, are you shocked?”

“It is a pity that I am not an otherworldly demon.”

“But I tried my best to make arrangements, I did everything that I could. I left hope for the future! Other than that, there is nothing to look forward to in my life, I might as well die like this now.”

“But I believe that one day, one day in the future, fate Gu will be destroyed! Even if it is not me, someone else will do it.”

“I want to believe that in the future, I will not be alone, a group of people will attempt to destroy Fate.”

“Master, you cannot stop it, Heavenly Court cannot stop it, because you cannot stop people from thinking with their free will!”

# **Chapter 1965 - He Was Still Feng Jiu Ge**

## **1965 He Was Still Feng Jiu Ge**

On stone lotus island, Feng Jiu Ge browsed through the memories left behind by Red Lotus.

He returned to reality.

Red Lotus' will was like a real person, extremely vivid: "Other than my memories, I have two things for you. One is rank eight future self killer move, the other is the Immortal Gu recipe of destiny Gu."

Next, Red Lotus' will explained in detail: "Rank eight future self killer move will allow you to instantly gain pseudo venerable battle strength. After all, you are the Dao Guardian of the predestined Great Dream Immortal Venerable. In history, as long as Dao Guardians matured, they would have such a cultivation level. Future self will also allow you to utilize your strongest state in the future at this moment."

"As for destiny Gu's Immortal Gu recipe, even though it is just an incomplete Gu recipe, it was created according to the destiny song that you will create in the future. It has the same origin as your destiny song."

"A thousand years later, you will create the complete destiny song. But I cannot give it to you directly, because fate Gu is not destroyed completely yet, it will not allow this."

“Thus, I used another method, converting it into a rank nine destiny Gu recipe, it will be a huge help to you, you will comprehend destiny song in its initial form.”

Feng Jiu Ge was moved.

The true inheritance from Red Lotus’ will was completely suited for his needs, he could not refuse.

But he did not lose his cool, he acutely sensed the meaning behind Red Lotus’ will’s words.

“The initial form of destiny song?” Feng Jiu Ge asked.

Red Lotus’s will nodded: “Indeed. For the following thousand years, you will modify destiny song many times. Eventually, you will make this killer move extremely profound, at the last modification, this killer move will actually possess the ability to grow on its own. The more Gu Immortals hit by it, the more it can extract the power of destiny from them to grow further. This is an excellent killer move.”

“However, I need to remind you something. As long as fate Gu still exists, your destiny song will be suppressed and sealed.”

Feng Jiu Ge shook his head: “Red Lotus Demon Venerable, thank you for the true inheritance. I understand what you mean, in fact, before now, Fang Yuan had already reminded me many times. But I will not destroy Fate or resist Heavenly Court just because of your true inheritance.”

Red Lotus’ will smiled lightly: “I am not asking for anything. I am only sharing my experience with you, I placed this crucial strength to break free from fate in your hands, as for your choice, that is up to you. The decision will be made by you in the end, won’t it?”

Feng Jiu Ge left the stone lotus island with a heavy heart.

Fate showed preferential treatment for Red Lotus Demon Venerable, even though it took his parents and lover, he was given unparalleled talent and

aptitude, he had supreme strength and status. But Red Lotus was not willing to accept this.

People were not puppets, they had their own thoughts.

“Even the venerable Red Lotus was like this, what about me, a Dao Guardian?” Feng Jiu Ge thought about himself.

Seeing the growth of Feng Jin Huang could truly bring joy and happiness to her parents.

Let alone his Dao Guardian status, even without it, why would Feng Jiu Ge not defend his own daughter?

“But, is this Dao Guardian status something I like and truly desire?” Feng Jiu Ge asked himself in his heart.

The truth was, nobody had ever asked him about it.

Be they Duke Long, Qin Ding Ling, or even the supreme elders of Spirit Affinity House, nobody asked him.

It was as if this status was glory, it was something natural to accept, Feng Jiu Ge should have been overjoyed to receive it, there was no need to ask such a redundant question.

But was it really that case?

Feng Jiu Ge thought of another deeper question: “Why do people live?”

This problem was just too broad and deep, the answer varied according to the person, a thousand people would come up with a thousand answers, in fact, even the same person would have different answers at different time periods.

Feng Jiu Ge could not answer this question.

He could only take a step back and ask himself truthfully: “For what purpose do I live?”

Feng Jiu Ge could not help but think back to his life experience.

He loved music when he was young, he did not hesitate to cultivate sound path.

From the start of his cultivation journey, he wanted to create a total of nine songs, to express himself, to express all living beings, and to express heaven and earth.

After that, he found a fortuitous encounter in a mountain valley, he by chance discovered the inheritance left behind by a sound path great expert, Spatial Sound Immortal Master.

He started to cultivate in the valley alone, feeling no loneliness at all. He was immersed in the delight of music, he cultivated and lived every day in a fulfilling manner. In this valley, he easily passed the crucial tribulation and became a rank six Gu Immortal without causing a commotion.

After becoming a Gu Immortal, Feng Jiu Ge did not have any emotion of pride or desire to show off.

Everything was natural, plain and simple.

He continued to cultivate in the valley and develop his immortal aperture, going from rank six to rank seven.

One day, two Gu Immortals arrived in the valley, they sang with Feng Jiu Ge.

Back then, it was nighttime with the moon hanging high and light wind blowing gently, causing ripples in a glittering lake in the valley.

As the three Gu Immortals sang in harmony, time flew by rapidly, and they had sung till dawn.

The three stopped singing and started laughing. They did not greet each other, but left full of joy.



Afterwards, the two were framed and hunted by the righteous path, after Feng Jiu Ge learned of this, he did not hesitate, he stepped forward to help them.

Thereafter, the unstoppable legend was created, he fought against all ten great ancient sects alone, he became a renowned champion in the world!

The ten great ancient sects lost their reputation, they accused Feng Jiu Ge of being a demonic cultivator and joined forces to resist him.

Feng Jiu Ge was not afraid, fighting as he continuously traveled a huge distance, suddenly changing his tactic and going for the enemy headquarters, causing the ten sects to lose miserably. The scene was total chaos and there was nothing anyone could do.

During this process, Feng Jiu Ge met with Spirit Affinity House's Fairy Bai Qing, they developed feelings for each other, Feng Jiu Ge went into Spirit Affinity House and became a righteous path member.

Afterwards, Spirit Affinity House's reputation soared, by relying on Feng Jiu Ge's strength, their territory expanded, firmly suppressing the other nine ancient sects.

Following that, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, Feng Jiu Ge led his group to investigate the situation.

Thus, a series of future events occurred, he was by chance saved by Fang Yuan and repaid the debt in Southern Border, blocking Wu Yong for him. After repaying the debt, Feng Jiu Ge chased after Fang Yuan again.

Until this point, Fang Yuan let Feng Jiu Ge go multiple times and even reminded and guided him to the stone lotus island, gaining a Red Lotus true inheritance.

“If my entire life's journey was arranged by fate Gu, was I willingly living this life?”

Feng Jiu Ge shook his head, he was more willing to see it from another perspective: “It was all my choice! Back then, I chose to stand up for the two immortals, I gave up my life of peaceful seclusion because of the anger in my heart, I wanted to seek justice.”

“I married Fairy Bai Qing and had a child with her, that was because I loved her. I taught my daughter Feng Jin Huang and raised her into an adult, that was also my love to my child. It was not decreed by Fate.”

“If Fate wants me to lose Bai Qing and Jin Huang, will I do the same as Red Lotus?”

“If I have a good chance at this moment, in which as long as I make a move, I can destroy Fate, will I do it?”

Destroying Fate went against his own benefits. After all, Feng Jin Huang was the Great Dream Immortal Venerable decreed by fate Gu!

“But does Feng Jin Huang herself really want to become Great Dream Immortal Venerable?”

Feng Jiu Ge suddenly realized that just like how nobody had asked him if he wanted his status as a Dao Guardian, nobody had asked Feng Jin Huang if she really wanted to become Great Dream Immortal Venerable.

Including Feng Jiu Ge himself!

It was as if everything was natural and a matter of fact, there was nothing to question.

Feng Jiu Ge asked himself an even deeper question.

“If Huang Er likes the fate of becoming Great Dream Immortal Venerable, while fate Gu is right in front of me and I can easily destroy it. Then, will I do it?”

This question made Feng Jiu Ge hesitate, he was unsure, he was perplexed, he was lost.

Reality did not give him time or space to think about this closely.

The battle to repair fate Gu was still in heated commotion now, Feng Jiu Ge had to join the battle.

On Hairy Foot Mountain, he saved Feng Jin Huang by singing destiny song.

With rank eight future self, he was one of the strongest Gu Immortals in the world. Destiny song's power made even Di Zang Sheng falter.

On the battlefield, Feng Jiu Ge met with Fang Yuan once again.

Fang Yuan transmitted secretly: "Oh Feng Jiu Ge, you finally created destiny song. What do you think of this killer move?"

Feng Jiu Ge was silent.

He had to admit that this was truly his song, it was a song that he would create with his personality. His voice was contained in this song.

Yes, he did not want to acknowledge the existence of fate, but he felt deep emotions towards the cruelty and profundity of fate. He observed the lives of countless people, they had their highs and lows, he saw the hope, struggle, joy, happiness, sadness, and despair of these people..."

"If one says that fate is fixed while luck is a variable, then I desire that variable to exist within the people and all lifeforms, these changes should occur from one's own choice!"

Feng Jiu Ge understood the truest intention in his heart.

"I did not create fate song, I created destiny song! This is the most honest thought I have in my inner heart."

At this moment, he realized the scheme that Fang Yuan and Red Lotus Demon Venerable had plotted.

They knew about his nature, so they did not try to convince him. They only passed destiny song to Feng Jiu Ge, and used Feng Jiu Ge's voice to

convince himself.

Indeed.

This destiny song that Feng Jiu Ge sang allowed him to support the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals and raise their strength. When he sang for the enemies, they would weaken. But the truth was, he was singing for himself, he was singing to understand his true feelings!

And thus, he understood.

He loved Fairy Bai Qing, he also loved his daughter Feng Jiu Ge. But Feng Jiu Ge was not alive for their sake.

His wife and daughter were just choices he made in his life journey, they were part of his life, but not the entirety.

“For what purpose am I alive?”

This question brought him back to the starting point, he wanted to sing nine songs, to express life, to express heaven and earth!

Currently, he had already created nine songs. But he has not sang everything about life and the world yet, he had to continue singing.

But as he sang, fate restrained him, it was like an invisible pair of hands strangling him, how could he sing freely like this?

Seeing that Feng Jiu Ge did not reply to him, Fang Yuan transmitted while in intense combat: “Oh Feng Jiu Ge, your voice is your aspiration, how can the person who created destiny song be aligned with Heavenly Court?”

Feng Jiu Ge was calm as he replied secretly: “You know me well! But even so, I will not join you. Unless you can create a situation where we can easily destroy Fate, otherwise, I will not help you before that. Heavenly Court and Central Continent have treated me well, so everything still depends on you.”

Fang Yuan chuckled: “Then watch properly.”

Next, he purposely got hit by Duke Long, he fell towards Embroidered Tower, activating Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's hidden arrangement.

Unexpected to Feng Jiu Ge, Fang Yuan used Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's strength to overwhelm heaven, directly destroying fate Gu.

After that, upon hearing Duke Long's words, Feng Jiu Ge realized that the battle had not ended yet.

When Red Lotus' will appeared once more, Feng Jiu Ge gradually realized the plot that Red Lotus Demon Venerable had set.

Thus, when Fang Yuan asked for destiny Gu's recipe, Feng Jiu Ge finally took action.

He helped Fang Yuan, he was also making his own choice!

In the past, when he helped the two immortals while challenging the ten great ancient sects, he had once said: "Neither demonic nor righteous, there is only Feng Jiu Ge in this world. To leave or to stay, I decide my own life and death."

Now, should he stay or leave?

This question could not puzzle him anymore.

He, Feng Jiu Ge, had turned from the demonic path to the righteous path, now, it was time to go back!

Because Feng Jiu Ge was still Feng Jiu Ge in the end.

# Chapter 1966 - Great Era!

## 1966 Great Era!

“Feng Jiu Ge!” Duke Long screamed, charging towards him.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Claw Strike!

Immortal killer move — Spiraling Dragon Fang!

Claw marks emerged, nearly ten feet long, cutting through the air with invincible might. Dragon fangs flew everywhere, like piercing sharp blades, circling and flying while emitting murderous aura.

Feng Jiu Ge retreated slowly as he continued to sing his destiny song.

Around him, there were several clones, they looked like him but had mystical powers.

Immortal killer move — Song Warrior!

Song warriors fought for Feng Jiu Ge, not only blocking the dragon claws and fangs but even fighting against Duke Long.

After several rounds, Duke Long destroyed a song warrior.

But next, a brand new song warrior appeared on the battlefield, engaging with Duke Long in combat.

Duke Long instantly understood that killing these clones was pointless, the true way to fight was to go after the source, to directly deal with Feng Jiu Ge.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Gate.

Duke Long crossed a large distance and approached Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge calmly activated yang pass tune as he pulled apart their distance once again.

Duke Long was unable to fight Feng Jiu Ge in close combat, he could only use qi path killer moves to attack at a distance.

Feng Jiu Ge showed no fear, his destiny song continued to weaken Duke Long while he used his hands to unleash the triple extreme sound killer move, with drum fist, bell palm, and finger whistle.

Feng Jiu Ge fought against Duke Long while exchanging many blows, they unexpectedly were evenly matched!

Rank eight future self brought a qualitative transformation to Feng Jiu Ge's battle strength.

While the three regions' Gu Immortals hesitated on whether to help Feng Jiu Ge, they were shocked to realize: Feng Jiu Ge did not need anyone's help!

The battle strength he displayed shocked everyone.

Duke Long was unable to take down Feng Jiu Ge, he was shocked and furious. At this point, he realized that even though Feng Jiu Ge was fighting earlier, he had been keeping his true strength hidden, he did not use his full power at all.

Right now, Duke Long wanted to destroy Red Lotus' scheme. But Fang Yuan was a tough enemy, Duke Long knew about his strength, so he chose to fight Feng Jiu Ge instead.

As long as Feng Jiu Ge was disrupted and destiny song failed to activate, then Fang Yuan and the others would not have the Immortal Gu recipe, they would not succeed.

But Feng Jiu Ge's strength far exceeded Duke Long's expectations, he could only attack more aggressively while trying to take down Feng Jiu Ge as soon as possible.

Duke Long was stalled by Feng Jiu Ge, while Wu Shuai controlled Dragon Palace to defend Fang Yuan's main body, Calamity Luck Altar was blocking Demon Judgment Board.

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals unleashed a storm of attacks but the other three regions' Gu Immortals and Di Zang Sheng stopped them.

The battle situation was tilting in the favor of the three regions' Gu Immortals, but Fang Yuan was facing a problem now.

The sea of human wills was vast and turbulent.

Using the human wills as Gu material to refine destiny Gu was wishful thinking.

But it was a possible method.

Under the effect of destiny song, the human wills and flames merged, refined into a mystical Gu material that was formless and colorless.

Fang Yuan, who was controlling this Gu refinement session, had to endure the terrifying waves of human wills. He had to calm the human wills like subduing tides, sending them to the respective tributaries.

Fang Yuan's expression quickly turned dark, his veins were bulging on his forehead, thoughts collided endlessly in his mind, he could not keep up with this expenditure, his storage of thoughts was rapidly used up, about to be emptied!

At the periphery of the battlefield, Spectral Soul and his servants kept a close watch on the situation.



Fairy Zi Wei saw Fang Yuan's expression as she analyzed: "Oh no, Fang Yuan is not in good shape. I know about his wisdom path foundation, he is most skilled at blocking deductions and concealing his true location. But this refinement expends his thoughts and focuses on his cognitive ability. The sea of human will is truly terrifying, even I myself cannot last long in it."

But Spectral Soul smiled lightly, saying calmly: "Don't worry, a certain venerable has already prepared for this. Fang Yuan should know what to do."

Spectral Soul could not help but recall the past.

When he was still alive, exploring Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

There, he found wisdom Gu, he also saw Giant Sun's special will left behind by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Back then, he wanted to immediately take wisdom Gu for himself.

"Spectral Soul, I would like you to let wisdom Gu remain here." Giant Sun's special will had to show up and stop him.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable smiled coldly: "You can't stop me."

Giant Sun's special will nodded: "Of course, you are the current Demon Venerable, invincible in the world, I have no way of stopping you. But I am sure you have made a deal with Red Lotus Demon Venerable already?"

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's expression changed, before coming here, he had obtained one Red Lotus true inheritance, he made a deal with Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

"You mean to say?" Spectral Soul Demon Venerable hesitated.

"That's right, my main body has made arrangements in this wisdom Gu. When the crucial person arrives, he will destroy Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, this wisdom Gu will go along with him." Giant Sun's special will said openly.

“So that’s it.” Spectral Soul Demon Venerable looked at wisdom Gu deeply but did not take it.

At this moment.

“I’ve already given it my best effort... it seems I need to use wisdom Gu after all.” Fang Yuan sighed.

By now, he had already guessed many of the venerable arrangements.

Wisdom Gu was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangement, but unlike those of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable and Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it had activated long ago. Back then, Fang Yuan was unaware of this.

Fang Yuan had just opened his immortal aperture’s entrance when wisdom Gu flew out by itself, floating above Fang Yuan as it emitted a divine radiance.

Fang Yuan instantly felt relaxed as his expression went back to normal, he felt a sense of ease.

“So that’s it.” He inspected it closely, realizing: “Wisdom Gu is one of the Gu materials, no wonder it is so effective. With the addition of wisdom Gu, my thoughts are expended more slowly, but my immortal essence expenditure is huge. This rate of consumption is not something I can sustain.”

Even though the sovereign immortal aperture’s rate of time was very fast and could accumulate immortal essence rapidly, Fang Yuan had undergone many intense battles, the expenditure was high as well.

Once he fails to keep up with the expenditure, the Gu refinement would be forced to stop, Fang Yuan would suffer an overwhelmingly terrifying backlash!

But Fang Yuan was not flustered, he was cool as ice.

He knew clearly, at this point in time, the venerables were not going to watch by the side.

As long as he still had a trace of value, he was irreplaceable, the venerables could not allow him to die at this moment.

“Next, it should be your turn to take action, Giant Sun...”

Far away in black heaven, a dark gold palace floated quietly in the sky.

In the palace, immortal zombie Giant Sun slowly opened his eyes.

He looked towards the south, the scenes in Heavenly Court were reflected in his eyes.

“We have finally reached this moment.” Immortal zombie Giant Sun smiled before sighing to himself lightly: “Red Lotus, it was your scheme that worked after all.”

Certain memories in his life started to surface.

On the stone lotus island, Gu Immortal Giant Sun who had yet to become venerable received Red Lotus’ gift.

At the same time, they also made a transaction.

“This is the incomplete Immortal Gu recipe of destiny Gu?” Giant Sun received this incomplete recipe and was immediately drawn to it. He was the creator of luck path, it had never failed him, but from this incomplete recipe, he saw a whole new world!

“Red Lotus, you are the one who damaged fate Gu, giving me the chance to create luck path. Now, you are gifting this incomplete recipe of destiny Gu to me, I owe you an immense favor!” Gu Immortal Giant Sun said solemnly.

“I will make the arrangements according to our agreement. I will leave wisdom Gu behind and create responsive luck Immortal Gu to help that unparalleled genius who will create destiny song. Furthermore, I will retain

my final attack, as long as the situation advances to reach that stage, I will take action and help your million year plan succeed!”

Red Lotus’ will smiled: “I will thank you in advance. If my plan fails, please follow our agreement and try your best to refine destiny Gu yourself.”

“Of course!” Gu Immortal Giant Sun said resolutely.

...

Within Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, immortal zombie Giant Sun slowly raised his right hand.

Boom—!

An enormous beam of light flew through the sky and shot towards Heavenly Court’s direction at an extreme speed.

This beam of light was so gigantic, like a large river that spanned across heaven and earth.

Wherever it went, it pushed aside all the air, the beam’s movement was accompanied by a deafening and majestic sound.

Such a grand and powerful killer move shocked everyone and sent them into a daze.

Even Duke Long, Feng Jiu Ge, and Fang Yuan felt incredibly small and insignificant upon seeing this move.

The beam of light started from black heaven above Northern Plains, piercing through the regional wall and directly bombarding Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court shook intensely, the world seemed to tremble as countless Immortal Gu Houses cracked and broke.

Within Imperfection Regret Pavilion, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's silhouette gritted her teeth.

She watched as Giant Sun's attack approached, but Limitless' silhouette was drawing her attention, forcing her to have no time to deal with it.

Giant Sun's attack landed with unstoppable might, instilling itself into the sea of human wills and flames.

The three sources gathered and instantly formed a golden ball of light that was the size of a mountain.

Within the ball of light, flames flicked, human wills shined with rainbow light, incredibly dazzling. Fang Yuan remained unmoved at the center, he was controlling the situation.

Traces of pale white light started to spread out from his tightly grasped hands.

These traces of light were so familiar, Fang Yuan had a deep impression of them.

He was internally shaken: "Heaven path dao marks!"

Tens or hundreds of heaven path dao marks slipped out from the cracks between his fingers.

Fang Yuan opened his hands wide at this moment, with a loud sound, countless heaven path dao marks flew into the sky, entangling with each other.

Traces of dao marks went towards Fang Yuan's body.

Fang Yuan grunted, intense pain assaulted him, causing his body and mind to shake!

"These are newly added heaven path dao marks on my body? Wait no, not just me..." Fang Yuan's eyes shined with bright light, he acutely sensed that

many of the heaven path dao marks vanished all of a sudden, following the sources of the human wills.

“As expected.” At this moment, Fang Yuan was finally certain about Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s plan.

He wanted to refine destiny Gu but he was not truly trying to refine a Gu.

Fang Yuan grasped this chance, doing his best to collect these heaven path dao marks.

With every single heaven path dao mark carved in his body, his sovereign immortal aperture’s foundation would rise by a level.

This was an unprecedented and huge fortuitous encounter!

Each complete heaven path dao mark would cause a small qualitative change in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture world.

After his trip to Crazy Demon Cave, Fang Yuan became even clearer of the immense value of this opportunity.

But the fusing of heaven path dao marks was very painful, even someone with a firm mind like Fang Yuan started to feel dizzy after gaining ten complete heaven path dao marks.

But he was the main person refining this Gu, he could not use other methods, otherwise, he would disrupt the Gu refinement and fail the process, that would be a huge problem.

Fang Yuan relied on his determination as he gritted his teeth and held on.

He was not the only Gu Immortal enduring pain, he was just one of countless people.

At the same time, in the vast five regions, countless mortals screamed in pain, the heaven path dao marks found their way to the sources of the human wills and carved themselves into these people’s bodies.

Each of these mortals could not endure even one ten-thousandth of a complete heaven path dao mark, many of them fainted at the first moment.

Those who could remain awake were fortunate, they were able to absorb more heaven path dao marks.

Pain!

Intense pain, pain that went beyond words.

Fang Yuan soon tore the skin of his lips as his eyes opened wide, even the corners of his eyes were torn, blood flowed out.

His entire body was shaking and covered in sweat, he still tried his best to continue fusing with each additional heaven path dao mark.

Soon, the Gu Immortals scattered across the five regions also started to endure this process.

Heavenly Court's fighting came to a stop, all of the Gu Immortals' expressions changed, they gritted their teeth as their faces turned red. With the addition of heaven path dao marks that automatically went to them, they were caught off guard and could barely endure this.

"No—!" Duke Long screamed in agony, at this moment, he finally realized what Red Lotus' plan was.

Duke Long was unable to take down Feng Jiu Ge after so long, he could only turn around and hope for the best as he tried to attack Fang Yuan, but the intense pain also assaulted him.

Feng Jiu Ge persisted in using destiny song, seeing that Duke Long was leaving, he quickly attacked more intensely to stall for time instead.

With a loud sound, like splattering water, the mountain-like human wills vanished on the spot.

Success!

“People of this world, I have entrusted fate to you. All of you hold a portion of fate, from today onwards, there will no longer be fate in this world!” Red Lotus’ will spoke through the human wills, his voice was transmitted into the minds of everyone in the five regions.

The five regions’ humans were still in agony and indescribable pain.

Because of the intense and unbearable pain, there were many cases of suicide on the spot.

“Red Lotus—!” Duke Long shouted in anger, he finally got away from Feng Jiu Ge as he arrived in front of Fang Yuan.

But it was too late.

The last bit of Red Lotus’ will managed to gather into human form as it blocked the ferocious Duke Long for Fang Yuan.

“Master.” The young looking Red Lotus smiled: “I succeeded at long last. Fate Gu has been split into countless portions by me and distributed to everyone in this world. It still exists, it has not been destroyed, but because fate has been fused with luck, it can no longer be used by heaven’s will.”

Duke Long was furious, his eyes were red, his hair standing on end.

“Traitorous disciple!” He screamed, he charged even quicker now.

At the next moment, he completely destroyed Red Lotus’ will as he arrived in front of Fang Yuan.

Duke Long’s aura broke through its limit again, reaching an unprecedented level, his strength was so overwhelming that even Di Zang Sheng and Feng Jiu Ge felt a threat to their lives!

Fang Yuan did not move, he did not even put up a defense.

Duke Long charged with unparalleled might, but when he was still a step away from Fang Yuan, his expression changed.



His aura froze at once, his advancement stopped.

His lifespan — was exhausted!

It was slightly earlier than in the previous life.

Fang Yuan was not surprised, he had found the truth when he saw a bit of the scattered light earlier.

The truth was, back then in Eastern Sea, when his Qi Sea Ancestor identity used steal life on Duke Long, it was effective.

But the effect was low and not easily observable, Duke Long also had incredible concealment abilities.

Afterwards, in order to avoid fighting Qi Sea Ancestor, Duke Long even took out Primordial Origin's true inheritance to successfully deceive everyone. This was because Duke Long did not know that Fang Yuan's steal life killer move had a limited number of usages.

This also caused Duke Long to become even stronger than in the previous life at the same time period.

The hero of a generation, the pillar of Heavenly Court, the master of Red Lotus, and the creator of the dragonman race — Duke Long!

Finally, his life was over.

Before dying, he still charged at the forefront.

For Heavenly Court, for the sake of humanity, he had truly done everything that he could until his death.

During the intense war, he forgot the limit of his own lifespan. Thus, at the moment of his death, other than rage and killing intent, there was also confusion on his face.

“Lord Duke Long...”

“Damn it, you must be feeling very unwilling to die like this!”

“Senior Duke Long!!!”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals cried out loud, their morale rose sharply, this was the will of the mourning troops!

Intense battle occurred again, the Gu Immortals of the three regions were actually suppressed by Heavenly Court which had fewer numbers.

Fang Yuan no longer participated in the fight.

He still endured intense pain as his gaze pierced past Heavenly Court, overlooking the entire five regions.

Earth shook as it produced waves of deep, rumbling noises.

At this moment, the regional walls that separated the five regions had completely disappeared. The earth veins were connected as the five separate regions merged into one!

Without the obstruction of the regional walls, people could freely move through the five regions with no obstructions. At the same time, the differences in heaven and earth qi also disappeared gradually.

The bloody cape on Fang Yuan’s back slowly disintegrated, he raised his head slightly and took in a deep breath.

Ah, the air was filled with freedom.

From now on, there was finally a possibility of pursuing eternal life.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s lips curled up as he revealed a faint smile.

“The great era... has finally arrived!”

# **Chapter 1967 - New Otherworldly Demon**

## **1967 New Otherworldly Demon**

Volume 6: Demon Venerable's Eternal Life

“Wake up! Hey, wake up kid.”

Peng Da opened his eyes with difficulty, in his blurred vision, he saw a human face. It belonged to a middle aged man, he had a beard and a pair of crystal clear triangular eyes, there was a white headscarf covering his head.

Peng Da was shocked.

He remembered sleeping in his room earlier, why did a stranger barge into his room suddenly?

He exerted force to sit up but at the next moment, he was stunned.

“Where am I?!” He was shocked to find himself in the middle of a desert, there were no clouds in the sky, the sun was blazing and it was extremely hot.

“Hahaha, this kid is dazed.”

“He is really lucky, he was attacked by the desert wolves but managed to survive.”

There was not only the bearded middle aged man, there were several others surrounding him.

Not far away, there was a group of camels resting on the ground.

“Kid, this place is called wolf desert, when we found you, your companions were already dead. The desert wolves ate their corpses, after we chased them away, we found that you were still alive.”

“My name is Mo Li, I am the leader of this caravan, I saved you and healed your wounds. You are quite lucky to have met us, do you remember anything now?” The bearded middle aged man spoke and explained.

Peng Da was dazed in the desert, the heated sand and glaring sunlight made him gradually accept this.

It was not a dream!

“I transmigrated!”

“Damn it, something like transmigration really exists, and it happened to me of all people!”

“But how did I get here? Yesterday, I was still doing some programming and coding, but today, I ended up here.”

“Looking at their attire and speech mannerisms, this is obviously another world.”

“Also, why do I know this world’s language? It seems like speaking this foreign language is part of my innate ability!”

Peng Da could not help but feel nervous, his heart was pounding rapidly. This situation was really out of his expectations, he started to panic as he felt troubled internally.

But around him, there were several strong men staring at him, Peng Da had to force himself to stay calm as he held his head, shaking it: “I... I only

remember my name is Peng Da. As for the rest... damn it, why don't I remember a thing?"

"No way, you lost your memories?"

"This is so disappointing."

Everyone discussed.

The bearded middle aged man looked at Peng Da deeply, bright light flashed in his eyes: "Since you do not remember, forget it. I hope you can regain your memories one day, now, what plans do you have? Do you want to travel with my merchant caravan?"

Peng Da quickly nodded his head, he did not dare to travel alone in the desert: "Uncle Mo Li, I will definitely repay this debt of saving my life. No matter where you are going, please bring me along, I do not know where to go now."

He had a lost expression but he spoke truthfully. He had just arrived in this world, he did not know what to do.

"Then follow us." Mo Li nodded, instructing a person beside him: "Provide a camel for this kid Peng Da."

"Yes." Someone responded immediately: "Kid, follow me."

Peng Da was brought away to the camel, he stared with wide eyes, feeling shocked: "This is a camel?"

The Gu Master who brought him here felt strange: "Kid, are you really from Western Desert? You don't even know about the fire pit camel?"

The fire pit camel did not have a hump, instead its back was concave, forming an oval pit. The person riding the camel would lie in the round pit, with soft fur and warm body temperature, it was very comfortable. The Gu Master started nimbly packing away the goods in the round pit and building a tent on top of it. A portion of the cargo was tied to the camel's sides and the bottom of the tent.

Peng Da continued to pretend that he was in pain as he said: “I don’t remember, damn it, I don’t remember anything!”

That Gu Master gave him a glance: “I don’t care what you forgot, but remember this, our leader saved your life. Since you are joining our caravan, you are eating our food, drinking our water, and living in our quarters, you need to work. Understood?”

Peng Da quickly nodded: “Of course, please give me the instructions. I will do my best!”

“Mm.” The Gu Master nodded lightly, showing slight satisfaction.

But at this time, the bearded man’s voice could be heard: “Don’t make life difficult for him, let this young man rest for now and recover from his mental fatigue. It was fate that we met in this huge desert, it is not easy to live here, no matter who you are.”

The Gu Master sighed as he quipped: “Leader, you are still so kindhearted.”

Peng Da heard this, he felt a sense of deeper gratitude towards Mo Li, he shouted loudly: “Uncle, thank you so much, I will definitely repay you!”

Mo Li laughed loudly: “Good, kid, go and recover on your camel for now.”

Next, he shouted at everyone: “We’ve had enough rest, let’s continue on our way.”

Thus, the camel bells rang as the merchant caravan moved forward again, traveling over this vast desert.

Peng Da lay on the fire pit camel’s back, he felt very comfortable.

After being alone, he was shocked to find that his body was not his original body, it was a body that belonged to this world. His skin was brown from tanning, his arms and legs were thick, his joints were bulging.

“So only my soul came over, I went into the body of an inhabitant of this world.”

“No wonder I can speak their language. It is a pity that I did not gain this inhabitant’s memories.”

“But this is not bad either. My original body was weak as I did not train it, but this body is very strong and young too.”

Peng Da could not sleep, after inspecting his body, he started to look around and observe this world.

There was nothing in the desert, but the travelers were quite an eye-opener to him.

The food of the fire pit camel was actually some bright red charcoal.

The people in the merchant caravan could create water from nothing, they did not need to find oases or water sources. Moving in this desert was very secure because of them.

By night time, they started to prepare dinner. A Gu Master planted some seeds in the desert as trees grew out after a few breaths of time, bearing fruits.

Peng Da did not know what fruit this was but the flesh was tender and sweet, it was fragrant and filled his stomach with satisfaction.

Peng Da was amazed at every small detail of this world. When he ate dinner, he could not help but ask the leader Mo Li.

“Kid, it seems you really have amnesia! We are Gu Masters! These are Gu Master methods.” Mo Li looked at Peng Da with a strange gaze.

“Gu Master?” This was the first time Peng Da heard this phrase.

Mo Li’s expression was even stranger now as he pointed at Peng Da: “Kid, you are also a Gu Master, in fact, you are a rank two Gu Master.”

“What?!” Peng Da was shocked.

After some explanation, Peng Da realized what that meant, he became more excited.

“So a certain group of people of this world are called Gu Masters. They are able to cultivate using Gu worms!”

“Gu Masters rank from one to nine, most of the caravan members are rank two, Uncle Mo Li is the highest at rank three. Meanwhile, I am a rank two Gu Master, or rather, this body’s original owner was a rank two Gu Master.”

“When Gu Masters cultivate to rank six, they will be known as Gu Immortals, they will be able to overturn mountains and seas, they can collect the stars and moon!”

“By rank nine, they will be invincible in this world, unparalleled and unmatched!”

“Oh heavens, this is such a wonderful world. Since heaven transmigrated me here, there must be a reason for my arrival.”

“I must be unique, I will definitely rise above all others. Right! Once I get rank nine cultivation, I will be invincible in this world, that feeling must be very amazing!”

In Peng Da’s original world, he was a very ordinary person. He was an orphan with no parents, lovers, or any other attachments.

He was extremely excited, by night time, he could not resist the fatigue, he fell deeply asleep.

What he did not know was, the Gu Masters in the merchant caravan were talking about him.

“This kid actually lost his memories. What should I say? Is he really lucky or unlucky?”

“Is he really amnesiac or pretending to be so?”



“There is no need to do that? From what I saw, he was very shocked by the fire pit camels and our Gu Master methods, it is unlikely to be an act.”

“Whether he lost his memories or not, he is still a rank two Gu Master, he will be useful to us, there was no loss in saving him.” Mo Li said.

Nobody could refute this.

Gu Masters were far more valuable than mortals, if Peng Da was a mortal, these Gu Masters would not have bothered to save him after realizing he was still alive back then. But since he was a Gu Master, he had value to them, thus he was able to travel on the camel and also got food and water from them.

While they were talking, Mo Li suddenly frowned, his expression turned grim: “Listen, do you all hear something?”

Everyone’s expressions changed, at the next moment, this sound became louder, it was such a huge commotion that heaven and earth shook.

“Damn it! It seems like a hurricane, a super-sized hurricane!”

“This is a desert, why are there hurricanes?”

“Quickly move, protect the caravan and move out!”

The Gu Masters left the tent hurriedly but once they got out, they were stunned.

There was a boundless qi tide approaching from all directions, it was like a grand tsunami that overwhelmed heaven and earth. The qi tide was everywhere, it carried sand along with it and had an unstoppable might.

Extremely shocked expressions were shown all over the Gu Masters’ faces.

This was a calamity far worse than any hurricane, at once, the Gu Masters felt an intense threat of death.

The merchant caravan was doomed, they only wanted to save their own lives now!

“Escape!” Mo Li gritted his teeth, before he finished his words, he quickly retreated with all his strength.

The other Gu Masters quickly reacted as they mimicked him and escaped.

In the abandoned merchant caravan, the mortals screeched, the camels were stirred too.

They were helpless now, only death awaited them.

But within this chaos, Peng Da was still deeply asleep, he had no idea that this fatal danger was upon him.

# Chapter 1968 - Spectral Soul Hunts

## 1968 Spectral Soul Hunts

The sky was dark, there was only two to three faint starlight specks.

This was black heaven.

The surroundings were quiet, three Gu Immortals were moving stealthily in black heaven.

At the left was an elderly hunchbacked Gu Immortal, he had many wrinkles on his face, he was thin and dry like a stick, he was truly resembling a man about to step into his grave.

At the right was a female immortal, she had a graceful figure with hair that extended to her waist, and was adorned in a beautiful purple robe. Her eyes were like deep pools, with a sense of sorrow shrouding her face.

And at the center was a black robed Gu Immortal, he looked like a middle aged man with a pale face, his black hair was chest length, he had a deep and cold killing intent that surrounded his entire body.

They were Old Man Zheng Yuan, Fairy Zi Wei, and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

The three were moving quietly in black heaven, at this time, Spectral Soul paused and said plainly: "It's here again."

Fairy Zi Wei's and Old Man Zheng Yuan's expressions did not change, they guarded Spectral Soul as they started to put up their defensive methods.

Soon, the three immortals heard a loud sound.

Next, a huge and wild qi tide came from all directions. Wherever the qi tide went, lifeforms perished, it was a terrible sight.

The qi tide crashed towards the three immortals, after several minutes, it went past them.

The three including Spectral Soul finally let out a sigh of relief, they canceled their defensive methods as they came out again.

Old Man Zheng Yuan looked towards the qi tide with an expression of sadness towards the people, he sighed deeply: "After the five regions fused into one, such a change actually happened. Once in a while, qi tides will surge, rampaging wildly all over the world. Not just the five regions, even the two heavens are not spared, they cause destruction everywhere they go, I wonder how many people will suffer from this."

Even though Old Man Zheng Yuan was subdued by Spectral Soul, he was only absolutely loyal to Spectral Soul, his original personality did not change.

Fairy Zi Wei's eyes flickered with uncertainty, she seemed to be deducing something but she soon gave up in dejectedness.

Fairy Zi Wei analyzed: "The heaven and earth qi of the five regions vary. Thus, when Gu Immortals go to different regions, absorbing the heaven and earth qi there would cause problems in their immortal aperture. This is also why Gu Immortals often have to return to their region to undergo tribulations. The difference in heaven and earth qi also caused the regional walls to form. Now that the five regional walls are gone, the heaven and earth qi of the five regions are converging into one, this is the reason for the birth of these qi tides."

“But it is impossible to calculate how long this qi tide phenomenon will last, or whether it will get stronger or weaker, we can’t even predict a trend.”

To deduce the result of this question, it was likely that Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was needed, he had the deepest understanding of qi path after all. Other than that, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could also make such a large scale deduction.

Spectral Soul snorted coldly, his voice was hoarse and icy: “This qi tide is a hindrance to us! Wherever it goes, soul beasts are unable to resist it, even if they survive, their soul cores will be damaged.”

Spectral Soul wanted to recover his strength now.

Devouring souls was the fastest method.

Originally, he wanted to retrieve the Door of Life and Death, but it was actually moved away in secret.

The fight in Heavenly Court was over now, in Spectral Soul’s current state, he could not take action rashly.

Thus, he brought his two subordinates to leave Heavenly Court and come to black heaven, they prepared to hunt soul beasts instead.

Within black heaven, there were countless soul beasts that formed into hordes. They often rampaged in black heaven with nether ants paving the way, they often had hundreds of thousands or even millions of soul beasts in an horde.

“Master, the qi tide is a calamity, please let us stay to help you.” Old Man Zheng Yuan advised as a loyal servant.

Spectral Soul snorted coldly: “What use is there in staying by my side? I alone am sufficient, furthermore, I have tasks for you two.”

Old Man Zheng Yuan and Fairy Zi Wei looked at each other as they said: “Please give us your instructions, master.”

Spectral Soul squinted as he said eerily: “Back then, I expended my assets to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, leaving it for Fang Yuan to create a complete otherworldly demon. Now that fate Gu is destroyed, the plan succeeded, it is time to retrieve sovereign immortal fetus Gu now. I want you two to find and capture Fang Yuan alive, I will refine him back into sovereign immortal fetus Gu.”

Spectral Soul’s strength was at its lowest now, otherwise, he would have taken action during the battle in Heavenly Court.

If he wanted to grow stronger now, there were three crucial things: Door of Life and Death, dream realms, and sovereign immortal aperture.

Now that the Door of Life and Death was gone, Spectral Soul felt slightly disappointed. But he could use soul beasts instead.

Most of his dream realms were taken by Fang Yuan. Even though Fang Yuan used a portion of them in Heavenly Court’s battle, the rest were still stored in Fang Yuan’s possession.

Spectral Soul needed to take back his dream realms, only with his dream realms could he regain his attainment level of great grandmaster in all paths.

Other than that, the sovereign immortal aperture was necessary too, it could ensure that Spectral Soul would quickly reach the apex of his strength.

Spectral Soul had reason to believe that the sovereign immortal aperture was well developed by Fang Yuan. If he could take it back, it would be the same as gaining Fang Yuan’s hard work.

If he could retrieve all three crucial keys, Spectral Soul would rise to the top, he would be unstoppable in this world!

He could not find the Door of Life and Death, but both the dream realms and sovereign immortal aperture were in Fang Yuan’s hands, it was understandable that Spectral Soul targeted Fang Yuan first.

Old Man Zheng Yuan frowned as he recalled: “Master wants to deal with Fang Yuan? After this demon destroyed fate Gu, he left Heavenly Court immediately and did not participate in the battle afterwards. He acted very strangely then, nobody knows where he went after that.”

Spectral Soul smiled coldly: “That is because of the heaven path dao marks, Fang Yuan could barely save himself, he had to make that choice. Since he could discern the arrangement that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable placed on wisdom Gu and thus used it in the refinement unhesitantly, he naturally can infer the arrangements I placed in sovereign immortal fetus Gu as well.”

“Thus, when refining the Gu, he used Red Lotus’ method to restrict me. Fang Yuan is very crafty, he managed to thwart my plan by borrowing others’ strength. Red Lotus wanted to see that happen as well, hmph, after I get rid of Fang Yuan, I will deal with this old scoundrel Red Lotus.”

Spectral Soul and Red Lotus worked together to destroy fate Gu for good. Now that the plan succeeded, Spectral Soul and Red Lotus returned to being enemies.

Two tigers cannot share one mountain, not to mention two venerables.

“But how do we locate Fang Yuan now?” Fairy Zi Wei felt a headache.

Why was it that after changing sides and betraying Heavenly Court, she still had to face this troublesome problem!

When she was in Heavenly Court, she tried all ways possible to deal with Fang Yuan.

As a wisdom path great expert, she had noticed Fang Yuan’s threat long ago.

But so what?

Fang Yuan was too good at hiding and concealing himself, his most skilled wisdom path aspect was in blocking deductions.

And he was too vigilant, he never left any traces behind. Even if Heavenly Court wanted to find him, they were helpless and clueless.

Like how humanity had Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables that the variant humans could not resist, they went into hiding and left even Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable without options against them.

Fairy Zi Wei lacked crucial clues, she could not deduce Fang Yuan's location.

That was the case when she was in Heavenly Court, until now, it was still true!

Thus, she had to get help from Spectral Soul, hoping that this Demon Venerable's soul had some way to deal with him.

But against this question, even Spectral Soul was silent for a while.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu was refined by him personally, he had made an arrangement to sense the sovereign immortal body. But after the heaven path dao marks were absorbed by Fang Yuan, he lost his method. The connection was completely cut.

Eventually, Spectral Soul ordered: "We temporarily can't find Fang Yuan, we have to force him to show up."

"How? Fang Yuan is a solitary demon, he has no attachments at all. Even if he did have friends or family, with his cruel nature, if we threaten him, he will not appear." Old Man Zheng Yuan felt very troubled.

Spectral Soul snorted coldly: "During Heavenly Court's battle, everyone saw the scene of Fang Yuan destroying fate Gu through the killer move everybody's vision. You will go spread the secret of the sovereign immortal aperture, tell everyone in the world that Fang Yuan was able to reach rank eight and destroy Fate because the sovereign immortal aperture can annex immortal apertures to avoid tribulations and raise his cultivation level rapidly."



“Once in a while, Fang Yuan will have to annex immortal apertures to sustain his life. Whoever kills Fang Yuan will gain countless venerable inheritances, they will even possess the sovereign immortal aperture, they will be qualified to become a venerable and become invincible in the world!”

After pausing, Spectral Soul continued: “In that case, Fang Yuan will be an enemy of everyone. We also have to tell everyone about his current weakness, that he has no battle strength due to the heaven path dao marks troubling him. If not, he would not have escaped immediately after refining the Gu.”

“With everyone in the world helping us find him, where can Fang Yuan hide? Even if he can hide for a while, he cannot hide forever. Both of you will go and find the secret treasures that I left behind afterwards, the cultivation resources that I did not need when refining sovereign immortal fetus Gu are kept there, they are not of low value. Using these resources, you can rebuild Shadow Sect and help me recruit more members.”

“Fang Yuan’s subordinates like Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan are all outside now? If we find them, we might find clues to Fang Yuan.”

Old Man Zheng Yuan and Fairy Zi Wei quickly responded.

Spectral Soul looked down at his feet, his gaze seemed to be piercing through the darkness and looking at the five regions: “The five regions fused into one, heaven and earth qi is converging as qi tides form and spread around the world. If the heaven and earth qi does not fuse completely, there will not be peace, it will be as if the five regional walls are thinned and spread all over the five regions. Thus, the Gu Immortals of the five regions will feel tremors in their immortal apertures as the two qi collide, they are forced to recuperate now. The stronger the immortal aperture foundation, the longer they need to recuperate.”

“Fang Yuan will be forced to lay low for a very long time. But you two are ex-Heavenly Court members, you had phantom apertures so you are unaffected by this. We need to make use of this time, work hard!”

“As master decrees.” Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan replied respectfully.

Spectral Soul waved his sleeves: “Then why are you still here?”

“Master, please take care! We will take our leave.” Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan left quickly.

# **Chapter 1969 - Black Heaven's Gu Immortals**

## **1969 Black Heaven's Gu Immortals**

Roar—!

Within black heaven, an ancient soul beast was escaping in a hurry.

This soul beast resembled a horse but had a human face. On its face now was terror and fear.

The ancient soul beast was panicking and escaping in a random direction, soon, its movements slowed down as its anguished cries became softer and weaker.

After several breaths of time, it completely stopped in the sky, floating silently in the night sky.

Soundlessly, its colossal body disintegrated as a Gu Immortal appeared.

This Gu Immortal had a pale face and chest-length hair, he was Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul grabbed the soul core, which was the soul path essence of the ancient soul beast. But Spectral Soul was not satisfied, he placed this soul

core into his mouth and ate it like a candy, swallowing it after a few seconds.

“Without using a soul path killer move, I need to wait a while to digest it completely.” Spectral Soul said unhappily as he snorted.

After splitting up with Old Man Zheng Yuan and Fairy Zi Wei, he had been hunting soul beasts in black heaven.

But for some reason, maybe due to bad luck or the extermination of lifeforms due to the qi tides, he met very few soul beasts.

Until now, he had only met lone soul beasts or those that formed into groups of five or fewer. The quantity was so small that he even felt like he was not in black heaven!

“This efficiency is just too low!” Spectral Soul continued his journey.

“If my attainment level was still around, I can find the soul beast armies with just my instinct. Even Fang Yuan would not be able to escape my detection. It is a pity I need to start over!”

“However, fate Gu is finally destroyed. Heaven’s will cannot obstruct my path to becoming venerable again, after I succeed, I want to see who dares to obstruct me, even if it is a venerable, I will kill them.”

“Oh?” While Spectral Soul moved stealthily, a flash of joy suddenly appeared on his face.

He finally found an army of soul beasts.

He got closer and saw that this soul beast army had over three million members. The quantity was not small, and what made Spectral Soul happy was that they had high quality.

He had only taken a quick glance but he already saw six immemorial soul beasts and over thirty ancient soul beasts!

“Kill!” The desire to kill emerged in Spectral Soul’s heart as he was about to charge over, but he noticed something.

This discovery was quite surprising: “Why are there soul path Gu Immortals?”

There were three Gu Immortals controlling the soul beast army.

Two males and one female immortal.

The female was at the center as the leader, she had a plain appearance and grey eyes, her rank eight aura was naturally emitted.

Of the two male immortals, one was tall and armored, with strong arms exposed and soul beast markings on his arms. The other was tall and thin, holding a bamboo staff.

The three immortals wore black robes of similar design, they were obviously from the same force.

“They are black heaven Gu Immortals.” Spectral Soul soon discerned their aura, he snickered as he changed his earlier idea of charging in, he stealthily mixed in with the soul beast army.

The three immortals controlled the soul beast army with much difficulty, the two males were showing signs of tiredness, sweat gathered on their foreheads.

The rank eight female immortal seemed to have rested earlier, she spoke at this moment: “You two can stop, I will control the army now.”

Hearing this, the two male immortals let out sighs of relief, the thin one started to boot-lick her: “Aunt, only you can control a soul beast army of such a size, even if the two of us cultivate for eight lifetimes, we would not even reach half of your strength.”

The rank eight female immortal looked at the male immortal with displeasure: “If eight lifetimes are not enough to reach my level, you should just end your own life!”

“Ugh.” The thin man knew that his boot-licking had backfired, he showed some awkwardness on his face.

The female immortal sighed: “You two are the most likely Gu Immortals in the clan to advance further besides me. Now that fate Gu has been destroyed, we are taking control of our own fate. The great era has arrived, the peaceful and quiet life of the past is long gone. You must have the spirit to work hard, if you do not have such an awareness, sooner or later our Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven will be drowned by the tides of the era!”

“Aunt, you have taught me a lesson.” The tall and thin man nodded his head in succession.

As for the male immortal at the side, he remained silent.

The female immortal sighed again and continued: “The five regions were fused, the heaven and earth qi are merging, to the extent that qi tides swept across the whole world, even black heaven and white heaven are not exempted. Wherever the qi tide reaches, heaven and earth will shake, grotto-heavens can no longer be concealed, their positions will be exposed. This time, we as Gu Immortals of black heaven’s grotto-heavens are meeting to discuss how to face this situation. At that time, the two of you will be representing yourselves as well as our Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, don’t forget this.”

“Yes, aunt (madam), don’t worry, we will remember this!” The two immortals responded respectfully.

The three immortals did not know that Spectral Soul had already gotten near them, he heard their entire conversation without missing anything.

“So that’s it.” Spectral Soul realized: “With the convergence of the heaven and earth qi, the grotto-heavens concealed in black heaven and white heaven are affected too. The reason is the same as why the five regions’ Gu Immortals are forced to recuperate. but the five regions’ Gu Immortals are more affected while the two heavens are not as troubled, the Gu Immortals are still able to move around with difficulty.”

Within black and white heaven, many grotto-heavens were hidden.

Even Spectral Soul could not precisely count the number of grotto-heavens here.

This current change in the world was unprecedented, all of the grotto-heavens were unable to hide anymore, they were like fish forced out of the water.

Spectral Soul felt that this was a perfect opportunity, he immediately continued to hide, following the three immortals.

After spending half a day, the three immortals controlled the army of soul beasts and finally arrived at their destination.

This was also a grotto-heaven.

The grotto-heaven's entrance was open, many people were already waiting outside, the commotion was not small.

The soul beast army of millions that the three Soul Pacifying immortals brought here was not exceptional at all, they were only superior to the norm.

“So our friends from Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven have arrived.” Seeing the three immortals, a Gu Immortal flew out from a pack of night heavenly wolves.

This Gu Immortal had rank eight cultivation level, he had a pair of sharp eagle eyes and had an appearance of a resolute character.

“Night Heavenly Wolf Lord, you arrived early.” The rank eight female immortal from Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven replied while smiling.

“Actually, we were late, Lady Cold Ash.” Night Heavenly Wolf Lord smiled bitterly, pointing at the grotto-heaven entrance: “Those variant human Gu Immortals have entered already. I waited for you to enter together, otherwise, as lone rank eight Gu Immortals, we will be pushed aside.”

Lady Cold Ash nodded with a grim expression: “We have gathered here today because of Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s request. He is a snowman Gu Immortal to begin with, he opened up his Ice Crystal grotto-heaven as well, this will definitely be dominated by variant human Gu Immortals. Let’s go in and see first.”

Lady Cold Ash quickly arranged for the two rank sevens to stay behind and look after the soul beast army.

She only brought some immemorial soul beasts with her into the grotto-heaven.

Unknown to her, Spectral Soul had already possessed one of her immemorial soul beasts, he followed after them.

Once they entered the grotto-heaven, the temperature fell drastically, it was an icy world.

Looking at the ground it was all white. The mountain stood tall, made entirely of frost crystals, this was very rare.

At the peak of the frost crystal mountain, there was a palace made of ice and snow.

Lady Cold Ash and Night Heavenly Wolf Lord arrived in front of the palace hall, they left their accompanying immemorial soul beasts and immemorial night heavenly wolves outside, entering themselves.

After Spectral Soul looked for a while, he successfully saw through the foundation of this icy palace, he immediately found a loophole and entered the hall.

There was a snowman Gu Immortal sitting at the main seat, he had a squarish face and dignified demeanor, he was Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Other than that, there were three rank eight variant humans, they were rockman, hairy man, and eggman respectively.



“To think that in black heaven, variant humans are the superior force, they actually have four rank eights while the humans only have two.” Spectral Soul thought about it for a moment before understanding why.

After humans dominated the world, variant humans could not live in the five regions anymore, they were chased into the peripheries of the world to live pitiful lives.

Black and white heaven became their top choices to relocate and live.

This place was extremely huge, once their grotto-heavens were concealed, even venerables would not be able to find them without sufficient clues.

Thus, black and white heaven became the foundation of the variant humans, they developed here.

Even though human Gu Immortals also explored both heavens, they only explored them to seek resources. Few rank eight Gu Immortals would place their grotto-heavens within the black and white heavens.

Human grotto-heavens were different from variant human grotto-heavens, the latter were taken care of by heaven’s will, their tribulations were weaker, but the former were different.

As time passed, more and more human grotto-heavens that were placed were destroyed, few could develop successfully. Meanwhile, the variant human grotto-heavens were able to last a long time, their forces grew stealthily.

The six rank eight Gu Immortals discussed for a long time.

“The five regions have become one, qi tides rampage the heavens. Our grotto-heavens will be exposed, I propose that we unite ourselves and resist the enemies of the five regions together!”

“How will we resist them? Even though our grotto-heavens are doing well, how can our resources compare to the five regions? Even if we all work together, we are not the match of the five regions’ humans!”

“Moreover, we cannot cooperate sincerely with each other, we are of different identities after all.”

“Everyone, don’t worry, even though we are humans, our Soul Pacifying Ancestor was forced to live in black heaven, we have already broken all ties with the five regions.”

“I’ll be more straightforward, my Night Wolf grotto-heaven does not want to expose ourselves. After all, we have an immense enmity with Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven!”

“Friends.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch spoke: “Do you all only want to go on the defensive, do you not want to progress further? Now that fate Gu has been destroyed, the reign of humanity has been disrupted. The five regions’ Gu Immortals need to recuperate now, this is the best chance for us to take action!”

“Because we were in black heaven, we became the least affected ones, we can move around with difficulty. If we don’t make use of this chance, we will regret it in the future.”

“Immortal Monarch, what plan do you have?”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch sighed as he said with a grim expression: “The five regions are huge, they have abundant resources, even if our grotto-heavens are added together, we cannot compare to them. The world will definitely go into chaos, if we do not try to improve ourselves, when the five regions settle down, they will find a chance to eliminate us all. Only by taking this lead can we have a hope of survival.”

# **Chapter 1970 - Heavenly Court's Dilemma**

## **1970 Heavenly Court's Dilemma**

Lady Cold Ash flew first towards the entrance of Ice Crystal grotto-heaven.

The two rank sevens from Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven quickly went to receive her.

“Aunt.” The tall and thin Gu Immortal asked in concern: “How was the discussion?”

Lady Cold Ash shook her head lightly, at this time, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord also flew out of Ice Crystal grotto-heaven.

The two conversed for some time before parting ways. Night Heavenly Wolf Lord brought his wolf group along while Lady Cold Ash led her soul beast army, going back to their respective grotto-heavens.

Along the way, the three immortals conversed, not knowing that Spectral Soul was lurking around them.

Spectral Soul had originally wanted to hunt the soul beasts, but after seeing this, he changed his mind.

Just by the name of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, he could tell its foundation was soul path. Seeing that Lady Cold Ash and the two rank

sevens were soul path Gu Immortals, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven must be a place filled with abundant soul path cultivation resources.

Let alone anything else, just the soul beast army that they controlled was a scrumptious meal to Spectral Soul.

“Qi tides rampage in the five regions and two heavens, the grotto-heaven forces in black and white heaven will not lay low. Hehe, I can use this to my advantage and assault the other venerable forces and speed up my growth!”

Spectral Soul not only had to deal with Fang Yuan, there were also venerable forces like Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven.

Now that fate Gu was destroyed, Spectral Soul was able to revive, the other venerables were also able to revive themselves.

With Fang Yuan missing at the moment, Spectral Soul had to consider the whole situation. Even though his true nature was killing, there were many ways to kill. Using others as one’s lethal weapon was also a high level killing method, he was going to use it now.

Lady Cold Ash and the rest did not know that their Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven was currently targeted by a huge monster, Spectral Soul. Meanwhile, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord returned to his Night Wolf grotto-heaven.

Many Gu Immortals in Night Wolf grotto-heaven quickly greeted him.

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord said: “Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch wants us to form an alliance to resist the five regions. This is quite a difficult situation.”

Gu Immortal Ye Zhi nodded: “It is quite difficult. In the current situation, fate Gu is destroyed, the five regions merged, as the heaven and earth qi fuse together, qi tides rampage in the world, no grotto-heaven can conceal itself. We are small and lone forces, when the five regions attack us, we will not be able to resist them. However, we do not need to fight the five regions, we are humans but Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest are

variant humans after all. The five regions are stronger than the two heavens, this is an obvious fact, why can't we join the five regions instead?"

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord laughed: "Ye Zhi, you know me best, that is how I feel too. If we work with the variant humans, we will be considered spies of humanity. Even if the five regions do not want to attack us, if we ally with the variant humans, they will want to."

Ye Zhi frowned: "But we cannot join the five regions. Firstly, Northern Plains of the five regions is impossible. Secondly, the other four regions might not welcome us. And finally, if we join them, we will be attacked by Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest."

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord sighed: "Indeed, that is why I made an agreement with Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven's Lady Cold Ash, we will advance and retreat together, we will combine the forces of the human grotto-heavens here. As for which region to join, in my opinion, Central Continent's Heavenly Court is the most appropriate. We can secretly contact them first."

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was an experienced leader, not only did he have rank eight cultivation level, he was shrewd in politics, nobody in Night Wolf grotto-heaven defied his rule.

Since he made a decision, the Gu Immortals in Night Wolf grotto-heaven did not dare to raise objections.

Heavenly Court.

Central Great Hall was finally repaired, Qin Ding Ling was currently the person taking charge.

They failed to repair fate Gu, Heavenly Court had undergone an intense battle, the damage was huge, even now, many areas were still in ruins.

"This is a humiliation!" Qin Ding Ling put aside the letter Gu as she rested temporarily. Her expression was calm but her eyes flickered with light, as memories surfaced in her mind, rage built up within her.

After Red Lotus' goal was achieved, Duke Long died while fighting and Fang Yuan retreated rapidly. But the three regions' Gu Immortals wanted to destroy Heavenly Court, nobody backed off.

At the moment of life and death, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable's method started to activate. All sorts of rage qi, unlucky qi, grief qi, and others plagued the three regions' Gu Immortals, their physical conditions weakened.

This move was originally meant to deal with Fang Yuan, but Limitless Demon Venerable blocked it for him. After Red Lotus' plan succeeded, the battle between two venerables in Imperfection Regret Pavilion also concluded, with Limitless laughing as the two venerable silhouettes faded away. Without Limitless' power to restrict it, Primordial Origin's method started to work again.

And the other good news was that even though Feng Jiu Ge turned on them, he only helped Fang Yuan to refine the Gu, he did not do anything against Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court was able to recover because of this and retaliate, maintaining their position in this difficult battle.

The three regions' Gu Immortals had no choice, with Dragon Palace, Calamity Luck Altar, and Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building as their foundation, they retreated gradually.

After leaving Heavenly Court, some people wanted to loot Central Continent but the first qi tide happened at this moment.

The immortal apertures of the three regions' Gu Immortals became unstable, they had to leave.

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals stopped chasing them, after witnessing Fang Yuan refine destiny Gu in front of them, their morale and fighting spirit had fallen.

After the battle ended, Heavenly Court, which was greatly damaged, tried to reduce its losses and take care of the aftermath.

Duke Long died while Fairy Zi Wei betrayed them for Spectral Soul, after Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals talked over it, they decided that Qin Ding Ling would be the new leader.

During this period of time, Qin Ding Ling had been the one in charge, taking care of all the matters, big or small.

Qin Ding Ling had a plain expression but a fire was burning in her heart. The great Heavenly Court had actually lost, it was a complete loss! She was eager to make up for this humiliation, but logic told her to not act rashly. Because everything had changed, Heavenly Court was no longer the old Heavenly Court, the enemies were no longer the same, even the world had changed.

After resting for a while, Qin Ding Ling continued to deal with the matters at hand.

“Oh?” She held an information path mortal Gu as her expression changed slightly: “Night Wolf grotto-heaven?”

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was not willing to fight alongside the variant humans, he wanted to join the stronger side of the five regions. Among them, although Heavenly Court had lost this fight, it was still the number one human force for the last few million years.

Night Wolf grotto-heaven had grudges with Longevity Heaven, in the five regions, only Heavenly Court had the foundation to stand up against the vicious Longevity Heaven members.

In this information path Gu worm, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord also explained the ill intentions of the variant humans.

“Hmph, those of other races have such motives! Once fate Gu got destroyed, these variant humans jumped out immediately.” Qin Ding Ling snorted, deep killing intense rose in her heart.

After calming down, Qin Ding Ling started to think about this situation.

Qin Ding Ling knew very little about Night Heavenly Wolf Lord and Night Wolf grotto-heaven. With just one information path Gu worm, she could not confirm if Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was really trying to sincerely join them, or if they were scheming against Heavenly Court.

“If this Night Heavenly Wolf Lord is sincere, how should we deal with Longevity Heaven and the variant human forces of the grotto-heavens?”

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord talked about the history of his ancestor truthfully in the letter, he did not conceal the grudges they had with Longevity Heaven.

Qin Ding Ling was slightly troubled.

Heavenly Court was at an unprecedented level of weakness.

Qi tides rampaged in the world, heaven and earth qi converged, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who had phantom apertures were even more mobile than the Gu Immortals in black or white heaven.

But Heavenly Court could not move them.

Firstly, most of Heavenly Court’s members had limited lifespan. Secondly, they had to reinforce Star Constellation’s will.

Thus, a portion of Heavenly Court’s members had to enter the immortal graveyard to hibernate and help Star Constellation’s will, to prevent her from being completely assimilated with heaven’s will.

But in that case, Heavenly Court’s battle strength would be far lower.

Thus, Qin Ding Ling could not make up her mind.

“If only Fairy Zi Wei was still around.” Qin Ding Ling sighed, the worry in her heart intensified.



Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan were enslaved by Spectral Soul, they left with him. The two of them knew a lot about Heavenly Court's secrets, together with the soul of a Demon Venerable, who could underestimate them?

Qin Ding Ling thought about it for a while before feeling the severity of this situation, she decided to discuss it with Zhou Xiong Xin and the rest.

Zhou Xiong Xin suggested: "This is an important matter, but the situation is not very clear now. The six Gu Immortals including Night Heavenly Wolf Lord are merely the rank eights of the black heaven above our Central Continent. What about the other four regions' black heaven? We do not know how many grotto-heavens there are, or how many rank eight Gu Immortals exist in these grotto-heavens. I am willing to go and investigate the two heavens myself!"

Zhou Xiong Xin cultivated information path, he knew the importance of information.

He had a phantom aperture and was not afraid of the heaven and earth qi convergence.

Qin Ding Ling agreed with his suggestion, she chose to continue keeping in contact with Night Wolf grotto-heaven while investigating the situation.

Jun Shen Guang took out an information path mortal Gu, saying: "The list of names have been chosen, they are all Gu Immortal seeds with great talent and aptitude. Most importantly, they are loyal to Heavenly Court and the ten great ancient sects. But there is one person whom I need everyone's input and discussion on."

Jun Shen Guang's list contained the names of many mortal Gu Masters, they were all exceptional geniuses.

Heavenly Court lost this battle and the immortal graveyard was even destroyed by Fang Yuan, everything had to be rebuilt from scratch. With the threat of the five regions chaotic war, Heavenly Court decided to nurture new Gu Immortals, disregarding the costs.

Qin Ding Ling received the Gu worm and looked into it.

There were many names on this list: Immortal Crane Sect recommended Sun Yuan Hua, Spirit Butterfly Valley recommended Xiao Qi Xing, Ancient Soul Sect had Gu Ting, Heaven's Envy Manor had Wei Wu Shang... but at Spirit Affinity House's section, the list was empty without a name.

Qin Ding Ling sighed as her expression turned complex.

She knew about the person Spirit Affinity House nominated, it had to be Feng Jin Huang.

But after the battle over Fate, Feng Jiu Ge betrayed Heavenly Court and went missing, his daughter Feng Jin Huang ended up in an awkward position.

She was originally Duke Long's disciple and the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable. But with the death of Duke Long and the destruction of Fate, she was no longer certain to be Great Dream Immortal Venerable.

Zhou Xiong Xin's concern was: If Heavenly Court continued to nurture Feng Jin Huang and she betrayed them like her father, what would they do?

Even though Feng Jin Huang was Duke Long's disciple, the disciple that he nurtured wholeheartedly spent a million years to plot and destroy Heavenly Court's fate Gu. Would his second disciple Feng Jin Huang also inherit this 'great tradition'?

"We will talk about this again next time."

# **Chapter 1971 - Struggle Between Feng and Zhao**

## **1971 Struggle Between Feng and Zhao**

Central Continent, Lake Heart Mountain.

Spirit Affinity House's public blessed land headquarters was situated here.

Within the blessed land, there was an area called Quiet Rain Valley.

When Feng Jin Huang was strolling in the valley, it started to rain.

A drizzle.

The rain was mild and quiet.

Bathed in the rain, Feng Jin Huang slowed down subconsciously as she walked.

The air was fresh with the smell of grass, all around her was a faint field of greenery.

This rain did not feel cold, it was like jade, mild and calm.

Feng Jin Huang knew that this was called quiet rain. When it rains, all sounds would be absorbed and the surroundings would be silent. Heaven

and earth would be soundless, one would be able to hear their own heartbeats and breathing.

Quiet rain was a rank six immortal material, this valley was the resource point that created quiet rain, this was why it was named Quiet Rain Valley.

After Feng Jiu Ge betrayed Heavenly Court and went missing, his wife, the mother of Feng Jin Huang, Fairy Bai Qing, requested to be transferred to Quiet Rain Valley to collect quiet rain, she said she would not leave this place.

Whenever there was quiet rain, the valley would have music that sounded like zither and flute, it was akin to Fairy Bai Qing's anguished cries of sadness.

Feng Jin Huang had heard of this rumor and felt worried, she came to the valley to visit her mother.

The quiet rain was drizzling, there was indeed the music of zither and flute being emitted.

The sound of the zither spread out all around, like white clouds in the sky, ancient, melodious and pleasant to the ear. The sound of the flute, however, was high pitched, fluctuating almost abruptly, like a fierce hawk flying across the sky, sharply piercing the wind, tearing the sky.

At first, the sound of the zither resounded and the sound of the flute reverberated, alternating with each other, as if both sides were speaking, one sentence after the other.

Then, the zither and the flute began to approach each other, and gradually merged into one another. The white clouds were misty, and the eagles were flying across the clouds. The two abrupt sounds of music merged together, creating an indescribable beauty.

In the end, the sound of the zither and the flute become one and the same, forming a kind of mix, with the melodious sound of the zither and the clarity of the flute, it was unique and beautiful!

Feng Jin Huang was enchanted by the beautiful sound of the music. She went deeper into the valley and managed to meet her mother.

Fairy Bai Qing was sitting in a bamboo pavilion, with two Gu flying around her like white jade pearls. They were sound path mortal Gu, zither Gu and flute Gu.

When Feng Jin Huang entered the pavilion, the music slowly stopped.

Fairy Bai Qing had already known of Feng Jin Huang's arrival, she turned around slowly: "This demonic immortal unification song was composed by your father when we fell in love, it is the symbol of our relationship. I still remember the first time your father played it for me, he told me: Immortals and demons are one to begin with, initially, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was known as Primordial Origin Demon Venerable by the variant humans as well. This song contains deep meaning and your father has been treasuring and not using it, but he played it during the fate war."

Saying so, Fairy Bai Qing's tone changed as she looked at Feng Jin Huang fixedly: "The list of names has been announced already."

Feng Jin Huang nodded: "I know. The last time the sect recommended me, there was no reply from Heavenly Court. This time, the sect put Sun Yao's name and it was quickly approved by Heavenly Court."

Fairy Bai Qing said plainly: "Originally, the sect still wanted to recommend you to go there, but Li Jun Ying and Xu Hao got in the way, they ended up promoting Sun Yao instead. How do you feel about such an outcome, my dear daughter?"

"Hehe." Feng Jin Huang smiled slightly, her smile brilliant as a flower, bringing a bright sunshine to the bamboo pavilion for a moment.

"Mother, why do you have to test me on this? Ever since father betrayed and turned against Heavenly Court, I've already prepared myself. Right now, the situation is already not bad, my dream path Immortal Gu was not taken." Feng Jin Huang said.

Fairy Bai Qing also smiled slightly at her words: “It’s not like there isn’t any forceful seizure in the righteous path, but it’s just that the act is often cloaked in a layer of righteousness and morality. It’s already good that you have come to this level of understanding. However, don’t worry too much, your father left Heavenly Court but created destiny song, his outstanding battle strength is evident to the world, Heavenly Court and Spirit Affinity House will not dare to touch you.”

Feng Jin Huang revealed a look of displeasure: “Mother, you don’t need to make an explanation for father. Although I can understand father, I will not forgive him. For him to suddenly turn his back on Heavenly Court and not even telling us beforehand is simply abandoning his wife and daughter! One day, I will settle the score with him.”

“Hehehe.” Fairy Bai Qing laughed and shook her head, walking up to Feng Jin Huang and holding her hand: “You misunderstand your father. That demonic immortal unification song, which he kept as a symbol of our love, has never been used for anything other than singing in front of me. But he used it during the fate war to tell me that righteous immortals and demons are the same, his feelings for me had never changed, and even when he left the righteous path and returned to the demonic path, it wouldn’t end the relationship of our family.”

“Do you believe me? As long as I give out the slightest hint of inclination to leave Spirit Affinity House, he will definitely take the initiative to bring me away. He understands me well and knows that I do not want to become a demonic path member. Therefore, he gave us both the opportunity to choose our side freely. He didn’t want his ideals to become a burden on us.”

Feng Jinhuang snorted coldly: “Father would rather help Fang Yuan, the great demon, than help my master. It’s true that master was stubborn and was always nagging about fate and all that, but he was ultimately kind to us and truly had my best interests in mind. Father was simply too cold and heartless.”

“Mother, since you are fine now, I’ll be leaving.”

“Oh you.” Fairy Bai Qing sighed, but did not ask her daughter to stay.

When Feng Jin Huang left Quiet Rain Valley, she met with two female Gu Masters.

One was beautiful while the other was cute, they were acquaintances of Feng Jin Huang, they were anxiously waiting outside the valley.

After seeing Feng Jin Huang, they showed joy on their faces as they went to her.

“Senior sister, we heard you came here so we rushed over to find you!” The beautiful woman was Qin Juan.

“Senior sister, sorry, I... I did not want to snatch your opportunity...” Sun Yao had a cute and round face, she was very anxious now.

Qin Juan and Sun Yao were good friends with Feng Jin Huang, they had always followed behind her.

But in the recent years, Feng Jin Huang followed Duke Long and went away to cultivate dream path, they did not meet much during this period.

Feng Jin Huang laughed aloud and stretched out her hand to nudge Sun Yao’s forehead: “Oh, you’ve done well this time, so why are you apologizing. The nomination quota is just a small matter, am I unable to become immortal without this funding? For me, becoming a Gu Immortal is by no means an obstacle. It’s just that I have to consider the kind of Gu Immortal I want to become. But for you, this is a rare opportunity, so seize it well.”

After speaking to Sun Yao, Feng Jin Huang looked at Qin Juan: “You’ve always been quite active and have good perseverance, but this time, when fusing with the dao marks, why did you faint? If not, the nomination would have been yours this time.”

Qin Juan did not dare to retort: “Senior sister, you are right, I have slacked off on my cultivation.”

“No, that is not so, senior sister. Sister Qin Juan was injured at that time, she could not endure the ordeal and fainted.” Sun Yao quickly clarified.

“So that’s how it was.” Feng Jin Huang nodded her head and said regrettably: “It is indeed a great loss. Fang Yuan destroyed fate Gu and refined it into countless heaven path dao marks, which were dispersed to the people in the world. The more heaven path dao marks you absorb, the more beneficial it will be in the future. Be it cultivation or developing the immortal aperture, it will benefit with no harm. But there’s no harm in not having any, at best it’s just an opportunity. What determines your achievements in life will still depend on your own talents and efforts.”

“Yes, Qin Juan will listen to senior sister’s teachings.” Qin Juan bowed.

Feng Jin Huang smiled again: “Let’s go, I will give you two some guidance.”

Qin Juan and Sun Yao revealed joyful expressions, the latter jumped around cheering: “That’s great, we haven’t been together for such a long time.”

The three of them walked together, gradually leaving Quiet Rain Valley.

Within the valley, Fairy Bai Qing retracted her investigative method.

“Daughter, you’ve grown up.” Fairy Bai Qing had a relieved expression.

Feng Jin Huang was very clear about her own circumstances, as well as Heavenly Court and the ten great ancient sects. Towards Feng Jiu Ge’s actions, she had her own opinion, but she was able to put it aside and make a clear judgment, she had a solid foundation of skills.

“Maybe, your betrayal has hastened our daughter’s maturity. We should let her walk on her own path.”

“As a mother, all I can do is to wish the best for her.”

“Of course, if some people in the sect do not know what is good for them and go overboard, I will not avoid conflict either.” Fairy Bai Qing’s expression turned cold.



At the same time, on another mountain, Affection Peak.

Spirit Affinity House's Li Jun Ying and Xu Hao went to visit Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun had already become an immortal, she was assigned by Spirit Affinity House recently and became the Affection Peak Lord.

She was able to achieve what she had today thanks to the support of Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying, in addition to her own efforts. Zhao Lian Yun was also guided by the two immortals during her Gu Immortal cultivation journey and the management of her immortal aperture, so she was able to avoid many pitfalls.

Zhao Lian Yun remembered these debts in her heart, so when Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying visited her, she quickly came out of cultivation and attended to them personally.

But hearing their request, Zhao Lian Yun felt troubled.

“Seniors, you want me to use my status as the current generation fairy to deal with Feng Jin Huang and Fairy Bai Qing?”

“Indeed, now is the best opportunity! Feng Jiu Ge betrayed us and caused Heavenly Court to lose and Fate to be destroyed. If we target them now, we will definitely win.” Xu Hao had a fierce expression.

The hatred between him and Feng Jiu Ge had a long history. In the past, he had hated Feng Jiu Ge so much that he held back key information and intelligence, almost causing him to die. Feng Jiu Ge had a very strong stance in his political manipulation, ostracizing the couple to the fringe of Spirit Affinity House in this power struggle. Most of the time, the two immortals were at a disadvantage against Feng Jiu Ge, they could only support each other with difficulty.

For them, Feng Jiu Ge's betrayal was great news, it was worth celebrating.

“This...” Zhao Lian Yun hesitated: “Feng Jiu Ge has already betrayed Heavenly Court, seniors, I know that you have grudges with him, but why do you want to implicate his family?”

“Oh Lian Yun, we cannot be too kindhearted sometimes. Think about it, think about the time you competed with Feng Jin Huang over the fairy position.” Li Jun Ying urged: “If we do not use this chance, we will regret it in the future. You do not need to worry about it, I will tell you something, our sect’s nominee was originally Feng Jin Huang but now she has been removed from the list.”

“Seniors, people should let others off when possible.” Zhao Lian Yun explained, she was not willing to do that. Conflicts should be resolved and not deepened, back then, when competing for the fairy position, both of them had used above board methods, Feng Jin Huang had a deep background but did not use any unscrupulous ways to deal with her as well.

Even though Zhao Lian Yun and Feng Jin Huang were competitors, Zhao Lian Yun admired Feng Jin Huang’s personality, she had no ill feelings towards her.

Xu Hao did not listen to her words: “Back then, did the demon Feng Jiu Ge spare us?”

“You are too kind for your own good, Lian Yun.” Li Jun Ying frowned.

Zhao Lian Yun sighed to herself, she changed her words and explained: “Seniors, we need to analyze this situation deeply. Even though the sect nominated someone else, Heavenly Court did not directly take away Feng Jin Huang’s status. From that, we can see the attitude of Heavenly Court is still unclear towards her.”

“Precisely because they are uncertain now, we need to deal the fatal blow and affirm their decision! The fight over authority will never cease, only when a true victor is decided can there be peace.” Li Jun Ying said with deep meaning.

Zhao Lian Yun sighed again, she could only accept their request.

There was no choice, she owed them a big favor after all. Even though she was unwilling, people had to do some things that they did not want to in this world. They had helped her greatly, if she rejected them, what would others think?

Zhao Lian Yun was half an otherworldly demon, even though she was the current generation fairy, Spirit Affinity House still ostracized her. If she lost her relationship with Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying, she would truly become a loner.

The two immortals saw that Zhao Lian Yun agreed, they were overjoyed, they promised her a huge reward.

Zhao Lian Yun was not interested in the reward, after the two of them left, she continued her closed cultivation.

The destruction of Fate was actually great news to Zhao Lian Yun. With this, Ma Hong Yun's revival would be much easier and less troublesome.

But Ma Hong Yun's soul was still in Fang Yuan's hands.

Thus, Zhao Lian Yun had to cultivate and raise her strength, to make preparations to save her beloved.

In the secret room, Zhao Lian Yun calmed down and inspected her own immortal aperture.

Lian Yun blessed land had 5700km<sup>2</sup> of land, the rate of time was one-to-thirteen. The terrain was mostly grassland and plains.

But after the heaven path dao marks were absorbed, Lian Yun blessed land started to change in many aspects.

Firstly, the ground cracked to form huge trenches, next, there was torrential rain as huge rivers were formed. The rivers overflowed and floods plagued the surroundings.

After three days and three nights, the floods receded, leaving behind vast expanses of fertile mud. Small ditches and rivers connected to the main

channel of the giant river, forming an elaborate and dense network of rivers.

Zhao Lian Yun witnessed the transformation of her immortal aperture the entire time, she was dazed and greatly shocked internally.

“With heaven path dao marks, the immortal aperture will transform and become closer to a truly balanced environment. Even though there are temporary losses, the potential and prospects will rise by many times.”

Zhao Lian Yun had divine concealment from Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance. She did not face calamities and tribulations, this was beneficial and also detrimental, her immortal aperture development had always been a problem. But with the addition of heaven path dao marks, this problem was reduced greatly.

“If only I had more heaven path dao marks!”

“Sigh, what a pity that I only obtained six and a half heaven path dao marks, and they are all segmented too, I do not have a single complete heaven path dao mark.”

“How many heaven path dao marks did Fang Yuan get? He was the person refining the Gu, he was the closest to these heaven path dao marks.”

Zhao Lian Yun sighed.

She could not imagine it or find the answer, but she knew that the difference between her and Fang Yuan had been greatly increased again.

# **Chapter 1972 - Fang Yuan's Disaster Relief**

## **1972 Fang Yuan's Disaster Relief**

“Wake up, wake up, kid!”

Peng Da groaned and barely opened his eyes to see a bearded uncle, slapping him in the face with a rough palm.

Peng Da was in a trance, and it was only then that he recognized the man in front of him.

“Uncle Mo Li.” He called out: “Wasn’t I sleeping on the camel?”

Peng Da looked around, he could not help but be stunned once more.

There was sand everywhere, the caravan was nowhere to be seen, leaving only him and Mo Li, both were in a messy state.

“Ouch.” Peng Da groaned as he realized he had bruises all over his body.

Uncle Mo Li looked at Peng Da and sighed: “You kid, I don’t know what to say about you, you are so lucky! Many Gu Masters fled desperately, they all died. You were deeply asleep but survived. However, if I hadn’t discovered your faint breath in time and dug you out, I’m afraid you would have been buried alive.”

“Uncle Mo Li, you’ve saved me once again.” Peng Da grabbed both of Mo Li’s hands, saying gratefully: “But what in the world had happened?”

“It’s a natural disaster, I’ve never seen it before.” Uncle Mo Li let out a heavy sigh.

“So... what about our caravan?”

“Sigh, it’s just the two of us now.”

What?! Peng Da could not help but stare with wide eyes and scream in his heart: “How can this world be so vicious, there was a natural disaster with no warning! I just slept for a bit and almost died again! My lord, what kind of world have I come to. It is simply a brutal and terrible place to live!”

“At least we’re still alive.” Mo Li knocked Peng Da on the head: “Kid, you don’t look satisfied? To be alive after a natural disaster like that is the greatest of all blessings!”

“Look at me.” Mo Li pointed his finger at his chest: “I’ve worked hard most of my life to own such a caravan. And now it’s all gone! Look on the bright side, otherwise we won’t survive until tomorrow. Sigh, it would be great if I could become an immortal!”

“Immortal? There are immortals in this world?”

Mo Li looked at Peng Da: “Did you forget everything?! You forgot even immortals? Sigh, I’ll explain in the future, let’s leave first.”

Peng Da followed Mo Li as they left, heading towards the closest oasis.

Peng Da followed behind Mo Li and asked with caution: “Are there many disasters like this?”

“Of course!” Mo Li said in a vicarious tone: “It’s not easy for us to make a living in the desert. Sandstorms are the killers that visit often. Sometimes there are also flying blade hurricanes, and each gust of wind can condense into a huge wind blade that cuts everything wherever it goes. In addition to

natural disasters, there are also vicious beasts. For example, we are in wolf desert, desert wolves are most plentiful here.”

Howl—!

As Mo Li was saying that, a group of desert wolves suddenly emerged from under the desert.

“Wolves, wolves!” Peng Da jumped up in fright: “Oh heaven, they’re coming out from under the sand! So many heads, what do we do, uncle?!”

Mo Li looked pale and cursed out loud: “Damn it! Why weren’t these desert wolves wiped out by the natural disaster?”

It was not strange.

The qi tides were the phenomenon of fusing heaven and earth qi, it originated from the Heavenly Dao. But the Heavenly Dao would not wipe out all life, there was a chance of survival in every situation. Mo Li and Peng Da were able to survive, other lifeforms naturally had such an opportunity as well.

The desert wolves emerged from everywhere, but strangely enough, although they spotted Peng Da and Mo Li, they did not come to attack, instead they quickly assembled, howling and staring at the desert ground.

Rustle rustle....

With a series of moving sand sounds, golden scorpions emerged from the ground. These golden scorpions were all the size of a millstone, Peng Da watched with chills in his heart.

The golden scorpion group and the desert wolf group were engaged in a brutal fight.

Whenever a desert wolf was stung by a golden scorpion’s needle, it would immediately foam saliva at the mouth, fall to the ground, and eventually die. On the other hand, the golden scorpions could not fight against the

desert wolves' claws and teeth, and were often torn apart by the wolves' claws.

The two groups of beasts fought, because they were weak in intelligence, they paid no attention to Mo Li and Peng Da who were close by.

Peng Da looked frightened and pale. This world was too dangerous, no matter which beast group won, they would surely still end up attacking the humans.

“We must break out!” Mo Li gritted his teeth with a firm expression.

“But uncle, we're surrounded by golden scorpions and desert wolves.” Peng Da wanted to cry.

“Do you want to wait to be eaten?” Mo Li said, about to move: “Kid, can you fight?”

“Huh? I, I can't, I have amnesia.”

“These desert wolves and golden scorpions don't care if you have amnesia. Stay close to me and do your best to save yourself. There is at least hope for breaking out.” Mo Li said and laughed, “If breaking out fails, you'll have to go fill the bellies of the beasts. But don't worry, you won't die alone, there's still me.”

Peng Da could not help but roll his eyes, rather than dying like this, he would prefer to be buried alive!

Mo Li started to break out and Peng Da yelled: “Uncle, wait for me!”

He could only desperately follow behind Mo Li.

It was fine when they were still, but when they moved, they alerted the scorpion and wolf groups.

Almost at the same time, there were several golden scorpions and desert wolves, one left and one right, attacking them.



Mo Li grunted and activated his mortal Gu, but he only managed to repel two of the beasts before they got encircled by the groups.

“Breaking out has failed!” Mo Li sighed and gave up the fight.

Peng Da clutched his head and fell into despair, he stuttered: “Am... am I going to die?!”

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

At this moment, be they the mini five regions or the mini nine heavens, chaos was everywhere, the entire place was in a commotion.

Mini Southern Border’s mountains collapsed, the terrain became disorganized, Mini Central Continent’s river channels changed paths and caused torrential floods, Mini Western Desert had sandstorms everywhere that devoured cities and oases.

Mini Northern Plains.

An intense snowstorm was blowing, a pure white flame, fluttering in the blizzard, attached itself to wherever it burned.

This was the special fire immortal material — frost ice flame.

In places where the ice and snow path dao marks were dense, there would be a certain degree of probability that this special flame would be produced. Most of this flame was filled with ice and snow path dao marks, but the heart of the flame had dense fire path dao marks.

“We cannot let this frost ice flame spread everywhere!” Snowman Gu Immortal Xue Er was in charge of the situation, she tried to salvage it.

She was tasked by Fang Yuan to manage Triple Sacred Mountain, she controlled the snow crystal formation and focused on the growth of the snowman tribe’s expansion.

Frost ice flames started to spread on triple sacred mountain, once the flames grew to a certain size, be they snowmen or snow monsters, they were burnt

to death while crying in agony.

The snowmen were in chaos, they escaped and trampled on each other, causing unnecessary deaths.

Amidst the raging chaos, only a handful of snowman Gu Masters were trying to maintain order. But unfortunately, even with their cultivation, it was difficult to do anything against the immortal material frost ice flame.

“Oh no, the frost ice flame has reached the ice path crystal essence!” Xue Er’s face turned pale, she became anxious.

She had just now tried to save more of the snowmen, and as a result, she had lost sight of this, allowing the frost ice flame to appear in the snow crystal formation.

The ice path crystal essence was the core of the snow crystal formation, Fang Yuan used the formation to spread out the frost energy created by the ice path crystal essence, that would constantly alter the environment inch by inch, creating a living habitat that suited the snowmen.

Xue Er felt deep regret as she watched the frost ice flame burn the ice path crystal essence, while being helpless against it.

Xue Er could not help but tear up and blame herself. The snow crystal formation was entrusted to her by Fang Yuan, it was the foundation for the snowman tribe’s growth, but it was actually going to be destroyed because of her mistake.

She felt that she had let down the snowmen, she had let down Fang Yuan.

But at this moment, a figure suddenly appeared.

“Fang Yuan!” Xue Er was stunned before happiness appeared on her face.

Fang Yuan grabbed the empty space in front of him, all of the frost ice flames within the formation were drawn away.

Fang Yuan suddenly grunted as his body shook, pale white traces appeared around his body all of a sudden.

From these pale white traces, Xue Er felt a vast power that surged in heaven and earth!

“These are... heaven path dao marks! Oh heavens, there are so many heaven path dao marks, he must have at least a thousand!” Xue Er covered her mouth in surprise.

“I will leave the rest to you.” Fang Yuan smiled at Xue Er as he brought the frost ice flame away with him and vanished on the spot.

Xue Er felt relaxed but worry soon appeared in her heart: “My dear fiancé has so many heaven path dao marks, no wonder he went into seclusion after the fate war and rarely fought. Sigh, I am so useless, I could not help him at all. I could not even defend this snow crystal formation!”

Fang Yuan appeared to help Xue Er alleviate the crisis of the snowmen in Mini Northern Plains, he immediately went back to his secret room to continue his closed cultivation.

When he was refining fate Gu, Fang Yuan had the best position, because he was doing his best to absorb the heaven path dao marks, he had more than three thousand heaven path dao marks on his body, they were all complete and intact dao marks!

One could say that he was the biggest winner in this plan that Red Lotus created.

But this benefit was too great, he could not process it in the meantime. The sovereign immortal body had non-conflicting dao marks, with the addition of heaven path dao marks, that also meant that Sovereign grotto-heaven gained three thousand heaven path dao marks all of a sudden.

These heaven path dao marks created a huge impact on Sovereign grotto-heaven.

The impact was in many different aspects and had varying effects. They could be as large as mountains and rivers shifting, but also small like a changing tributary channel.

“The way of heaven is to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits. It focuses on the balance of living beings, they limit each other. Even in an extreme environment like the snow crystal formation, the Heavenly Dao could alter it and create fire path dao marks within the ice and snow path dao marks, once the frost ice flame spreads its destruction, Mini Northern Plains would be completely altered beyond recognition.”

“Of course, if we ignore it, my Sovereign grotto-heaven will benefit from this, we will create a complete ecosystem that has balance and good prospects in the future.

“However, this method consumes too much of my foundation, it is also what Red Lotus Demon Venerable wants to see!”

Fang Yuan smiled coldly.

Fate Gu was destroyed, Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s plan succeeded, Fang Yuan no longer had any value to him. Thus, Red Lotus Demon Venerable schemed and used the heaven path dao marks to restrict Fang Yuan, to limit his growth speed.

However, even though Fang Yuan saw through this, he had to take the bait. It was because Fang Yuan noticed that sovereign immortal fetus Gu was tampered by Spectral Soul, he needed the heaven path dao marks to counter Spectral Soul’s arrangements.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable had been making use of Fang Yuan, it was evident from the rank seven future self killer move. But Fang Yuan also made use of Red Lotus, he used this Demon Venerable’s plan to destroy fate Gu, which was his biggest problem, he used Red Lotus’ million year plan to escape from the clutches of Spectral Soul’s arrangement.

Zhao Lian Yun allowed the heaven path dao marks to make the alterations but Fang Yuan decided to interfere with them.

The heaven path dao marks altered the sovereign immortal aperture, he actively participated, resisting and cooperating with the alterations to preserve his immortal aperture's foundation.

This cooperation and resistance gave Fang Yuan a lot of insight.

Heaven path was merciless and impartial, human path was putting up a resistance, these two intertwined in Fang Yuan's heart, shining in different radiance.

"Time is about right." A while later, Fang Yuan moved again.

This time, he stored the sovereign immortal aperture, his main body arrived in the world of the five regions.

He stood in Western Desert as he looked at a tree in front of him.

This tree was not even eight feet tall, the branches were short, thin and twisted like monstrous claws, making it look extremely ugly. But the strange thing was, it had an enormous shadow of light. This shadow of light was extremely large, reaching five or six hundred feet. The shadow of light was like a flourishing tree with many branches and leaves. The tree branches were white as snow, the flowers were pink like cherries. There were clusters of small fruits among the floral leaves that had yet to ripen, with all sorts of colors.

It was the thousand wish tree.

Around the thousand wish tree was Fang Yuan's immortal formation.

Right now, he stored the immortal formation and took the thousand wish tree along with him, they were all sent into the sovereign immortal aperture.

This action caused a storm to surge, a vast air current spread out to the surroundings.

Fang Yuan did not care about this, he turned into a flash of light and flew into the sky.

The air currents rampaged in the surrounding deserts, causing loud sounds to be emitted.

Peng Da and Mo Li failed to breakout, they were surrounded by desert wolves, right when they were about to die, the air currents arrived.

The desert wolf group went into chaos as they scattered and escaped.

Peng Da jolted: “Another disaster!”

Mo Li stared with wide eyes as he looked and laughed: “Haha, we are saved! This is not a disaster, it is merely a normal hurricane. Let’s go!”

# **Chapter 1973 - Going After Fang Yuan**

## **1973 Going After Fang Yuan**

After the qi tide passed, clouds were sparse in the sky, it was a refreshing sight.

A yellow cloud flew high in the sky, sprinkling light sand behind it along the way.

There was a female immortal sitting on the yellow cloud. She had a corpulent body, her belly was bulging, her entire body resembled a water vat, she was a member of Mo clan, a super force in Western Desert. There was a title for her in Western Desert's Gu Immortal world — Plump Lady.

Plump Lady did not dislike this title at all. She felt beautiful for being fat, and upon learning of this title, she liked it so much that she publicly called herself this from then on. In time, even her original name was forgotten in place of this title.

“Huh?” As the yellow cloud flew, Plump Lady suddenly had a change of expression, sensing something unusual.

Thus, the yellow cloud slightly contracted and flew down diagonally, changing its course slightly before suspending in mid-air.

Plump Lady stood up from the yellow cloud and looked down at the giant pit beneath her feet.

This giant pit was partially hidden by the wind blowing yellow sand and covering it, but Plump Lady was a native of Western Desert, she was all too familiar with the landscape of the sand pit.

“This isn’t a naturally formed sand pit, but rather an empty space left behind after something in it was drawn away.”

“This aura... it’s the aura of an ancient desolate plant!”

Plump Lady’s eyes shined with bright light, she immediately understood: a Gu Immortal had secretly made a move to steal an ancient desolate plant from here.

Plump Lady snorted coldly as anger rose in her heart. Although she did not know what this ancient desolate plant was, this place was wolf desert, the territory of Mo clan. Stealing this ancient desolate plant was the same as stealing the Mo clan.

“This ancient desolate plant must be quite valuable since it is able to hide and conceal itself from the detection of our clan. I’m afraid that it has already been discovered by some people long ago but they just did not take it. Now that qi tides is causing disasters, this person who stole the ancient desolate plant must have been worried that they would endanger this ancient desolate plant, and that’s why they took it.”

Plump Lady secretly analyzed the scene and carefully examined it.

The thief’s actions were very clean, no obvious clues were left behind. Feeling disappointed, she had to use an information path Gu worm to inform the Mo clan, hoping that the clan would send good investigators to track down and capture this damned thief!

And finally, Plump Lady used information path Gu worms to record the scene before leaving. She had a mission right now, she could not waste time here.

As she flew along, she saw an oasis. The oasis was vast, and there was a stone city at the center. The city walls were short, but the overall length was



long, there were a huge number of mortals living in the city, it was Sand Wolf City.

Sand Wolf City was one of the main cities of Mo clan.

Plump Lady did not cover her tracks and flew directly from high in the sky to the City Lord Manor.

There were already people at the City Lord Manor who were ready to receive her, when they saw the arrival of Plump Lady, they all fell to their knees and shouted: “We pay our respects to revered immortal!”

“Get up.” Plump Lady stored the yellow cloud and stepped on the ground in front of everyone.

“Revered immortal, the arrival banquet has been prepared. It contains the best wine and delicacies of Sand Wolf City, as well as fresh fruits that were just picked today.” The city lord spoke.

Plump Lady, however, waved her hand, she was not interested, she only said: “Prepare a secret room for me to undergo closed cultivation. Also, I asked you to gather Gu Masters with aptitude and loyalty, how is it going?”

“It’s almost done. The vast majority of the city’s Gu Masters have already been screened.” The city lord replied quickly.

“Very well. After three days, I will take them away. Now, you can go and attend to your own matters.”

“Yes, I will do my best to complete this task to the best of my ability.” The city lord promised in succession.

The door of the secret room closed slowly, Plump Lady activated the formation here with a wave of her hand.

She looked exhausted as her divine sense probed into her immortal aperture, when she saw the scene inside the immortal aperture, she inevitably let out another deep sigh.

Her immortal aperture was originally a land of yellow sand and it was flat. At the heart of the desert, Plump Lady had carefully laid out more than six thousand acres of sand farms.

Her sand farms mainly produced two types of immortal materials, they were light sand and cold-warm flowing sand. They were the main sources of goods that Plump Lady produced for a long time.

But after the fate war, Plump Lady absorbed five heaven path dao marks, her immortal aperture started to change. The landscape became uneven, more and more sand dunes were created. Furthermore, there was a trench, as if a knife had come straight down across the center of the desert, splitting the entire desert, thousands of acres of sand farms were lost.

“I don’t have wisdom path methods to make deductions and restrain this kind of natural development. Unless I hire a wisdom path Gu Immortal to take action, but my assets are not enough, I can’t afford it. I might as well save this expense in case of future mishaps.” Plump Lady lamented in her heart.

Mo clan had Gu Immortals that cultivated wisdom path, but they were not close to Plump Lady. In fact, even if the relationship was close, the wisdom path deductions would still cost Immortal essence, they could not work for Plump Lady for nothing, right? Therefore, there had to be a reward.

“Furthermore, I recently absorbed heaven and earth qi, my immortal aperture is unstable.”

Right now, the five regional walls were gone, the five regions’ heaven and earth qi had no obstruction and started to fuse. Western Desert’s heaven and earth qi was changing gradually, this caused the foundation of Western Desert Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures to start differing from the heaven and earth qi of the outer world.

When Gu Immortals absorb this heaven and earth qi, their immortal aperture would be unstable, there would be tremors.

The best way to deal with it was to cooperate with the change and continue absorbing and releasing heaven and earth qi. If one keeps themselves in closed cultivation, after the heaven and earth qi changes drastically, when they open the immortal aperture entrance to absorb heaven and earth qi, the tremors would be huge, the immortal aperture would suffer even more damage.

“If I had qi path attainment, I would be able to reduce the losses caused by the heaven and earth qi to a great extent.”

Wisdom path was a difficult path while qi path had been declining for years, there were few qi path Gu Immortals left.

Plump Lady was only having dreams that were not realistic. In the end, she consoled herself: Even though she did not have wisdom path or qi path methods, other Gu Immortals were like her. Thus, she was not left behind in the dust by the majority of them.

But Plump Lady still felt intense danger in her heart.

This was something that all of the five regions' Gu Immortals were feeling.

The five regions were unified, everyone knew that life was no longer going to be peaceful anymore. Be they lone cultivators or super forces, they were making preparations for the huge battles in the future.

This time, Plump Lady was tasked to go to Sand Wolf City and bring back Gu Immortal seeds for Mo clan to nurture.

In fact, Mo clan or Western Desert were not the only ones, all of the forces in the five regions and two heavens were making preparations now.

In the past, the five regions and two heavens were quite peaceful, super forces nurtured Gu Immortals while considering the provision of resources and their storage.

But now, everyone was preparing for war, they were going to mobilize these resources!

Thus, all of the forces focused on nurturing Gu Immortals than keeping resources. There was a common view: If they did not nurture enough Gu Immortals, their enemies would get all of their resources if they were wiped out in the future. If they did not use up those resources beforehand, that would be too wasteful.

Plump Lady looked at her sand farms in the immortal aperture while feeling heartache. She could not discard these farms, they were her only sources of revenue, they were her biggest financial support pillar.

Plump Lady had to preserve them.

The future was uncertain, she did not know how long the qi tides would continue, but she had to salvage them regardless.

“In the current world, I’m afraid only Fang Yuan will know how long these qi tides would last, he has Spring Autumn Cicada and can rebirth from the future after all.” Plump Lady felt deep envy and admiration regarding this.

Plump Lady rebuilt the sand farms in her immortal aperture, fixing the Gu formations inside.

The area where the Earth Trench appeared could not be fixed. Thus, her six thousand acre sand farm was split into two.

“If only I had an immortal Gu formation.” Plump Lady felt a bit of regret, Mo clan also had formation path Gu Immortals, when she created the sand farm, Mo clan’s formation path Gu Immortal had asked her if she needed help.

But Plump Lady rejected him.

On one hand, she did not want to expose her immortal aperture, on the other hand, she wanted to save cost.

After all, creating an immortal formation would use one of her Immortal Gu as the core. Plump Lady only had two rank six Immortal Gu herself.

Also, the payment of hiring the formation path Gu Immortal was not cheap.

“If I had created an immortal formation back then, my losses would be much lower. Sigh, how can anyone expect their own immortal aperture to be unsafe?”

Plump Lady thought of this and felt some envy towards the formation path Gu Immortal. During this period of time, he had been extremely popular with everyone, they were looking for him to create immortal Gu formations around their immortal aperture's resource points to protect them.

Plump Lady felt a little bitterness towards the earth path she cultivated, earth path was skilled at changing terrain, but Western Desert had the most number of earth path Gu Immortals. Plump Lady's earth path inheritance was also quite ordinary.

As for cultivating a second path?

Plump Lady did not even dare to think about such an absurd idea.

She was already facing problems cultivating just earth path in terms of time and finances.

Trying to juggle another path was courting death!

Moreover, only those rare and exceptional inheritances could allow one to dual cultivate. For example, an inheritance left by Thunder Ghost True Monarch or Duke Long.

After repairing her immortal aperture's sand farm, Plump Lady still had to buy some fertile sand.

Sand farms nurtured sand using sand, without enough sand-type immortal materials, the production would fall greatly.

Plump Lady took out her Gu worms and connected to treasure yellow heaven.

Treasure yellow heaven had all sorts of news, a large number of wills were conversing as they interacted.

Because of the huge change in the world, Gu Immortals could not move around now, on one hand, they had to absorb and release heaven and earth qi continuously to adapt to the main world, on the other hand, they also had to take care of their immortal apertures and repair them continuously like Plump Lady. Cases like Zhao Lian Yun who ignored the damage caused were quite rare.

Thus, Gu Immortals needed immortal materials or the help of Gu Immortals of other paths, treasure yellow heaven became a very popular destination for them.

“Another qi tide happened over here, a lot of deaths occurred.”

“When are these qi tides going to end! Damn it, my fisheries have all been destroyed.”

“I hate the fact that we cannot move around, the stronger the immortal aperture foundation, the longer we need to adapt to the heaven and earth qi and keep up with the five regions’ transformation.”

The Gu Immortals sighed as they talked about the news of these qi tides.

Other than that, there was Fang Yuan’s arrest warrant!

A mysterious force described Fang Yuan’s circumstances, they were willing to pay a huge sum for his latest information.

Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal aperture, his sovereign immortal body had non-conflicting dao marks. More terrifyingly, he could annex people’s apertures to skip calamities and tribulations, increasing his cultivation level. But now, Fang Yuan obtained too many heaven path dao marks, his strength had hit an all-time low. Whoever discovered his location would get a huge reward!

The sovereign immortal fetus Gu’s secret was completely exposed, this was not Heavenly Court’s doing. Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan had released the arrest warrant due to Spectral Soul’s orders.

“Too strong! This sovereign immortal body is too terrifying, it can cultivate all paths.”

“I finally understand why Fang Yuan’s cultivation level rose so quickly! In the blink of an eye, he became a rank eight great expert.”

“Who can have such a great fortuitous encounter?”

“Why does heaven favor this otherworldly demon! If I had his fortuitous encounters, I could achieve such great accomplishments as well.”

The Gu Immortals were filled with jealousy and hatred.

“We cannot let him grow further, he can annex apertures, he is the enemy of all Gu Immortals.”

“Let those experts handle him. I am just a minor character, why would I ever encounter Fang Yuan?”

“The reward is a huge amount of immortal materials, I wonder which lucky person will get them.”

“Lucky person? Exposing the great demon Fang Yuan’s location would be offending him, you call that lucky? We have all seen Fang Yuan’s battle strength ourselves, even if he is at his weakest, how weak can that be? No matter how weak a person is, killing an ant is extremely easy regardless. Even if I find his location, I will not dare to expose him.”

Plump Lady heard these discussions, she felt conflicting emotions within her.

The information had been released in treasure yellow heaven several days ago. It had received huge attention, it was the hot topic currently, without showing signs of dying down.

Everyone in the world had seen the fate war. Fang Yuan’s performance was shockingly terrifying. The world knew about his pseudo venerable battle strength, the title of the number one demon in the world belonged to him, nobody dared to contest this!

“Hopefully, I never meet such a person in my life. No matter how fat I am, my size cannot compare to such a huge demon. If I get involved in his matters, I will die without doubt.”

Plump Lady was quite aware of her situation, she was only enjoying the show as a spectator.

But she did not know that she had once fought against Fang Yuan. In fact, the ancient desolate plant that was stolen earlier was taken by Fang Yuan!

While Plump Lady entered closed cultivation, two figures in sorry states supported each other as they moved towards Sand Wolf City step by step.

The city guards did not chase them away, they could tell that these two were Gu Masters.

The guard walked towards them and extended his hand: “Entry fee of one primeval stone per person.”

“There’s still an entry fee?” One of the downcast Gu Masters started with wide eyes, he was Peng Da.

The middle aged Gu Master that he was supporting was naturally Mo Li.

The two of them were saved by the air currents generated when Fang Yuan took the thousand wish tree, after exerting effort, they finally reached Sand Wolf City.

“I have them.” Mo Li was already prepared, he took out two primeval stones and handed them to the guard.

Peng Da took a look at these two primeval stones.

Along the way, he was taught by Mo Li, he could now inspect his aperture, he found that he had three Gu worms. He even understood the value of primeval stones, it was used as currency but also as a way to replenish a Gu Master’s precious primeval essence!



“Two primeval stones to enter a city.” Peng Da sighed: “Uncle Mo Li, I will return this sum to you.”

Mo Li patted his shoulder: “Let’s go kid. No matter how poor I am, I can still afford this fee. During this period, you should stay at my home, you are penniless and have no memory of this city, how can you live alone?”

Mo Li had guided Peng Da along the way, after finding that he knew nothing about Gu Master cultivation, he believed the words that he was amnesiac.

“Uncle, thank you so much. You saved my life and even helped me this much...”

“Don’t say that!” Mo Li interrupted Peng Da and brought him into the city.

Mo Li’s house was at the central area of Sand Wolf City, it was a huge house with a garden that had flowers growing in it.

“I am back!” Mo Li knocked on the door as his wife opened the door.

“You are finally back!” Mo Li’s wife was a rank two Gu Master, seeing her husband, she was happy and surprised: “I heard the qi tide appeared, I thought you...”

“I was lucky and lived, but my caravan is completely ruined, only the two of us survived. Sigh!” Mo Li sighed deeply.

“Being alive is the greatest blessing!” Mo Li’s wife turned her eyes.

“Auntie.” Peng Da greeted after their conversation.

Mo Li’s wife chuckled: “Little lad, thank you for taking care of my husband along the way.”

Peng Da’s face turned red as he said: “I am ashamed, it was uncle who took care of me during this journey, without his help, I would have died in the desert.”

“As travelers outside, helping each other is necessary. Quickly come in.”  
Mo Li’s wife was very welcoming.

Mo Li and Peng Da had a rough journey, but they were finally safe now.

After showering in Mo Li’s house, the two of them went to bed and fell sound asleep.

After sleeping from noon to night time, Peng Da was woken up by Mo Li for a scrumptious dinner.

After dinner, Mo Li said to his wife: “We still have some money left, even though my caravan was destroyed, as long as I am alive, I can rebuild a new caravan!”

But his wife had a hesitant look: “I haven’t told you this, I was hesitating, thankfully, you returned alive.”

“What is it?” Mo Li was curious as he asked.

“After you left, the city lord sent orders that they would select Gu Masters that had A grade aptitude and were loyal to Mo clan. Supposedly, this is an order from the higher-ups, they want to nurture Gu Masters to become Gu Immortals.”

“Oh? There is such a thing?” Mo Li hesitated: “The city lord put up a public notice? I went past the city gates quickly, I did not see it.”

Mo Li’s wife continued: “Our son heard the news and wanted to sign up.”

Mo Li laughed unconsciously: “To think our son would have such aspirations, but he only has B grade aptitude.”

Mo Li’s wife laughed: “Aptitude is not too important, loyalty to Mo clan is most important. If we show enough loyalty, our son might be selected.”

Mo Li realized at once, asking: “How much?”

Mo Li’s wife said a number, Peng Da’s mouth became wide open.

Mo Li's wife was very troubled: "Even if we use all our remaining savings, it will not be enough. Husband, the decision is up to you."

Mo Li was silent for a moment before he resolved himself: "I will borrow! It is rare that our son is no longer lazy and wants to improve himself, this is a good thing. I will go and borrow shamelessly, I am sure we will gather enough funds."

"Husband..." Mo Li's wife was touched but felt worried as well: "But our caravan was destroyed, I am afraid..."

Mo Li smiled as he patted his chest, feeling confident: "Don't worry, I am a rank three Gu Master, my body is strong and my strength is intact. Everyone knows that I only need time, as long as my luck is not bad, I can recover from this loss!"

# **Chapter 1974 - Creating An Opening**

## **1974 Creating An Opening**

The sky was light purple in color, gathered in mid-air was a large area of grey clouds resembling thick fog, making the view of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven quite unclear.

But the layout of this place was good, even Spectral Soul could not help but praise it.

He had disguised as a soul beast, he successfully infiltrated the grotto-heaven, after many days, he finally found out a lot of information about Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven.

This was a soul path grotto-heaven, there were a lot of soul path cultivation resources here, it had at least ten giant resource points! In history, it had once produced two rank eight soul path immortals at the same point in time, it was a very rare situation.

The biggest trait of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven was that it had a soul pacifying immortal killer move that influenced all lifeforms in this grotto-heaven. This killer move could pacify soul beasts and bring peace to Gu Immortals' souls, it had a huge supplementary effect in soul cultivation.

There were three aspects in soul path cultivation, strengthening, refining, and pacifying the soul.

The most effective method to pacify the soul was using the water of Bewitching Lake, it was known as pacifying soul soup, the most delicious wine in the world. This was recorded in *The Legends of Ren Zuu*.

The soul pacifying killer move in Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven was created by mimicking the pacifying soul soup. Even Spectral Soul thought that the effect of this move was good.

Within Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, soul beasts were the most plentiful of beasts.

It had raised soul beasts to begin with, now that Fate was destroyed and the five regions unified, in order to prepare for war, the Gu Immortals of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven went outside to hunt and store more soul beasts.

But the higher-ups with Lady Cold Ash as the leader still did not think this was enough, they sent even more Gu Immortals outside to search for even more soul beasts.

Thanks to the soul pacifying killer move, even if immemorial soul beasts went into Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, they would remain peaceful and would not rampage.

After An Xun returned to the grotto-heaven to rest for a few days, he received orders to go out and hunt soul beasts again.

“I am letting you command three thousand soul beasts with one immemorial soul beast as the guardian, do your best.” Before leaving, Lady Cold Ash called for him.

An Xun was the tall and skinny Gu Immortal from earlier, he was the nephew of Lady Cold Ash, and also the Gu Immortal with the best prospects to go beyond rank seven in Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven.

“Thank you for the concern, aunt.” An Xun said with difficulty: “But such a huge soul beast group, I do not have the ability to command them.”

Lady Cold Ash waved her hand: “My killer move can allow you to command this soul beast group with ease for twenty days.”

An Xun was overjoyed, he quickly thanked her.

He understood that his aunt was helping in secret and taking care of him. Even though Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven did not lack resources and had deep foundation, when nurturing Gu Immortals, seniority mattered.

Lady Cold Ash helped An Xun secretly, hoping that he would emerge victorious in the contest against An Chong and become the rank seven Gu Immortal who received the most support.

She was his aunt after all!

An Xun led the soul beast army and left Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, heading to black heaven for his hunt.

For the next few days, his gains were little, he became a little anxious.

“Logically speaking, after the qi tide passes, there would be many dead lifeforms, their souls would be left behind and form more soul beasts.” An Xun could not understand why this was not happening.

Along the way, he did not meet many soul beasts, but he gathered a lot of qi path immortal materials, he did not know whether to laugh or cry.

Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven was a soul path grotto-heaven, these qi path immortal materials were almost unusable, they could only be traded away.

An Xun could not understand why, but Spectral Soul knew: “It seems that after the qi tide passes, qi path dao marks flood the area, causing other paths to be suppressed. Soul path is no exception, it is hard to form new soul beasts. In contrast, qi path immortal materials are going to increase in numbers, they will be at an absurd number in the future.”

Spectral Soul saw the trend and felt a little strange internally: “To think that qi path would regain its former glory!”

Qi path had been declining, but with the current situation where qi path immortal materials get produced widely in the five regions and two heavens, the abundance of resources would lower the cost of cultivation. It would create a trend of numerous qi path cultivators.

Spectral Soul turned into an ancient soul beast and secretly followed An Xun, he left Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven for his own objectives.

He had already inspected Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, but he could not take action inside. Outside, it was a different story.

However, Spectral Soul did not act immediately, he patiently waited for a chance.

As expected, after more than ten days, An Xun encountered a group of soul beasts that numbered to more than a thousand.

“I finally met some.” An Xun was overjoyed, he quickly manipulated the soul beast army to attack.

A huge battle began.

Initially, An Xun had the advantage, but soon, he found that an immemorial soul beast appeared in the enemy’s group.

He quickly let out his guardian, it was also an immemorial soul beast.

The two immemorial soul beasts fought intensely, creating a small battlefield for themselves.

The enemy immemorial soul beast was much stronger than An Xun had expected, his immemorial soul beast quickly fell into a disadvantage, about to be defeated.

An Xun was shocked, he quickly acted to help out his immemorial soul beast.

Eventually, An Xun paid a huge price of suffering injuries to exterminate the enemy immemorial soul beast.

An Xun felt regret that he could not capture the wild immemorial soul beast, he had tried many methods to subdue it but he failed, he had no choice but to kill it in the end.

After the battle, An Xun counted his gains and losses, despite his heavy injuries, he gained eight hundred soul beasts overall, among which were many ancient soul beasts.

“This should be enough.” An Xun let out a sigh of relief, these gains were sufficient, he did not let down Lady Cold Ash and her expectations.

But right when An Xun relaxed his mind, Spectral Soul struck at lightning speed, flying into An Xun’s body.

An Xun’s face distorted as he shook intensely, after a while, he returned to normal.

Spectral Soul came out of his body as An Xun knelt down: “I pay respects to master!”

“Mm.” Spectral Soul nodded with a tired expression.

He had an ability to enter a life form’s soul and forcefully modify it so that they would obey Spectral Soul from the depths of their soul with absolute loyalty.

But there were many limitations to this, he could not use it casually.

Back then, Spectral Soul subdued Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan when they were at their weakest. Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan were in poor conditions then, while she had also been subconsciously influenced by him over time.

Thus, in order to deal with An Xun, Spectral Soul had to wait until he was at his weakest.

The reason he caused this huge soul beast battle instead of directly attacking because he needed to deceive Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven. An Xun was a rank seven Gu Immortal, it was not easy for him to explore



black heaven, there were investigative methods used on him. If anything happened to him, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven would react to it rapidly.

“After subduing An Xun, I have an opening in Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, is Lady Cold Ash still far from my grasp? Hehe.” Spectral Soul chuckled.

Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven had the most suitable cultivation resources for Spectral Soul, he could take control of it and use it to interfere in the world affairs to accomplish his goals.

“I have already created my opening here, it is far better than hunting soul beasts myself! I wonder what breakthrough Fairy Zi Wei has made already.”

At the same time, in a certain Central Continent valley.

“Fang Yuan, you cannot escape.” Fairy Zi Wei called out, using a purple meteor attack.

The purple meteor landed on Fang Yuan as it pierced his chest, creating a gaping hole.

Fang Yuan stared at Fairy Zi Wei, he fell with a loud sound and scattered into smoke.

“Another clone!” Even though Fairy Zi Wei was prepared for it, she still felt tired seeing this.

Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan had already killed hundreds of Fang Yuan’s clones.

She immediately captured and stored the smoke that the myriad self clone turned into.

Next, she took out a sealed clone of Fang Yuan from her aperture.

She instilled the smoke of the destroyed myriad self clone into the sealed clone.

Soon, the white smoke was absorbed by the clone, its cultivation level rose again.

These myriad self clones were summoned by Fang Yuan during the battle in Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei had used the transportation formation to send them all over Central Continent.

Fairy Zi Wei was ordered by Spectral Soul to find Fang Yuan, after putting up the arrest warrant, all the information she received involved these clones.

Fairy Zi Wei had no choice but to pay them the reward as they had provided information. But she also went around laboriously to capture the Fang Yuan myriad self clones all over the continent.

If she left them unattended to, these clones would be the best concealment for Fang Yuan's main body. Fairy Zi Wei also had another idea, what if Fang Yuan was hiding among these clones?

This was not impossible.

“Thankfully, these myriad self clones can sense each other, when I capture one, I can use the connection to find the next clone.”

“But...”

Fairy Zi Wei watched as the sealed clone of Fang Yuan rose in cultivation level, she felt worried: “Fang Yuan's human path attainment level is so high. These clones can actually devour each other and show such autonomy...”

“Fang Yuan's strength is low because because of two reasons. Firstly, the heaven and earth qi are converging and forming qi tides, immortal apertures are becoming unstable, secondly, the heaven path dao marks he absorbed are also like a seal.”

“Among the different paths, human path is the most suitable for dealing with heaven path. Who knows how many heaven path dao marks Fang Yuan gained, how long can they suppress him for?”

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The thousand wish tree was planted in Mini Central Continent.

An immortal formation with the thousand wish tree as the core was already set up, it started to activate now.

Due to the influence of the heaven path dao marks, Sovereign grotto-heaven had been encountering disasters and calamities endlessly, but even in this situation, Fang Yuan still spent effort to create and defend this formation.

“Good.” After observing for a while, Fang Yuan smiled as he saw the formation working normally.

This was a human path formation, the thousand wish tree was a human path ancient desolate plant, with his formation path and human path attainment levels, Fang Yuan finally made such progress.

The formation in Mini Central Continent was the main formation, there was going to be four more human path sub-formations created in the other mini regions.

“I am trying to use human path to restrict heaven path, let’s see how well it works!” Fang Yuan held high expectations for this plan.

# **Chapter 1975 - World Poetry Competition**

## **1975 World Poetry Competition**

Immemorial black heaven.

“They’re here!” An Xun shouted excitedly.

Under his silent supervision, a soul beast army of a thousand charged towards his ambush.

Once they entered his range, An Xun activated his ambushing soul beasts, attacking all of the wild soul beasts from all sides.

While An Xun controlled the soul beast army, he activated Immortal Gu and unleashed all sorts of immortal killer moves.

As his killer moves landed on them, the soul beasts on his side gained a boost in battle strength, speed, and defense to some degree.

This battle lasted for several minutes, An Xun successfully killed four hundred wild soul beasts while the rest were captured.

“Master!” An Xun gathered a pile of soul cores and offered them to Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul opened his mouth and absorbed all of these soul cores into his body, starting to digest them.

After last time when he secretly followed An Xun and enslaved him, Spectral Soul managed to get his plan started.

He secretly passed the profundities of soul path cultivation to An Xun, according to the soul path Immortal Gu that An Xun had, he personally created soul path killer moves for him.

An Xun's strength continued to rise, he took many missions to capture soul beasts.

For this purpose, Spectral Soul created two methods, one could find out the location of wild soul beasts, the other was a simplified immortal formation that could lure soul beasts after it was set up.

With these two methods, An Xun captured wild soul beasts with much higher efficiency, each mission was completed to a high degree.

Lady Cold Ash saw that her nephew did not let down her expectations but even went beyond that and shined brightly, she was very happy about it.

Within Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, Lady Cold Ash was the only rank eight, she was naturally their leader.

Below her were An Chong and An Xun. Last time, when Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch opened his grotto-heaven and invited them, Lady Cold Ash brought the two of them with her, she wanted to let them gain some experience, and also let them meet up with others to become acquainted with other Gu Immortals.

When Lady Cold Ash was in the meeting in the grotto-heaven, An Chong and An Xun stayed outside the grotto-heaven and talked with the other rank seven elites of other grotto-heavens.

But Lady Cold Ash did not know that An Xun was already turned into Spectral Soul's slave. In fact, the entire Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, including herself, was currently targeted by Spectral Soul, their future was bleak.

The more missions he completed, and the higher the completion rate, the more advantage An Xun would have in this competition.

Lady Cold Ash could see this, the other Gu Immortals in the grotto-heaven also noticed this.

One day, Lady Cold Ash summoned An Chong as she instructed: “Since the last time Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch called for us to have a meeting, he was very active in asking the grotto-heavens to work together. But in Central Continent’s black heaven, there are many variant humans but only two rank eight humans including me. Thankfully, I have already contacted Granny Skeleton, she is a rank eight Gu Immortal of Eastern Sea’s black heaven. In this journey to Eastern Sea, you are representing Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, you will meet with Granny Skeleton and show our sincerity to cooperate.”

“Yes.” An Chong replied, feeling bitter inside.

He knew Lady Cold Ash’s intention.

By sending him on this mission, she was helping An Xun to claim victory, he was going to become the nurturing target of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven.

If An Xun performed similarly to himself, An Chong would feel unresigned and angry. But An Xun did really well, far better than him, even An Chong felt that he had no chance to win.

He accepted this mission, he took some immortal materials from Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven’s inventory as a meeting gift.

After leaving Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, he passed the heavenly wind qi wall and arrived in the five regions.

He concealed his traces and went from Central Continent to Eastern Sea. Next, he went through the heavenly wind qi wall in Eastern Sea and to Granny Skeleton’s area.

When the regional walls existed, Gu Immortals had a lot of trouble crossing regions. Many strong Gu Immortals would choose to travel using the two heavens.

But now that the regional walls had vanished, even a black heaven Gu Immortal like An Chong could travel through the five regions.

Black heaven had a dangerous environment, it would be troublesome if one met an immemorial desolate beast. Even though An Chong had an immemorial soul beast hiding in his immortal aperture, he only had rank seven cultivation level after all. Especially now when the qi tides were rampaging, the five regions Gu Immortals had to recuperate, they rarely moved around. Thus, it was easy for An Chong to travel.

Along the way, An Chong found that the five regions were facing huge disasters, the qi tides had caused much destruction.

Regardless, he did not meet with any unexpected mishaps, he successfully arrived in Eastern Sea and went up to immemorial black heaven. According to the communication method left by Lady Cold Ash, he successfully went into Shattered Bone grotto-heaven and met with Granny Skeleton.

“Fate has been destroyed, the qi tides are surging. With the current changing world, if we do not cooperate, the future will be uncertain. We are all humans, we should work together and stay united.” Granny Skeleton did not create problems for An Chong, she agreed immediately.

Granny Skeleton continued: “However, in Eastern Sea’s black heaven, variant human forces are more dominant. Lady Cold Ash wants us to cooperate, why would Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch do nothing? He must be gathering the variant human forces of the other regions’ black heaven as well.”

An Chong knew that Granny Skeleton would not say unimportant things, he quickly asked: “Senior, what insight might you have?”

Granny Skeleton said: “Since we are uniting the humans of immemorial black heaven, why don’t we include white heaven as well? I will not hide it

from you, I have contacted many people already, the response is quite good. Among them, there is one key person, we need your help to persuade them.”

Granny Skeleton paused and continued: “This person is a rank eight Gu Immortal, he is known as Old Immortal Hua Yu, he controls Profound Literature grotto-heaven. He has quite the reputation in Eastern Sea’s white heaven, if we can ally with this person, it will definitely bring along a number of white heaven Gu Immortals, we will save a lot of effort.”

An Chong heard this and thought: Going to meet Old Immortal Hua Yu was not part of his mission, but if he could accomplish this feat, he would have a chance to compete with An Xun again.

Thinking of this, An Chong made his decision, saying to Granny Skeleton: “Since senior has already planned this, junior will set out for Profound Literature grotto-heaven.”

Granny Skeleton praised: “Good, as expected of a member of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven. Old Immortal Hua Yu does not like to fight or kill, that is why he has little interest in an alliance. If you can succeed in this trip, I will reward you greatly!”

An Chong left Shattered Bone grotto-heaven and went to immemorial white heaven, meeting with Old Immortal Hua Yu.

Even though Old Immortal Hua Yu had little interest in an alliance, An Chong was representing Lady Cold Ash in this trip. The other party was also a rank eight Gu Immortal, Old Immortal Hua Yu did not dare to ignore them, he opened the door and invited An Chong in.

After seeing Old Immortal Hua Yu, An Chong gave the speech that he thought up along the way but Old Immortal Hua Yu was unmoved.

“My Profound Literature grotto-heaven does not involve itself in worldly affairs, we are a neutral party. Even though we do not want to make an alliance, the two of us can still exchange resources.”



Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven produced soul path resources, it was quite useful for Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Seeing that he could not convince Old Immortal Hua Yu, An Chong thought that this transaction was at least better than nothing. This was the first time they were interacting, after several transactions, wouldn't they get closer?

With a deeper relationship, requesting for an alliance would be much better hopes.

After saying goodbye to Old Immortal Hua Yu, An Chong was asked to stay by another Gu Immortal.

Gu Immortal Hua Song attended to him, he said: "You have traveled a long journey to come here, you should stay for a few days. During this period, the mortal imperial court is holding a world poetry competition, many beautiful poems will be created and recited then, it is quite interesting to watch."

An Chong had already heard from Granny Skeleton about the poetry culture of Profound Literature grotto-heaven. All of their Gu Immortals were scholarly and preferred literature works over beautiful women or wine.

An Chong wanted to improve his relationship with Profound Literature grotto-heaven, even though he had no interest in poetry or recital, he could not refuse their kind invitation, he agreed to stay.

The world poetry competition commenced.

This was an unprecedented event, Profound Literature grotto-heaven had never held such a huge competition before. Thus, all sorts of talents gathered from all over Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Other than the talented scholars who wanted to display their abilities in the poetry competition, many people came here to watch the grand event.

Thus, the capital city that was holding the world poetry competition became filled with people since a month ago.

People moved on the bustling streets, Li Xiao Bai and Teacher Jiang walked side by side.

“The world poetry competition has eighteen rounds, Xiao Bai, if you want to change your circumstances, this is the best chance. I understand your talent, you can pass the first ten rounds, but the latter eight will depend on your luck. Sigh, teacher cannot help you this time, we might even end up as opponents.” Teacher Jiang sighed.

This was a grand event, Teacher Jiang also wanted to participate and compete with the other talented scholars!

After Li Xiao Bai heard this, he held down the urge to roll his eyes as he thought: “I am almost certain now that you will end up as my opponent, dear teacher.”

Li Xiao Bai was Fang Yuan’s clone, he was sent into Profound Literature grotto-heaven as a pawn to take over this grotto-heaven.

Initially, Li Xiao Bai had a smooth sailing journey, he even received the affection of Su clan’s young miss, Su Qi Han. As a result, Li Xiao Bai became one of the ten great scholars, he had a chance to become Su clan’s son-in-law.

Next, while Li Xiao Bai was on his way to the capital city, the world shook as mountains collapsed and rivers flooded. The people in Li Xiao Bai’s group got injured while some died, they were trapped in the valley for months before Li Xiao Bai managed to escape for his life.

Because of this, he missed the opportunity and did not meet with the emperor. Without the emperor’s decree, his ten great scholar title was conferred to others.

Li Xiao Bai wanted to contact Su Qi Han but found that after hearing about his situation, she went to look for him and went missing as a result, even now, she had not returned yet.

After arriving in the capital city, Li Xiao Bai encountered many setbacks, people tried to target him secretly, he offended officials or royalty without knowing it, he had a tough time. If not for Teacher Jiang's help, he would have ended up on the streets as a beggar.

But he knew why.

“Even though my main body destroyed fate Gu, our strong luck was almost completely expended in this battle. The result is that I as a clone also became really unlucky.”

“This world poetry competition is the event created by Profound Literature grotto-heaven to choose new Gu Immortal seeds. Even though teacher does not know the details, he still chose to join, he is going to become my obstacle.”

“I am so unlucky now, I will definitely face him. If I defeat him, this teacher might hate me for life. But this chance is too rare, if I do not use it to deal with the difficulties ahead, I will meet with more problems in the future!”

# **Chapter 1976 - Li Xiao Bai's Spring Poem**

## **1976 Li Xiao Bai's Spring Poem**

“Lord Gu Masters, please come in!” The waiter bent his back as he invited Hua Song and An Chong into the shop.

“This is a famous teahouse of the capital city, it is very crowded, I have come here many times in the past.” Hua Song transmitted as he explained to An Chong.

The two had disguised as Gu Masters as they came to the capital city of Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

An Chong was more willing to observe the capital city from above the clouds. But since Hua Song had such interests, he could only accompany the person who invited him.

“I want a table on the fifth floor.” Hua Song was very familiar with this place.

The two came to the fifth floor, they entered the room and saw through the windows that the streets were bustling with people outside, the street with the bronze gate where the first round of the competition was held was completely packed with people.

“These are the current generation scholars of my Profound Literature grotto-heaven, they are the hope of our future as well. Please observe.” Hua

Song sighed as he handed a rank five investigative Gu worm to An Chong, it could observe the target's talent qi.

An Chong took a look and used it immediately, his field of vision changing immediately. He could now see the talent qi above the heads of countless scholars. These talent qi had all sorts of colors, some were taller than others, they all had different forms, it was an eye-opener.

“Since you have such a Gu worm to observe talent qi, what is the point of holding this competition?” An Chong asked.

Hua Song chuckled: “You might not know, talent qi is like cultivation level, even if one possesses a larger talent qi, they might not be able to use it properly in actual competition. Furthermore, this competition requires them to make poems on the spot, they cannot cheat. We want to test the upbringing of these scholars, some who have abundant talent qi might not have sufficient inspiration to create the highest quality poems.”

An Chong nodded: “I see that the formations here are interlinked, they are able to amplify the creative thinking of the scholars?”

Hua Song nodded: “Indeed, you are very perceptive! Within the immortal formation, scholars are able to display greater abilities than usual, they will make full use of their talents.”

As they spoke, the door was knocked.

After getting Hua Song's permission, the waiter brought over an array of dishes and wine.

“Eight treasure duck, golden thread crispy sparrow, panda crab meat, they are all signature dishes of our teahouse, please enjoy the food.” The waiter said.

Hua Song gave the waiter one primeval stone as a tip before he left the room.

Hua Song explained to An Chong: “Envoy, even though the tea here is mortal tea, it was created by Lord Hua Yu in his youth, when he was still a rank four Gu Master, he became the top scholar and thus this tea was named by him as the top scholar tea.”

“Oh?” An Chong became interested now, this was the creation of a rank eight Gu Immortal in his youth.

“Then I will have to savor this well.” An Chong drank it, he shut his eyes as he tasted the tea, in a daze, he felt a rush of excitement in his heart, it was as if he had attained success after decades of hard work, he finally gained the reputation and fame that he deserved, life was at its peak!

“Good tea, good tea.” An Chong praised sincerely: “Even though this is a mortal tea, it has a trace of human path ingenuity within it!”

During the fate war, Central Continent’s Heavenly Court used multiple human path killer moves with shocking power, the entire world knew about it. Thus, human path became renowned in the world, everyone knew about it.

While the two immortals were enjoying their tea, the bronze gate of the first competition ground opened slowly.

The crowd of people waiting before the gate erupted into a huge commotion.

“It’s opening, it’s opening!”

“Don’t squeeze.”

“Quickly let me in.”

The crowds charged through the gate.

Li Xiao Bai was among them, but he was at the back instead.

He moved along with the people as he analyzed the rules of this competition.

“The world poetry competition has eighteen rounds, each one has a question, everyone has to answer it, regardless of how many people, their final product will be assessed and only half will be able to pass.”

“Towards the later rounds, the numbers will continue being halved. Like this, once someone passes all eighteen rounds, they will fulfill the condition.”

“If someone fails once, they will have to return to the previous round. If they keep losing and fall out of the first round, they will be out.”

“However, this poetry competition will last for seven days. Everyone has three opportunities to try even if they get kicked out of the first round.”

“This way, Profound Literature grotto-heaven will be able to pick the most eligible Gu Immortal seeds. Even if someone makes a mistake, they will have a chance to try again. But if any scholar fails to perform throughout the seven days, it will mean that they are not up to standard, they are not qualified to receive the grotto-heaven’s help to become an immortal.”

Li Xiao Bai retracted his thoughts, he had already arrived at the first arena.

The arena was large but packed with scholars.

There were males and females, young and old, the number of people exceeded the thousands.

This was just the first day.

Li Xiao Bai waited for another fifteen minutes in the arena before all of the scholars had joined the first round.

There was truly a sea of people, the liveliness was overwhelming.

Thankfully, the first arena was an immortal formation space, it could expand casually and hold so many scholars without problems.

Bang... bang... bang!

As the drums rolled, a voice was transmitted into the scholars' minds:  
“World poetry competition, first question — Spring, the time limit is five minutes.”

After saying that, the voice vanished.

“The first question is spring?”

Many scholars frowned while many scholars showed happy expressions.

Li Xiao Bai thought to himself: “There are simply too many spring poems in existence, this question seems really easy. After all, most scholars would have some sort of verses related to this theme. Even though the world poetry competition requires the creation of poems on the spot, a person can easily modify existing verses to create their own new poems.”

“But in reality, this question is quite the tough one.” Li Xiao Bai had an expression of deep thought.

He knew that his poem was going to compete against the surrounding people. As long as he was stronger than half of them, he would progress to the next stage.

Many scholars noticed this as well.

Many people started to think, some sat down on the ground while others paced around with their arms behind their backs, some lowered their heads, muttering softly to themselves.

Li Xiao Bai's thought was: “Which poem do I use, or steal?”

There were many spring related poems in his memory, they were all amazing classics.

But using a legendary classic from the start was not good, this would not allow Li Xiao Bai to explain himself in the future. He did not have top tier talent qi, if he took out a shocking poem now, he would attract suspicion.



If his luck was good now, Li Xiao Bai might take slight risks. But now that he was having bad luck, Li Xiao Bai decided to play safe.

While Li Xiao Bai was thinking about it, many scholars already started to make their poems.

Thus, all kinds of lights shining in all colors, weak or strong, appeared. Whenever the light fades from a scholar's body, they would have some gains.

Some gained Gu worms, some gained a rise in cultivation level, some recovered primeval essence, while others recovered from fatigue.

This was the killer move known as assisting literary talents.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven's creator, its original owner, had used this move before his death. Because of assisting literary talents, more and more scholars were encouraged to study, it eventually created the environment of Profound Literature grotto-heaven where most people were scholars.

Li Xiao Bai decided on his poem.

He coughed lightly before starting his recital.

“A moonlit night[1].”

“Deep into the night the moon shines on half a cottage, across the sky the Big Dipper lies, the Little Dipper tilts an incline.”

“The warmth of spring is readily felt tonight, through the green window screen, insects buzz and hum.”

After Li Xiao Bai finished his recital, a light buzzing noise could be heard around him, his entire body shined in an intense green light.

Whoosh.

The scholars around Li Xiao Bai felt an invisible pressure as the green light forced them to move aside, a huge empty space was created with Li Xiao Bai at the center.

“Such, such a strong light!”

“A famed poem has appeared!”

“To think that a famed poem would appear so quickly. I wonder who created it?”

Many scholars lost their train of thought, they all looked towards Li Xiao Bai with admiration and suspicion.

Li Xiao Bai had a calm expression but he was a little conflicted inside: “Sigh, I went overboard a little, the effect was so eye-catching, I gained too much attention.”

He looked around, hoping someone would step up and take the attention away from him.

As the green light entered his aperture, his cultivation level rose.

“Oh! A famed poem has appeared, let me go read it.” At the teahouse, Hua Song had a sensation.

After reading Li Xiao Bai’s work, Hua Song nodded in satisfaction: “Brilliant, brilliant! This Li Xiao Bai is very young but his poems are very mature.”

“Normally, spring poems would use verses involving greenery or peach blossoms. But this poem uses another train of thought, using the night scene to conceal the spring light, it is quite interesting.”

“The final verse must be created using Li Xiao Bai’s personal experiences. It has a refreshing, happy, and lively feeling.”

“Poems take after the creator, this Li Xiao Bai has a superb mindset!”

Hua Song praised it for a while, as if he had just eaten a delicacy of the world. He looked at An Chong as he smiled: “I wonder what envoy thinks of this poem?”

An Chong felt a headache as he thought: “If you didn’t tell me, I wouldn’t know what’s so good about this poem. Sigh, he wants me to critique it, what should I say?”

[1] Poem by Liu Fangping.

# **Chapter 1977 - Li Xiao Bai's Inner Conflict**

## **1977 Li Xiao Bai's Inner Conflict**

Li Xiao Bai's expectations were not disappointed.

After his recital, three more people stepped up.

One was a strong man wearing a golden mask, he was shining in a glaring golden light.

There was an old man wearing a cone hat, he was holding a cane as a green light moved around him.

There was also a woman, she had a slim body and wore a pink dress, her face was covered by a veil, after her recital, butterflies flew around her, it was a beautiful sight.

These three had created famed poems on the same level as Li Xiao Bai's moonlit night.

Li Xiao Bai let out a sigh of relief: "This world has Gu worms to assist with poem creation. Gu Masters are also able to extend their lifespan and gain more experience in life. Thus, famed poems are more likely to appear than on Earth."

On Earth, moonlit night was a rare creation. But in Profound Literature grotto-heaven, it would not be unmatched.

Including Li Xiao Bai, the four of them had their own territory as they looked at each other.

The strong man, old man, and woman placed their gazes on Li Xiao Bai.

They knew each other, they had some sort of understanding towards their works, but Li Xiao Bai was a newcomer.

“Who is this young man?”

“His talent qi is not dense, how can he create such a famed poem?”

“Hehe, interesting guy.”

Li Xiao Bai’s teacher, Teacher Jiang, also saw his student’s performance. He nodded in satisfaction: “Very good, Li Xiao Bai, it seems you are performing well today. Continue working hard.”

In the end, no accidents happened, Li Xiao Bai moved to the next round and was teleported away.

After he regained his senses, he arrived in another arena.

“This is the fifth round, scholars, please wait patiently.” Li Xiao Bai heard a voice in his mind.

Li Xiao Bai understood at once: “So the advancement has differences as well. The poem I made is enough to pass three rounds and directly reach the fifth round.”

“This is quite a logical rule.”

“But this means that the Gu Masters who reached this round are all people who created famed poems. Only half of these people can pass, the pressure has intensified now.”

Li Xiao Bai looked around, he found two familiar faces.

It was the strong man and the woman from earlier.

After noticing Li Xiao Bai's gaze, the woman nodded at him, she seemed to be smiling under the veil. Meanwhile, the strong man had an air of arrogance, after giving Li Xiao Bai a glance, he started to shut his eyes and meditate.

In the fifth round, there was only the three of them now.

"I wonder which round that old man went to."

"I should pretend to rest now."

When scholars made poems, they had to think with all their effort, but he only had to select a suitable poem for his use. This was too easy, he had to conceal the fact.

After waiting for several minutes in the fifth round arena, the second competition began.

He had more than twenty competitors, Li Xiao Bai felt a certain level of pressure in his heart.

The theme of the second competition was out — Travel, the time limit was the same as before.

"Travel? This question is the same as spring, it is so broad and easy to write, but creating a famed poem will be very hard!" The strong man sighed to himself.

The woman was thinking: "I am not well versed in this, what should I do?"

Li Xiao Bai was also contemplating: "Which poem do I copy?"

After thinking for a while, he felt that he could not use a classic poem, the effect would be too overwhelming, but he could not use a bad poem. Otherwise, he would fail to advance and be kicked back to the previous round.

Li Xiao Bai was a little troubled, it was not easy to gauge this situation.

He knew his own ability, but he did not know about others, he did not know what sort of poem to use to win but not gain too much attention.

“In the first round, I went overboard. I should not try for first place now.”  
Li Xiao Bai told himself.

He waited patiently.

After a few minutes, some scholars already created their poems. After that, a few more started to recite their poems, colorful lights appeared.

Li Xiao Bai sighed to himself, thinking: “It seems that famed poems are not easy to create, these people did well in the first round but currently, they are only performing at an average level.”

Li Xiao Bai soon had an idea of the situation but he did not start working, he was still waiting.

As the time limit was about to be up, he finally saw some famed poems.

One from the strong man.

He recited a poem with great battle intent, resembling the march of horses and spears, his entire body was flickering with golden light, one could hear the clash of spears and blades.

The second famed poem came from the woman.

She created a gentle poem, describing a young lady looking outside her room’s window, listening to the stories of travelers outside, imagining her own travel journey, it was quite impressive.

“Alright, it is my turn now.” Li Xiao Bai coughed as he recited:

Date flowers fall on the villagers’ clothes,

The sound of reeling carts heard from every household,

Old men dressed in simple clothes sell cucumbers under the willow tree.

Feeling drunk and drowsy from the long journey,  
The bright sun makes my throat dry, I thirst for a refreshing drink,  
I knock on the door of a mortal house, hoping to request for some tea.  
He had copied Su Shi's Silk-washing Stream.

After the recital, be it the strong man or the woman, they were evidently moved as they analyzed the poem.

“Good poem! This poem starts with description of the scenery and actions at the back, with the fusion of both, one can feel interested in the event.”

“Even though he is writing about a scenery, he uses his voice to create an image, compared to normal descriptions, this is very vivid. The emotional part is also very interesting. This kid might be a Gu Master but he is very polite and courteous, he does not barge into a mortal's house, he is truly a gentleman and has incomparable elegance.”

“Reading his poem shows his nature. This young scholar is really promising!”

The surrounding scholars looked at Li Xiao Bai with a different gaze now.

Li Xiao Bai let out a breath of air, pretending that he was extremely exhausted.

“After this round, I should be able to advance. Not just that, my performance was really good, I did not gain too much attention but I also did not show inability.”

Li Xiao Bai was quite satisfied with himself, after waiting for a while, the time limit was up.

He became stunned.

Most scholars failed to create a poem.



“This is the world poetry competition, I need to display my best abilities. If I use any inferior work, it will be too shameful.”

“I did my best but could not create a satisfactory poem, even if I fail, I will not regret it!”

“This trip was worth my time, I got to hear three famed poems.”

“Haha, in the worst case scenario, I might fall to the first round, so what? Goodbye!”

Those scholars that did not create a poem left in a carefree manner, while those scholars who made inferior poems showed shameful expressions.

Li Xiao Bai was calm on the outside but internally flummoxed: “How can you guys act so graciously?”

Even though he advanced, he had gained too much attention again. Earlier, he was quite satisfied with the situation, but to think these scholars would be so useless.

“Hmph, I had overestimated them.” Li Xiao Bai thought.

There was nothing to say, he successfully advanced to the ninth round.

After patiently waiting for a while, the people gathered. This time, there was less than ten of them.

Many of them were famous scholars, they knew each other and greeted politely, they were calm and elegant on the outside, but were all feeling nervous internally.

At this point, the pressure of these competitors intensified again.

“I need to be stable, I cannot create a commotion again!” Li Xiao Bai clenched his fists, he kept reminding himself.

But this time, his opponents all performed well, more than half of the Gu Masters created famed poems.

Li Xiao Bai was the last one left.

Li Xiao Bai had a nervous expression but he was calm internally, he recited the poem that he had already prepared in advance.

With some flickering light, his cultivation level rose to rank four, he gained a new Gu worm.

This time, he planned meticulously, the poem he created was just borderline in the middle, he managed to advance successfully but he was at the bottom of the batch.

Right when Li Xiao Bai was feeling happy.

Cough!

Someone coughed out a mouthful of blood.

Ugh.

Someone fainted on the ground.

The strong man shook as he sat down with difficulty. The woman coughed for a long time with a pale expression.

Only Li Xiao Bai was left standing on the spot, unaffected.

At once, everyone's gazes were on him again.

"This young man is very strong! Currently speaking, he has already created three famed poems."

"He did not get injured at all, it seems that he had not gone all out when he made his poem earlier."

"Impressive! After this competition, I need to befriend him!"

Li Xiao Bai: "..."

He was speechless.

Oh heavens, why did everyone overexert themselves?!

Wasn't it just a poem competition, why were they risking their lives?

He wanted to pretend to cough blood too but it was too late now, he could not disguise himself anymore.

Li Xiao Bai had to continue moving to the next round with a plain expression.

# **Chapter 1978 - Human Path, Changing Luck**

## **1978 Human Path, Changing Luck**

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Central Continent.

Fang Yuan stood under the thousand wish tree, looking up only to see a blazing light in the sky, there were specks and lumps, fading and flickering, it was truly a dazzling sight.

Looking at the ground, sand and dust rumbled as wind was blowing wildly.

Fang Yuan's eyes flickered with cold light.

His heaven path dao marks were increasing in number!

He had originally gained three thousand or so dao marks from the Gu refinement, but now, he was approaching three thousand five hundred dao marks.

With the increase in heaven path dao marks, the number of other dao marks in Fang Yuan's immortal aperture was reducing in number.

This scene reminded Fang Yuan of his time in Crazy Demon Cave.

At the second lowest floor of Crazy Demon Cave, Fang Yuan saw the development of worlds. Countless worlds were destroyed as heaven path

dao marks formed. The heaven path dao marks interlinked with each other or spread out themselves, forming new worlds.

At this moment, even though the sovereign immortal aperture was not destroyed and turned into heaven path dao marks, they were still modifying the various dao marks within this immortal aperture.

Of course, the heaven path dao marks were not just increasing. Sometimes, they fell in numbers, one heaven path dao mark turned into many dao marks of other paths, spreading throughout the world.

Using the transformation of these dao marks, in accordance with the Heavenly Dao, the environment of the entire sovereign immortal aperture was modified.

Like the scene that Fang Yuan was observing now, light was appearing in the sky, it meant that light path dao marks were increasing in numbers. There was also wind and rumbling sand on the ground, it meant that wind path and earth path dao marks were also increasing in numbers.

“If this goes on for a long time, the surroundings of the thousand wish tree would turn into a barren desert.” The trend was too obvious, Fang Yuan smiled coldly to himself.

He had originally thought that the thousand wish tree was meant to be planted in a desert, but now, even though he was not wrong, his understanding was distorted.

The thousand wish tree was a human path ancient desolate plant, it used human will to create fruits. It was most suited to be grown in a bustling environment like a large city or market filled with people, the more human will the better.

However, the Heavenly Dao did not want the thousand wish tree to grow properly, it changed the heaven path dao marks to create a blazing sun and a vast area of sand, to isolate it from the living people.

In order to survive, the thousand wish tree had to change its own traits to adapt to this difficult environment and live.

But now that it was placed in Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture, the immortal formation created its own desert environment for it to slowly adapt and change, it would not be destroyed because of an unsuitable environment.

But outside the immortal formation was a fertile land with lush greenery and warm sunlight.

The immortal formation was not isolated, the thousand wish tree's human path aura could be sensed by the Heavenly Dao. But these heaven path dao marks were not under Fang Yuan's control, they could not change according to the environment within the immortal formation, they modified the environment outside the formation to stop the thousand wish tree's growth.

Thus, Fang Yuan learned about some things.

"The thousand wish tree will finish growing in three hundred years, flower at its six hundredth year and bear fruit at the nine hundredth year. It will create exactly a thousand fruits at that time."

"This is something that everyone knows as a fact, but now it seems, this is not true."

"The thousand wish tree is restricted by the Heavenly Dao, its actual potential is much larger!"

"From now on, I will water it with human will, I will gradually change its habitat, its production will definitely rise greatly!"

This was a future plan, Fang Yuan came to the thousand wish tree today for another matter.

At his will, Cooking Luck Pot revealed itself above him.

Rank seven Cooking Luck Pot was large as a basin, it was shining in golden and white light, sacred and royal.

The pot had thick sides, about the thickness of a thumb, there were eight dragons at the base of the pot, coiling around each other and extending their claws to become the legs of this pot. At the top of the pot, one could see Fang Yuan's exposed luck, it looked grey and damaged.

Even though Cooking Luck Pot was only rank seven, unable to contain all of Fang Yuan's luck in this one pot, it was still possible to observe something from it.

Fang Yuan's colossal luck was almost fully consumed in the fate war, after the fight, his luck became very low. This was his third hidden threat, aside from the qi tide and heaven path dao marks.

Fate was constant while luck was variable.

When one's luck was poor, it meant that unfavorable developments might happen.

But now, Fang Yuan's main body had immense battle strength that was pseudo venerable level, no matter how bad his luck was, he had the power to resist problems.

This was not a big issue for the main body, but he was worried about the luck of his clones.

Outside of Cooking Luck Pot were the luck of his respective clones.

The time path clone's luck still resembled the River of Time, but the water was no longer flowing smoothly, it was chaotic and the front of the river was cut off, it looked quite worrying.

Zhan Bu Du's luck was originally a mature eagle spreading its wings and flying, but now the eagle had fallen into water, it was covered by flowing water that made things difficult for him.

Li Xiao Bai's luck was like a bright blooming flower. The flower was bright red and burning intensely in a red color. Within the flame, the petals bloomed, it might look like good luck but the hidden threat was huge. He

was basically playing with fire, he would die if he could not control the flames.

Wu Shuai's luck was like a coiling dragon, three of its dragon claws were holding onto a dragon pearl each. One had the silhouette of Dragon Palace, one had countless ants in it, while the third pearl had the image of Di Zang Sheng. Wu Shuai had the strongest luck among them, but he was surrounded by blade and sword qi, approaching from all directions.

Fang Yuan's main body had poor luck, his clones were in even worse states.

Fang Yuan had sensed his clones' problem long ago, it was not that he did not try to resolve it but his methods failed.

The heaven path dao marks restricted him, whenever he tried to use a killer move, they would interfere and cause his killer move activation to fail. Even if he succeeded, the power of the move would be greatly lowered.

"But this time, it should be different." Bright light flashed in Fang Yuan's eyes.

Fang Yuan multitasked, manipulating the formation around the thousand wish tree while also activating Cooking Luck Pot.

The thousand wish tree's branches continued to shake, bright rainbow light shot out of the formation, entering Cooking Luck Pot.

Cooking Luck Pot started to modify the luck of his clones.

The surrounding world started to rage with intense winds and fierce lightning. Heaven path dao marks appeared one by one, some were all over the place while others appeared on Fang Yuan's body.

The way of heaven was to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits.

The way of humans was to take away deficits while magnifying surpluses!

With the help of the human path immortal formation, Fang Yuan forcefully made modifications of certain degrees to the luck of his clones.



The time path clone's river luck stabilized and became smoother.

Zhan Bu Du's eagle luck started to shed its feathers in the water, it seemed like it was turning into a fish, adapting to the environment.

Li Xiao Bai's flower luck started to crystallize under the intense flames, it no longer had a threat of turning to ashes.

Meanwhile, Wu Shuai's dragon luck still remained in a coiling state, there was no change to the luck. The surrounding blade and sword qi, however, became much weaker, turning from dense smoke to light smoke. This meant that there would still be a fight but the scale of the battle would be much smaller than before.

"The problem of the clones is settled. The truly troublesome thing is the heaven path dao marks." Fang Yuan could increasingly understand the deeper intentions of Red Lotus as time passed.

# **Chapter 1979 - Merman Court“s Vicious Gues**

## **1979 Merman Court“s Vicious Gues**

Eastern Sea, Merman Imperial Court.

The sound of instruments was complemented with delicious wine and food.

At the grand banquet, the three female immortals leading the Merman Imperial Court sat on the main seats as they entertained an unexpected guest.

“Good wine, good music, and even better dance!” The guest drank his wine in one gulp as he slammed the cup on the table, laughing loudly.

He had a square face, he was muscular and strong, his skin was snow white, his eyes and hair were icy blue in color.

Rank eight aura permeated from his body.

He was a snowman Gu Immortal from black heaven’s Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, it was the current generation Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ever since the last meeting of the black heaven forces, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord secretly contacted Central Continent’s Heavenly Court, while Lady Cold Ash contacted the human experts like Granny Skeleton. Ice

Crystal Immortal Monarch did not stay motionless, his target was not white heaven or black heaven, but the five regions instead. Thus, he went to Eastern Sea and approached the merman force.

Eastern Sea's merman force had three leaders, they were all mermaid immortals, they were called Lian Ke Xin, Yu Zi, and Xie Ning Si.

Even though this was the first time the three female immortals were seeing Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, seeing that he was a variant human rank eight Gu Immortal, they held this banquet to welcome him.

Upon hearing Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch's praise, Lian Ke Xin smiled and replied: "Thank you for the praise. These dancing Gu Masters all are the hope of our merman tribe, our Gu Immortal seeds. It is their honor to be praised by you, Immortal Monarch."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch laughed again: "Pardon my insolence, but if these merfolk are the hope of your tribe, I'm afraid you are going to be wiped from existence soon."

These words made many of the merfolk's expressions change.

The dancing merfolk even became disorganized for a moment.

Lian Ke Xin remained smiling: "We already understand your intention in coming here. We are not going to be provoked by your words. For countless years, mermen have lived in Eastern Sea peacefully and harmoniously, we have been neutral all along, we will not participate in any conflict outside."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch shook his head: "Preposterous! Who does not want to live in peace? But in history, such peace can only be gained through conflict and war. The merman race received the help of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable back then, that is why you could live like this until now. In the entire five regions, only you are still a super force among the variant humans."

"But we have all seen the fate war already. Fate has been destroyed, the five regions have merged, the world is changing right in front of our very eyes.

With disasters and calamities, conflict will ensue and last for a long time.”

“Your Merman Imperial Court wants to stay out of this? Hehehe, how long has it been since Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable died? How much influence does he still have to protect you?”

Lian Ke Xin had a grim expression, she could not rebuke him.

Yu Zi snorted coldly beside her: “We have more than ten Gu Immortals and Immortal Gu House Floating Reputation Boat, how is it completely Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s credit that we are able to develop to today’s scale?”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch nodded: “I have heard of your Floating Reputation Boat long ago, but so what? It is just a rank seven Immortal Gu House. You have many Gu Immortals, but do you have a single rank eight Gu Immortal? Not a single one! Hehehe, forget about everything else, if I want to attack you now, can anyone stop me?”

The three mermaids had cold expressions, Xie Ning Si said: “Immortal Monarch, if you want to fight, you can attack now, we will show you the power of our merman race!”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch quickly waved his hand: “Don’t misunderstand, I am not trying to become enemies with you. We are all variant humans, in the current world where humans dominate, I want us to cooperate. Variant humans are friends, not enemies. I am here to seek an alliance, how can I possibly fight you?”

“I understand why you do not want to cooperate. But think about this, as long as I spread the word that the three of you have invited me here and show signs of wanting to join up with black heaven’s variant human forces to resist the humans, what will happen? Hehe.”

The three mermaids looked at each other, they all had grim expressions.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch spoke gently but he had a tough tone, it was a forceful cooperation. If they rejected him, he would spread rumors and lie

that the merfolk want to join him.

At this time, the fate war was known to everyone.

The things that Duke Long said to Fang Yuan exposed to the world that variant humans were going to rise up!

Once this news was spread out regarding the Merman Imperial Court and the variant humans, it would raise the paranoia of the humans, they would become a public enemy.

By then, with the usual behavior of humans, they would form into an allied army and eliminate the Merman Imperial Court first!

The human forces had been wanting to take down the Merman Imperial Court long ago, they were only restricted by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable's influence. If the mermen wanted to harm the humans, regardless of whether anyone believed this lie, they would use it to deal with the Merman Imperial Court.

The Merman Imperial Court would be forced to resist, they would only be able to survive if they worked with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch or other equally powerful alliances.

Thus, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch's objective had already been fulfilled.

The three mermaids were troubled, they knew about the trend of the world, they were actively choosing Gu Immortal seeds and nurturing them.

They were mermen, they were variant humans, this status placed them in an awkward spot all along throughout the eras. During the five regions chaotic war, they would be in an even worse position when everyone was paranoid.

Thus, the merman tribe felt a strong sense of danger.

The three mermaids did not have much ambition, they only wanted to preserve their members during this new era. Thus, they did not want to antagonize Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, but they did not want to side with this ambitious leader and wage war on the humans either.

Seeing that the mermaids were silent, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch smiled again: “How about this, we are all variant humans, I do not want to force you. Let’s make a bet.”

The three mermaids looked at each other, Yu Zi asked: “What bet?”

“We will have a three round competition, no matter what methods your tribe uses, as long as you can defeat me in one round, I will forget about the suggestion to make an alliance, I will leave without exposing anything about your tribe or spreading any rumors. But if I win all three rounds, it will mean that your merman tribe is just too weak, unable to even defeat a rank eight Gu Immortal like me, you will be in great danger anyway, you should work with me to ensure that your tribe survives the tides of time.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch said slowly.

The three mermaids had no choice, they nodded and agreed to this bet.

In the first round, the three mermaids went all out, gathering the Gu Immortals of the tribe and creating the battle formation, merman wave sacred spiritual formation.

“Good formation, it can actually trap enemies.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch took a look and praised it.

“Immortal Monarch, do you dare to enter?”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch laughed loudly, he went into the formation and attacked several times, the tides turned into ice and shattered, allowing him to escape easily.

The merman Gu Immortals suffered backlash, they were either lightly or heavily injured, they all had grim expressions.

“It is a pity you do not have any rank eight expert controlling the formation.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch critiqued.

During the second round, the Merman Imperial Court used their Immortal Gu House Floating Reputation Boat.

After a hundred rounds of fighting, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch claimed victory again.

The three female mermen went into anxious discussions.

“Only the third round is left, what do we do?”

“If we lose again, we will need to cooperate with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, what do we do?”

“Why don’t we use that?” Xie Ning Si suggested.

Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi were stunned, they shook their heads: “No, we cannot use that, the influence is too large. Even without Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s rumor, we will become the target of everyone, our tribe will be exterminated!”

“If we do not use that, what will we do? Do we request help from Eastern Sea’s human forces?”

“No, we are all affected by the qi tides now, why would those humans come here to help us? Even if they come, the price will be too large.”

“Oh? I thought of someone. Why don’t we ask Gu tribe’s leader for help?” Xie Ning Si asked.

Lian Ke Xin sighed, denying this possibility: “He is Gu tribe’s leader, even though he has rank eight cultivation level, he is a beastman that is in seclusion. We have a good relationship with him but if we ask him for help, that will be making things difficult for him. Furthermore, he might not defeat this Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.”

Yu Zi’s eyes suddenly brightened: “I thought of someone, this person might be able to help us, he might even win against Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.”

“Who?”

“Indeed, at this point in time, who can help us?”

Yu Zi blinked as she said: “Did you forget, there is currently a great expert at Gu tribe’s headquarters.”

“Oh, him.” Lian Ke Xin suddenly realized.

“Brilliant, I will contact Gu tribe’s leader now, we will ask Lord Wu Shuai for help!” Xie Ning Si said that as she rapidly got to action.



# Chapter 1980 - Admitting Defea

## 1980 Admitting Defea

Eastern Sea, Gu tribe's blessed land.

A grand palace was stationed here.

The whole palace shined with slight orange-gold light and was richly decorated, the pavilions and terraces were all grand and beautiful. It was the rank eight Immortal Gu House — Dragon Palace.

Within Dragon Palace, dream realms were spread out. In other Immortal Gu Houses, nobody would dare to do this. But although Dragon Palace was an enslavement path Immortal Gu House, it had dream path Immortal Gu and was not at risk of the dream realm corroding it.

In front of the dream realm, Fang Yuan's clone, Wu Shuai, had his eyes shut.

His body was here, but his soul was inside the dream realm, continuously exploring it.

Within the dream realm, Wu Shuai was the disciple of a medical clinic, he was trying to learn their skill.

A young man with broad shoulders and a thin waist stepped into the clinic with a valiant aura.

The young man had quite the status, the old doctor who owned the clinic had to attend to him personally.

“Doctor, ever since I won the fight last time, I have been feeling that my body has some lingering issues.” The young man said.

The old doctor chuckled: “Come, I will check your pulse.”

“Check my pulse?” The young man frowned, having a perplexed expression.

The old doctor said slowly: “This is a unique investigative method from my hometown, it can inspect illnesses. As a person’s heart continues to beat, their blood will flow through their veins and create pulses. Through my specially created healing Gu worm, I can inspect your pulse and find out the cause of your illness.”

The young man had a surge of admiration: “Worthy of an experienced doctor. I’ve heard that heaven has heaven veins, earth has earth veins, and humans have human veins. Does this method to inspect the pulse make use of a human vein to target the cause of the problem?”

“Hahaha, that is precisely so, extend your hand.” The old doctor smiled.

The young man extended his hand, the old doctor placed his finger on his wrist, closing his eyes to inspect it.

A moment later, the old doctor opened his eyes: “This is indeed an illness but it is not obvious on the outside, this is quite vicious. You were hit by a phantom path method.”

The young man nodded: “Senior is completely right, my opponent was a Gu Master specializing in phantom path. I was hit by his attack and although I did not suffer injuries, it still felt weird. Usually at night, I could undergo activities with more than ten of my concubines, but now, I get extremely tired after engaging with one. Also, my waist often aches and my body feels hot, I perspire a lot when I sleep, I even feel dizziness at times.”

The old doctor nodded: “This phantom path method is quite wicked, it targets your kidney. In other words, you have kidney deficiency[1].”

“Phantom path is troublesome indeed, what should I do now?” The young man asked.

The old doctor replied: “I will prescribe you some medicine, take it for a month, during this month, you should not engage in bedroom activities.”

The young man had a difficult expression: “Senior, can you use Gu worms to heal me directly? If I have to hold it for a month, I’ll go crazy.”

The old doctor shook his head: “Phantom path methods alternate between reality and illusion, we need ample time to deal with it. Even though my medicine is not a healing Gu worm, it is not far from an actual Gu recipe, it can definitely treat your problem. Other than this method, it will be hard to cure you. Unless you can find a doctor who has greater skill than me, he might be able to resolve your issue.”

The young man sighed: “Senior is the greatest healer I know, I will follow your prescription.”

The dream faded away, the exploration was successful.

“Human vein...” Wu Shuai’s soul returned to his body, he was still savoring the true meaning in this dream.

This dream realm gave him the true meaning of two paths, phantom path and human path.

Fang Yuan’s human path attainment level was at grandmaster but phantom path was only at ordinary. His main body still had the corpses of many Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, they had phantom apertures. But earlier, his phantom path attainment level was too low, even with wisdom Gu, he could not deduce the profundity of phantom path.

After the fate war, all of the dream realms were given to Wu Shuai to explore.

These dreams were all obtained from Yi Tian Mountain by Fang Yuan, even though a portion were used in the fate war, a large amount was still left.

After Wu Shuai left Heavenly Court, he returned to Eastern Sea and stayed in Gu tribe's blessed land. Other than opening his immortal aperture's entrance to draw in heaven and earth qi, he kept in closed cultivation, exploring dream realms to gain more true meaning, to raise the attainment levels of his main body's many paths.

"Currently, my main body needs human path attainment level. After this exploration, even though we did not gain much human path attainment level and are still at grandmaster, it should be of some help to my main body."

Wu Shuai started to rest, preparing for his next dream realm exploration.

"Hmm?" He saw that there was an information path mortal Gu from Gu tribe's leader in the hall.

"Gu tribe's leader would not bother me with trivial matters, something important must have happened." Wu Shuai retrieved the information path mortal Gu and checked it.

"Oh, a rank eight snowman Gu Immortal called Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch is finding problems with the Merman Imperial Court?"

In the letter, the three mermaids promised that as long as Wu Shuai taught this evil visitor a lesson and forced him away, they would thank him with rewards. Gu tribe's leader also used a polite tone to subtly request for Wu Shuai's help.

"Of course I will help." Wu Shuai smiled lightly.

He had a portion of Fang Yuan's five hundred years of memories.

Wu Shuai learned that in the previous life, when the regional walls vanished and the five regions united, there were qi tides too.

The five regions' Gu Immortals were forced to recuperate, during this period, the forces in the two heavens came out and acted arrogantly for

some time.

“To think that I would have a chance to interact with these grotto-heaven forces. This is a great opportunity! For my main body’s plans, I should do my best.”

Bam.

The door of Dragon Palace opened, Wu Shuai came out of his closed cultivation.

At the banquet, the fragrance of wine spread but the atmosphere was very grim.

The three mermaids had cold expressions while Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch smiled at them.

The song and dance had ended, the hall was silent.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch drank a mouthful of wine as he asked: “I wonder if you have already decided on who to send for the final round?”

The three mermaids’ expressions turned darker but at this time, they received a letter, their faces glowed with joy.

Xie Ning Si said: “Since Immortal Monarch is eager, let’s start the third fight.”

“Good.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch placed down his wine cup: “How will we do this final fight, do tell me.”

“We have invited someone to go against Immortal Monarch.” Lian Ke Xin said.

“This lord has arrived already, prepare yourself, Immortal Monarch!” Yu Zi smiled coldly.

After a few breaths of time, following the mermaid immortals, Wu Shuai stepped into the hall.

“Who wants to fight me?” Wu Shuai asked, his voice reverberating in the hall.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch saw Wu Shuai and his expression changed, his casual and carefree attitude was no more, he said in shock: “You?”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had gained a lot of information about the fate war, Wu Shuai was one of the stars that shined, everyone in the world knew about him now.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch understood at once why the three mermaids had such confidence.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s heart sank, he knew about Wu Shuai’s strength, there was little hope in beating him.

But in this situation, he had no choice but to ask: “Greetings, Wu Shuai, to think that you are in the Merman Imperial Court. I wonder where Fang Yuan is?”

Fang Yuan snorted coldly: “I gained Fang Yuan’s help to revive, we were merely working together to resist Heavenly Court earlier. You are my opponent? Go ahead and attack.”

Wu Shuai had a lofty expression, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was angry, his expression turned cold: “Wu Shuai, you have rank seven cultivation level, but your tone is very arrogant.”

Wu Shuai smiled: “Whose tone is more arrogant? In terms of seniority, I am someone from Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s era! When I died of old age, your grandfather was not even born yet.”

“You...” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stared with wide eyes.

“What? You came to look for problems with the mermen, let’s not waste time.” Wu Shuai stared: “Not attacking? Then I will make my move!”

Saying so, he waved his hand, an Immortal Gu House flew out.

“Dragon Palace!” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s pupils shrunk, he watched as the Immortal Gu House came crashing towards him.

He was not a transformation path great expert, he could not resist this famous Immortal Gu House head-on, he quickly dodged.

The three mermaids did not expect Wu Shuai to act so quickly, he attacked with no warning.

Xie Ning Si quickly urged: “Senior Wu Shuai, this is the merman hall, if you are going to fight, it would be better to do it outside...”

Boom!

Dragon Palace expanded again, the entire merman hall was blown apart.

As dust clouds rumbled, the mermaids and Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch flew out pitifully.

Dragon Palace rose to the sky as Wu Shuai stood at the door, looking down at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch: “Don’t run, little fellow.”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s heart was pounding from the sudden assault, his throat felt dry: “Wu Shuai, you are a senior! Don’t rely on the power of the Immortal Gu House if you have guts.”

“Oh, is that so?” Wu Shuai snickered.

The three mermaids felt something amiss, Yu Zi quickly shouted: “Senior Wu Shuai! These are the headquarters of merfolk, if you are going to fight, please do it outside...”

Before she ended her sentence, with a loud sound, Di Zang Sheng was released from Dragon Palace by Wu Shuai.

Roar——!

The Evil Dragon roared, creating colossal waves. Its body was like a huge mountain, squeezed within the blessed land. Its dragon tail waved as several

mountains and valleys were flattened.

Countless merfolk scrambled and ran away, screaming in chaos.

The three mermaids were stunned, they did not know what to do.

“Come, fight.” Wu Shuai crossed his arms as he said to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch with a plain tone.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch looked at the grand palace and the huge vicious Evil Dragon, he felt that he was very insignificant.

Even as a snowman who was extremely resistant to cold, at this moment, he felt a deep chill flowing down his spine.

After being quiet for some time, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch cupped his fists and said: “Senior, you are very powerful, junior admits defeat. Senior has won this battle.”

The three mermaids were silent.

Wu Shuai only had rank seven cultivation level now, but nobody felt strange that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was admitting defeat to him.

Even without Dragon Palace, just the Evil Dragon alone could slaughter Heavenly Court’s two transformation path experts and survive the attack of countless Gu Immortals.

During the fate war, Di Zang Sheng had only lost to Feng Jiu Ge and Duke Long!

“Hmph, little fellow, you are quite smart.” Wu Shuai chuckled as he stored away Di Zang Sheng and Dragon Palace.

“Next, let’s talk about the alliance.” Wu Shuai descended and said this.

“Senior Wu Shuai!” The three mermaids were shocked.



“What? You still think you can isolate yourselves from everything?” Wu Shuai’s eyebrows were raised, he spoke in displeasure.

The three immortals did not dare to rebuke him.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was overjoyed, to think that there would be a turn of events, he stammered: “Se... senior, you mean to say?”

Wu Shuai patted his shoulder: “Come, let’s talk in the hall.”

[1] The character for deficiency here is the same as phantom.

# **Chapter 1981 - I Will Be The Alliance Leader!**

## **1981 I Will Be The Alliance Leader!**

Because of Wu Shuai's interference, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had to admit defeat. He had originally thought that his plan to ally with the mermen had failed, but to think that Wu Shuai had the same intention as him.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the Merman Imperial Court made a bet, the loser won while the winner lost.

After the battle, Wu Shuai used the Merman Imperial Court to hold a talk with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, their discussion got more animated, the three mermaids' expressions turned grimmer.

Wu Shuai heard that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had already gathered the grotto-heavens for a meeting, he immediately requested to join them and even urged Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch to gather the remaining forces for a second meeting.

In Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch's plan, the second meeting was going to happen much later, but Wu Shuai was urging him, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch thought: "With Wu Shuai's reputation, I can use it to my advantage, it is possible to push the meeting forward without issues."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch knew that even if they gathered the grotto-heaven forces in black and white heaven, there would still be a huge internal threat. Among these forces, there was a small group of human forces.

He wanted variant humans to lead the alliance, thus, he had been looking for allies aggressively during this period. He had already contacted all of the variant human forces that he knew. Even the Merman Imperial Court in Eastern Sea was visited after all.

If he knew that Gu tribe was at the bottom of the sea, he would visit them too.

“But with this dragonman great expert Wu Shuai that everyone knows, even if the human faction gathers more people, they cannot match his influence, right?”

Wu Shuai attacked Heavenly Court as a dragonman and ended up as the victor, this result gave him huge prestige and reputation.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch thus held the second meeting in Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, the group was even bigger now.

“Golden Fur Immortal Monarch has arrived!”

“Blitz Cloud Heavenly Immortal has arrived!”

“Great Wisdom Immortal Mother has arrived!”

“Green Forest Great Sage has arrived!”

Many rank eight great experts of the variant humans came.

Golden Fur Immortal Monarch was a hairy man, he was covered in thick golden fur. Blitz Cloud Heavenly Immortal was a featherman, he had the appearance of a handsome young man. Great Wisdom Immortal Mother was an old female inkman. Green Forest Great Sage was a miniman, his entire body was covered in a green light.

This was the first time these four variant human Gu Immortals had attended the meeting.

As for the human rank eight Gu Immortals, other than Night Heavenly Wolf Lord and Lady Cold Ash, there were also newcomers, light path cultivator Crossing Heaven Immortal Monarch, wood path cultivator Black Locust and earth path female immortal Rainbow Rock Immortal Concubine.

There were only five human rank eights but almost ten variant human rank eights. Even though Lady Cold Ash tried to get more people to join, they were still unable to match the variant humans, in fact this gap was widening.

After a long discussion, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch announced: “We invited everyone here today, other than to discuss the matters of the world, there is also another important matter. Let me introduce you to a senior great expert!”

Everyone followed Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s hand gesture and looked towards the person.

Wu Shuai walked out from behind the veil, under everyone’s supervision, he sat down on the main seat.

“This is?” The immortals were shocked.

“So it is Wu Shuai.” A variant human rank eight who was close with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch quickly said.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch showed a look of displeasure: “Call him Senior Wu Shuai!”

The variant human rank eight had an embarrassed expression, under Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s gaze, he changed his sentence: “Junior greets senior.”

With this adjustment, all the other immortals had to call Wu Shuai senior.

“Good.” Wu Shuai nodded in satisfaction: “Seniority is important, but I would rather everyone call me Alliance Leader instead!”

“Alliance Leader?” The immortals looked at each other.

Wu Shuai laughed: “Indeed, now that grotto-heavens are exposed, the five regions’ Gu Immortals will attack us. They have not done anything now because of the qi tide, they cannot move around yet. We need to strengthen and help ourselves, we can only form an alliance to have any hopes of resisting the five regions!”

“Since ancient times, the most capable person will become the alliance leader. I have observed that nobody here can match me, if anyone does not agree, you can challenge me.”

Before anyone could respond to Wu Shuai’s words, they heard a dragon roar.

Di Zang Sheng’s colossal body was exposed to everyone, blocking out the sun.

Next, an Immortal Gu House flew out of Wu Shuai’s immortal aperture, it was small and delicate, it floated in his palm while shining with radiance.

It was a miniature Dragon Palace!

Wu Shuai looked at the Dragon Palace in his palm before turning to the immortals, threat was clearly shown in his eyes.

The immortals’ expressions turned ugly, some went silent, they were furious but did not dare to say anything.

Even though Wu Shuai had rank seven cultivation level, everyone knew about the might of Dragon Palace and Evil Dragon. If everyone cooperated, they might have a chance against him. But the grotto-heavens were not close with each other, this was unlike the five regions where super forces interacted and conflicted with each other, they were familiar with one

another. The black and white heavens were huge and dangerous, forces rarely met with each other, not to mention any cooperation.

“Hahaha!” Seeing no objection, Wu Shuai laughed loudly as he called out: “You are still not accepting your alliance leader?”

The immortals were silent, the atmosphere was heavy.

A moment later, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stood up and cupped his fist at Wu Shuai: “Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch greets Alliance Leader!”

“Good, good.” Wu Shuai pointed at him: “You will be the vice alliance leader.”

Next, he looked at the other Gu Immortals with a vicious gaze.

The Evil Dragon shook its body outside, causing winds to form and clouds to scatter.

Seeing this, and with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s initiative, all the immortals had to acknowledge Wu Shuai’s status with a cold tone.

Wu Shuai sat at the main seat and looked at the Gu Immortals: “I know what you think, you acknowledge my alliance leader position because of the situation, but I am really not trying to force you.”

“This is a very rare opportunity for us all, it is likely our only chance to resist the five regions. If we do not use this chance, when the five regions go after us and our grotto-heavens get encircled, regret will do us no good.”

“However, at the rate your discussion is going, when can you take action? By the time you come to an agreement, the qi tides will be over already. Without a strong leader like myself to unify the grotto-heavens, how can we take action swiftly?”

Wu Shuai spoke with a harsh tone but he made good sense, the Gu Immortals’ expressions became less hostile.

“Alright, enough of the useless talk, let’s discuss our next target to attack.” Wu Shuai continued.

This time, even Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch felt surprised: “Lord Alliance Leader, isn’t it too early to attack now? Black and white heaven are too huge, there are still many grotto-heaven forces that we have not gathered yet.”

“We can’t wait anymore. As long as we succeed in our attack and create a commotion, these people will approach us themselves. This is how the hearts of the people work.” Wu Shuai waved his hand and said.

The immortals fell into silence.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had to continue asking: “Then in Lord Alliance Leader’s opinion, which place is most suitable for us to attack?”

“Heavenly Court of course!” Wu Shuai answered without hesitation.

“Heavenly Court?!” The Gu Immortals shouted in astonishment.

“Heavenly Court is weak now, we did not retreat of our own accord earlier. As long as we take down Heavenly Court, the five regions will be shaken, who would dare to target us?” Wu Shuai laughed loudly.

“This is not wise!”

“Heavenly Court has immense foundations, it is not a place we can target.”

“Lord Alliance Leader, please reconsider.”

The immortals shook their heads, nobody agreed.

“Hmph, cowards!” Wu Shuai smiled coldly in displeasure: “Then we will go after Divine Emperor City.”

“This Immortal Gu House is known as the largest Immortal Gu House, it is made from combining Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City. It has a huge significance to Heavenly Court, it is the gathering spot of the human vein, it

is the land-based Heavenly Court. If we can obtain it, it will be a huge blow to Central Continent, we can even gain a rank eight Immortal Gu House, and also Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's true inheritance."

Lady Cold Ash pondered: "Since Divine Emperor City is so important, if we attack it, we will infuriate Heavenly Court, the whole of Central Continent will resist and attack us. Since we are going after them as well, what difference is there compared to attacking Heavenly Court directly?"

"Of course there is a difference! If these people are all lured to Divine Emperor City, we can send another group to attack Heavenly Court." Wu Shuai raised his eyebrows.

The immortals heard this and broke out in cold sweat.

"He still wants to attack Heavenly Court after all."

"Doesn't this mean that the group attacking Divine Emperor City will end up as cannon fodder?"

"Senior Wu Shuai is too aggressive, he wants to go against Heavenly Court no matter what!"

Wu Shuai had a look of displeasure: "What? You do not dare to attack Divine Emperor City?"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had an ugly expression, he spoke like he had constipation: "Please reconsider, Lord Alliance Leader, we..."

Wu Shuai waved his hand, saying unhappily: "Enough, I don't want to hear more excuses. How about this, let's get rid of Eastern Sea's Xia clan first."

Wu Shuai finally exposed his true motive.

Southern Border had Xia clan, Eastern Sea also had Xia clan, these Xia clans were not the same but they were similarly super forces.

Wu Shuai had a huge appetite, his first target was a super force.



If he mentioned this earlier, he would face the objection of the immortals. But his first two targets were Heavenly Court and Divine Emperor City, the immortals found that compared to them, they could accept this target, Eastern Sea's Xia clan, more easily!

Wu Shuai continued to analyze: "Eastern Sea's Xia clan has the weakest foundation of all the super forces, they are at the bottom of Eastern Sea's righteous path forces. Not just that, Xia clan is at the eastern most part of Eastern Sea, the location is remote, it suits our needs as a base."

"And even better, the territories of Xia clan and the Merman Imperial Court border each other, the Merman Imperial Court is our ally now, they can provide us a lot of help."

Saying this, Wu Shuai did not give anyone the chance to speak: "I have decided! Our target will be Xia clan."

Faced with such a domineering alliance leader, the immortals were quite displeased. But under the pressure of the Evil Dragon and Dragon Palace, they had no choice.

And most importantly, they were forced by the situation, they knew that if they did not use this opportunity well, if they did not gain an advantage now, the five regions would not let them off in the future.

"Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, this alliance leader position should have been yours. Are you really going to let him have it?" After this meeting, some Gu Immortals were not satisfied, they hinted towards Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch smiled coldly to himself, he replied: "The nail that sticks out gets hammered down, the winds howl around the highest peaks. This Lord Wu Shuai is helping us charge forward as the vanguard, so what if I give him the alliance leader position? We have now gained the help of both the Evil Dragon and Dragon Palace."

"If our plan fails in the future and the five regions' Gu Immortals come after us, we can put the blame on Wu Shuai and get away ourselves."

# **Chapter 1982 - Xia Clan's Catastrophe**

## **1982 Xia Clan's Catastrophe**

Eastern Sea.

Reflecting shadow sea area.

The surface of the sea was like a smooth mirror without waves. Even when winds howled, the seawater remained unmoving.

Xia clan Gu Immortal Xia Zheng Qing was stationed here.

Reflecting shadow sea area was a giant resource point, it produced dark path and rule path cultivation resources in large quantities. Even though Xia clan primarily cultivated water path, these resources could be traded for huge profits.

Xia Zheng Qing was in closed cultivation now, suddenly, alarms rang in the formation around him.

“Is there an ancient desolate fish attacking the territory again?” Xia Zheng Qing initially thought that the sea beasts were causing chaos, he flew out of the formation.

But next, his entire body shook as he realized: “Enemies are attacking!”

Three rank seven Gu Immortals charged towards him together.

Xia Zheng Qing quickly activated the defensive formation.

At this time, there was a loud explosion as the formation shattered, a hairy man Gu Immortal carrying a huge hammer was covered in golden light as he charged into the formation, causing destruction!

Xia Zheng Qing spat out a mouthful of blood, looking fearful.

He immediately realized that the three immortals earlier were a distraction, this person was their main force.

“A rank eight hairy man Gu Immortal?” Xia Zheng Qing knew that he was not their match, he quickly transmitted to the clan as he activated the inner immortal formation, teleporting himself away.

At the next moment, he was transported to somewhere a thousand li away from the formation.

“Hahaha, he was transported here after all. Great Wisdom, very impressive.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch praised.

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother shook her head: “If not for Lord Alliance Leader’s precise information, how could I have made such accurate deductions?”

Xia Zheng Qing took a look and felt despair!

There were two variant human Gu Immortals here, they both had rank eight cultivation level.

“Since when did rank eight Gu Immortals become so common?”

“Three variant human rank eights!”

Xia Zheng Qing could not believe it, he gritted his teeth: “Who are you people? Why are you going against our Eastern Sea’s Xia clan?”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch could not be bothered to talk with him, he waved his hand, his killer move was unleashed.

Xia Zheng Qing only had rank seven cultivation level, how could he resist a rank eight killer move, he was instantly frozen in ice.

Eastern Sea Xia clan's headquarters, Hot Springs blessed land.

“Oh no! A strong group of enemies attacked, reflecting shadow sea is lost, even though Xia Zheng Qing used the immortal formation to escape, we have lost all contact with him!”

Xia Zheng Qing's call for help had reached Xia clan.

Most of Xia clan's Gu Immortals were gathered in the headquarters, they did not expect such bad news to appear out of nowhere.

“As the saying goes, while a person stays in their house, calamity descends from the sky!”

“Xia Zheng Qing sent information that there are both human and variant human Gu Immortals among the enemies, among them is a rank eight hairy man.”

“Where did these people come from?”

“I'm afraid they are forces from black and white heaven. During the qi tide rampage, grotto-heavens are all exposed. To think there are still so many variant humans left, they even came to create trouble for us!”

“This is somewhat understandable. If they do not grasp onto this chance, when the qi tides subside, the five regions will investigate the grotto-heavens of black and white heaven. If we find any variant human force with rank eight Gu Immortals, we will exterminate them.”

“Hehe, back then, even Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not find all of the hidden variant human grotto-heavens. But now that the world has changed, these variant humans are forced to expose themselves.”

Xia clan's Gu Immortals were not flustered, even though the information said that there was a rank eight variant human Gu Immortal, they still had

an Immortal Gu Houses to resist the enemy.

But soon, more bad news came.

Light ripple sea and shooting fish sea were also taken down by these variant human Gu Immortals! The Xia clan Gu Immortals defending the two resource points were even weaker, they did not even manage to send any information over before losing contact.

Xia clan's Gu Immortals were furious.

“We need to teach these variant human Gu Immortals a lesson!”

“Mere variant humans dare to bully us human super forces.”

“Hmph, Whom the heavens would destroy, they first make mad. These variant humans have gone insane.”

“First supreme elder, let use mobilize both Immortal Gu Houses and kill them all!”

“Yes, our clan's three Gu Immortals have fallen into their hands. We need to save our clansmen and take revenge for this humiliation!!”

The Gu Immortals were filled with fighting spirit, they requested to fight.

Xia clan's first supreme elder was Xia Rui Zhi, hearing the Gu Immortals' words, his face was dark.

He shook his head: “It is not wise to attack now! We lost three resource points at once, these are all important places, we have powerful immortal formations protecting them. It is not normal that we lost them so quickly.”

“Our clan does not have rank eight Gu Immortals defending us. If we mobilize both Immortal Gu Houses, our headquarters will be severely weakened. Right now, we are close to completing the Human Sea, we cannot be complacent!”

“In my opinion, we should defend ourselves fully until we complete Human Sea. By then, our foundation will rise greatly, we will be one of the top Eastern Sea forces. By then, dealing with the variant humans will have much greater effect.”

Even though Xia Rui Zhi only had rank seven cultivation level, he had high reputation, after hearing his words, Xia clan's Gu Immortals felt that it was logical, they no longer had such a strong desire to fight.

But at the next moment, a thunderous sound erupted as an Immortal Gu House broke through the defensive barrier, entering Xia clan's public blessed land.

“Eastern Sea's Xia clan, today, you will face extermination!” The door of the Immortal Gu House opened as Wu Shuai and the other grotto-heaven Gu Immortals appeared.

Xia clan saw this group of enemies, fear and shock became plastered on their faces.

“Dragon Palace!”

“Wu Shuai!!”

“So many variant human rank eights, oh heavens!”

Xia clan's Gu Immortals turned pale, they were immensely fearful.

But Wu Shuai did not give them time to accept reality, he waved his hand: “Attack!”

Thus, at the next moment, the rank eights around him charged down and attacked.

Seeing this terrifying scene, Xia clan's Gu Immortals felt their vision turning dark, some almost fainted on the spot.

Such a group completely overwhelmed and dominated Xia clan's Gu Immortals.

Xia clan did not have a single rank eight while Wu Shuai had more than ten, how could they fight?

“My Xia clan’s blessed land is not Heavenly Court, why are there so many rank eight Gu Immortals attacking us?!” Xia Rui Zhi mumbled, facing such a strong foe, he felt despair.

“The enemies are too strong, we must retreat!” At this time, female immortal Xia Ying shouted at the Xia clan immortals.

Xia Rui Zhi shook as he gritted his teeth: “Go, we will leave, let’s get into the Immortal Gu Houses!”

Xia clan had two Immortal Gu Houses, they were both rank seven.

One was Whale Fishing Boat, the other was Golden Star Tower.

“You want to leave? Not so easy!”

“None of you will escape.”

The variant human Gu Immortals attacked quickly, unleashing a myriad of attacks, the explosions resounded heaven and earth.

At the crucial moment, Xia Ying dodged an attack, managing to enter Golden Star Tower.

But she did not escape, she steered Golden Star Tower and went in front: “Everyone, leave, I will block them!”

Golden Star Tower charged relentlessly, using killer moves, golden stars shot out everywhere, the variant humans quickly dodged them.

The remaining Xia clan Gu Immortals found the chance and went into Whale Fishing Boat, escaping their headquarters.

# **Chapter 1983 - You Have A Problem With Me?**

## **1983 You Have A Problem With Me?**

“Even though these variant human Gu Immortals have rank eight cultivation level, their battle strength is not high. Only Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch is passable.”

“As for Eastern Sea’s Xia clan, even without a rank eight, they can rely on rank seven Immortal Gu Houses to put up a fight.”

Wu Shuai stood near the door of Dragon Palace, he looked at the battlefield and observed the fight, he did not make a move.

Earlier, when attacking the three resource points, due to the difference in cultivation level, he could not tell. But in the current deadlock, he sensed many details.

Wu Shuai analyzed, he quickly realized the reason.

The variant humans were able to survive until today and develop well because of the help of heaven’s will.

Heaven’s will was disrupted by Star Constellation’s will, it could not make fate Gu show the sign of variant human supremacy. But heaven’s will could still influence calamities and tribulations.



Tribulations were the biggest obstacles in the rise of a Gu Immortal's cultivation level.

The more prosperous humanity was, the more help heaven's will would provide to the variant human grotto-heaven forces.

The difficulty of tribulations that these variant humans faced was many times simpler than normal human Gu Immortals! In fact, even for the human Gu Immortals in black and white heaven, because they were at odds with the five regions human forces, they were also given some special treatment. This was thanks to heaven's will.

There were clear historical records about this.

Back then, variant humans ruled the world as overlords. Heaven's will thus affected fate Gu and showed the revelation of humanity reigning supreme. On one hand, heaven's will aided Primordial Origin and helped him to become an Immortal Venerable, it also took care of the humans, helping humanity develop and grow. On the other hand, heaven's will also influenced the variant humans, dividing them and causing them to undergo intense internal conflict, they greatly weakened themselves.

“And because the two heavens are too huge, with each heaven having the total area of all five regions, there are so many rank eight Gu Immortals in black and white heaven. Other than the group I brought here, a small group are still left in the two heavens.”

Wu Shuai thought about this as he started to move.

Dragon Palace slowly activated.

Xia Ying, who was inside Golden Star Tower, became anxious. It was very tough to deal with these rank eights now, she seemed to have the upper hand but she could not last long. Even if the battle tilted in the enemy's favor at the next second, it would not be surprising.

“Good, Lord Wu Shuai is making his move!”

“I’m looking forward to it.”

“It is a pity that our grotto-heavens have no Immortal Gu Houses. Only after fighting can we see that they really are the foundation of a super force.”

The rank eight Gu Immortals had excited expressions, they were anticipating his action.

But under everyone’s gaze, Dragon Palace flew away from the battlefield.

The rank eight Gu Immortals were stunned.

What was going on?

At the next moment, Wu Shuai’s icy voice could be heard: “If more than ten rank eights cannot deal with one rank seven immortal and a rank seven Immortal Gu House, what is the point of your existence?”

The rank eight Gu Immortals were tongue-tied, they could not respond.

Eventually, they could only watch as Dragon Palace flew away.

“Oh no, he is flying towards Human Sea!” Xia Ying saw this, her heart jumped.

Xia clan felt very suspicious: “How does Wu Shuai know that our Xia clan’s base contains Human Sea? No, Human Sea is very deeply hidden, maybe he just wants to find some resources.”

Wu Shuai left the battlefield, he went to the top of a certain lake, he stopped Dragon Palace’s movement.

“Human Sea should be here.” Wu Shuai’s eyes shined with bright light, he activated his method.

A mystical light shot out from his palm, piercing hundreds of feet of lake water, reaching the bottom.

Next, the mystical light spread out towards the entire lake surface.

The water evaporated, turning into mist and dispersing, one could hear countless human voices from the dense white fog.

The voices of people became louder, the white fog turned into human silhouettes as they flew around in the sky.

At once, Dragon Palace was surrounded by white fog, countless silhouettes moved around Dragon Palace like ghost phantoms, there were tens of thousands of them.

“Come.” Wu Shuai willed, the fog quickly gathered and condensed into white lake water that flowed into Dragon Palace.

The commotion created was huge, the two parties fighting in the battlefield could see it clearly.

“Wu Shuai actually went to collect loot while we are fighting with our full effort!”

“The fog is very special, it emitted dense human path aura. It must be a great treasure for Wu Shuai to retrieve it personally!”

“Don’t fear, as the alliance leader, how can Wu Shuai not lead by example? How can he gain our acceptance otherwise? He will definitely give a portion of the white fog to us later.”

The rank eight Gu Immortals conversed with each other.

Xia Ying’s heart sank to rock bottom: “Wu Shuai actually knows about the existence of Human Sea! In fact, he has a method to take Human Sea away, how can this be possible?”

“The plan of constructing Human Sea was only known to us Xia clan Gu Immortals, we kept it as a secret all along. Even if Xia Zheng Qing and the rest were captured by Wu Shuai, only our first supreme elder knows how to retrieve Human Sea. How can he find an alternate method so quickly?”

“To think that the current Human Sea is still incomplete.” Wu Shuai looked at the white fog in Dragon Palace, it was still showing human figures and shadows from time to time, it was creepy but quite amazing as well. Two different types of images had fused together in a natural way.

Wu Shuai smiled, he did not mind it.

To replenish Human Sea, he only needed to kill enough humans.

Because of the main body’s information, Wu Shuai knew that Human Sea was the work of Xia clan for many years, they were attempting to create a human path secluded domain in secret.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, during the five regions chaotic war, Human Sea was dazzling and impressive, it helped Eastern Sea’s Xia clan to rise up to the top.

But it was still far from an actual secluded domain after all.

In the future, Southern Border’s Chai clan gained some key comprehension from Human Sea, they started to create a similar artificial secluded domain — Human Mountain.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals of that time had deduced that if Human Sea and Human Mountain were fused together into one, they could form an actual secluded domain of heaven and earth!

“Human Mountain and Sea is too far away, but just Human Sea alone is sufficiently helpful to my main body.” Wu Shuai was quite happy.

The most important thing was Fang Yuan’s main body after all.

The current biggest obstacle of Fang Yuan’s main body was the restriction of heaven path. This was Red Lotus’ scheme, Fang Yuan was trying to find a way to break out of this predicament.

He found that human path was a countermeasure, even though the thousand wish tree was a human path ancient desolate plant, it could not match the numerous heaven path dao marks.

Thus, Fang Yuan placed his sight on the Human Sea of Eastern Sea's Xia clan.

Because of Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, Fang Yuan did not need to go personally, his clone Wu Shuai was able to head there and retrieve Human Sea easily.

After Wu Shuai stored Human Sea away, the battle had also concluded at the other side.

Xia Ying was unable to escape in the end, but many of the rank eights were injured as well. The one who defeated Golden Star Tower was Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

“Lord Alliance Leader, you took the chance to take the human path treasure, that's not fair, right?” As the immortals gathered at the door of Dragon Palace, an anxious rank eight Gu Immortal questioned.

Wu Shuai glanced at him as Dragon Palace used its killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

The rank eight Gu Immortal who spoke was unguarded, the smoke easily swept him away into Dragon Palace before he was even able to say another word.

The immortals were stunned and fearful.

“Who else has a problem with me?” Wu Shuai crossed his arms, looking at the immortals.

He only had rank seven cultivation level, he was surrounded by a group of rank eights.

But the rank eight Gu Immortals looked at each other, they were pale and chose to keep silent, they did not dare to say a thing.

# **Chapter 1984 - Wu Shuai's Political Skills**

## **1984 Wu Shuai's Political Skills**

Facing Wu Shuai's aggressive stance, the Gu Immortals of the two heavens lowered their heads, they did not dare to look at him directly.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch saw this, he cheered internally, Wu Shuai's actions would cause him to lose the support of everyone. However, he also felt envious, when would he gain such huge battle strength to make everyone lower their heads in front of him?

After a while of silence, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stood up at an appropriate timing, saying respectfully: "Lord Alliance Leader, dear allies, the most important thing now is to go after the remaining Xia clan members. Most of Xia clan's Gu Immortals have escaped using Whale Fishing Boat, if we do not chase them now, it will be too late."

"Yes, yes." The immortals nodded, they started discussing this topic.

Many people casted gazes of gratitude towards Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, his words had undeniably given them a way to escape the embarrassment.

"Haha." Wu Shuai laughed loudly: "Chase? Why must we chase them?"

Wu Shuai continued: "We were able to take down the headquarters of Eastern Sea's Xia clan, it was because we acted quickly and caught them off

guard. From now, it will be difficult if we want to expand our territory. The whole of Eastern Sea and even the righteous paths of the five regions will become very cautious now.”

“But if we allow this group of Xia clan Gu Immortals to escape, they will invite members of Eastern Sea’s righteous path to try to recover their territory.”

“This way, those Eastern Sea righteous path members will need to leave their territories and come here to seek death. Isn’t that great?”

The immortals were stunned, they nodded in unison, agreeing that Wu Shuai’s analysis was sound.

“Lord Alliance Leader is very knowledgeable, it is natural that we cannot compare to him.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch ingratiated.

But Wu Shuai had a grim expression: “I don’t care about all of these Eastern Sea super forces! There is only one person I am wary about, Qi Sea Ancestor.”

“This old man can fight evenly with Duke Long, he had once held the qi sea banquet, he also did not help Fang Yuan nor Heavenly Court during the fate war. His stance is very important now!”

“It is likely that the righteous path will convince him now to fight against us. Of course, it is not strange if he chooses to continue staying in seclusion and not face us.”

“I let these Xia clan members go, I am also trying to probe Qi Sea Ancestor’s intentions.”

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens heard Wu Shuai’s words, they nodded as their expressions turned dark.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch took a glance at Wu Shuai, he thought: “Wu Shuai is Wu Shuai after all, he cannot be underestimated. He has both

wisdom and political skills, it is just that he does not feel the need to use tricks against us.”

But he quickly thought: “Qi Sea Ancestor’s attitude is very ambiguous. He had once worked with Fang Yuan and went against Duke Long, but later they reconciled. On the other hand, he also held the qi sea banquet, he welcomed Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal Jun Shen Guang, while also letting a demonic Gu Immortal sell blood path Immortal Gu in public.”

“Alright.” Wu Shuai waved his hand, breaking the immortals’ train of thought: “We chased Xia clan away, it is time to split the loot.”

Thus, the atmosphere changed instantly, everyone got excited.

Eastern Sea was the richest of the five regions, as an Eastern Sea super force, Xia clan had ownership of many resource points, their inventory was filled.

These assets of Xia clan were split up by Fang Yuan and given to the Gu Immortals, each of them gained a considerable sum of wealth.

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens smiled, they felt extremely happy.

“The five regions are so rich!”

“This is merely the foundation of one Eastern Sea super force, it is already so much.”

“Xia clan is useless! If my grotto-heaven had such resources, we would be far stronger than now.”

And what surprised the Gu Immortals of the two heavens was that Wu Shuai took a much smaller portion of the gains that they had expected.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had a change of thought, he quickly said to the surrounding Gu Immortals: “Everyone, listen to me. We gained so much loot because of Lord Alliance Leader. He was the one who guided us towards victory. Without his information and plan, how could we take down



Xia clan so easily? But currently, Lord Alliance Leader is taking the smallest portion of loot, this is not fair to him.”

The Gu Immortals were stunned, they looked at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had a look of sincerity and admiration.

Wu Shuai looked at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch deeply in the eye: “I am a lone person, I do not need much in cultivation resources, nor do these resources suit me. If I need anything in the future, I will definitely take them. Since I have distributed this loot already, I will not take them back, but Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, your words reminded me of something.”

“Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.” Wu Shuai spoke.

“This subordinate is here.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch cupped his fists, showing a respectful attitude.

Wu Shuai smiled: “You are quite good.”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch quickly bowed: “To receive such compliments from Lord Alliance Leader, it is my greatest blessing!”

Wu Shuai nodded: “Of course, my leadership is the greatest blessing that all of you have. As for you, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, as the vice alliance leader, you should not get the same amount of loot as the rest of the allies. I will make the decision, shooting fish sea will belong to you now.”

“Lord Alliance Leader?” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch quickly raised his head, feeling shocked.

Wu Shuai laughed: “I said you’ll get it, just take ownership of it. Don’t worry! I am here to back you up. If anyone dares to make problems for you, if you dislike anyone, just tell me, I will take care of them!”

Wu Shuai said this as he looked around, his dragon eyes emitting an aggressive light. The Gu Immortals all turned away, not daring to meet his gaze.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch obtained a giant resource point but he felt no joy internally.

He looked at Wu Shuai, seeing that seemingly smiling face, he could not help but shudder in a chill.

“As expected of the dragonman who once ruled his race, I underestimated him! This old monster must have realized my intentions.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch noticed this, his back was covered in cold sweat.

He wanted to cause Wu Shuai to lose even more support from the rest of the people. But Wu Shuai had made use of his action and acted this way, it made all the other Gu Immortals feel that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was not happy with his gains, he wanted to use his status and the alliance leader’s dominance to gain more benefits.

After all, if the alliance leader gets more benefits, wouldn’t it be logical if the vice alliance leader also got more loot?

“Hmm? Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, you are not thanking me?” Wu Shuai stared at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, showing a smile filled with deep meaning.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch shuddered in his heart as he gritted his teeth and said with a hoarse voice: “This subordinate thanks Lord Alliance Leader.”

Seeing that he had submitted, Wu Shuai did not feel any happiness, he was actually quite disappointed.

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens had been in seclusion for too long, due to their identities, they did not dare to move around or compete against each other.

Without competition, they could not be trained well. Even if heaven’s will helped them, Gu Immortal elites could not be nurtured.

Wu Shuai looked at the Gu Immortals of the two heavens, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was the only one with passable battle strength and attitude. The rest of the rank eights were simply a disgrace to other rank eight Gu Immortals!

It was no wonder that in Fang Yuan's previous life, these people did not manage to create any big commotions.

# Chapter 1985 - Truly Incredible

## 1985 Truly Incredible

While Wu Shuai and the rest were splitting up the fortune of Xia clan, the atmosphere inside Whale Fishing Boat was grim and sad.

“First supreme elder, what do we do now?”

“The enemies are too powerful, there are more than ten rank eights, there was no way we could defend our headquarters!”

“Especially their leader Wu Shuai! If we retaliate, there is little hope of success.”

“Sigh, it is a pity that Xia Ying and the rest sacrificed themselves.”

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals were furious and helpless, they felt that the future was bleak.

Xia clan’s first supreme elder Xia Rui Zhi snorted coldly: “I don’t care who the enemy is, be it Wu Shuai or the rank eight Gu Immortals of the two heavens, they should not have taken our Xia clan’s territory. They will not stay arrogant for long! We are going to get help from Eastern Sea’s righteous path.”

“Hmph, so be it if they are human Gu Immortals. But they are mostly variant human Gu Immortals with Wu Shuai leading them, we have already kept a copy of the battle scene, it is the best evidence against them. Eastern

Sea's righteous path and even the five regions' righteous path will not allow this group of variant humans to grow stronger and larger!"

Xia clan's Gu Immortals heard this, they recovered a bit of their morale.

Seeking reinforcements was the only way out, but the important thing to consider was which clan to approach.

Xia clan was situated at the eastern most area of Eastern Sea, towards their west was the Merman Imperial Court, towards the southeast was Tang clan, and towards the northeast was Xie clan. These three were not good targets to request for help.

The three of them were directly connected to Xia clan in territory, Xia clan's relationship with the Merman Imperial Court was best but they were variant humans. Even though there were no mermen in the battle earlier, Xia clan did not dare to take the risk.

As for Tang clan and Xie clan, these two clans had conflict with Xia clan during normal times, if they went to ask these two clans for help, Xia clan's Gu Immortals would not want to face their mockery.

After a round of discussion, Xia clan's Gu Immortals moved in Whale Fishing Boat, they carefully went past the Merman Imperial Court, approaching Shen clan, which was further west, for help.

But because of this, their journey became much longer.

During Xia clan's journey to seek help, information that they were invaded by Gu Immortals of the two heavens spread like wildfire in treasure yellow heaven, it shook the world.

"There are so many rank eight Gu Immortals among the variant humans! Is this information reliable?"

"It is nothing strange. Be it black heaven or white heaven, each of them is as large as the five regions together."

"These damned variant humans are hidden too deeply!"

“They are too daring, they dared to wage war on our human forces, they are courting death!”

“The thing that makes me angrier is that among these people, there are human Gu Immortals. What are they thinking? They are betraying their own race!”

At once, all of the Gu Immortals in the world discussed this matter.

Shen clan was no exception.

The letter requesting help from Xia clan had already reached Shen clan.

This was an important matter, Shen clan’s first supreme elder, Shen Cong Sheng, called all the Gu Immortals for a meeting.

“The reason why Xia clan is asking our Shen clan for help is obvious, there is no need to explain it. But should our Shen clan help them? Everyone, tell me your view.” Shen Cong Sheng said.

“The enemy is too strong, why must our Shan clan face such a strong foe alone? Remember that Wu Shuai has Dragon Palace and Di Zang Sheng, he even possesses dream path methods, their battle strength is too overwhelming.”

“That’s right, and even more worrying is that Wu Shuai has a relationship with Fang Yuan. Nobody knows how good their relationship is, but we know that they are close. If we target Wu Shuai, we might cause the great demon Fang Yuan to come after us!”

Shen Cong Sheng nodded: “You are correct.”

He did not show any change of expression.

During the blue dragon whale trip, he had cooperated with Fang Yuan. But because they worked in secrecy, even Shen clan’s Gu Immortals did not know about it, Shen Cong Sheng could preserve his clan’s reputation as a result.

“I feel that we cannot refuse to help Xia clan! Xia clan is also a member of the righteous path, they came all this way to ask us for help, if we do not agree, what would Xia clan think of us? What would Eastern Sea think of us? What would the whole five regions think of us?”

“I agree, this is not just a conflict between us humans, this is the battle between humans and variant humans! If Shen clan does not show a clear stance, the people of the world will accuse us of our inaction.”

Shen Cong Sheng nodded: “This is correct too. But the enemy is too strong, they have more than ten rank eights and even Wu Shuai leading them. Even if we have Ancestor Shen Shang here, we cannot resist such a group of enemies.”

After the fate war, Shen Shang went missing after going insane. Even though Shen clan wanted to find their Ancestor Shen Shang, they did not succeed.

The entire world was watching now, it was likely that news in treasure yellow heaven had spread from Xia clan themselves.

Xia clan was using this method to force Eastern Sea’s righteous path forces to help them.

With the entire world watching, Shen clan had to help Xia clan. But Wu Shuai’s group was simply too powerful, they were too terrifying.

Even though Shen clan was a super force, against the allied forces of two heavens, it still felt very wary and unsure.

“Elders, I have a plan to resolve this problem.” Ren Xiu Ping spoke.

After returning from the blue dragon whale trip, Ren Xiu Ping became Shen clan’s external supreme elder. Ren Xiu Ping was a person who followed the rules and kept a low profile, but now that they were in this situation, if Shen clan falls and chaos descends, he would also be implicated.

Ren Xiu Ping continued: “Wu Shuai has very high strength, but in this current Eastern Sea, there is another ancestor capable of resisting the Evil Dragon.”

“You mean to say that person in qi sea?” Someone’s eyes brightened up.

“Indeed, Qi Sea Ancestor.” Ren Xiu Ping nodded.

“Good plan, let’s do that.” Shen Cong Sheng laughed and clapped, deciding on the spot.

For the next few days, Xia clan arrived in Shen clan, they wanted to borrow strength to reclaim their territory. Shen Cong Sheng came out to speak to them, they attended to Xia clan’s members warmly.

But when asked to fight against Wu Shuai, Shen Cong Sheng said that he had too little strength, he suggested that they should gather more righteous path forces.

Currently, qi tides were surging everywhere, almost all the five regions’ Gu Immortals were recuperating and resting, they did not dare to move abruptly.

Thus, Eastern Sea’s righteous path could not use much of its strength now.

But Shen Cong Sheng suggested that Xia clan should inform Qi Sea Ancestor of this situation, they should request for the ancestor to uphold justice for them.

Shen Cong Sheng copied Xia clan, before they asked Qi Sea Ancestor for help, they already published the news in treasure yellow heaven.

Thus, the entire world’s attention went to qi sea.

Almost all the Gu Immortals were waiting to see Qi Sea Ancestor’s response.

All the human Gu Immortals were hoping that Qi Sea Ancestor would step up as the senior of the rank eights, the person who resisted Duke Long on



equal footing, he had the responsibility to lead them.

But many people were pessimistic about it. Because Qi Sea Ancestor was a secluded cultivator, he had an ambiguous relationship with the righteous path and demonic path, he had even worked with Fang Yuan before. From this aspect, there was quite a chance that Qi Sea Ancestor would not entertain these worldly affairs.

Qi Sea Ancestor's response was rapid.

He announced in treasure yellow heaven: "There are those of other races having such motives, first there was Primordial Origin, now there is Qi Sea, we will not let these variant humans with ulterior motives bear roots here on our soil!"

Once he said that, the world world resounded with praises.

Qi Sea Ancestor, you are truly incredible!

# **Chapter 1986 - Heavenly Court's Tactic**

## **1986 Heavenly Court's Tactic**

Heavenly Court.

The damage caused during the fate war was starting to recover. Having collated their losses, they really had suffered a huge setback.

Discussion hall.

Qin Ding Ling sat at the main seat as she looked around, observing the Gu Immortals and their wills.

Most of the Heavenly Court members had gone back to hibernating in the immortal graveyard. More than half of the immortal graveyard was destroyed by Fang Yuan, but Heavenly Court still had sufficient members left.

These members had little lifespan remaining, rather than dying of old age, they could display greater value by hibernating in the immortal graveyard.

What worried Qin Ding Ling was that even though these Gu Immortals went back into slumber, she did not receive any sort of message from Star Constellation's will.

It was as if the fate war caused Star Constellation's will to suffer a huge loss.

This made already become Qin Ding Ling's greatest worry. Star Constellation's will could interfere with heaven's will but heaven's will was also able to assimilate Star Constellation's will. If she lacked support and got assimilated by heaven's will, it would be a huge nightmare to humanity and Heavenly Court.

But Qin Ding Ling came here and gathered the immortals for a meeting, it was not because of Star Constellation's will.

“Qi tides are rampaging, the two heavens are making a move. Wu Shuai is leading an allied army of the two heavens and has already taken down Eastern Sea's Xia clan. Now, Xia clan has requested for Qi Sea Ancestor's help, the two sides are opposing each other. What do you think we should do at this key moment?”

Qin Ding Ling asked.

She was a luck path Gu Immortal, she did not cultivate wisdom path like Fairy Zi Wei. Thus, when faced with this matter, Qin Ding Ling could not make a resolute decision, she needed to discuss it with the other Gu Immortals.

“Undeniably, the allied army of the two heavens is made up of variant humans, enemies of our Heavenly Court, we need to exterminate them!”

“In this aspect, Qi Sea Ancestor is quite a responsible person.”

“Right now, the conflict between Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor is akin to the conflict between humans and variant humans. But the truth is, whoever wins between them is not the key, the most important element is someone else — Fang Yuan!”

“Indeed, be it Wu Shuai or Qi Sea Ancestor, they are both related to Fang Yuan. Wu Shuai claims that he has only cooperated with Fang Yuan, he has revived after a million years, aspiring to grow the dragonman race once again. As for Qi Sea Ancestor, he had once made an agreement with Fang Yuan, he went against Heavenly Court but changed his mind later when Lord Duke Long gave him half of the qi path true inheritance. During the

fate war, Qi Sea Ancestor did not show up at all, it showed that Lord Duke Long had made a wise decision.”

“I have a different opinion! Qi Sea Ancestor can likely be Fang Yuan’s disguise. In the past, we did not think of this because Fang Yuan only had rank seven cultivation level, but now that we know about the secret of the sovereign immortal body, it is likely that Fang Yuan had rank eight cultivation level then and disguised himself as Qi Sea Ancestor. Don’t forget that during the fate war, Fang Yuan destroyed the qi wall with a qi path method.”

“His qi path method is called unlimited qi sea, it is the signature method of Qi Xiang of the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs in the past. But the qi path methods that Qi Sea Ancestor used against Duke Long were very different from unlimited qi sea. It is quite unlikely that the two of them are the same person.”

“But we cannot rule out this possibility.”

“Speaking of which, Wu Shuai is much more suspicious than Qi Sea Ancestor. He might not be a disguised Fang Yuan, he could simply be Fang Yuan’s clone. As the leader of Shadow Sect, Fang Yuan definitely has a portion of Spectral Soul’s foundation. And a method Spectral Soul excels in is creating split souls. That was how he created Shadow Sect singlehandedly.”

The immortals discussed among themselves.

Qin Ding Ling was hesitant, she felt a huge headache.

The immortals had their own viewpoints, nobody could convince the other. In the end, Qin Ding Ling had to make the decision after all.

Qin Ding Ling thought about it for a while before sighing: “Everyone, listen to me. Fang Yuan has familiar face, he can disguise as different people. Even though we need to be wary of this, we cannot ignore other possibilities just because of our suspicions. Wu Shuai might be Fang Yuan’s

clone, Qi Sea Ancestor might be Fang Yuan's disguise, these are possible truths."

"But at the same time, there is also the possibility that they are not that closely related to Fang Yuan. We cannot create enemies everywhere just because of this, forget about Wu Shuai, but for Qi Sea Ancestor, we cannot give up on winning over Qi Sea Ancestor just because of this possibility, can't we try to make him an ally of Heavenly Court?"

Fang Zheng heard this as he hesitated and asked: "Senior Qin wants to recruit Qi Sea Ancestor?"

Qin Ding Ling nodded: "Lord Duke Long has passed away while Feng Jiu Ge betrayed us, our Heavenly Court desperately needs a pseudo venerable capable of holding the situation. In the past, Senior Duke Long used Primordial Origin's true inheritance to gain Qi Sea Ancestor's friendship. Even though he did not agree to join us, he had not shown up during the fate war either."

The immortals fell into silence.

Qin Ding Ling's current plan was Duke Long's former plan.

In the past, in order to repair fate Gu, Duke Long wanted Qi Sea Ancestor to stay out of the conflict. But now?

Heavenly Court needed someone with pseudo venerable battle strength to support them!

Currently, even though there was peace, the truth was that the rampaging qi tides and heaven path dao marks were forcing most Gu Immortals to stay inactive and recuperate from the damages caused, they could not take action.

But once the qi tides subside and Fang Yuan manages to refine the heaven path dao marks?

By then, the strongest person in Heavenly Court would be Qin Ding Ling, could she resist the Gu Immortals of the other four regions with ill intentions? Could she block Di Zang Sheng? Could she block Fang Yuan?

Heavenly Court knew about this threat, in history, they had also recruited Gu Immortals of the other four regions.

The obvious example was Wan Zi Hong, this female immortal was once a demoness of Western Desert, Heavenly Court had recruited her to join them. As long as one was a human, Heavenly Court could be magnanimous towards them.

“I am not against winning Qi Sea Ancestor over. But before that, we need to clarify his true relationship with Fang Yuan!”

“That’s what you say, but right now, Qi Sea Ancestor might not even feel any threat from our Heavenly Court.”

“Haha, I think that for him, the attraction of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance surpasses everything.”

Fang Zheng volunteered: “Currently, the conflict between Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai is our greatest opportunity. We can investigate and find out the truth from this. Of course, no matter the outcome, we cannot spare the Gu Immortals of the two heavens. Since we already have Night Heavenly Wolf Lord as our insider, I am willing to lead a group to Eastern Sea and exterminate these variant human Gu Immortals!”

Fang Zheng was the current owner of Demon Judgment Board, even though he had rank seven cultivation level, with this board, he could fight against most rank eight Gu Immortals.

Due to the influence of qi tides, the five regions’ Gu Immortals could not move around. But Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were different.

Most of them had phantom apertures, they were not restricted by this.

Right as Fang Zheng spoke, another Gu Immortal volunteered to join the group and head to Eastern Sea, in order to kill these variant human Gu Immortals.

Even though Heavenly Court lost, their motives and actions still followed the basis of defending humanity.

Qin Ding Ling smiled: “I got it! Why must we go to Eastern Sea? Wu Shuai is there right now, we can use him to probe Qi Sea Ancestor’s background. Let’s go to the two heavens and exterminate those grotto-heaven forces, we will uproot the allied army of the two heavens from their bases!”

# Chapter 1987 - Qi Harvest Frui

## 1987 Qi Harvest Frui

“Heavenly Court is Heavenly Court after all...” Night Heavenly Wolf Lord looked at the information path Gu worm in his hand as he sighed to himself.

As he had expected, Heavenly Court really went ahead to deal with the two heavens alliance.

Earlier, he had predicted that such a situation would occur.

Those who live in a society have to follow its rules, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord had to join the two heavens alliance. Otherwise, his grotto-heaven would be attacked until it was destroyed.

But joining this force only helped to delay their own destruction.

When the five regions counterattack, the two heavens alliance would break apart, there would be huge casualties. None of these allies would be spared, Night Wolf grotto-heaven would also face a calamity by then.

From the start, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord had made up his mind to defect to the five regions. This was for his own sake, and also the future of the entire Night Wolf grotto-heaven.

Thus, he took a risk and went to approach Heavenly Court.

As the situation progressed, Qi Sea Ancestor went against Wu Shuai and Heavenly Court sent a secret group to attack the headquarters of the two



heavens' variant humans!

Since Night Heavenly Wolf Lord decided to defect, Heavenly Court's Qin Ding Ling sent him a secret letter, asking him to be their spy and cooperate with Heavenly Court in this battle.

“Heavenly Court did not disappoint me after all!”

“Even though they lost in the fate war, despite everything, they still uphold the righteousness of humanity. They think for the whole of the human race without caring about sacrifices or benefits.”

Such grandness resonated with Night Heavenly Wolf Lord.

Because he was a human Gu Immortal!

Compared to Heavenly Court's magnanimity, be they Qi Sea Ancestor or Wu Yong, they were simply too petty. Even Northern Plains' Longevity Heaven was the same.

What was the mindset that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left behind?

Hereditary monarchy!

Even if Night Heavenly Wolf Lord and Longevity Heaven had no grudges, he would not go to and attempt to join them.

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord did not hesitate, he immediately replied that he was willing to cooperate with Heavenly Court.

According to their agreement, the moment Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor collide, Heavenly Court would use the chance to attack! If these two do not fight, then a month later, Heavenly Court would still take action.

“It will depend on Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor now.” Night Heavenly Wolf Lord waited in anticipation.

Other than Night Heavenly Wolf Lord, countless forces and Gu Immortals were also paying attention to the situation in Eastern Sea.

Southern Border's Wu Yong was one of them.

“If Qi Sea Ancestor loses, the variant human forces will definitely expand their territory, they will develop rapidly like a growing snowball, they will become a huge threat to the five regions!”

“If Wu Shuai loses, the variant human forces will gather together in a defensive manner, this will be good news to the humans of the five regions. But that is not what I want to see.”

Wu Yong was an ambitious person.

He wanted the world to be chaotic, the more conflicts there were, the more opportunities he had to try to reap benefits from the situation, to strengthen himself until he reached the top of the world!

Thus, he felt deep hatred towards the qi tides.

Because of the qi tides, the five regions' Gu Immortals had to forcefully recuperate, he lost the chance to completely take down Heavenly Court.

It was a real pity.

“Lord, Empress Wu Ji and the others have revived. What do we do now?”  
At this time, Wu Ba Chong came to report the news.

He was the second supreme elder of Wu clan, he was an old and experienced man.

After fate Gu was destroyed, the most evident change was that revival methods became very easy to use. Earlier, Gu Immortal seeds like Empress Wu Ji had died on Yi Tian Mountain. But now, Wu clan's Gu Immortals revived them all.

Wu Yong nodded: “These people are the hope of our future, they have experienced ample setbacks and training as Gu Masters. When they become Gu Immortals, they will definitely be elites among their peers. Impart them the method of immortal ascension and make ample preparations, ensure

there are enough resources. I want Wu clan to gain more than ten Gu Immortals in the next few years!”

“Yes lord.” Wu Ba Chong did not question this decision.

In the future, during the five regions chaotic war, there would be a long lasting struggle, it would not be settled quickly. By then, all of the different forces would need to compete using their foundation and long term planning.

“There is another matter regarding qi path.” Wu Ba Chong said as he handed Wu Yong an information path mortal Gu.

Wu Yong looked into it and quickly browsed through the content.

This information path mortal Gu contained the information of all sorts of qi path immortal materials, they had all appeared as a result of the qi tides.

“It seems that qi path is about to flourish again. Does this qi harvest fruit really have such great effects?” Wu Yong sighed as he asked at the end.

Wu Ba Chong nodded: “Currently, many Gu Immortals have used it already, it is precisely so. This fruit is the essence of qi path and the fusion of the five regions’ qi, it is not normal. By placing it into one’s immortal aperture, it can turn into turbulent qi flows that can hasten the transformation of the heaven and earth qi. Whoever can get more qi harvest fruits will be able to get through this period of inactivity more quickly.”

“Then collect more of this immortal material. Also, sort out and make a list of the clan’s inventory, collate a qi path inheritance. We are going to use it and try to cultivate qi path Gu Immortals.” Wu Yong instructed.

“Yes.” Wu Ba Chong answered.

Wu clan was specialized in wind path, they did not have much foundation in qi path. But such a huge force would naturally have accumulation in qi path to some extent, if they could put together many incomplete

inheritances into a proper inheritance, they might be able to nurture one or two qi path Gu Immortals.

Of course, even if these Gu Masters became qi path Gu Immortals, they would not be promising in terms of future achievements.

But since Wu clan had to make up for their deficiency in this aspect, these Gu Masters could only sacrifice their future potential and become qi path Gu Immortals.

Southern Border, Luo clan.

Three Gu Immortals went deeply into Qi Jue grotto heaven.

“I broke through!” Luo Ran was excited.

His skin tone was white and he had a cold expression, he was a Luo clan general famous in Southern Border, having peak rank seven battle strength.

When the entire world was resting and recuperating, Luo Ran secretly brought two Gu Immortals from Luo clan and explored Qi Jue grotto heaven, he did not care about the changes in his own immortal aperture.

His hard work and efforts were not in vain, they finally broke through the difficulties and had a smooth journey ahead.

As they explored deeper, they arrived at the center of Qi Jue grotto heaven.

“To think that the qi tides would cause a change in Qi Jue grotto heaven, allowing us to progress more smoothly in here.” Luo Mu Zi felt deep emotions about this.

“Let’s hurry up, the qi tides are rampaging in the world now, Qi Jue grotto heaven will only stay concealed for a short period of time. We need to find Qi Jue’s true inheritance before anyone else finds us. With this true inheritance, our Luo clan will be able to adapt to this great era and obtain the initiative!” Luo Hao Ze’s eyes shined with bright light.

Several days later.

Eastern Sea.

Qi Sea Ancestor suddenly appeared, creating countless qi waves that moved towards the headquarters of Eastern Sea's Xia clan openly.

“Come!” Wu Shuai sensed it from far away, he smiled as Dragon Palace moved, he controlled Di Zang Sheng and fought bravely against the enemy.

A huge battle that concerned the whole world erupted all of a sudden.

# **Chapter 1988 - Wu Shuai Fights Qi Sea Ancestor**

## Chapter 1988 Wu Shuai Fights Qi Sea Ancestor

Rumble!

With a thunderous sound, intense tremors filled heaven and earth. Endless qi waves surged out, Dragon Palace shined with radiant lights as it retreated continuously.

Qi Sea Ancestor did not pursue it, many layers of qi waves stacked around his body, like an impenetrable fortress.

Both sides fought for an entire day and night, they exchanged blows but neither party could do anything to the other.

All around the battlefield, countless eyes were watching. Eastern Sea's righteous path, demonic path, and even lone immortals came here to watch the fight, naturally, there were also Gu Immortals of the two heavens.

“Senior Qi Sea Ancestor is truly powerful, his methods are grand and imposing, Wu Shuai's attacks all ended up useless.” Hua clan first supreme elder Hua Cai Yun sighed to herself.

Beside her, Qing Yue An said: “But Wu Shuai is not to be underestimated, he merely has rank seven cultivation level but is able to evenly match Qi Sea Ancestor.”

Hua Cai Yun sighed: “Wu Shuai was reborn, he is also an old monster. The Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace that he controls is really powerful, if not for it, he would not be Qi Sea Ancestor's match.”

While the two conversed, a loud dragon roar resounded.

A huge demonic dragon that seemed like a mountain range appeared on the battlefield, it could be seen from a gigantic distance away.

“Oh heavens, such a terrifying giant dragon, this must be the number one immemorial desolate beast in the world?”

“This is Di Zang Sheng! I am shocked just by simply watching it fight, I cannot muster any battle intent against it. I can’t imagine how the Gu Immortals fighting against it felt.”

“Wu Shuai finally let out the Evil Dragon, this proves that Qi Sea Ancestor has forced him to his limit. The following fight is the crucial part.”

All of the Gu Immortals watching this fight were shocked. Many of them had not participated in the fate war, they only watched it through the killer move everybody’s vision. They saw the battle but did not experience it personally.

Their personal experience now was naturally creating a different feeling.

The Evil Dragon roared as it charged towards Qi Sea Ancestor.

Qi Sea Ancestor snorted coldly, his voice reverberating over the surroundings. He clapped both hands as an immortal killer move was unleashed, qi currents surged like a tsunami.

Di Zang Sheng charged forward but as it crashed into the qi currents, its movement halted.

Di Zang Sheng twisted its body and wanted to progress but the qi currents were endless, the great power could not be defied, it was forcefully suppressed on the ground!

Seeing this, the observing Gu Immortals gasped.

Qing Yue An, Hua Cai Yun, and Shen Cong Sheng cheered as expressions of joy appeared on their faces.



As for Zhou Xiong Xin and Jun Shen Guang who were sent here by Heavenly Court, they became stunned, quickly looking at each other.

“Thinking about the fate war, the two transformation path great experts of our Heavenly Court could not stop the rampaging Evil Dragon, they were suppressed by it. To think that Qi Sea Ancestor is able to stop it!” Jun Shen Guang was stunned.

Zhou Xiong Xin squinted, he assessed Qi Sea Ancestor from afar. His information path methods had been used already, seeking to collect information from the entire battlefield as the fight progressed.

Zhou Xiong Xin analyzed: “Qi Sea Ancestor is an expert who fought evenly with Lord Duke Long, it is not strange that he can resist Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng. But his new killer move seems to have some elements of the primordial qi wall in it.”

“Lord Duke Long once gave half of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance to Qi Sea Ancestor. To think that he has already innovated upon it after the fate war had just ended to create a brand new qi wall killer move.”

Jun Shen Guang blinked: “Does this mean that during the fate war, Qi Sea Ancestor was in closed cultivation to comprehend this new killer move?”

Zhou Xiong Xin could not deny it: “We cannot be sure yet. But at least for now, Qi Sea Ancestor’s methods are very different from the qi path methods that Fang Yuan possesses.”

Saying this, Zhou Xiong Xin sighed: “Qi Sea Ancestor’s origin is too mysterious, he is too deeply concealed. We have not even found any past details about him. Beforehand, we could use the River of Time to trace his origin and find out his past identity. But after fate Gu’s destruction, the River of Time has become extremely dangerous, it is filled with vicious waves, even if a time path great expert enters, they will be in great danger, we cannot enter it anymore.”

Other than time path, there was still wisdom path.

But regrettably, Fang Yuan destroyed the majority of the immortal graveyard while Fairy Zi Wei defected to Spectral Soul, Heavenly Court faced an unprecedented lack of wisdom path experts.

Boom—!

An overwhelming amount of qi waves crashed down with heaven shaking might.

The Evil Dragon roared, it tried to move its mountain-like body, but Qi Sea Ancestor continued to suppress it from above.

Qi Sea Ancestor's moves gave an unrivaled atmosphere, his every action contained the power to overturn mountains and seas, the great Evil Dragon was not his match.

The human Gu Immortals cheered to themselves.

At this moment, Qi Sea Ancestor's reputation rose greatly in the five regions.

When the five regions' Gu Immortals could not fight, when humanity was at its weakest, Qi Sea Ancestor had emerged to resist and defeat the variant humans, this was really satisfying to all the human Gu Immortals.

“This is the action of a true man!” Even though Xi clan's first supreme elder did not come personally, he had sent a Xi clan Gu Immortal to witness this battle themselves.

Wu Yong was in Southern Border, upon seeing this, his heart sank as he pondered: “When we attack Eastern Sea in the future, this Qi Sea Ancestor will be a huge obstacle.”

Qin Ding Ling was guarding Heavenly Court with a complex emotion. In the past, Heavenly Court would be the one standing up during such situations, fighting on the front lines, but this time, Qi Sea Ancestor took Heavenly Court's place and shouldered the expectations of the human race.

Even though Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were still suspicious about Qi Sea Ancestor's identity and his connection to Fang Yuan, after this battle, their impression towards him had undoubtedly improved greatly.

While the human Gu Immortals were feeling happy, the two heavens alliance felt solemn, all the Gu Immortals were fearful.

"How can this be! Even after using Di Zang Sheng, we cannot turn the situation around?"

"The humans are really strong! This is the foundation of the five regions, we chose to invade them so abruptly, we were simply too hasty."

"Hmph, even if we do not take action, these humans will still go after us. For the last few million years, they have been treating us variant humans like so."

"Indeed, we can only have any hope of surviving by taking the initiative."

"We cannot interfere in a battle of such a level, sigh, we can only hope that Lord Wu Shuai can claim victory!"

The variant human Gu Immortals continued to converse, their expressions were grim as their gazes turned uncertain.

There were many rank eight Gu Immortals among them, they had high cultivation and generally were characters of ancestor level in their respective grotto-heavens. But after witnessing this terrifying battle, nobody dared to participate.

"Qi Sea Ancestor, you have been arrogant for too long!" Right at this moment, Dragon Palace rose up, Wu Shuai's voice came from within.

The immortals watched as Dragon Palace flew towards Qi Sea Ancestor like an orange-gold meteor.

Qi Sea Ancestor's qi currents surged and blocked it but the effect was mild.

Dragon Palace rode the waves and advanced further, charging with great momentum. A dream path killer move was used, a trace of smoke shot towards Qi Sea Ancestor.

“Be careful!” Seeing this, many human Gu Immortals shouted while feeling very anxious, despite knowing their voices could not reach the battlefield.

Right now, dream path was invincible in the world. Qi Sea Ancestor had to dodge the attack as he retreated.

This time, Wu Shuai gained the upper hand.

The variant humans quickly became overjoyed while the human Gu Immortals let out sighs of relief, Qi Sea Ancestor was not hit by the dream path killer move, that was an ideal outcome!

The battle between Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai concerned all of the Gu Immortals in the world. Each clash shook people’s souls, it would directly affect the future of the five regions.

As the two sides continued to fight, the immortals heard loud noises from the west.

The loud sound came imposingly, with an unstoppable aura like a torrential flood.

The Gu Immortals heard this and quickly shifted their gazes, they saw that qi tides were approaching the battlefield from far in the horizons.

“During this crucial battle, the qi tides actually came to wreak havoc!”

“Quickly retreat, if we get hit by the qi tides, our immortal apertures will tremor and result in lots of losses.”

“What about this battle?”

The Gu Immortals were stunned, this was an unexpected development.

Jun Shen Guang's expression sank: "Oh no! Qi Sea Ancestor is an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, he is restricted by the qi tides, the situation will be severe. But Wu Shuai is a new dragonman Gu Immortal, after the refinement path modification, he is less affected."

This information came from Duke Long.

During the fate war, Duke Long secretly used dragonman extermination but could not end Wu Shuai's life. Back then, he specially told them about this.

Humans alike dragons was the Gu refinement method created by Duke Long, it could turn humans into dragonmen. The first generation dragonmen were created by this method.

Heavenly Court had Duke Long's information and also the method humans alike dragons, they could easily deduce a portion of Wu Shuai's foundation. Thus, when they learned that Wu Shuai was leading the two heavens alliance to invade Eastern Sea, they were not surprised that he could fight.

Zhou Xiong Xin gritted his teeth: "Qi tides are a qi tide catastrophe, Qi Sea Ancestor is a qi path great expert, he definitely has an advantage in dealing with it compared to us! Now, let's see how he deals with this change, it will be the turning point of this battle."

"Qi Sea Ancestor, even heaven is not helping you. Let's see how long you can last in the qi tide!" Wu Shuai shouted excitedly, he moved Dragon Palace to assist the Evil Dragon as they attacked ferociously.

This sight made the human Gu Immortals grit their teeth as they retreated, many prayed in their hearts: "Senior Qi Sea Ancestor, you must persevere."

At the next moment, Qi Sea Ancestor laughed loudly: "Wu Shuai, you fell for it, I was waiting for you to fall for the bait."

As he said that, the qi waves turned around, like a blossoming flower returning to a bud, they encased Qi Sea Ancestor and Dragon Palace before condensing into a dot, vanishing.

In the battlefield, only Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng was left growling and roaring.

“What battlefield killer move is this?”

“At the crucial moment, Senior Qi Sea Ancestor actually trapped Wu Shuai in a battlefield killer move. This is too amazing!”

“So Qi Sea Ancestor had been plotting all along.”

“Wu Shuai is trapped in a qi path battlefield, isolated from the Evil Dragon, he is at a disadvantage now.”

“That might not be true, Qi Sea Ancestor’s qi path battlefield is going to face the rushing qi tides, if the battlefield is destroyed, Qi Sea Ancestor will suffer backlash, he might end up in a disadvantage too.”

“Now, it will depend on whether Qi Sea Ancestor is able to break into Dragon Palace first. If not, when his qi path battlefield is destroyed, Wu Shuai will gather with the Evil Dragon, Qi Sea Ancestor will be in huge danger.”

The Gu Immortals on both sides were very worried.

They could not personally watch such a crucial battle. Not only that, they had to retreat away from the qi tides, otherwise, their losses in the immortal aperture would be huge.

Right as everyone was thinking about the qi path battlefield and how intense the battle would be, Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor were relaxing and drinking wine in Dragon Palace.

Other than wine, there was also food.

Fang Yuan’s clone and his main body were in harmony, the atmosphere was relaxed.

Wu Shuai clone gave the incomplete Human Sea to Fang Yuan’s main body.

After receiving it, Fang Yuan's main body and Wu Shuai clone started to discuss their plans for the future.

# **Chapter 1989 - Demon Judgment Board Lord**

## **1989 Demon Judgment Board Lord**

“To think that the qi tide would come at such a crucial moment.” Prince Feng Xian wore a golden cape, he sighed in pity.

Beside him was a female immortal of Heavenly Court, she was Bai Cang Shui, she said with deep meaning: “Isn’t that a good thing?”

Besides them, Gu Yue Fang Zheng was also here.

These three Gu Immortals were currently inside rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board, they were not in Central Continent, they had entered immemorial black heaven.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s expression changed slightly, he knew the deeper meaning that Bai Cang Shui was pointing out.

He could not help but think back to the instructions and arrangements that Qin Ding Ling gave him before leaving Heavenly Court.

“You and Gu Yue Fang Yuan were born together and counter each other, you are the arrangement of the Heavenly Dao. Even if Fang Yuan changes his body, this relationship will not change. Precisely so, you will lead the expedition this time, bring Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui to launch a sneak attack on the headquarters of the variant human grotto-heavens in the two heavens!”



Qin Ding Ling cultivated luck path, she placed great importance on Gu Yue Fang Zheng, knowing that the lucks of Gu Yue Fang Zheng and Fang Yuan were tightly connected, she could sense that they countered each other.

And facts proved this.

Qin Ding Ling's awakening, the discovery of the dragonman blessed land, they were all variables that suppressed Fang Yuan.

Right now, Heavenly Court lost in the fate war, Duke Long died, Feng Jiu Ge betrayed them, the immortal graveyard was destroyed, while Star Constellation's will had no response. The great Heavenly Court was at its weakest moment for the last million years.

Qin Ding Ling temporarily led Heavenly Court, she naturally had to make use of all the available strength to defend themselves and resist enemies.

Thus, the stronger Fang Yuan was, the more focus Qin Ding Ling placed on Fang Zheng.

In order to nurture Fang Zheng, Qin Ding Ling spared no expense on immortal materials, she even let him lead this expedition to train his leadership skill.

Fang Zheng was not a youngster anymore, he knew that this was an unprecedented opportunity that was rarely seen in thousands of years. Even though Heavenly Court lost, their foundation was still unfathomable, with such a huge organization supporting him, he had to grasp it.

Fang Zheng still had rank seven cultivation level now, he had not reached the condition to join Heavenly Court, thus, his rank seven blessed land was not handed over to them. The truth was, Qin Ding Ling needed him to grow stronger, thus, even when he becomes a rank eight Gu Immortal in the future, as long as he still had room for improvement, Qin Ding Ling would not make him give up his immortal aperture. After all, the Gu Immortal's growth would almost completely halt after getting a phantom aperture.

“Senior Bai is right! Currently, with Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai stuck in battle, it is our best opportunity to launch an attack. Let’s go now.”

Gu Yue Fang Zheng spoke as he acted swiftly.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board was immediately activated, it turned into a blood colored meteor that pierced through the grotto-heaven wall with a loud sound, entering Great Wisdom grotto-heaven directly!

The three immortals in Demon Judgment Board looked at Great Wisdom grotto-heaven, it had a beautiful scenery of lush mountains and flowing rivers. Inkmen lived here harmoniously, they had peaceful lives, there were many people here, it was a flourishing habitat.

A thick blood red light spread out rapidly from Demon Judgment Board, spreading throughout the world.

The essence of an Immortal Gu House was immortal killer moves, it was constructed using Immortal Gu and mortal Gu. According to the different Gu worms used, with different structures, Immortal Gu Houses had their own specialties.

Demon Judgment Board had great might, it showed a solid performance during the fate war. It was able to fight directly and managed to survive the war, this showed that Demon Judgment Board was one of the top rank eight Immortal Gu Houses in the world.

At this moment, Demon Judgment Board was unleashing an information path ability that had not been used in the fate war.

Wherever the blood red light went, all sorts of information gathered into Demon Judgment Board like a waterfall, before entering the minds of the three immortals.

Prince Feng Xian frowned, showing a look of hatred and disgust: “The inkmen here actually captured humans secretly and exploited them as

slaves, they truly deserve death. These variant humans should all die! Let's kill these ones here and soul search them first."

But Bai Cang Shui shook her head: "These are just mortals, even if we soul search them, they would not know many secrets of the higher-ups. We should give them a taste of their own medicine, let's enslave them all and sell them as slaves in treasure yellow heaven, not only can we replenish Heavenly Court's reserves with this, it can also display the authority of our Heavenly Court."

Fang Zheng frowned on the inside.

He had once lived for many years in Lang Ya blessed land with the hairy men due to Fang Yuan, he experienced the culture of the variant humans.

Even though these inkmen treated humans as slaves, he was still unwilling to kill the innocent.

But Fang Zheng did not rebuke the two immortals, instead he said: "These mortal inkmen are not important, the key now is to rapidly kill the inkman Gu Immortals here. Let's take a look at this list of the Demon Judgment Board!"

A new list on the Demon Judgment Board appeared, the names of the inkman Gu Immortals inside Great Wisdom grotto-heaven were clearly written on it.

"Let's go!" Fang Zheng shouted resolutely, activating Demon Judgment Board, they followed the connection to rapidly find the closest inkman Gu Immortal.

This inkman Gu Immortal had already sensed something amiss, he secretly went to gather with the other inkman Gu Immortals.

Seeing the approaching Demon Judgment Board, he flew desperately, but how could his speed match a rank eight Immortal Gu House?

"Ahhh!"

With a pitiful cry, this inkman Gu Immortal was directly killed by the charging Immortal Gu House. Blood red light captured his soul, it was brought to the three immortals.

The three immortals quickly used soul search to gain lots of precious information.

Within this Great Wisdom grotto-heaven, there were many inkmen and cities. The biggest city was at the center of the grotto-heaven, it had the largest number of inkman Gu Immortals gathered there.

Of course, at this moment, there were still a few inkman Gu Immortals scattered outside.

“Demon Judgment Board Lord, what do we do now?” Bai Cang Shui asked Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng did not hesitate: “We will immediately attack that immortal city!”

Demon Judgment Board tore through the sky with outstanding speed, reaching the immortal city in a moment’s time.

During this period, the inkman Gu Immortals of the grotto-heaven had already gathered.

“Heavenly Court! We have no grudges with each other but you launched a sneak attack on us, can you still consider yourself righteous?” Within the immortal city, an inkman Gu Immortal shouted.

Prince Feng Xian laughed heartily: “Heavenly Court upholds the justice of humanity, your entire inkman group is full of evil demons, you deserve to be purged by everyone.”

“What’s the point of arguing with them?” Fang Zheng acted more directly than Prince Feng Xian, he sent Demon Judgment Board to crash down on them.

The inkman Gu Immortals gritted their teeth and shouted: "Then you will have a taste of our Great Wisdom grotto-heaven's main formation!"

At once, fog appeared and dyed the sky pitch-black.

Demon Judgment Board entered the fog and could not find its directions, it was completely trapped.

Not only that, the dense black fog was seeking to infiltrate the Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board.

Fang Zheng did not fluster, he first tried to use killer moves to probe it.

Lumps and lumps of blood flames spread out, wherever they went, black fog dispersed, but soon, the black fog seemed to have adapted, it devoured the blood flames aggressively.

Fang Zheng tried to attack several times but he failed each time.

Demon Judgment Board flew around the place but could not find any opening, it could not fly out of the black fog.

After thinking for a while, Fang Zheng used the strongest method in Demon Judgment Board, causing wanton destruction everywhere.

After a few minutes, a large amount of immortal essence was expended, Fang Zheng saw the black fog dispersing as they saw daylight again.

But the immortal city was already blown to bits, the surrounding thousand li were in ruins, countless lifeforms died from Demon Judgment Board's attacks.

The defending inkman Gu Immortals were mostly dead, only one was still alive, holding his final breath.

He looked at Demon Judgment Board with a gaze of deep hatred, he gritted his teeth: "How laughable, the great Heavenly Court is actually using blood path methods! You slaughtered these innocent people with no sense of guilt in your heart, you are truly the most vile demons of the demonic path!"

Prince Feng Xian snorted coldly, replying in disdain: “Blood path is only a method, when used on you, it shows humanity’s righteousness.”

“The owner of our Great Wisdom grotto-heaven will not let you off!” The inkman Gu Immortal said before dying.

“It’s over?” The person who caused this situation and claimed victory, Fang Zheng, stared with wide eyes in disbelief.

Bai Cang Shui knew how he felt, she smiled: “Board Lord, you think this is the fate war, where intense fighting would happen that persists for months?”

Fang Zheng heard this and had a realization, he sighed: “So that’s it.”

The fate war was at the peak of the world in terms of battle strength. After Fang Zheng participated in it personally, his impression of fights between Gu Immortals was elevated to a great degree.

Right now, he was fighting against rank six and seven inkman Gu Immortals using the rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board, he realized it was so easy! It was too simple!

“Then, what do we do now, Board Lord?” Prince Feng Xian asked.

Fang Zheng pondered before answering: “Right now, the owners of these variant human grotto-heavens are with Wu Shuai in Eastern Sea. Since we already won this fight here, we still have time to attack the other grotto-heavens. This assault is a great chance, we need to make good use of it. Senior Bai Cang Shui, stay here, guard the place and collect our loot.”

For the sake of the ordinary inkmen, Fang Zheng did not let the more racist and violent Prince Feng Xian stay here, he chose Bai Cang Shui.

Bai Cang Shui and Prince Feng Xian looked at each other, seeing satisfaction in each other’s eyes.

Fang Zheng’s performance as the leader of this trip was quite commendable. Be it his decisions or mindset, he was dependable and had the aura of a great general.

“Then I will stay here. Please be careful yourselves.” Bai Cang Shui expressed.

Fang Zheng nodded with a solemn expression: “Senior, don’t worry, I will not underestimate the enemies. I have not forgotten the most important point, that is the actions of Wu Shuai’s force.”

Bai Cang Shui felt relieved upon hearing these words, they took their leave.

Eastern Sea.

The qi tide had just subsided, the Dragon Palace with a damaged appearance crashed into Xia clan’s headquarters.

“Oh, Lord Wu Shuai is back!”

“What was the result of the battle?”

“Lord Alliance Leader, you got injured?!”

The variant human Gu Immortals entered Dragon Palace, they saw Wu Shuai, who had a pale expression and was covered in bloodstains.

“Qi Sea Ancestor is formidable! I need to recuperate in closed cultivation.” Wu Shuai coughed out mouthfuls of blood.

The variant human Gu Immortals were pale, overwhelmed by fear and panic.

Wu Shuai snorted coldly: “Don’t worry, I used up a major portion of Human Sea and unleashed human path methods, that Qi Sea Ancestor is also severely injured.”

The variant human Gu Immortals let out sighs of relief, it turned out the battle had ended in a draw.

Right at this time, Great Wisdom Immortal Mother’s expression changed as she cried out in alarm: “Oh no! My Great Wisdom grotto-heaven was attacked, it is in imminent peril!”

# **Chapter 1990 - Wu Shuai“s Healing**

## **1990 Wu Shuai“s Healing**

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother’s words shocked all of the present variant human Gu Immortals.

Soon, they reacted to the news.

“We need to save them, these are our headquarters.”

“Great Wisdom, do you know who invaded your grotto-heaven?”

“Heavenly Court!” Great Wisdom Immortal Mother had a dark expression, gritting her teeth in hatred: “The invading Gu Immortals used Demon Judgment Board, it is a Heavenly Court rank eight Immortal Gu House, this cannot be faked.”

“Hmph, so it is Heavenly Court!”

“Heavenly Court is simply too shameless, they actually attacked without a proper declaration of war.”

“Heavenly Court is an organization made by demons to begin with. The past Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was the biggest demon in the world, far beyond Fang Yuan in fact. These are the records that our races have clearly left behind.”



While the immortals berated Heavenly Court, there was a sudden sound as Great Wisdom Immortal Mother directly knelt on the ground, kowtowing to Wu Shuai as she called: “Lord Alliance Leader, please help us uphold justice.”

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother knew in her heart that she had no ability to save it. Just that rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board alone was an obstacle. That was not including the hidden Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortals in Demon Judgment Board.

Wu Shuai acknowledged her words: “Great Wisdom, no need to worry, stand up first!”

He seemed to have a livid expression but he did not find this strange at all. Heavenly Court’s actions were within his expectations, during the five hundred years of his previous life, Heavenly Court had similarly done such an invasion.

Wu Shuai said resolutely and solemnly: “Great Wisdom is one of us, now that Great Wisdom grotto-heaven is attacked by Heavenly Court, we need to save it. Not only that, we need to take revenge for the damage that Heavenly Court has caused to Great Wisdom grotto-heaven, we will not let this go!”

“Thank you Lord Alliance Leader!” Great Wisdom Immortal Mother felt relieved, she stood up shakily, she already had the appearance of an old woman, at this moment, she looked even more pitiful as she asked: “When will we set off?”

Wu Shuai pondered: “This is a huge matter, we need to make plans first, we cannot panic and lose our rationality. We need to save Great Wisdom grotto-heaven, but we also need to defend our Eastern Sea Xia clan territory. Even though I fought evenly against Qi Sea Ancestor this time, Eastern Sea’s righteous path will not let this go, they will retaliate. We worked hard to gain this territory, we must defend the fruits of our labor. Thankfully, we did not use any mermen earlier, in the following battle, the Merman Imperial Court can support us secretly as spies.”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stood up from the crowd at this moment: “Reporting to Lord Alliance Leader, I am willing to defend Xia clan’s headquarters. If the Eastern Sea righteous path attacks, I will do my best to defend this place, they will not pass until I die!”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s words were very heroic and grand, but in his heart, he was trying to avoid conflicting with Heavenly Court. There were many variant human Gu Immortals with similar thoughts, they all sighed now, they had been too slow, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch made a move before them.

Among them, some of the variant human Gu Immortals who were close to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch felt happy internally, if Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch defended the base, they would definitely be chosen to stay with him, after all, he could not defend the location alone.

“Very good.” Wu Shuai nodded, he looked at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch with admiration: “Ice Crystal, you are very strong and have a vigilant nature, you are a powerful general in our alliance, I will be assured if you are defending it. After I recover from my injuries, you will defend Xia clan’s territory for me.”

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother heard this and became anxious, you all are talking so much but why is nobody talking about the departure timing?

She started to urge again: “Lord Alliance Leader, fellow allies, there is no time, Great Wisdom grotto-heaven’s crisis is at hand, we need to save it immediately!”

Wu Shuai sighed: “After this battle against Qi Sea Ancestor, not only are my injuries severe, the healing is very troublesome. I need a lot of immortal materials to heal my physical body. The reason is because my dragonman body is different from Duke Long, I modified it and innovated upon the original version. When refining this body, I used a lot of rare immortal materials and paid a huge price. My healing will also require the same cost, regrettably, I lack a lot of immortal materials now, I need to make purchases in treasure yellow heaven.”

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother had also heard rumors regarding the humans alike dragons method, she did not suspect his words as she asked: “May I ask Lord Alliance Leader how many immortal materials you require to heal your injuries? We can provide it.”

Wu Shuai listed out the materials for her.

After hearing his words, all the variant human Gu Immortals took in sharp breaths.

The price was too huge!

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother was tongue tied as she gasped: “To think that Lord Alliance Leader’s body is so valuable and expensive!”

Wu Shuai smiled but did not speak, he only glanced towards Gu tribe’s leader.

Gu tribe’s leader immediately said: “I can testify for this, many of my people have turned into dragonmen, we expended far more immortal materials than this!”

This was a lie, but Gu tribe’s leader and Wu Shuai were very close, because he was an Eastern Sea rank eight, his words carried huge trustworthiness.

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother had naturally suspected that Wu Shuai was extorting them, but she did not dare to question him, the situation was not within her control.

After hesitating for a while, Great Wisdom Immortal Mother gritted her teeth as she said with difficulty: “Lord Alliance Leader, I am willing to fund and contribute the immortal materials to help you recover quickly.”

The variant human Gu Immortals quickly took action, gathering the immortal materials.

Wu Shuai accepted the immortal materials but shook his head: “Even with all the immortal materials I need at least three days and two nights to heal.”

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother heard his words and almost fainted on the spot.

She was extremely anxious, she was about to speak but Wu Shuai waved his hand, she could not say anything.

Because at the next moment, Wu Shuai added: “As the alliance leader, no matter which of your headquarters get attacked, I will definitely save them. Heavenly Court is our common enemy! But the situation is indeed tough now, how about this... Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, as the vice alliance leader, lead a group of people to save them in black heaven first. Try your best to preserve the foundation of Great Wisdom grotto-heaven.”

“What?” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stared with wide eyes, showing a difficult expression. to think that this matter still ended up being delegated to him, he quickly thought about it but found that he could not refuse, he gritted his teeth: “I... will go. But I am too weak and powerless, I do not want to ruin the expedition, I would like to borrow Lord Alliance Leader’s Dragon Palace. With it, I can definitely complete my mission!”

But Wu Shuai shook his head: “I cannot lend Dragon Palace, I need it to heal my injuries.”

“Is that so...” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch wanted to speak.

But Wu Shuai’s expression changed as he said grimly: “Everyone, the situation is urgent now, we cannot talk about it further. Great Wisdom grotto-heaven is only the first target, will your grotto-heavens remain untouched? You need to save yourselves! Were I not the alliance leader, when faced with this situation, would you surrender to them? Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, I order you to go save them immediately, you can choose five people here to go with you.”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch felt a strong pressure pressing down on him. He could only lower his head and accept the order.

He chose five Gu Immortals from among the people here, they were all rank eight Gu Immortals.

These were all leaders of forces close to him, there was no choice, resisting Heavenly Court to save Great Wisdom grotto-heaven was too dangerous, he did not want to get into trouble from internal strife.

However, right when they were about to move out, Great Wisdom Immortal Mother suddenly froze as she said dejectedly: “It’s too late, my Great Wisdom grotto-heaven has been completely taken down by Heavenly Court!”

The Gu Immortals gasped in unison.

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother fell to the ground as she knelt before Wu Shuai, sobbing: “Please take revenge for me, Lord Alliance Leader. My tribe has been doing its best to collect the fragments of the Qian Kun Crystal Wall, we have more than fifty percent now! If we can find another ten percent, we will be able to excavate the racial inheritance of our inkman race!”

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother directly exposed the racial inheritance of her tribe, the intention was obvious, she was trying to use benefits to lure Wu Shuai!

After hearing about the racial inheritance, the other Gu Immortals’ eyes started to shine.

At this moment, another Gu Immortal shouted in panic: “Oh no, my grotto-heaven is being attacked by Heavenly Court. Quick, quick! Go and save it!”

Wu Shuai looked at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch imposingly: “This is an urgent matter, aren’t you setting off?”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch gritted his teeth, he brought a number of Gu Immortals to return to immemorial black heaven.

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother and another pitiful Gu Immortal went back to reinforce the invaded grotto-heaven, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest also went there, within Dragon Palace, less than half the Gu Immortals were left.

The remaining Gu Immortals had ugly expressions, most of them were shell shocked, after all, they could be the next target at any time.

Wu Shuai ignored them, he ordered them to defend Xia clan's base as he shut the door of Dragon Palace, attending to his 'injuries'.

"These variant human Gu Immortals are truly not our match, hehe." Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was among the Gu Immortals, he was the only person here who had peace of mind.

"All these grotto-heaven Gu Immortals don't have any interaction during normal times, they even guard against each other and think that they should keep more secrets to themselves! With such precaution against each other, how can they make any change? Even if they work together, they are still a disunited bunch! My decision to join Heavenly Court was right after all."

After this matter, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was even more sure of his intention to work for Heavenly Court.

After parting with the immortals, he secretly informed Heavenly Court of this expedition.

Wu Shuai had created the two heavens alliance agreement, there were restrictions upon it naturally. But the information path dao marks on Night Heavenly Wolf Lord had already been removed by Zhou Xiong Xin and the others, thus, even though he was a traitor, no backlash had occurred.

In Heavenly Court's Central Great Hall, Qin Ding Ling soon received news of this.

She thought about it but did not inform Eastern Sea's righteous path, instead she told Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng was already about to take down the second grotto-heaven, the remaining Gu Immortals in the grotto-heaven were still well hidden, Fang Zheng was anxious to find them.

After thinking about it, he decided to ask Prince Feng Xian to stay here and clean up the situation. He would bring Demon Judgment Board to the third grotto-heaven and assault it!

At the same time.

Eastern Sea, qi sea.

Qi Sea Ancestor had a pale expression, he sat at the main seat as he looked at Xia Rui Zhi and the rest.

The representatives of Eastern Sea's righteous path forces were all here.

Qi Sea Ancestor looked at Xia Rui Zhi as he asked: "In this battle, I had the upper hand at first, but that Wu Shuai actually managed to use a human path method. This method was very powerful, it could create countless flying human figures. According to Wu Shuai, this is the foundation of your Xia clan, is it an artificial secluded domain of heaven and earth?"

# **Chapter 1991 - Ancestor is Righteous and Mighty**

## **1991 Ancestor is Righteous and Mighty**

After Xia clan first supreme elder Xia Rui Zhi heard Qi Sea Ancestor's question, he became shocked.

After a while, he answered vigilantly: "Reporting to ancestor, my Xia clan was indeed creating an artificial human path secluded domain, it is called Human Sea. But this secluded domain does not have any offensive power. The reason why we created it was to deal with the future chaos and have a method to revive our Xia clan Gu Immortals."

Xia Rui Zhi spoke vaguely but he did not lie. The reason why Xia clan was creating Human Sea was to revive their Gu Immortals.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan remembered that when Xia clan's Gu Immortals died outside, they were not truly dead, they could revive from Human Sea. Although their Immortal Gu and immortal aperture's accumulations would be lost, they would still retain their cultivation level and immortal aperture itself.

Eastern Sea's Xia clan gained a huge reputation because of this, for the following period of time, they invaded Southern Border. Southern Border's Gu Immortals fought against Xia clan, over time, they learned about Xia



clan's background and foundation, eventually, Chai clan mimicked Human Sea and created their own Human Mountain secluded domain.

Qi Sea Ancestor stroked his beard: "It seems that the reason why Wu Shuai led the two heavens' Gu Immortals to invade your Xia clan was because of this Human Sea secluded domain."

All of the present Xia clan Gu Immortals looked at each other.

Xia Rui Zhi frowned as he muttered: "Was my Xia clan invaded because information got leaked and the allure of the Human Sea secluded domain caused enemies to attack? But this Human Sea secluded domain has not been completed yet."

Qi Sea Ancestor had a grim expression: "If Wu Shuai did not have a complete Human Sea secluded domain, does that mean that after he completes it, he will have an actual Human Sea and his human path killer move will be even stronger?"

Xia Rui Zhi smiled: "Ancestor, don't worry, the creation of Human Sea originated from an ancestor of my clan, it was refined by generations of descendants. Wu Shuai does not know of its profundity, if he tries to complete it, Human Sea will only dwindle and shrink."

Qi Sea Ancestor shook his head: "Wu Shuai is an old monster of the past, he made use of Fang Yuan's power to revive successfully, this person is too scheming and crafty, he takes action with certainty. Each time he strikes, he is resolute and will always make great gains. Since he knew about your Xia clan's Human Sea secluded domain, he might also know a way to complete it."

Xia Rui Zhi's smile became more forced: "This possibility... is not likely. Only the top three supreme elders of my clan know about the creation method of Human Sea. Right now, they are all here, don't tell me we have a traitor among us?"

Qi Sea Ancestor sighed: "It might not be a traitor. Don't forget that Wu Shuai controls Dragon Palace which has dream path killer moves, he might

have targeted you in your dreams.”

“This...” Xia Rui Zhi’s smiling expression froze entirely.

If it were any other path, Xia Rui Zhi would still feel some confidence. But against dream path methods, he could not be certain.

“Lord Xia Rui Zhi, friends from Xia clan.” At this time, a Tang clan Gu Immortal spoke: “Should you still be hiding it? You should tell us the creation method of Human Sea, let us refer to it and find out a weakness of Wu Shuai’s human path method.”

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals were stunned.

The creation method of Human Sea was the deepest foundation of Eastern Sea’s Xia clan, how could they expose it like this?

Tang clan’s Gu Immortal was merely after Human Sea himself.

Tang clan’s member chuckled: “Pardon my words, but friends from Xia clan, what are you still waiting for? Your territory has been lost, you want to create a brand new Human Sea secluded domain from scratch? Do you know what the most important thing is now? When ancestor and Wu Shuai fought, it ended in a draw because of that human path killer move. As long as we can deduce this human path killer move, would we have to fear Wu Shuai and his army? By then, wouldn’t you get back your homeland?”

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals gritted their teeth in anger.

Tang clan was an Eastern Sea super force, they bordered Xia clan and had much conflict in usual times. Thus, they decided to make things difficult for Xia clan at this moment.

However, even though they were causing problems intentionally, their words made sense.

This was something even Xia clan’s Gu Immortals had to admit.

Xia Rui Zhi thought about it before making up his mind: “The method to create Human Sea is our Xia clan’s secret, we will not announce it publicly. I am only willing to contribute this human path essence to ancestor alone!”

Qi Sea Ancestor got injured from fighting Wu Shuai, Xia clan’s hopes were all on Qi Sea Ancestor now. Because the two heavens were led by Wu Shuai, Eastern Sea only had Qi Sea Ancestor able to resist the Evil Dragon and Dragon Palace collectively.

Xia Rui Zhi was trying to gain Qi Sea Ancestor’s favor now, he was making plans for his own clan.

But Qi Sea Ancestor shook his head: “I am only asking this to confirm the situation. Your Xia clan can keep this Human Sea creation method. I have no foundation in human path, even if I get it, I cannot deduce Wu Shuai’s methods.”

Xia Rui Zhi became anxious and wanted to speak but Qi Sea Ancestor waved his hand to interrupt: “Xia clan does not have to worry. Wu Shuai is a dragonman, the two heavens alliance is also made up of mostly variant humans, they are public enemies of the five regions! If they invaded the other four regions, so be it, but they chose Eastern Sea after all, so as a human, I will resist these variant humans with all my effort.”

“Ancestor is righteous and mighty!” The Gu Immortals present called out in unison.

Qi Sea Ancestor added: “But now, I have injuries from the battle, I need to recuperate in closed cultivation. As for Wu Shuai, his injuries are more severe, he will not take action during this period of time, there is no need to worry.”

Qi Sea Ancestor paused before continuing: “When I recover, I will need you all to cooperate and gather an army to fight against the two heavens alliance.”

“We will listen to ancestor.”

“With ancestor leading us, Eastern Sea has nothing to worry!”

“Without ancestor, Eastern Sea would have suffered great losses already. It is truly Eastern Sea’s blessing to have ancestor defending it, this is the blessing of the people.”

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals continued to flatter him without stopping.

But Xia Rui Zhi had a worried expression, he and Xia clan’s members were currently homeless. During this period, they could not reclaim Xia clan’s territory, where were they going to go now?

Qi Sea Ancestor smiled lightly: “Before we attack, friends from Xia clan, you may stay in qi sea as guests.”

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals instantly became overjoyed.

Xia Rui Zhi cupped his fists and thanked: “Xia clan will remember ancestor’s warm hospitality, we will definitely repay you in the future.”

The other clans’ Gu Immortals looked at Xia clan’s Gu Immortals with different expressions now. Other than disdain and sympathy, they also felt envious and jealous.

Was this Xia clan’s fortune after a disaster? They were able to stay closely with Qi Sea Ancestor, as time passes, their relationship would deepen, they would be able to gain the backing of a great expert!

If they knew the truth, who knew what expression they would show.

After finishing their discussion, Qi Sea Ancestor went to recuperate in closed cultivation, the other Eastern Sea Gu Immortals also went back to their bases to make preparations for the upcoming battle.

Mermaid Lian Ke Xin was feeling nervous at the moment. The Merman Imperial Court had already joined the two heavens alliance, but Wu Shuai did not expose their identity, they were currently spies sent to gather information.

Feeling the cold breeze in the sky, Lian Ke Xin calmed down slowly as sorrow emerged in her heart: “Now it seems that Eastern Sea will be peaceful for this period of time without any fighting. But this is the calm before the storm, sigh, during the battle in the future, I wonder what action my Merman Imperial Court should take?”

Lian Ke Xin was one of the three immortals in charge of the Merman Imperial Court, she had high status and authority, but now she felt helpless and fearful.

The five regional walls vanished, everyone knew that the five regions were going to become chaotic and turbulent.

But the chaos had just started, Lian Ke Xin already felt like she was in treacherous waters, her future was bleak and dark, she could not see the light or hope of survival. If she was careless, then the entire Merman Imperial Court would even get completely devoured!

After hearing the report, Shen Cong Sheng learned of Qi Sea Ancestor’s decision.

“It seems that Eastern Sea is currently led by Qi Sea Ancestor after all.” Shen Cong Sheng sighed: “If Ancestor Shen Shang returned, it would be different. Letting a secluded cultivator lead the entire righteous path...”

Shen Cong Sheng shook his head.

He had ambition, he wanted Shen clan to be the overlord of Eastern Sea, as the number one force.

Different from the other righteous path clans, Shen clan had Shen Shang, he was someone who could compete with Qi Sea Ancestor.

But Shen Shang’s whereabouts were unknown.

Shen clan had searched for him with full effort but they made no discoveries.

Shen Cong Sheng felt a huge headache regarding this: “Oh ancestor, where in the world are you?”

At the same time.

Divine Emperor City, painting path world.

Hong Yi and Ye Fan walked side by side on the bustling street.

At the corner of an alley, a group of muscular men surrounded a person as they kicked and punched.

“Stop!” Hong Yi could not watch anymore, he quickly stopped them.

After seeing the situation, Ye Fan was also furious: “Are you guys really hitting him? So many of you are bullying one beggar?”

The group of muscular men turned around: “Stupid kids, don’t meddle in others’ affairs! This lunatic is courting death, he scared my young master’s precious horse to death, my clan’s young master also fell to the ground. We will not rest until we beat him to death.”

Hong Yi sighed: “You went overboard.”

Boom boom boom.

Hong Yi and Ye Fan made their move, the group of muscular men were sent scrambling and escaping.

The beggar was curled up on the ground, he was covered in bruises, his body shivered as he muttered nonsensical phrases.

“He really is insane.” Hong Yi sighed.

“Sigh, even if he is crazy, he is still human. He did not mean to scare the horse, right?” Ye Fan also felt some pity: “Come, let’s help him, we can’t leave him here like this.”

The two brought the beggar into a secluded alley as they got him a few buns, placing it beside him.

After that, they left.

What they did not know was, after they left, the beggar regained his sanity.

“Where am I?”

“Damn it, the black fire wreaked havoc, I went mad again!”

This beggar was the person that Shen clan had been desperately trying to find, Shen Shang.

# **Chapter 1992 - Foundational Pillar of Human Path**

## **1992 Foundational Pillar of Human Path**

People on the streets moved continuously, shops on both sides had bright signs and attractive banners.

“Wow! This is the world inside the painting. It is incredible! Everything seems so real!” Sun Yao’s body shook as her vision widened, after entering the painting, she could not help but shout in amazement.

The surrounding people looked towards this young lady with perplexed gazes.

But Sun Yao did not notice it, her eyes were wide open and shining as she looked around, filled with curiosity and excitement.

Sun Yao was a Spirit Affinity House Gu Master, she was chosen as a Gu Immortal seed by the sect and was given much assistance.

Spirit Affinity House’s original nominee was Feng Jin Huang, but because of Feng Jiu Ge’s betrayal, Qin Ding Ling hesitated.

Spirit Affinity House thus changed their nominee, Sun Yao took over Feng Jin Huang’s position.



However, the sect's nurturing was different from what she expected. Spirit Affinity House only told Sun Yao about the background of this painting before sending her in.

Sun Yao moved around the different shops on the streets, having a lot of fun.

She had grown up in Spirit Affinity House, she only had senior brothers or sisters around her, they were all cultivators and according to the rules of the sect, they did not interact with the outside world very much.

Everything that happened here was very exciting and interesting to her.

She spent primeval stones to buy many sticks of candy, she ate them as she looked around.

She saw paper-cutting artists in the alleys, where pieces of red paper were quickly transformed with scissors into life-like butterflies and flowers.

She went into the theater to enjoy the opera, she saw the people with their painted faces, their exaggerated dresses, and their long, high-pitched singing.

She stopped at a corner of the street and saw two strong men putting up a performance of smashing rocks on their chest.

Suddenly, she was tapped on the shoulder.

Sun Yao turned around and saw a young man, with a squarish face and an honest appearance.

Before Sun Yao could open her mouth, this young man with an honest and righteous air smiled sheepishly and said: "Are you from the ten great ancient sects?"

Sun Yao suddenly stared with wide eyes and exclaimed in surprise: "Senior brother, you too?"

The young man then nodded his head and introduced himself with cupped fists: “I am Chen Da Jiang of Wind Cloud Manor.”

“So it’s Senior Brother Chen!” Sun Yao was shocked, she returned the greeting in succession. Chen Da Jiang was the current generation number one disciple of Wind Cloud Manor, Sun Yao had already learned of his name before this.

Sun Yao had the feeling of seeing a celebrity. When Chen Da Jiang had first gained fame, she was nothing more than a follower of Feng Jin Huang.

Like Sun Yao, Chen Da Jiang was a recommended candidate from Wind Cloud Manor and was sent to the world of the painting.

The two of them met in a strange place, and even though it was only the first time they met, there was a natural closeness between them.

“Senior Brother Chen, I wonder what other arrangements the sect has made by sending us here for training.” Sun Yao inquired.

Chen Da Jiang shook his head: “I don’t know anything about that either. I originally thought that by entering here, I would be able to get guidance on the next step of my cultivation. I didn’t expect that the sect would not have any arrangements.”

The two of them had a fruitless conversation and decided to travel in companionship.

“Give me some food, please, our mother hasn’t eaten for three days.”

“Please give some money, please help us.”

“My father is gone, I am selling myself to raise money for his funeral, I beg for your help!”

The two wandered aimlessly into a street, but all they saw were starving people, there were many yellow-skinned people leaning on the corner wall. Many people were begging, cupping their hands or holding up broken bowls.

Pedestrians on the street, on the other hand, were in a hurry and avoided them, rarely stopping to give alms to anyone.

“How is this happening? They are just two streets apart.” Sun Yao was greatly surprised when she saw this scene.

Chen Da Jiang analyzed: “This is the painting world of Divine Emperor City. Every major scene that happened in the history of Emperor City is merged into one painting. It looks like this is what happened in Emperor City during one of the famine disasters of history.”

Sun Yao couldn't help but overflow with sympathy: “Senior Brother Chen, even though they are only people in the painting and not real existences, they are so pitiful, I still want to help them.”

Chen Da Jiang was impressed by Sun Yao's words, he smiled readily: “This might sound funny, but I also have the same idea. Why don't the two of us act together?”

“Awesome!” Sun Yao jumped at the chance and agreed to do so.

The two of them contributed money and effort, not only giving out primeval stones, but also purchasing porridge, buns, and other food to deliver to these beggars.

“Kind people!”

“Thank you, benefactors, we will never forget your act of kindness.”

“Benefactors, please allow me to follow you two in return for your kindness!”

The people in distress were grateful and appreciative.

Just then, a shrill voice cut in: “What are you guys doing?”

When Sun Yao and Chen Da Jiang turned their heads, they saw a Gu Master wearing a white robe with a jade belt at his waist, his posture was as

straight as a sword, an air of arrogance could be felt between his brows as he walked towards them.

“So it’s Brother Xiao Qi Xing of Spirit Butterfly Valley!” Chen Da Jiang greeted with cupped fists.

Sun Yao gasped, Xiao Qi Xing was also a well-known figure, she said in a panic: “Spirit Affinity House’s Sun Yao greets Brother Xiao.”

Xiao Qi Xing sized up Sun Yao: “Are you the candidate of Spirit Affinity House this time? It seems that Feng Jin Huang has indeed been suppressed, this is not surprising at all, her father has openly betrayed Heavenly Court, this outcome is only natural.”

As soon as this was said, Sun Yao frowned: “Senior Sister Feng wouldn’t care about these things.”

“Hehe, she is indeed arrogant. Pity, what a pity, a fallen phoenix is worse than a chicken.” Xiao Qi Xing revealed a mocking smile: “You guys are actually helping these beggars again? They’re not real people, why are you doing this for?”

“No reason, we just feel like helping them.” Chen Da Jiang smiled.

“Hehe, sympathy...” Xiao Qi Xing shook his head in disdain: “That means you don’t know the importance of this journey, you’re wasting your time here!”

“Oh?” Chen Da Jiang’s eyes lit up: “What does Brother Xiao know?”

Xiao Qi Xing looked at Chen Da Jiang: “There is no harm in telling you, this painting world is so vivid because it is the effect of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s contented lifestyle killer move. We were all nominated by our sects to be trained by Heavenly Court and sent here for further nurturing. As I’m sure you’ve noticed, there are also Gu Masters cultivating here, but they cultivate mainly human path.”

“What the sect wants is for us to cultivate human path. We will strive to ascend to become immortal using human path as our main path. Although this world is not real, the cultivation of human path is not fake. All the human path Gu worms we get from here can also be taken outside and used.”

“So that’s how it is!” Sun Yao’s eyes widened but soon she expressed some doubt: “But why didn’t the sect tell me?”

Chen Da Jiang, on the other hand, simply asked: “Where did Brother Xiao learn about this inside information?”

Xiao Qi Xing smiled slightly, he puffed out his chest and said proudly: “Even Spirit Butterfly Valley has not informed me of this inside information, I had gone to ask my great grandfather to find out.”

Chen Da Jiang nodded understandingly, seeing that Sun Yao was still puzzled, he explained: “Brother Xiao has a noble status and a wealth of knowledge, his great grandfather is Lord Gu Immortal Xiao Bai Hong.”

“Oh, so that’s how it is.” Sun Yao’s gaze towards Xiao Qi Xing changed again.

“Alright, I have to head to the military base now and join the city guards. I’ve already investigated it, only city guards can get soldier Gu, sergeant Gu, lieutenant Gu, captain Gu, and others. These human path Gu worms are very useful, they can build a strong foundation in our human path cultivation. We should go together, we can take care of each other.” Xiao Qi Xing suggested again.

But Chen Da Jiang shook his head, “Brother Xiao, go first, I’m not done helping the beggars here.”

Xiao Qi Xing looked at Chen Da Jiang and nodded: “You’re still the same as before, so what about you?”

He looked at Sun Yao.

Sun Yao hesitated and shook her head as well: “No, Senior Brother Xiao, I... I plan to help Senior Brother Chen.”

“Haha.” Xiao Qi Xing laughed as he showed a smile with deep meaning: “Then I will not disturb the two of you in your good work.”

He left straight away, laughing coldly in his heart: “These two idiots have no idea what kind of opportunities they are missing out on!”

Xiao Qi Xing could not help but recall the words that his great grandfather had instructed him: “Oh Qi Xing, this trip into the painting world is an unimaginably great opportunity. If possible, you can even inherit Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance and become the Lord of Divine Emperor City. You must do your best to grasp this opportunity! Remember, you must hurry up. You are only the first batch of candidates, Heavenly Court will also arrange for some rank six Gu Immortals to enter next. These people are also elites that Heavenly Court is focusing on nurturing, but the qi tides have not settled yet and they are all still resting and recuperating.”

“After you enter the painting world, you will have to race against time and try to establish an early advantage so that you can deal with those Gu Immortal opponents in the future. Don’t be afraid, these Gu Immortals can only follow the rules in the painting world. Inside it, immortals and mortals are basically equals.”

Xiao Qi Xing’s heart beat rapidly every time he recalled these words.

This was an unparalleled opportunity, of course he wanted to grasp it!

Sun Yao and Chen Da Jiang did not know the inside story, so Xiao Qi Xing wanted to coax them to help himself out. It was a pity that these two actually wanted to do good deeds, they were really not qualified to work with him. Xiao Qi Xing saw through this and was unwilling to waste precious time and energy on them.

“We brought steamed buns and porridge, eat slowly and don’t choke.” Sun Yao placed a bowl of porridge and steamed buns in front of Shen Shang.

Shen Shang was still covered in injuries and resembled a beggar, sitting in the shade at the corner like a stone statue.

Sun Yao also did not pay attention to it, after all, there were many such silent beggars. She did this to help others, not for the sake of listening to some words of gratitude and praise.

Shen Shang's eyes contained bright light as he looked at Sun Yao who was close to him, and also at the back of Xiao Qi Xing, who was about to disappear in the distance of the street.

“These people are all Heavenly Court's Gu Immortal seeds. In order to face the tides of the great era, Heavenly Court has made long-term plans.”

“Xiao Bai Hong is too shortsighted and doesn't even know that he has harmed his own great-grandson. Sun Yao and Chen Da Jiang were previously kept in the dark, but now, although they learned some of the inside story, they still upheld their nature and acted according to their desires. These two will definitely benefit greatly if they continue.”

Shen Shang thought to himself. Although these three people were transmitting their conversations, they could not hide it from a character like Shen Shang.

Shen Shang sighed in his heart.

“Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's arrangement is truly vast and grand, I really admire him.”

“In history, the greatest human path true inheritance is u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e. Even though this book seems shallow, it is profound to the limit, only a small group of people can actually comprehend its true essence and create human path killer moves.”

“However, to establish a path, these killer moves are too few and rare, they are like the moon beyond the clouds, normal people cannot reach them. Even though human path has such great potential, it has no foundations set upon it, it is unable to develop until now.”

“But Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable created this painting world, he used the scenes of the mortal world for the past million years to derive the foundations of human path. He is making an immense contribution towards the development of human path! He is truly the foundational pillar of human path.”

“The human path developments here are also very helpful to me. I wonder what happened when I was in a state of madness, how did I end up in here?”

“It is a pity I cannot contact Fang Yuan’s Fang Di Chang clone. What is happening over on his end?”

Shen Shang was the one who had previously collaborated with Fang Di Chang and successfully unraveled the venerables’ human path methods, adding a significant weight to tilt the balance of the battle in the fate war.

Shen Shang knew that Fang Di Chang had refined Divine Bean Palace before, he had a large level of authority over it. If they could collaborate once again, it would benefit both of them!



# **Chapter 1993 - Fang Yuan Within The Mis**

## **1993 Fang Yuan Within The Mis**

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Southern Border.

In a valley, Shi Shi Cheng leaned over to check out the stone mushrooms within the valley.

If these stone mushrooms were in good condition, they would be five feet tall, shaped like a small tree with a cover like an umbrella. However, these stone mushrooms were short, just like stumps left behind after a tree was cut down. And instead of a healthy gray stone color, their bodies were covered in a distorted multicolored color, and one could tell at a glance that they were not normal.

“These stone mushrooms are ruined!” After Shi Shi Cheng finished his inspection and confirmed this, his expression was quite ugly.

Although his cultivation was only rank six, he was valued by Fang Yuan and arranged to lead the rockman tribe in Mini Southern Border. Shi Shi Cheng held Fang Yuan in high esteem and was dedicated to developing the rockman tribe, in order to live up to Fang Yuan’s expectations.

This stone mushroom field was a medium-sized resource point that he had personally constructed for the sake of the rockman tribe. In order to build this resource point, Shi Shi Cheng had specifically requested many

immortal materials from Fang Yuan's time path clone as the initial investment. At that time, he even vowed and guaranteed that there would be desirable returns!

As a result, reality was like a slap in the face of Shi Shi Cheng.

“What is happening?”

“I clearly followed the records of the tribe to carefully cultivate the stone mushrooms without any mistakes.”

Shi Shi Cheng was very confused. A few days ago, these stone mushrooms were all growing normally and everything was fine. But after a few days had passed, these stone mushrooms had become like this.

“How can I explain this to Lord Fang Yuan?!” Shi Shi Cheng furrowed his brows and sighed.

At this moment, light flashed and Fang Yuan's will was transmitted over in mid-air.

The will was solid and lifelike.

Shi Shi Cheng gasped and immediately bowed: “Subordinate pays respect to lord.”

“Mm.” Fang Yuan's will waved his hand: “I already know about your situation here, the stone mushroom field was destroyed, no one can blame you, it was a natural disaster. You should go back for now, another batch of immortal materials will arrive in a while, and you can just build a second stone mushroom valley.”

Shi Shi Cheng was overjoyed and thanked him, but also wanted to say something.

Fang Yuan's will revealed an understanding smile: “Are you thinking of asking what caused these stone mushrooms to be destroyed?”

Shi Shi Cheng nodded: “Lord is perceptive, I would like to ask if these stone mushrooms can still be recycled in some way? It would be a pity to just throw them away.”

The initial investment in building the stone mushroom valley was huge, it was certainly nothing in Fang Yuan’s eyes, but in Shi Shi Cheng’s opinion, it was an astronomical investment. Together with the effort and time he had invested in this place, he did not want to see all his efforts go up in smoke.

But Fang Yuan shook his head: “You don’t need to think about the details, if I can solve it, you will have no worries. If I can’t solve it, it’s useless for you to know. As for these stone mushrooms, none of them can be used, even if they are used as materials to refine Gu, they will only cause more harm instead. You can leave now.”

“Yes, my lord!” Shi Shi Cheng took his leave respectfully, he was worried in his heart: “Why do we have such a big problem? According to his tone, it may not be possible to resolve the matter?”

Shi Shi Cheng left, only Fang Yuan’s will remained in this valley.

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim.

He scanned the entire valley first, the countless stone mushrooms in the valley had become twisted objects, the originally smooth surface forming countless creases. The colors were bright, like a gathering of poisonous creatures, giving people a sense of terror.

This was of course just the appearance.

In Fang Yuan’s eyes, he could see that the original earth path dao marks in these stone mushrooms had been disrupted and washed away, many different dao marks from other paths, including wind path, lightning path, poison path, dark path, fire path, and so on, were added instead.

Because of this, these stone mushrooms could only be discarded as waste material. At least currently, Fang Yuan had no means to utilize them.

“Heaven’s will!” Fang Yuan’s will suddenly sneered and discovered heaven’s will lurking in the valley.

With a loud sound, he transformed into a field of clouds and mist that covered the entire valley, pursuing and intercepting heaven’s will.

A confrontation between wills soon came to an end. Fang Yuan was victorious, he had managed to completely clear the heaven’s will lurking in this place, but of course, the price paid was not small.

After his will had gathered again, it was no longer as lifelike as before, but illusory as a shadow, giving the impression like it was going to fade away at any moment.

Fang Yuan sighed.

This victory only resolved the problem but not its fundamental cause, a new problem would occur again!

The stone mushroom valley was not just an isolated case, recently, there had been heaven’s will lurking all over the sovereign immortal aperture, many resource points had been destroyed.

Fang Yuan’s main body had obtained more than three thousand heaven path dao marks as he was the person refining Gu, managing to destroy fate Gu for good.

These dao marks did not belong to him and were imposed on him. The heaven path dao marks transformed on their own, causing the various environments of the sovereign immortal aperture to change, becoming more and more balanced and stable.

In the long run, this change would naturally do more good than harm, greatly increasing the development potential of the sovereign immortal aperture. However, if one looked at the immediate future, it would cause Fang Yuan to suffer heavy losses.

Fang Yuan was not a super force, all his possessions were in the sovereign immortal aperture. A great loss in this foundation of his would definitely affect his battle performance. Fang Yuan did not want to fall into the trap of Red Lotus Demon Venerable, he had been working hard to command the humans and variant humans in the grotto-heaven, constantly fighting against natural disasters. At the same time, he had successively retrieved the thousand wish tree and the incomplete Human Sea, using human path to restrict the heaven path effects.

With such a two-pronged approach, the situation of sovereign immortal aperture was greatly improved. However, Fang Yuan did not expect that the natural development of the heaven path dao marks would produce heaven's will after some point.

The Heavenly Dao was impartial, it had no malicious intent against Fang Yuan, changing the environment was just a natural step of development. But this was not the case for heaven's will.

Heaven's will was produced from the Heavenly Dao, it was more flexible and resourceful. The Heavenly Dao was unable to eliminate Fang Yuan, the otherworldly demon that affected the balance of the world, so heaven's will went one step further and began deliberately destroying the various resource points in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Heaven path dao marks could transform into other paths, so heaven's will used this ability to completely disrupt the dao marks of the various resource points, turning them from orderly to a complete mess.

Stone mushroom valley was just one of them.

"I have the killer move heaven's will dissipation, but the sovereign immortal aperture is too huge, the Heavenly Dao is constantly deriving new changes, it can produce heaven's will anywhere in the entire grotto-heaven. It is too difficult for me to clear out all this heaven's will! Even if I do my best, the efficiency is low."

Fang Yuan was clear that the way to settle the fundamental cause was to directly refine these heaven path dao marks, so that they truly belonged to

the sovereign immortal aperture and himself.

But what the method to go about it was, he had no idea.

He had never heard of anyone cultivating heaven path before! The only known way was to use human path methods to suppress heaven path.

Fang Yuan thought for a long time and found two possible ways out.

The first one was Emperor City.

“Emperor City was carefully arranged by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it has now become the sacred land of human path. If I can obtain it, I will definitely be able to greatly restrain the Heavenly Dao.”

The second way was in Crazy Demon Cave.

“Crazy Demon Cave was set up by Limitless Demon Venerable in his later years, the eighth layer contains the derivations of the Heavenly Dao. In Crazy Demon Cave, the demonic sounds are rampant, driving lifeforms mad, all kinds of immortal materials turn into trash as dao marks are messed up. The situation is exactly the same as the stone mushrooms and other resources. If I can grasp all the secrets of Crazy Demon Cave, I should be able to improve my situation.”

But these were two dangerous options.

Emperor City was located in the center of Central Continent, if Fang Yuan were to go there, he would definitely have to fight Heavenly Court. With his current strength, he would be able to defeat Heavenly Court. However! Fang Yuan's fear was Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable and Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had schemed against him, causing him to lose his clone Fang Di Chang. When using luck inspection earlier, he did not find Fang Di Chang's luck, it was likely that he had perished, the likelihood of his death was great.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable also schemed against him, if not for the heaven path dao marks, how could heaven's will be produced in Fang Yuan's immortal aperture? Of course, Red Lotus was also plotting against Spectral Soul. The heaven path dao marks were both dangerous and also a fortuitous encounter for Fang Yuan, it was also his protection. At the least, Spectral Soul could not use his hidden methods because of these dao marks.

If Fang Yuan wanted to take Emperor City, he would have to face the methods of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable and Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

As for Crazy Demon Cave?

It was also filled with danger.

The Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics had promised to join the fate war to Fang Yuan, but during the battle, none of them had shown up. Fang Yuan had tried to contact them, but they had completely vanished.

What happened in Crazy Demon Cave that caused the Three Crazy Demon Eccentrics to mysteriously disappear?

Fang Yuan guessed that Longevity Heaven might have taken action. Fang Yuan realized that the consumption of wisdom Gu was part of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's scheme. Giant Sun's single attack also made Fang Yuan realize that he was keeping some trump cards after all.

Now that fate Gu was destroyed, it was possible for venerables to revive. If Fang Yuan went to Crazy Demon Cave, it was likely that he would need to face the methods of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Limitless Demon Venerable.

There was one more thing that worried Fang Yuan, there were changes happening in the River of Time.

Ever since the destruction of fate Gu, the water of the River of Time had become extremely violent, vicious and dangerous. Even if Fang Yuan used Myriad Year Flying Warship, he could only barely enter the river and last

for a moment before having to return to the five regions, he was unable to explore it for long.

Fang Yuan understood the reason.

In the past, the River of Time could move forward smoothly because everything was fixed, everything moved according to the path set by fate, no matter what existed, they had a specific trajectory of life experiences. This was why time path Gu Immortals could often “predict” things by watching the downstream segments. Red Lotus Demon Venerable was able to plot the destruction of fate Gu by observing the downstream events and learning many secrets of the future.

But now, once fate Gu was destroyed, everything no longer had a fixed path and could change at will. As a result, the River of Time has become extremely violent, everything has become turbid and chaotic.

With such a change in the River of Time, Spring Autumn Cicada could no longer be used for the time being.

Before, Spring Autumn Cicada could move through the river because the water was gentle. Now that the river had become violent and chaotic, once Spring Autumn Cicada was activated and entered the river, it would definitely be smashed to pieces by the river water. Unless Fang Yuan developed some other killer move that could use Spring Autumn Cicada.

“Although the river water is troublesome, it’s actually not a big problem. What I’m really worried about is still Red Lotus Demon Venerable. He’s the one who had built the stone lotus islands in the River of Time. I don’t know what other arrangements he has in the River of Time.”

Fate Gu was destroyed at long last, Fang Yuan had finally gotten free of the Sword of Damocles hanging above his head.

However, the journey ahead of him was filled with mist, he was walking in a dangerous valley. Within the mist, which area could be explored, which area would lead to a cliff?



Would his path to eternal life, his lifelong ambition, be hidden within the mist?

If it existed, where would it be?

# **Chapter 1994 - Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch Fights Fang Zheng In immemorial bla**

## **1994 Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch Fights Fang Zheng**

In immemorial black heaven, a group of Gu Immortals were traveling stealthily as they flew continuously.

These Gu Immortals had outstanding cultivation level, they were all rank eight variant human Gu Immortals. The leader was a Gu Immortal with pale skin and blue hair, he had a grim expression, it was Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had received orders from Wu Shuai to reinforce the headquarters of the grotto-heavens, to resist the invasion of Heavenly Court.

Along the way, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch's heart was filled with worry: "This is not the same as my expectations... I made Wu Shuai the alliance leader so that he would be the vanguard. But in the end, to deal with Heavenly Court, I was the one sent out instead."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had the intention to reject this order, but the situation back then did not allow him to use any excuses.

“Wu Shuai suffered injuries against Qi Sea Ancestor, in a way, he was indeed used by us to resist Qi Sea Ancestor.”

“As the vice alliance leader, I need to put in some effort too. It makes logical sense for me to reinforce them in black heaven.”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch did not want to face Heavenly Court directly.

Regardless of win or loss, he would become an eyesore from Heavenly Court’s perspective.

Currently, he wanted Wu Shuai to attract the attention of the enemies. But the world was not as simple as he thought, society was vicious to everyone, right now, he was pushed forward as the vanguard.

“I am truly unable to go against the tides!” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch sighed deeply to himself.

He definitely had to go save them, but the way to go about it was something that he could determine himself.

“Vice alliance leader, we found a large number of Gu Immortals ahead.” The investigative Gu Immortal suddenly spoke: “They are our allies.”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch nodded in response, unsurprised: “Go meet with them.”

Even though Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch regretted his vice alliance leader position, it was already too late now, he could only take full advantage of the authority he had.

Before setting off, he had already used his status as vice alliance leader to order the remaining grotto-heaven forces to help each other out, in order to chase away Heavenly Court, they had to contribute their strength.

The two groups of Gu Immortals gathered, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch looked at the reinforcements, he felt rage building internally.

Chaotic Rock grotto-heaven sent an immemorial rock monster, Rotten Egg grotto-heaven sent six eggman Gu Immortals, they could form the ancient battle formation, Rotting Smell Vicious Cloud formation, while Strange Hair grotto-heaven brought an incomplete Immortal Gu House, Black Emperor Building. These three grotto-heaven forces that were close to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch brought their trump cards along with them, but other than them, the other forces were simply not putting in effort. Especially those human forces, they only dispatched several rank seven Gu Immortals without much sincerity.

“The enemy is right ahead but these grotto-heaven forces are still trying to preserve their strength! Sigh, grotto-heavens are too far apart, we do not have much interaction normally, even if we cooperate, it is only due to external pressure.”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s anger soon turned into helplessness and dejectedness.

“In that case, I should conceal my own strength too, let’s just put up a superficial show. After all, the people I brought amount to quite a force already.”

Heavenly Court was powerful, if possible, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch did not want to face them head-on. He knew his own limits, if he really charged forward fearlessly, he might not return alive.

While Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was thinking about this, his expression changed as his eyes widened, almost spewing fires of rage!

The other Gu Immortals saw Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s expression and turned around.

Someone asked: “Vice alliance leader, what happened? Have Xia clan’s headquarters fallen?”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch gritted his teeth: “Xia clan’s headquarters have Lord Alliance Leader, how can they fall! My grotto-heaven has been

invaded by Demon Judgment Board, my tribe's Gu Immortals are currently fighting them to the death, we need to reinforce them now!"

"This..." Great Wisdom Immortal Mother was still thinking of saving her grotto-heaven, she was hesitant.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stared at her: "Your grotto-heavens have already fallen into the enemy's hands, the outcome has been decided. But my Ice Crystal grotto-heaven is still resisting them, there is hope. We need to return to reinforce them immediately, if anyone does not help, I will report it to Lord Alliance Leader Wu Shuai!"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch made use of Wu Shuai's name, and because the variant human Gu Immortals close to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch expressed their support, Great Wisdom Immortal Mother and the rest had to follow this order.

The immortals did not conceal their traces anymore, they flew towards Ice Crystal grotto-heaven with their fastest speed.

The grotto-heaven entrance opened as Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch flew in anxiously, while the rest followed.

Ice Crystal grotto-heaven was already in chaotic battle, Demon Judgment Board flew around like a meteor, slaughtering everything in its path, totally unstoppable.

The rank six and seven snowman Gu Immortals in Ice Crystal grotto-heaven were nowhere to be seen, they were controlling the formation to unleash a blizzard on Demon Judgment Board, but the effect was very minimal.

Suddenly, Demon Judgment Board shot out a sharp blood red light that landed on the control area of the formation.

The snowman Gu Immortals quickly put up their defenses, the blood red light seemed to be reflected by a mirror as it changed directions and shot elsewhere.

Boom!

There was a loud sound as heaven and earth shook, the blood red light exploded as the sky turned red. For the radius of several thousand li, the snowy and icy plain got completely obliterated.

“Ah, my blizzard icy plain!” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch saw this and became overwhelmed with anger.

This icy plain was the largest gathering spot of the snowman race in Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, now that it was destroyed, nearly ten million ordinary snowmen died a terrible death.

The blizzard icy plain carried special significance to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch personally.

His coming-of-age ceremony was held in this blizzard icy plain.

Back then, his father had brought the young Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch to the periphery of the icy plain.

“You are an adult now, my son. The icy plain you see here is the location of your trial. You need to survive seven days here to pass the trial, you will be qualified to become a Gu Master and awaken your aperture.”

The young Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch looked at this vast plain and felt lost, fear appeared in his eyes.

His father observed his expression and said: “Fear is normal because you might likely die here. The trial is fair, you need to experience the danger of death in order to be qualified to become a Gu Master. Even as a Gu Immortal, I cannot protect you from this, I can only give you a suggestion.”

“What is that?” The young Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch asked.

“It is too difficult to live alone in the icy plain for seven days, there is barely any hope.” His father shook his head: “But there are many snowman tribes in this icy plain, if you can follow the traces to find them, they will protect you.”

“But I don’t know these people.” The young Ice Crystal was worried.

His father explained meticulously: “Don’t worry, the snowman tribes will protect every person who is stranded, because these people will end up protecting the entire race in the end. They will definitely help you, my son, if you succeed the trial, regardless of your achievements, you will need to protect our entire race. This is how a snowman lives!”

As expected, the young Ice Crystal survived for three days and nights in the icy plain, chasing after the traces of snowmen tribes.

At the moment of life and death, he crawled his way to a hunter’s tribe near the periphery and was discovered, managing to survive.

The tribe took him in and healed him for free, welcoming him to become a member of their tribe.

Even though the young Ice Crystal left in the end, his experiences in that tribe were deeply etched into his heart, it affected him for the rest of his life until now.

After he became rank eight and inherited the title of Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, becoming the owner of the grotto-heaven, he developed the blizzard icy plain and made the sparse icy plain grow abundant with resources, the lives of the snowmen living in it improved greatly, their numbers increased gradually.

But now, it was all ruined!

All ruined.

By a killer move of a strong foe that affected the entire blizzard icy plain.

Not only were Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s efforts ruined entirely, his memories also became just memories now, he could no longer find them in real life.

Anger and hatred rose in his heart, burning intensely.

For a moment, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch became silent, he took in a deep breath.

The air in Ice Crystal grotto-heaven was always so cold, it was still extremely cold now.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch suddenly remembered his father's teachings: "The tribe will definitely help you, my son, if you succeed in the trial, regardless of your achievements, you will need to protect our entire race. This is how a snowman lives!" "

Indeed.

It is time for me to protect my race.

Rumble!

At the next moment, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch's aura erupted, creating an intense blizzard as he charged towards Demon Judgment Board.

All of the Gu Immortals behind him were shocked.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was actually so courageous!

"Reinforcements from the two heavens are here." Inside Demon Judgment Board, Gu Yue Fang Zheng took in a deep breath as his expression turned grim.

Many people had arrived, among which were various rank eight Gu Immortals.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was only rank seven but he was not flustered, all of his battles before this had tempered his own confidence and determination.

But the bigger reason was also the fact that he had absolute confidence in the rank eight Immortal Gu House, Demon Judgment Board!

"You created a grand commotion, but can you fight Demon Judgment Board?" Gu Yue Fang Zheng smiled coldly, instead of using any killer



move, he directly used Demon Judgment Board to charge ahead.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch gritted his teeth, he was forced to retreat.

He was an ice and snow path Gu Immortal, he did not cultivate transformation path or strength path, how could he resist an Immortal Gu House with his body?

“Let’s join the battle too!”

“Quick, work together and help vice alliance leader.”

The two heavens alliance shouted and attacked at once.

Seeing this, Gu Yue Fang Zheng moved Demon Judgment Board away to retreat from them, pulling some distance agilely.

Blood red light flickered in Demon Judgment Board, killer moves were unleashed. The immemorial rock monster became slower, the eggman Gu Immortals were covered in blood, they had to save themselves instead of assembling the ancient battle formation. The incomplete Black Emperor Building from Strange Hair grotto-heaven was also waiting at the back, not daring to contest Demon Judgment Board directly.

The other Gu Immortals were even less useful, even though there were many rank eight Gu Immortals, they were all scared about losing their lives, only using long ranged killer moves instead. Once the enemy got close, they would prioritize escaping first.

It was a disunited bunch!

This phrase appeared in Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s mind, he felt angry and anxious.

Ice Crystal grotto-heaven had nothing to do with them, they would not risk their lives for it. The only person that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch could rely on now was himself.

“I can only use that move now!” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch made up his mind.

“Master, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s group is about to lose, should we help them?” Soul path Gu Immortal An Xun asked Spectral Soul secretly.

On this occasion, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven sent him here, Spectral Soul came along and lurked in secret.

“Hehehe, they fought like this despite having so many rank eight Gu Immortals. The two heavens alliance is a joke.” Spectral Soul laughed: “No need to be anxious, that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch has other tricks up his sleeve, let’s wait for now.”

# **Chapter 1995 - Extreme Ice Crystal Light Immortal Suppression Coffin**

## **1995 Extreme Ice Crystal Light Immortal Suppression Coffin**

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch floated in the sky, his aura surged continuously as his clothes fluttered with the wind.

Around him, countless traces of frost energy gathered, whipping up a storm.

Such power surpassed ordinary rank eight killer moves, once Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch succeeded in activating it, the power would definitely shake heaven and earth. Fang Zheng sensed this, he wanted to use Demon Judgment Board to obstruct it.

“Let’s lend Ice Crystal a hand!”

“Stop Demon Judgment Board!”

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens were not that useless after all, they quickly went ahead to block Demon Judgment Board.

At once, all sorts of killer moves were unleashed, it was like a display of fireworks.

Demon Judgment Board was obstructed by the bombarding killer moves, but at the crucial moment, a flash of blood red light shot out, about to land

on Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was still activating his killer move, he did not move.

At the crucial moment, An Xun opened his immortal aperture's entrance and let out an immemorial soul beast.

The immemorial soul beast moved quickly, standing in front of Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and blocking the blood red light entirely.

With a loud sound, an explosion occurred.

The immemorial soul beast growled in pain, half of its body was destroyed, it fell towards the ground.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch immediately looked towards An Xun with gratitude. The aura on his body was calming down, he had evidently passed the most dangerous moment, his killer move preparation was already done.

“Immemorial soul beasts have no blood, Demon Judgment Board's blood path killer move had little effect.” An Xun was very excited as he said: “Master, if not for your reminder, I would not have been able to block this blood red light, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch would have been in trouble.”

“No.” Spectral Soul analyzed: “The killer move that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch is using contains deep profundity, during the activation process, he gains an increased level of defense, even if he was hit, he would only be injured, the killer move activation would not fail.”

“Heavenly Court! I'll let you have a taste of my race's unique killer move — Extreme Ice Crystal Light Immortal Suppression Coffin!” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch shouted as all of the aura surging around him became completely concealed.

At the next moment, his entire body exploded and spread out into countless frost lights.

The frost lights shot out with extreme coldness! Everywhere they went, air would freeze into ice crystals before falling to the ground.

Fang Zheng felt something amiss, he wanted to activate Demon Judgment Board but how could his speed match the frost lights?

Almost at the same moment, Demon Judgment Board got hit by countless extreme ice crystal lights.

Crack crack.

Every crystal light that hit Demon Judgment Board turned into a small piece of ice attached to Demon Judgment Board.

Countless crystal lights shot towards it from all directions, Demon Judgment Board had nowhere to dodge, instantly, layers of ice started to form all over it.

Fang Zheng's heart sank, he activated Demon Judgment Board and used a killer move to melt the ice layers.

But his speed could not match the rate at which the freezing was occurring, very soon, ice that was five feet thick formed all over Demon Judgment Board.

“Oh no, the thicker this ice layer is, the greater the effect of the frost lights that land!” Discovering this, Fang Zheng turned pale with shock.

This move was unavoidable from the start, it was quite powerful, but its true strength came much later. The longer it dragged on, the stronger this move would be!

Fang Zheng quickly tried to move Demon Judgment Board, expending the remaining rank eight immortal essence to activate Demon Judgment Board's strongest killer move.

Blood red light spread out, a layer of ice quickly melted.

Next, the frost lights seemed to react, they quickly went towards the area that Fang Zheng was trying to break out from and made Demon Judgment Board's ability much weaker.

The Gu Immortals were all stunned.

“Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch is actually so powerful!”

“He actually sealed Heavenly Court's rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board with his own strength!”

“This is incredible, what is the name of the move?”

“Extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin!”

At once, all of the immortals muttered the name of this killer move, engraving it to their heart.

“This is the unique killer move of the snowmen from ancient times, hehe, to think that they have actually obtained a racial inheritance already.” Spectral Soul who was inside An Xun laughed lightly.

An Xun understood after hearing this: “So this is a move from the snowman racial inheritance, no wonder it is so strong! Wait, no, can ancient killer moves still be used in the current era? The world now is very different from the past, wouldn't such antique moves be outdated already?”

“Hehehe.” Spectral Soul chuckled: “Back then when variant humans ruled the world, they had countless killer moves, those moves that were specially chosen to be kept in their racial inheritances are naturally more outstanding in many ways. Taking this extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin for example, its core is not an Immortal Gu but the variant human using it.”

Spectral Soul's depth of knowledge was not ordinary, he had once searched countless souls in the Door of Life and Death. Many of these souls came from the Olden Antiquity or Remote Antiquity Era, some were even from the Immemorial Antiquity Era.

Thus, Spectral Soul had a lot of information about these eras.

Even though his attainment levels had all fallen to rock bottom, his memories were still intact.

Like what Spectral Soul said, extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin was somewhat similar to Wu Yong's unlimited wind killer move. When using unlimited wind, Wu Yong would expend his own wind path dao marks. As for extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin, not only would it consume Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch's ice and snow path dao marks, it would also cost him his lifespan.

As the core killer move of the snowman Gu Immortals, extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin was not very affected by the progression of eras. At the same time, any other races' Gu Immortals could not use this move even if they had it.

Fang Zheng's forehead was already covered in sweat.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch displayed battle strength that far surpassed Fang Zheng's expectations. The great Demon Judgment Board was actually sealed in ice, there was little hope of escaping.

Even if Fang Zheng wanted to fight Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, he had no way to do so.

Because Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had already turned into countless frost lights, this was the superiority of extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin killer move.

Seeing as Demon Judgment Board was about to be completely sealed in ice, at this time, a phoenix cry could be heard.

Following a loud sound of crashing waves, Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui arrived.

It turned out that while fighting Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, Fang Zheng had already informed Heavenly Court's Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang

Shui.

Bai Cang Shui was originally cleaning up the battlefield, she could leave immediately. As for Prince Feng Xian, he gave up some gains there and rapidly came to reinforce Fang Zheng.

The two rank eight Gu Immortals saw Demon Judgment Board which was trapped, they shouted as one unleashed torrents of golden flames, while the other sent out huge waves.

The ice was attacked from the inside and outside, it could not last any longer as the external layer of ice quickly cracked, Demon Judgment Board which was inside got ready to retaliate.

The two heavens' Gu Immortals saw this and wanted to attack but Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui suppressed them instead.

Even though they had many more rank eights than Heavenly Court, it did not matter.

In Gu Immortal battles, numbers were not the most crucial. Even though the two heavens had many people, they could not cooperate, their killer moves often interfered with each other. About half of their strength was limited because of this, even before they hit any enemies.

But if they were to fight alone, they would be fearful and cowardly, they would focus on preserving their own lives, unwilling to take any risk or get into danger.

Of course, the other reason was that Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui were elite rank eights with excellent battle strength. They were able to become Heavenly Court members, they naturally surpassed other rank eights.

The situation was in a deadlock, Spectral Soul acutely sensed that the ice layer was weakening, he instructed An Xun: "Quickly let out the soul beast army, lend your Immortal Gu to me now."



“Yes master!” An Xun did not hesitate, he quickly followed the instructions.

The soul beast army came out and attacked.

Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui did not care about them at first, they used two killer moves in succession, but the soul beast army split up and moved fluidly like water, dodging most of the killer moves’ effects.

Next, from the soul beast army, three immemorial soul beasts flew out to attack Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui.

As the two sides fought, the immemorial soul beasts were naturally unable to resist the two Heavenly Court immortals, but the immemorial soul beasts had the army to support them, at crucial moments, killer moves would help them out as well.

Even though Bai Cang Shui and Prince Feng Xian had the upper hand, the soul beast army successfully restrained them. They could not help Demon Judgment Board like before, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s frost lights began to regain their footing.

“This soul path rank seven immortal is quite talented!”

“I will go kill him!”

Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui communicated, the former moved as he spit fire, creating a path within the soul beast army as he charged towards An Xun.

An Xun ‘turned pale with fright’, shouting: “He is coming, protect me!”

The two heavens’ Gu Immortals knew that enslavement Gu Immortals were most vulnerable to direct attack, they quickly responded.

Prince Feng Xian charged without stopping, he broke through all of the obstacles, but because of these obstruction, An Xun managed to pull some distance between them.

“You cannot escape.” Prince Feng Xian smiled coldly as he charged again.

Spectral Soul would not personally take action in this public environment, he controlled An Xun's body to retreat while using the other Gu Immortals to obstruct Prince Feng Xian.

Prince Feng Xian's advancement was ferocious, the two heavens' immortals were all shocked by his aggressiveness.

But Bai Cang Shui shouted: "Feng Xian, quickly kill him."

Prince Feng Xian gritted his teeth, he did not expect An Xun to be so hard to catch.

At this time, the frost light successfully trapped Demon Judgment Board again, the thick ice coffin sealed the rank eight Immortal Gu House at its center.

"Oh no!" Seeing this, Bai Cang Shui and Prince Feng Xian's hearts sank.

Seeing that Heavenly Court's side was in danger, at this time, heaven and earth shook, qi currents surged as the world roared.

"Qi tide again!" Spectral Soul snorted coldly.

Ice Crystal grotto-heaven had already been broken through when Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui attacked, it was connected to the outside world.

At this moment, qi tides surged in the outside world, instilling into the grotto-heaven harshly.

The qi tides implicated the battlefield, wherever it reached, people fell to the ground.

Ice Crystal grotto-heaven's defensive immortal formation could not last any longer, it shattered, many snowman Gu Immortals fell into mortal danger.

The frost light around Demon Judgment Board flickered as it hesitated for a moment. But immediately, the ice crystal lights shot towards the snowman Gu Immortals as they turned into countless ice tubes that protected them.

But this way, Demon Judgment Board's pressure lifted greatly. Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui saw this and quickly made their move, breaking the remaining ice layers and saving Demon Judgment Board.

The two immortals went into the Immortal Gu House, Demon Judgment Board left the battlefield rapidly while resisting the turbulent qi tides.

# **Chapter 1996 - Big or Small, Qi Harvest Frui**

## Chapter 1996 Big or Small, Qi Harvest Frui

The grand qi tide soon filled up the whole of Ice Crystal grotto-heaven.

Spectral Soul sighed deeply, this was really a pity. he wanted the two sides to fight to their deaths before he reaped the rewards, devouring Gu Immortal souls was much more helpful than absorbing soul cores after all.

But his scheme was ruined by this qi tide.

“I do not have Dang Hun Mountain, I lack guts Gu, I can only devour soul beasts and soul cores. But this takes time to digest, it is not like guts Gu which can directly raise my soul foundation.”

“Why the coincidence? Not long ago, when Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai fought, a qi tide appeared. This time, another qi tide showed up.”

Thinking about this, Spectral Soul had a realization: “Don’t tell me that fighting between Gu Immortals will attract qi tides?”

Spectral Soul was only making a guess, he was not certain.

“It is a pity that my qi path attainment level is just ordinary. Otherwise, I will be able to come to a conclusion.”

He had soul search and soul devouring methods, but these methods could not directly raise attainment levels. The only way to instantly raise one’s attainment level was through absorbing true meaning. The attainment levels that Spectral Soul had at his peak were all gained through actual cultivation from the memories he had soul searched, it was not easy to reach that level.

“Forget it.”

“An Xun performed well this time, with such achievements, he might likely receive Wu Shuai’s audience.”

“By staying in his body, I can get closer to Wu Shuai. There might even be a chance to enslave Wu Shuai and take Dragon Palace!”

Spectral Soul’s current plan failed, he quickly came up with a new plan.

He had a deep desire towards Dragon Palace which contained dream path Immortal Gu!

Amidst the surging qi tides, frost lights gathered into Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s aura was weak, his face was pale, the price to activate extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin was very high.

But he had almost singlehandedly sealed Demon Judgment Board, he was the biggest contributor to this victory.

The two heavens’ Gu Immortals came to visit him, their gaze was different from before.

Strength was the determining factor towards one’s status. Undeniably, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch who had extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin killer move far surpassed the other rank eight Gu Immortals of the two heavens in battle strength.

“Even though I saved Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, our race’s unique killer move was exposed.” Even though he forced Heavenly Court to retreat, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was not happy.

Right now, he could only console himself that this move was very hard to counter, it could still be his trump card for the time being.

“Friends, I am not injured, I only need to rest. I hope everyone can help to protect my grotto-heaven.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch said.

“Sure, sure.”

“We are all part of the two heavens alliance, this is not a problem.”

“Everyone, we will do our best to defend Ice Crystal grotto-heaven!”

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens resisted the surging qi tides in the grotto-heaven while Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch focused on repairing the hole created in the grotto-heaven’s aperture wall.

Even though the qi tides were powerful, with the cooperation of all the Gu Immortals, they soon settled down.

Because they had taken action swiftly, the qi tides did not cause much losses to Ice Crystal grotto-heaven.

“Vice alliance leader, take a look, we found something!” Great Wisdom Immortal Mother flew over to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch with some unexpected news.

A moment later, the immortals of the two heavens also arrived at the area.

They saw a fruit that was the size of a hill floating in the air. This fruit was translucent, it was completely formed from heaven and earth qi, it was shaped like a gourd, or a peanut.

“This is a qi harvest fruit?”

“After the qi tides appeared, people often found these qi harvest fruits produced. If Gu Immortals get them and use them in the immortal aperture, they can rapidly soothe the heaven and earth qi and hasten the progress of the heaven and earth qi fusion.”

“But ordinary qi harvest fruits are just as large as a horse carriage. Why is this qi harvesting fruit so huge?”

The two heavens’ immortals discussed but could not come up with an answer.

“Master, is this really a qi harvest fruit?” An Xun asked Spectral Soul: “If it is, isn’t this Ice Crystal grotto-heaven benefiting from a disaster? As long as it absorbs this huge qi harvest fruit, will Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s immortal aperture be modified completely, he will no longer be affected by the qi tides?”

“This is a qi harvest fruit indeed, but whether it is a blessing or a disaster is unknown for now.” Spectral Soul chuckled to himself.

As expected, when Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch tried to take this qi harvest fruit, he was shocked to find a deeper secret.

“Oh no!” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s expression turned even more pale: “This qi harvest fruit is still growing, it is absorbing my grotto-heaven’s heaven and earth qi to grow further. If I take it away now, it will cause a huge commotion in the grotto-heaven, living beings will die, and an even more turbulent qi tide will appear.”

The immortals gasped, after getting Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s permission, they quickly used investigative methods.

“We cannot let this qi harvest fruit continue to grow, who can help me get rid of this hidden threat? I will not be stingy on rewards.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had a solemn expression.

But the Gu Immortals looked at each other, they were all helpless.

Almost everyone could pull out the qi harvest fruit by force, but that was harmful to Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, its foundation would be affected.

And according to their deductions, directly destroying the qi harvest fruit would create a new qi tide that would create a second qi harvest fruit later.

This way, to get rid of this threat permanently without harming Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, the difficulty was very high.

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother suggested: “We can’t do it because we do not cultivate qi path, but what about Lord Alliance Leader?”



Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had a look of worry, he sighed deeply:  
“Right now, we can only ask Lord Alliance Leader for help.”

Wu Shuai soon received Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s request for help.

“My memories are limited, I did not know that the qi harvest fruit would become like this. Maybe the main body knows more things.”

Wu Shuai quickly reported the information that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch gave him to Fang Yuan’s main body.

“Oh? The hidden threat of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens have been found, this is much earlier than in my previous life.” Fang Yuan’s main body naturally knew about this.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, the two heavens’ Gu Immortals had also worked together, they attacked many places and caused a lot of trouble for the five regions.

Due to the qi tides, the five regions’ Gu Immortals were greatly restricted. But the two heavens’ Gu Immortals were able to move around, they were less affected by the qi tides.

Furthermore, when Gu Immortal battles reach a certain level, qi tides would occur.

Even though the two heavens’ Gu Immortals had low battle strength, with the help of the qi tides, they could defeat the five regions’ Gu Immortals.

But good times did not last long, soon, the two heaven’s Gu Immortals found that qi harvest fruits started to appear in their own grotto-heaven headquarters.

These qi harvest fruits used the grotto-heaven’s heaven and earth qi to grow, they were like stubborn pests, if left unattended, they would grow endlessly and eventually destroy the entire grotto-heaven world.

“Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch fought against Heavenly Court and caused the qi tides to appear in his grotto-heaven, that is the reason why qi harvest

fruits appeared earlier than the previous life.”

Fang Yuan sent the information to Wu Shuai, suddenly, he had a thought as he gained a burst of inspiration.

“Wait!”

“Maybe I can use these qi tides to deal with heaven’s will.”

His situation was really bad now.

The main problem was the heaven path dao marks, he could not refine them in the short time, while these dao marks generated heaven’s will.

The heaven path dao marks had no ill intentions towards Fang Yuan but heaven’s will wanted to kill him, it tried all sorts of ways to destroy his sovereign immortal aperture.

And worse was that if Fang Yuan did not get rid of the heaven’s will, after accumulating to a certain level, even if the sovereign immortal aperture remained shut, the grotto-heaven’s heaven’s will could resonate with the five regions’ heaven’s will and expose his identity.

Once Fang Yuan’s location was exposed, if he stayed in qi sea, his cover as Qi Sea Ancestor would be blown.

However, it was difficult for Fang Yuan to get rid of heaven’s will.

The sovereign immortal aperture was too huge, Fang Yuan did not know where to start. He could not predict the natural developments of the Heavenly Dao, he could not know where heaven’s will would be created.

“I should try to let the qi tides rampage in my sovereign immortal aperture. Like a washing machine, they might be able to cleanse all of the heaven’s will away.”

As Fang Yuan thought about it, he found that this was a very possible idea to execute.

It seemed dangerous but it was possible to use the two threats against each other, with his qi path and wisdom path foundation, it was a realistic solution.

Of course, whether this method could succeed or not, until it was used, Fang Yuan could not know for sure.

“If only I still had wisdom Gu, that would be great.”

Wisdom Gu provided unlimited inspiration, with the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan could quickly and efficiently develop a killer move that could make use of the qi tides.

At the same time, in Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

“This is the center of the grotto-heaven!” Luo clan’s three Gu Immortals were all injured, they reached this place after much difficulty.

“What... what an incredible qi harvest fruit...” Luo Mu Zi was lost for words, the other two immortals were filled with shock.

According to the three immortals’ deductions, the center of Qi Jue grotto-heaven should contain the most valuable thing in the entire grotto-heaven.

At this moment, the three immortals saw that there was a tiny and exquisite qi harvest fruit here, it was extremely vivid, the surface had flowing lights that flickered dazzlingly.

It was the size of a gourd but it contained genuine rank nine immortal material aura. It had surging waves of vitality resembling the ocean, it pressed down on the hearts of the Luo clan Gu Immortals.

“This qi harvest fruit is not ordinary at all, it contains deep secrets, we need to research upon it.”

“Strange, qi harvest fruits are produced by the qi tides, why is it hidden by Demon Immortal Qi Jue and kept here?”

“Unless he predicted that in the future, there would be disasters like the qi tides?”

“Take action!” Luo clan’s three immortals were talking when suddenly, they heard a shout, several variant human Gu Immortals showed up and attacked.

Luo clan’s three immortals were caught off guard, they were swept into a battlefield killer move instantly.

“Oh no, an ambush!”

“Someone else found Qi Jue grotto-heaven?”

“Who are you?”

Luo clan’s three immortals shouted.

The leader of the variant human Gu Immortals was about the size of a thumb, there were translucent wings behind him, this was a miniman Gu Immortal.

“Hmph, Luo clan immortals, I, Xiao He Jian, found this place twenty years before any of you.” The miniman Gu Immortal smiled coldly as he said:  
“Attack, kill them all!”

# **Chapter 1997 - Both Sides Seek Reinforcements**

## Chapter 1997 Both Sides Seek Reinforcements

Days later, in the headquarters of Southern Border's Wu clan.

Wu Yong stood at the peak of a mountain, he slowly opened his eyes.

In front of him were three mortals. They were all tied on a wooden pole, they were all unconscious.

Immortal killer move — Farewell Friend Wind!

Wu Yong breathed in deeply, his preparations were completed, he unleashed this peculiar killer move.

Without the emergence of any unique wind, the three mortals in front of him started to disintegrate, their skin, flesh, and bones scattered with the natural breeze. In an instant, even the clothes of these mortals vanished, nothing was left.

Wu Yong showed a satisfied smile at last.

During this period, he had modified farewell friend wind, the results were quite good.

Farewell friend wind was a wind path killer move with human path effect, it originally needed the user to touch the target's body and say some parting words.

But now, these limitations were all modified by Wu Yong and removed successfully.

Even though the current farewell friend wind still needed the user to become friends with the target before usage, the range had greatly increased, it was much more usable now.

Wu Yong had lost a lot of his wind path dao marks during the fate war from using the killer move unlimited wind and his foundation fell.

But during this period of recuperation, he made some gains instead in terms of comprehension, his wind path attainment level rose to a new level. Because of that, he could modify farewell friend wind.

Wu Yong was not just satisfied with modifying farewell friend wind, the rise in his attainment level also meant a comprehensive rise in power.

Farewell friend wind was just one of the aspects.

“Next, I will modify the other killer moves, and even Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building! After modification, my battle strength will rise back to normal, it can even surpass my former level.”

Right when Wu Yong thought about his future, an information path Gu worm flew towards him.

Wu Yong took it and read the information, his brows rose as he showed a surprised expression.

He was originally going to stay in closed cultivation for some time, but after receiving this information, he halted his plan.

Returning to his guest hall, he met with the two Gu Immortals that were looking for him.

These two Gu Immortals had the same clothing, they wore deep green short sleeve shirts and long black pants, they also had jade colored leg bindings.

Any Gu Immortal familiar with Southern Border's Gu Immortal world would know that this was Luo clan's signature attire.

Of the two Luo clan Gu Immortals who came, one was an old man with a bitter expression, another was a middle aged Gu Immortal with a pale face, he was evidently injured.

“Luo Zu (Luo Ran) pays respects to Lord Alliance Leader.” Luo clan’s two Gu Immortals saw Wu Yong and immediately paid respects.

The Southern Alliance was created long ago, Wu Yong was the leader of this alliance.

Of the two Luo clan immortals, Luo Ran was a general of Luo clan, he was a space path expert with peak rank seven battle strength, he was an arrogant person. As for Luo Zu, he was a person of authority, he was the current first supreme elder of Luo clan. These two were so respectful to Wu Yong now, it was clear that they needed his help.

Wu Yong nodded: “We can sit and talk.”

After the two Luo clan Gu Immortals sat down, Wu Yong asked directly: “What is the matter with Qi Jue grotto-heaven?”

Luo Zu breathed in deeply before explaining the entire situation. In summary, when a Gu Immortal of Luo clan explored white heaven using an Immortal Gu House, he discovered Qi Jue grotto-heaven by chance. Luo clan had been exploring it for many years, finally, with the help of the qi tides, they made a breakthrough and entered the central area of Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

But when they were about to obtain Qi Jue’s true inheritance, they were ambushed by variant human Gu Immortals. The three Luo clan Gu Immortals exploring it were caught off guard, the situation did not look good.

Thankfully, their leader was the space path expert Luo Ran, he used his trump card and escaped with the other two immortals.

The variant human Gu Immortals did not let them go, they pursued these three Luo clan immortals.

After Luo clan was informed, they immediately sent their Immortal Gu House to reinforce them, the two sides fought intensely at the heavenly wind qi wall. Even though those variant human Gu Immortals did not have



high battle strength, their leader, the miniman Gu Immortal Xiao He Jian, was very outstanding. At the same time, the variant human Gu Immortals had an Immortal Gu House too, Luo clan was forced to escape back to Southern Border pitifully.

After passing the heavenly wind qi wall, the variant human Gu Immortals were afraid that Southern Border's Gu Immortal world would gang up on them, they gave up on the pursuit.

Luo clan's immortals were defeated, they returned to recuperate in their headquarters, feeling angry and helpless. After discussing for some time, they felt that they could not obtain Qi Jue grotto-heaven themselves, they should get the help of other forces.

After hearing their explanation, Wu Yong understood the situation.

“Due to the rampant qi tides, the grotto-heavens in the two heavens are exposed, this created the two heavens alliance. The alliance mainly comprises variant humans, they have Wu Shuai as their leader.”

“This group of variant human Gu Immortals that defeated Luo clan must have a close relationship with the two heavens alliance.”

“The two heavens alliance first occupied an area in Eastern Sea, Wu Shuai fought with Qi Sea Ancestor. After that, Heavenly Court attacked them, their vice alliance leader Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch forced Demon Judgment Board to retreat, creating a huge commotion.”

“If Luo clan looks for Hou clan or Yao clan, even though they are super forces, they cannot deal with the colossal two heavens alliance. When the situation aggravates, they will still have to look for me in the end. Thus, they came to me from the start.”

Thinking so, Wu Yong smiled, promising them: “Our Southern Border's righteous path is united, now that Luo clan has faced a setback, as long as you are part of the Southern Alliance, we will help you out. As the leader of the Southern Alliance, I, Wu Yong, will lend my strength as well!”

Luo clan's immortals quickly responded: "Alliance Leader is righteous and mighty."

But there was no joy on their faces.

This concerned a huge treasure like Qi Jue's true inheritance, Wu Yong was sure to agree to help without doubt.

The important things were how to get true inheritance of Qi Jue, how would Luo clan and Wu clan cooperate, if they obtained the true inheritance, how would they split it?

Those were the true details to discuss.

While Luo clan's immortals and Wu Yong were negotiating, Wu Shuai also received the audience of a Gu Immortal.

"The one asking to see me is a miniman Gu Immortal named Xiao He Jian?" Wu Shuai squinted.

"Yes." The reporting Gu Immortal explained: "This immortal has extraordinary strength, his reputation is long established, even though the Gu Immortals of the two heavens do not interact much with each other, we have all heard of this Xiao He Jian. His strength is likely on par with vice alliance leader."

The vice alliance leader was naturally Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

This time, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch used his immortal sealing coffin killer move to defeat Heavenly Court, his reputation surged, everyone in the two heavens alliance knew about it.

"What is the reason for his request to meet me?" Wu Shuai asked purposely.

"This subordinate... does not know." The reporting Gu Immortal lowered his head: "He says that he has a huge fortune to give to Lord Alliance Leader, he wants to join our two heavens alliance."

Wu Shuai smiled.

In the past, he did not know, but after the main body sent him some information of the previous life, he learned about this person.

This Xiao He Jian was quite a formidable figure in the five hundred years of his previous life, he was indeed an expert among the variant human rank eight Gu Immortals, he was able to contest Heavenly Court's members evenly.

Speaking of which, in the five hundred years of his previous life, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch did not have much reputation.

In terms of battle strength, Xiao He Jian and Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch were on the same level. Even though the two heaven's Gu Immortals were not very outstanding, they still had several incredible experts. If not for this, they would not have caused problems to the five regions in the previous life.

"Xiao He Jian explored Qi Jue grotto-heaven, he probably got into a conflict with Luo clan. Now that the Southern Alliance was created in advance and Luo clan suffered a loss, they would definitely find their allies, they might approach Wu Yong."

"Xiao He Jian has several grotto-heaven forces allied with him, but how can he resist the great Southern Alliance? Thus, he came to me, by joining my two heavens alliance, not only can he protect himself, he can also use my strength to resist the Southern Alliance and obtain Qi Jue's true inheritance."

"But this Qi Jue grotto-heaven is a dangerous area, in my previous life, Qi Jue grotto-heaven self-detonated, killing countless Gu Immortals in the process. The two heavens alliance also suffered a huge setback from this, the losses were so severe they never recovered."

Wu Shuai guessed that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch died during this Qi Jue grotto-heaven explosion, otherwise, with his strength, he would not have stayed so low profile the entire time.

Considering this, Wu Shuai smiled coldly, thinking: “This Xiao He Jian is crafty, he wants to borrow our strength and use us to kill his enemies, since he wants my help, let’s have a good negotiation with him.”

“Go.” Wu Shuai stopped thinking about it as he sat on his main seat, telling the Gu Immortal: “Tell Xiao He Jian to come in.”

# **Chapter 1998 - Exploring Qi Jue Grotto-Heaven**

## **1998 Exploring Qi Jue Grotto-Heaven**

The sky had a unified color, it was a sight of bluish jade.

Great winds howled, killing intent gathered.

Two Immortal Gu Houses faced each other.

One was a majestic palace shining in golden light, it was elegant and grand, this was Dragon Palace. The other was a two storey bamboo building, it was filled with vitality and looked delicate but exquisite, this was Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

The two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses contained many Gu Immortals inside them.

Wu Shuai sat at the main seat with two rows of Gu Immortals from the two heavens below him. On his left was Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and others, while on his right was the recently joined wood path great expert, miniman Gu Immortal Xiao He Jian. As for Lady Cold Ash, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord, and others, they were mixed among these two groups.

Not long ago, Wu Shuai met with Xiao He Jian, after some negotiation, they set off for Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

On the other side, Southern Alliance's Wu Yong also knew the importance of speed, he quickly mobilized Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, bringing Wu clan's and Luo clan's immortals to immemorial white heaven.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was much faster than Dragon Palace, Wu Yong left later but arrived earlier, yet Qi Jue grotto-heaven could not be easily entered. While Wu Yong and the rest waited, Wu Shuai arrived with Dragon Palace.

The two sides met in white heaven, they immediately got into a deadlock.

"Wu Yong." Wu Shuai spoke within Dragon Palace, his voice resounding in the battlefield: "Qi Jue's true inheritance is in front of us, why don't we each send three people out to fight, the winner will be the side which has two victories, they will get the true inheritance, while the loser gets the grotto-heaven, how is that?"

"Wu Shuai, why are you being so cowardly now?" Wu Yong snickered from within Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building: "Let the person fortunate enough under the circumstances get Qi Jue's true inheritance, let's fight for it using our respective abilities!"

As he said this, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building shot out like a rainbow, piercing into a certain opening within Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

Wu Yong had waited for a long time, he finally found an opportunity to get inside.

Even though Wu Yong brought Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building with him, and had Wu clan's and Luo clan's elites around him, in terms of scale, he could not match Wu Shuai. Not just in quantity, but the quality of their high end battle strength also differed greatly.

If they really used the rules Wu Shuai set to determine a victor, in one-on-one combat, Wu Yong's side would be disadvantaged.

Furthermore, when Gu Immortals fight, heaven and earth qi would be disrupted, qi tides would appear. By then, the two heaven's Gu Immortals would be less affected, their advantage would rise again.

Wu Yong was a formidable leader, how could he let his side fall into a disadvantage from the start?

“Lord Alliance Leader, there is no time to waste, let's set out!” Xiao He Jian urged anxiously.

Wu Shuai looked at the openings in Qi Jue grotto-heaven, even though these openings varied in size, they were all milky white in color, formed from moving qi currents.

Earlier, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building had gone through the largest opening to get inside Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

After looking at it for a while, Wu Shuai understood some of its profundity.

“These openings vary in size, they are increasing in numbers, I'm afraid this is the immortal aperture entrance of Qi Jue grotto-heaven.”

Fang Yuan's main body and clones had varying amounts of memories but they shared the same attainment levels. Wu Shuai also had the main body's qi path attainment level, he could see it more clearly than others.

Just these holes alone made Wu Shuai's eyes brighten as he felt some comprehension.

“Normally, immortal aperture entrances are closed, only used to connect the inside world and the outside. Qi Jue grotto-heaven's entrance is unique, it is the most efficient way of maximizing the effect of that connection between worlds using the immortal aperture's entrance. I wonder what gains I can make inside?”

Thinking so, Wu Shuai's curiosity rose as he moved Dragon Palace towards the openings.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, this Qi Jue grotto-heaven was destroyed by self-detonation, it greatly affected the two heavens alliance and caused it to falter in the future. Many rank eight Gu Immortals died during this event.

Qi Jue grotto-heaven was dangerous, this was also why Fang Yuan did not take the initiative to explore it before the fate war.

But now that Qi Jue grotto-heaven was exposed, with an alluring true inheritance of Qi Jue inside and Dragon Palace's protection, Wu Shuai also had nothing urgent to attend to, he could put effort into this now.

Dragon Palace got past the narrow opening, rapidly arriving inside Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

The immortals saw that all around them, there were white colored qi currents that surged and moved.

“Qi Jue grotto-heaven's structure is quite special, it is not like ordinary grotto-heavens, there are white qi currents everywhere. These qi currents form into tunnels and countless tunnels turn this grotto-heaven into a maze, it is like the intestines of a giant. We need to get through these tunnels quickly and find the correct path to the central area. Qi Jue's true inheritance is hidden there!” Xiao He Jian explained when they got in.

All the immortals inside the palace listened attentively.

Xiao He Jian did not say everything he knew earlier, to prevent Wu Shuai from leaving to snatch the true inheritance alone after getting the information, he had kept many secrets, he promised Wu Shuai that he would explain the situation after they arrived.

Dragon Palace moved around in the white qi current tunnels, quickly reaching a crossroad. On the left and right were two paths, they were identical in size and shape.

“How do we determine the correct route?” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch asked.



Xiao He Jian replied: “I cannot be sure about it either, we need to test the paths. The only rule here is that the closer we get to the center, the more valuable the monsters and resources within the qi current tunnels. At the most central area, the qi harvest fruit has reached rank nine level!”

“What about Luo clan?” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch asked another crucial question.

“Luo clan does not have a more accurate method either. In fact, their exploration speed was far slower than us. It was because of the qi tides that they gained an opportunity to get past many difficulties and reach the central area rapidly. Looking at our previous progress, my tribe was extremely close to Qi Jue’s true inheritance, we were just two obstacles away.” Xiao He Jian sighed, he felt somewhat of a pity regarding it.

The immortals heard this and relaxed slightly.

“In that case, even though they came inside first, in terms of advantage, we have the upper hand.” Great Wisdom Immortal Mother analyzed.

“Don’t be careless, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building is much faster than us.” Wu Shuai said plainly.

He chose a random path and moved Dragon Palace along it.

Along the way, the qi current tunnels became wider and taller, many qi path living beings were in them, creating special living environments that were isolated from each other.

Roar!

Suddenly, a group of qi monsters emerged from the thick tunnel walls, surrounding Dragon Palace.

These qi monsters had all sorts of strange forms, resembling bulls, goats, fish, or birds. However, their colors were similar, being close to orange-yellow.

“These are qi monsters created from luck qi.” Xiao He Jian said: “Even though there are no immemorial qi monsters, they are quite troublesome to deal with. Without luck path methods to protect us, if we kill them, our luck will fall.”

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

At the next moment, a gush of smoke flew out from Dragon Palace, wherever it went, all of the luck qi monsters were swept away, suppressed within Dragon Palace.

“Uh.” Xiao He Jian was stunned but he soon reacted as he said respectfully: “A dream path killer move, truly worthy of Dragon Palace!”

As they continued, they saw an immemorial qi monster, it was pitch-black like a whale, its body was colossal.

Xiao He Jian had a grim expression: “Be careful, this is an immemorial qi monster created from hard qi, thankfully it is sleeping now. I’d suggest that we detour around it, let’s not...”

Boom!

At the next moment, Dragon Palace accelerated and crashed into the immemorial qi monster.

Dragon Palace shook intensely but the immemorial qi monster was pierced through, it retaliated in anger.

Dragon Palace charged and crashed into it again, and again!

The immemorial qi monster broke apart, turning into lumps of black hard qi. Next, Wu Shuai stored the hard qi in his palace.

“You can all split the spoils.” Wu Shuai kept most of the gains and passed the rest to the Gu Immortals.

“Alliance Leader is mighty!”

“All hail Dragon Palace!”

“Subordinate thanks Lord Alliance Leader.”

“With Lord Alliance Leader here, so what if they have Wu Yong?”

At once, the immortals expressed their gratitude as all sorts of praises erupted.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch smiled as he looked at Xiao He Jian, saying with deep meaning: “Try not to be shocked at these minor situations, it will cause us to lose face.”

Xiao He Jian had to nod in acknowledgment but he still felt deep shock internally: “Even though I saw the fate war, I can only see how powerful Dragon Palace is after witnessing it in action personally. If Dragon Palace is so strong, what about Duke Long, Fang Yuan, and Feng Jiu Ge?”

At once, Xiao He Jian’s emotions became rather complex.

On one hand, the stronger Dragon Palace was, the more hopeful he was. But on the other hand, as a great expert, seeing such a difference between them and seeing such a powerful existence made him feel some dejectedness.

Along the way, wherever they went, Wu Shuai took all of the loot that they could gather.

Qi Jue grotto-heaven was really the land of treasures for qi path, it was like the qi sea of ancient times. Not only were the qi path resources here in huge quantities, they also varied greatly in variety, there was basically anything one needed here.

Wu Shuai purposely displayed his might to intimidate Xiao He Jian. As a result, he exposed more secrets, according to him, when exploring this place, he found a Qi Breath Peak! Qi Jue grotto-heaven actually had such an extinct qi path resource, but regrettably, Xiao He Jian only took a glance at it, he did not have the ability to take it.

“This is the center of Qi Jue grotto-heaven?” Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building had just arrived at the destination, before Wu Yong could rejoice, his pupils shrunk: “Hmph, they weren’t slow at all.”

Behind Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, Dragon Palace arrived.

At the center of Qi Jue grotto-heaven was a huge hollow sphere. The sphere had many qi pillars that interweaved with each other, creating countless tunnels.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and Dragon Palace entered this area, it was like two flies had entered a beehive.

The qi pillars continued to move around, some were fast while others were slow, they even affected each other. Under Wu Yong’s control, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building moved carefully and avoided the qi pillars, taking sharp turns along the way.

“These qi pillars are special, they are at least rank eight immortal materials. We cannot touch them easily or unnecessary problems will occur.” Xiao He Jian quickly said.

This place was not suited for fighting, thus, in order to kill the three Luo clan immortals, Xiao He Jian had arranged a battlefield killer move.

But in the end, Luo clan’s Luo Ran was a space path Gu Immortal, he brought the other two immortals away by piercing through the battlefield, using this special terrain to get free from Xiao He Jian and the rest, escaping.

“No need for such trouble.” Wu Shuai waved his hand.

At the next moment, a dragon roar was heard, the Evil Dragon descended.

Boom boom boom!

The Evil Dragon charged ferociously, wherever it went, qi pillars broke and shattered, it created a path for Dragon Palace to move along from behind it.

“Hmm?” Wu Yong frowned.

Xiao He Jian’s mouth was open, he became dumbstruck.

# Chapter 1999 - Qi Jue, Xi

## 1999 Qi Jue, Xi

“Great!”

“Lord Alliance Leader is so powerful!”

“This is the power of our two heavens alliance!”

The morale of the immortals within Dragon Palace surged, they quickly cheered.

Evil Dragon charged ahead with an unstoppable might, Dragon Palace followed behind it casually.

“This dragonman brute!” The eyelids of Luo clan’s first supreme elder Luo Zu were twitching as he gritted his teeth.

The two clans’ Gu Immortals within Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building felt immense pressure. Evil Dragon was charging relentlessly like a mobile mountain range, in comparison, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was very delicate and small.

And most importantly, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building had to dodge the qi pillars, its advancement route was long and winding. But Evil Dragon moved forward in a straight line without obstruction, the distance between them was shortening.

“What do we do now?” The Southern Alliance’s Gu Immortals turned pale.

Wu Yong smiled lightly: “Wu Shuai uses strength to suppress others, he is making full use of his advantage. If I were him, I would do the same. Everyone, after the fate war, not only was Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building fully repaired, I even strengthened it further, we can block Di Zang Sheng for a period of time. Even though they are strong, we do not need to bother with them, we just need to get Qi Jue’s true inheritance before them.”

“Lord Alliance Leader is right!” The immortals nodded in agreement.

Any sort of conflict had its goal, Wu Yong could clearly see that their objective was Qi Jue’s true inheritance. Whoever gets it would be the winner, even if they suffer some losses while competing, so what?

But the Evil Dragon was really too strong.

It was the immemorial desolate beast with the strongest battle strength!

In the five regions and two heavens, there were less than five people who could fight this Evil Dragon head-on!

While Wu Shuai and Wu Yong were chasing after their goals, a third rank eight Immortal Gu House stealthily arrived outside Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

It was Demon Judgment Board!

Demon Judgment Board was controlled by Fang Zheng, not only did Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui come along, even Che Wei, who had recovered from his injuries, and information path great expert Zhou Xiong Xin were here.

Fang Zheng took the initiative to attack the two heavens previously, even though Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch forced them away, their gains were still huge. Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui obtained abundant loot from plundering the two grotto-heavens.

Even though Fang Zheng lost in battle, he had only lost some reputation of Heavenly Court, they did not lose benefits.

Heavenly Court was originally not sure of Qi Jue grotto-heaven's event, after all, immemorial white heaven was huge, even during the qi tides when Qi Jue grotto-heaven exposed itself, Heavenly Court could not find it immediately.

But don't forget that Night Heavenly Wolf Lord under Wu Shuai had submitted to Heavenly Court. The fact that Xiao He Jian joined the two heavens alliance was not concealable, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord learned of Qi Jue grotto-heaven's secret and informed Heavenly Court as a result.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was very famous in history, he was a terrifying great expert who opposed Limitless Demon Venerable!

Especially when he cultivated qi path, in the current environment where qi tide surged, all new qi path resources were emerging in huge quantities continuously. The five regions' forces wanted to research more into qi path.

Heavenly Court was no exception!

Even though they had Primordial Origin's true inheritance, if Heavenly Court could gain Qi Jue's true inheritance, it would mean that other forces could not get it. With this difference, Heavenly Court would have a great advantage against others.

Thus, Fang Zheng did not rest for long, he received Qin Ding Ling's orders and brought four rank eight Gu Immortals to move to white heaven using Demon Judgment Board, arriving at this place.

"This should be Qi Jue grotto-heaven, but what is going on?" Fang Zheng had just arrived but he saw a shocking change.

He saw countless holes appearing, milky white qi currents surged endlessly as they moved around, the many new openings started to connect the grotto-heaven to the outside world.

These openings increased in numbers and continued to surface, there were too many of them, this would be a fearsome sight to others.



After more than ten breaths, a huge silhouette of Qi Jue grotto-heaven appeared. On the surface, there were countless white qi currents surrounding it, within the qi currents, there were countless holes breathing in and out.

The surrounding air was sucked into the grotto-heaven by a terrifying formless force. As for the loud noise that it created, the Heavenly Court immortals felt deafened all of a sudden.

“A huge change is occurring in Qi Jue grotto-heaven!”

“Wu Shuai and Wu Yong might have fought in the grotto-heaven.”

“What to do?”

Prince Feng Xian and the rest looked towards Fang Zheng, he was still their leader in this expedition.

Fang Zheng felt pressured, the choice in front of him was a difficult one. At this moment, he fell into hesitation, what should he choose?

At the center of Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

Boom boom boom!

Qi pillars continued to break and shatter as noise erupted endlessly.

The Evil Dragon destroyed everything in its path, but such a sight did not last long, after the qi pillars were destroyed, they turned into strong qi currents that intertwined together, surrounding the body of the Evil Dragon as they pressured it, trying to attack and kill it from all directions.

The Evil Dragon roared but its speed continued to fall, it was facing an unprecedented pressure from ahead.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and Dragon Palace were not having an easy time either.

These qi currents were like tsunami waves that constantly attacked, these two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses were like small rafts trying to float in this treacherous storm.

Huge qi currents collided and caused the two Immortal Gu Houses to shake, sometimes, the Immortal Gu Houses even spun around on the spot.

There was a shot of deep blue qi current, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building quickly tried to dodge it. But the deep blue qi current was too large and fast, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building exerted all of its strength before leaving and escaping after three breaths of time.

“Lightning qi!” Southern Border’s Gu Immortal gasped: “I’ve never seen such colossal lightning qi, this quality is on par with rank eight immortal materials.”

Lightning qi could only be collected during stormy weather.

It was not hard to collect lightning qi, but high ranked lightning qi immortal materials were very rare.

Rank eight lightning qi was even rarer.

If the situation were not so urgent, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals would want to collect the lightning qi.

“This is all Wu Shuai’s fault! By causing rampant destruction, Qi Jue grotto-heaven has gone into a berserk state.” Luo Zu gritted his teeth.

Wu Yong’s expression turned dark: “Qi Jue’s true inheritance is our primary goal!”

The lightning qi from earlier caused Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building to lose some Gu worms, Wu Yong quickly replenished them.

These immortal materials had incredible dense dao marks, this environment was very dangerous. If there were wind path qi current immortal materials,

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building would have an incredibly good time here.

The change in Qi Jue grotto-heaven's situation made the environment much more dangerous, but on the whole, Wu Yong's situation had actually improved.

Because Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building suffered much less obstruction compared to Wu Shuai's side.

Dragon Palace was much slower than Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

There were sharp blade qi, black hard qi, dark death qi... all sorts of qi currents were all at rank eight level. Wu Shuai gritted his teeth as he drove Dragon Palace forward, resisting them by force.

The Evil Dragon was left in the dust already.

Its body was too big, it was resisted by at least ten air currents or more, it could no longer be of use here.

"This is the foundation of Qi Jue grotto-heaven..." Wu Shuai had a solemn expression, his gaze flickered with uncertainty.

He had the disadvantage now but the situation had not been decided.

The two heaven's Gu Immortals were also speechless at the moment. If not for Dragon Palace's protection, who would dare to travel in this dangerous place? Many rank eight Gu Immortals felt their own weakness and insignificance at this moment.

"Demon Immortal Qi Jue is truly worthy of being the person who rivaled Limitless Demon Venerable in the past!"

The two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses did not give up, they moved towards the center with much difficulty, trying to obtain Qi Jue's true inheritance.

But outside the grotto-heaven, Fang Zheng no longer had to hesitate.

“Let’s retreat first and observe the situation.” Fang Zheng ordered, Demon Judgment Board quickly retreated.

Prince Feng Xian and the rest were silent, they agreed with this decision.

Because right now, a change occurred again, raging qi currents appeared all over the place, a new qi tide had begun!

Fighting during a qi tide would cause the Gu Immortals to suffer backlash, even Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were no exception.

“It seems our earlier deduction was right.”

“The heaven and earth qi in our immortal apertures differ from the outside world, thus be it opening the immortal aperture entrance or fighting intensely, when it hits a certain level, a new qi tide will occur.”

“Demon Immortal Qi Jue is a five regions Gu Immortal, because of his foundation, now that his immortal aperture’s entrance is basically wide open, along with the fight between Wu Shuai and the Southern Alliance inside, they created a gigantic qi tide.”

“Let’s watch by the side and try to reap some benefits from the outcome.”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals conversed as they kept a close eye on Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

The powerful qi tide went through the openings and rapidly entered Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

Wu Shuai and Wu Yong instantly felt huge pressure as the wild qi currents became even stronger. Even though the rank eight Immortal Gu Houses were powerful, these qi currents made them helpless, they were often blown away to random places.

Bang... bang... bang!

As the two Immortal Gu Houses approached the center, they started to hear loud thumping sounds.

“What is going on?”

“What qi currents are causing these sounds?”

“No, this is someone’s heartbeat! Quickly look!”

The two Immortal Gu Houses arrived at the center of Qi Jue grotto-heaven, all of the Gu Immortals saw this sight —

At the point where all the countless qi currents merged was the eye of the storm, this place was completely tranquil and safe.

In this tranquil environment, there was a tiny and delicate qi harvest fruit, it continued to absorb the surrounding qi currents.

Countless qi currents of all types got absorbed into the qi harvest fruit and their traits were assimilated, becoming a part of the fruit.

Different from the previous situation, there was the form of a baby inside the qi harvest fruit!

The qi harvest fruit was like a woman’s womb, a human baby was curled up inside, growing and getting larger by the second.

“What is happening?”

“What in the world is going on?”

“This is a monster! It is actually absorbing rank eight immortal materials endlessly to strengthen itself!”

“It is about to be born, quickly stop it!”

The immortals’ expressions changed, Wu Shuai wanted to unleash the killer move dreamy light smoke, but the qi harvest fruit seemed to have sensed it, it shook and self-detonated.

The baby was successfully born, he had tiny arms and legs like he was malnourished.

At this time, the silhouette of a concave land appeared above his head. This concave land contained deep profundities, it gave off a rank nine aura. But this aura was far more perfect and refined than the incomplete Human Sea that Wu Shuai had previously.

This was a secluded domain of heaven and earth!

The baby raised his arms, he seemed to be using both arms to carry the silhouette of this secluded domain of heaven and earth.

“Xi—” He shouted out in a long tone.

At the next moment, all of the surrounding qi currents moved into the silhouette of the secluded domain of heaven and earth like river tributaries returning to the ocean.

The qi currents moved with incredibly shocking speed, within a few breaths of time, all of them went into the mysterious secluded domain of heaven and earth. Wu Shuai and Wu Yong could not even sense a single qi current around them anymore.

In the sky, only the baby and the two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses were left.

“We’re outside again.” Luo Zu found himself in the outside world.

“No, the whole of Qi Jue grotto-heaven turned into qi currents and got absorbed by him.” Wu Yong was unable to conceal his shock, everything was unexpected in this situation, he felt like he was used.

This was someone’s scheme!

“Who are you?” Wu Shuai shouted from within Dragon Palace.

The baby had grown into a boy, he breathed in deeply, the silhouette of the secluded domain of heaven and earth above his head went into his nose.

Next, he looked around and saw Dragon Palace and Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, he also found the hidden Demon Judgment Board.

The boy smiled as he started to recite: (Chapter 1319)

“Climbed mountains to seek immortality, danger present in every step.

Dust specks float like light, dark Gu lurk in heart.

A dream like golden jade, thousands of years of loneliness.

Five regions and nine heavens, everything is in one breath[1].”

As he recited, his voice was young but his tone was aged: “Who else can I be? Yours truly, Demon Immortal Qi Jue.”

“Demon Immortal Qi Jue?!” The immortals were all shaken.

“Wait, if he is Demon Immortal Qi Jue, then the secluded domain of heaven and earth from earlier, it is ‘Xi’ from u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e?” Within Demon Judgment Board, Zhou Xiong Xin suddenly had a thought.

u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e had two very mysterious secluded domains of heaven and earth, there was little description regarding them.

One was ‘Hu’, the other was ‘Xi’.

[1] Breath written as qi in Chinese.

# Chapter 2000 - Might of the Demon Immortal

## 2000 Might of the Demon Immortal

Demon Immortal Qi Jue!

The mysterious Gu Immortal stated his own identity, the entire place went silent.

The three sides' Gu Immortals were shaken. According to history, Demon Immortal Qi Jue was someone who had been evenly matched with Limitless Demon Venerable in battle at some point!

Wu Shuai, who was inside Dragon Palace, frowned, he realized many things: "It seems that in my previous life, Demon Immortal Qi Jue failed to revive. Otherwise, there would not have been zero information about Demon Immortal Qi Jue's revival. There are two possible reasons, one is that fate Gu was not destroyed then, the second is that Spectral Soul succeeded in refining sovereign immortal fetus Gu, from all the signs known, he had already infiltrated Heavenly Court and gained complete control of the situation. He would not allow someone like Demon Immortal Qi Jue to revive."

Thinking of this, Wu Shuai snorted coldly as he willed.

Roar—!

At the next moment, the Evil Dragon moved.



Earlier, because of the countless qi currents obstructing it, the Evil Dragon was covered in injuries. But now that the whole of Qi Jue grotto-heaven was absorbed by Demon Immortal Qi Jue using an unthinkable method, the Evil Dragon regained freedom, it charged towards Demon Immortal Qi Jue with imposing aura again.

Once it moved, wild winds started blowing.

The Evil Dragon's colossal body was like a moving mountain range, engulfing heaven and earth.

Forget about Demon Immortal Qi Jue's tiny child body, even the great Dragon Palace could not match the Evil Dragon's body.

"Hehehe, come." Demon Immortal Qi Jue's vision was filled by Di Zang Sheng.

He was not flustered, instead he smiled calmly.

He did not dodge, he directly extended his small hand towards Di Zang Sheng.

Immortal killer move — Great Qi Grasp!

With a loud sound, endless white qi currents shot out of Demon Immortal Qi Jue's body, forming a giant hand with five fingers.

The hand was only the size of an Immortal Gu House at first, but it slowly inflated to the size of a hill. Three breaths of time later, the entire qi current hand had expanded to the size of the Evil Dragon's head.

But the milky white qi current hand continued to grow!

Di Zang Sheng had already reached it.

Bam.

The two sides collided, but out of everyone's expectations, Demon Immortal Qi Jue's qi current hand was easily destroyed in one move.

Di Zang Sheng did not slow down, continuing to pursue Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not dodge, he continued to face Di Zang Sheng casually.

Di Zang Sheng only charged for a few seconds before slowing down, it growled loudly like it was in great pain.

“My great qi grasp can form and scatter at will. It can grab mountains and seas if it takes form, but it can also invade organs when it scatters. How will you deal with it?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue stood arrogantly and said.

The immortals were shocked.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue used one move to subdue Di Zang Sheng, he had true pseudo venerable battle strength!

“Another demonic path expert!”

“Sigh, with the destruction of fate Gu, the world will go into chaos.”

“Demon Immortal Qi Jue had died more than a million years ago, that source of chaos Fang Yuan gave him the chance to revive!”

Inside Demon Judgment Board, Heavenly Court’s immortals gritted their teeth, they had ugly expressions.

After the fate war, the righteous path fell while the demonic path surged!

Duke Long, who was the pillar that held up Heavenly Court, died, Feng Jiu Ge, whom they entrusted their hopes to, betrayed them, while Fang Yuan, who was the culprit behind the destruction of Fate, still remained scot-free!

And now, there was this Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

There were sad cries as Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals realized that the future of the five regions and two heavens became much bleaker now.

They did not even think of recruiting Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Although in history, he had opposed Limitless Demon Venerable, there was also no possibility that he would ever join the righteous path.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue, just the demon in his name stated the obvious. After all, the saying goes: There are only wrong names, not wrong titles.

“Xiao He Jian, what are you really up to? You created such a huge enemy for our two heavens alliance!” Within Dragon Palace, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch suddenly shouted.

Xiao He Jian could not rebuke him, his face turned pale.

He felt a lot of lingering fear but also relief. He was relieved that he joined the two heavens alliance, otherwise, with just himself, he would have become the sacrificial lamb of Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s revival already.

“This is a scheme, I am a victim too.” Xiao He Jian voiced his innocence.

“This is a scheme, Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s scheme.” At the same time, Wu Yong sighed within Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

Luo Zu sighed deeply: “Demon Immortal Qi Jue is a qi path cultivator, but he actually predicted the events a million years into the future? What sort of level did he reach?!”

Wu Yong frowned slightly, he looked through Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building towards Dragon Palace.

He could understand Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s arrangements, but he had some doubt in his mind, did Wu Shuai know about this secret?

Now that Wu Yong recalled it, Wu Shuai had been controlling the Evil Dragon to create destruction all over the place, was it because he was straightforward and wanted to use brute force, or was he purposely trying to destroy Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s arrangements?

Evidently, it was because of the Evil Dragon's rampant destruction that Demon Immortal Qi Jue was revived ahead of time.

Wu Yong was a formidable person with a sharp mind, the more he thought about it, the more he suspected Wu Shuai's actions.

"It is possible that Wu Shuai knows about Demon Immortal Qi Jue's existence. After all, he has some sort of relationship with Fang Yuan, and Fang Yuan possesses Spring Autumn Cicada, it is not strange that he knows some secrets." Wu Yong thought of Fang Yuan.

"Did Fang Yuan come here?" Inside Demon Judgment Board, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were guessing.

Fang Yuan was a person who had been reborn, if he knew about the secret of Demon Immortal Qi Jue's revival, he might likely hide somewhere to make his move!

Precisely because of this concern, Demon Judgment Board did not take action. Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was also waiting for something to happen.

But Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not want to let them off.

"Today is the wonderful day I revived, come, come, let me see what methods the Gu Immortals of this current era have!"

Demon Immortal Qi Jue had the appearance of a boy but his tone was that of a man proud of his experience, he actually attacked again.

At once, milky white qi currents gushed out, filling the world with a tsunami, Heavenly Court, the Southern Alliance, and Wu Shuai's side were all enveloped.

"Hmph! Old scoundrel Qi Jue, don't be too arrogant, we are not afraid of you, we are just wary that Fang Yuan might be hiding somewhere." Wu Yong spoke, using Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building to retreat immediately.

Fang Zheng's voice resounded from Demon Judgment Board: "Precisely! Demonic path senior, even though you are famous in history, you cannot compare to the number one demon in the current world, Gu Yue Fang Yuan! This person destroyed my Heavenly Court's fate Gu, without him, you would not have revived."

"Fang Yuan? I will remember this name." Demon Immortal Qi Jue stretched his arms, qi currents shooting out rapidly: "But none of you will escape!"

He was like a bottomless hole, constantly shooting out milky white qi currents.

These qi currents were unique, ordinary immortal killer moves could not destroy them. At once, three rank eight Immortal Gu Houses fell into a predicament, their speeds fell drastically.

Wu Shuai snorted, he controlled Dragon Palace to advance instead of retreating, attacking Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue laughed loudly: "Good, someone with actual guts."

A trace of smoke flew out of Dragon Palace.

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not dodge it, he was hit by the smoke, instantly disappearing.

Wu Shuai had a perplexed expression, he was like a fisherman spreading his web, he used all his strength to cast the web but in the end, he only caught some bubbles without any fish.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue's body appeared again, this time, he was far away.

He looked at Dragon Palace deeply with an expression of wariness: "Good, I'll remember this."

He gave up on Dragon Palace, he went to attack Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and Demon Judgment Board instead.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building emitted wild winds while Demon Judgment Board shot out powerful blood red lights, they both displayed their might.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue's moves were mostly grand and wide ranged, he managed to suppress the two Immortal Gu Houses.

After more than ten rounds, bright light shined in his eyes as he shouted: "Good, good, good, to think that people have already created wind path and blood path, this is truly exciting. I did not waste my effort in arranging for my revival in this great era!"

"Other than you people, who else is there in this world?" Demon Immortal Qi Jue asked.

Wu Yong smiled coldly: "Ignoring anyone else, Eastern Sea has quite the formidable person. He also cultivates qi path, his battle strength is definitely higher than yours. He stays in qi sea, he calls himself Qi Sea Ancestor, he is the undisputed leader of the current Eastern Sea righteous path!"

"Oh? There is a qi path cultivator? Back in my day, qi path was already declining, to think that it would still linger until today! Very good, it seems I will need to meet him." Demon Immortal Qi Jue laughed loudly in joy.

Wu Yong continued: "Other than Qi Sea Ancestor, there is also a sound path demonic immortal named Feng Jiu Ge. He has also defeated the Evil Dragon in one move with much greater ease than you. In the battle earlier, he betrayed Heavenly Court openly and now his whereabouts are unknown, but Heavenly Court does not dare to release an arrest warrant for him."

"Feng Jiu Ge? Good, I'll remember him. Anyone else?" Demon Immortal Qi Jue's eyes shined.

Wu Shuai interrupted at this moment: "Get past us first, old man."

As he said that, Dragon Palace flew over again.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue smiled lightly as he pointed: "Lower qi."

Milky white qi currents gushed out and caused Dragon Palace to fall in altitude.

At this time, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building carried a storm with it as it charged towards Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue pointed another finger: “Upper qi.”

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was swept away by the qi currents, flying upwards uncontrollably.

Demon Judgment Board arrived in front of him.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue stretched out two fingers as he pointed at this house: “Upper-lower breathless qi.”

Demon Judgment Board erupted with a loud sound as it stayed stationary in midair. The Gu Immortals inside had changes of expressions, the immortal essence that they tried to instill became choppy, this rank eight Immortal Gu House was like a dying old man who could not take proper breaths at this moment.

“Juniors, I’m not going to play with you anymore. Go and spread the word, tell Fang Yuan, Qi Sea Ancestor, and Feng Jiu Ge that I will visit them soon. They can’t hide from me.”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue had just said this when his figure vanished, he did not appear anymore.

All of the immortals were wary now, after getting rid of the remaining milky white qi currents, they confirmed that Demon Immortal Qi Jue had truly left the scene.

“Do we pursue him?” Someone within Dragon Palace asked.

Wu Shuai snorted coldly: “Where did he go? Why don’t you tell me?”

The Gu Immortal who asked turned pale, he lowered his head, not daring to say another word.

“Let’s retreat.” Wu Yong smiled, not forgetting to salvage the morale:  
“Even though we did not have much gains this time, fighting against someone like Demon Immortal Qi Jue is worth the trip after all.”

“Sigh! After Fang Yuan comes Demon Immortal Qi Jue, I really do not know which great expert will revive next!” Fang Zheng was filled with worries, he mobilized Demon Judgment Board to quickly leave the battlefield.